

# Gensokyo Chronicles: The Ultima Brigade War

**By: Ziden115**

The Ultima Brigade, a cult whom is obsessed with trying recreate the Universe into their twisted vision. It is said that a group of warriors led by Yukari Yakumo and the Legendary Hero defeated them a year ago. Now they have returned and plan to destroy Gensokyo as a sign of revenge. Reimu and friends have been dragged into a new war as they search for Sora and new allies. OCs.

Status: complete

Published: 2012-12-19

Updated: 2016-01-18

Words: 438544

Chapters: 87

Rated: Fiction T - Language: English - Genre: Adventure/Humor -  
Characters: OC, Reimu H., Mario - Reviews: 165 - Favs: 30 - Follows: 22

Original source: <https://www.fanfiction.net/s/8811660/1/Gensokyo-Chronicles-The-Ultima-Brigade-War>

Exported with the assistance of [FicHub.net](http://FicHub.net)

# Gensokyo Chronicles: The Ultima Brigade War

[Introduction](#)

[Prologue](#)

[A New Threat and Legendary Hero appears!](#)

[The Ultima Brigade and a Twilit Mansion](#)

[Heartless! Nobodies! Plumbers?](#)

[Crystal Stars and Roasted Kalamari!](#)

[Ziden, Woman Slayer Ike, Dragon Slayer](#)

[Return of the Fallen Knight](#)

[Playing with Hellfire!](#)

[Emerald Star and A New Key is Born](#)

[Meiling vs The Agent of Interpol!](#)

[Hired Sword and King Koopa!](#)

[A Macho Showdown and Gold Star!](#)

[The Illusionary Heroes are born!](#)

[Hollow Bastion and the Gourmet Race!](#)

[Clash of the Kings!](#)

[The Dreamy Adventure Begins!](#)

[A Bright and Shiny Victory!](#)

[Prelude to Sorrow and Despair](#)

[Final Boss Blitz: O's Revenge](#)

[A Legend Begins!](#)

[Stuck between a Rock and a Scorpion!](#)

[Clash on the Big Bridge and Koloktos!](#)

[3 Days of Relaxation and Training](#)

[The Sword of Evil's Bane](#)

[Ziden and Eirin vs Mayuri Kurotsuchi](#)

[A Legend Created and Beast's Castle](#)  
[Of Puppets and Knights](#)  
[A Dark Thorn in my Side](#)  
[The Land of Dragons](#)  
[Snowcapped Mayhem and Secrets Revealed](#)  
[A Devastating Battle! China's Salvation!](#)  
[Olympus Coliseum](#)  
[The TRUE Legendary Hero Returns!](#)  
[Olympus has fallen and the Dreaded Hydra](#)  
[Battle against Mara and Disney Castle](#)  
[A Blast from the Past!](#)  
[The Return to the Land of Illusions](#)  
[An Underground Adventure!](#)  
[Beyond the Time! Yoruho's Revenge!](#)  
[Fafnir the Divine Tempest of Destruction](#)  
[The Flower Master of Four Seasons](#)  
[Kirby's Crazy Battle against Flowers!](#)  
[Luigi's Mansion 2: Weegee Harder](#)  
[Lunarians and The Impure Gem of Mystery](#)  
[Raging Sands and Goddess of Light](#)  
[Masked Deception and Behemoth Warfare!](#)  
[Unlucky Days in the Haunted Mansion](#)  
[Mystery of the Chaos Emerald](#)  
[Wrath of the Undead](#)  
[The Start of a War!](#)  
[Lightning Battle! Defeat the God Enel!](#)  
[All Out War! Gensokyo Fights Back!](#)  
[The End of a Nightmare!](#)  
[Raging Blast! Hero vs Shrine Maiden!](#)  
[Brawling in Gensokyo! Day 1!](#)

[SHIELD and the Daughter of Oscura](#)  
[The Admiral of Light, Kizaru Appears!](#)  
[Salvation Bombs and the King of Monsters](#)  
[Jedah Dohma appears, War for Makai!](#)  
[Pokemon in Gensokyo? Far out!](#)  
[Pokemon 101! Pokemon for Everyone!](#)  
[Pandemona and Nue's Revenge!](#)  
[Gensokyo's End: Part 1, The Wily Wars](#)  
[Gensokyo's End: Part 2: The Tree Awakens](#)  
[Gensokyo's End: Part 3: Destruction](#)  
[Hollow bastion 2nd Visit](#)  
[The Heartless Strike back!](#)  
[Showdown at Hollow bastion](#)  
[Arrival in Unova](#)  
[Saiyin Hero vs Legendary Hero](#)  
[Legendary Golems in the Desert](#)  
[Mewtwo's Vengeance](#)  
[Legendary Battle Part 1](#)  
[Legendary Battle Part 2](#)  
[Journey to Smash City](#)  
[Team SMBZ Reunites! Defeat Rankyogan!](#)  
[Smash City and Master Hand!](#)  
[Return to Twilight Town](#)  
[The World that Never Was](#)  
[The Start of the End](#)  
[End of a Symphony](#)  
[The Sky Slasher and Black Leg](#)  
[Ultima Weapon](#)  
[Stop the Universe from Ending!](#)  
[The Universe Saved! A hero's Sacrifice!](#)

The Smasers have come! Finish the Fight!  
At the End of the Journey.

# Prologue

*Gensokyo, a place secluded away from the Outside World due to the Human and Youkai's constant wars and battles. It was at this point that a barrier known as the Great Hakurai Barrier was formed so that Youkai can live in peace away from the Humans. Humans, however, did find their way into barrier and created a village for themselves. Humans and Youkai lived somewhat in peace with one another in Gensokyo. Several centuries later however an event occurred threatened to destroy not just Gensokyo and the Outside World, but the entire universe. Thus begins the Legendary Hero, Ziden Icrim, adventures through Gensokyo and other worlds began.*

## **A New Threat and Legendary Hero appears!**

The Hakurei Family is the whole reason that the Great Hakurei Barrier still exists to this day. But what most people don't know is that the Miko for the shrine is extremely lazy. Unfortunately this almost cost her and her friends lives.

Sometime in the afternoon the Miko was enjoying some tea with some friends. One wore the outfit of a witch, another had a doll floating over shoulder, the other girl was wearing maid's outfit while holding an umbrella over what appeared to be a young child that had wings coming out of her back and the last girl wore green dress and had two katanas .But wait two more people were coming, one wore what looked like pajamas with long purple hair and the other one had long red hair and wore a green dress that showed off the sides of her legs.

" Oh so you two finally got here huh?" asked the girl with bat wings," What took you two so long to get here?"

"Well Patchouli unfortunately had an asthma attack so I had go and obtain her inhaler Mistress Remilia." answered the red haired woman.

" Yes it was very unfortunate that you that you had to wait on us" said Patchouli " Hello Reimu, Marisa and Alice." the maid then cleared her throat to show her presence "Oh yes hello Sakuya and Youmu.

Reimu, the miko, stretched her her arms up in the air and yawned loudly. " Finally, I was getting of waiting for you two. Is everyone ready to start this meeting?" Everyone nodded " Good then lets talk about the problems at hand. Has everyone here heard that the animals and fairies have been acting very strange all of a sudden?"

"What do you mean Reimu?" Youmu asked.

"Well that for one, ze." as Marisa pointed towards the sky which was filled with birds, fairies and tengu flying in one direction as if they were fleeing some unholy force when all of a sudden three fairies flew into the Hakurei Shrine only to crash headfirst into a certain shrine maiden. "Wowza, didn't see that one coming, didja Reddie?" Marisa said while trying her hardest not to laugh ( which wasn't very hard mind you).

" Shut up Marisa!" Reimu yelled at Marisa and then turned towards the fairies that crashed into her " All right you freaking fairies! What the hell is your problem, huh?!" She then noticed that the fairies were staring at something behind Remilia and she said " Pay attention to me when I'm yelling at at you! Remilia isn't the one you be afraid of... wait a minute." She then noticed a cloaked man standing behind Remilia holding a pink scythe at her throat. "R-R-Remilia!" she said as everyone pulled out their spell cards but the cloaked man pulled out a rectangular like object that shot out a bright light that struck everyone including Remilia.

"Uh uh uh." The cloaked man said as he was moving his finger back and forth. " We know all about those nasty little things called spellcards so we had this baby made! Also you should know that we are here to kill the demoness known as Yukari Yakumo, you wouldn't happen to know where she is would you?" The girls remained silent but had a mixture of angry and confused looks. " Not talking huh? Well lets see if you'll talk when this vampire's head is rolling off her body and on to the floor!" The cloaked man said as he pulled his scythe back at a force to behead beings only to hit air not flesh." What the-?" he said as he looked over at the maid who had the vampire at her side" Humph, it looks like the maid has some tricks her sleeves huh?!" he said as he laughed manically "So it looks like the spell cards weren't the only things that needed to be sealed, but it doesn't matter now cause I'm just going to kill you now. ALL OF YOU!" He said as he rushed at the maid and vampire when he suddenly stopped because of a gap that opened up in front of him " What the hell is this?!" He angrily asked but the girls all knew who it belonged to.



The gap had red ribbons tied to the top and bottom of it and the inside of it had a lot of eyes inside of it and three people were walking out of it. One was a blond haired woman wearing a deep purple dress, a pale pink mob cap with a thin red ribbon, and smaller ribbons tied liberally on her accessories and the tips of her hair, another had spiky black hair and light blue eyes with a smile on his face, wearing a black jacket with dragons made of fire intertwining each other across the front and a burning sword and shield emblem on the back, a simple black T-shirt, black jeans with red lines going down the side with black Z emblems at the top and bottom of the red lines and red and blue shoes with white Z Emblems, and the last had blue spiky hair with a dark green headband, wearing a blue shirt with yellow-orange lines around the zipper and bottom of shirt, white leggings with brown boots, but the thing that threw the girls off was that the blue haired man carried an orange broadsword (which is a two handed weapon mind you) in only one hand.

The cloaked did not like his chances of success dropping to zero when he saw the black haired man and blond haired woman walk through the gap along with the mystery swordsman and said "Y-Y-Y-Yukari Yakumo a-a-and the legendary hero Z-Z-Z-Ziden Icrim as well?! he said out of pure fear.

"Hey look Yukari, looks like even cloaked guy has heard of me!" the man named Ziden said cheerfully to which Yukari replied by saying 'whatever you idiot' Ziden then turned the cloaked man "All right cloaked guy, I can already tell that you're member of Organization 13 so spill it, what are you doing here?"

"Humph, I should have expected nothing less from the so-called Legendary Hero! I am here on orders from our new leader who has very big grudge against you Ziden!" He said while laughing and forming a Corridor of Darkness behind him.

"Huh? Why does your leader have a grudge against me? Have I met him before?" Ziden asked

" My leader did say you probably wouldn't remember him by hints so I'll just tell you his name to see the look on your idiotic face! It's Ultima!"He said while laughing and walking backwards into the corridor of darkness.

"..." Ziden stared blankly at the man while Yukari and the blue haired swordsman had shocked faces and then Ziden said " Ultima from the Ultima Brigade?" The cloaked man nodded and removed his hood and showed his face at last. He had rose pink ruffled hair and blue eyes and pale pink lips and then he began speak.

" I am Marluxia, the Grace Assassin, member of Organization 13 which in turn is a new subdivision for the Ultima Brigade!" He said with smirk on his face and then said " Lord Ultima will create a new universe, one free of darkness and wars, one were he rules as the Universal King! Hhahahahaahahahahhha!" Marluxia then vanished into the CoD taking it with him. The shocked girls approached Yukari ready to ask her questions as to what is going on but her reply was 'I shall answer your questions on the spaceship' the girls were still confused and were more confused when a giant, metallic red and white object landed on the ground with a door opened with ramp extending down to the ground.

" Come on ladies, lets go!" Ziden said while entering the object with the mystery swordsman and Yukari following close behind. The girls all looked at each other with looks of confusion but Alice, Reimu, Remilia and Sakuya went inside without question with everyone else following them inside still very confused. They entered into a room filled with green chairs and couches on which sat a very bored Yukari and the mystery man sat on. They then saw the man named Ziden standing in the middle of the room and said "Welcome to the Space Exploring Battleship: The Zeta Dreadnought!" Ziden said as he welcome the girls to their seats.

" All right Yukari, can you please explain what the hell is going on?!"Reimu asked angrily

" Well where do I begin?" Yukari asked while tapping her index finger on her bottom lip." Well lets just put it like this: an evil organization has resurfaced and we need your help to defeat them." Yukari said " Ah yes, you should all introduce yourselves to those swordsman over there." The girls walked over to Ziden and the other swordsman.

" I'm Remilia, pleased to meet you" Remilia said while curtsying to Ziden " Those three over there are Sakuya, Patchouli and Meiling" she said as she pointed to them.

" Greetings, I am Youmu Konpaku, pleased to meet you." Youmu said as she bowed her head and glanced over at Ziden's sword and said " Are you skilled with that sword?" she asked, to which Ziden replied 'Of course'.

" Greetings, I'm Alice Marigold and this is Shanghai." she said as she pointed at the doll floating above her shoulder and then moved to sit down on a couch.

" Hey there, ze! I'm Marisa Kirisame!" as witch began to fly around the room on her broom.

Reimu stood where she was and kept completely silent and was glaring at Ziden.

"You know its rude to stare Miss Reimu Hakurei." Ziden said as he faked a bow. He noticed that she now had a face of shock and said " Yes, Reimu I can 'read' minds, but enough of that." Ziden said as he had appeared behind her and picked her up and placed her in a seat to much to her distress. " Now then I am Ziden Icrim, that guy over there is Ike and I'm sure you all know Yukari Yakumo. All right ladies, who feels a spaceship tour huh?" he said excitedly.

The girls all got up and began to follow Ziden on his spaceship tour still wondering what was going on. Who was that pink haired man? What is Organization 13? And most importantly what is the Ultima Brigade and its leader Ultima? These questions shall be answered

as soon as this tour was done. But what they will learn ends up sending them on a journey across mysterious worlds preparing to fight this unknown organization.

## The Ultima Brigade and a Twilit Mansion

*The girls all silently wondered what exactly they had been dragged into when a mysterious man known as Marluxia attacked them out of the blue, but then gap had appeared and three walked out of it, one was a man with black spiky hair, another had blue spiky hair, the last one was a blonde woman whom all of the girls knew. They were now on an spaceship tour being lead around by the man named Ziden who was happily leading the girls around showing them the different rooms and sections of the ship.*

"All right, right this way is the Control Room! This is where I control this bad boy and tell it where to go!" Ziden said very cheerfully while the girls looked in awe at all of the flashing buttons and dials.

" Man look at all these shiny buttons! Ohhhhhh, what does this red button do?" Marisa said as she was about to press it when Ziden immediately stopped and yelled at her not to touch that button. Marisa then stopped and said "Why not? What's the worse that could happen?" as she then pressed the button and a missile then fired out from the ship and completely blew up a tree that was near Reimu's shrine, damaging a part of the house in the Ziden and Reimu went up and knocked Marisa on her head and then proceeded to yelled at for damaging Reimu's shrine and wasting one of Ziden's missiles. Ziden lead everyone out of the Control Room and into a long hallway filled with doors.

" These are the bedrooms. Each of them has a restroom that has a toilet, sink and bathtub. Please feel to use to use them whenever you want to. Oh yes if you are confused on how to use the bathtub, sink or toilet, please ask my lovely assistant Yukari!" Ziden said as Yukari walked up and gave Ziden a hard punch to the gut causing him to fall over in pain where he heard the girls and Ike laughing." Ugh. Jeez Yukari, did you have to hit me in the gut that hard?" Ziden groaned as he slowly got back up to his feet and resumed the tour. He lead

them to a room that was filled with big mysterious machines and a large window-like object that had images on it.

" This, my friends, is the T.V/Game Room! This room is made for entertainment purposes only although these Virtual Reality games can be used for training, if you want to. Those four over there sure are enjoying that T.V." Ziden said as he pointed to the 4 girls sitting on the couch whom all of the girls recognized. One was wearing a blue and white outfit similar to a Shrine Maiden's with light blue polka dots and stripes covering the blue areas. She has long light green hair, and yellow eyes. Wearing a snake-shaped hair accessory wrapped around her hair on one side, and a hair clip shaped like a frog's head. another one was wearing an elaborate red shirt with long white sleeves and a round mirror over the center of her chest. She wears a long black skirt with a red flower print hem. Has poofy intense blue hair and dark red eyes. Behind her is a large twisting rope circle shimenawa with shide. Another was wearing a short simple purplish-blue dress with a frog print design, large white sleeves stitched onto the torso, and a white collar. Has medium length blond hair, grey eyes, and wears a light brown wide-brimmed hat with two frog eyes on the top. Has white kneehighs and black shoes. The last one wearing a blue dress with lots of pockets around the hem of the skirt and her upper arm, and a dark aquamarine backpack with a golden key on the strap in front of her. She also wears a green hat with a white wispy symbol on it, blue wellington boots and carries a cattail. She has blue hair tied into twin tails and blue eyes. Reimu ran up to them to greet them.

"Sanae, Kanako, Suwako and Nitori! What are you guys doing here?!" Reimu asked them as Ziden walked up to them as well as the other girls. " Let me guess, This idiot brought you here didn't he?" She said pointing at Ziden.

" Yes he did." Sanae said nonchalantly " We found him face down in front of our shrine unconscious. When I first saw him I thought someone thrown his dead body on our shrine's steps. But when I took a closer look at his face I instantly recognized him! He's the

Legendary Ziden Icrim!" Sanae said as she squeed with joy at the mere sound of his name. " Hey Mister Ziden, I used to always watch your animes when i was younger! I especially loved ' Zero Ronin, The Machine of the Legendary Hero' it was awesome!" She exclaimed as she speaking to Ziden even though the girls and Ike had no idea what she was talking about.

" Its always nice to meet a fan." Ziden said while running his hand through his hair as if very annoyed and then he took a quick look around the room and said " Where did that ice fairy and Tengu reporter go? Ziden asked.

" Oh, Cirno went one of the rooms to take a nap and Aya is wandering around taking pictures of your ship." Nitori said. " Also when are we going to take off into space anyway?"

" Hey you girls ready to get going and head out into space?" Ziden asked as the girls all slowly nodded their heads. Ziden then touched something on his sleeve and then everyone felt the ship lurch upwards. Ziden then reached into his pockets and pulled out sphere-like objects and threw them at the girls and said " These are Exspheres. I heard from Yukari that your ability to use spell cards had been sealed by that weirdo at the shrine, but these will allow you to learn new techniques that could rival the power of your spell cards." Ziden said as he waited for questions from the girls when Alice raised her hand to ask a question.

" How exactly do you use these Exspheres and how do we know how to use these techniques anyways?" Alice asked politely

" First you place the Exsphere somewhere on your body and secondly it will sorta pop into your mind. Also when you 'equip' the exsphere, it will look at what kind of attacks you will learn down the road. For example." Ziden said as he pointed at Youmu " Youmu's Exsphere will teach her various sword artes and techniques such as the easy to learn Demon Fang." Ziden noticed that Patchouli had her hand raised. " Yes Ms. Knowledge?"

" So would my Exsphere teach me elemental magic? And also please refer to me as Patchouli. We are all allies here so lets all be on a first name basis, okay Ziden?" Patchouli said as Ziden nodded as Remilia raised her hand next.

" All right human guy, what will mine teach me and when is this little Q&A session going to be so we can ask our questions and eat?" Remilia asked rudely

" Dark based magic and spear techniques." Ziden said while ignoring her rudeness and then said " You girls ready to eat?" Everyone nodded yes when all of a sudden he felt a tug on his arm and looked over to see Sakuya pulling on his sleeve, startling him. " Woahhh! How'd you get over here that fast?!" Ziden asked Sakuya who still had the same emotionless face on.

"I stopped time and walked over to you. Would you if I helped to make to make the food?" Sakuya asked Ziden in an extremely polite voice. " As you can tell my mistress is a vampire who needs blood to feast on and I wanted to head back to Scarlet Devil Mansion to go get some blood for her." she said which shocked Ike

" Wait so she just drinks human blood?!" Ike asked completely shocked.

" Yes and Sakuya, there is no need to run back to your Mansion to get blood. I have some stored in the kitchen fridge and yes, Sakuya you may help with the food." Ziden said in oddly relaxed voice.

Remilia then flew over to Ziden with a panicked look on her face " Oh my god, I forgot about Flandre! Human stop this ship and let me get her!" Remilia yelled at Ziden.

" There is no need for that, just watch vampire girl." Ziden said as he held out his hand. Everyone stared at it until a black orb appeared in his hand and he then threw into the wall forming a vortex that showed a little blond girl with metallic wings that had colorful crystals on them. The girl had a shocked look on her face as she looked into



the strange vortex. Her shocked face turned into a happy one as she saw familiar face inside the vortex. She then leapt through the vortex, tackling Remilia with a very strong hug.

"BIG SIS!" Flandre said while hugging Remilia and then noticed Reimu and Marisa " Oh its Reimu and Marisa too!" Everyone was shocked as Flandre flew in through the vortex that Ziden conjured up.

All right, who wants to eat?" Ziden said while walking through the door. Everyone followed except Kanako and Suwako who stayed behind to watch the T.V.

Ziden lead them into a large grey colored room that had a long red table in it with well cushioned chairs around when Ziden then said " Welcome to the Dining Room! Everyone please take a seat and wait for me to make the food. Also think of what questions to ask me or Yukari because I am itching to get started on this adventure! Sakuya come with me to the kitchen please?" Ziden asked as she nodded and followed him into the kitchen. Leaving the girls to talk among themselves.

" Hmmm, these Exspheres things sure do sound useful. I wonder what mine will teach me?" Marisa asked while applying it to the back of her hand. Everyone saw how it stuck to skin so easily and then began to place theirs on the back of their hands as well.

" Hey big sis? Where are we right now?" Flandre asked to Remilia

" We are in some weird human's ship." Remilia answered

Youmu was having a conversation with Ike about their weapons. " So Ike I have to ask, Your sword seems to have a strange energy coming from it. Is there a particular reason why that is?"

" Well my sword, Ragnell, has been blessed by both the Goddess Ashura and Yune. This sword is special one. I have been using it since I left my world." Ike said while showing his sword to Youmu. "

What about your swords? Do you use both of your swords at the same time?"

Youmu unsheathed her katanas and showed them to Ike " The long sword is Roukanken, a sword that was forged by Youkai and can kill 10 phantoms in one swing. The shorter sword is Hakurouken, a sword passed down in my family for generations and can slice through confusion."

Ike liked the fact there was another swordsman other than Ziden on this ship. Ike then asked a simple question " Youmu, would you like to spar sometime? I'd ask Ziden but I've gotten bored of fighting of him." Ike asked

" Of course Ike. I'll take you on anytime." Youmu said while sheathing her swords. " I have to ask, does Ziden have any notable swords?"

" Yes, I know the sword on his back, Crimson Edge, can cut through almost anything and it can shoot fire from it. I know he has a katana made of pure fire called Nosada and a katana made of pure ice called Ama-no-Murakamo, and a sword that transform into different shapes and sizes, heck I've seen it transform into gigantic sword to which Ziden referred as 'his Zankantou' its name was the Type-3 Miracle Blade. He told its made of something called Miracle Matter." Ike said while putting away Ragnell.

They then noticed Ziden and some servants carrying trays of food and placed them on the table. The girls couldn't believe what was in front of them. Beautifully decorated cakes and deserts were arranged all over the table. Sakuya informed everyone that the cake with red icing is only for Remilia and Flandre only. Of course no one except the Scarlet sisters ate the red cake. Of course after they were done enjoying the meal, Reimu began to ask to Ziden and Yukari the questions she was waiting to get answered.

" All right I'll admit that was a good meal, but know we need some answers, now!" Reimu asked getting everyones attention " What is Organization XIII and what is the Ultima Brigade?"

Ziden looked over Yukari who nodded at him giving him the permission to tell them "I don't know much about Organization XIII, but I do know the Ultima Brigade well enough. The Ultima Brigade is an evil cult with the solitary goal of destroying and recreating the universe in their own image. One where they rule. One where there is no weak beings. One where there only strong beings. One where there is no light or opposition. One where the sick are slaughtered like pigs. Their leader's name is Ultima. That guy was properly named. That guy gave me a run for my money. Heck, I would have lost if Yukari and Ike hadn't come to my aid. But I want all of you to know if you see a man in a black kimono with shoulder length jet black hair with red cat-like eyes, do not I repeat do not try and fight him, understand?" Everyone nodded in unison. " Now we are on our way to another world in order to find a boy in red wielding something called a 'keyblade' so get your Exspheres ready and lets go to the Teleportation Room and enter this new world, all right guys? Oh right I almost forgot although you guys can't use spellcards you guys can still fly and fire off bullets so remember that. All right lets go!" Ziden said as he lead everyone into a room that had a giant, glowing circle. " This is the Teleportation Circle, it is going to take us down to the world without physically landing on the world, any questions?" Ziden noticed that Patchouli had a question. " If its about your inhaler, here." Ziden then threw the inhaler at Patchouli who barely caught it. " All right lets go!" Ziden said as the Circle began to glow with a mysterious light as it engulfed everyone making them vanish.

### *Somewhere unknown*

" The girls have made their descent into the worlds." A cloaked figure said.

" So the Legendary Hero found some new friends to aid himself this time, huh?" Another cloaked man said.

" Do not worry about them, worry about the boy who wields the key. His power will help to achieve our goals. Kingdom Hearts will be ours." Another cloaked man said will raising his arms skyward.

### *Back to the heroes of this tale*

As soon the bright light ended the girls found themselves in a forest clearing in front of an abandoned mansion that looked severely rundown.

" Man what a dump, ze! Kinda reminds me of a certain Scarlet Devil's mansion!" Marisa exclaimed while a certain vampire punched her into a pillar. " Ow! What was that for Remi?!" she said as Ziden and Reimu snickered at the moment " Hey whats so funny Spikey and Reddie?!" she said as she slowly got back up. She then noticed some figures approaching the mansion from beyond the locked gate.

Meiling noticed this and yelled to everyone " Hey there's someone running towards the mansion! And he's being chased by white creatures!" She said as everyone ran towards the gate to see. Sure enough a blond kid was running towards the mansion being chased by mysterious white creature floating towards him like deflating balloons.

### *Somewhere Else*

A man wrapped in red bandages and a man in black coat stand there looking at the situation that was occurring outside " So it appears we have uninvited guests approaching the mansion DiZ." The man in the black coat said.

"Humph, those disgusting nobodies! So they finally made their move, huh? Why don't you go and greet our guests?" DiZ said to the man in black who had created a CoD and had walked through it. DiZ then laughed and said " And soon the boy shall awaken and take care of these annoying nobodies!" he said as the screen showed a brown haired boy in red sleeping in a white flower-like pod...

*The girls had learned the purpose of the Ultima Brigade. They want to destroy and recreate the universe in their own sick, twisted image. After Ziden gave them Exspheres to augment their abilities in order to replace their now useless spellcards. They know found*

*themselves in front of an abandoned mansion ready to test their new abilities against these white foes.*

# Heartless! Nobodies! Plumbers?

## Sinister Sundown (Kingdom Hearts 2)

"Ugh! Don't these guys ever give up?!" The blond kid said while running away from the white creatures. He then found himself in front of the locked gates of the mansion." Great. Invite here and lock me out... huh?" He then noticed people behind the gates. " Hey! Open up the gates! I'm here like you asked!" He noticed that group were confused and looking at something behind him. He turned around to see a cloaked man wielding a sword that looked like a black and red bat wing with a light blue eye near the hilt of it. " Hey you're that guy from before! How do I get past that lock?"

" Use the keyblade." The cloaked man said with his back turned to the boy. The blond kid thought for a moment then pulled out a key-shaped weapon and pointed it at the gate as a bright light shot out from it and struck the lock enveloping it and then the lock completely vanished as the gate slowly opened as he quickly dashed past the group into the mansion.

" Man that kid sure had ants in his pants, huh?" Ziden said while walking through the door and stopped and turned the girls and said " Reimu, Marisa you're with me. Everyone else hold off those creatures! Time to give those Exspheres a workout! Remember the more enemies you beat, the more your Exsphere will grow giving you access to stronger moves got it?" everyone nodded while getting ready to fight the white creatures. " All right lets go ladies! Lets find that boy in red!" Ziden Said as Marisa flew in on her broom as Ziden and Reimu followed suit.

Ziden spotted the boy fighting off white creatures. " Hey kid! Need a hand?" Ziden yelled

" I'd appreciate it, the name's Roxas not kid!" Roxas said while he batted the white creature away.

" All right! Lets see what this bad boy can do!" Marisa exclaimed while raising her hand to sky as a bright light enveloped her hand and she pointed her hand at the white creature. " Lets do this! Comet!" she yelled as a barrage of comets blasted the white creature launching them all over. " Holy crap ze! That was awesome" She exclaimed while jumping up and down out of pure joy. Reimu looked at the attack with awe and then looked at her Exsphere wondering' what will mine do'.She then pointed her hand at the white creatures in front of her.

"Photon!" Reimu yelled as a yellow orb surrounded the creature and exploded leaving nothing but green orbs and small yellow diamonds " Hmm? What are those things?" She asked Roxas.

" The yellow diamonds are Munny and the green orbs restore health" Roxas said while dispatching another white creature. Reimu immediately ran towards the Munny and found that they flew into her pocket as she got close to them. Ziden looked confused as he Reimu running around scrambling to gather the Munny around her.

" Hey Marisa, is Reimu always like this when it comes to money?" Ziden asked while scratching his head in confusion.

" Yep! Its for her donation box back at her shrine, ze!" Marisa said hitting more creatures with Comet causing more Munny. She then noticed her Exsphere emitting a bright light. " Hey Ziden, why is my Exsphere glowing?" She asked Ziden while he was slicing through the last of the white creature with the Crimson Edge.

" That means that it ' leveled up'. Essentially it will get stronger and teach you stronger artes and abilities." Ziden said while picking up the Munny and health orbs.

## **Lazy Afternoon ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

After the white creatures had been dealt with, The girls and Ziden introduced themselves to Roxas who in turn introduced himself to them. Ziden asked Roxas what he was doing here and he explained

what happened to him in extreme detail while they entered the library. Reimu told Ziden to keep an eye on Marisa as she known for stealing books.

" Man Roxas! Talk about a brand new way of ending Summer Vacation." Ziden said while talking to Roxas. " So the boy in red is named Sora, huh?" Ziden said to himself while looking through the books. Roxas noticed that there was coloring utensils on the table in the middle of the room and begin to draw 3 circles on it when suddenly the floor began to glow and then disappear leaving a gray staircase leading to a hidden basement. Ziden and Reimu were surprised when it appeared out of nowhere and they prepared to walk down the stairs they noticed that Marisa was still upstairs looking at the books. " Hey Marisa, you coming with us or not?" Ziden said while slowly descending the staircase.

" Nope! I'm just going to look at these books for a while, ze! I'll see you guys when you come back, all right? Marisa said while reading a book.

The trio made their way into a room that had a computer like object in it. Roxas then walked up to the computer to get a closer look at it. He then had a sharp headache as he held his hand to his to head as if remembering something.

---

In an unknown city somewhere the boy known as Roxas was wearing a black jacket members of the organization wear was walking down the dark street as he spotted a red haired man in the same black jacket stood in front him leaning on the side of a building as if he was waiting for Roxas to come by.

" So its true, you really are leaving then/" The red haired said to Roxas

" Yeah." Roxas said while walking past him



" Roxas! The Organization will destroy you if you leave!" the red haired yelled at Roxas

" Nobody would miss me." Roxas said while leaving the red haired man behind.

" Thats not true. I would miss you." The red haired man said while looking depressed

Later on that day after what looked like a fight Roxas stood over a silver haired boy wearing a black blindfold who looked like he lost the fight.

"Why? Why do you have the keyblade?!" The silver haired youth said with anger in his voice

" Shut up!" Roxas said as he lifted his keyblade to deal the final blow only to have his opponent counter with his own keyblade knocking Roxas back and unconscious. He then walked up to Roxas and stabbed his keyblade into the ground next to Roxas' head.

Later in an underground basement

A man in red bandages and a man in black coat looked at the unconscious Roxas

" What shall you do with him DiZ?" The man in black asked

" I shall create a fake town and replace his memories with fake ones. He should be grateful." DiZ said to the Man in Black " Within a years time, Namine should be done gathering Sora's memories and then Roxas shall give the rest to Sora."

Back to reality

Roxas looked the computer in pure rage and then summoned the keyblade beginning to smash the computer with it shocking Ziden and Reimu.

" Whoa Roxas! We could have salvaged some info from that computer, man!" Ziden said walking towards the wrecked computer.

" Lets go." Roxas said while walking towards the door. They entered a small blue room that had green lines everywhere when all of a sudden the white creature appeared out of nowhere. But Ziden noticed that these ones looked different from the ones they fought earlier. These ones had long arms and seemed transform into different things such a large sword and small, hexagonal shield. The other ones looked white humanoid with large spikes going down the arm and could fly and phase through the ground. The trio drew their weapons ready for a fight as Ziden made the first move.

" Demon's Wave!" Ziden yelled as he swung his sword vertically causing a shock wave to shoot out and strike the white creatures scattering them in the process. " Heh, heh, time to party!" Ziden said as he leapt into the sky and began comboing the creatures with his sword with style and grace, taking out alot of them. Roxas began to attack the creature with his keyblade taking them out as well. Reimu however was running around gathering the munny that was falling from the defeated enemies leaving Roxas and ziden looking with sweatdrops on them as they looked at her. They noticed that a white creature was escaping through the other door. " Come on Reimu! After that thing!" Ziden yelled and then noticed that Reimu was still collecting the fallen Munny. " God Dammit." Ziden said running towards Reimu and picked her up much to her discontent and raced after the fleeing white creature.

" Wait up guys!" Roxas said while dispatching the last of the creatures as he noticed a CoD forming with a red haired man emerging from it. " Axel." Roxas said with a sad voice.

"Oh! So you do remember me this time! Well its too late!" Axel said while creating a ring of fire around the room. Roxas reacts by summoning a white keyblade ( Oathkeeper) in one hand and a black keyblade ( Oblivion) in the other hand suprising Axel. " Two keyblades?!" Axel said while fire was wrapping around his hands creating chakrams as he prepared to fight Roxas.

## **The 13th Struggle ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Axel then lit the floor on fire causing Roxas' feet to burn. Roxas then charged at Axel who leapt into the fire to dodge Roxas. Axel dashed out of the fire causing a pillar of fire to follow him which Roxas dodged and threw Oblivion at Axel striking him multiple times as Roxas followed up with a vicious combo with Oathkeeper launching Axel into the air completely stunned. Roxas leapt up and caught Oblivion and began to combo Axel mercilessly as he ended the assault by slamming both of his keyblades into Axel's stomach (essentially imagine the Clear Light Reaction Command from KH2) knocking him into the ground creating pillars of light erasing all of the fire in the room.

"... Not... bad... Ro... xas.." Axel struggled to say while he was on the ground with darkness enveloping him.

" I'll see in the next life Axel." Roxas said while de-summoning his keyblades.

Axel closed his eyes and thought for a moment " Yeah... I'll..see... you... there..." He said as the darkness fully engulfed him. Roxas tried not to cry over the death of his one true friend. Roxas then ran through the door that Ziden and Reimu went through earlier. He entered a completely white room with a large white pod in the middle of it. He also noticed Reimu beating Ziden over the head with her gohei while yelling at him to stop carrying her around like a ragdoll.

All of a sudden a man wrapped in red bandages appeared in front of the white pod. " It is about time you showed up Roxas." The mystery man said. " It is time to return to where you come from."

" No! I want to live my own life! Not someone else's." Roxas said while summoning his keyblade and swung it at the mystery man as Ziden and Reimu looked on. Roxas went right through him as the mystery man began to speak again.

" I am sorry, but this is only a hologram. It is time for you to return to Sora." The mystery man said while Roxas looked at him with pure hate. The front half of the pod began to open like a flower.

" I hate you." Roxas said with pure disdain in his voice.

" Oh, then make sure and pass on your hate to Sora." The man said before disappearing

Roxas looked at the boy in the pod. He then looked at his hand which was now disappearing and then said " It looks like my summer vacation is... over." he said before he fully disappeared leaving Ziden and Reimu in shock.

Sora ( Kingdom Hearts II)

The boy in red began to stir and awakened with a yawn and leapt out of the pod. He noticed that there were two people in the room with him. " Huh? Who are you two?" The boy asked them as they introduced themselves. " Well I'm Sora!" Sora said while putting his hands behind his head " Do you two know I got here? I can't seem to remember?" Sora said while scratching his head. All of a sudden an large white duck wearing a blue shirt and hat, and a large dog like creature wearing a green sweater with a black zip-up vest and orange baggy pants walked into the room. " Donald! Goofy!" Sora while running towards the strange pair.

" Hiya Sora! Boy it feels we've been asleep for a long time." Goofy said while stretching as he noticed the two other people in the room. " Gawrsh who are those two?" Goofy asked Sora.

" Thats Ziden and Reimu!" Sora said happily " They said they were looking for me!" Ziden then remembered his allies fighting outside.

" Oh crap I forgot! Hey kid are you good at fighting?" Ziden asked as Sora and friends nodded. " Come on! My friends need help outside!" Ziden said while running out of the basement grabbing Marisa along the way making their to the mansion when he saw the girls inside the

foyer resting from their long battle. " Oh you guys are all right." Ziden said while putting Marisa down as Sora, Donald and Goofy entered the room. " All right everyone time for introductions!" Everyone began to introduce themselves as they left the mansion, through a forest and entered a city.

Lazy Afternoon ( Kingdom Hearts II)

" Whoa! What is this place?!" Marisa said while flying around on her broom. " This a cool little town, ze!" Ziden and Sora noticed that three kids were walking over to them. One was a girl wearing an orange shirt white floral designs on it, one was a boy wearing a red jersey and the other was grey zip-up vest with a black shirt that had a white skull and cross bones on it.

" Hmm. You guys look like your new in town. I'm Olette, and over there is Hayner and Pence! What's your names, if you don't mind me asking?" Olette asked as everyone introduced themselves to the kids.

" Hey I got a question? Is there somewhere with a nice view of the sunset?" Ziden asked as Olette led them through the town and up a large slope until they reached train station over looking the town. Everyone except Ziden, Sora, Donald, Goofy and Meiling who stayed outside to look at the sunset, went inside the building to see the trains. " Man that is a nice looking sunset." Ziden said while entranced by its beauty

" Yes, it is nice. I've seen alot of nice sunsets during my gatekeeper job." Meiling said to Ziden who now looked curious.

" You're a gatekeeper?" Ziden asked Meiling

" Yep! I mean it isn't exactly fun, but its not boring either. I mean thats how I met Reimu and Marisa." Meiling said to Ziden " Although Marisa isn't really welcome because she steals Patchy's books on a weekly basis." She said with a sigh " That was back when we could

use spellcards, but these Exspheres are cool though. Thanks Ziden!" She said with a smile.

## **Tension Rising ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Of course the nice mood was ruined when the white creatures appeared. " What the heck are these things" Sora asked while summoning his keyblade ready to fight.

" Gwarsh, these guys don't look like Heartless" Goofy said with his shield out.

" Who cares!" Donald said with his wand out.

A barrier formed in front of the train station and the entrance to the slope. Meiling made the first move as she leapt at the creatures and proceeded to strike them with flurries of fists and kicks leaving Sora and Ziden stunned. " Hey! Mind giving me a hand, here?!" She said while fending off the creatures. Sora and Ziden jumped into the fray began taking out the creatures left and right.

" Thunder!" Donald yelled as a thunderbolt struck a group of enemies taking them out in the process. Ziden scrambled to collect the Munny that dropped from them as Ziden began his assault.

" Crimson Storm!" Ziden yelled as a multitude of red sword slashes erupted from his sword swing taking out a large number of enemies.

Sora leapt into the air pointing his keyblade as a large orange ball formed at the tip " Take this! Ragnarok!" Sora yelled as the ball exploded into orange lights piercing the creatures juggling them into the air.

But the creatures kept coming as the 5 fighters became tired and fell down with Sora saying " Come on! Enough already!" He said as the creatures rushed them only to get intercepted by a mouse in a black coat wielding a keyblade.

" K-K-King Mickey" Sora, Donald and Goofy said in unison only to have Mickey shush them.

" There is no time to catch up! Take this and board the train heading to the Mysterious Tower!" Mickey said while handing Sora a pouch before running off.

Lazy afternoon ( Kingdom Hearts II)

The group all got up and entered the train station and told the girls what happened as they went towards the train they were told to take. The train had a Magician's Hat on top of it and was colored blue with white stars all over it. Everyone except Ziden and Sora boarded the train while they were saying good bye to Hayner and friends.

" Well I guess this is good-bye then." Olette said while looking sad " Will you guys be coming back to visit us?"

" Of course! We'll be back to visit you guys in- Whats the name of this town again?" Ziden asked Olette as she told him " We'll be visiting Twilight Town again someday."Ziden said with a smile. He looked over at Sora who seemed to have tears coming from his eyes. " Hey Sora. Why are you crying?"

" What? I'm not crying- huh?" Sora said while wiping his eyes dry. " W-Why am I crying?"

Ziden then dragged Sora onto the train leaving Hayner and friends confused.

" That kid. I don't know why, but I feel like I know that kid." Pence said while rubbing his chin and watching the train leave going to an unknown.

" Whatever Pence. Lets get back to the hideout." Hayner said while walking away.

Meanwhile on the train

## Magical Mystery ( Kingdom Hearts II)

" Hey Ziden, I've meaning to ask. How come we can hear music playing wherever we are?" Patchouli asked Ziden whom was sitting right next to her.

" Well thats because a god from my world, the Outside World you call it, watches peoples adventures and plays music according to the situation allowing everyone to hear." Ziden said Patchouli listened intently. " Henry seems to like my adventures the most because he created obstacles just for me that work sorta like video games back in the outside world. They are called Gates and there are 5 different kinds of Gates: Platformers, Gauntlets, Speed, Chase and Boss Fight. Here. This book will tell you everything." Ziden said as he handed a brown book that was titled 'Gates, The Fun Obstacles by Ziden Icrim' to Patchouli who accepted it. " I'm sure a smart and beautiful woman such as yourself can understand it." Ziden said in a flirtatious manner which made Patchouli blush as she began to read the book.

" So that weapon is something only you can use, right Sora?" Remilia asked while waiting for Sora's answer.

" Yeah, I guess. I remember hearing that it chooses someone only if that person is worthy of wielding one." Sora said with his hands behind his head

" So there isn't just one?" Sakuya asked

" Nope! I know that I have one and King Mickey has one but thats all I know who have one." Sora said

" So can I wield one? I'm pretty sure I'm more than worthy!" Remilia said while showing a very sharp smile that showed her fangs jarring Sora.

" I don't know. All I remember was having this weird dream with me choosing 2 items and answering questions." Sora said while



thinking. Remilia began to daydream about what her keyblade will look like when interrupted everyone by saying.

"Ugh! When are we getting to this Tower! I'm bored!" Ziden complained as everyone ignored him and continued their conversations.

" So Yukari? How exactly do you know Ziden and Ike?" Reimu asked

" I know Ziden because of his mother whom I know very well. I watched over him as he grew up into the hero he now. I met Ike during our last tango with the Ultima Brigade.." Yukari said.

" So this Ziden, can we trust him?" Alice asked.

" Yes although he does have his quirks. Like he will flirt with all of you at one point during this journey. Ziden is a very rash person and will often jump into situations without thinking of the consequences of his actions." Yukari said " But Ziden is very kind person at heart and cares for his friends and teammates. I trust him. Somewhat."

" Hey look a tower!" Marisa said while pointing out the window. Sure enough there was tower in the distance. The train ended up arriving at their destination which surprised them as it was a tower on a floating island. They all stepped off the train looking around at their new surroundings. Ziden noticed that there was treasure chest scattered throughout the small island. " Oh sweet! Treasure!" Marisa said while trying to open it. She noticed it had a keyhole and dragged Sora over to it " Open it quick key-kid!" Marisa said while Sora tapped the treasure chest and it opened as a container with a green liquid popped.

" Oh its just a potion." Sora said while walking towards the tower. The noticed that a large man was in front the door peeking in. " Hey what are you doing?"

" Shush! I just sent in some Heartless to turn the sorcerer into a heartless!" The large man said.

" Heartless?!" Sora, Donald and Goofy said in unison

" Yep! Heartless are the creatures that are gonna help me and Maleficent conquer all worlds!" He said while laughing

" Maleficent, huh?" Sora said before they started laughing

" Huh?! What so funny you bozos- what the?!" He said while turning to look at the people laughing at him shocking Donald and Goofy " What are you two doing here?!"

" Pete! What are YOU doing here?!" Donald said angrily

" Huh? Who's this Pete guy?" Sora asked Goofy

" Pete is trouble maker who was banished into another dimension by our King." Goofy said answering Sora's question " The question is: how did he get out?"

" Why Maleficent busted me out of course! In fact she'd gonna be glad when I turn the sorcerer in this tower into a Heart-" Pete said before being interrupted by Sora

" She's toast." Sora said with his hands behind his head

" What?! So it was you!" Heartless Squad Round up!" Pete said while summoning shadow-like creatures from nowhere.

Working Together ( Kingdom Hearts II)

While the others started to run over to help, Sora stopped them and said " Stay back! We can handle these guys" Sora said while summoning his keyblade as he then noticed that Pete was long gone.

Sora dashed at the creatures beating them senseless with his keyblade. Donald was blasting them with thunder magic while Goofy was charging through them with his shield. The shadow creatures were defeated with ease, Sora put away his keyblade and saw Pete

hiding behind the bush " All right spill it! Who lives in this tower, Pete!" Sora asked

" Why the mighty Yen Sid of course!" Pete said before he ran away.

" Master Yen Sid lives here?!" Donald said before running inside the tower

" Who is Yen Sid?" Sora asked as the others entered tower.

" Master Yen Sid is the one who trained the King in magic." Goofy said as they entered the tower.

Magical Mystery ( Kingdom Hearts II)

After ascending the tower some and opening a few treasure chests.

" I don't get it. Why are there so many heartless? Aren't the worlds at peace?" Sora said while everyone entered a room that had desk with someone behind wearing a wizard's hat, a blue cloak and had gray beard.

" Ah. I was wondering when you would show up, Sora." the man said while running his fingers through his beard

Donald and Goofy bowed to him and said " Master Yen Sid!" in unison

" Ah yes Donald and Goofy. It has been awhile has it not?" Yen Sid said " But before we continue, Sora please go see the three fairies through that door over there for a change of clothes. Those clothes you are wearing are too small." He said while Sora looked at how small his clothes have gotten. Sora walked into the door he was instructed to enter as Ziden followed behind.

When the duo entered the room, the three fairies approached Sora ready to change his clothes. Ziden laughed as they had put a princess' dress on Sora. Sora yelled at them to make up their mind already. The three fairies bickered a little and then decided to

combine their magic as it hit Sora's clothes changing them drastically. The hoodie is colored black, with silver pauldron-like additions to his sleeves and white lining. His undershirt is a navy blue with a red patch in the center. His pants, similar to chaps, are colored black on the outside, and a navy blue on the inside, lined with silver-white edging. Yellow straps criss-cross around his pants, held together with a black belt. The pants feature red pockets with a black cross over them. His gloves are colored black on the outside and white on the inside with a yellow line running around them. He also wears large black-yellow shoes with silver soles, a zipper running across the top, and black straps holding them together with buckles here and there. Ziden looked impressed at Sora's new clothes. The fairies proceeded to tell him that the clothes have special powers as they handed him yellow orb which he absorbed. A bright light surrounded Sora as it eventually died down showing Sora now wearing a red and black version of his outfit as red electricity sparked around him. Ziden noticed that he had another keyblade in his hand. Sora then changed back to his regular form as the fairies gave him a device that tells how much drive energy he has left. Sora thanks the fairies and leaves the room with Ziden they rejoined the group. Sora noticed that Yukari was glaring at Ziden with an annoyed look as she proceeded to talk to Ziden.

" Ziden, how long were you going to keep silent about losing your powers... AGAIN?!" Yukari said with much anger in her voice. Ziden remained silent with his arms crossed refusing to say anything. Yukari then grabbed Ziden by his collar and forces him against the wall.

"Meh. Its not like I lost all of them. I've still got Rebirth, Regeneration and control over Space." Ziden said while not impressed with Yukari's act of violence. " I lost them during that large demon invasion I was dealing with. I was going to go find them until a certain youkai decides to spirit me away Gensokyo... again." Yukari puts Ziden down and walks away " all right Yen Sid, what are we dealing with?" Ziden asked as if nothing happened just now.

" Of course. I'm sure you all know of the Ultima Brigade, correct?" Yen Sid asked as everyone except Sora, Donald and Goofy nodded. Yen Sid waved his hand causing a hologram of Donald appeared. " Now then, when a person's heart succumbs to darkness, a Heartless is created." He said as Donald's image changed into a shadow like creature like the ones they encountered earlier. " This is a Heartless. These creatures of the dark scramble around looking for hearts to steal. They are mindless, as they live solely by instinct. There are many types of Heartless, be careful for some are exceptionally powerful." He said while waving his hand to show image of Goofy. " Now when a person with strong will loses their heart to darkness an empty shell is left behind." He said as Goofy's image changed to a white humanoid creature. " This is a Nobody. a being devoid of a heart or emotions. The ones you see before you is known as a Dusk, the weakest form of a Nobody. Unlike Heartless, they are cunning and are capable of thought making them dangerous. There are different types of Nobodies each with their own unique powers and abilities. But the ones you should worry about are these ones." He said as the image now showed 3 cloaked figures. " They are Organization 13, a group of powerful nobodies. They lead over the lesser Nobodies. I do not know what their goals are, but I do know this. They may seem to act like they have hearts, but they don't. Nobodies can't feel anything. Beware of them young heroes. Now then, because of Sora saving the worlds from Ansem, the Seeker of Darkness, the worlds are now closed from each other, but with the keyblade you can reopen these worlds. all you have to do is find these gateways hidden on these worlds. I must warn you Sora, this journey will be twice as difficult as your last one." He said as Sora looked saddened.

"\*Sigh\*, just when I thought I could back home to the Islands." Sora said while looking down " Ah well, at least now we can look for Riku! By the way, how are we going to get to these worlds with no Gummi Ship?" Sora asked as Ziden stepped up to give the answer.

Sora ( Kingdom Hearts II)

" I have a spaceship! You can use that, after all we're in this together, right guys?" Ziden said while everyone nodded. " All right everyone head outside and get ready to board the ship!" He said as everyone except Yukari left to head outside. Ziden turned to Yen Sid with a serious face. " Yen Sid. Is it true that Ultima wasn't the god that the Ultima Brigade believe in?" He said shocking Yukari.

" Unfortunately yes. Their god's name is Omega, a man you should be more than familiar with, after all he is your clone." Yen Sid said to Ziden " The last time you fought him, you beat your clone into such a state where he needed people to protect him while he recovers thus creating the Ultima Brigade. Any other questions you need answered?" Yen Sid asked Ziden

" Just one more. Where is 'he'?" Ziden asked

" That I do not know. I have not sensed any disturbances in the darkness since you last defeated him." Yen Sid said while rubbing his beard. Ziden bowed his head in thanks and left to meet up with his new allies leaving Yukari and Yen Sid alone.

"\*sigh\*. He sure does remind me of his mother when she was younger." Yukari said walking after him.

Yen Sid looked out of his window and looked at the sky. " I hope Ziden and Sora can defeat these dangerous foes."

The Magic Circle appeared around the group again as it enveloped the group in the bright light. The Light ended as they found themselves in the control room of the spaceship. " All right guys lets go to the next World!" Ziden said as flew by a new world which looked like a a regular planet except it clouds with eyes orbiting the world. " Sorry Sora I know you totally want a tour of my awesome ship, but its time for adventure!" They had teleported to the new world, ready to face this new threat. The light stopped they saw that they were at a port. They also that were mushroom people at this port.

## Ground Theme ( Super Mario Bros.)

" Whoa! What is this place?! It looks so cool!" Sora said while looking around, he also noticed two people approaching them. One had on blue overalls with a red shirt underneath. The other one was also wearing blue overalls but had a green shirt underneath. They walked up to Ziden who said.

" Mario and Luwiggi- I mean Luigi! I knew we were in the Mushroom Kingdom! So what are the famous Bros. up to this time?" Ziden asked

" Princess Peach gave us this treasure map, so we are heading to a place called Rogueport so that we can meet up with her and find it together! You and your friends want to come too?" Mario asked as Ziden nodded. Everyone introduced themselves to Mario and Luigi. Everyone followed Mario and Luigi to the boat they were taking to Rogueport.

*So the group began their voyage to Rogueport as Ziden explained what was going on to Mario and Luigi who were shocked to learn that the Ultima Brigade was back and had back-up. The group reflected on what they learned from master Yen Sid: The Heartless and Nobodies. Dangerous foes that were sure to appear wherever they went. But what they didn't know that a new danger was waiting for them in Rogueport...*

Author's Notes: From now on music shall be playing for the upcoming chapters and also if you all want me to write down the artes and abilities the girls know currently. Also yes this a Paper Mario Thousand Year Door Arc with each Chapter happening in one chapter making this an 8-Chapter Arc. Please enjoy future releases!

## Crystal Stars and Roasted Kalamari!

*The group began their venture into an unknown land. It had been a long day for the group. Heartless. Nobodies. Organization 13. Ultima Brigade. They relaxed on the boat ride while having conversations with each other. Ziden was talking to the Mario Bros and Sora. Ike was talking to Remilia, Flandre and Sakuya who was holding umbrellas over their heads to protect them from sunlight. Donald was talking to Patchouli, Alice and Marisa about magic. Reimu was counting all the Munny she collected from previous fights with the Heartless and Nobodies. Yukari, who was still upset at Ziden losing his powers again, stared at the ocean to calm herself down. Goofy and Meiling were sitting down talking about their jobs. Youmu was looking at her swords, making sure they were sharp and ready to fight. The ship had set out to sea and was chugging along at a steady pace.*

### **Sailing to Rogueport ( Paper Mario 2)**

" Wow. So you two fight this guy named Bowser while saving the princess? Man thats cool!" Sora said while very excited after hearing tales of Mario and Luigi's adventures through the Mushroom Kingdom.

" Not as cool as you though! You took down a guy threatening to drown all worlds in eternal darkness! Can't lie, kid that is pretty awesome!" Ziden said while giving Sora a pat on the back for taking out Ansem.

" Really? Thanks! By the way those two are vampires right?" Sora said while pointing over at Remilia and Flandre as Ziden nodded to signify that they are vampires. " Well I mean if they can't be in sunlight, how are they going to fight effectively during the day?" Sora asked



" I'll do something about it before we hit land, so don't worry about it kiddo!" Ziden said as he began to walk over to the pair of vampiric sisters. " Hows it going ladies?" Ziden asked the young vampires.

" Hey Big Sis! It's that weird guy!" Flandre said cheerfully as her older sister sighed.

" What do you want this time, Ziden?" Remilia asked sharply

" I'm just over here to help with a certain problem that someone brought up in a nice conversation." Ziden said as Remilia looked over him to look at Sora who was waving at them. " I'm here to help with the sunlight situation."

" Oh? And how exactly will you help us out, human?" Remilia asked

" Well I could shroud you two in a special aura that blocks your weakness sunlight, but then again I really don't have if your going to be rude to me." Ziden said while looking down on Remilia. Sakuya who was watching this then decided to speak up.

" Mistress. I believe you should apologize to Ziden, he is offering to help you of his own accord." Sakuya said with her usual monotone voice.

" Humph fine! I'm sorry, all right! Now do whatever it is you're going to do and begone already! Remilia said with anger in her voice. Ziden then looked at Sakuya who simply shrugged at him.

" All right lets get this over with. Give me your hands please?" Ziden asked as Flandre immediately handed him her hand. Ziden took her hand and using his index finger he drew a crescent moon on the back of her hand which then proceeded to glow leaving an indentation of a crescent moon on her hand. " Done! Go ahead and fly around!" Ziden said as Remilia and Sakuya looked confused at what just happened. Flandre, a little confused as Ziden motioned for her to leave the umbrella's shade and protection. She reached her hand out into the sunlight and flinched expecting sharp, burning pain,

but she noticed that she didn't feel anything at all leaving Remilia shocked. She then leapt out of the shade and began to walk around completely unfazed by the sunlight. " Your turn Remilia!" Ziden said while forcibly placing the crescent moon on Remilia's hand. " Your welcome by the way!" Ziden said as Flandre ran over to hug Ziden.

" Thanks Mister Weird Guy!" Flandre said while hugging Ziden a bit too hard.

"No... Problem... can..you..please... stop..hugging... me" Ziden struggled to say while being bearhugged by the little girl. Flandre let go of Ziden and then proceeded to stare at him. " By the way, My name's Ziden not weird guy." Ziden said while trying to catch his breath.

" Zi-den?" Flandre said while bobbing her head left and right. " But weird guy sounds better than Ziden!" She said while Remilia laughed.

" Really? I just prefer calling him human." Remilia said while snickering

" \*Sigh\* Are your Mistresses always like this?" Ziden asked Sakuya who nodded her head

" Oh! Mister Weird Guy! Lets play tag!" Flandre said as Remilia stopped laughing and shook her head at Ziden.

" Um okay?" Ziden said as Flandre jumped up and down in joy.

" Ziden? Can you run fast or regenerate lost body parts?" Sakuya asked Ziden

" Uh yeah. Why?" Ziden asked

" Flandre is powerful and doesn't know how to hold back when playing, so she end up injuring you. So please be careful. We would sadly miss your presence if she were to accidently kill you, especially

Patchouli and Meiling. They seem to have taken a liking to you." Sakuya said with no emotion.

" Ready Mister Weirdo? Cause I'm it!" Flandre said while beginning to lunge at Ziden. Ziden, thanks to his quick reflexes, dodges her lunge and began to run away from Flandre. " Wow! He's good at this game!" Flandre said as she began to chase Ziden around the ship while he was screaming like a girl.

" Wow. He is still fast without his super speed. I wonder where his powers are?" Ike asked. He noticed that Sakuya was thinking about something. " Hey Sakuya! What are you thinking about?"

" That man. Ziden Icrim. I've heard of him before, but where?" Sakuya said to herself as Remilia walked up to her.

" Yeah now that I think about it, his name does sound familiar." Remilia said while scratching her chin. " Maybe we heard it from Patchouli?"

" Perhaps." Sakuya replied

*Meanwhile over near the Magicians*

" So you're a magician that works for your king?" Alice asked Donald as he nodded

" Yep! When it comes to magic, I have no equal! In fact I even taught Sora how to use magic!" Donald said with a proud voice

" Huh? But I haven't seen that kid use magic at all!" Marisa said

" Now that I think about it, that is true." Alice agreed

" Yeah, he wasn't really a big user of magic. But when he did it always worked in our favor!" Donald said

" Hard to believe that Sora once saved all worlds from destruction." Patchouli said while still reading the book Ziden gave her. They then

noticed Ziden running past them with Flandre chasing him. " Well it looks like Flandre is having fun."

" But how is she flying around in sunlight and not exploding or something?" Marisa asked while scratching her head.

" Maybe Ziden did some form of magic that protects her from sunlight." Alice said while messing with her doll

*Meanwhile over near the Guardsman*

" Oh so you're a gatekeeper too?" Meiling asked Goofy

" Sorta! I'm the Captain of the King's Royal Knights!" Goofy said happily

" Huh? So do you protect your castle from intruders as well?" Meiling asked

" Actually I act as back-up to the King whenever there is intruder. He likes to take care of things himself." Goofy said

" Wow. Your King and my Mistress sound completely different." Meiling said while looking down " I have to stand outside all day and night. I rarely get any breaks." She said as she saw Ziden running by being chased by Flandre who was close behind him. She simply sighed at the sight and laid down in the to take a small nap when all sudden then captain of the ship yelled.

"LAND HOOOOOOOOO!" He yelled at the top of his lungs. The group then saw that they were approaching a harbor as the boat began to dock. The group left the ship to find themselves in a very run-down port.

## **Rogueport ( Paper Mario 2)**

" This must be Rogueport." Ziden said as he looked around his new surroundings. "Hmmm?" Ziden said as he noticed commotion over near the stairs. He also noticed that Mario was already over there

and began to run over there as well with Sora following close behind him.

At the center of the commotion was a brown mushroom girl who was being harrassed by a man wearing a purple viking helmet, glasses, a red spiky scarf and a black shirt with a white X on it, purple pants with black shoes. He also had two other people with him who were wearing white hats and red bodies with a white X on it

" All right little girl! We saw asking around town about Crystal Stars, so tell us what you know if you know what's good for you!" The Helmet man said

" Yeah right you bozos! I'm not telling you anything!" the mushroom girl said

" Fine then I'll just beat it out of you!" the helmet man said as he charged at the girl only to get drop-kicked by Mario, sending him flying into a wall. "OUCH!" The man yelled out in pain. He then got off the wall and brought his fingers to mouth and whistled, summoning an army of red and white henchman to dogpile on Mario and friends. After a few minutes he told them to stop ready to see bloody and beaten bodies only to see that no one was there. " What the-! Where'd they go?!" The man asked while looking around only for a henchman to walk up to him.

" Uh, Lord Crump dude! I think they like got away brah!" The henchman said with a strong surfer's accent. Helmet guy got furious and ordered everyone to return to base.

*Meanwhile back to our heroes*

They were now in the plaza of the town resting after that escape they pulled off.

" Wow its not everyday that you get rescued by the Legendary Mario!" the mushroom girl said as she jumped and gave Mario a kiss on the cheek and said " My name is Goombella!" She said as

everyone introduced themselves to her " So Mario? What brings you to Rogueport?" She asked as Mario explained to her. " So Princess Peach bought a map here, sent it to you and asked you to come find it with her? Can I see this map please?" She asked as Mario handed her the map who briefly looked at it and handed it back to Mario " I think I know someone who can help us. His is Professor Frankly and he lives somewhere in this town. Lets go find him!" She said as she noticed a an old man with a mushroom with brown spots on his head was walking over to them.

" Master Mario, Luigi and Ziden! Thank goodness, you're here! The Princess is missing!" The old man said before bursting into tears.

" Calm down Toadsworth! We'll find her eventually." Ziden said not surprised at all. " After all, thats what always happens, right?" Ziden asked as Mario and Luigi nodded. " So just calm down and go rest somewhere okay?" He said as Toadsworth nodded and walked towards the Inn/Bar. " So Goombella, do you know where this Frankly guy lives?"

" Nope, only that he lives on the east side of town." Goombella said as she began to walk towards the east side of the town as everyone except Ziden and Patchouli followed.

Ziden felt someone was watching him from afar as he looked up at the rooftops until he saw a shadowy figure was looking right at him with a sadistic smile on his face. " It can't be." Ziden said under his breath as Patchouli walked up to him.

" Is something wrong?" Patchouli asked as she saw Ziden was staring up at the rooftops when she saw a puff of black where the shadowy figure was. " Why are you staring at the smoke from those chimneys?"

" I thought I saw someone up there. Must be seeing things again." Ziden lied as he walked to catch up with the group as Patchouli slowly walked behind him thinking about what she just saw.

" What was that just now? That man on the roof looked alot like Ziden." She thought as she was walking behind Ziden.

Ziden noticed that a man in a red cloak with a white, mask-like face had crashed into Mario and ran past him only to be grabbed by Ziden. " Hand over the coins you just stole from him or else." Ziden said as the Bandit handed him the coins before he ran off crying. He gave the coins back to Mario and began to ask people where professor Frankly lives. They eventually found out and entered his house which was filled with maps and books with another brown mushroom with gray hair circling his head. The mushroom turned around to greet his guests.

### **Professor Frankly ( Paper Mario 2)**

" Hello there. Anything I can help you folks with?" The old mushroom asked as Mario, Luigi and Goombella approached him told him what was going on. " I see. So you need my help to decipher an ancient map? Let me see it?" He asked as the Map was handed to him as a look of excitement spread across his face. "T-T-T-T-This map! Could it be?!" He said as walked over to a bookshelf and got a book and placed it on the table and said " It is! This is a map to find the fabled Crystal Stars!" He said before explaining to everyone the Legend of the Thousand Year Door.

" All right so we just take this map to this Thousand Year Door and it will show us where to find these crystal star thingies?" Marisa asked

" Yes and I shall show you to this door, please follow me everyone." Frankly said while leading everyone outside to a gate, which he unlocked, and to a green pipe.

" Huh? Are we going down this green pipe?" Remilia asked as Ziden nodded before jumping in it. " I guess that's a yes then. At least there be no sunlight down there." She said before leaping in. It was a weird experience for the girls as they felt themselves falling down a dark tunnel until they felt a sensation sliding down a slide as they

exited the pipe. The group found themselves in a sewer as Frankly began walking up some stairs.

### **Underground ( Paper Mario 2 )**

" You know it is odd that the music always seems to fit in to wherever we are?" Sora said before leaping into another pipe leading them into room that several places that were too high to reach by foot and a large yellow block with eyes. They also noticed a mouse-like creature with a glowing ball that on a antenna coming from its head. The creature noticed the group and ran away between bars of iron. Mario and Luigi noticed a light blue switch with an exclamation mark in it and walked over to it and hit causing a staircase to appear on the east side of the room. Ziden noticed a black key on a ledge and jumped up to the ledge to grab the key. After climbing the stairs they noticed a room with a large black chest in it that was locked.

Ziden handed Mario the key he found as Mario proceeded to open the as darkness erupted from the chest swallowing the room as a evil looking face formed on the wall and began to speak.

### **Curse of the black box ( Paper Mario 2)**

" AAhahahhahahahahahahahaha! Thank you for freeing me fools! As thanks heres a curse that I KNOW you'll love! Farewell!" The face said as a purple light formed around Mario and Luigi before the face and darkness disappeared.

### **Underground ( Paper Mario 2)**

" Uhhhhhh, what just happened?" Reimu asked as they left the room.

The Mario Bros. walked onto a panel that had a picture of a paper airplane on it. They then jumped into the air and turned into paper airplanes flying over to the other ledge they couldn't reach before leaving the girls shocked.



" Ah-ha! I see what that 'curse' did! It allows them to turn into airplanes when they touch those panels." Ziden said before leaping over to the Mario Bros. The girl all took flight while carrying Sora and others because they can't fly. They entered into a room that had a big circular platform with a raised round pedestal with star indentation on it.

### **Thousand Year Door ( Paper Mario 2)**

" All right Mario! Go stand on that pedestal and raise the map to the sky to learn the location of the first Crystal Star!" Frankly said as he approached the pedestal as Mario and Goombella followed behind as Mario stepped onto the pillar as bright lights surrounded him. The map began to float into the air as the lights enveloped it. After a few seconds the lights died off and the map floated into Mario's hands showing a castle had appeared on it with a clear Crystal Star over it. " Hmmm? It appears that the Crystal Star is in that castle near Petalburg." Frankly said after looking at the map "Luckily there is a warp pipe in these very sewers please follow me!" He as everyone followed him through when all of a sudden Ziden felt someone elbowing him in the side of his arm turned to see Meiling.

" Hey Ziden? What is that professor supposed to be?" Meiling asked

" He is a Goomba, a species on this world." Ziden answered before leaping into the warp pipe.

A few warp pipes and walking later

The group found themselves in a room filled with water and moving floating platforms. They also noticed a Green warp pipe with a sign next to it. Another thing they noticed was that a tentacle was coming out of the water and blocking their way. Mario walked up to the tentacle and smacked it with his hammer causing it to shoot back into the water. The ground began shake as a giant white squid appeared! The group got ready to fight when all of a sudden a red curtain blocked their vision and vanished showing that they were

now on a stage with an audience watching the fight. " Huh? This is new." Ziden said as he looked at the audience and stage.

### **Event Battle ( Paper Mario 2)**

" Oh right Mario! Thanks to that map, you are now able to use the power of the stars from now on!" Frankly said before leaping into an empty seat in the audience. " Using the Crystal Star's powers requires Star Power which you can get from appealing to the fans by doing flashy and cool looking moves! You can see how much Star Power you have by looking at that device on your arm! Now get to fighting!" Frankly yelled as Mario looked the device that had appeared on his arm. The group focused their attention on the giant squid across from them who looked very mad.

"BLOOOOOOOOOOOOOOP! WHO JUST GOES AROUND HAMMERING PEOPLES TENTACLES?!" The squid said as he looked at Mario who was holding a hammer. " IT WAS YOU! I'M GOING TO ENJOY BEATING YOU SENSELESS, YOU MOUSTACHED FREAK!"

The Squid's tentacle flew at Mario who jumped high to dodge leaving audience to gasp.

Youmu who saw that the squid's guard was wide open and dashed at the Squid and yelled " Tiger Blade!" She yelled as she leapt while doing an upwards slash followed by a downwards slash that left large cuts on the squid's audience applauded as yellow stars flew from them and entered the device on Mario's wrist. Youmu continued her assault by launching 3 consecutive sword waves that exploded against the squid's body causing it to fall over.

Remilia continued the attack by slashing with her claws striking the squid while it was down. Mario and Luigi, with fire and lightning in their respective hands, began their attack. They pointed their hands at the fallen squid and yelled " ELEMENTAL BROS. BARRAGE!" They yelled in unison as dragons made of fire and lightning shot out from their hands, blasting the squid with a barrage flames and electricity

turning the squid into a pile of ash that was blown away by the wind. The audience cheered for their victory and threw coins on the stage for the heroes to collect as victory music played.

## Underground ( Paper Mario 2)

With the squid killed, the group began their trek to the green warp pipe. After they leapt into it they found themselves in a beautiful meadow. They looked around this new area when the girls heard a familiar voice.

" About time you got here, Legendary Hero." The voice behind them said.

The group turned around to see a white-haired woman leaning against a tree with her red eyes locked onto Ziden. The woman was wearing a light brown shirt that appears as if it has been discolored from fire, and dark red overalls that are randomly decorated with paper charms. Her hair is tied with these same red and white paper charms. Ziden felt like he had seen this woman before.

" Uhhhh. Do I know you? And what do you want with me?" Ziden asked while drawing out Crimson Edge in case of a fight.

" Humph. Don't remember me oh well. What I want is your dead body." The woman said as a fiery aura wrapped around her.

" Ah crap! You're that crazy chick I fought for that moon princess!" Ziden said ready to fight another hard battle.

*Rogueport, a town of mystery. The group of travelers began their treasure hunt and princess search as their journey in this weird and quirky town. Crystal Stars, the seven keys that will open the Thousand Year Door allowing access to a wonderful treasure. After learning the location of the first Crystal Star and killing an angry squid, Ziden found himself in a fight against a person he fought in the past for a girl too lazy to fight her own battles. Will Ziden defeat*

*this 'crazy chick'? Will Princess Peach be rescued? Will Cirno ever become smart or strong? Stay tuned to find out!*

Authors Notes: I will give people a cookie if they can figure out who the mystery woman and moon princess are. If you play Touhou you should know them. Also a certain Fire Emblem character will be appearing in the next chapter as a baddie. Also leave a review to let me know if you enjoy the story or hate it so far. I would deeply appreciate it. Please enjoy future releases!

# **Ziden, Woman Slayer Ike, Dragon Slayer**

## **Enemy Encounter ( Paper Mario 2)**

"Mokou!? What are you doing here?!" Reimu asked ready to back up Ziden in this fight.

" Stay out of this, shrine maiden. This is between me and him." Mokou said while walking towards Ziden stopping right in front of him. " Ready to die, boy?" She said as she sized up Ziden.

" Let do this!" Ziden said as the red curtain wrapped around them bringing them back to the stage with Ziden's allies in the audience.

## **Struggle Away The Fight for My Friends ( Kingdom Hearts 358/2 Days)**

" I know that you lost your powers. Shame your powers over fire was one of them." Mokou said before she threw something for Ziden to catch. It was a glowing orb that had fire inside of it. Ziden looked at her with confusion. " I want to fight you to see whose flame is stronger: Yours or Mine. As for that orb, I found it while wandering these plains." She said assuming a battle pose.

Ziden absorbed the orb as fire wrapped around him before disappearing. Ziden exhaled a small breath of fire before charging at Mokou. Ziden charged at Mokou with swift successive kicks which she blocks with ease. Ziden then attacks with a leaping axe kick only for her to block with a kick of her own. " Is that all you got, boy?" Mokou said while shrugging off Ziden's attacks. Ziden jumps away as fire enveloped his leg.

" Burning Slicer!" Ziden yelled as he kicked his burning leg releasing a shockwave made of fire that flew at Mokou, who tried to block with her hand, it exploded sending her flying into a wall. Ziden followed up with a furious combo of punches and kicks as Mokou tried to

dodge the assault, but couldn't and was hit hard by the attacks. She ends up releasing a barrage of fire that blasted Ziden away. The audience began to cheer Ziden's name as turtles wearing green helmets stood up wielding hammers.

" All right, Hammer Bros., take aim at White Hair and let 'em fly! Attack!" The Hammer Bro said as a barrage of hammers flew at the stage hitting Mokou (and sometimes Ziden) multiple times until she shot fire balls at the Hammer bros. melting the very flesh off their bones.

" Anyone else want to interfere in the fight, huh?" Mokou said as the audience calmed down and then out of nowhere another hammer hit her square in the face. She noticed that it flew from the direction of Ziden who was juggling multiple hammers. " You know at first I wanted to beat you senseless and kill you afterwards. Now I'm just going to kill you slowly and horribly." She said while forming a spear made of pure fire as Ziden drew out his weapon as well.

Mokou charged at Ziden with very fast thrusts who could barely dodge the assault as she ended up stabbing through the shoulder causing intense pain to Ziden. Mokou simply laughed at him as his bleeding wound was slowly regenerating. Ziden then unleashed a viscous assault of sword slices that ended cutting up Mokou badly only for her wounds to heal as well. Mokou looked at her badly torn clothes with a frown and began to shoot a volley of fire balls at Ziden only for him to counter with a special move.

" Flash Sword: Hellfire!" Ziden yelled as a flurry of fiery sword slashes erupted from his sword swing hitting the fire balls and Mokou multiple times. " Had enough yet, psycho-bitch?!" Ziden said while panting.

" I told you already. I'm not going to stop until you're dead." Mokou said while twirling the spear as if nothing just happened. Mokou leapt at Ziden while spinning like a drill that was surrounded by fire. "Take this! Hell-storm Drill Devastation!" She yelled as the attack hit Ziden square in the chest slamming him into the wall as the audience

gasped in horror at the amount of blood that was flying out onto them and the stage. Ziden ended up sliding down the wall leaving a blood-trail on the wall and landing face-down and nearly unconscious as Mokou began to stomp on Ziden's spine. The Gensokyo girls all looked in horror at how brutal Ziden was being beaten. Flandre, however, was the one who took action first she leapt onto the stage to save her tag buddy and slashed Mokou hard across the back with her claws causing Mokou to recoil in pain.

" Hey psycho- bitch! Leave Mister Weird guy alone now!" Flandre said with anger in her voice. Mokou turned around to look at the young vampire and said.

" You just made a big mistake little girl! I'll turn you into as-. H-h-huh?!" Mokou said when she noticed a red blade coming out her stomach. " B-b-but how?! You were barely conscious a second ago!"

### **The Sword that Cleaves Evil ( Super Robot Taisen OGs)**

" Hmmm. I don't know. Maybe I'm a fast healer?" Ziden said as he launched Mokou into the sky and leapt after her before slicing through her and yelled. "CHESTOA!" As an explosion enveloped her and she fell lifelessly to the stage as Ziden then said " There is nothing my sword can't cut through!" He said as the crowd roared at Ziden's victory as the group found themselves back at the meadow as everyone ran up to Ziden check up on him.

### **Petal Meadows ( Paper Mario 2)**

" My god! We all thought that she killed you, don't scare us like that!" Yukari said while hitting him across the head with her umbrella.

" Not bad, human. It is a shame that all that good blood went to waste though." Remilia said before turning to Flandre. " Flandre! Don't use such nasty words ever again, you hear me?!" She said as Flandre stuck her tongue out at Remilia. " Why you little-!" She yelled as Flandre ran behind Ziden.

" Uh uh uh big sis! You try to scold me and I'll sic my Tag buddy on you!" Flandre said while jumping onto Ziden's back causing him to fall to his knees. "Oops!"

" Ziden? Are you alright?" Sakuya asked while helping him to his feet.

" Yeah I'm fine! Is she dead?" Ziden said while pointing at Mokou's seemingly dead body.

" For awhile anyway." Patchouli said

" Man Ziden! I guess you being called the Legendary Hero isn't just some silly title!" Marisa said while clapping.

" Maybe I should make him one my servants, then?" Remilia asked as both Meiling and Patchouli nodded at the idea while Sakuya remained silent. " Just think about it ' The Scarlet Devil has the Legendary Hero, Ziden Icrim, cleaning and working in the mansion as my servant boy! Ahahhahahahahahaha!" She laughed while Ziden replied with his usual sarcasm.

" Oh, shall I give you foot massage and make you five course meals made from love and care?" Ziden said with heavy sarcasm and then faked a bow.

" Those guys are weird." Sora said as Alice and Ike walked up behind him.

" You get used to it." They said in unison.

" Hey guys come on already! Lets-a-go!" Mario said as the group followed behind him as they walked past stones that had sun and moon shapes in them when all of a sudden they here a loud roar in the sky.

A red dragon was flying over them and was heading to the castle in the distance. The Gensokyo girls all had looks of fright and shock on



their faces while Ziden and Sora had amazed looks on their faces.

" WOW! A DRAGON HERE?! LETS GO FIGHT IT!" Ziden and Sora yelled in unison before looking at each other in confusion. "STOP THAT! HEY QUIT IT! STOP SAYING WHAT I'M SAYING YOU JERK!"

"That was a dragon just now, right?" Ike asked

"C-c-calm down everyone! W-w-w-we're not i-i-i-n Gensokyo right now!" Reimu said with her voice shaking. "B-b-besides we got Ziden, Yukari and Sora! I'm sure they can take that thing down!"

" Yes, Ziden is quite strong. I believe he could do it without even trying!" Patchouli said while staring at Ziden making him uncomfortable.

" Well the only problem is how are we going to get to that castle?" Goofy said

" There is a town up ahead lets go hunt for some information!" Ziden said as they followed into a flowery town filled with turtle people called Koopas. The town was called Petalburg.

## **Petalburg ( Paper Mario 2)**

Everyone wandered around the town looking for info on how to enter the castle. The search came up short however as the koopas turned out to be useless ( big surprise!). Ziden and Meiling were sitting down after the info hunt as they noticed Mario and Luigi entering a very pink house. Youmu and Ike were sparring in the meadow. Sakuya was talking to a white bob-omb. With everyone else resting in the Inn.

Ziden noticed that Meiling was yawning and beginning to lean over to him to lay on his shoulder. He did let her though. She scooted closer to him as to not hurt her neck, but Sakuya, who had looked over at them had known she wasn't sleepy because during Ziden's

fight with Mokou she was sleeping the whole time, knew that she was just 'making her move' on Ziden.

" So Ziden? What exactly do you do for a living?" Meiling asked as she stared into Ziden's eyes.

" Well lets see: Treasure Hunter, Demon Hunter and Blacksmith, and Bounty Hunter!" Ziden said as he stared at the sparring swordsmen. Youmu was doing quite well against Ike.

" Oh so you make weapons?" Meiling asked as she tried to wrap her arm around his only for him to push her arm away.

" Yep," Ziden said while looking at the spar ignoring Meiling's obvious advances.

" Are you ignoring me?" Meiling asked looking Ziden into his eyes.

" Not really just your advances. Besides I'm too beat to flirt or anything similar, so knock it off for now all right?" Ziden said as Meiling nodded " i'm heading into to rest for tomorrow, you do the same." Ziden entered the Inn to see Patchouli sitting in a chair as she waved at him goodnight. Ziden fell onto the bed and fell asleep instantly.

Meanwhile in an castle somewhere

## **Villians of a Sort ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Pete, an evil looking witch and a man wrapped in pitch black armor were looking into a portal that showed the group of young heroes.

" Thats them! Those are the bozos who foiled our plan to turn Yen Sid into a heartless, Maleficent!" Pete said with anger.

" Humph! So it seems that Sora found some new friends, not that it matters! Pete! Black Knight! Go out and spread the Heartless among these new worlds! The worlds shall all belong to us!" Maleficent said before disappearing into green fire.

" All right you heard the boss, knight boy! Go out and spread some Heartless, you tin can!" Pete said before he saw a sword pointed at his throat.

" Watch your tongue fool. Lest Lady Maleficent has one less henchman serving her." Black Knight said before lowering his sword as Pete ran away into a Portal of Darkness. He then turned to the portal staring at Ike. " So we will meet again, Son of Gawain." He said before disappearing.

## **Petalburg ( Paper Mario 2)**

Ziden awoke from his dream and noticed that Patchouli was sitting on his bed reading a book unaware that Ziden was awake as a thought occurred in his head. ' I wonder how she would react to this!' as Ziden's hand slowly slid over to Patchouli completely unaware what Ziden was up to when all a sudden she felt a hand feeling her bottom. Her face turned bright red as she stood up and stared with a shocked/surprised face as Ziden said " Morning sunshine! How are you fine morning?" Ziden said playfully

" F-f-fine" Patchouli stammered before she walked out of the room.

" Huh? I was expecting her to slap me. Maybe she isn't used to being flirted with." Ziden as he rolled to see Sakuya standing over him holding a familiar looking combat knife. " How long were you standing there?"

" Long enough to see you sexually harass Patchouli." Sakuya said twirling the knife in her hand. " And yes, she isn't used to being flirted with, as she rarely leaves the mansion."

" What are you talking about? I didn't touch her bottom!" Ziden said to cover his tracks.

" I never specified where you touched her, Ziden. My my, the perversion of the famous demon hunter is true." Sakuya said as she sat next to Ziden.

" So you know who I am, huh?... I see you still carry that combat knife I gave you when you were little. My have you grown into a fine young woman." Ziden said as he began to stand up.

" So you do remember me. I have to thank you for training me to hunt vampires if it wasn't for you I would have never have met Mistress Remilia and given an education and a new life. Thank you, Master Ziden." She said as walked up to Ziden and looked around the before giving Ziden a hug which surprised him. " Also it seems Mario and Luigi have found some info on how to reach that dragon's castle." She said before leaving as Ziden sensed another presence in the room.

" Hey Remilia." Ziden said as Remilia dropped down from the ceiling.

" No wonder your name sounded familiar. You're the Demon Hunter who punishes wicked demons. You're quite infamous in the Demonic circles." Remilia said as she flew up to Ziden's face. " And also two more things: One, my sister wishes for you to be her playmate which you will not refuse or else and Two, both Meiling and Patchouli seem to like you, i personally don't care if you ignore Meiling's feelings towards you, but know this if you break Patchy's heart, I'll tear you limb from limb, got it!?" Remilia said while trying to intimidate Ziden which wasn't working as he simply said 'okay' and walked outside leaving her alone as she had a devilish smirk on her face. " So the rumors are true, he can't be intimidated by anything!" She said as she walked outside.

Mario and Luigi told what happened to them while everyone was asleep as the bros. went to the Shhwonk Fortress, got the sun and Moon stones needed to access the castle, and fought a gold fuzzy. They headed back to the stones as Mario and Luigi placed the stones into their slots as a blue warp pipe appeared. Everyone except Ziden and Reimu leapt into the warp pipe as those two noticed that Mokou's body was gone. " Think she'll be back for revenge, Reimu?" Ziden asked as he stood on the warp pipe. Reimu jumped up to it and nodded yes before leaping in. " Great" he said as he entered the pipe and entered the lair of the dragon.

## Hooktail Castle ( Paper Mario 2)

After getting past the courtyard they found themselves inside a very large room with alot of Koopa skeletons in it.

" Jeez this dragon sure doesn't mess around! Look at all those dead bodies!" Ziden as he walked over to a treasure chest and kicked it open to reveal an mega-ether. "Sweet! A mega-ether!" The group walked through several rooms killing off idiotic henchmen after idiotic henchmen as the girls' Exshperes continued to level up giving them access to more powerful artes and magic. Ziden decided to ditch the group to look for treasure only for Marisa and Patchouli to follow him. Ziden noticed in the direction they were going were not going to get to the dragon first as they a room with jail cells. Ziden saw that a badge with a music note on it ( if you played through Paper Mario Thousand Year Door you know the significance of this badge.) Ziden sliced through it and took the badge. When he walked out of the cell he noticed that Patchouli was staring at another cell which two glowing orbs in it which had the images of an arm and afterimages of a leg. Ziden leapt and sliced through the cage and absorbed the two orbs gaining two of Ziden's favorite powers, Super strength and super speed. " Thanks for spotting them Pachouli!" He said as she blushed as Marisa giggled. They then proceeded to catch up with their comrades.

The other group had already made it to the uppermost part of the castle. They were surprised how high in the sky they were. They proceeded up the steps when they heard footsteps behind them. They turned around to see Ziden holding the hands of both Patchouli and Marisa and for some odd reason Ziden's footsteps sound like crickets chirping. Ziden informed them that he got two more of his powers back as he began to let go of Marisa's and Patchouli's hand only for Patchouli to grab it refusing to stop holding as he sighed and entered the door.

The dragon was in front of them looking at his new prey. "  
Hmmmmmmm! So it seems more food has wandered into my lair. I

am Hooktail, your devourer this afternoon!" The red curtain brought them to the stage as they were ready to fight Hooktail.

### **Hooktail Battle ( Paper Mario 2)**

" Well now! Its been a while since I fought a dragon! I hope you're strong, scale-face" Ziden said while taunting the dragon known as Hooktail. " All guys we can take this guy as long as we stick togeth-. Really?" Ziden said while turned towards the group and noticed that all the Gensokyo girls except Sakuya and Youmu had jumped into the empty seats and were waving at them. " ARE YOU FREAKING KIDDING ME!?" Ziden yelled at the girls in the audience only for Yukari to reply to his anger.

" Oh calm down Ziden! What would poor old Ran think if she saw her little Zidey-Widey acting like an angry buffoon!" Yukari said everyone except Ziden roared in laughter as Marisa began to pick at Ziden.

" Zidey-Widey! You can take that dragon while we kick back and rest after all that fighting we did, ze!" Marisa said while Yukari began to tell everyone stories on how Ran always used to baby Ziden as he became irate.

" I've had enough of this nonsense! Time for dinner!" Hooktail roared as it brought its claw down creating a tremor that knocked the fighters on their rear. Sakuya was the fastest to recover as she began to throw knives at Hooktail only for them to bounce off Hooktail's scales which made it laugh. " Silly little girl! What were trying to do with those silver toothpicks?! Maybe I'll start with you fi-AAAAAAAAARRRGGGGHHHH!"It bellowed in pain as several knives pierced its eye. "GRAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAHH! I'LL BURN YOU TO A POINT SO THAT NOT EVEN YOUR ASHES WILL REMAIN!" Hooktail roared as enormous flames shot out from its mouth heading straight for her. Ziden immediately pushed Sakuya out of danger only for him to take the full brunt of the fire breath leaving him badly burned as he heard a familiar laughter as he slowly towards the audience and saw in the back a white haired woman laughing at him, Mokou.

Youmu, Ike and Sora dashed weapons drawn at Hooktail. " Strike Raid!" Sora yelled as he threw his keyblade at Hooktail striking it on its nose distracting it from the two swordsmen prepared their assault.

" Sword Rain Alpha!" Youmu yelled as performed multiple sword thrusts into Hooktail's underbelly drawing blood as she finished with a rising slash leaving a large bleeding wound on its belly. As Ike began to glow with a blue fire-like aura as both Ike and Hooktail disappeared and a white screen formed in the background showing a video of Ike and Hooktail standing in an wasteland-like battleground. " Hmmm? Why is Ike and that dragon on that screen?" Youmu asked as Mario and Luigi walked up as a stange sound came from Mario's pocket as he pulled a Game Boy Advance SP that was solely used for E-mails as Professor Frankly's image appeared and began to talk.

" Greetings friends! It completely skipped my mind to inform you how Special Moves work! When anyone uses a special move that is an offensive attack they are warped to another area so their attacks don't harm the audience! All special moves are run by star power which given to you by them which you can check from the Star Watches on your wrists! You can also watch the special attacks on the screen! Good luck on finding the Crystal Stars! When you obtain the Crystal Star, return to the Thousand Year Door to learn the next Crystal Star location!" Frankly said before vanishing as everyone turned to watch Ike's special move in action.

### **Ike's Theme ( Super Smash Bros. Brawl)**

Ike performs an upward slash releasing a sword wave made of fire that hits Hooktail sending it into the sky as Ike chased after it yelling " GREAT AETHER!" as he did an intense fiery sword combo that ends in a downward slash that slammed Hooktail into the ground causing an intense explosion of red fire that enveloped Hooktail as Ike walked out of the fire holding Ragnell over his shoulder while the fire behind him turned blue as he appeared back on the Battle Stage.

Hooktail however was not dead as he snuck behind the curtain and snuck over to the audience as he began to violently devour the audience as blood and guts flew all over the girls covering them in pure gore. Sakuya saw this and tried not to vomit on Ziden whom she was trying to slap into consciousness. He did begin to stir and noticed Sakuya looking very green. "S-S-S-Sakuya! Don't! Hold it in!" Ziden pleaded as Sakuya felt the liquid come up her throat and flew out of her mouth straight onto Ziden's face.

"AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA

AAAAAHHHHHHHHHHH! GOD

WHYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYY!?" Ziden screamed while accidentally launching his sword which ends up hitting Hooktail causing a loud cricket sound to ring out apparently causing Hooktail to become very sick as mushed up body parts to dribble out of its mouth as Ike leapt at the dragon ready for round two.

" C-c-crickets?! Why now?! Ugh, I still remember getting food poisoning from eating a cricket!" Hooktail said while noticing flash of light with its good eye. The flash of light was Ike's Ragnell in the air.

"Aether!" Ike yelled as he jumped up to grab his sword and slammed into Hooktail's face leaving a large slash. Ike then leapt onto the dragon and held his sword in an overhead stab charging up fire on his blade as bright light flashed and he yelled " Full Power Eruption!" as he slammed the blade into its skull as an explosion shot out killing the dragon as it took its last breath saying something about 'all those un-eaten meals' and flipped onto his back as the stage disappeared as a object ripped out of the Hooktail's stomach. It was Crystal Star that looked like it was made of Diamond. Mario walked over to it and picked it up as very cheerful music played.

## **End of Chapter! ( Paper Mario 2)**

After Ziden's near death experience with Mokou, the group found themselves infiltrating a dragon's castle. Ziden and Patchouli seemed to have gained a 'special' bond over this little adventure that will surely grow over this galactic journey. After returning to



Rogueport with Diamond Star in tow they noticed a commotion in the town.

" Hmmm? What's going here?" Reimu asked a bob-omb

" Well I hear that some photographer is going to be hanged!" the Bob-omb replied

*The girls took flight, with Patchouli holding Ziden much to her joy while he sighed, to see this photographer only to be horrified at what they saw. The girl's white shirt was stained with blood and was badly torn showing multiple cuts and bruises. Blood was pouring down her head which mixed with her tears. Ziden was full of rage at knowing who this girl was, she was like a little sister to him and seeing her in this condition pissed him as well as the Gensokyo girls. The badly beaten girl who was being placed into the noose was none other the famous Tengu reporter Aya Shameimaru...*

Authors note: Yep I should probably let you know now the next chapter is going to contain some gore and character deaths so be ready for that. Yes I know I could have the Ziden vs Mokou fight a bit longer but hey it works for me and it should work for you. See you next time on Legendary Hero!

## Return of the Fallen Knight

*The girls were all wondering what this new world could bring to the table of excitement. The girls found themselves in the town of Rogueport on a quest for the Crystal Stars led them to Petalburg where some failed attempts at flirting and bottom fondling occurred before they headed to face the dragon who held the Crystal Star whom was defeated by Ike, but no the girls looked in horror as one of their friends was about to be killed as the crowd chanted 'kill the bird-girl' over and over as Ziden became enraged as she was led to the noose by soldiers wearing golden armor who had a red flag that had a black dragon breathing green fire ( If you played Kingdom Hearts I, this dragon should bring back painful memories.), but what made Ziden more pissed off was how traumatized she sounded as she chanted under her breath which Ziden heard with his enhanced hearing 'I don't want die.' over and over as they placed the noose around her neck. Yukari, knowing how Ziden would react to seeing a childhood friend in such a condition, wasn't surprised when he broke free from Patchouli's grip and dived at the soldiers with sword drawn ready to strike and kill anything to save an old friend.*

" Falcon's Drive!" Ziden yelled while drew his sword back aiming at the soldier, who was about to pull a lever that will open a hole underneath Aya dropping her down as the noose slowly chokes the air out her as it slowly begins to break her neck killing her, as Ziden swings his sword at the executioner's neck decapitating him as a fountain of blood sprayed from his headless body and hit the crowd causing them to run away screaming, as the girls looked shocked from the bloodshed that was occurring.

" Looks like the stories of his bloodshed are true as well." Remilia said while catching the blood in a drink container for later as Sora looked at her with shocked look on his face. " Well I am a vampire, keyboy! I'm certainly not going let this blood go to waste!"

" Wait Ziden has stories about him?" Reimu said while Ziden was cutting off the noose around Aya's neck as he then held her in his arms.

" Well from the books our library, I've read in many demonic stories that spoke of a spiky, black haired man wielding a crimson blade. The books even showed pictures of him standing on the corpses of his enemies. They say that you never want to be an enemy of his. It also says that he is a weird demon hunter as he only punishes demons and monsters who have committed atrocities such as mass murder for fun. He wouldn't hunt demons or monsters who were only hunting food. He is really understanding person when it comes to demons and monsters even Youkai!" Patchouli said while Marisa was laughing at her. " Whats so funny, Marisa?"

" I find it funny that you're swooning over your first lover, Patchy!" Marisa said while making fun of Patchouli as she blushed.

Ziden was speaking to Aya trying to shake her out of the shock she was in. She finally began to calm down when she noticed Ziden speaking to her, but all of a sudden she broke out into tears and said. " M-m-m-m-mister Z-Z-Z-Ziden! M-m-m-m-my w-w-w-wings!" she said through her tears as Ziden ran hand up her back to see what she was talking about when he found out why she was so hysterical.

He felt stubs where the shoulder blades are when the dark revelation hit him like a brick wall being pushed by a 3-ton 18-wheeler that was launched by Donkey Kong who had launched it at him which had happened oddly enough. " No. They, they, they cut off your wings?!" He said as she nodded. Ziden placed his hand on her bleeding forehead and said " Healing Flames." as a white fire enveloped her closing her wounds. He places her down and turns to the group of golden soldier who their weapons drawn and ready to fight Ziden. " So Reporter Girl, are these the guys that cut off your wings?" He asked as Aya nodded. A evil-looking smile formed on his face as he then said " Thats all I needed to know!" he said before leaping into the air doing a flip as he landed in the middle of the mysterious

soldiers who were now surrounding him as he stood there with his eyes closed as Yukari and Ike held a conversation as the girls eavesdrop.

" Hey Yukari? I'm guessing from the girls reaction at Ziden's fight with Mokou and our fight with the dragon, the girls aren't used to seeing blood like that, huh?" Ike asked while observing the familiar golden soldiers.

" Well most of them aren't used to the sight of blood because of Reimu's Danmaku rules. Me and the residents of the Scarlet Devil Mansion are used to it." Yukari said while holding a fan over her mouth.

" Hmmm? What is Ziden's relationship to that girl." Ike said while pointing at Aya who was still shaking over the loss of her wings.

" As I told you before, Ziden lived in my household in Gensokyo because of his father wanting to use him as a catalyst to summon the Prince of Darkness to the outside world. That Reporter somehow caught wind of me having a child in my household, barged in and started interviewing him. He also viewed her as a friend as he would always ask what she up to and how her newspaper was doing. She was surprised because normally everyone hates when she interviews them, but Ziden was the only one who didn't mind. Hell, he faithfully read her newspaper. She came at random times of the day to tell Ziden about how her day was and how her newspaper was doing. From there their friendship began to blossom. Ran sent Ziden to school in the outside world to learn about the world he was from. Of course Aya and Ran were heartbroken when Ziden disappeared after a certain 'incident' occurred." Yukari said as Reimu approached them.

"Wait a minute! What incident are you talking about Yukari?" Reimu asked as everyone listened.

"Well you all remember that mysterious forest fire that happened a few years back that mysteriously appeared and then vanished a few

minutes later?" Yukari asked as everyone except Sakuya nodded." Well it turns out that a phoenix that was injured had crash landed into the forest of magic where Ziden and Chen had been playing. It seems that Ziden, who had an adventurous spirit at the time and still does, ran through the blaze and found the injured creature staring at him. Chen ended up chasing after Ziden as she saw him about to touch the phoenix. The minute he did, the raging inferno converged onto Ziden as the flames and the phoenix entered his body knocking him unconscious as Chen ran up to him making sure her playmate wasn't dead. The minute she did however, a women with red hair and red kimono appeared and slapped Chen away. Ziden, who was now conscious, saw this and tackled the the red haired woman and told her to leave his sister alone. The red haired woman grabbed Ziden, who was struggling to get away, as she made her 'white' wings appear and flew off as Chen dashed back home to tell me what happened . i decided to keep it a secret a secret from Ran, who I knew she want me to take off after them, and I simply said that Ziden was killed by stray youkai as Ran broke down into tears knowing that the child she raised into a strong willed 12 year old was dead. I spent the next 4 years searching for Ziden when I found him in an abandoned construction site training to control his powers. I ended up gapping in front of them to get one of the oddest reactions from Ziden ever, he tackled me and gave me a very strong hug as he cried into my clothes. He told me everything that happened to him. He told me how the phoenix gave him powers and how he met a human girl who traveled with him who was named I tried to take him back to Gensokyo, he backed away as the red haired woman appeared in front of me and tried to attack me only for Ziden to kick her into a support beam as a black haired girl appeared with a katana drawn. ziden immediately told them about him going back to Gensokyo, Blazette the red woman opposed Ziden's decision as Ziden and Rena told me her deal. Apperently she wants Ziden to repopulate her dying race as whenever a phoenix-fused human has a child that child will have phoenix inside them. Ziden showed no interest in this and only explored around the outside world taking in the sights where he met Rena. Blazette saw this as an opportunity to take over Ziden's body and forced him to rape and impregnate Rena

who was scarred from this ordeal. Upon hearing this, me and Ziden attacked Blazette with rage fueling our attacks. After the fight Ziden seperated himself from the phoenix as he stole her powers and left her for dead as I opened a gap to Gensokyo as the three of us entered it. I trained Ziden in swordsmanship as Rena did give birth to the little girl named Fiora. Ziden did leave to find his mother in the outside world as he began to make a name for himself to the humans. Due to a mysterious organization kidnapping Fiora and doing evil experiments to her causing her to age rapidly into a young teenager which shocked us. Of course one year ago is when me and Ziden ended up teaming up with other people to fight the Ultima Brigade as we are now. They did succeed in destroying the universe only for Ziden and the Holy Creator remade the universe to the way it is now. Ziden decided to watch over the Earth as countless eons passed by, one of the benefits by being cursed with Agelessness which kept Ziden unable to die naturally, I guess he came across the maid and trained her to hunt vampires. Any questions, girls?" Yukari asked as the girls took a moment to register what they heard about Ziden as Patchouli's heart began to snap as she asked Yukari a question.

" Is Ziden married to this Rena woman?" Patchouli asked as Yukari quickly answered.

" No oddly enough. She serves as Ziden's head maid, but no they are not married." Yukari answered as Patchouli got happy again.

" So Ziden had a phoenix inside him huh?" Remilia said while looking at Ziden's standoff with the soldiers as she noticed a white haired woman leaning against Ziden's back.

" That would explain why he is so strong, ze!" Marisa said

Alice noticed something out of the corner of her eye as she saw a man in a red trench-coat eating a pizza watching Ziden about to start a bloodbath. " Um Yukari? Who is that over there?" Alice asked as she pointed at the white haired man on the rooftop as Yukari had a

look of pure shock and rage on her face which was could be heard in her voice.

" WHAT THE HELL IS HE DOING HERE?!" Yukari yelled as the white haired man looked over at them and waved.

The girls looked shocked at Yukari's reaction to the man as Ike, who was in Yukari's grip, began to speak. " I'll tell you about the relationship between her and that man later. I have to let you guys know that, you guys will have to get used to the idea of fighting and killing humans. There will be humans opposing our journey to save the worlds from darkness and destruction. I can tell during our earlier fights that you guys aren't used to the sight of blood, but you will with Ziden here." Ike said as he got out of Yukari's grip and landed on the ground with Ragnell drawn as more golden soldiers appeared in front of him.

### **Ike's Theme ( Super Smash Bros. Brawl)**

" Hey psycho-woman. Why are you here?" Ziden said with his eyes still closed.

" Here to fight you of course. After we deal with these freaks." Mokou said while summoning a sword made of fire. Ziden then opened his eyes which now glowed with a red glow as the soldiers backed away from him as he charged at the soldiers.

Ziden immediately sliced a soldiers head off as blood sprayed out like a sprinkler. Mokou had also began her assault as well as she had sliced a soldier horizontally in half as the soldier screamed in pure terror before his head was crushed by Mokou's foot. Ziden leapt into the air and yelled.

" Raining Impalement!" Ziden yelled as red lances formed around him and flew towards the soldiers piercing through their bodies as if they were made of paper. Ziden landed after the attack as Mokou was tear through the foes as if they were nothing. Ziden noticed new foes arriving to the battle, they were looking foes that were wearing

heavy golden armor and were wielding lances, the others were wearing cloaks and had the air of magic around them. Mokou noticed this as well and rushed them only to be intercepted by Ike who began attacking the Knights and Mages. Ziden ran up to Mokou and said " Well looks like Ike is taking care of business. Shall we join him, Psycho?" Ziden said as Mokou stabbed him in the leg before leaping at enemies as Ziden felt someone whom he hated was watching him, but ignored it.

Ike began his assault by attacking the mages while Ziden and Mokou faced off against the knights as the girls watched with shock at how brutal Ziden's fighting style was. Aya was watching with joyful eyes as Ziden was dealing with the monsters that ripped off her wings. The mages were putting up a good fight as they were launching Fireballs and Wind Blades at the trio of fighters. Ziden ended up unleashing a special attack that involved him raising his sword to the sky and then slamming it down as a blast of air smashed the mages into bloody, flat pancakes. Mokou blasted the Knights with fire projectiles, killing the rest of the soldiers. After this was all over Mokou charged at Ziden only to be riddled with bullets as the white haired man jumped off of the rooftop and landed in front of Ziden as his face turned to rage. The man had a large sword on his back and had white and black pistols in his hand and then began to speak.

" Hiya Ziden! Ready for our fight?" The man asked as Mokou got back up.

" Sorry, Ziden is my opponent so back off!" Mokou said while pointing her sword at the man's throat.

"I'm so sorry crazy lady, but Spikes over there WANTS to fight me so go in the kitchen and cook up some meals like you're supposed too." The man said while drawing his sword and pointing it at Ziden as he began to laugh.

" It matters not! Mokou! I'll take you on as well as the accursed Son of Sparda! Dante!" Ziden yelled as fire sparked off of him shocking Mokou and the group of heroes.



## Devils Never Cry ( Project X Zone)

" Stinger!" Dante said as he performed a sword thrust while moving forward at a fast rate only for it to be blocked by Mokou as Ziden leapt at them slicing at them with rapid sword slashes as the girls went down to Aya to see if she was alright as Ike ran over to her as well.

" A-A-Aya! Are you alright?!" Reimu said as Aya began to turn around to show them her back as they all gasped in horror at what they saw." Those monsters cut off your wings!? No wonder Ziden went on a rampage on those soldiers!" Reimu said while looking over at the three-way battle that was occurring.

"Actually about that... Those weren't the guys that took my wings. It was this mean freak in black armor!" Aya said as rage filled her body as Ike walked up with a serious face.

" Hey bird-girl! When you attacked this man did any of your attacks hurt him?" Ike asked as Aya answered swiftly.

" No! I was hitting him with every move in my arsenal! After a while he said that he was done humoring me as he swung his sword at me! After that he grabbed my wings, raised his sword and then he... then he... Waaaaaaaahhhhhh!"Aya cried as the girls ran over to comfort her as Ike's face turned red with rage.

" Mister Ike? Is something wrong?" Youmu asked as Ike turned to her and yelled.

" No! It can't be! The Black Knight should be dead!" Ike said while shaking with rage scaring the girls.

" Calm down Ike! Getting angry won't solve anything!" Yukari said while walking up to Ike.

"B-b-but-!" Ike said before Yukari cut him off.

" No buts Ike! Sure this is a problem that the Black Knight is back, but bitching about won't do anything! So calm down!" Yukari said in a scolding voice.

" Pfffffft! I'm sure we could take care of this guy, but I bet Spikey could take him by himself, ze!" Marisa said cheerfully

" No. Not even Ziden can take on the Black Knight and win. He'd only get killed." Ike said while looking down. The scene transitions over to the battle.

The battle was not going in Mokou's and Ziden's favor as Dante was dodging and countering like a master warrior. Mokou leapt into the air with fire wrapping around her fist as she dive-bombed at the ground slamming her fist into the ground and yelled " Fujiwara Infernal Pillar!" as pillars of fire raced towards Dante who was too preoccupied fending off Ziden's attacks got struck with it and is burnt to crisp as Ziden grabbed Dante's sword and stabbed him through the chest as he fell to the floor. " Humph. That takes care of him, now back to our fight Ziden Icrim!... Huh?" She said as she saw Dante get up and pull the sword out of his chest and then pulled out his pistols as opened fire on Ziden and Mokou, heavily damaging them in the process. " Ziden. What the hell is this guy?" Mokou said while panting.

" Dante is a Half-Demon which makes him harder to kill." Ziden said as he dashed at Dante ready to keep up the assault. Their swords clashed with each other creating shockwaves in the air. Ziden turned up the heat on his attacks as he swung his sword with enough force sending Dante crashing into a building as Ziden shot off several sword waves at Dante that exploded on impact. " Whats the matter Dante?! Can't handle fighting two people at on-Aaaaaargggggghhh!" Ziden yelled in pain as a fireball from behind hit him as a wave of ice blasted him back into a wall. Dante walked out of the building holding a triparite nunchaku radiating the power of ice.

" Oh what was that? I thought you said something before hitting that wall!" Dante taunted as he swung the nunchaku known as Cerberus

around as an icy mist followed it. Dante leapt over to Mokou and began to swing it at her as she countered it with kicks. " Not bad fire girl! You could give Ziden a run for his money, but..." He said as he slammed Cerberus into the ground and yelled " Crystal!" as pillars of ice shot up out of the ground blasting Mokou into the air as Dante followed her and began to brutally combo her with style as Ziden got up and shot sword waves at Dante which exploded against him causing him to fall as Ziden dashed to where Dante and Mokou was about to land as a fire wrapped around the Crimson Edge as Ziden unleashed his attack.

" FINAL MOVE! BURNING TORNADO!" Ziden screamed while doing a fierce spin attack that created a large tornado of fire that swallowed up Dante and Mokou as they were sliced repeatedly and burned as well and Ziden ended the assault as the tornado ended and slammed them into the ground as they bounced up and suddenly exploded as their unconscious bodies flew out of the smoke as Ziden fell to his knees out of exhaustion as Aya ran over to him.

### **Rogueport (Paper Mario 2)**

" Ziden! That was awesome! Please let me take some pics of your victory!" Aya said she took out camera only for Ziden to grab her hand. " Huh? Ziden, what are you doing?" she asked as she was very confused.

" I'm going to do something that may hurt you Aya... a lot." The minute he said this Aya tried to take her hand away from him only for Ziden to tighten his grip as she began to protest as Ziden said " Calm down Reporter Girl! You'll thank me for this, really!" He then closed his eyes as green energy channeled from his arm to hers as she began to scream in pain as the green energy traveled to her back as two tendrils shot out from her wing stubs as the tendrils became covered in black feathers as the pain slowly went away. " There! Are you done crying you ba- Owwwwwww!" Ziden yelled as Aya punched him in the ribs.

Aya unknowingly took flight as she began yelling at Ziden. " You jerk! That is not how you treat the woman you call your best friend and ' little sister', even though I am much older than you!... Huh?!" Aya noticed that she was flying as tears began to form in her eyes. " M-m-m-m-my wings! They're back!" She exclaimed as she began to fly around at supersonic speeds as Sora and the Mario Bros. gasped at her speed.

" Wow! I wish I had wings like that!" Sora said while looking amazed.

" Think that girl could take Ziden or Sonic in race, eh big bro?" Luigi said while elbowing his older brother

" She sure could, but I wonder how Dante got here! Yukari sure isn't happy to see him again, especially with what happened between them." Mario said while rubbing his chin. Reimu and Marisa heard this and walked over to them.

" What happened between those two, Mario?" Reimu asked as Marisa was bouncing up and down with her hand raised. " What is it Marisa?"

" I know! I know! Yukari and Dante slept together and Dante ran off with another woman a day later, right?" Marisa said jokingly as the Mario Bros. jaws dropped as she had guessed the truth. " Wait a minute! I was just joking and I guessed it right? I am awesome, ze!" Marisa said as Reimu had a shocked look on face. The scene went back to Ziden and Aya as Aya was hugging the life out of Ziden.

" Thank you! Thank you! Thank you, Ziden!" Aya said while squeezed him tighter.

" Please... stop... hug... ging... me." Ziden said Aya slowly let him go as he felt a presence approaching their location.

A yellow magic circle appeared as a man wrapped in black armor with a black cape that was red on the inside. Ike seeing the man drew Ragnell ready to fight to an old foe.

## **The Black Knight Lives ( Fire Emblem Radiant Dawn)**

" So you are the Legendary Hero I've been hearing about." Black Knight said walking towards Ziden stopping a few feet in front of him. " Not very impressive." He said as Ziden got enraged and drew his sword as Ike ran over to Ziden to stop him from throwing away his life.

" Ziden! Don't! You won't be able to harm him!" Ike yelled only for Ziden to completely ignore him as Dante and Mokou began to stir.

The Black Knight looks over at Aya who begins to shake in fear of the man who took her wings. " Humph, so it seems that you got some new wings girl. I guess you won't be wanting these then." He said as pulled out two dismembered black wings, dropped them to floor and stomped on them causing her to hide her new wings.

" So you're the bastard who took Aya's wings huh?! Don't worry because I'm gonna make you feel double the pain she felt! Yahhhhhhhhhhhhh!" Ziden yelled as he charged the Black Knight who blocked his attack with his sword.

## **Unstoppable Destiny ( Fire Emblem Radiant Dawn)**

Ziden swung his sword many different directions to try and pierce through the Black Knight's defenses only for him to block with his sword. " Dammit! Take this! Crimson Storm!" Ziden yelled as a flurry of sword slashes erupted from his single sword swing as they struck the Black Knight only to show that they did no damage whatsoever. ' What the hell?! Why didn't he take damage from that?!" He said as the Black Knight raised his sword into the sky and did a downward swing as a blue sword wave shot out hitting Ziden causing a diagonal cut to appear on his chest as blood sprayed out. " Dammit!" Ziden said while trying to stay focused.

" Time to end this." The Black knight said as he walked over to Ziden as a blue light erupted from him. " Eclipse!" he said as he began to

perform a combo of sword swings that ends with a stab through the heart as everyone had looks of pure horror on their face.

"ZIDENNNNNNN!" Everyone screamed as Mokou watched as the person she was trying to kill was taken down so easily.

" No... not... again..." Ziden said as he fell into a deep sleep as the Black Knight pulled out his blade and turned towards Mokou.

" Damn you! I was supposed to kill him you bastard! Hell-Storm Drill Devastation!" Mokou yelled as she charged at the Black Knight while spinning like a fiery drill only to be stopped when the Black Knight stabbed his sword through her skull forcing her on her knees as she struggled to get the sword out when the Black Knight thrusts his sword forward forcing her spine to snap like a twig killing her as the girls looked on in pure shock.

" Humph. Pathetic. Son of Gawain, know that the next time we meet I will kill you. Ah yes, Sora. Know that I have summoned the heartless to this world. Farewell." He said before the magic circle appeared around him taking away from the group of heroes as they gathered around the dead body of Ziden Icrim.

*Somewhere in a dark Mysterious Castle*

### **Villians of a Sort ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

A man with rainbow wings was staring at a large orb of darkness, speaking to it. " Those foolish heroes stopped my plan once before, but now I will have back up to create a new world of Darkness! Hahhahahahahahahh!" He laughed as the orb pulsated shooting 11 pillars of darkness out onto the ground as people emerged from them.

*Author's Notes: Well this one took a while to get done. I am going to say this now, there are going to be romantic pairings of Ziden and Patchy, as well as Ziden and Meiling. Also I would love to see you*

*readers guess how Ziden got cursed with Agelessness, so give it  
shot and: Just Go For It!. See you next part!*

## Playing with Hellfire!

*Ziden found himself dead again, waiting for the time limit to expire for him to come back to life as a red haired woman wielding a scythe approached him in the dark void they were in. The woman had angry look on her face.*

" Great its you, AGAIN!" The woman said angrily

" Oh I'm SO sorry that I died Komachi! Please forgive me for my failure to live!" Ziden said with extreme sarcasm as he walked to her to hold a conversation. " Well you're still in good shape and I really good 'shape' if you catch my drift." Ziden said as got he punched in the face by her.

" Arghhhhh! You damn perv! I can see why Eiki doesn't like your presence!" Komachi said with anger in her voice as Ziden rubbed his nose.

" What? I was just commenting on your shapely body. Thats all." Ziden said while shrugging his shoulders. " Ah! Such lovely melons!" Ziden said with pure joy as Komachi just sighed at his response.

" You know what, Ziden? I'm just going to leave and take a nap to forget what happened. Bye Ziden, see you in like the next 10 minutes." She said as she walked away out of Ziden's sight as he began to glow with a bright light.

### **Rogueport ( Paper Mario 2)**

Ziden awakened in a hotel room as he noticed three people in the room with him. Meiling was asleep next to him as Mokou and Dante were talking about something Ziden couldn't hear. He began to sit up as he noticed Meiling arms wrapped around as if he was some oversized teddy bear.



" Hey look! Sleeping Beauty's finally awake!" Dante said while clapping.

" About time you got up Ziden." Mokou said while taking a bite out of a grilled chicken on a stick. " Hungry?" She asked while offering a chicken to Ziden.

" Why are you being so friendly, Mokou?" Ziden asked

" Don't get used to it Ziden. The minute this adventure of ours is over, I'm going to kill you." Mokou said

" So Ziden, The Ultima Brigade is back, huh?" Dante asked as Ziden nodded " Mario told us what's up. We got some new threats to deal with this time, huh?"

" Yep" Ziden said as he begin to shake Meiling awake as she began to stir. He noticed her eyes were red and her face was wet. " Meiling? Were you crying?"

" W-what?! Of course not. I got water on my face! Ha-ha-haha!" Meiling exclaimed as the others sweat dropped.

" Anyway, where are the others?" Ziden asked as Meiling said.

"They are at professor Frankly's figuring out where to go next and Mario learned some new move from the Diamond Star!" Meiling said while getting out of the bed and wiping her face off.

" Ready to get going Ziden?" She asked as Ziden created a portal leading to Frankly's place and walked through it as Mokou and Dante followed suit leaving Meiling in the room by herself " Hey! Wait for me!"

The group ended up reunited with Ziden and co. who were surprised that he recovered so fast. They told him that their next location was Boggly Woods as they went back to the sewers and back to that room before the Thousand Year Door.

## **Underground ( Paper Mario 2)**

" So where is pipe thing we're looking for is in here right?" Aya said while flying around searching for a pipe as Ziden and Youmu walked to the barred off passage.

" Something might be behind here" Youmu said she drew out the katana on back and slices the bars into pieces. " Lets go."

They entered the room to see the mouse-like creature from before being cornered by two red and white henchman. " There you are, you useless Puni!" The henchmen exclaimed. " Lets check and see if this Puni knows where the Crystal Star is!"

" Hmmm? Hey, idiotic henchmen! Did I just you guys mention a Crystal Star?" Ziden said as the henchmen spun around to see who was speaking to them, " And who exactly are you idiots anyway?" Ziden said while tapping his sheathed sword on his shoulder.

## **Enemy Encounter ( Paper Mario 2)**

The henchmen formed X's with their arms and said " We are the X-Nauts! So you're the punks that embarrassed Lord Crump at Rogueport! Lets get them!" he said as they charged at them swinging their arms like windmills only to be uppercutted by Mario and Luigi's wooden hammers sending them flying through the ceiling.

The mouse-like creature was shaking as Mario approached him and said " Its okay little guy. We won't hurt you." Mario said while petting the creature.

" S-s-so you giants won't e-e-e-eat me?" The creature said while shaking as everyone shook their heads. " Ok! My name is Punio! So you guys are looking for a Crystal Star?" Everyone nodded in response. " Then you guys have to help me! Those X-naut guys took over our home and captured my friends! They even had these weird black creatures with evil looking Heart emblems on them! Please! I'll

even take you there!" Punio pleaded as Sora and friends immediately stepped up.

" Don't worry Punio! We'll save your friends and take out those X-nauts and Heartless!" Sora said while raising his keyblade as a hero would before saving an enslaved race. Punio motioned for them to follow him as they entered a somewhat empty room as Punio looked confused.

" Huh?Where is the warp pipe to Boggly Woods? And what is that thing?" Punio said as everyone noticed the large, white pedestal that had an enormous white ring radiating with a purple aura around it as an image of a horned skull in the center of the ring.

" Wait a minute. Ziden! Isn't that one of Gates you told me about on the train?" Patchouli asked as Ziden nodded. " And would I be correct in saying that it's a Boss Battle Gate as well?"

Ziden applauded Patchouli's sharp observation " Man! It looks like you read that book and retained the info as well! Not bad at all!" He said while praising Patchouli as she blushed. " But I am surprised though. I was expecting the Gates to make an appearance later on this adventure. I guess Henry wanted to see fight in these things again. They are very annoying in the fact I have to play by their rules." Ziden said as he let out a loud sigh.

" All right! Who is this Henry guy and What are these Gate things?" Reimu asked impatiently as Patchouli quickly jumped in and said.

" Well according to Ziden's book, Henry is the God of Adventures and Journeys. He has great joy watching Heroes wander about and often places obstacles to hinder their progress. These Gates, according to the book, they are designed to be like something called a Videogame in the Outside World, as such Ziden is forced to follow these 'Videogame rules'." Patchouli explained while Marisa snickered. Yukari pushed Ziden towards telling him to hurry up and clear it.

" So uh? What's a Video Game?" Meiling asked as her Mistress answered her question.

" A videogame is a object in the outside world that allows you to control imaginary characters and fight monsters and stuff." Remillia said as Ziden looked surprised. " Sakuya bought some from Kourindou during a shopping trip. It even had some games in it. I gave it a try and found myself having fun until it died. Since Gensokyo doesn't have widespread electricity so I couldn't charge it, until Patchy came up with a spell that could charge it. I also had some games from before we moved to Gensokyo, so yes Ziden, I know what a Video game is. So if I am correct, you have play by certain rules like the 'Lives System' and ' Health and Magic Bar System', correct?" She asked as Ziden answered

" Huh? That was surprising indeed, Remilia. But back to the point, yes they follow only those two rules as well as the subrules for the 'Lives System' and ' Health and Magic Bar System'."

Ziden said as Remilia walked up and started a conversation as everyone else was confused at what was going.

" Ok so like why are Ziden and Remi bonding all of a sudden?" Marisa asked.

" It seems that they share a hobby." Alice said while styling her doll's hair.

" Well the Mistress has always, during times of peace, played that 'game' thing in her room. I often hear her cry out in frustration when she dies in the game." Sakuya said plainly

" I had some videogames when I was younger! A few years later I got to go off on my own adventure!" Sora said while doing his signature pose.

" Yeah on Ziden's world we've got our own games and fanbase!" Mario said happily

" You know, I wonder if we've got a game." Reimu said while thinking as a smile emerged on her face " Maybe my fans will make some donations to my shrine!"

" You do actually." Dante said as everyone turned to him. " I saw Lady playing it on her laptop. She said that it dealt with a Shrine Maiden and Witch girl trying to solve a crimson mist problem. She says that the Witch is her favorite character of the games." As he said this everyone gasped at the fact that the Crimson Mist was a real incident that happened in the past. " I know that face. According to Ziden, the videogames are original ideas that happen before the real adventures happen. I have games and I played them and they were awesome!"

" So this Lady friend of yours, she thinks I'm better than Armpits?" Marisa asked as Reimu shot a glare over at Marisa.

" Yep, she even has a plushie of you I found while digging through her room." Dante said with a serious face.

" Ohhhhh! Can't wait to meet her, ze!" Marisa said while fist pumping. The girls hear a man screaming as they look to see Ziden being held over Yukari's head as she launched Ziden into the Boss Battle Gate.

The group noticed that the ring now showed Ziden standing on a rocky platform surrounded by fire and lava. Ziden began to wander about before he heard a crashing sound from behind him. He turned around to see a demon with red fur on his legs and head with two black horns and sharp claws. The demon began to speak.

" So another human has come seeking my power! Do know that I, Ifrit, shall never give my power to a worthless fleshbag like you!" Ifrit said giving off a loud roar that radiated with fire.

### **Force Your Way ( Final Fantasy VIII)**

The Group noticed some thing different about the screen, they noticed a Green and Blue Bar in the top left corner with a Lv. 1 next

to it. At the bottom of the screen was long green bar with 5 green orbs underneath it. Remilia instantly knew what those were and told the others what they were and what they did.

" So all Ziden has to do is keep hitting Ifrit until that green bar and orbs are completely empty and he'll win?" Meiling asked as her Mistress nodded. " All right then! KICK HIS SORRY ASS ZIDEN!" Meiling yelled as Ziden nodded and drew Crimson Edge. Mokou walked up to the Gate and watched the upcoming fight with a steel gaze.

Dante let out a chuckle and said " Looks like Ziden's got a another rival in the works, huh?" He said Mokou replied to it with a curious look on her face.

" Does he have more than one rival?" Mokou asked with a very curious tone

Dante began to run his hand through his white hair and said " Well including me, he has four rivals that constantly come to fight him, except one of them is completely evil like you!" Dante said while pointing his finger at her as she got upset at the remark. " Well you did say you wanted to kill him and after the bloodshed from that drill attack kinda makes you evil."

Mokou's face turned red with anger as she yelled at Dante " HE CAN FREAKING REGENRATE AND I WANTED REVENGE ON HIM FIGHTING FOR THAT MOONBITCH AND COMPLETELY MAKING ME LOOK PATHETIC, THATS ALL!" Mokou soon began to calm down only for Dante make things worse.

" I don't know. Sounds you two need some alone time in a bed. Talk about sexual frustration!" Dante said jokingly while shrugging his shoulders as everyone except Mokou and Yukari laughed.

Mokou's eye began to twitch as she let out sound that scared everyone. "RAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA  
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAHHHHHHHH!" She yelled as she

tackled Dante through the doorway as they tumbled down the stairs. Everyone sweatdropped at the sight as turned back to the fight that was now occurring.

Ziden was backflipping to dodge to dodge Ifrit's barrage of fireballs. Ziden performed an air-dash towards Ifrit and slashed him rapidly hitting Ifrit as his health begin to drop to 4 orbs. " Draconic Tempest!" Ziden yelled as he performed spinning vertical slice that was wrapped in a vicious cyclone as it sliced and lifted Ifrit into the air damaging him before he struck Ziden with a burning left hook. Ziden landed to ground with a hard thud as Ifrit was summoning a large fireball in front of him.

" Meteor Burst!" Ifrit yelled as he propelled the fireball by swiping the fire ball with his claw sending it into Ziden as it exploded against as he flew towards the edge of the platform. Ziden quickly recovered from this leapt back at Ifrit ready to continue his assault. Ifrit, however, saw this coming and countered Ziden's sword swings with his claws causing sparks to fly from each strike. Ifrit hit Ziden's sword with enough force to force him away as he began to laugh. "Hahahahahahah! To think that a human would give me some trouble like this! What's your name, human?" Ifrit asked while glowing with fiery aura.

" Ziden Icrim." Ziden said as Ifrit began to laugh again leaving Ziden confused at this situation. " That's not what I was expecting I told you my name. Normally when I tell demons my name, they piss themselves and run away!"

" I'm not like those weaklings you were referring to Ziden! But that stench coming from you, its the scent of Sparda! But how?! He was killed!" Ifrit said with confusion.

Ziden scratched his chin and said " Yeah, but one of his sons isn't though and he's with us." Ifrit now showed a sharp grin.

" Is that so? I never got to fight Sparda myself, but I hear his sons were monsters in a fight! Good then after I finish you with this final

attack, I'll face his son in battle!" Ifrit said as they were teleported to a new area in the mountaintops as Ziden noticed a gigantic rock coming towards him that had Ifrit on the back of it. Remilia saw this and warned Ziden of the impending attacking Ifrit.

" Ziden! Get up there and counter Ifrit's final move with one of your stronger moves! He's only got one bar of health left, you've got half a bar left! Finish this now!" Remilia yelled as Ziden removed his jacket and leapt towards the meteor with immense flames enveloping his arm as he reeled his arm back. Ifrit also reeled his arm back ready to punch the meteor.

"TASTE MY ALL CONSUMING FLAME! HELLFIRE!" Ifrit roared as he punched the meteor, wrapping it in fire. Ziden charged up his attack as he approached the flaming meteor.

"ONE HIT! ONE KILL! FINAL JUSTICE PUNCH!" Ziden yelled as he punched the meteor with the force of a burning Bullet Train running at max speed as lightning sparked from the collision as Meiling cheered for Ziden to win this power struggle as the meteor began to crack and was destroyed as Ziden's fist collided with Ifrit's chest depleting his health to zero as they found themselves back in the fiery cavern with Ifrit starting to fade away in fire.

" Not... bad Hero! Here! Use my power wisely!" Ifrit said as a card appeared above Ziden who took the card and looked at it as a bright light surrounded him. Ifrit vanished before his eyes as Ziden found himself out of the Gate and with his friends.

## **Underground ( Paper Mario 2)**

Ziden showed Yukari and Patchouli the card as Dante walked into the room holding the dead body of Mokou and threw her body to the ground. " What the hell happened while I was fighting Ifrit?"Ziden asked as Patchouli examined the card he got from beating Ifrit in the Gate as it vanished in a burst of light as a Warp pipe appeared where it was.



" Well Mokou over there couldn't take a joke and attacked me, only to get her ass killed by me!" Dante said while wiping the dust off his jacket.

" Really? What was the joke?" Ziden asked as everyone chuckled

" Just the fact that you and Mokou need some bed bonding time!" Dante said as everyone but Ziden laughed. Mokou and Ziden shot each other a look as Patchouli handed Ziden back the card and said.

" Ziden, it appears that by infusing mystic energy into the card, you can summon Ifrit to attack your foes. Seeing as how you are quite adept at using fire attacks, it would be best to give it to you." Patchouli said Mokou approached the duo with an angry face.

" Oh! So Ziden is apparently the only fire user here, huh? Playing favorites with your first crush, huh?" Mokou said as she leapt into the warp pipe. Everyone followed suit except Ziden, Patchouli and Remilia.

Patchouli turned to Ziden with flustered look on her face. " You know I wasn't playing favorites, right?! I mean you are more skilled with using fire than her? And besides I don't have a crush on you! Really!" Patchouli pleaded.

" Really? No crush, huh?" Ziden said as he walked past her giving her a pat on the bottom before leaping into the warp pipe leaving a blushing Patchouli and a laughing Remilia.

" No crush on him, eh Patchy?" Remilia teased as she pulled out the container of blood and began to drink a bit of it. " Hmmmm. This blood tastes funny." remilia said as she wiped her mouth.

" I-I-I don't know what you're talking about, Remi!" Patchouli said before leaping into the pipe.

" This blood... it tastes blessed." She said as she entered the pipe as she found herself in a white forest area.

" Well guys! This is Boggly Woods!" Punio said while hopping up and down.

## **Boggly Woods ( Paper Mario 2)**

" Well now. It seems pretty nice here! Even the music is peaceful!" Ziden said as everyone took a moment to enjoy the ambiance of the forest and the music. The silence was broken by a fit of violent coughing as everyone turned to Patchouli who was now using her inhaler to calm down her rampant asthma. " Hey! You all right there, Patchy?" Ziden asked concerned about his teammate's safety.

" I'm fine, Ziden! Can we please hurry up and get this over with already?!" Patchouli said before walking off into the woods.

" What's her problem?" Aya asked

" Perhaps she's still a little peeved about my comment earlier." Mokou said while messing with the ribbon in her hair.

" Or it could be her reacting to what Ziden did to her a few moments ago." Remilia said as everyone glared at Ziden who was feeling nervous from everyone's glare.

" Hey now! All I did was give her a simple pat on the bottom! That's all!" Ziden said as Sakuya gave him a glare. " What?" He asked as Sakuya simply shook her head as Dante and Marisa had hatched an evil plan and set it in to motion.

" You know guys, that's how it always starts: A friendly pat on the bottom!" Dante said while walking towards Ziden with Marisa following behind him.

" Yep! Then comes the groping, ze!" Marisa said as she sat on her broom

" Then the friendly kisses!" Dante said as he circled around Ziden with Marisa circling him in a counter-clockwise motion.

" Then the snuggling!" Marisa teased

" Then 3 seconds of pure disappointment! Ah, young love!" Dante said before they both bursted into laughter as Yukari approached them and slammed their heads together knocking them unconscious.

" Wow Ziden. Didn't know you liked the librarian. I thought you liked redheads." Yukari said while fanning herself with her fan.

" I do like red-heads! Alot actually!" ziden said as Meiling mentally celebrated as Ziden sweatdropped. " But I like smart, shy girls alot more!"

Remilia looked over where Patchouli walked off and saw her standing behind a tree eavesdropping on the conversation. " So Ziden? Would you rather date Patchy or Meiling?" She asked as Meiling listened.

" Patchouli!" Ziden said without hesitation as Meiling's heart dropped. " Well you do come on strong, Meiling. But if we were on my Island, I could in fact marry you both due to the laws they put in place.

"Why is such a law in place?" Alice asked

" Well it was put into place when the island was first created, but I don't know the whole reason for its creation. Something about restoring the dwindling population and decreasing idiocy and bad behavior. You'd have to ask my mother about it, she was alive when it was written." Ziden said while scratching his head.

" Wait a minute! 'Created' the island? It wasn't naturally formed like a real island?" Reimu asked Ziden

" No it was real. The inhabitants magically enhanced it, so that it not only vastly increased the landmass of the island allowing large amounts of Humans and Demons to live together in peace, and it also kept outsiders out so that wars don't occur." Ziden said as everyone listened. " It is very different from Gensokyo not only in

location and but economy! In fact we have modern technology and medicine! It is one of the many secluded Safe Havens created for the salvation of the declining Gods and Goddesses, except the Island was made as a Safe Haven for Demons and Demon-loving humans."

" Is this Island anywhere near Gensokyo?" Reimu asked

" Nope. The Island is off the southeastern coast of U.S.A." Ziden said proudly as the girls and Sora looked confused.

" USA? What's that?" Flandre asked

" It's a country in the outside world known for their military might and advanced technology tied with Japan. The Island is a part of the United States of America or North America as its better known! I was born on the Island, making me a purified American citizen!" Ziden exclaimed.

Marisa let out a loud yawn and said " Oh gods! Ziden I know that you think this is interesting, but can we get back to saving the mouse people and get the Crystal star please, ze?"

Everyone agreed and walked into the forest leaving Ziden, Meiling and Mokou back near the warp pipe. " Jeez! Is Marisa always that rude or what?" Ziden said while running his hand along one of the spikes in his hair ( Ziden's spiky hair is styled like Goku's and Sonic's mixed together, meaning his hair is Goku's hairstyle with more spikes going in random directions.)

" Yeah, but you get used to it!" Meiling said as she proceeded to drag Ziden forward. " Hurry up we must catch up to Mistress Remilia!" They left Mokou by herself as she began to think more.

" Ziden I crim, huh? He sure is more fun to fight than that damn NEET of a moon princess. I wonder if his rivals are strong too." She thought as ran to catch up with the as they saw 3 purple women arguing.

" Vivian, you idiot! You had only one job! Hold the picture of that Mario fella, but of course you screwed it up, like everything else! Why I, the great Beldam, has to deal this, don't you agree Marylin?" Beldam said as she chastised Vivian.

" Hey old hag! Why don't you lay off of her, ze!" Marisa said as she walked up to them. The one named Vivian was wearing a Red and white striped hat with pink hair cheered up as Beldam turned towards the human witch and laughed.

" Why don't you mind your own business and go play witch somewhere else, little girl!" Beldam cackled as Marisa began to get upset at that comment. " We are the Shadow Sirens Three! We work for Lord Grodus, leader of the X-nauts!"

" So you're with those X-naut punks, huh?! Thats all I needed to know!" Marisa said as she pulled out a small, box like object and pointed it at them. " Please let this work! Master Spark!" She yelled as a large rainbow colored beam shot out striking Beldam and Marylin, but aimed it in a way so that it didn't hit Vivian. " How's that for playing witch, you old hag! You all right, Vivian?"

" Yes, I'm fine. Thank you strangers!" Vivian said as she bowed.

" Hey Vivian. Do yourself a favor and get away from those two. You're a good kid, I can tell that." Ziden said as he stepped forward with Sora and Mario following behind him.

" I will. Thank you Mister! But please don't kill my sisters. Evil or not they're still my family." Vivian said before slowly phasing into the floor.

" We won't! I promise!" Ziden said as Vivian left. Beldam got back up and was pissed to the maximum.

" You miserable little bitch! First you blast us, then you corrupt our sister! Heartless! Destroy Mario and his friends!" Beldam said before she disappeared as orbs of darkness surrounded them. Shadows,

Soldiers and Red Nocturne Heartless surrounded them as everyone drew their weapons!

## **Battle Theme ( Paper Mario 2)**

Remilia makes the first move as she crouched down and yelled " Demon Lord's Walk!" She then performed a lightning fast tackle that scattered the Soldiers, sending them everywhere as the othersw chased after them. Remilia began laughing as she started to slice up the Shadows with her Vampire Claw attack. Flandre joined the fun by attacking the Shadows and Soldiers with an unholy amount of bloody balls of energy destroying them as Munny fell from their destroyed bodies. Remilia noticed that the Soldiers had pink hearts coming out of their dead bodies. " *Hmm. Are those the hearts that the Heartless steal from people? I wonder if they can steal the hearts of Youkai as well.* " She thought as she was unaware of the Red Nocturnes charging up a fire spell behind her. Sora noticed her guard was down and rushed over to the Red Nocturnes and performed a strong 3-hit combo that took out the Heartless as Remilia turned around to see Sora approached her. " Uh-oh! Looks like I dropped my guard. I'd better get back to the fight... huh?" She said as she noticed Ziden sitting on a branch in a tree watching the fight. She was about to yell at him when she noticed that Ziden looked really different. His spiky, black hair was longer, coming past his shoulders and had dark smoke rising from it. His trademark black jacket was now a trench coat that had demonic eyes all over it. His eyes weren't light blue, but instead were now black. He looked over to Remilia and gave her a sadistic smile which sent chills down her spine. " What the hell is going on? Why the hell am I scared? I'm Remilia Scarlet, the Scarlet Devil, descendent of the legendary vampire Vlad Tepes! Wait where'd he go?" She said as she looked around to try and find the Shadow Man. She gave up and resumed taking out the Heartless. Everyone fought with extreme skill and prowess. Sakuya was throwing her knives at the heartless. The magicians were casting spells at the Heartless horde. Meiling was using several different artes to take out some Soldiers. Ike and Youmu were slicing through

Red Nocturnes and Shadows as if they were butter. Beldam became angry as all of the Heartless was destroyed.

" Useless Heartless! Come Marylin! Let us return to Lord Grodus! We'll deal with the traitor, later!" Beldam said as they disappeared.

### **Boggly Woods ( Paper Mario 2)**

" That was interesting! Marisa, what was that beam I saw just now?" Ziden asked as she pulled out a small box and showed it to him and told him what it was. " Hakker0, huh? It looks like your ExSphere allowed you use that attack, for some odd reason."

" Come on guys we have to get to the Great Tree, so follow me and hurry!" Punio said he led them to a gray Warp pipe as they jumped into it. After they exited it they found themselves in front a gigantic tree.

### **The Great Tree ( Paper Mario 2)**

They approached the tree and immediately noticed something amiss. There was a big metallic door on the tree. Punio noticed this and became sad. " This wasn't here the last time i was here. We can't open it either." He said before he remembered something important. " Oh wait! There is an secret entrance, follow me guys!" He led everyone up a tree root and stopped. " Crap berries! I forgot we need a strong gust of wind to reveal it. Besides this might not be where it is."

" Well even so, this is a good spot to start. Besides, it's not like the secret entrance has the words 'Secret Entrance' over it. So Aya work your magic, wind powers... Yes!" Ziden said while pointing at the tree.

" Sure thing, but I expect an interview for this!" Aya said as she waved her fan creating a gust that rolled over the tree. They group noticed that a piece of the tree was moving around like a piece of paper before floating away revealing a small hole that Punio entered.

The group noticed a sign that had bright and colorful letters that said 'Secret Entrance'. Everyone looked over to Ziden who had his mouth wide open for a few seconds before face-palming himself. They heard a mechanical noise coming from below them as the door opened below them. They ran inside to see a beautiful sight. An ecosystem was inside the tree. Shrubbery and various forms of plant life thrived in here.

" Welcome to the Great Tree guys!" Punio said ziden sensed small creatures in the room.

" All right guys! Lets save these creatures and get this Crystal Star!" Ziden said as everyone nodded

*Somewhere in front of a Arena...*

### **Villians of a Sort (Kingdom Hearts II)**

A man in a red military uniform was floating above the Arena with an angry look on his face. " *So that fool Ziden and his foolish friends will arrive here soon huh?*" The man thought to himself. " *That man's offer to rule a world of darkness is a good one, after all the darkness did improve my Psycho-energy! Those other guys better not hold me back though, or I will crush them like the worms that they are!*" The man then began to laugh manically.

Below him was a man walking into the arena wearing a white gi with a red headband wrapped around his head. " A tournament huh?" The man said before entering the building.

*After his brush with death, Ziden found himself going toe-to-toe with the fire summon Ifrit and obtained his power. After some odd incidents later the group found themselves in a massive heartless ambush in which they became victorious. Now they have entered the Lion's Den to save these creatures known as Punies and obtain the Crystal Star. But unknown to them a new group of villians appeared plotting to destroy them...*



*Author's Notes: This chapter was a doozy to type. Eleven pages of pure insanity. I will also give anyone props if they can guess who the two mysterious characters are who appear at the end. Read and Review! Also here for people who are confused about some things. I am no longer giving descriptions to the weaker Heartless and enemies ( Excluding Boss Heartless and Enemies) I will only give intense description to characters that are original creations of mine.*

*Gi: An outfit that is normally worn by Martial Artists.*

*Face-Palming: A Meme used to react to purely idiotic situations.*

# **Emerald Star and A New Key is Born**

## **The Great Tree ( Paper Mario 2)**

" All right Punio! What do we do now?" Ziden asked as Punio walked over to the center of the room.

" Guys! You can come out! These guys are here to help us!" Punio said as ten other Punies appeared from the bushes and looked at the looming giants.

" Woah! They're so big!" One of them said.

" One of them has some really bushy hair under his nose." One of them said.

" Oh yeah! What if these guys are with those X-naut freaks that took over the tree with our most hated enemy: the Jabbis!" An extremely obese one said as Punio appeared next to him.

" Puniper! What are you saying?! These guys saved me from those X-naut creeps in the sewers!" Punio said in an angry tone.

" Oh yeah! Well they could have staged it to gain your trust!" Puniper yelled back.

" Forgot you, Puniper!" Punio said as he looked around the room. " Where is the Elder and my sister, Petuni?"

" Humph! While you were off playing with your 'Cool, new friends', the X-nauts came and took the elder and your sister, taking them to the cells with the others!" Puniper said with disdain in his voice.

" What?! We've got to go save them!" Punio said as he raced over to the gray Warp Pipe only to find that his fellow Punies stayed with Puniper who said simply ' We ain't going nowhere without the elder's

approval' suddenly a mechanical door opened as two Elite X-nauts appeared from it.

" Hey look! Those are the punks that interfered with us in Rogueport! Lets get them!" Elite X-naut A said before exploding into a red mist as only the bottom half of his tiny body remained as Elite X-naut B ran over and held his dead friend's body in his arms as tears fell down his face.

"PAAAAAAAAAAAUUUUUL! NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO! He was only three days from retirement! I'LL AVENGE YOU PAULLLLLLLLLLLLL! TASTE MY FURY YOU CRET-" He roared before a red spear pierced his skull, killing him instantly. The group looked over to the Scarlet sisters and saw them acting like nothing happened.

" You know? Forget it and lets save these Punies!" Ziden said to the as he crawled into the gray pipe as the rest of the group followed him, after passing through some rooms they found them selves in a room with red and blue jail cells with alot of Punies in one, and an older looking one in the blue cell. Punio approached the cell full of Punies as a small, striped Puni came up to the cell bars.

" Big Brother!" The small Puni girl said to Punio as sad music began to play.

### **Koops Reunion with dad Koopley ( Paper Mario 2)**

" Petuni! You're okay!" Punio said with tears coming out of his eyes.

" Big Brother! I knew you would come back and save us!" Petuni said while bouncing up and down out of happiness. " Those mean X-naut guys have the keys to the cell, you need to get them so we can escape!"

As soon she said keys two henchmen came out from the next room only to be hit with a stream of fire, turning them to ash as a blue key appeared from the pile. Mario picked it up and unlocked the Elder's cell as she walked out and began to yell at Punio.

## **The Great Tree ( Paper Mario 2)**

" What took you so long you idiot! You know Punio, you need to be much more responsible for your actions! Humph, I'm guessing these guys with you are good?" The Puni Elder said as everyone nodded. " Where are the rest of the Punies?" She asked as Ziden quickly answered.

" They stayed upstairs with that fatass Puni! I personally think you should chew them out!" Ziden said as the Puni Elder began to leave the room before saying.

" You're damn right I'm going to chew those bastards out! Lets go!" The group left the room and went back to the room with Puniper in it. The Puni Elder began giving the Punies a stern talking as the group took a small break. Ziden was resting with Meiling, Sakuya and Patchouli, Sora was talking to Reimu and Marisa, Yukari sitting down talking to Ike and Youmu, Remilia and Flandre were sharing the blood from Remilia's bottle, Alice was resting on a log, Donald and Goofy were talking to the Mario Bros., Dante was polishing Rebellion while Mokou was sitting down glaring at Ziden and last but not least Aya was taking pictures of the Punies for her newspaper.

## **Have a Nice Talk ( Mario & Luigi Bowser's Inside Story)**

" So Ziden? Uhhmm, how are you today?" Patchouli asked as she tried to start a conversation.

" Just wonderful!" Ziden said with sarcasm as the three girls sweatdropped. " First I get killed by some jerk ass of a knight, a person whom I want to brutally murder is being friendly with me, and my powers and my weapons are missing! But otherwise today was awesome! I got a cool fire summon thingy!" Ziden said while rubbing the card.

" I see." Patchouli said while thinking of something else to say.

" Hey Ziden! I have some questions about the ExSpheres, How do we look at the Artes we know at the moment?" Meiling asked while scooting close to Ziden

" Just tap it and a screen will appear showing you what artes you know." Ziden said while still rubbing the card.

" Did you make these Exspheres?" Patchouli asked as she mimicked Meiling's action from before.

" Nope. Found these bad boys on a world I came across during a past adventure." Ziden said as he put the card away. "Absolutely no idea how they are made and how they work."

Sakuya began to reflect on everything that they were told about The Ultima Brigade and Organization XIII. " Master Ziden, is this Ultima person the only person in the Ultima Brigade we should be worried?" Ziden looked at her with an annoyed look on his face.

" First of all for the last freaking time: Stop calling me Master! Secondly, no. There are alot of dangerous people higher up in the Ultima Brigade's chain of command, they all have weird and crazy powers which makes them quite dangerous!" Ziden then let out a yawn before noticing how close Patchouli and Meiling were to him as a devious thought entered his perverted mind as his hands moved to towards Meiling and Patchouli as their faces immediately turned bright red as they felt Ziden's 'touch of affection' but didn't move. Sakuya, however, took offense to this and threw a knife into Ziden's knee. "OWWWWW! My precious knee! GOD WHYYYYYYY!" Ziden screamed as while rolling around on the floor while the three girls giggled at the sight.

*Over to Sora, Reimu and Marisa...*

*Reimu was counting the coins and munny she got from previous fights, while Marisa was pestering Sora about his keyblade.*

" Come on, ze! Give it to me!" Marisa exclaimed as she held out her hand.

Sora who was tired from arguing with her for the past 15 mins, decided to give up and summon his keyblade " Fine! Here!" Sora threw the keyblade at Marisa who caught it.

She began to swing it and held it lovingly before it disappeared causing her to flip out. " I knew it, ze! I knew you would try some bullcrap like this!" Marisa said as she walked towards Sora with her fists balled up as she grabbed Sora by his shirt and brought his scared face close to her angry face. " Give it to me! NOWWW!" She roared as Reimu walked up and hit Marisa over the head with her gohei knocking her out.

" Are you all right Sora? I'm sorry about my idiotic friend assaulting you for your keyblade." Reimu said as she bowed to Sora. " But it does give off some weird magic. Of course I overheard your conversation with Remi about it choosing its wielder. Do you think I would get one somewhere down the line, Sora?" Sora shrugged his shoulders.

" More than likely." Sora said as Reimu had a smile on her face. " Hey Reimu? How come you're collecting all that Munny and coins for anyway?"

Reimu had a look of confusion on her face before remembering that Sora knew almost nothing about them. " Oh well, thats because I have a donation box back at my shrine that I have to collect money for repairs and stuff!" Reimu said running her hand through her hair.

Sora then performed his signature pose before asking Reimu " I understamd that part, but

what if the Munny and coins aren't usable where you're from?' The minute Sora said that, Reimu's face turned to one of sadness as Marisa got back up.

A thought entered Reimu's head as she spoke her thought aloud. " Well maybe they aren't useble in Gensokyo the way they are now, but if I were to find someone who could change it into Yen, I would be set!" Marisa overhearing this, walked up and added her opinion to the matter.

" Oh! And where exactly would you find such a place, armpits?" Marisa asked as Reimu glared at her.

" Why do you call her armpits, Marisa?" Sora asked while being genuinely confused. Marisa walked over to Sora and wrapped her arm around Sora's neck and began to explain her reasoning.

" Well now, you see my dear little Sora! I call her Armpits just because of the tacky outfit she wears!" Reimu started to protest only to be silenced by Marisa's hand. " Now us, however! We wear awesome clothing! They don't show stains, they have many pockets to hide goodies in, plus they make us look cool and awesome!" Marisa exclaimed

" That actually makes sense! Thanks Marisa!" Sora said while getting along with his new friends Marisa and Reimu!

*Over to Yukari, Youmu and Ike's conversation...*

Youmu looked confused at what Yukari told them about Ziden's childhood. " Wait! Lady Yuyuko knew about Ziden living with you?"

" Yep! She'd occasionally pop in to see him. I'm not sure what was happening between those two, but I guess Ziden saw her as a 2nd mother, for some odd reason." Yukari said only cause to cause more confusion in poor little Youmu's mind. " But you should remember him Youmu, you did teach him the basics of using two swords."

" Really? Can you at least describe him so I can remember him better, Lady Yukari?" Youmu asked

" Come on Youmu! You know: a little boy, spiky black hair, light blue eyes, always stared at you and tried to play with Myon alot, asked alot of questions about swords." The minute Yukari said this, a memory sparked in Youmu's head.

" I remember now! That little kid was Ziden?" Youmu asked as Yukari nodded.

" Huh? I thought that Ziden learned his swordsmanship from his mother?" Ike asked as Yukari got insulted.

" Please! His mother, Roxanne Icrim, only taught him those overly flashy moves they both use on a daily basis! I taught him the basics of swordsmanship! I even raised him from birth when his mother was being hunted down by his Satan worshipping, lunatic of a father! But no! I get no form of credit from him! His mother thanked me, his sisters thanked me! \*sniff\* He is so frustrating sometimes! Getting killed and losing his powers every other day is so annoying!" Yukari ranted as Ike and Youmu slowly backed away from the crazy Demoness. " I remember the day his mother sent us letters of challenge! That was the day that me and Yuyuko first met her all those years ago. Dear god, could that woman put up a fight! Sword beams and blade tornadoes were coming at us in droves! She ended catching us with that attack that Ziden used to defeat Dante and Mokou! Of course we ended up staying conscious and I hit her with a train! After that she got up and starting laughing! We started laughing too! Afterwards she took us to her shrine and served us her 'famous tea'! From there, we became friends/sparring partners!"

" Well that was scary!" Ike said before bursting into laughter.

*Over to Donald and Goofy talking to the Mario Bros.*

" Wow, you guys must be pretty strong to be taking on threats like this on a daily basis!" Goofy said while shaking Luigi's hand.

" Ahh its nothing! Nothing like the people that we fought during the Smash Bros. Tournaments!" Luigi boasted



" Yes! Me and Luigi have been in all three tournaments! The third was the most hectic though..." Mario said as his mind trailed off somewhere else.

" Hey Marty-o! Everyone up and at 'em!" The Puni Elder yelled as Everyone ran over to her. " Here you go Marty-o!" She handed Mario a Sun-like object. She went over to Sora and gave him instructions as he ran off into the gray pipe. " All right you guys I told that kid with the key to go rescue the other Punies. In order to get the Crystal Star, you'll need the Punies help to get to it. That Orb will make the Punies follow you! Take out those X-naut freaks and the Jabies that get in your way! Now get going!" Everyone entered the pipe and made their way to a room that had two floors. The top floor had very narrow paths while the bottom was wide open and had bushes.

## **The Great Tree ( Paper Mario 2)**

"Lets go this way!" Mario led the group into a room that had big hive at the other end as Mosquito-like creatures rushed out of it and lined up, ready to fight. Of course Soldier and Large Body Heartless appeared with the Jabbis.

## **Battle theme ( Paper Mario 2)**

" Man! Don't these Heartless freaks ever give?!"Ziden whined as Sora ran over the group of Heartless.

" It's the Jabbis! Lets get them!" Punio yelled as the group of Punies charged the group of Jabbis while the group of heroes charged the group of heartless.

Meiling dashed towards a Large Body and performed a hard kick on it's stomach only for her to bounce off of it. " What the-! Sora! How do you hurt these things?!" She asked as she blocked the Large Body's arm swipes by hitting his hands with her legs, halting his futile attack as Ziden whistled at her martial arts skills.

Sora was fending off a barrage of kick attacks from the Soldiers before performing his Cyclone attack, dashing through them and slew them in the process. " Hit them in their backs! Watch out when they start to glow with a purple aura! They'll attack harder and faster!" Sora said as he dashed over to the Large Body attacking Donald and Goofy.

Meiling took Sora's advice and dashed behind the Large Body striking it with rapid fire kicks and punches. " Hi-yahhhh!" She yelled as she began to juggle it into the air before performing axe kick slamming the Large Body into the ground as she performed an arte. " Eagle Dive!" She performed a dive bomb kick that struck it directly on the head as a purple aura surrounded him as he grabbed her leg and launched her against a wall. " Ow! This doesn't look good at all!" The Large Body made its way to her.

" Hey fattie!" The Large Body turned to the voice and saw a man with a silver baseball bat and blue baseball cap was taunting him. The Large Body charged at Ziden who ran up to him and yelled " Eat it fattie! BONK!" Ziden yelled as he swung the baseball bat at the Large Body's head, defeating it as he ran over to Meiling and helped to her feet before attacking the rest of the Heartless.

Patchouli was surrounded by a red light as she was chanting a magic spell as Soldiers converged on her location as Alice's dolls blasting them away with their bullets. " Thank you, Alice! Take this! Flame Lance!" A lance of fire crashed down into the Soldiers causing a small explosion of fire eradicating them in the process. As the group over looked the area, the Punies rushed into the hive and exploded. The group continued their way through the tree as they found themselves in a room with the familiar pedestal to place the orb. " Ziden! There's that pedestal again! I'm going place the orb in it, okay?" Patchouli rushed over to the pedestal as an alarm went off in Ziden's head.

The Great Tree ( Paper Mario 2)

" Wait! Patchouli don't!" Too late. The group found themselves trapped in the cage as two familiar people walked in to the room. Lord Crump and Pete began to laugh at the caged Heroes.

" Haahahahahahahhah! Looks like you bozos got yourselves trapped like a bunch of rats!" Pete mocked as the group became angry.

" I saw you punks placing that orb on those pedestals, so me and my new ally Pete built a fake pedestal to trap you and those disgusting rats! Now we'll get that Crystal Star before you guys this time!" Lord Crump said as he left the room.

" Oh yeah, before I forget! The Black Knight says hello to the 'Son of Gawain' and the reject of a hero!" Pete taunted as he left after Crump.

" Wow way to go Patchy! Way to get us caught, ze!" Marisa said while pointing her finger at Patchouli who hung her head in shame.

" I-I-I'm sorry! I just saw the pedestal and got excited!" Patchouli apologized as she continued to hang her head in shame.

Remilia seeing this as the perfect opportunity for a certain idiot to get involved, she looked over to Ziden to see a disturbing sight. Ziden had a look of pure rage on his face as he gripped his arm with such a force that blood was pouring down it, shocking Remilia. " Uh Ziden? Are you alright?" Everyone looked over to Ziden as he walked to the bars and melted a hole in it allowing escape. " *I guess he's still little upset about the Black Knight killing him so easily .*" She thought as everyone except Ziden, Ike and Patchouli left the cell.

Patchouli looked at Ziden with a concerned look Ike approached her. She looked over to Ike as she sensed magic similar to the Black Knight's armor coming from Ike's sword. " Ike! Is there a reason why your sword is emitting the same kind of magic as that man's armor?" Ike simply walks by her and stops in front of the hole Ziden created.

Ike raises his sword and says " His armor is blessed by the Goddess of my world making it nearly invulnerable to damage. Only weapons, like my sword Ragnell, blessed by the goddess will hurt him." Ike walked out of the cage leaving Patchy and Ziden alone in the cell.

" Heh heh. I guess that's why my attack did nothing to him." Ziden said as he attempted to leave only to be stopped by Patchouli who was trying to reassure him.

" Ziden. If that man didn't have that protection, I'm sure you would have stood a chance against him!" Patchouli said as a smile broke out on Ziden's face.

" Yeah I could have! Thanks for cheering me up, Patchy!" Ziden attempted to give her a hug only for her to back away and Ziden knew why, his bleeding arm. Patchouli began to leave the cell as she turned around and said.

" Maybe some other time, Ziden." Patchouli said as she left the cell. Ziden ran over and grabbed the orb catching up with his teammates.

*After some solved Puzzles and beaten enemies.*

The heroes found themselves in a room with statues of Puni Elders and in the middle was a pedestal. Ziden immediately placed the orb in the pedestal as the statues began to glow. a bright light emerged from the statue and a Green crystal Star popped out. Everyone expected Ziden to run and grab the crystal star only for him to stand there with arms crossed as if he was waiting for something to happen. " 3. 2. 1. And there he is." Ziden said as Lord Crump snatched the Crystal Star and started to laugh at the group.

" Hahahahhhah! Thanks for getting the Star for us, you losers! Here's a present as thanks! A nice 'explosive' present!" Lord Crump said as he pulled out a detonator and set a self-destruct sequence before running away as everyone chased after him.

They found themselves in the entrance of the tree with the Puni Elder confronting Crump. "You got alot of nerve coming into this tree and taking it over! Not only that but you try to take our Crystal Star as well! Time for your ass whooping sonny! Achhh! My back!... Not now!" The Puni Elder cried out as the group surrounded Crump.

" Damn! I've been caught! Time to turn this off then." Crump then turned off the timer as Ziden approached him.

" Guys, you rest for this. I'll take him on myself!" Ziden pounded his fist into his palm as Crump began to laugh.

" Bwahahahahahahah! That's going to be a big mistake Spikes!" An orb surrounded him as it formed a purple robot that had white X on it's chest. " It's time for you to meet Magnus von Grapple!" The red curtain wrapped around the group as they were watching ziden's fight from the audience.

### **Magnus von Grapple battle theme ( Paper Mario 2)**

" So you're going to fight me in that tin can?! That's sad bro!" Ziden said while sizing up Magnus von Grapple.

" Oh yeah! Take this you fool, Magnus von Stomp!" Magnus von Grapple performed a jump and attempted to stomp Ziden only to horribly miss as Ziden counter attacked.

"Burning Slicer!" Ziden shot off a burning shockwave from his leg as it exploded against Magnus as Ziden leapt into the air " Heroic Diving Kick!" Ziden performed a diving kick attack while surrounded in a golden light as Magnus got up and countered with a sharp roundhouse kick that connected with Ziden's kick causing a shock wave to form blasting the attackers back a few feet as everyone cheered for Ziden. " Looks like that Robot Reject can put up a fight! Too bad it looks like crap!" These words caused anger to form in Crump's mind as he stomped repeatedly causing the stage to shake knocking Ziden off his feet. " What? U mad bro?!"

"I'M GOING SMASH YOU INTO PIECES! MAGNUS VON CHOP!" Magnus launched at Ziden attempting to karate chop him as Ziden ran up the wall and crouched down avoiding the attack.

" Spring-vault Thrust!" Ziden launches himself off the wall and hits Magnus with a palm thrust, knocking Magnus back a few feet. " Jeez! This is why we can't have nice things! So are you going to give up and give us the Crystal Star or do I have to smash your robot to pieces?"

"NEVVVVVVVEEEEEERRRRR! MAGNUS VON ROCKET PUNCH!" Magnus' fist shot off like rockets ( hence the name) hitting Ziden and forcing him into the wall as everyone gasped. " YOU'RE MINE NOW YOU LITTLE BASTAAARDDD! MAGNUS VON BEATDOWN!" Magnus' fists returned as it began rapidly punch Ziden into the wall as sound of flesh being hit and bones crunching. Ziden fell off the wall as Magnus lifted up his foot and began to stomp Ziden repeatedly while laughing before he grabbed Ziden by his leg and showed his battered body to the audience as he launched his body as he prepared another attack. "MAGNUS VON SPIRALING ROCKET PUNCH!" Magnus' fist flew towards ziden while spinning like drill as it slammed into Ziden blasting him into the wall. Ziden slid down the wall and landed head first as Crump began to laugh. " SEE WHERE YOUR MOUTH GOT YOU BOY!? TIME TO FINISH YOU OFF BOY!... WHAT THE?!" Ziden was standing back up and cracked his neck and knuckles.

" Hey Trash heap! Wanna know something funny? I've been holding back and trying to see what this thing can do and frankly, I'm very disappointed. So simply put I'm going to take it apart... NOW!" Ziden drew out the Crimson Edge as he dashed at Magnus and performed a strong body slice causing oil to spray out. Ziden raised his sword as a bright red light shone from it. "Time to send you to the junkyard, Crumpy boy! BLASTING STAKE!" Ziden performed a dashing sword thrust that pierced Magnus as explosive shockwaves ripped Magnus von Grapple apart internally.

"NOOOOOOOOOOO! MAGNUSSSSSSSSSS!" Explosions began to tear apart Magnus as the red curtain wrapped around them and brought them back to the tree as Magnus exploded, sending Crump flying as the crystal Star lands in Ziden's hands.

## **End of Chapter! ( Paper Mario 2)**

*After rescuing Aya from the grips of the mysterious golden army and dying by the Black Knight's hand, Ziden found himself aiding the creatures known Punies liberate their tree from the grips of the X-nauts. After a grueling battle, Ziden destroyed Magnus von Grapple and obtained the Emerald Star from Lord Crump. Everyone said their goodbyes to the now freed Punies as they began their journey back to the Thousand Year Door as Ziden, Yukari, Patchouli and Aya decided to head back to Rogueport ( via Yukari's Gap) and rest in Inn, much to the remaining Heroes distress. The group of four made their way to Rogueport and made themselves comfortable as Ziden relaxed on the bed with Patchouli sitting in chair next to him heavily reading a strange new book, Yukari was getting ready to fall asleep in the bed (or was she?) and Aya was looking over the pictures she took.*

## **Rogueport ( Paper Mario 2)**

" So Aya? I have to ask: How did you get here anyway?" Ziden asked

Aya scratched her head for a moment and remembered " Oh, Nitori did something to those computer things and told me I could get down to that world by using that circle-thing!" Ziden looked extremely surprised at this before laying back down into his pillow. Yukari snuck over to Patchouli and whispered something into her ear.

" Hey, Library Girl. I thought I should let you know that Ziden is a very deep sleeper. He wouldn't notice a certain Librarian sneaking into his bed to cuddle!" Yukari began to laugh as Patchouli continued to read her book. Yukari seeing this as an opportunity for mischief, Yukari opened up a small gap as a weird can-like object appeared in

her hand as she waited for Ziden to slip into a deep sleep so she can play her prank on Ziden. Ziden fell into a deep sleep as Yukari took his hand and sprayed a thick, cream-like substance on his hand as she chuckled and laid back down and fell asleep. Patchouli seeing that everyone was preoccupied began to take action and snuck into Ziden's bed and made herself comfortable as she snuggled herself on top of Ziden and began to fall asleep. Aya seeing this lifted up her camera and took a picture of the sleeping duo and began to laugh.

" Looks I've got me a story for the newspaper when I get back to Gensokyo!" Aya said as she began to write something down.

*Meanwhile in Ziden's dream...*

Ziden found himself falling headfirst towards a large platform that had a picture of him on it. Ziden performed a flip making himself land feetfirst as he looked around to gather his surroundings as three pedestals appeared around him.

## **Dive into the Heart -Destati- ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

A voice unknown to Ziden spoke to him " *Your heart has awakened to accept this power. Ziden Icrim, please choose one of these powers to wield.*" After the voice stopped talking, a sword, a shield and a wand appeared on the pedestal leaving to Ziden think to himself for a moment.

" *This is weird. I mean why am I here and what is this power that voice was talking about. I guess I should choose something then... oh great she's here.*" A familiar looking gap opened next to Ziden as Yukari walked through it. " Why are you bothering me in my dreams, Yukari?"

" Simply because I can!" Yukari looked around at the strange pedestals and platform they were on. " Weird dream today, huh Ziden?" After she said that Ziden up to the pedestal with the sword as he grabbed it.



The sword looked like a regular sword with the exception of a red circle guard with a black Z in the middle. The hilt was golden. The unknown voice began to speak again. "*A sword of Divinity. Its power will allow you to protect your friends and slay evil. Do you wish to obtain this power?*" Ziden nodded as the sword disappeared in a flash of light. "*Good. Now choose a power to give up.*" Yukari seeing this was about to ask 'When will it be my turn?' as voice spoke again. "*I am sorry Yukari Yakumo, great Demoness of Boundries, but this power is not yours to receive. Please return to your own dream.*" Yukari opened a gap after flipping the voice the bird.

"Hey Yukari, what are Patchouli and Aya doing right now?" Ziden asked while walking towards the wand. Yukari began to laugh.

"You'll see when you wake up with your new powers!" Yukari said as she left through the gap.

Ziden walked over to the wand and picked it up. It was a simple wooden wand with a red star on the top of it. "*A wand of Mystical Might. Its mystic powers will allow to learn powerful magics to fight off enemies. Do you wish to give up this power?*" Ziden shook his head as he placed the wand back on the pedestal and picked up the shield which had a white cross on it with a red Z in the middle of it. "*The shield of Holy Protection. Its defensive capabilities will ensure you that harm will come to you or your friends. Do you wish to give up this?*" Ziden nodded as the shield disappeared from his hands. The pedestals sank into the ground. The sword appeared in Ziden's right hand as he began to practice swinging it around. "*Your power is one of light and of darkness. Use this power to defend yourself from evil.*" As if on cue Shadow Heartless and Dusk nobodies appeared.

## **Fragments of sorrow ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Ziden dashed at the foes before him as swung his sword around, taking out waves of enemies. The enemies were all defeated as Ziden heard the voice again.

*" Now comes the final test. Your heart is unique: a perfect balance of light and darkness, as such your test shall be unique as well.*

*Prepare yourself, Ziden Icrim."* Ziden noticed his shadow split in half with one extending in front of him, and the other was extending behind him. His front shadow began to take a gigantic, black humanoid form with a giant heart sized hole in his chest. Behind him was a giant white humanoid wearing a blue scarf.

## **Tension Rising ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

" Looks like I've got me a fight to finish this test!" Ziden dashed at the Darkside and began to swing at its hands, causing darkness to spray out from its hand. The Darkside reeled back and punched the ground, causing a shockwave to spread across the platform as the Twilight Thorn flew off the platform leaving the two combatants by themselves. " *So one at a time huh?*" Ziden thought he continued to face the Heartless giant. Ziden leapt into the air " Demon Slayer!" and brought his sword down on Darkside's head as a red mist sprayed taking the form of a demon's skull causing the Darkside to fall to its knees. " Gotcha, you bastard! Wait a minute. He's doing an attack!" A bright ball of light formed in its chest as it exploded sending out wave after wave of energy balls as Ziden frantically tried to dodge the assault. Ziden leapt over the wave of energy balls and shot sword waves at Darkside's face causing it to stagger halting the vicious barrage of energy balls. " *Jesus! That was like when Chen battled me in Danmaku a few months ago!*" The Darkside was obviously on its last legs as Ziden performed a strong vertical slice that cleaved the Heartless in half. " All right, all thats left is- Aughhhh!" Ziden got hit by the Twilight Thorn's fist that stretched over to Ziden hitting square in the back.

Ziden recovered from the attack and charged at the Nobody and launched sword waves at it only for it to dodge by moving around the platform like a snake shocking Ziden. " HOW THE HELL IS SOMETHING THAT BIG ABLE TO DODGE LIKE THAT!" The Twilight Thorn stretched its arm back before it shot forward like a bullet. "Woah!" Ziden barely dodged the attack and slashed the arm

only to notice that it did no damage. Ziden looked at the Nobody observing its body looking for a weak point as he locked onto its head. Ziden dashed at the Nobody launching a barrage of sword slices with only a few of them hitting its head. The Twilight Thorn launched its arm back while twisting it before it shot forward spinning like a powerful drill.

Ka-Blammmmm!

Its attack hit Ziden head on as he flew back and recovered before falling off the platform. "Crimson Boomerang!" Ziden launched his sword as it spun like a buzzsaw as it sliced the Nobody's head causing it to recoil in pain. "All right big guy, time to wrap this up now!" A bright light shone blinding Ziden as he found himself suspended in the air as The Twilight Thorn appeared in front of him. The Nobody reeled both of its arm back and attempts to slam its palms into Ziden's body only for him to flip upwards and swing his striking its face, enraging the Nobody as it launched Ziden into the air only for Ziden to throw his sword into Twilight Thorn's head causing it to fall down. "All right! Time for the Combo Finisher!" Ziden began to strike its head causing massive damage only for the Nobody to slide off the platform. "... I won by suicide? Yay?" The platform began to shake violently as the platform flipped over as Ziden flew off it and saw the Nobody tilting the platform and holding an enormous white orb with its feet. Ziden threw the sword into the orb causing it to explode blasting Ziden and the Nobody back onto the platform as Ziden stabbed his sword into the Nobody's skull finishing it off. Ziden watched as The Twilight thorn exploded into darkness enveloping the platform as Ziden swung his sword dispersing the darkness around him. The voice began to speak to Ziden again as a bright light enveloped his sword lifting it into the sky.

*"Ziden, you have done well. Now it is time for you to receive your power."* The sword took a new form as it now looked like a key. The handle was surrounded by a red fiery hilt with three blunt points rising up a fair bit before they combined to form the teeth of the weapon. The weapon also had a red and black keychain that had a

quarter sized white Z at the end. Ziden was shocked at this as the voice began to speak for the last time. " *You have been chosen to wield the keyblade, but there is a catch: You won't be able to summon your keyblade until the moment is right. Now awaken from this dream and return to your friends, Legendary Hero of the Eternal Flames.*"

## **Rougeport (Paper Mario 2)**

Ziden woke up with a startle as he felt something on top of him as he looked down saw Patchouli asleep on top of him with a peaceful on herself. Ziden ran his hand through his hair as he felt something sticky in his hair as he brought his hand down and saw leftovers of Whipped cream on his hand. " Screw you Yukari!" Ziden yelled as it startled Patchouli awake as ziden stared into her purple eyes. " Enjoyed your nap, Patchy?" Ziden expected her to become nervous but she had a smile on her face.

" Yes I did! Come on Ziden, get up!" Patchouli scrambled off of Ziden and began to smoothen out her nightgown before descending down the stairs as Ziden looked at the book she was reading intensely and froze when he read the title of the book. ' How to be the Perfect Girlfriend/Wife by Morrigan Aensland'. Ziden looked at Yukari, who her head coming out of gap over Ziden's shoulder, who gave a scared look to each other.

" This isn't going to end well is it?" Ziden asked Yukari got of bed and walked over to Ziden.

" Hey, you flirted with her! Your grave, buddy! Besides, at least its not the Gatekeeper." Yukari said while sitting next to Ziden in the bed.

" Well excuse me for liking her! Hey she's better than any other girl who liked me before." Ziden said as Yukari shot him a look.

" Two things Ziden. One: Stop talking about how you feel about the librarian, cause she's sitting on the stairs eavesdropping on us! Two: What was that power you received that I couldn't have gotten?"

Ziden looked at her for a second and simply " It gave me a keyblade but it said I would be able to use it at the right moment! Lets get to the others." Ziden said as he got out of the bed and went down the stairs and saw Patchouli staring at him as Ziden motioned for her to follow as she wrapped her arm around his arm as he sighed and walked out of the Bar/Inn and went to the West side of town as they saw the group looking at them with funny looks. " So what were you guys doing while I was asleep?" Remilia flew up to Ziden's face with a look of disgust on her face.

" Well Ziden, I hope you enjoyed your nap, cause we had some work to do to get these tickets to some place called the Glitz Pit! We had to find some guy named Don Pianta, whom in order to meet we had to learn what items we needed to buy to meet the guy! Then when we meet the guy, he tells us to go find his daughter who ran off her lover Franky! They end up dropping the Marriage bomb on him as he told to do whatever they want and then he gave us our tickets! Now before I forget, Patchy! Did you rape Ziden while he was sleeping?!" Ziden had a look of shock on his face as Patchy had looked guilty.

" Please tell me you didn't, Patchy?" Ziden asked as she leaned over to Ziden and whispered in his ear.

" Well, not really and besides I'll wait until we're married before we start having that kind of romance!" Patchouli turned to the group and simply said no as they left the duo and Meiling alone. She knew what Ziden was about to ask. " I only used my hands, that's all!" Which caused Ziden to nosebleed.

" You really need to stop reading that book! NOW!" Ziden said with a hint of concern and fear in his voice as Patchouli winked at Ziden and walked over to the group as Meiling had a shocked look on her face.

" Um Ziden? I think she must really want you to herself! Looks like I need to be more 'assertive'!" Meiling said seductively only for Ziden to sigh. " So do you know the author of that book? I've read it you know!"

" Yes and of course you did! That woman is an rape-happy Succubus that I do not like to see at all! After all everything in that book was how she treated me while I was weakened!" Ziden shuddered at the memory. Meiling wrapped Ziden's arm in a strong vice grip as she dragged him to the blimp which looked like a Cheep-Cheep ( which oddly enough was piloted by Cheep-cheep) The flyers decided to float up to the floating city known as Glitzville.

The group looked as they saw a commotion happening in the arena-like building. A humanoid yellow hawk was holding a championship belt that had the Crystal Star on it as everyone had a determined look on their face.

*After an intense battle with Magnus von Grapple, Ziden found himself battling to prove his heart's worth only to wake up to a cuddly librarian that ended up 'entertaining' herself while Ziden slept. But they did not know the corruption that was happening in the Glitz Pit.*

Author's notes: Yes, that is the very same Morrigan from Darkstalkers that wrote that book made Patchouli alot more bold. But before I forget, I am hoping by the end of this story it will have over 1000 views. I am noticing the lack of reviews and it makes me wonder if people just don't feel like reviewing or are scared to voice their opinions. I just want to know if you guys like the story so far. Also the Glitz Pit is going to be focused on Meiling and will have plenty of cameos. Also I am going to say this now. I am not going to do Chapter 4 of the Paper Mario 2. I HATED THAT CHAPTER. BACKTRACK CITY! Plus the boss sucked, but it will happen off screen. If you have any questions about the Story or any OC, send me a PM. See you for the next chapter!

# Meiling vs The Agent of Interpol!

## Glitzville ( Paper Mario 2)

*The group were looking at the hawk man as he held a belt that had a brownish crystal star on it.*

" So that's our target huh?" Ike asked as he noticed Ziden deep in thought about something. " Ziden, are you alright?"

Ziden waved in a manner telling them to head inside and leave him be. The group ended up heading inside as Ziden looked up to see a man in red floating down towards him. Ziden knew this man. He was allied with the Ultima Brigade during their last battle with the cult. The man was killed by the hands of Ziden, the wandering martial artist and the Dragon Ninja. " Humph! How'd a snake like you come back to life?" The man in red began to laugh.

" So you sensed my presence, Ziden Icrim? No matter! I'll still take my revenge on you, right here and now!" The man in red said as Ziden took a fighting stance.

" You can forget about that right now! Cause I'm taking you out in one move!" Ziden said as he felt an intense aura of darkness coming from the man .

" ***Funny! I was going to say the same thing to you, boy!***" The man raised his hand towards Ziden as a purple glow enveloped it. "***Psycho Annihilation!***" A gigantic ball of purple energy shot out from his hand at an extremely fast rate as it collided against Ziden's body causing an gigantic explosion that shook the floating city. The man noticed Ziden's allies catching wind of the attack as he teleported away leaving Ziden's unconscious body in the crater as Ike leapt into the pit and checked on his friend.

*Somewhere in black room...*

## Magical Mystery ( Kingdom Hearts II)

A certain red-haired Shinigami was sharpening her scythe with a whetstone as a spiky, black haired man sat next to her.

" So how did you die this time, Ziden?" Komachi said whimsically as Ziden was trying to see into her kimono.

" I didn't die, you balloon-chested idiot! It seems I'm comatose after that attack that man did to me." Ziden said as Komachi turned red from Ziden's words. Ziden wrapped his arm around

Komachi. " All right now I'm going to ask you a favor that I know you will love!"

" I'm not letting you grope me!" She said angrily

" Not that one! The one where you get to kill me, for real!" Ziden said as a devilish smile appeared on Komachi's face.

*Back to the Arena...*

*The group had discovered that Ziden was in a comatose-like state, Patchouli and Yukari decided to stay behind as the group searched for the man that attacked Ziden. They also noticed a storm gathering above them, but ignored it as they continued their search.*

" All right, Librarian! I'm watching, so no funny business with Ziden got it?!" Yukari yelled as Patchouli stayed in her chair next to Ziden's bed. Yukari felt one of Ziden's Vortexes opening as Komachi walked out of it with a happy look on her face. Yukari simply sighs at the sight of the Shinigami. Komachi stood before Ziden before slamming her scythe into Ziden's heart, ending his life for the first time in her life. Patchouli let out a scream that alerted the group to run back to the tent and saw a red haired woman pulling a blade out of Ziden's heart. Yukari, rather than being angry, was very calm at this sight.



" Hey! Lazy ass shinigami! What the hell did you kill Ziden for?!" Reimu shouted angrily as Komachi merely twirls her hair around her finger.

" Hey, I'm only doing what he asked me to do! Besides, he'll wake up faster this way!" Komachi said as a white puff came out of Ziden's chest and floated to Komachi as it began to dance around her. " All right, Ziden! In ya go!" She opened her kimono to allow Ziden's soul to leap in as the girls had angry looks on their faces. Komachi places her hands on her hips and said. " Well I'm not going put to his thieving ass inside my coin purse, am I! Besides he's happier there even if he won't remember it. Welp!" She jumped onto the bed next to Ziden as she got ready to take a nap. " Wake me up in 29 minutes, will ya? \*yawn\* Zzzzzzzzzzz." She fell asleep on the spot as lightning began to strike the ground outside. A mysterious voice began to laugh outside as the lightning grew more intense outside as the group ran outside to confront this man.

### **Enemy Encounter ( Paper Mario 2)**

" Bwahhahhahahhahahha! So you're the girls that Marluxia failed to kill, huh?!" The man said as lightning surged through his body.

The man bright yellow eyes and short yellow hair that is styled like a bowl cut with a lightning bolt on top of his hair. He wore no shirt and had a muscular build. He wore yellow pants ( imagine the Soul Reaper's pants except yellow) with brown clogs on his feet. He had 6 rotating thunder drums floating behind his back.

" Wait! If you know that pink haired man then you must be with the Ultima Brigade!" Reimu said as drew out amulets. The man let out a laugh.

" So Ziden told you after all! It shall fitting to know that you will die by Ziden's mortal enemy: Raijinmaru, the Relentless Spark!"

### **The 13th Struggle ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Raijinmaru shot off electricity as everyone scattered to dodge the attack. Dante made the first move as he fired bullets into Raijinmaru only for him to dodge the bullets by turning into a lightning bolt. " Is that all you got, accursed son of the traitor Sparda!?" Dante pulled out Rebellion and placed it on his shoulder.

" Please, Lightning-Retard! Can't you tell when you're being distracted?!" Dante taunted as Raijinmaru gets punched with a rainbow colored fist to the jaw by Meiling. " Nice shot, Red head!" Meiling ignored him as she glared at Raijinmaru with anger in her eyes.

" Why you miserable, little bitch! Lightning Fang!" A bolt of lightning shoots out from his hand flying towards Meiling as a gap opened in front of her, as the bolt entered as it exited through a gap over his head, zapping him in the process. " Dammit stop hitting me, you assholes!" He noticed Patchouli and Marisa charging up spells.

" Stalagmite!" A pillar of earth erupts from under Raijinmaru sending him into the air as Marisa finished up her spell.

" Time for you to go down, ze! Stardust Breaker!" A giant white ball shoots out from her hand and explodes against Raijinmaru as colorful stars bursted from the attack.

" RAAAAAAAAAAAAAGHHHHHHH! Lets see you use your spells when you can't breathe girl!" Raijinmaru shot a bolt of lightning at the ground near Patchouli creating a smoke cloud that caused her asthma to act up. Patchouli instinctively took out her inhaler and was about to take the medicine until Raijinmaru kicked to the ground causing her inhaler to slide out of her reach as he slammed his foot into her back causing her cry out in pain. " What's the matter, Magician?! Can't catch your breath!? Haahahahahahaha!" Remilia saw her friend in trouble and got angry at the sight as a red spear formed in her hand.

" Get the hell off Patchy, you freaky bastard! Heart Break!" Remilia launched the spear as hit Raijinmaru's body and exploded with a red

mist as Patchouli was freed from Raijinmaru and struggled to get to the inhaler as Meiling grabbed it and gave Patchouli the medicine as breathed it in.

"... Thank you, Meiling." Patchouli said as she got back to her feet.

Lightning sparked around Raijinmaru as he became enraged. " Why you miserable little insects! Spark Ball Blitzkrieg!" A ball of lightning formed and flew at the group as they dodged it with ease. " God dammit! I missed!?" The girls noticed his frustration and began to talk among themselves.

" Man! This guy sucks ass!" Marisa said as everyone agreed.

" This guy must be very low on the power scale of the Ultima Brigade members." Alice stated

" I wouldn't be surprised if this guy is the weakest of them!" Remilia said as Raijinmaru stomped the ground in anger.

" GRRRRRAAAAAAAAAHHHHHHHHH! I AM NOT THE WEAKEST! I WILL KILL YOU ALL!" Raijinmaru formed a sword of lightning. "Spark Wave Chao- Gack!" Dante ended up hitting him with his Stinger attack blasting Raijinmaru into the wall.

" Well you are the only person I know that died from Ziden falling on them! Accidentally If I may add! And we didn't even fight you at all! No offense, but you went out like a bonafide bitch!" Dante pointed at him and laughed. Raijinmaru's morale severely dropped as he began swing his sword frantically as Alice's dolls charged him armed with spears as they pierced his flesh causing him to bleed frantically.

" Dammit I refuse to lose to you, bitches!" Raijinmaru charges at Remilia ( which is the dumbest thing he has ever done besides his hairstyle) only to be tackled by her Demon Lord's Walk and she ends up grabbing him by his head and sinks her nails into his skull. " N-n-n-n-noooooo! I don't want to die again!"

" 'I' huh? Funny choice of words, because in a few seconds you won't have those! This is what happens to punks who hurt my friend, Patchy!" She jabs her thumbs through his eyes as she twisted his neck with such a force that it decapitated him. His body pooled blood on the floor as she licked the blood off her nails only to spit it back out. " Disgusting and useless!"

## **Glitzville ( Paper Mario 2)**

The group looked at the dead body of Raijinmaru and looked at Remilia who was checking up on Patchouli. They noticed Dante walking over to the tent and entered it as they heard Komachi scream as they saw Dante fly out of the tent and into the wall. Komachi is seen walking out of the tent with her face red and angry.

" You perverted ass, Demon Hunter! Can't I get some shut-eye without you groping me, Dante!?" Komachi said as Dante dusted off his jacket.

" Hey! I can't help it if them there, waiting to be grabbed and squeezed! You're acting like Ziden hasn't tried to grab them!" Dante said while shrugging his shoulders.

" No I haven't, you white haired retard!" Ziden, now revived, walked out of the tent only to be tackled by both Meiling and Patchouli as they sandwiched Ziden with a hug. " Okay ladies, please let go before I turn up my body temperature to a point that burns you." They let go of him, but continued to stay close to him as Komachi walked up to him.

" Well aren't you just the ladies man?" Komachi said as she tapped her coin-purse.

" Hey Komachi? Why are you still here, no offense?" Ziden asked

" None taken. Eiki wants me to be near you at all times, in light of recent events. So I am asking your permission to enter Sanctuary." Komachi bowed to Ziden which made him blush from seeing a

Shinigami bow before him. Patchouli, being an inquisitive woman, gave Ziden another hug and asked.

" So what is this Sanctuary thing?" She asked while giving Ziden a squeeze.

" Sanctuary is a space inside my body that people can enter for safety reasons. It was created when the phoenix fused with my body. People can only enter when I give them my permission. The people can see from my eyes and even project themselves to speak to me or other comrades. also I want to talk to you in a minute. ALONE." Ziden said as he noticed her getting a little scared. Ziden turned to Komachi and touched her shoulder. " I, Ziden Icrim, give Komachi Onozuka permanent access to Sanctuary. The same goes for my allies, except Dante cuz he is an asshole!" A white light surrounds the group and then fades away " All right no doubt that we have to enter some kind of competition to win that Crystal Star. It looks like a lot of martial artists are here." Meiling immediately steps forward at the sound of this, as does Mario.

" I'll win the Crystal Star for us! I didn't study the art of Tai-Chi for nothing!" Meiling said as she assumes a pose.

" I'll enter as well!" Ziden and Mario said in unison.

" Come on guys! I'll go sign us up!" Meiling dashed into the building as Everyone except

Patchouli and Ziden.

"... You're going to yell at me about that book, aren't you?" Patchouli said as she looked down at her feet as Ziden walked up to her. " I just wanted learn how to seduce you better than Meiling could."

" Kid, that's not your style. You're the kind of girl I don't like to see corrupted by that woman." Ziden said with venom in his voice. " Besides I can't be seduced anyway. I like you and Meiling just the way you are. And before you ask I like you a bit more than I like her.

Though that could change after these fights." Ziden was grabbed into a strong hug as Patchouli buried her face into Ziden's chest as his hand found a new target to grab as her face turned bright red. " Sorry! My hand wanders... alot. Hehehehehheh! " Patchouli, after a few seconds, got free of Ziden's hug and walked into the building as Ziden heard her say 'Thank you' under her breathe. Ziden looks up at the sky and thinks for a while. *" Why the hell was that military guy back? And that darkness surrounding him; it felt familiar. It wasn't 'his' darkness but it was still powerful none the less. But I know 'He's back, I saw him in Rogueport and Boggly Woods. And he's here as well!"* Ziden looks up at the Shadowy figure staring down at him. They both had their swords drawn as they glared at each other. Flandre ends up sneaking up to Ziden and sees him staring at the shadowy man who looks alot like him.

" Hey, tag buddy? Who is that up there?" Flandre asked while leaning left and right. She noticed that Ziden was holding his sword and so was the Shadowy man. " Uh-oh! BIG SIS! ZIDEN IS ABOUT TO FIGHT SOMEONE!"

Everyone dashed outside and saw Ziden with a completely serious look on his face as Yukari walked up to him. " \*sigh\* All right who are you about to fight now?" Yukari looked to where

Ziden was staring at as a look of terror spread across her face. " No. No. No. He can't be here. Not now." The shadowy man leapt down and landed in front of Ziden.

## **Villains of a sort ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

" It has been a while hasn't it, my disgusting light-half." The Shadowy Man says before laughing. The ground beneath his feet was turning black from his dark powers.

" Dark Ziden! Why are you here?!" Yukari said as she tried to seem brave from the man's presence.

" Don't worry. I'm only here to deliver a gift to the Young Hero." Dark Ziden pulls out a glowing orb with a green leaf in it. He tosses it to Ziden before disappearing in a veil of darkness. His voice echoed around the group. **" Don't worry, Light Half! We'll settle our fight after you deal with the Ultima Brigade and those 12 Beings of Darkness! Until then, Ziden Icrim! The man cursed to live forever without rest because his foolishness! Bwahhahahahahhah!"**

The group sees Ziden and Yukari with distressed looks on their faces. Alice walks up to Ziden and places her hand on his shoulder. " I'm not sure what is going, but don't forget that you have friends you can count on. The same for you too, Yukari." Meiling runs over to Ziden and Mario and tells them the good news.

"All right, guys. I got us signed up as a trio! All we have to do is meet the manager guy!" Meiling said as she led the group excluding Ziden and Yukari. Ziden sees Yukari shaking in fear as he approached her and hugged her.

### **Ever After ( Kingdom Hearts 3D: Dream Drop Distance)**

" I know you're scared, but calm down. I'll never let that bastard hurt you again. I promise you, the woman who I think of as a true mother figure just like Ran." After Ziden said this tears ran down Yukari's face.

She returned his hug as she blew her nose on Ziden's jacket much to his distress. " Thank you, Ziden. It means so much to hear that from you. \*sniffs\* Come on and lets go get you signed up, okay?" Yukari takes Ziden's hand and walks with him to the office of the manager.

" Ah! There you whipper-snappers are! I'm the promoter of this fine establishment, Grubba!"

Grubba said while behind his desk. ( Go to the Mario wiki and search Grubba for what he looks of spoilers for the game and the story for

this arc )

### **Grubba's Office ( Paper Mario 2)**

" All Righty, now! From what I hear from this beauty of a red head, that you guys want to enter this the Glitz Pit together, am I right pardners?" Grubba said with a strong western accent as the trio nodded. " Good, but do know that you will only be fighting one at a time. All right time for your names! Red head, you'll be the Battle Goddess China!" Meiling heart dropped she heard her infamous nickname being used by Grubba. " The young bat girl over there told me all about you, so the nickname works! Mustache, you shall be The Great Gonzales! You, spikey shall be Ziden the Hero!"

" What, that's it? No fancy nickname?" Ziden asked as Grubba laughed.

" Beggars can't be choosers, son! Ms. Jolene will show to your room!" The door opened to show a toad woman in a red business suit, blond hair and glasses.

### **Glitz Pit ( Paper Mario 2)**

" This way please contestants." Ms. Jolene led the trio into a nicely managed rec room known as the Major-League room. She leads them into a poorly managed room with a large yellow block the left hand corner. " This is where you'll be for the moment. You will remain in minor league until you pass Rank 10. Only one of you may compete at a time. To do so, go the monitor and request a match. Decide among yourselves who will fight what opponent. Have fun." Jolene leaves the room as Mario walks up to the Monitor and requests a match as Grubba appeared on the screen. " Your opponent will be... King K! Beat him and you will move to Rank 19! Who will fight King K?" Mario nodded as Ziden went over to one of the beds and laid down as Meiling and Patchouli settled on the beds surrounding Ziden. " Gonzales son, make your way to the ring and get ready to fight. Make it look good, now!" Mario made his way to the ring as he is told to wait for his opponent. Back in the room,



Ziden absorbs the orb as a green light shined on his left arm before disappearing.

" Ladies and Gentlemen! Introducing our newest competitor, The Great Gonzales! His opponent is the Golden Turtle, King K!" A golden shelled Koopa walked up the stairs and up to Mario.

" Heh. I'd never thought I'd facing the legendary Mushroom Kingdom Hero Mario!" King K said as he took a battle stance.

" Ready!? Fight!"

### **Battle ( Paper Mario 2)**

King K retreated into his shell and dashed at Mario who jumped and dodged the attack. Mario pulled out his hammer and charged at King K. Mario performed a strong downward strike that sent a shockwave towards King K causing him to flip over. " Oh no bro! I'm flipped!" Mario jumps into the air and performs a ground pound onto King K knocking him unconscious.

### **Glitz Pit ( Paper Mario 2)**

Grubba walked up to Mario and raised arm up in victory as the crowd cheered. Mario went back to the Minor League and saw Ziden doing squats with Meiling as Patchouli was reading a new book. Mario walked over to the monitor and requested another match.

" All righty, pardner! Your next match will against the Elemental Gunner! Whose fighting this time?" Ziden leapt to the monitor and nodded his head. " All right, Ziden get over to the ring and get ready to fight." The group decides to follow Ziden to the ring and watch his fight. The group ( minus the trio of fighters) take their seats in the upper stands and began to watch this fight.

" Ladies and Gentlemen! Please welcome a member of Gonzales team, Ziden the Hero! His opponent is gun toating warrior! The Elemental Gunner!" Another man walked up the ring and climbed the

stairs wielding two twin pistols. One was red and the other was blue. The man was a tall muscular toad with red and Blue polka dots on his head. White pants and blue vest. Ziden recognized the pistols as they were his. " All right boys. Since you two look like destructive fighters we're teleporting you guys to another area. Now get to fighting!" A beam of light shone over them as they were teleported to a Wild Western town. The fighters were shown on a screen so that the audience could see and hear the fight.

" All right, buddy! Hand over my guns before I send you to the hospital!" Ziden said as he pointed Crimson Edge at the Elemental Gunner.

" Yeah, right! These guns are mine and mine alone! If you want to take them from me, you're welcome to try!" Elemental Gunner points the pistols at Ziden as a tumbleweed rolled by.

### **Boss Battle ( Yoshi's Island)**

EG shot a barrage of fire and ice bullets at Ziden who runs into a building to dodge the bullets. " What's the matter, Ziden the Hero!? Can't handle these bullets, punk!?"

" Tch! All he's doing is shooting them like regular guns! This'll be easy for me to deal with!" ziden leapt out of the building and charged at EG who fired bullets at him. " Take this! Dragon Upper!" Ziden does a sharp upwards kick to EG's jaw which sent him skyward. " Like that?" EG does a spin in the air to recover from the as fired more bullets down on the hero as he used his sword to deflect the bullets.

EG charged up energy in the guns and pointed them at Ziden. " Molten Blizzard!" The guns shot a wave of burning ice that Ziden dashed through and connected with an axe kick EG's skull that slammed him into the ground dropping the pistols in the process. Ziden grabbed the guns and rubbed the sides of the guns against his face.

" Oh how I missed you, Efreet and Celsius!" Ziden placed the guns behind his back and began to laugh and point at EG. " How are you going to fight with no weapons, buddy!?"

" Humph I don't need guns to fight you! MUSCLE INCREASE!" EG's body began to grow more muscular and tall as his clothes ripped off revealing a red speedo. " Allow me to show you my true strength! Muscle Charge!" EG performs a shoulder charge at inhuman speed that hits Ziden sending him through several buildings before recovering by slamming hand into the ground slowing down his unwanted flight. Ziden pulls out Efreet and Celsius as he charges up his attack.

" Bullet Hell!" Ziden shoots large fire and ice balls in random directions as they remained stationary in the air. EG charges at Ziden who swings his pistols downward as the floating balls of fire and ice converged onto EG.

Ka-Beeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeewwwwwwwww  
wwwmmmmmmmmmmmmmmmmmmmm!

An explosion of Fire and ice blasted EG away as Ziden chased after him. " Cool new form, bro! I'm going to show how to REALLY use these guns!" Ziden slammed his guns together as they combined to formed a red and blue Pump-Action Shotgun which he pointed at EG and fired releasing a large fire and ice bullet at EG who kicked it away.

" So they can combine to form other guns. Doesn't matter! I refuse to lose and go back to rank 19! Muscle Stomp!" EG leaps into the air and stomps Ziden in the stomach causing the ground to shatter beneath them.

" Come on Ziden! Tear that guy limb from limb already!" Remilia screamed obviously angry at this drawn out fight.

" *Remilia is right! I need to finish this bastard down as fast I can!*" Ziden put away his guns and pulled Crimson Edge as places it

behind him as he crouched down. EG charged at Ziden who began counter with his special move. " Burning Blade Secret Technique! Raging Infernal Cutter!" Ziden does a rising sword slash wrapped in fire that lifted EG into the air as his blood sprayed out of his burning cut. With that attack the fight was over as they were brought back to the arena as the crowd cheered for his victory

Glitz Pit ( Paper Mario 2)

" That was spectacular! Give a cheer for the Ziden the Hero!" The crowd roared in applause as Ziden went back to the room and saw Meiling standing against the wall sleeping while Mario, King K and a bandit named Bandy were talking about something. Ziden walks over to Meiling

and poked her awake.

" You want to fight next, Meiling?" Ziden asked

" Nah, not yet Ziden. I know the four opponents I want to fight! So you guys have fun until then!" Meiling drifts back into her sleep.

" *She must asleep like this all the time during her gatekeeping.*" Ziden thought

The duo of Ziden and Mario fought their way through the ranks as they are now Rank 11.

" All right one more match and we get to enter the major league room!" Ziden said as he fist pumped the as Meiling walked the monitor and requested a match.

" All right! Winning this next match will net you guys entry to the Major League! Who is fighting this time?" Meiling points to herself. " All right China! Your opponent is Thunderlegs! Watch out for her legs, they kick very hard and fast! Now go get 'em girl!" Meiling walks to ring with Mario and Ziden following behind her.

" Ladies and Gentlemen! This is it! Lets give it up for Battle Goddess China! If she wins she and her allies will move to the Major League which is filled with Strong opponents! Her opponent is the female ass kicker! She is the Lightning Kicker!" A Chinese woman walks up to the stage and approached Meiling. Ziden instantly recognized her. She wore a blue qipao with golden accents. She also wears white combat boots and a blue leotard with dark brown sheer pantyhose with her qipao. Her brown hair was styled in Ox horn with a white cloth covering it.

" So you're Battle Goddess China?" LK looked at Meiling with an up and down glance. " What's your real name?"

" Hong Meiling." Meiling took a battle stance. " Yours?"

" Chun Li." Chun Li took a battle stance as well. " To be honest I'm glad I get to fight you, Meiling. I hope you can keep up with my skills!" The bright light took them away to a Dojo as the two females bowed before each other.

### **Theme of Chun Li ( Marvel vs. Capcom 3)**

Meiling shot several chi bullets at Chun Li who dodged them with ease. Chun Li charged at Meiling with a barrage of kicks and punches. Meiling countered with her own barrage of kicks and punches. Their hits collided with each other as small shockwaves rang out. " Not bad Meiling!"

" Same to you, Chun Li! Lets step it up a bit! Fragrant Wave!" Meiling shot out a forward beam made out of chi that blasted Chun Li into one of the paper walls. Meiling dashed at her and performed a jump kick that sent through the wall and out into the courtyard. The courtyard had a coy pond with several stones in it that could be stood on. A small bamboo grove. And a red bridge that was over a small river. Meiling looked at the Courtyard with awe before remembering that she was fighting a strong opponent. Chun Li got back up and cracked her neck and knuckles.

" So you can fight using chi as well? This will be fun!" Chun Li leapt at Meiling with a jump kick which Meiling dodged and countered with a roundhouse kick that Chun Li blocked with arms, however she miscalculated Meiling's strength as she sent sliding towards the Coy pond. " *What strength! This girl... she isn't human, is she?*" Chun-li brushed herself off. " You're not human, are you Meiling?" Meiling had a look of amazement on her face.

" Wow! You can tell that just from a few attacks?! You must be very smart!" Meiling points to herself with her thumb. " I'm a Youkai! The gardener and Gatekeeper of the Scarlet Devil Mansion!"

" I have to be smart and observant in my line of work! I am an agent of Interpol, after all!" Chun-Li stated as Meiling looked confused at her statement as well as the audience. Ziden, who is leaning against the iron bars next to the ring with his arms crossed, decides to give them an explanation.

" \*sigh\* Interpol is a Police Force that deals with international incidents and criminals that does not involve political, military, religious and racial issues." The audience gave a collective 'Oh' as they now understand what her line of work is.

" So she's a police officer like Kotohime, huh?" Reimu said while scratching her head.

" Oh, please ze! That poser of a Police officer couldn't compare to that Chun-Li lady!" Marisa said before laughing.

### *Back in Gensokyo at the Gensokyo Police Department*

A red haired police captain suddenly sneezed scaring her blonde haired lieutenant. " Captain Kotohime! Are you catching a cold?" The blonde haired woman asked.

" I'm fine, Lieutenant Ryuna! Someone suspicious was probably talking about me!" Kotohime said as she wiped her nose.

" You mean Reimu Hakurei, right Captain?" Ryuna said she handed several papers concerning events happening in Gensokyo right now. " Is it true that she and her friends from the Forest of Magic and the SDM are missing?"

" Yes. They've been missing for an hour now. Our tracker Scouts can't find them or even sense their magic anywhere in Gensokyo. If what those Fairies said is true, that Yukari Yakumo and some spiky haired swordsmen took them upon some weird flying ship, then we've got a big problem." Kotohime said while observing the papers. " First these weird soldiers in blue going around killing Youkai and Humans alike and now the people we need are missing. At least Eientei and Keine are helping out with the situation. Of course we have another problem to deal with..." They looked out the window in the office into the sky which was now filled with cracks.

*Back to the catfight!*

"Yeah you're not the only who can use chi, Meiling! Kikoken!" Chun-Li thrust out her palm as a blue projectile flew out and struck Meiling in the face stunning her as Chun-Li does a sweep kick that knocks her off her feet. Meiling reacts by grabbing Chun-Li's leg and twisting her body causing Chun-Li to lose her balance and fall as Meiling performed a kip-up and got back up to our feet. Meiling performs an axe stomp on Chun-Li's stomach causing the ground to crack underneath her. Meiling jumps away as Chun-Li slowly got back on her feet. " *Looks like shes got skills for sure. I'd better keep my toes or I'll lose this match!*" Chun-Li readjusted her spiked armbands before launching another attack. " Kikoken!" She launches another blue projectile at Meiling who counters the attack with...

" Water Taichi Fist!" Meiling creates a whirlpool of Chi that absorbs Chun-Li's Kikoken. " Don't expect the same trick to work twice, Chun-Li!" Meiling dashes at Chun-Li with her arms glowing with a red aura. " Red Energy Release!" She blasts Chun-Li with an intense blast of energy that sends her crashing into Coy Pond scattering the beautiful fish in the process. Meiling leapt into the air and performed Eagle Dive as she slammed into the pond causing a shockwave of

water to spray out, drenching the girls with water as their clothes became wet.

" Not bad, Meiling! Time for me to 'kick' things up. Lightning Kick!" Chun-Li performed a furious kick combo that Meiling couldn't block or dodge as she was hit by Chun-Li's famous technique. She ended her assault when she stretched her arms out to the side as a blue Chi was on her palms. " This victory is mine, Meiling! Kikoshō!" She slams her wrists together as a gigantic ball of Chi surrounded them as Meiling was buffeted with a slamming force that sent her flying through the red bridge and into the bamboo grove. Chun-li dashed at Meiling ready to claim her victory as she Meiling pulling back a bamboo pole. " Oh crap! This is going to hurt like hell!"

Baaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaammmmm mmmmmmmmmmmmmmm!

Chun-Li got sent flying by the bamboo pole as her nose began to bleed from the impact. Ziden looked impatient as he was tapping his as Patchouli floated down and sat down on the bars next to him. Ziden saw that she was reading a new book. " That isn't another book about how to rape people in their sleep, is it?" Patchouli slapped Ziden in the back of the head as she showed him the book's title ' Christine by Stephen King'. " Huh, thats a good book!"

" It is. I've decided about being my own person. I'm not good seducing at all." Patchouli said as she turned a page in the book.

" Well you've got the body for it. A shame you hide it under that nightgown." Ziden said as he saw her blush.

" Yes. You should know, seeing as how you help yourself from touching it." Patchouli said with a sassy tone.

Ziden chuckled a bit before talking again. " Oooooooo such sassiness! I like that!" Ziden ends up looking back at the screen. " Hey Meiling, hurry up and kick Thunderthigh's ass! I believe in you!"



Chun-Li rolled her eyes at Ziden's comment as she saw Meiling come out of the thicket with her eyes burning with determination. "*Oh no. She fell for Ziden, didn't she?... This is going to hurt is it?*" Chun-Li charged at Meiling and performs her signature technique. "Spinning Bird Kick!" She flips upside-down and performs a spin kick as Meiling dashed at her and grabbed her leg stopping the attack in the process. "Oh crap again!" Chi began to gather into her arms.

"Final Move! Spiral Light Steps!" She hits Chun-Li with barrage of punches and stomps. She ends the assault by launching Chun-Li into the air and chased after her. "Sky Dragon Kick!" She does a jump kick as her leg had a dragon silhouette as it slammed into Chun-Li's stomach causing an intense shockwave to blast out. Chun-Li fell to the ground unconscious as they were brought back to the ring.

Glitz Pit ( Paper Mario 2)

"OH MA GAWD! That was one helluva catfight, I tell you what! Congrats, Battle Goddess China!" The crowd roared with applause as she walked down to Ziden who had nosebleed for some reason.

"Ziden, why is your nose bleeding?" Meiling asked Patchouli walked up to her.

"\*clears throats\* Meiling. Everyone can see your uhhhh... goodies." Meiling's face turned bright red as she covered herself causing the males of the audience to boo Patchouli. A loud ringing sound came from Mario's pocket as he pulled out the Gameboy Advance SP.

"Head outside to the Juice Bar for items for Gonzales and Ziden the Hero. The Crystal Star on the Champ's Belt is fake. Heed my instructions if you want to find the real Crystal Star. Signed Mr. X." Mario Read as Remilia flew down to join them.

"Think this guy is telling the truth? I kinda want to see my gift now!" Ziden proceeded to back up against the bars until he rammed into someone. He turned to see Alice behind him.

" Do we have a choice, Mr. Ziden?" Alice stated as Shanghai did a little twirl in the air.

" Come on, jackass! Lets get this gift already!" Remilia dragged Ziden to the juice shop. A female toad in black dress was at a corner drinking a mushroom cocktail. The juice bar owner approached them.

" Gonzales! Ziden! I've some gifts for you guys. For Gonzales, someone got you a Hammawhack 2005! These bad boys don't come cheap and they chose their masters! For Ziden, someone gave you this weird black lamp." Podler ( The juice bar owner) gave Mario the Super Hammer. A hammer with a black metal part instead of his weaker wooden one.

The magicians of the group felt very uneasy from the magic energy coming from the lamp. " Mr. Ziden. I feel a very dark energy coming from this lamp." Alice said as Shanghai shivered.

" Meh. I'm a risk taker!" Ziden rubbed the lamp as a black mist blasted out and swallowed him. " HEEEEEEEEEEEEELLLLLLLLPPPPPPPPPP !" Ziden screamed as Meiling, Patchouli, and Remilia dashed in the mist and were sucked into the lamp via the mist. Alice and Mario were left alone in the Juice Bar as the Black Mist formed a screen showing the group of 4 in a pitch black void.

Alice seemed to be thinking about something. " Hey Shanghai, would you like a little brother doll?" Shanghai clapped it's hand together in joy as Mario sweatdropped.

The group of four found themselves in a pitch black room as they hear wings flapping as they turned to see a demon in front of them. " So you are the ones that disturb my sleep? I've been waiting for you, Legendary Hero of the Eternal Flames."

*After a brief brush with the Ultima Brigade member, Raijinmaru who died like a totalscrub. Battle after battle was fought as Ziden*

*reobtained his twin pistols. Meiling ended up defeating the Strongest Woman in the World, Chun-Li. Now Ziden found himself facing an unknown demon in the lamp. Will they win this fight? And what are Sanae and friends doing right now? Stay tuned to find out!*

*Author's Note: From this point onwards these fights will consist of fight starring Cameo and OC fighters which Ziden, Meiling and Mario will fight. Time for some Smash Bros. character bios. I'm doing this for people like Necro-Pen who don't know much about the Smash Bros. series. Oh yes. If you played Final Fantasy 8, you know that demon inside the lamp.*

Mario

First Appearance: Super Mario Bros.

First Smash Appearance: Super Smash Bros.

Type of Fighter: Jack of all Trades

Fighting style: Mario is a typical balanced character. He is a very good character to use if you are a beginner. He can combo pretty easily and is a good character for hard fights.

Occupation: Plumber, Doctor, Racer, Space Explorer. Too Many to list.

*Mario is the hero of the Mushroom Kingdom. He is well known for fighting and defeating the seemingly Immortal Bowser whenever he kidnaps Princess Peach. Mario's latest achievement ( as of this story) is saving the Mushroom Kingdom from the Dark Star and Fawful. He is known for his jumping prowess and power-ups. Ranging from the Fire Flower to the All-powerful Star. He is famous in the Mushroom Kingdom as almost everyone knows this famous Italian Plumber. He is the face of Nintendo along with Link and Kirby.*

# Hired Sword and King Koopa!

***Warning! This chapter contains mild levels of offensive words like 'the' and 'pickles'. Also contains awkward moments, sexual comments and moments, violence, Cursing, Ziden moments and Paper Mario 2 Story spoilers. You have been warned! Also this extends to all chapters in the future.***

" Who are you demon!?" Ziden asked as he drew his sword.

" Simple. I am the Dark Messenger, Diabolos. It was foolish of your friends to come in here with you. I wonder how you will react upon seeing their broken bodies, hero?" The demon known as Diabolos flapped his wings ready to fight his opponents.

## Force Your Way ( Final Fantasy 8)

" We'll show you who is gonna be broken after this, Diabolos! Demon's Dinner Fork!" Remilia launches three red spears at Diabolos that blasts him back a little before he brushes his chest off as if nothing happened.

" Is that all, little girl?" Diabolos taunted as he crossed his arms across his chest. " If so, then this will end very soon."

" Oh yeah! Well at least I don't fall for distractions! Get 'em Meiling and Ziden!" Diabolos spun around and swung his claws at Ziden who blocks it with a kick as Meiling leapt over Ziden and planted both of her feet in Diabolos' face, effectively slamming him into the ground. Meiling front-flips off of Diabolos' face and lands next to her Mistress. " Your turn, Patchy! Let him have it!" Patchouli charges up her spell as Diabolos got up and saw her.

" Lucky shot, girl. But luck only works once against me!" Diabolos shot a black orb at Patchouli which slammed her into the ground interrupting her spell. " It is time for to test your skills, hero. I sense

that you have bonds with these girls, especially the magic caster and red head. I wonder if you can save them before I end their lives."

" Sorry, but you aren't killing my friends. The only thing you get is a sound ass-thrashing from me!" Ziden charged at Diabolos with a flurry of sword slashes. " Patchy! You all right?" Ziden asked while holding off Diabolos' claw with Crimson Edge.

" I'd be perfect if you guys could protect me while I'm casting!" Patchouli said as Ziden chuckled. " What's so funny, Ziden?"

" Nothing, Miss Sassy Pants! Meiling! Remilia! Protect Patchy while she's casting!" Ziden said as he clashed blows with Diabolos' claws.

" Got it! What are you going to do, Ziden?" Meiling asked she ran to Patchy to help her up.

" Me? I'm going to kick some ass and take some names! \*Points palm at Diabolos\* Dragon Buster!" Fire dragons flew out from Ziden's hand as they exploded against Diabolos' body sending him flying as Ziden jumped after him. Diabolos recovered and dive bombed at approaching Ziden who began to spin like a vertical buzzsaw with his leg stretched out. " Rampaging Skull Crusher!" Ziden slammed the heel of his foot into D's skull with a tremendous force slamming him into the ground creating a crater in the process.

Remilia was watching this with eager eyes as well as Patchouli and Meiling. " Talk about strength! I wish we could help instead of babysitting Patchy!" Remilia said as Patchouli slapped her in the back of the head. " Oww! What the hell, Patchy!"

" Stop complaining and start protecting me!" Patchouli said as started to cast some magic.

*Back at Glitzville... ( Boss Music plays through this scene)*

*The group ended up heading to the juice bar and saw the fight with Diabolos on the black screen.*

" So let me get this straight: Ziden is told that the Magic Lamp has bad magic coming from it and YET he still rubbed it!?" Yukari said with pure anger as everyone in the Juice bar backed away from her as Alice nodded her head. " Gahhhhhhhh! Of course he did! Ziden NEVER thinks before he does something. Gods! If I wasn't Immortal, I'd have died from a heart attack years ago! And what the hell are you making, Alice?!" Someone unknown to the called her a 'Crazy Bitch', unfortunately she heard him and she opened up a gap underneath him. A few moments later, he come back with a look of terror on his face as pee puddled around his feet.

Alice lifted up a doll that looked disturbingly like Ziden. Marisa ran up and began to laugh at Alice. " OH my gods! You're falling for him too, aren't you?!"

" Nope." Alice began to continue stitching up the doll as Shanghai floated down to the table and watched as her 'little brother' was being finished.

" Hey Alice? I've noticed Shanghai moving around on her own. Have you done it." Reimu asked

" Sorta. Thanks to some books Marisa gave me, I found a spell that gave Shanghai and Hourai consciousness, but in order to fight I still have to control them. I was hoping Ziden could help me out." Alice said as Shanghai floated around looking at the group.

" So you don't have a crush on Ziden?" Marisa asked as Alice shook her head. Marisa looked over at Sora who was amazed by Shanghai moving by herself. She also noticed Reimu looking at him. Sora could feel eyes looking at him as he looked over to Reimu and Marisa only for them to look away and whistle nonchalantly.

Mokou was drinking a smoothie as she watched Ziden fight. She enjoyed the Mushroom-Mango Smoothie. " *Well even though I don't like the guy, this adventure could be fun. To think a few days ago I was fighting Moon bitch like usual when that weird crack in space appeared. I saw him in it and leapt through it ready to fight him only*

*to get killed by him and get dragged into a journey across worlds. Can't wait to tell Keine and her kid about this. Thinking about that kid reminds me of him. I wonder if he finished his training with his uncle J. I know Keine misses him. But it is sad that Ziden doesn't remember him or Keine... Man this is a good smoothie!"* Mokou glanced over at Dante who was eating a Strawberry Sundae. "Jackass Demon Hunter."

*Ike decided to head outside to spar with Youmu as Sakuya watched the fight worried about her Mistress and Teacher losing their lives to the unknown demon.*

" So you guys get to sit around on clouds and record 'footage' and pictures on those video camera things?" Aya was talking a creature known as a Lakitu.

" Yep. Of course when we Lakitu aren't recording footage, we usually bother Mario and Luigi during their adventures." The Lakitu bragged as the cloud underneath smiled.

" Can I take a picture of you guys for my newspaper?" The Lakitu nodded as Aya flew around them taking pictures as she did.

" Those girls are an interesting bunch. Yukari wasn't kidding when she said that the people from her land were strong!" Luigi said to himself as he looked at the Super Hammer he ordered in the mail. " I wonder what the other Smashers are up to. We may meet them on this journey through the worlds."

*Back to the fight...*

The fight seemed to be going in Ziden's favor until D decided to step up his attacks.

" Not bad, hero. Lets see if you can handle this. Demi!" D launched a black orb that expanded into an enormous size that slammed Ziden with a lot of force that sent him flying.

" This guy can use magic!? All right time to go all out!" Ziden cracked his neck. " Patchy! Keep those spells coming, babe!"

" Don't call me babe, but sure! I'm on it!" Patchouli began to cast magic as Remilia ran over to Ziden.

" Hey I want in on the action too! Heart Break!" Remilia launched a red spear that exploded against D's face sending him flying back before he recovered. " Not done yet! Chain Gang!" She fires a red chain that wrapped around D and reeled him towards her as her claws glowed with a red aura. " Scarlet Slasher!" She performs a cross slash with her claws that caused D to cry out in pain. Ziden came up from behind and hit Diabolos' head with a horizontal kick that sent him flying as Patchouli finished her spell.

" Take this! Aqua Laser!" A magic circle formed that fired a lightning fast ball of water that slammed into Diabolos causing an explosion of water to form as Ziden gets hit by the splash damage. " Sorry Ziden! My bad!" Diabolos pointed his index finger at Patchouli ready to fire another Demi as Meiling drop-kicks him interrupting his attack.

Diabolos let out a roar of anger as he glowed with a purple aura. " Ziden! It looks like he's about to do something big. Hit him with one of those final moves of yours! You can do it!" Meiling cheered for Ziden as he formed a ball with his hands as a black ball formed in it.

Diabolos flew in to the sky and formed a purple ball. " Die. Dark Messenger." He fires the purple ball as it expanded in size as Ziden finished charging his attack.

" The ultimate form of Space and Destruction! Black Hole Cannon!" Ziden thrusts his hands forward as it transformed into a purple beam that sucked in Dark Messenger and collided with Diabolos forming a purple vortex. Ziden raised his right hand into the air and pressed his thumb and middle finger together. " This is what happens to those who try and hurt my friends! Disappear!" He snaps his fingers causing the vortex to explode filling the sky with fire. A summon card fell into Remilia's hands as she laughed manically. The group of four



found themselves back at the Juice bar as the crowd cheered for their victory.

## **Glitz Pit ( Paper Mario 2)**

Alice ran up to Ziden and showed him the doll and asked if it was okay to make. Ziden nodded yes and petted both her and Shanghai on the head. Mario recieved another email from Mr. X.

" Head back to the Minor League and smash that yellow block." Mario read as the trio of competitors went into the room and did as they were told. Mario smashed the block and ran over to talk to King K.

Ziden and Meiling found a room behind the block and entered the room. " Hey ziden! What's that thing?" Meiling pointed to a computer that was resting on a desk.

" That's a computer." Ziden said as Meiling tilted her head.

" Uhhhh! I don't know what that is though." Ziden was dumbfounded by this.

*" Man this Gensokyo place sounds like it has no technology at all. But I remember Yukari's house having power and stuff. Damn those military freaks wiping my memories of Gensokyo away. I can't even remember what Yukari's house looks like anymore."* Meiling was poking Ziden as he poked her in her chest which she responded with a punch to his kidney. " Ackk! My kidney!\* Falls down\* The pain! Nice view though!" Meiling blushes as she walked up to the computer and saw some papers concerning things she didn't understand she handed them to Ziden who glanced over it. " These are pictures of the Crystal Star and something to do with a machine to use its power." Ziden walked out of the room and Ms. Jolene was there with an annoyed look on her as she snatched the papers out of his hand walked out. Mario told them about King K. retiring soon. They headed back to Major-League and saw Chun-Li asleep in one of the

beds. Ziden decides to face the next opponent as he headed to the ring.

The group remained in the Juice Bar and watched the fights from there via the giant flatscreen T.V. which Yukari had to explain to the technologically illiterate members of the group.

Ziden approached the ring as Grubba stood in the ring motioning Ziden to come over to him. " Now then, son. Your opponent, The Hired Cherry Blossom Swordsman, is already at the battlegrounds waiting for you. He said that he has two things to give you before your fight with him. He also says that if you beat him, that will give you his power just like Ifrit and Diabolos did. Have fun and don't die! The guy's skilled with his sword." With that said Ziden found himself in an open grasslands.

Ziden took in the beauty of nature before he saw cherry blossom petal flying in behind him. He turns to see a cherry blossom tree on a cliff with a person waiting underneath it. The person was armored in orange armor with cape that was multi-colored with orange and purple. He had a weird hat that looked like a big bottlecap. Ziden saw that he had a Wakizashi and a large katana hanging from his waist. But Ziden noticed that a katana in a red sheathe and an orb with an eye in it that was sitting across from him. The man motioned for him to take the items.

Ziden picked up the katana and absorbed the orb. " What's your name, warrior?" Ziden asked as he drew the katana which looked to be made of fire.

"... Yojimbo." The man named Yojimbo stood up and walked over to the cliff motioning for Ziden to follow him. Ziden looked over the cliff and saw a ruined city in the distance.

" You want to fight there?" Yojimbo nodded as he leapt over to the city as Ziden heard Komachi's voice in his head.

" Ziden. Be careful around this guy. I sense he can keep up with your swordsmanship." Komachi said as Ziden stared at his re obtained sword.

" Nosada, I'm glad to have you back. Now if I just need to find your sister, Ama-no-Murakamo." As Ziden said the katana's name fire spiraled off the blade signaling its happiness to be back with its master.

Ziden leapt into the ruins of the city and saw Yojimbo with his Wakizashi out. " The name's Ziden Icrim. Its been awhile since I fought a samurai or any form of skilled swordsman. I hope you won't disappoint me! Lets do this!"

### **Boss Battle Theme ( Final Fantasy IV DS)**

Ziden dashes at Yojimbo and performs a jumping slash attack which Yojimbo blocked with his sword causing a shockwave to spread through-out the city shattering windows in the process. Ziden continued this assault with a multitude of sword swings which Yojimbo dodged with ease. Yojimbo slams his smaller sword into Ziden's as he gets sent sliding back a few feet. Ziden comes at Yojimbo with a series of rolling kicks which hit their mark staggering him as Ziden did an upward slash attack only to be hit in the face with flat of Yojimbo's blade causing Ziden to stumble from the hit as Yojimbo gave Ziden a strong kick to the chest sending him into a wall. Ziden struggled to get free as he saw Yojimbo throwing several Kozuka at him as a shield of fire deflected them.

Ziden gets free from the wall and lands on his knee as he looked at Yojimbo. " *The guy's got strength for sure! He's blocking my blows with just that short sword. That large katana he has... I'm scared to see what that bad boy can do, yet excited at the same time!*" Ziden sheathes Nosada as he throws the sheathed sword at Yojimbo who dodges it only to see that Ziden was gone. Yojimbo turned to see Ziden unsheathing his sword in the air. " You fell for it, Mirage Slicer!" Ziden slams his sword into Yojimbo's sword, smashing it and sending him back a few feet.

" Show me what that big katana can do!" Yojimbo draws his sword as he practice swings it, slicing through several builings with ease shocking everyone.

" Holy crap, ze! He did that with one sword swing!" Marisa shouts

Ike and Youmu saw this as their jaws dropped. " Ike. Do you think Ziden could win this?"

" He will. Ziden is the type that never backs down from an opponent." Ike sits down on a bar stool.

" Come on, Ziden! Take that guy out!" Meiling screamed as everyone else sweatdropped.

" Are you not going to cheer for Ziden, Patchy?" Remilia asked while kicking her legs like a small child.

" There is no need. He WILL win." Patchouli said as she watched the screen as the two warriors stared each other down.

Reimu was thinking about something. " *What the hell is Sanae and the others doing right now?*"

*Back on the Zeta Dreadnought...*

*Nitori and Sanae were watching the T.V. which showed Ziden and friends adventuring through Rogueport. They now watch Ziden and Yojimbo's fight. Cirno enters the room and watches the fight as well.*

" Man! The Outside World's technology is so advanced! I can't believe they already have spaceships!" Nitori said excitedly

" Actually, the island where Ziden is from is the only place with the technology to make ships like this! I can't wait to see his mansion!" Sanae said as she daydreamed. Cirno, being the fairy that she is, didn't understand anything that they were saying. Sanae, knowing that Cirno wouldn't understand, she explained it to her as simply as

she can. An idea hit her head. " Nitori! Think you can get us down to Glitzville?"

Nitori thinks to herself for a bit and says. " Of course I can! I got Aya down there, didn't I? I'll even come with you guys!" Nitori began the preparations as they ran to the Teleportation Room.

*Back to the Fight...*

### **Dreadful Fight ( Final Fantasy IV DS)**

Ziden dashed at Yojimbo as they clashed swords creating sparks to fly out from each sword collision. Ziden leapt back, slammed his right foot down as he twisted his body as he places Nosada behind as a blue energy enveloped it. " Get ready to eat it freak! Powerhouse Phoenix Wave!" Ziden shot out a blue sword wave that was shaped like a blue phoenix that flew out and exploded against Yojimbo causing a giant explosion. Ziden looks upon this with a happy sight until he saw wave after wave of sword waves. Ziden teleported and ran to avoid the onslaught of attack.

" Holy Shisa! Why are all of my opponents able to shoot out all these attacks!?" Ziden keeps running until he trips over a rock, which ended up saving his head as a sword wave flew past his head. " Whew. Talk about a close shave!... Oh crap." Yojimbo was standing over Ziden with his sword over his head. He swung it down as Ziden slammed his hands into the ground and kicked Yojimbo's sword completely halting his attack. " Pyro Launcher!" Ziden hits Yojimbo in the chin with a sharp, burning kick that launched him skyhigh. Ziden looked up at Yojimbo as he performed a flip as he rapid fire shot Kozukas at Ziden who panicked and dodged.

" God Dammit! Not this crap again! This is Chen all over again!" Ziden dashed into a building and bided time until Yojimbo stopped his assault. " Come on! Come on think Ziden, think! Hmmmmmmmm! Eureka! This could work!" Ziden opens a vortex in the ground that showed Yojimbo's back. Ziden was about to leap through it until Yojimbo started throwing Kozukas into the vortex

which ended up stabbed by the knives as Yojimbo entered the vortex and hit Ziden with a strong horizontal slash that sent Ziden crashing through the wall.

Ziden recovered from the attack as he pulled the knives out his body while his wounds closed. Ziden saw that Yojimbo was gone from his line of sight. " Where did he go?" Ziden heard someone whistle as he looked up and saw Yojimbo standing on top a building. Ziden ran up the building as Yojimbo dived towards the advancing Ziden. Time seemed to have slowed down as the two opponents closed in on each other. They both swung their swords at each other causing a shock wave to destroy all the windows on the building.

Ziden got slammed to the ground from the recoil of the attack as Yojimbo landed on the ground with pure ease. Ziden gets up and ran over to a building and began to lift it up as he launched it Yojimbo.

Yojimbo saw this as an act of desperation and slashed through the building only to see Ziden coming through the slashed remains of the building. Ziden hit Yojimbo with a burning slash across the chest causing blood to spray out. " Gotcha!" Yojimbo slammed the hilt of his sword into Ziden's skull causing him to fall face first onto the ground. Yojimbo stabbed his sword through Ziden's stomach causing blood to pool on the ground.

Ziden slowly got up and and gripped his sword with both hands. " Infernal Wave!" Ziden launches a large wave of fire at Yojimbo who blocks the attack with a sword swing, canceling out Ziden's attack.

" Not done yet! Hell Fire Burst!" Ziden swings Nosada upwards releasing a giant ball of fire that slams into Yojimbo sending him back a few feet.

Ziden seemed to very tired out from the fight as did Yojimbo. " Yojimbo! It's time to end this!"

" Very well." Ziden raises his sword to sky as cherry blossom petals flowed from it as he places Nosada behind him. Yojimbo moves his

sword in a circular pattern.

" Zan-" Ziden crouched down.

" Zan-" Yojimbo also crouched down. The wind blew between them as a tumbleweed rolled by them.

"-Tetsuken!"

"-Mato!"

Both warriors dashed through each other as a giant sword slash appeared between them. Ziden and Yojimbo stood still as they both sheathed their swords. A multitude of sword cuts appeared on Ziden causing Ziden's blood to spray out everywhere as he struggled to stay standing. Yojimbo, however did not get so lucky, as a single slash that wrapped around his body causing blood to spray out like a ring as he fell down unconscious.

### **Glitz Pit ( Paper Mario 2)**

They returned to the ring as Ziden falls down. Meiling got to the ring as fast as she could and carried Ziden back to the Major- League locker room and placed him on the bed. Chun-li walks over to check up on Ziden.

" He'll survive, but he won't be fighting for a bit." Chun-Li says as Ziden tried to sit-up only to be stopped by her.

" Hey, Chun-Li. How did you get here, anyway?" Ziden asked as Patchouli and Mario entered the room.

" Well. Back on our world, we've noticed some weird distortions coming from a mountain range near some place called the Hakurei Shrine. Interpol and the Shinra Organization members, Reiji Arisu and Xiaomu, went to this place and found a brown haired man with a large axe-like weapon there with white creatures around him. One of those Dimensional Cracks opened up sucking up me, Reiji and

Xiaomu. I ended up here and I have no idea where those two are though."

Ziden scratched his chin as Patchouli sat down on the bed and started reading her book.

Ziden raises his hand as a vortex appeared showing them the image of a man with black hair ( top half is black, bottom half is white) and a scar on the right side of his head. The woman woman had fox ear and long yellow hair which turned into tails with black tips. They were fighting off people wearing blue cloaks and armor. Chun-Li was shocked at this. " What the- Why are Reiji and Xiaomu fighting Ultima Brigade members?!"

" The Ultima Brigade is back and we are going to deal with them, again." Chun-li pounded her fist into her palm. " Sorry Chun-Li, but we don't have any need for your help this time. I need to get back to earth and protect it while we're gone." A vortex appeared behind Chun-Li who got sucked into it.

" Mario and Meiling handle the fights while I rest up, okay?" They both nodded. Mario went to the ring and got ready for his fight. ( Ranks 8-6 will be skipped for the sake of time) Ziden to get up only for Patchouli to push him back down. " Come on, Patchy! I wanna sit up!"

" Too bad! You're injured and you need to rest, so go to sleep!" Patchouli said as she turned a page in her book.

" No way! I'm not falling asleep so that you can rape me in my sleep again!" Ziden got in the face with Patchouli's book.

Patchouli shifted her position on the bed so that she lay next to Ziden in a position so that she could not only read her book, but also stop Ziden from getting up. " So. How are you?"

" I'm fine. I mean an Ultima Brigade member attacked me using my asthma as a catalyst, only to get killed by Remi." Patchouli said as



Ziden grabbed her arm.

" Who was it?" Ziden sounded concerned

" Some guy claiming to be your mortal enemy: Raijinmaru." Patchouli looked at Ziden with emotionless eyes.

" Meh, never heard of him!" Ziden chuckled as Patchy joined in.

" Don't worry about it!" She rubbed her hand across Ziden's face as he suddenly felt sleepy. " Sleep spell. Good night, Ziden." Ziden passed out as Patchouli went back to her book.

*At the Ring...*

*Mario got ready for the Rank 5 fight.*

" Alrighty Ladies and Gentlemen! The Great Gonzales is ready to take on a powerhouse of a opponent! The Blind Behemoth!" A large red koopa walked onto the stage.

" This is great! I get to take you on again, Mario!" BB said as a large fireball incinerate BB into a pile of ash. A great roar is heard.

"MMMMMMMAAAAAAAAAAAAAARRRRRRRRRR  
RRIIIIIIIIIOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!" A large koopa enters the stage as everyone except the girls began to panic.

The large turtle had sharp claws, pointy spikes on his back, black spike armbands on his arms. He had red spiky with brown horns. " So this is where you were! That's good cuz now I have an audience to watch me crush you!" The light teleported them to a grassy plain.

Mario assumed a battle stance. " All right, Bowser! Lets-a-go!"

**King of the Koopas ( Paper Mario)**

" Whirling Fortress!" Bowser retreats into his shell and spins at a fast speed as he tries to ram Mario only for Mario to jump over him.

Bowser reacts by shooting fireballs at Mario who got hit in the back by them. " Sliding Punch!" Bowser dash punches Mario hard in the back sending him sailing across the plains.

Mario recovers and throws his Super Hammer at Bowser which hits him in the face. The hammer boomerangs back to Mario. Mario charged at Bowser as he hit him with a barrage of fists. " Mario Tornado!" Mario spins like a tornado with his arms stretched out, hitting and lifting Bowser into the air. Mario leaps up and grabs Bowser's tail as he threw Bowser down into the ground.

Bowser got up and charged at Mario with a headbutt that sent Mario skywards. " Shell Spinner!" Bowser retreated into his shell and spun at a rapid pace as Mario landed on it, getting cut in the process. Bowser stops the attack and punts Mario like a football. " Gwaahhahahhahah! Is that all you got Mario!?"

Mario gets up and pulls out a Fire Flower and absorbs it as his red shirt and hat turned white while his blue overalls turned red. Mario launched fireball after fireball at Bowser who sliced the fireballs in half with his claws. Mario dashed at Bowser and drop-kicked him in the face before hitting him with fiery punches.

Reimu, Marisa and Mokou have worried looks on their faces. " Don't worry! Mario will beat Bowser like he always does!" Luigi said.

Bowser uppercuts Mario in the chin sending him back a few feet. Mario pulls out his hammer. " Fire Drive!" Mario slams his hammer into the ground causing pillars of fire to rise hitting and burning Bowser. Mario runs to Bowser and crouches down. " Super Fire Jump Punch!" Mario wraps his right arm in fire and performs a jumping uppercut on Bowser lifting him into the air as coins fly out of Bowser.

Bowser grabs Mario and flips him upside down and power-bombs Mario with alot of force causing a large crater as Mario lost his power-up. " Not so strong now, are you plumber?!" Bowser throws Mario out of the crater as he dashed out of the Crater.

" Bowser Bomb!" Bowser leaps into the air and ground pounds on Mario into the earth. " Flying Slam!" Bowser picks up Mario and flips into the air before positioning Mario underneath him as he slammed down into the earth crushing Mario beneath him. Bowser grabs Mario by his throat and began to choke him. Mario kicked Bowser hard in the face and breaks free from his grip. Mario looks completely exhausted.

" That's enough! Yukari! Can you open a gap for us to go help Mario?" Reimu saw Yukari wave her hand as a gap appeared in front of them. " Thanks Yukari!" Reimu, Marisa and Mokou leapt into gap.

" Yukari? Do you think they can win against this Bowser creature?" Sakuya asked as Yukari was deep in thought. Sakuya sighs and decides to check up on Ziden.

*" What's going on? Bowser wasn't this strong when Mario and Luigi last fought him. He must have trained himself ragged. I do hope those three will be alright after this"*

" What's the matter Mario?! Running out of steam!?" Bowser laughed while pounding his fists together. Bowser looks up and sees a gap opening up as Reimu, Marisa and Mokou descended to the ground.

" Reimu! Marisa! Mokou!" Mario said he stopped himself from falling over.

" Lets see how tough you are when its 4 against 1, turtle boy!?" Reimu said as she took out her Gohei.

" Fine by me! More people I get to stomp on!" Bowser dashed at the girls as they scattered to dodge his attack. Bowser breathes fire as Mokou countered with a stream of fire leaving Bowser in shock. " Great! You're like that spiky haired freak!"

" Don't compare me to Ziden, turtle boy! Flame Crescent!" Mokou swings her arm as a crescent shaped wave of fire blasted Bowser back.

" Grrrrrrr! Whirling Fortress!" Bowser performs a spinning shell attack that hits Mokou and knock her away. Bowser turns to Mario. " Sliding Punch!" Bowser slides forward only be jump-kicked in the face by Reimu and Mokou causing him to go flying.

" Mario! Leave him to us!" Reimu said as Mario shook his head. Mario reached into his overalls and pulled out a mushroom as he proceeded to eat it. His wounds and scratches disappeared. " Healing Mushrooms?"

Mario threw a feather into the air and caught it as he now donned a yellow cape. " Get ready, Bowser! Now its your turn to get the beating!" Mario ran at Bowser as he took flight and hit Bowser with a flying tackle.

" My turn! Magic Missile!" Marisa shot three green bullets out of her hand as exploded against Bowser.

" Grrrrrrr! Time to test my new moves!" Bowser retreats into his shell as he breathed fire out the holes while spinning very fast making look like a wheel of fire. " Burning Fortress!" He dashes forward knocking Mario away as he made his way to Reimu.

" Cautionary Border!" Reimu summons a blue barrier that completely stops his attack.

" What the-?! These girls are worst than those annoying plumbers!" Bowser begins punch the barrier repeatedly as she fell to her knees from exhaustion.

" Narrow Spark!" A long beam blasts Bowser in the side and knocks him away from Reimu. Marisa runs over to Reimu and helps her to feet. " Get up, ze! The fight's just getting started!"

Bowser gets up and sees Mokou, with her hands on fire and behind her, running towards him. " Phoenix Palm Strike!" She slams her palms into Bowser's chest as a hot shock wave pierced through his body as he flew backwards.

" Come on, guys! We're gonna kick this guy's ass!" Mokou said as Bowser laughed.

" You sound just like him! But winning won't be that easy! Goomba Squad, Round-Up!" A very large number of Goombas appear behind him.

"... That's not good." Reimu said everyone sweatdropped.

*Back at the Major-League locker room...*

### **Glitz Pit ( Paper Mario 2)**

Ziden woke and found his shirt and jacket were replaced by white bandages. Ziden looks over and sees Patchouli looking at Big-Screen T.V.. Ziden sits up only to be stopped by Patchouli. " How's Mario going?"

" It never started. Some guy named Bowser killed his opponent. Now Reimu, Marisa, Mokou and Mario are taking him on." Patchouli closes her book and turns to look at Ziden.

" You know. I'd heal much faster if I was snuggling with a nicely shaped woman!" Ziden tries to hug Patchouli only to get punched in the face by her. " OW!\* rubs nose\* You know for a bookworm you hard pretty hard!"

" Something tells me I'm going to be doing that alot this journey." Patchouli sighs as she sees Sakuya entering the room. " Here to visit Ziden, Sakaya?" She nods her head. " Don't mind me!"

" Master Ziden? I wanted to see if you were all right?" Ziden had a tick mark form on his forehead.

" I'm fine, 'little girl!'" Ziden said as a tick mark formed on her forehead. Ziden motioned for her to sit down. She did and sat down to watch the fight.

" Ziden. We need to talk about something." Sakuya's face turned serious. Ziden knew what was she going ask.

*After an intense battle with Yojimbo, Ziden finds himself injured and in the hands of Patchouli. Ziden learns that the King of Koopas, Bowser, has attacked Mario and is now getting ready to go another round. But now has do something to do something that he does not want to do...*

*Author's Note: This was a fun chapter to do. The next few Ranked matches will be against famous characters from Various animes/games. Also I have finalized the members for the 12 Beings of Darkness. If you want to see a favorite character of yours appear in the Glitz Pit, send me a P.M. Leave a review if you are enjoying this story so far. Also I did not forget about Yojimbo giving Ziden his power. He will receive it later.*

Luigi

First Appearance: Super Mario Bros.

Fighting Style: Very odd. He has an odd moveset.

History: Luigi is Mario's younger brother. He is not as well known as his brother. In fact, it could be said that he lives in his brother's shadow. He can, however, jump higher than Mario and is taller than Mario. He is also very timid and has a tendency to run away from fights. He helped Mario to destroy the Dark Star. He has saved Mario on several occasions. Also he wields the power known as Thunderhand.

# A Macho Showdown and Gold Star!

## King of Koopas ( Paper Mario)

Mokou decides to take on Bowser by herself as the other three took on the Goomba army.

" Haahahahahaa! So the girl with the weird fashion sense thinks she can take me on!?" Bowser laughed a bit before wiping a tear from his eye.

Mokou looked confused at this. " My fashion sense is weird? Why is that, turtle boy?"

Bowser points at her pants. " I've never seen anyone wear pants with suspenders before. That's pretty weird girl. But enough of that! Time for you to get schooled by the Koopa King!"

Mokou summons a bo-staff made of fire and got ready to face the Koopa King.

" WaaaaaaaaaaaaahhhhhhhhhHHH H!" The trio screamed as they flew away from the army of Goombas.

" Wait a minute, ze! What the hell am I doing!?" Marisa pulled out her hakkero and pointed it at the army of Goombas. " Master Spark!" A rainbow colored beam blasted the Goombas away.

" Hahahahahahaha! Looks like your new friends sure are interesting! But that means nothing to my awesomeness!" Bowser reaches behind him and pulls out a ball of Goomba and launches them to the sky.

" Goomba Meteor!" Bowser shot out several fireballs at the ball of Goombas scattering them and set them on fire as they rained down on the group. The trio panicked and ran around aimlessly to dodge the explosive Goombas. " Run like the ants that you are!"

Hahahahahah-Guuuhhhhh!" Bowser got slapped across the face with Mokou's weapon causing him to spin and fall down.

" Pay attention jackass!" Mokou spun the staff like a baton.

" Lets go, female Spikes! Hammer Strike!" Bowser slams his fist into the the earth causing a shock wave to knock Mokou off her feet. Fire began to form in Bowser's mouth. " Get ready to roasted, white hair!" Bowser releases a stream of fire from his mouth. Mokou sees this and counters by releasing a stream of fire from her hand as it collided with the other stream.

Mokou's stream overpowered Bowser's as it slammed into him full force. Bowser jumped high into the sky shocking her. " How in the world is he able to jump that high?"

" Get ready girl! Body Slam!" Bowser retreats into his shell and slams down into the earth where Mokou was, crushing her underneath him.

" Aaaaaaaaaaaaaasaaaaasasaaaa aaah!" Mokou screamed in pain as Bowser got off her.

" Heh-heh! I'm not done yet!" Bowser picks up Mokou by the throat with his left hand and reeled back his right hand, getting ready to punch Mokou hard in the face. " Bye-Bye, doll face!"

Ka-pooooooooooooowwwww!

Bowser's fist slammed into Mokou's face as she was rocketed away by the impact. Mario saw her go flying as he took flight and chased after her." Mokou!" Mario flew at a fast pace and caught her in his arms. " Gotcha! \* helps Mokou regain her composure \* Mokou! That was very stupid! I don't know what Bowser did to become so strong, but its obvious that we need to fight him together."

Mokou has an annoyed look on her face. " Fine. Just don't get caught in the cross-fire okay?" Mario nods as he flew at Bowser.



" Ready for another beating, Mario!? Koopa Claw!" Bowser slashes at Mario who blocked the attack with his cape.

Mario punches Bowser hard in the gut stunning him as Mokou slams her staff on Bowser's skull dazing him. Mario looks over to Reimu and Marisa who are dodging the vicious Goomba assault. Mario pointed over to them as Mokou ran over them. "Phoenix Shield!" Mokou spins the staff as it shielded them from the Goombas. " Come on! Lets help Mario!" Mokou moves while spinning the staff. The girls look with saddened eyes at the environment.

The once grassy plains were now a burnt wasteland with several fires and lava patches burning fiercely. " Man. Yuuka would go a killing spree if she saw this." Reimu said as they approached Mario ready to help in this fight.

Bowser shook off his daze and stomped his foot. " Four on one won't help you against me! All that training I did after losing to you Dork Bros. made me much more powerful! I could take on Master Hand and Crazy Hand at the same time!" Bowser slammed his fists together as a shockwave rang out.

### **Nemesis King Koopa ( Super Mario Galaxy)**

" Uh! I don't like how the music changed like that!" Marisa said as she hopped on to her broom.

" That Henry guy sure knows how to select music for perfect moments like this." Reimu said as she pulled out some amulets.

" Ziden said that the music invigorates the spirit, so we can't really complain!" Mario pulls out his hammer.

" Whatever. As long as it doesn't distract us, I don't care." Mokou cracked her neck.

" Bowser Charge!" Bowser skids forward at fast speed slamming into Mokou sending sliding across the floor.

" Youkai Buster!" Reimu throws amulets coated in pink aura that exploded against Bowser's face. Reimu ran up and slammed her foot into Bowser's nose causing him to stumble.

" Eat this, ze!" Marisa throws a flask that exploded against Bowser.

Mario runs and gives Bowser a wicked uppercut to his jaw sending him skyward. Mario flew into the sky and begins to hit Bowser with a flurry of punches. " Bye-Bye, Bowser!" Mario clamps his hands together and slams them into the face of Bowser. Bowser went flying to ground causing a dust cloud to form.

Marisa begins to charge up a spell as Reimu and Mario charge at Bowser. Reimu and Mario leap into the dust and plants their feet into Bowser's body knocking him out of the dust cloud towards one of the newly created pools of lava. He stops a few inches away from it.

" I see what you idiots are trying to do! It ain't happening pal!" Bowser jumps over to the duo and raises his arm in the air. " Bowser Bull Dozer!" Bowser slams his fists down into Mario's and Reimu's skull slamming them face first into the ground. Bowser sees Mokou and Marisa coming at him. Bowser grabs Mario and Reimu as he spun his arms like windmills. " Not fast girls! King's Fast Ball!" Bowser throws Reimu and Mario into Marisa and Mokou respectively as they fell on to each other.

" Oh come on! Are we seriously getting thrown around by a turtle!?" Mokou said while slamming her fist into the ground.

" I told you! I trained myself to the extreme after that green freak took over my castle! Get ready to get squished! Bowser Bomb!" Bowser launched the air and slammed into the pile of fighters as they screamed in pain.

" Bwaahahhahahahah! Whirling Fortress!" Bowser spins into the group scattering them around the battleground. Mokou ended up falling near a lava pit as Bowser grabbed her body, slowly pushing

her head closer to the lava. She grabs his arm in an attempt to break free.

" Lets see how similar you are to Spikes!" This pushed Mokou over the top as she blasted Bowser away from as a fiery aura enveloped her.

" STOP. COMPARING. ME. TO. HIM! GRAHHHHHHHHHH!" She leapt attacked Bowser viciously as Reimu, Mario and Marisa ( while chibified) looked on in horror as Mokou went ballistic on the screaming Koopa King. Bowser is beaten and dragged across the ground towards a lava pool. " Lets see how you like it, you oversized piece of crap!" Mokou throws him into the pool of lava. Bowser struggled to get out as his flesh was melted off, leaving only his bone behind as it sank to the bottom of the lava.

"\*pants heavily\* Man is it over yet!?" Reimu said as she got back up. They waited for them to be teleported back to the ring as nothing happened.

" Well that's not surprising! That guy is durable for sure! He survived a planet exploding and a black hole to boot! Twice!" Mario said as they noticed something flying over the lava pit. It was Kamek covering the lava with a rainbow looking spell. The lava began to shake as Bowser, now fully skinned, leapt out of the pit.

" Gwahhahhahahaha! Thought I was done for didn't you Mario... where'd the plumber go?! Hurgh!" Bowser felt a tug on his tail as he is lifted up and spun in circles by Mario.

" So Long-e Bowser!" Mario launches Bowser into the sky. The group is brought back to the arena as they watch Bowser fly towards the screen and slams against the camera cracking it as he slid down the screen.

**Glitz Pit ( Paper Mario 2)**

The group of four made their way back to the locker room and saw Sakuya sitting next to Ziden asleep on his shoulder. " Nice job on taking down Bowser, girls! Good news; my injuries are all healed up so I can fight again!" Patchouli sighed at this. They noticed that Sakuya wasn't wearing her maid cap and Patchouli's eyes looked heavy as if they were crying.

" What happened?" Reimu asked as Ziden shook his head.

" I'll tell you later." Ziden got out of the bed and laid Sakuya on the bed next to Patchouli. " Lets hurry up and these Crystal Stars already and leave this world already." Ziden said as Mario and Meiling registered for matches.

**As much as it hurts me to do this after this Chapter is done we are going to be skipping to the final chapter of Paper Mario Thousand Year Door to save on time. also Ranks 4-1 are skipped for time but the fighters that were supposed to appear will appear as Bosses in the Gates. I am going to summerize what happens in those chapters.**

The trio was watching the Champion being soundly beaten by the Rank 1 fighter in one attack. The Champion, Rawk Hawk, stomped into the Major-League locker room. " Grahhhh! I can't believe I lost to that scrawny suit wearing freak! The next time I see him he is going to get RAWKKKKKKKEEEEEEDDD!" Ziden chops Rawk Hawk in the neck knocking him unconscious.

" Mario you want to take on the champ?" Meiling asked as Mario nodded. " I'll take him on if you fail." After she said this a Bodyguard came in.

" China, Ziden. Please follow me to the 'special room'" Ziden and Meiling look at each other as Sakuya walked over to join.

" Might as well! Come on, Sakuya!" Ziden grabbed Sakuya's hand and dragged her with them to the 'special room'.

Patchouli saw this and thought back. *" From what they told us about what happened to Bandy Andy and King K, I hope that 'special room' doesn't contain whatever drained them of their energy. I am surprised that Sanae and the others got here by manipulating the teleporter on Ziden's ship. The kappa looked excited to be here. Her and Sanae were hounding poor Ziden with questions while was injured. I wonder if all of Ziden's female fans act this way?"* She looks over and sees Remilia sleeping in the bed with a distressed look on her face. " Now that Sakuya found Ziden again, will she make good on her promise and quit? I know Remi doesn't want her to."

The trio is led into another Minor-League room as the bodyguard left the room telling them to wait here. A few moments later the trio noticed that the man did not come back. Ziden lets the two girls talk amongst themselves while he paced back and forth.

" Something's wrong here. I smell something fishy here." Ziden said as he walked to the door and turned the knob only for it not to open. " I knew it! Damn it! Got to find another way out." Ziden notices a poster of Rawk Hawk in the back of the room. Ziden launches a stream of fire at the poster revealing a hidden room. Ziden decides eavesdrop on the chatting duo.

" So Sakuya? Are you really going to leave the Scarlet Devil Mansion now that you found Ziden again?" Meiling asked as Sakuya slowly nodded. " B-b-b-but you can't just leave us! It won't be the same without you!" Meiling looked as if she was going to cry.

" I'm sorry, but my minds made up. I wish to finish my training with him. Plus there is also other things I must do." Sakuya places her hand on Meiling's shoulder. " I MAY come back after I'm done."

" Lady Remilia is not going to like this at all." Meiling said as she wiped her eyes.

Sakuya gets up and sees Ziden watching them by the secret entrance he found earlier. " Done having your little ' girl chat'

Sakuya?" Sakuya walks by him and kicks him in his shin.

" They found themselves in a small room with a table and a small t.v. in it. " Hey Ziden! There's a door over there!" Meiling ran over to the door and opened it revealing the other Major-League room.

That door's probably locked. Hmmm." Ziden noticed a bathroom. They walked over to it entered it. " Okay I know this is a disgusting idea, but I think we can get back to the other Locker room using this toilet." Meiling and Sakuya gave him disgusted looks. " What?"

Sakuya decides to answer his question. " First of all a person can't fit down a toilet, Master Ziden. Second of all, hell no! I'm not going down a toilet, so I kindly refuse."

Ziden jumps into the toilet and stands in the bowl. " Well, we are in a different world so we are playing by different rule. So just watch and let your jaw drop." Ziden flushes the toilet and slowly descends into the toilet and disappears from sight.

"... Sakuya? Did he just enter the toilet? Sakuya?" Meiling looks over at Sakuya whose mouth was open with a look of disbelief on her face. Meiling takes Sakuya back to the room and waits for Ziden to unlock the door.

" *God this is nasty!*" Ziden thought as he traveled through the pipes of the toilets. The people in the hallway heard the water moving through the pipe as they had question marks over their heads.

*Back in the major league room...*

Patchouli heard noises coming from the bathroom and looks around to see if anyone went to use the bathroom. " Everyone's here. So then who is..." She looks at the bathroom door and sees Ziden walking out of the bathroom drenched in toilet water. " That explains the noise. Ziden? Did you come out of that toilet?"

" I don't want to talk about it, Patchy. I need to hurry up and save Sakuya and Meiling." He looks over and sees Yukari glaring at him. " What do you want now Yukari?"

" Ziden? Why didn't you just use your vortex to get back here instead of using the toilet like a jackass?" Ziden raised his index finger as if to say something before facepalming himself. " Don't you dare tell me that you forget you could do that?" Ziden remains silent. " Well!?"

" Well you told me not to tell you!" Ziden begins to walk to the door before he notices Remilia standing in front of the door.

Remilia had her arms crossed and was tapping her sharp nail against her forearm. " I'm not letting you take Sakuya from us!" Ziden sighs and shakes himself dry getting toilet water on everyone.

" Listen. It's not me you want to talk to. It's Sakuya's choice to leave with me. I personally don't want to talk to you right now after what you did to my student. Just be grateful we're friends and allies or I'd have killed you while you were sleeping." Ziden forcibly shoves remilia out of the way and slams the door behind him.

" Wow little Vampire! Looks like you got on Ziden's bad side. I'd watch out if I were you!" Yukari said as walked after Ziden.

Remilia looks down at the ground as Flandre and Patchouli come to cheer her up.

" Don't worry, Big Sis. Sakuya loves us!" Flandre said as she hugged her older sister.

" I know she loves us, but she loves her teacher too. 'Loving a man is stronger than loving a fellow girl' That's what I read in a book that Patchy gave me." Remilia said as she flew over to the couch to watch the fight with Patchouli and Flandre following behind her.

" I know, but don't worry Remi. Me and Ziden worked out a plan that will make everyone happy." Patchouli said as she watched the

screen with a new face of shock.

" W-w-w-what happened to Mario!?" They said in unison.

Ziden unlocked the door and led Sakuya and Meiling to the ring as they saw a shocking sight. Mario was on the ground in front of them, bloodied and unconscious. " What the hell happened to you?!"

" I did." Ziden looks up at the ring and sees the new champ standing there with his arms behind his back. He was a very tall and slim, yet muscular man with arched eyebrows and a close-shaved goatee. He has shoulder length wavy hair that is tied in a ponytail. He is wearing a fancy black suit with the sleeves normally rolled up, with black leather shoes and a white tie and handkerchief in the breast pocket. The most notable thing about him was the white pigeon resting on his shoulder.

" Hey! You're that guy took down Rawk Hawk in one shot!" Meiling said as the man cracked his neck. " Good! Because now I get to kick your ass for hurting our friend!" Meiling dashes towards the stage and tries to hit the man with a roundhouse kick only for him to easily dodge.

" Sorry China, but you are not the one I wish to fight. \* raises index finger\* Shigan!" The man jabs Meiling in the gut with his finger piercing into her gut. He pulls out his finger and kicks Meiling into the wall.

" Meiling!" Sakuya screamed as she ran over to Meiling.

Ziden sees this and leaps onto the ring, standing face-to-face with his opponent. " I can sense you are close to the plumber and that girl."

" Of course I am! They're my friends and I don't like what you did to them!" Ziden said as he cracked his knuckles.



Grubba walks up the steps and decides to make himself known. " All right guys! This is it, now! The championship match! The Blazing Swordsman; Ziden the Hero!" The crowd goes wild with applause. " Versus the Champ himself; The Leopard Tempest!" The crowd goes wild with applause again.

" Grubba. Will you send us to the place I told you about?" The man asked.

" Yes I can, pardner!" The beam of light shot over them as they found themselves in a room filled with wooden crates. The walls were made of white bricks and there was a large metal door behind the Leopard Tempest.

" What's your name you bastard!" Ziden said as he assumed a fighting stance.

" My name is Rob Lucci." The pigeon flew off his shoulder. " You will not win this fight, Ziden."

Ziden spits on the ground to the right of him. " Oh really? I'm going to enjoy the look on your face when I beat you!"

### **Fight On! ( Final Fantasy 7 )**

" Get ready for a beat down!" Ziden charges at Lucci with a flurry of punches which he easily dodged.

" Is that all you got?" Lucci hits Ziden in the neck with a hard kick that sends him into a wooden crate. Ziden gets up and dusts himself off.

" No way! I'm just getting started!" Ziden wraps his fists in fire and slams them into the ground. " Heroic Eruption!" Pillars of fire dashes towards Lucci at a fast rate. " Lets see you dodge this, freak!"

" Very well. Soru!" Lucci disappears in thin air, dodging Ziden's attack. Ziden senses an attack coming from his right as he blocked a

kick from Lucci. " Not bad. Not many people can keep with my Soru technique."

" Looks like you have some cool skills up your sleeves! But lets see if you can keep up with my speed!" Ziden disappears in thin air as Lucci used his Soru.

Multiple shockwaves rang out in the room as Ziden and Lucci reappeared with a kick that collided with sparks coming off their legs. They broke away from their clash and landed on the ground.

Fire wrapped around Ziden's right leg as he ran at Lucci. " Burning Lancer!" Ziden jumps kick at Lucci who simply places his arms behind his back. " Oh. Gonna finally take a hit like man, huh?"

" Hmph. Tekkai!" Ziden's hit connects only to see that it did no visible damage.

" What the heck?!" Ziden was completely confused at this.

" Shigan!" Lucci thrusts his finger into Ziden's chest causing to fall back in pain. Lucci watches as the bullet sized hole in Ziden's chest started to close at a fast rate. " Ah yes. You can regenerate, can't you? But I wonder what its limit is."

Ziden now had a look of shock on his face. " *What the hell!? This guy figured out my regeneration has a limit just from one wound! Best be careful with this one, or I'll be down for the count!*"

Ziden performs a kip-up as he sees Lucci lifting his leg. " Rankyaku!" Lucci shot out a blade of air from his kick that Ziden jumped up into the air to dodge only to see Lucci above him. Lucci performs an axe kick which Ziden blocks by grabbing his leg.

" Go down!" Ziden throws Lucci to the ground as cracks formed from the impact. Lucci sees Ziden coming at him in a dive bomb as he rolls out of way. Ziden slams into the ground causing a crater to form.

" Soru!" Lucci disappears and reappeared behind Ziden. " Shigan Oren!" Lucci pierces Ziden's body with a multitude finger thrusts ending with a kick to Ziden's spine that sends him flying into another crate. " Had enough yet?"

" Please! I'm just warming up! Rooooooooooooooooooooo!" Ziden launches several planks of wood at Lucci who kicks them away. He noticed that Ziden was missing.

" Humph. Tekkai!" Ziden's kick connected to Lucci's neck. " That won't work." He noticed that Ziden's kick seemed to be gaining momentum. " What the-" Ziden's kick gained enough momentum to break through his Tekkai and sent him into the iron door, leaving a large dent in it.

Lucci opens his eyes and sees fires on the back of Ziden's leg. " I see now. By having fire come of the back of your leg, you could severely increase the power and force of attacks." Ziden whistled at this. " Now then. I think it's time I show you why I'm called the Leopard Tempest!"

Lucci flexed his muscles as his body began to change form to that of a Leopard-Human hybrid. The tips of his fingers became claws which his Shigan techniques would hurt alot more.

" What the hell!? Are you some kind demon?!" Ziden said as Lucci chuckled.

" Nope. I'm just a human who ate the Neko-Neko No Mi." Ziden looked confused at this. " The Neko-Neko No Mi is a Devil Fruit from my world. By eating one of these fruits, one can gain new powers that one can hone to make stronger, but at the cost of obtaining a great weakness."

" I see. Mister Leopard Man! How about kick things up a notch! Lets take this outside!" Ziden charges into Lucci tackling him through the wall as they fell towards a ship which they landed on.

Ziden looks up and saw that they were in a tower. " Wow. Nice tower." Ziden looks over to his right and sees a long stone bridge.

Lucci gets up and dusts himself off. " Happy now?" Lucci snapped his fingers as a large group of men wearing marine officers uniforms came out of the ship. " We are on my world now boy. Meet the Marines, the Keepers of Justices!"

*Back in the Major-League Room...*

" Hey thats not fair! Big Sis, do something!" Flandre pleaded

" \*sigh\* Yukari. Can you-" Remilia said before being interrupted by Yukari.

" Already on it! Lets go little vampire!" Yukari led Remilia into the gap she created.

*Back to Enies Lobby...*

" Hey, that's not fair! Nobody said you can call back up!" Ziden complained. Lucci simply shrugged at this as a smirk broke out on Ziden's face. " Good cuz my back-ups here!" A gap opens up next to Ziden as Yukari and Remilia walked out. " Hey Lucci! Lets continue this fight on that bridge!"

" Humph! Fine by me. Marines! Take those girls down!" Lucci leaps over to the bridge as Ziden talks to the girls.

" You ladies got this?" They nodded. Ziden turns to leave as Remilia grabs his arm.

" Listen Ziden. I'm sorr-gack! I'm s-s-s-soreeeee. Grrrr! This is hard!" Remilia sees Ziden smile at her as he petted her head.

" I know what you're trying to say and I forgive you. Now all I need you to do is kill some marines. Can you do that?" Remilia showed her fangs as she walked to Yukari's side.

Ziden leapt over to the bridge and locked eyes with Lucci. " Ready for Round 2, dog breath!?"

" Lets go!" Lucci and Ziden dashed at each other.

### **Devil May Sly ( God Hand)**

" Burning Slicer!" Ziden launches a blade of fire at Lucci.

" Rankyaku!" Lucci launches a blade of air that sliced through Ziden's Slicer and slammed in to Ziden, sending him sprawling across the bridge.

" *Looks like his strength improved because of that form!*" Ziden recover to see Lucci with his hand forming the OK sign. " Wait a minute. That Shigan technique can't hit me from here right?!"

" It can. Tobu Shigan Bachi!" Lucci flicks his finger as an invisible bullet pierced through Ziden's shoulder causing him to fall on his back.

Ziden's body disappeared in a puff of black. "Hmmmm? Where did he go?" He failed to sense Ziden above him spinning like a buzzsaw with his leg stretched out. A Marine sees this and decides to warn him.

" Lucci! He's above yo-!" Was all the young Marine said before Remilia sliced his head off with her claws and licked up the blood.

" Too late now, Dog Boy! Rampaging Skull Crusher!" Ziden slammed his heel into Lucci's skull causing to fall into the ground facefirst. Lucci's tail lurched out and grabbed Ziden by his waist. It slammed him hard into the ground as Lucci got back up.

Ziden broke free from his tail as Ziden dashed at him and hits him with a strong uppercut that sent him skyward. " Lets see you recover from that, asshole!"

Lucci flips in the air and shows off a new technique. " Geppo!" Lucci bounces off the air towards Ziden and slashes Ziden across the chest with his claws drawing blood. " Lets see you recover!" Lucci hits Ziden in the jaw with uppercut that send him flying.

" Soru!" Lucci dashes several feet above Ziden. " Rankyaku Hyobi!" Lucci shot a blade of air that was swirl shaped as it slammed into Ziden's back, blasting him onto the bridge as he rolled down the path of the bridge.

Ziden got back up as he felt tired from the attack. He looks up and sees Lucci bouncing up and down. " Dammit!" Ziden formed a ball of fire in his hand. " Blaze Ryder!" Ziden blasts a wave of fire from his hand that wrapped around Lucci and swallowed him whole. Ziden connects a whip of to the ball of fire and slams it hard to the ground causing an explosion of fire.

" Good. Lets see him get up from that." Ziden senses an attack coming from the cloud of dust and fire.

" Tobu Shigan Mitsubachi!" Lucci shoots three air bullets at Ziden which pierce him in his gut causing him to fall to the ground. " Soru!" Lucci apears behind Ziden hits him with a hard kick to his neck sending him falling towards the edge of the bridge.

Ziden struggles to get to his feet as he sees Lucci standing in front of him. " Seimei Kikan: Kami-e Bushin!" Lucci's body shrinks back down to his normal human size while still retaining Leopard traits.

" So you're still standing? Then let stop that by showing you the secret technique of Rokushiki arts." Lucci places his fists a few inches away from Ziden's chest. " Rokuogan!" A powerful shockwave blasts through Ziden's body causing him to cough up blood and falls into the water, sinking to the bottom of the sea while staining the water red.

Yukari, who was sitting down watching the fight between Ziden and Lucci, simply sighed as Lucci looked over at her.

" Looks like your hero went down pretty easy." Lucci said as Yukari laughed.

" Look again, Kitty-Cat!" Yukari pointed to the now forming whirlpool where Ziden sank. " Blue flames, huh? Looks like Ziden's getting serious." Lucci looks at the whirlpool as blue fire was coming out of the center.

Ziden was standing in the eye of the whirlpool with fiery, blue aura surrounding him." Aura Release. Rooooooooooooooooo!" Ziden performs wall-jumps off of the water as he quickly ascended the whirlpool and landed next to Yukari.

Yukari saw that both Ziden and Lucci were panting out of exhaustion. " What is that Aura around you?"

" You'll find out when I kick your ass!" Ziden's leg is wrapped in a blue Aura. " Aura Lancing Impact!" Ziden shoots forwards at incredible speeds.

" Tekkai!" Lucci braces himself for the impact as Ziden's leg slammed into his chest at such a force broke through his Tekkai and sent him flying towards the sea. Lucci sees the sea slowly getting close to him as he flips himself with his feet a few inches above the water. " Geppo!" Lucci dashes upwards and then towards Ziden as he lands in front of Ziden.

" I see. I guess eating that fruit gives you a weakness to water, huh?" Ziden guessed as Lucci laughed. "What's so funny?!"

" I'm going to end this right now! Seimei Kikan: Kaijo!" Lucci returns to his large form as Ziden focuses all of his Aura into his right hand.

They charge at each other as Ziden throws his fist at Lucci who had his fists inches away from Ziden's chest.

" Aura Infused One Inch-"

" Sai Dai Rin: Rokuo-"

" Punch!"

" Gan!"

A massive shockwave blasted through both peoples bodies as blood came in streams from their mouths. The two opponents were brought back to the ring as everyone held their breath waiting to see who won.

Lucci's eyes were completely white as he fell down completely unconscious. Ziden was given the belt as he walked to the door to leave as his Aura disappeared. He coughed up a large amount of blood as he fell down in it with his head turned to the side. He sees Yukari and Remilia walking towards him as he lost consciousness.

*A few minutes later...*

### **Glitz Pit ( Paper Mario 2)**

Ziden woke up in a very soft bed, but found himself unable to move. It turns out he was tucked in with enough pressure that he could break out without tearing or burning the tiger print sheets. " Geez! Talk about tacky." Ziden also notices 4 people around him. The sleep rapist, the comes-on-too-strong Gatekeeper, the green haired fan-girl and the Blue haired girl with pigtails.

Ziden was locked in a strong, but very soft, hug by Patchouli and Meiling with Sanae and Nitori at the foot of the bed. " Oh. You're awake." Patchouli said as she stops hugging him and sits up.

Ziden immediately feels the pain he received from his fight with Lucci as he feel Meiling pushing him down. " Ziden, you took alot of damage in that fight with Lucci. But I have to say; man you can take a beating! Me and you need to spar sometime in the future!"



" Ziden. After we get done with this world, we should return to Gensokyo to get some additional help." Patchouli said as Ziden looked confused. " On this journey we are going to be getting hurt alot and we will need a doctor for this journey."

" Oh! Do you mean Miss Eirin?" Sanae asks as Patchouli nodded.

" Of course if we ask her to come, Reisen and Kaguya will want to come along as well." Patchouli said as Mokou walked over.

" Uh-Uh! That spoiled Moon Princess is not coming with us. Besides I know Ziden doesn't want her coming with us as well." Patchouli looked over at Ziden who was whistling nonchalantly.

" Deal with it Mokou." Patchouli goes back to reading her book. Ziden can feel the tension in the room as Mario. Luigi and Youmu entered the room.

" Ziden! You're awake!" Mario said as Ziden chuckled.

" I'm good!" Ziden notices a card in Youmu's hand as she hands it to him.

" That's from Mr. Yojimbo. He says to call him when you're ready to pay for his services." Youmu looks over Ziden. " Man that Lucci guy really did a number on you, didn't he?"

" He sure did! Man, Mister Ziden! You sure are resilient! Taking all those hits and still be able to fight like that!" Nitori said while clapping.

Eerie music came from Mario's pocket as he pulled out the Gameboy Advance SP and read the E-mail aloud. " Find the ghost in the Champion's Room."

" OooOOOooooooooOOOOOOOooooo" A noise from came from the air vent above a wooden cabinet. The color drained from Youmu's and Luigi's face as they ran and hid under the bed.

" Ziden! Be a good boy while we're gone, okay?" Meiling rubs Ziden's forehead before giving him a slug on the arm causing him to cry out in pain. " Calm down! That was just a love tap, you baby!" She teased as she jumped up to the air vent and ripped it out with ease.

Mario and Meiling climb through the air duct as they see Grubba's office through the second vent.

" Man those new fighters are getting a bit too popular, I reckon! I think those varmits need to 'disappear' like Prince Mush and King K." Grubba leaves his desk as Meiling silently kicked out the air vent and walked over to the desk.

Mario decides to search the desk as he found some papers of major interest. " Hey! These papers show a detailed report of the Crystal Star and machine that uses its power to power up people." Mario said as Grubba entered the room and saw Mario and Meiling behind his desk.

" Gonzales and China?! What are you- Aw cow patties!" Grubba runs out of the room at full speed as Mario and Meiling take pursuit. They enter the ring to see a large cage like machine with a large bowl with an Orange Crystal Star in it. Grubba was sitting in the middle of the machine.

" All right now! Y'all brought this upon yerselves!" The machine begins to power as Grubba is enveloped in a white light as he grows in size and becomes a giant, orange Grubba.

"MAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAACCCCCCCCCCHH  
HHHHHHHHHHOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!"

" Holy Crap! Grubba got huge!" Meiling jumps back and assumes a battle stance as does Mario.

**Macho Grubba! ( Paper Mario 2)**

Macho Grubba flexs his muscles as a bright light shined from him. " Thanks to all those fighters my machine sucked dry, my bod got stronger and can remain eternally young!"

" That's sick, you shady promoter! So that's why Bandy Andy and King K were like that!" Meiling said as they placed some distance between them and Grubba.

" Yes! They saw my machine, so I drained them dry! Just like you guys are gonna be!" Grubba charges at Meiling and Mario as he crashes through the wall into the lobby of the Glitz Pit. Meiling and Mario chase after him.

Back in the Champ's Room...

" Must. Join. Fight!" Ziden struggled to get out of the room while he was being held back by Mokou, Sanae and Nitori while Patchouli just watched this.

" No! Mister Ziden, your injuries haven't healed yet! Stop!" Nitori pleaded.

" I don't care! I'm not missing out on some action because of some stupid injuries!" Ziden is slammed to the ground by Nitori. " God Dammit!"

Back to the fight...

" Power Quake!" Mario slams his hammer into the ground causing a powerful shockwave knocked Grubba off balance.

Meiling ran up and jump-kicked Grubba in the chest, knocking him outside the building. " all right, Mario! We got him in the open!" She looks down and sees the dead body of Raijinmaru on the steps. " Wow. No one bothered to clean up that guy's body. Shame."

Mario pulled out another fire flower and absorbed it becoming Fire Mario. " Lets-a-go!" Mario launched a flurry of fireball at Grubba who

swatted them away like flies. He failed to notice Meiling behind him.

" Spiral Light Steps!" Meiling rapidly punches and stomps Grubba's back as he fell to his knees.

" Why you!" Grubba flips around and grabs Meiling as he leapt into the air. " Macho Piledriver!" Grubba slams Meiling head-first into the earth causing the lower half of her body to be stuck above ground.

The group was watching the fight from the juice bar as they cheered for Mario and Meiling to win. Mario pulled Meiling out of the ground and helped her to her feet. Meiling grabbed Mario and launched him at Grubba. Mario flips himself so his feet were aim at Grubba.

" Super Fire Drill!" Mario spins himself as he resembled a fiery drill as he slammed into Grubba's chest burning him in the process.

" Gaaaaaaahhh! Not bad, son! But this fights just getting started!" Grubba flexes his muscle as he grew a little bigger. " Macho Smash!" Grubba smashes his fist down on Mario crushing him. Grubba jumps into the air and smashes down on Meiling.

" Waaaaaaaahhhhhhh!" Meiling cried in pain as Grubba cracked his knuckles.

" Lets see how you like it, girly! Macho Light Steps!" Grubba stomps and punches Meiling as she screams in pain. " Now die!" Grubba brings his foot up and-

" Flame Dragon Assault!" Three dragon made of fire crash into Grubba blasting him away. Meiling looks up and sees a bandaged Ziden with his hand out. " You all right, reddie?"

" Well aside from the fact that my whole body hurts, I'm fine!" Meiling takes Ziden's hand and gets to her feet with minor dificulty.

" Well you sure look fine! Heh-Heh!" Meiling hits Ziden in the arm again.

" Well if it isn't the hero!" Grubba laughs at this as Ziden lands a kick on Grubba that stuns him.

" Hey guys! Wanna see what powers I got from Yojimbo!?" Ziden raises his index finger. " Mimicked Skill: Shigun!" Ziden pierces through Grubba's gut as he fell back in pain.

" Woah! Ziden, how'd you do that!?" Meiling asks as Ziden answered.

" With my ' Eyes of the Mimicking Shadow' I can copy any form of attack and ability I see my opponent use. Not only that, I can improve upon the attacks by adding extra elements to them." Ziden gloated.

" Grrrr! Macho Stampede!" Grubba charges at Ziden and Meiling who quickly exchange a glance as they jumped into the air.

Ziden grabbed meiling and launched her onto Grubba's head. " Take this! Yellow Quake Kick!" Meiling slams her foot down Grubba's skull causing it to bleed profusely.

Mario is now back on his feet. " You guys ready to finish this!" Ziden and Meiling land near Mario as they begin their triple assault. " Oh yeah! Hi-yahhhhh!" Mario slams his wrists together as two fire dragons blasted out and comboed Grubba high into the sky. Ziden and Meiling jump into the air with their legs stretched out as the fire dragon combined with their legs.

"Combination Assault! Sky Dragon Finale!" Ziden and Meiling passed through Grubba's body as a cross of fire enveloped him. They landed next to Mario as Grubba's body sparked with electricity when all of a sudden he exploded as the trio struck a pose.

Grubba crashed into the ring area. The entire group raced into the arena and saw Grubba, now reverted back to normal, on the ring bloodied and unconscious. Ms. Jolene rushed in to the room.

## Ms. Jolene's Appreciation ( Paper Mario 2)

" So you guys did it. You beat Grubba." Ms. Jolene said as Ziden approached her.

" It was you. You sent us those e-mails that led us to the Crystal Star, Mr. X." Ziden said calmly

" Yes. I knew what Grubba was doing, but I was powerless to stop it. My brother was once the Champion here before he disappeared which is why I work here. When I saw Grubba draining people with that machine, I lost all hope... until you three came here. I knew you guys would stop him, but first things first. Grubba! Where is Prince Mush!?" Ms Jolene said with anger in her voice.

" Heh-heh! It's too late now. He found out about my machine, so I did the sensible thing and drained him completely dry!  
Hahaahahahahahaha\*cough-cough\*"

Ms. Jolene dropped to her knees and started crying. "N-n-n-no. Not my little brother Mush."

Everyone felt saddened at this as they noticed the Crystal Star was spinning rapidly as a blonde haired toad flew out of the bowl.

" M-M-M-Mush! You're alive!?" Jolene runs and hugs him as everyone looked in awe. The Crystal Star fell down next to Meiling.

" Looks like the Crystal Star pulled an incredible Miracle today!" Ziden said as Sanae started to say something only to stop in the end.

Meiling grabbed the Crystal Star as it floated above her head.

## End of Chapter! ( Paper Mario 2)

*The trio made their way through the ranks as they beat foe after foe to meet their goal; To beat the Champion and obtain the Crystal Star. After an intense battle with the Champ, Rob Lucci, Ziden obtained*

*the belt and aided in the fight against Macho Grubba. They obtained the Gold Star and said their good-bye to the warriors. Ziden had a bad feeling in his heart about these Crystal Stars. Little did he know that he was right...*

Author's notes: Next Chapter will add new members to the team and they will get a team name as well. also expect some Ziden fights that will push him to his limit. No bio this time. Next Chapter will though! Follow! Review! Like! Love you guys! Also I plan on making a side series Starring Ziden, Sanae and Kaguya some time in the future!

# The Illusionary Heroes are born!

## Have a good Talk ( Mario and Luigi: Bowser's Inside Story)

Reimu and friends ( minus Ziden, the Mario Bros., Sora and friends, Mokou and the Scarlet Devil Group) were talking to a woman who had dark grey eyes, long silver hair, has a large braid on her back, and carries a strange pair of bow and arrow. Her clothing is red and blue, and is covered with constellation patterns. She also wore something similar to a nurse's cap.

" So let me this straight: You want me to leave with you guys so that you guys have a qualified doctor to help patch up your injuries?" The woman asked as Reimu nodded. " I'm sorry, but I can't leave yet. There are too many injured plus I can't just leave Kaguya and Reisen alone."

" What happened while we were gone. Eirin?" Reimu asked.

" Well this may come to a shock to you, but the Barrier surrounding Gensokyo is broken." Eirin said this as Reimu's heart dropped.

" W-w-w-what!?" Reimu screamed as they ran outside and saw that barrier was quickly flickering in and out of existence.

" Uh. I'm guessing that's not normal." Dante said as two women walked towards them.

*At the Scarlet Devil Mansion...*

Ziden was resting in a bed as he woke up and saw that his upper body was heavily bandaged. " Damn. Bowser must have put a beating on me in the Palace of Shadows. Where am I, anyway?"

" You are in the Scarlet Devil Mansion, Mister Ziden." Ziden looks over to his right and sees a red headed girl wearing a simple brown



dress. Ziden also notices her bat wings. " I am Koakuma, assistant to Lady Patchouli."

Ziden gets up and notices several fairy maids staring at him. " Lady Patchouli also advises not over-exerting yourself so please be careful while exploring the mansion."

Ziden sees that he is only wearing the bandages and his pants and shoes. ( Yes. Ziden sleeps in his adventuring clothes.) " Where are my jacket and swords?"

" Patchouli has them. She wished to research the magic behind them. Allow me to lead you to the Voile." Koakuma led Ziden to the library. The library was huge. It makes you wonder if she lived in this library.

" She wishes to see you, so please be careful when navigating this library. There are many traps in this library so be careful~!" Koakuma disappears from sight.

" \*sigh\* Jeez! Making an injured man to work like this... Man she is evil!" Ziden begins his trek through the library.

*In the Human Village...*

Mokou is talking to a woman with silver hair with a blue highlights in a blue dress. " Man Keine! That was a fun adventure! I can't wait until we hit the next world!" Keine giggled at this.

" Even if Kaguya comes along?" Keine asked as Mokou got a tick mark.

" Yes. Ziden said that we can't fight each other at all during this journey, so that sucks." Mokou said.

" Yes it is sad that his memories of Gensokyo are gone." Keine said.  
" But what I want to know is; what happened to you and Ziden?"

" Well you see..." Mokou had bandages all over her chest and arms as well her neck and parts of the face.

*Flashback*

**All right! Here is the chapter summaries.**

**Chapter 4: Mario gets his body stolen by Doopliss as Youmu and Luigi help him get his body back and obtained the Ruby Star.**

**Chapter 5: The group journeys on ship to get the 5th Crystal Star only to crash on an deserted island where they fight the Pirate King Cortez for the Sapphire Star.**

**Chapter 6: After solving some crimes on the Excess Express train, Marisa defeated the creature known as Smorg they received the Garnet Star from Pennington.**

**Chapter 7: After doing an annoying quest, the group traveled to the moon and infiltrated the X-naut Base, defeating Lord Crump for the Diamond star. They open the Thousand Year Door and enter the Palace of Shadows. They battled their way through Heartless and a dragon named Gloomtail. When they beat Grodus, Bowser decides to make himself known and challenges Ziden and Mokou to a fight. Peach is taken into a corridor by Grodus as everyone gave chase. ( The group will be fighting the final boss as Ziden and Mokou fight Bowser.)**

**King of Koopas ( Paper Mario)**

" Looks like you like getting beaten down by yours truly!" Ziden said as he cracked his knuckles.

" Yeah right, bird-boy! Get ready to get smashed!" Bowser leaps at the duo as the two jump away from Bowser.

" Lets see who takes down Bowser first, eh Mokou!?" Ziden says as he coats his arms in fire.

" Fine by me!" Mokou wraps her legs in fire.

" Whirling Fortress" Bowser performs a spin attack at Ziden who teleports away using his speed.

Mokou sees this opening and a forms a ball of fire at her feet. " Phoenix Blitz Shot!" Mokou kicks the ball as it slams into Bowser knocking him into the wall.

Ziden appears before Bowser while he opened his palm. " Burning Tiger Strike!" Ziden slams his palm into Bowser's chest, leaving a burning imprint of a tiger head on his chest.

" GraaaaahhhH!" Bowser gets out of the wall and lands on his feet.

" Huh? It looks like you really did train your ass off after that 'Fawful' fight against Mario and Luigi!" Ziden laughed at his own terrible joke as Bowser stomped his foot in rage. " Woah! Watch it, lard turtle! Don't want that blood pressure to go up, now do we?"

" The only thing going up is you!" Bowser throws an uppercut that hits Ziden hard in the jaw sending him into the ceiling.

Mokou laughs at this as Bowser charged at her. " Humph. Hi-yahh!" Mokou lands a burning arc kick on Bowser's face, staggering him a little. " This is getting fun! \*places hands a few inches from Bowser's chest\* Phoenix Flame Bomb!" A ball of fire slams into Bowser sending him into the throne chair and explodes.

Ziden gets down from the ceiling and lands face first on the ground while Mokou continues to laugh at him. From the dust cloud a barrage of fire balls came out, catching Mokou off guard.

Ziden runs behind Mokou and uses her as a shield. The fireballs strike Mokou while Ziden is completely unharmed. " Not so funny

now, is it?" Ziden releases Mokou as she kicks him between the legs. Ziden falls down in pure pain.

" Oh I'm sorry, did that hurt?" Mokou taunted as Bowser walked out of the cloud.

" Grrrrrrrr! Whirling King Fortress!" Bowser spun in his shell at extreme velocities, creating a vicious tornado that was coming towards Ziden and Mokou.

" Crap! Move!" Ziden pushes Mokou out of the way as he took the full brunt of the attack and is badly cut by the tornado. " Damn that hurt!" Ziden was now in the eye of the tornado as he looked down on Bowser. He formed a stream of fire at his feet causing him to propel downwards towards Bowser.

"Meteor Burst Kick!" Ziden flips himself as he slammed his foot into Bowser's back, causing an explosive force to disperse the tornado.

Bowser comes out of shell as he had a look of rage in his eyes. " I think it's time I reveal to you the true power of my training!" Bowser takes out a green box with an exclamation point on it and slams it in to the ground. A silvery liquid came out of the box as Bowser stepped in the liquid.

### **Bowser's Rage ( Paper Mario)**

" Roooooaaaaaarrrrrr!" The liquid climbs up Bowser's body covering him entirely as became and sounded metallic. " Now this is more like it! Lets see you two handle this!"

" Great! He had a Metal Box on him!" Ziden said as he drew Crimson Edge.

" Metal Box?" Mokou asked as she scratched her head.

" It's an item from this world that turns people into metal beings. Not good for us for the sole reason that his offensive and defensive

capabilities sky rocket from this form." Ziden said as he gripped his sword harder.

" Get ready, punks! Sliding Punch!" Bowser slides forward as Ziden and Mokou move out of the way.

" Lets get him! Watah!" Ziden strikes Bowser hard in the gut only to see that he barely budged from the hit. Ziden fell to his knees, clutching his hand in pain. Bowser slams his fist into Ziden's stomach, causing blood to come out of Ziden's mouth.

Mokou blasts Bowser with phoenix fire as he fell backwards. She ran over to Ziden and helped him to his feet. " You alright, Ziden?"

" Yes... Just broke some ribs." Ziden readies himself for the fight against Bowser as he sensed something. *" What the hell is this dark presence I'm feeling? I hope those guys don't get hurt."*

" Koopa Claw!" Bowser swipes down with his claws, hitting Mokou in her chest as her wounds sprayed out blood.

Ziden formed a spinning ball of fire in his hand. " Lets if your metal form can handle this! Burning Spiral!" Ziden slams the ball of fire into Bowser's chest as it drilled into his body and sent him spiraling into the wall as the ball of fire completely enveloping him.

" Noooooooooooooooooo!" Bowser screamed as the spiraling sphere of fire ended as he fell to the floor.

" Well that was easy. Come on, Mokou! Lets go help our friends." Ziden said as he noticed her still watching Bowser. " Now come on! He can't be standing after that barrage.

But of course Kammy Koopa appeared on her broom. " His Royal Nastiness would never fall to you punks!" She shoots a purple lightning bolt at Bowser as it shocked him back to his feet.

Bowser's body began a monstrous transformation. Bowser grew enormous in size now towering over the duo. His claws became longer and sharper. His shell became plated and spikier. His face became more demonic and evil looking. Via Kammy's magic, Bowser had transformed into Giga Bowser!

### **Giga Bowser ( Super Smash Bros. Melee)**

" Wait a second!" Kammy shot a bubble at Bowser's head as he began to laugh.

" All right, Kammy! Now I can smash these accursed fools with some real gusto!" Bowser slams his fists together releasing a wave of darkness that washes over them.

" Um Ziden? This could be a problem!" Mokou says as she summons a sword of fire.

" No really!? Wait a minute... Mokou? Do you have an exsphere?" Ziden asked as she shook her head. " Here. Place it on your skin somewhere." Ziden throws her the Exsphere as she places it on her chest. " Odd placement choice."

" Whatever. Do you know what this new form does for him?" Mokou asked as Ziden shook his head. " What the- You're supposed the expert here!"

" I never said I was an expert at knowing things about these worlds!" Mokou simply shakes her head at Ziden before focusing on Bowser.

" Get ready punks! Sliding Punch!" Bowser slide punches forward with his fist wrapped in darkness as Ziden rolled out of the way.

" Burning Slicer!" Ziden launches a fiery air blade at Bowser's leg knocking him off balance as Mokou dashes at him.

" Burning Crescent!" Mokou hits Bowser across the chest her sword leaving a burning Crescent moon after her sword swing.

" Bowser Hammer!" Bowser slammed his fist hard into Mokou's back slamming her into the ground. Bowser raised his foot and tried to slam it on Mokou as he feel a force holding his foot up.

Ziden was standing over Mokou holding up Bowser's foot stopping him from crushing her. " Are you going to lay there all day?" Mokou grabs on to Ziden's pants to help herself up as she moved from under Bowser's foot.

" Grrrrrr! Go splat you worm!" Bowser applies more force to his foot as Ziden began to sink into the ground.

Mokou begins to rapid fire fireballs at Bowser causing him to stagger allowing ziden to get free of Bowser's foot.

Bowser sees this and begins to spin in his shell generating alot of wind around him. Ziden and Mokou noticed that the room was getting colder. " Blizzard Spin!" Bowser propels himself towards the two fighters, hitting them head-on as their bodies became frozen in blocks of ice.

" Bwahhahahaha! Two flamecicles!" Bowser taunts as he noticed their ice blocks melting away.

Ziden and Mokou get out of their frozen prisons as Bowser dashed towards then.

Ziden summons fire to his sword. " Grand Flame Spiral!" Ziden slams his sword into the ground releasing a large spiraling stream of fire that blasted Bowser backwards and into a wall. " Got him!" Bowser quickly gets back up.

Bowser runs over to Ziden and Mokou as he grabbed them both. " Get ready! Flying Slam!" Bowser flips in the air and slams to the ground crushing Ziden and Mokou underneath him.

" AAAAARRRRRRRRRRGGGGGGHHHHHH!" they screamed in unison. Bowser began to rapidly punch them with his fists wrapped

in darkness. They continued to scream in pain as Bowser laughed at their pain.

" Time to make it worse! Bowser Bomb!" Bowser jumps into the air and ground pounds the duo crushing them underneath shockwave exploded across the room cracking the walls in the process.

Ziden struggled to move as he saw Mokou coughing up blood. " Dammit!" Ziden gets up and stares Bowser down.

" Oh! Mad that I hurt your little girlfriend!? Bwahhahahahahah!" Bowser said as Ziden's face turned red with rage.

" SHE'S NOT MY GIRLFRIEND, YOU OVERSIZED SACK OF TURTLE WASTE!" Ziden crouched down. " AURA RELEASE!" Ziden became enveloped in a blue fire-like aura as Mokou struggles to stand. " I'LL SHOW YOU WHAT HAPPENS TO PEOPLE WHO HURT MY FRIENDS!"

### **The Unbreakable ( Super Robot Wars Z2 Saisei Hen)**

" ROOOOOOOOOOOOAAAAAAAAAAAAA!" Ziden runs around Bowser at incredible speeds.

" Ziden's getting serious, huh? The music sure is showing that. No way I'm letting him 1-up me!" Mokou runs up behind Bowser and runs up his back avoiding the spikes.

" Dragon Spiker, GOOOOOOOOO!" Ziden hits Bowser in the chest with his aura wrapped fist staggering him as Mokou leapt off of his head and pointed her palm at his torso.

" Red Hot Cannon!" Mokou blasts Bowser away with blast of fire as he rolls away.

" Mokou, lets show this bastard who he's messing with!" Ziden said Mokou lands next to him.

" Right!" Mokou cracks her knuckles.



" Grrrrrr! Lava Breath!" Bowser breathed ( or spat) a stream of lava at Mokou as Ziden steps in front of her.

" Aegis!" Ziden's aura turned golden and completely negated Bowser's Lava Breath. " Aura Dragon Rampage!" Ziden summons three aura dragons that blast Bowser into the sky.

" Lets finish this, Ziden!" Mokou points her hand at the falling Bowser as Ziden does the same.

" Sacred Fire: Twin Phoenix Blaster!" A stream of fire shot out from their hands as the streams combined and formed large Phoenix who let out a screech and flew towards the falling Bowser. The Phoenix collided with Bowser as it created a large explosion that blasted the duo into the wall behind them. Mokou sees Bowser, now back in his normal form, fall out of the smoke cloud as she lost consciousness.

### **Have a Good Talk ( Mario and Luigi: Bowser's Inside Story)**

" My-my! What a fight you two had together!" Keine said as she clapped.

" Huh? Wait did you see the fight?!" Mokou asked as Keine nodded.

" Don't forgot what Ziden said. When something weird happens, it's usually because of his powers!" Keine said as Mokou sweatdropped.

" What a weird power. Seeing flashbacks? Kinda useless for a fight though." Mokou said.

" So then, where is everyone else?" Keine asked.

" Well when Yukari gapped us back to Ziden's ship, that Bowser guy followed us. He did something stupid and caused Ziden's teleporter thing to malfunction causing us to be spread all through out Gensokyo." Mokou explained. " Then when I regained consciousness they told me that Organization 13 kidnapped Peach

and that Sora found some form of gateway allowing us to go to more worlds."

" Aren't you happy! And I mean that in more ways than one!" Keine said while laughing.

" And what does that mean, Keine?" Mokou asked.

" I mean you're happy to be with Ziden again, aren't you?" Keine said as Mokou's face turned red. " Even if you want to kill him!"

" I-i-i-it's not like that! I mean what are the chances of getting to exploring other worlds?" Mokou said as she faked a chuckle.

" Fairly low, I'm afraid! But before you guys go off to the next world, can you guys help with the situation here?" Keine said as Mokou nodded. " Thanks Mokou. I'm glad you're here to- hmm?" Keine noticed two small children coming out of one of the bedrooms in her house. The boy had short, silver hair and was wearing teddy bear pajamas. He had light green eyes and had a teddy bear in his hand. The girl had shoulder length, red hair and was wearing pajamas that had several dogs on it. She had red eyes and had small horns on her head.

" Hmmm. What are you two still doing up?" Keine asked as the two small children walked over.

" We can't sleep." They said in unison. Keine motioned for them to come to her. They sat next to Keine, resting their heads on her sides.

" Alex. Sypha. Say hi to Auntie Mokou!" Sypha runs over and tackles Mokou with a hug. Nathan stays by Keine's side.

" Hi Auntie Mokou!" Sypha said as she buried her face in Mokou's chest.

" Hello Sypha! Hello Alex! Looks like you two grew since I last saw you!" Mokou said as she petted Sypha's head.

" Yep we're 4 years old now!" Sypha said while holding up 4 fingers.

" I see! Have you been giving Keine any trouble while i was gone?" Mokou asked as Sypha looked guilty.

" No! I never give Mother any form of trouble! Honest!" Sypha said.

" Mokou? Do you have any idea where your other teammates are?" Keine asked as Mokou shook her head.

*Meanwhile on another world...*

## **Villains of a Sort ( Kingdom Hearts 2)**

*A blonde haired man wearing a white leotard that had a deep V that showed a green Crystal on his chest. He had green eyes with one being covered by his blonde hair. He was talking to a man sitting behind a desk. The man was a tall and muscular, yet spry, roughly middle-aged man with a long braided beard and a mustache. He was wearing black-rimmed glasses and a white and gold full Marine admiral uniform that is adorned with medals. The most distinctive features of this uniform are a life-size seagull on top of his cap and his oversized Marine coat which he wears like a cape. His coat has the kanji for justice, in blue, emblazoned on the back. There were three bounty pictures on his desk. One was a picture of Ziden, another was of Yukari and the last was of Remilia.*

" So then. You're telling me that these individuals are the ones responsible for attacking Rob Lucci and Enies Lobby." The man asked as Ruler no. 11 nodded.

" Indeed, Fleet Admiral Sengoku. They are unfortunately not on this world anymore, but if you want I can send some of your stronger men to combat them." Ruler 11 said as Sengoku rubbed his beard.

" I see. These pirates will not escape justice!" Sengoku pulls out a snail like device and began to speak into it. " Get Vice Admiral Aokiji up here."

A few minutes pass a tall man wearing a white button-up vest over a long-sleeved navy blue shirt and matching white trousers and shoes entered the room.

" Took you long enough, Aokiji!" Sengoku said as Aokiji looked over at Ruler 11.

" You needed me, Sengoku?" Aokiji asked as Ruler 11 threw him a card.

" We need you chase down the pirates that attacked Enies Lobby and killed several marines. They are, according to this man, off world and he has the means of letting us travel back and forth between these worlds via that card he gave you. Feel free to leave whenever you need to." Sengoku said as Ruler 11 opened a portal.

" Beware of this Ziden character, Mr Aokiji. He isn't the one to go down without a fight according some of my associates. I've left more D Cards in case if you lose to them, someone else can give it a shot!" Ruler 11 entered the portal and left.

" I'll head out tomorrow, Sengoku sir." Aokiji left the room.

Sengoku walked away from his desk and looked at the courtyard which was heavily damaged. " To think that Ace's execution would cause this much damage. \* sigh\* Maybe I should retire."

*Back at the Scarlet Devil Mansion...*

" About time you got here, Ziden." Patchouli said as she was reading a book on magic.

" Why. The Hell. Is this. Library. SO DAMN BIG!?" Ziden said between breaths.

Patchouli stood up and handed Ziden his items back. " Why didn't you just use a vortex to find me?" Ziden facepalms himself.

" By the way. I have to ask why did you leave a succubus to watch over me while I was unconscious?" Ziden asked as Patchouli shrugged her shoulders.

" Koakuma is well trained, you know? Come on, Remilia wants us to help find Mario and friends." Patchouli drags Ziden along with her.

Ziden is dragged outside and sees Remilia and Flandre waiting for them. " About time you woke up, sleeping beauty!" Remilia said as flew up to his face and looks him up and down. " Are you able to fight?"

Ziden nods as he looks up and sees the flickering sky. " So do you know where they are?"

" I know where Sora and his friends are by tracking the magic of his keyblade. We are going to fly and find them. as for the Mario Bros. and Bowser, I don't know." Patchouli grabs Ziden by his armpits and begins to fly.

So where are we heading anyway?" Ziden asked as Remilia flies by him.

" We're heading to some temple. I remember Reimu telling me about it. Some thing about Buddhism or something." Remilia said as Ziden sighed.

" I think you mean Buddhism, Remilia." Ziden said as he tried to make himself more comfortable. " Where are Sakuya and Meiling any way?"

" Meiling is searching for Bowser while Sakuya looks for the Mario Bros." Remilia said as Flandre smiled at Ziden.

" *I want to fly on my own!*" Ziden thought as they made their trek through the air.

*Over to Sora, Donald and Goofy!...*

Sora and friends were walking up to an unknown temple as they saw a girl standing in front of them. " Halt human and... weird looking Youkai! What business have you at Myouren temple!?" The girl asked as Sora walked up to her while doing his signature pose. Sora notices what the girl is wearing. She has light purple wavy hair, and dark purple eyes. She carries a medium-sized yellow ring in her right hand. On her head, she wears a headdress similar to a Hijab or a nun's headdress. She wears a white dress with a blue trim at the bottom, and wears black shoes.

" Nothing. We're just looking for our friends!" Sora said with a smile as the girl looked annoyed.

" Your friends are more than likely not here. The only people inside are Youkai that were injured by the men wearing the blue armored cloaks." The girl said.

" Well are any of them named Ziden or Yukari?" Sora asked as the girl had a face of surprise.

" How do you know of Ziden Icrim, the Hero to Humans and Demons?" She asked while leaning in close into Sora's face.

" Uh. He's one of the friends I'm looking for." The girl had a look of joy as she grabbed Sora's hand.

" He may not be here, but you can relax and rest here until he gets here! My name Ichirin Kumoi!" Ichirin said as Sora and friends introduced themselves.

" I guess we can rest here for a bit." Sora said.

" Here is that accursed Temple!" An unknown voice yelled as Sora and Ichirin saw men in blue cloaks with steel armor covering the shoulders and forearms running up the stairs.

**Face It! (Kingdom Hearts Re: Chain of Memories)**

" It's those guys that attacked those Youkai! Come Unzan!" A pink cloud formed around Ichirin as it formed a face and fists.

The cloaked men drew their swords and charged at the group. " Kill everyone except the Keyblade Wielder!"

Squirming Evil ( Kingdom Hearts)

" Hmmm? What's that music?" Ichirin asked as Sora drew his Keyblade.

" We'll tell you later!" Sora dashed at the group and struck them with his Keyblade.

" What a weird weapon. Unzan! Go!" Ichirin commands Unzan as he transforms into a giant fist and knocks the cloaked men in random directions.

" Thunder!" A bolt of lightning blasts several cloaked men into the air as Sora combos them off the Temple Grounds.

" Don't any of you punks move!" A voice said as Sora and Unzan turn around and see a cloaked man holding a knife to Ichirin's throat.

" Master!" Unzan tries to move to save his master only to see him move his knife deeper into her throat drawing blood.

" Not so big and tough are you now!? Hahahhahahaha-argh!" The man falls dead as a man walked out from behind him.

The man was wearing a red jacket that stopped at his elbow. He wore a black vest that was white down the middle where the buttons were. He had black shoulder pads on. He wore black pants that had red greaves on the shins. His shoes were black with an armor plate on the front of it. He carried modified weapon case to carry his two katanas, a shotgun and golden Magnum.

You alright, Miss Ichirin?" The man asked.

" I'm fine Mister Reiji. Thanks for saving me!" Ichirin said as she began to give orders to Unzan again.

### **Trembling City of Aris ( Namco X Capcom)**

" So you're that Reiji guy that Ziden and Ike was talking about!" Sora said as he blocked a sword swing from a cloaked man.

" Great. Why does Ziden need to be here as well? I've already a headache from these Zealots and Xiaomu! I really don't want another one." Reiji said as he drew a fire katana called Karin.

" Jeez! It's nice to know when I'm not liked!" Ziden drops down from the sky and next to Sora.

" Ziden! You're here!" sora said as he slapped a Zealot across the face.

" We'll talk after these Zealots are dealt with!" Ziden draws Nosada.

After a long fight against waves of Zealots, ziden noticed a injured Zealot typing into a laptop like object. " Hehhehehehehehehe! It's over, you worms! I just gave our Captain the signal to blow this place to smithereens with Tracer Nukes!"

### **Enemy Encounter ( Paper Mario 2)**

" Tracer Nukes!?" Ziden and Reiji yelled in unison.

"Yes! No matter where you send the missiles, they return to blow Gensokyo and it's inhabitants to dust!" The Zealot said before killing himself with his sword.

" Ziden! This place is close to Japan! If those bombs hit here, Japan will be in the blast radius as well!" Reiji said while shaking Ziden.

All of a sudden, a purple haired girl landed head-first on Ziden's head and fell over." Mukyu!"



" Jeez Patchy! Way to have an asthma attack in the air and fall! Uh. What's happening!?" Remilia asked as Ziden explained the situation to the girls.

" Ziden! Doesn't the Isle of Hope have a missile defense program that can take out Tracer Nukes!?" Reiji asked as Ziden nodded.

" Yep, one problem though! The Program would take too long to find the Missiles and they would have hit Gensokyo before we could target them." Ziden said as he sighed.

Ziden, Reiji and Patchouli took some time to think of a solution when an idea hit Patchouli.

" Ziden! Why not warp Gensokyo to this Isle of Hope and use Missile Defense Program to destroy these 'Tracer Nukes'!?" Patchouli said as Ziden slammed his fists together.

" Not a bad plan! The Program would sense the Nukes coming and blast them into dust! Only thing is if I do this, you guys may get some invasive species and I could die from the stress of this teleport." Reiji places his hand on Ziden's shoulder.

" They can live with them, now do it!" Reiji ordered as a purple glow emitted from his body.

" ROOOOOOOOOOOAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA ! SPATIAL TRSANSITION!" Ziden releases an intense burst of spatial energy that covered all of Gensokyo as Ziden began to teleport Gensokyo to his home island, The Isle of Hope.

The populace of Gensokyo see a bright flash of light that blinds them temporarily. They open their eyes to see that everything was back to normal, mostly. The Zealots were still attacking them, causing carnage and death wherever they went. Everyone saw a gigantic orange Laser shoot across the sky as 5 enormous explosions appeared high in the sky.

Ziden was successful in teleporting and fusing Gensokyo to the Isle of Hope, but the strain on his body killed him as Reiji carried Ziden's body inside the temple.

**Toad Town ( Mario and Luigi: Bowser's Inside Story)** Side Note: you would think I would play some Touhou music here, but naw. This fits for the atmosphere of the situation.

Thirty minutes had passed by as Ziden heard a female voice calling his name. He recognized the voice with his last dealing with the Ultima Brigade. He chose to ignore it.

SMMMMMAAAAAACCCCCKKK!

" Owwww!" Ziden sits up and sees a familiar kitsune sitting next to him. " Goddammit! Xiaomu, can't a guy get a little shut-eye!" Ziden asked the kitsune.

Xiaomu was wearing a black chinese dress with a small red jacket. " Nope! Besides, the owner of this place wishes to meet you." Ziden sighes at this as he noticed he was not wearing a shirt, only a jacket.

" Great. I'm pulling Dante right now." Ziden said as touched his chest as a shirt magically formed on his chest. The shirt was black and had a red skull that was on fire at the top and had black V-shaped sunglasses on over the eyes.

Ziden walked out of the room and entered a large wooden room with a large golden statue in the back. Ziden recognized the statue as Buddha. " *The only god who doesn't use me like a pawn.*" Ziden notices a woman praying in front of the statue. The woman had long, wavy, light brown hair that fades to purple at the top, with hazel or light brown eyes. She wears a black and white dress with long strips of black fabric going across the middle and white fabric across the arms. Along with this dress, she wears a long cape.

" Ah. You must be Ziden Icrim. It is an honor to meet you. I'm Byakuren Hijiri." Byakuren bows before Ziden as he bows before her

as well.

" So you must own this temple, correct?" Byakuren nods at Ziden's question.

" Do you mind if I ask some questions?" Byakuren asked as Ziden nodded. " Ziden, when you obtained immortality how did you feel?"

" At first it felt wonderful. I could do whatever I wanted, I decided get revenge on my school bullies. They couldn't kill me even after they shot me. Then it happened, I ended up pushing one of them into a pen of crocodiles and watched her get torn limb from limb. It was at that point I learned something about myself that day, I loved the feeling of killing. I ended up using my powers I received from the Phoenix to kill thousands of peoples a day for 2 whole years." Byakuren sat down next to Ziden as she listened to Ziden's story. She also noticed Ziden friends entering and listening to his story.

"I became a bringer of death and destruction to the humans of the Outside world. They began to give me a nickname that I still use to today, Ziden Icrim ' God of Death and Destruction'! Towns fell before me! Armies piled up before my power! I was unstoppable! Until I met the girl who changed my way of life. Rena of the Tsunami Clan. I ended up killing her whole family and friends. I took ecstasy in the sound of their screams filling the night air, but then I came to her. My sword, Vampir Red, was stained with her families' blood and brought my blade to her neck and stopped. I couldn't kill her. She look at me with such emotionless eyes. She didn't look scared or angry. I told her ' that it was no fun killing someone who didn't scream in terror' and left. I later found that she followed me. I allowed her to come telling her that I would show her terror. I didn't realize that her whole purpose was to reform me. She made me see the misery of the people I killed because you see, her clan specialized in magic that attacks the mind. When I learned what she did, I tried to kill her, but she ended up killing me. That was when I first met the Yama, Eiki Shiki. She forced me to repent for my crimes and made apologize to every person I killed. She also showed what Hell was like. She had me imprisoned there for a day. It was horrible! They wouldn't stop

drowning me! In and out! In and out! When the Yama came to get me, I was broken physically and mentally. I could barely walk or even form a sentence. She was at what happened to me. She worked to help repair the damage she did to me, unintentionally. She trained me in the ways of Right and Wrong. Taught me about Justice and Heroism. After all that I returned to life and saw that Rena caring for me even after I tried to kill her saying that she knew that there was good in my heart. I just needed help to let it out. Of course at that point was when a Demonic Overlord came and invaded Earth. I decided to take this opportunity to try and be a hero. That started my career as the Eternal Protector of Earth." Ziden said as he finished his story with everyone in room ( except Byakuren) was shocked at Ziden's past.

" This is when you disappeared from Gensokyo after that Phoenix incident, meaning you were 12 when you did this?" Reiji asked as Ziden nodded.

" So it seems from your long life you have learned plenty, but you have yet to be enlightened. Would you like to join our Temple?" Byakuren asked as Ziden shook his head.

" No thanks! I mean you're a nice lady and all, but I'm not really interested in joining the Temple."

" Oh well." Byakuren stands up and pets Ziden on the head. " Since you helped out here, why don't you go help out at the Human Village? I hear the GPD is having trouble dealing with these ' Zealots'"

" Got it!" Ziden gets up and dashes out of the room at high speeds.

After a few seconds he runs back into the room. " Umm? Where is the Human villiage?" Everyone in the fall to the ground as Reiji walks over and slaps Ziden hard in the back of the head.

" Come on, Ziden. I'll lead you to the Human Village." Remilia said as she dragged him by his feet.

Reiji and Xiaomu follow on foot as Sora and friend follow close behind him.

At Eientei...

" All right Kaguya, we'll go! Sheesh!" Eirin said as she packed several things into a medical bag. Kaguya was tapping her foot impatiently.

Several rabbit Youkai were there as well. " All right. I've trained all of you in the art of Medicine, so you'll be able to take care any injured from these ' Zealots' that Yukari told us about." Eirin instructed as the Rabbit nodded their heads in approval.

The duo walked outside into the Bamboo Forest of the Lost where the rest of the group was waiting. A rabbit girl raced to catch up with them. She has red eyes, long light-purple hair and long rumped rabbit ears. Dressed in a white shirt with a red necktie. There is a clip on her necktie in the shape of a carrot. Wears a purple skirt.

" There you are, Reisen! Lets go!" Kaguya said as Yukari opened a gap to the Human Village.

Ziden and crew had just arrived at the Human Village as they noticed how damaged it was. Several wooden buildings were torn apart and burnt in several places. " So where are the Mario Bros. and Bowser?" Xiaomu asked as Ziden closed his eyes and held out his hand.

" Luigi's here in the village with... Oh god no." Ziden said as he was tackled into a hug by a pink haired woman.

" Ziden! I missed you so much!" The pink haired woman said as she hugged Ziden with more force.

" Gahh! Get off me, you crazy ghost!" The ghost lady took offense to this and slapped Ziden hard across the face.

" Ziden Icrim! That is no way to speak your Auntie Yuyuko!" Yuyuko grabbed into another hug as Sakuya and Luigi walked to them.

" There you are, Sakuya!" Remilia said as she ran over to Ziden.

" Looks like you're having fun, Master Ziden." Ziden makes muffled noises from Yuyuko's chest. " I'm sorry! What is that?"

Ziden flips Sakuya off as he tries to push Yuyuko away only for his hands to phase right through her.

" Yuyuko please stop suffocating Ziden." Yukari said as the Eientei crew emerged from the gap.

" All right so we're reunited lets..."

" There's a few more people coming, plus a face you don't know but you will love her!" Yukari said as a gap opened up above him. A girl falls through and lands on Ziden's chest as everyone recognized her.

The girl had dark brown hair. Wears a white short-sleeved shirt with a red "eye" in the center, a short green skirt, and a green hair-ribbon. On her right arm, she wears a device reminiscent of a nuclear control rod. She also wears a cape that's white on the outside and a starry pattern on the inside; the cape is kept aloft by her black wings. Her right foot is encased in congealed matter and her left ankle was orbited by electron.

" Unyu!" The girl said as she looked down at Ziden who had a nosebleed. " Hey, why is your nose bleeding?" She looks at Ziden's eyes as they weren't looking up in her eyes but somewhere much lower as her face turned red. " Gahhh! Pervert danger! Pervert Danger!" She raised her arm cannon thingy and slammed it into Ziden's face and leaps off of Ziden's chest.

" Why am I the only one getting hurt all of a sudden?! Why not Steve or even Caboose?!" Ziden complained.

" Utsuho Reiuji at your service, Miss Yukari!" Utsuho said as she did a salute.

An explosion came from the direction of the Forest of Magic as they hear a loud screeching sound ripped through the air ( sounds like that cartoon sound effect of a being dropped). Yukari giggles as she knows what it is.

" Oh come on!" Ziden yelled as Mario, Meiling and Bowser crash down on him.

" Well everyone's here!" Yukari said as Reiji walks up to Ziden and pulls him out of the pile of people.

" Ziden tell them what you did." Reiji says as Ziden sighs.

Ziden explains to them what he did. " So Gensokyo is now fused with this ' Isle of Hope'?" Reimu asked as Ziden nodded.

" Yeah. The only thing you need to worry about is foreign species invasion." Ziden said as Eirin walked up to him. " Hmm?"

" It has been a while since we last saw each other, hasn't it Ziden?" Eirin said as Ziden looked confused.

"... Who are you again?" Ziden asked as Eirin simply sighed. Yukari and Yuyuko walk up to her.

" So how is the research going, Eirin?" Yukari asked as Eirin shook her head.

" I'm sorry, Yukari. I've tried my hardest to find a cure for Ziden's memory, but it seems that whatever those men did to it, it's going to be hard to undo." Eirin said as Yuyuko grabbed ziden in a tear filled hug.

" Why can't you remember your Auntie Yuyuko?! Why?!" She asked as Ziden flailed his arms in an attempt to get away.

" So Ziden what kind of Invasive Species should we expect from this land merge? We've already some annoying species here." Reimu asked as Ziden broke free from Yuyuko.

" \* catches breath\* Well you may get some wolves, Dinosaurs, Monsters, Emus and Ostriches. Wait what annoying species are you talking about?" Ziden asked.

" Well there are these creatures that look like us called Yukkuri." Reimu said as Eirin and Patchouli pitched in.

" Wait a minute! Dinosaurs?! But they're extinct!" Patchouli said as Ziden shook his finger.

" Not on the Isle of Hope. T-Rexes, Raptors and those flying ones exist there. Of course we hunt them for food and skins. They aren't even the top predators on the-" Ziden is cut off by a woman yawning.

" Come on, Ziden! We'll talk about this later!" Kaguya said as Ziden felt a tick mark form on his head.

" Hey. Moon woman. Duck." Ziden said as Kaguya looked confused. A ball of fire slammed into Kaguya's back as a white haired woman walked out of one of the houses.

" Man that felt good!" Mokou said as Kaguya got back up.

Kaguya was forming a ball of light in her hand as Ziden stood between them. " Remember. No fighting, got it?" Kaguya and Mokou exchanged a death glare before turning their backs to each other.

Ziden felt a presence near him as Youmu walked next to him. " Tch! Can't believe I dropped my guard like that!" Ziden and Youmu drew their swords and stabbed the air next to them. They both sheathed their swords as blood began to pool on the ground near where they stabbed the air as two men dressed in black bodysuits fell down to the ground dead. " Shadow Zealots. They're getting serious now." Several men jumped off of buildings and landed in front of the group.



## Night of Fate ( Kingdom Hearts)

The group drew their weapons as Ziden and Youmu walked to the front of the group. Kaguya decides to tell them something. " Umm. Ziden, our spellcards aren't working, so how are we going to fig-" Ziden throws 3 Exsphere at the three girls and tells them to put them on.

" Guys! You go make sure to keep the villagers safe while me and Youmu take care of things here!" Ziden said as they ran off to handle their jobs as Reiji and Xiaomu as well as Sora stayed to help them.

" Get them!" A shadow Zealot said as they charged at them.

Youmu ducks a sword swing as stabbed a Zealot through the knee as Sora knocked the man away with a strong Keyblade swipe. " Sora! Behind you!" Sora turned to block a battleaxe that was coming down on him as Youmu sliced the man's arm off.

Reiji was fending off three Zealot with Karin as Xiaomu got behind them and sucked them into a blue orb.

" Karin!" Reiji swings his sword in multiple directions slicing the Zealots apart.

Ziden was leaping rooftop to rooftop while being chased by Zealots and Shadow Zealots. " Lets play! Shadow's Dance!" Ziden vanishes in thin air.

" Where did he go?" A Shadow Zealot asked in rasping voice. Ziden appeared behind him and did a beautiful sword dance that sliced them apart.

" Humph! Too easy!" Ziden said as swung the blood off his blade.

Sora was surrounded by Zealots as they closed in on him. " Time to take a nap, little boy!" A Zealot said as he practice swung his sword.

Sora placed his keyblade across his chest and did a small hop. " Stun Impact!" An orange orb surrounded Sora and stunned the Zealots as Youmu sliced through them with ease. " Thanks Youmu!"

" You're welcome, Sir Sora." Youmu motions her hand towards a Zealot as Myon flies forward and tackles a Zealot to the ground as it flies back to Youmu's side.

Ziden sees a large group of Zealots charging at a defenseless child with shoulder length red hair. Ziden dashes over to her and faces the group of Zealots. " I hope this works! Mimicked Skill: Unrelenting Force! Raaaaaaaaah!" Ziden releases a shock wave from his mouth that blasts the Zealots in the sky as they turned into stars.

" That was so cool, mister!" The girl said as she hopped up and down.

" Where's your parents, kiddo?" Ziden asked.

" My mom helping to fend off these weirdos and my name is not 'kiddo' it's Sypha!" Sypha said as Ziden scratched his head.

Youmu was facing off against several Zealots as they charged at her. " Slash of Life and Death!" Youmu performs successive sword swings that slashed through the Zealots. " This is a waste of my time." Youmu sheathes her swords and runs after Ziden and Sora.

After a few more minutes of fighting, all Zealots were taken out and defeated.

Sora ( Kingdom Hearts II)

" Reiji. We need to get going to the next world. I need you to-"

" To contact Shinra and send some agents to protect Gensokyo while you are gone saving the Universe." Reiji said as Ziden touched his sleeve.

" Bowser. You'd best be on your good behavior on this voyage, you understand?" Bowser grunts at Yukari. Ziden notices a woman in a blue running towards him. He also notices her large chest as he starts to drool.

" Hello Ziden. It has been a while, hasn't it?" Keine asked as Ziden kept drooling. " Come closer. I have something to give you!" Ziden runs over to her as she softly grabs Ziden's jaw. She strengthens her hold as she pulls her head back and slams it into Ziden's face as he fell down.

Keine walks over to Mokou and whispered something in her ear. Xiaomu decides to say something. " Hey! I just thought of some thing! Why don't you guys get a team name!"

" Hmmm. It could raise team morale." Eirin said as Kaguya nodded.

" I think I got one! How about the Illusionary Heroes!"Ziden said as every in the team cheered for it.

" Come on, Future Husband! Lets go already!" Kaguya forcibly grabs Ziden arm and starts the teleportation process.

They found themselves on Ziden's space ship as they saw a 3 worlds in front of them. One was a floating island that had a large statue of a goddess, another was a large yellow star that had smaller stars orbiting it, the last one was a large castle town that Sora seemed eager to get to.

" Let's head to that world that wants to go to." Ziden said as they headed to the teleporter room.

" Utsuho? Can you come here a sec?" Yukari called as Utsuho walked over to her. " I know you attack using Nuclear Fission, but that won't be good here. Take this and put it on your Third Leg as well as this." Yukari hands Utsuho two items; an Exsphere and a orb-like object that had a lightning bolt on it. She places both objects on her Third Leg as a bright light enveloped it.

" All right, lets get to this new World!" Mokou and Kaguya said in unison as they glare at each other.

" Hold on a sec. We need to lower the number of World Explorers to 10. The rest of you can see the worlds from Sanctuary." Ziden said as everyone clamored to get to travel the world. " All right. Sora, Donald and Goofy aren't counted in this number because they are used to this kind of stuff. I'm permanently on the team cuz I've done this before. To make it fair I'll pick at random."

Ziden ends up picking; Reimu, Marisa, Mokou, Mario, Youmu, Patchouli, Remilia, Ike and Aya.

Everyone else is swallowed in a ball of light and enters Ziden's chest. The group is teleported to a place overlooking a large castle.

" Man! Its been a while since we saw this place! Man its change!" Sora said as everyone saw several Soldier Heartless and Dusk Nobodies fly by.

" That doesn't look good." Reimu said they see they the Heartless and Nobodies disappear.

*Author's Notes: 20 long pages of story typed over two days. Man I'm good! Yep! The Ultima Brigade's henchmen are known as Zealots and there are many different forms of them like Heartless and Nobodies. Yes, there are going to be fights against the Marines because of Ziden and Remilia's actions at Enies Lobby. This happens several months after Ace's Execution. There is only going to be two more Shonen Jump animes appearing in this crossover. For the Touhou characters I picked chars from Scarlet Weather Rhapsody and that other fighting game expansion minus Suika, Iku and Tenshi. There are going to be only two characters joining them in the future. Time for the guessing game! What are the worlds that they saw and what world are they on now? Send and review this story. Guhhahahahahahah!*

# Hollow Bastion and the Gourmet Race!

## Reviving Hollow Bastion ( Kingdom Hearts II)

The group found themselves in a plaza surrounded by shops as they began shopping with the Munny they got from beating Heartless and Zealots ( Zealots drop munny too).

" We should stock up on Potions and Ethers for this journey, Sora." Donald said as Sora bought several cases of Potions and Ethers as distributed them to the group.

" So these Ethers restore magical energy, huh?" Marisa asked as Sora nodded. " That's good for us! We use a lot of magic in our attacks!"

" I wonder if they improve health." Patchouli asked as Ziden was looking at the castle in the distance.

" Sora? Is that the place that you fought your friend Riku?" Ziden asked.

" Yeah. It's also where we first met Ansem." Sora said as he looked at the castle.

" Well are we done shopping?" Mokou asked.

The group began to walk around until they got to an alleyway. Sora looks around as a pillar of light appeared in front of them.

" Hmm? What was that?" Aya asked as she took a picture of the Machines moving around them.

" That's the town's Defense System!" Everyone looked up and saw a ninja girl standing on a building above them. " Look out!" Several Dusk Nobodies appeared around them.

## **Scherzo Di Notte ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

" Sora! Why don't you try out that new power you got from the Fairies!" Ziden said as Sora nodded.

Sora crossed his arms against his chest as a white orb appeared around him and shattered revealing Sora in a new form. His clothes were now red and he had a blue Keyblade ( Star Seeker) in his other hand.

" What the- How does he get two Keyblades?!" Remilia said as she bit her hat.

Sora dashed at the Nobodies as he comboed them into the air and cut through them with ease. Sora performed a furious aerial combo as everyone watched.

" Hey Ziden? I need to talk to Kaguya. NOW!" Mokou said as she grabbed Ziden by his shirt as a small version of Kaguya appeared on Ziden's right shoulder. " Why did you call Ziden your future husband?!"

" Really Mokou? This is what's got you mad? I knew you had the 'hots' for me, but this is a bit much!" Ziden and Kaguya laughed at his pun as Mokou punched him through his stomach.

" What? Jealous that I can get a man and you can't?" Kaguya taunted as Sora took down some Assassins and Creepers.

Ziden had to hold back Mokou as he told Kaguya to shut it. " Well look at me and look at him. Two faces of beauty, we need to be together. Forever!"

" Never." Ziden said simply.

" You'll change your mind eventually~!" Kaguya said as she reentered Sanctuary.

" Aw Mokou!" Ziden grabs Mokou in a hug as Patchouli glared at him.

" Unhggiujfhe!" Ziden uttered as Mokou's knee connected to his crotch as he fell down.

" Looks like you're going to have to live with the fact that your future husband is going to be attracting a lot of woman, eh Patchy?"  
Remilia elbowed Patchouli in the side.

" Yep... I can't believe I fell for that trick, Remilia." Patchouli said as she slapped Remilia on the back of the head.

" Dual Strike Raid!" Sora throws his Keyblades at the remaining Nobodies, finishing them off as he reverts back to normal.

### **Reviving Hollow Bastion ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

The Ninja Girl jumped down and landed in front of Sora. " Yuffie!"

" Nice to see you again, Sora! Dolan! Gooby!" Yuffie said as she noticed Sora's Allies. " Well it looks like you made some new friends, but introductions are going to have to wait! Follow me please." Yuffie leads them to a house as Zidem is stopped by Patchouli outside the house.

Ziden can see the annoyed look in her eyes. " Seriously. Are you not going to drop this. We've been arguing about this since Twilight Town ( the Paper Mario 2 town)! That Leopard guy is a part of the dog family!"

" Ziden! Leopards are a part of the Cat family!" Patchouli argued.

" No they aren't!"

" Yes they ar-" Patchouli breaks into a coughing fit. " Forget it! I'm going inside!" She stomped her way into the house.

Ziden felt something tugging on his arm as he turned to see Utsuho smiling at him. " Oh. You're that bird girl. Utsu-something."

" My name is Utsuho, Mister Pervert!" Utsuho said. " But if you can't remember that you can call me Okuu! That's what my friends call me! What's your name, Pantie Starer?" Utsuho had a smile on her face.

" Ziden Icrim." The smile from her face was replaced with one of terror.

" I-I-I-I've been a-a-a-a-a Youkai! So d-d-d-d-don't punish me!" Utsuho said as fell on her rear once again giving Ziden a nosebleed.

" I can tell you're a good kid, so get and get back to sanctuary, okay?" Ziden is tackled into a hug by Utsuho.

" Yay! I've been a good girl! I don't know why, but I feel so relieved around you Mister Ziden!" Utsuho reentered Sanctuary as Yukari and Komachi appeared on his shoulders. He doesn't notice this of course and entered the house. He sees a blonde haired man working at the computer, a brown haired girl in a pink dress,a brown haired man in black jacket with fur around the hood. Most notable was the wizard in blue that Patchouli was talking to.

Laughter and Merriment ( Kingdom Hearts II)

" What were you guys doing sleeping for a year?" Cid asked as Sora shrugged his shoulders.

" Wait a minute is that you, Squall?" Ziden asked as Leon walked over to them.

" Yes Ziden. But I don't go by Squall anymore. It's Leon now."

"I see." Ziden said as he noticed Leon's expression. " Something wrong, dude?"



" Two things are wrong. This is one of them." Leon points over to a girl with green hair wearing a red dress with a white cape wrapped around her as she noticed Ziden and ran over to him.

" Terra?! What are you doing here?!" Ziden said as he noticed she was crying.

" Ziden. My world was drowned in darkness by-by-by him." Terra said as she held her head down.

" Wait a minute! Ziden? You know Leon?" Sora asked.

" Yeah. It was during a series of battles me and Yukari got sucked into. I met him and Terra there. Please don't tell me that demented clown destroyed your world." Ziden said as she nodded.

" There was this man with him, though. He was wearing a purpleish cloak with a colorful design om the shoulders and his collar had sharp spikes in it. He said that' this is what happens to all help and support the accursed Lunarians!' before the world sank in darkness. I don't know what happened to my friends." Terra fell on her behind and pulled her knees to her face.

" So Patchouli? Why were you talking to that old guy? That's bound to make your 'boyfriend' jealous!" Marisa teased as Patchouli huffed at her.

" Hmph. I was just talking to a fellow Magician. I would have never thought that I would meet the legendary Merlin here! I got him to sign my Grimoire."

" Oh please, ze! I bet that guy couldn't compare to Mima!" Marisa said as Merlin walked over.

" Young one? Did you just say Mima?" Merlin asked as Marisa nodded. " My my. It's been awhile since I heard my young student's name!"

" What, ze!? My teacher Mima learned magic from you?!" Marisa said in shock as Merlin nodded. Marisa fainted from this as he walked over to Sora.

" Sora. Did you lose the magic I gave you on your last journey?" Sora nodded as he handed Sora a small sphere containing fire. " Remember Sora. Conserve your magic during this journey, it will save you in the end."

" Sora and friends. I need to show you something." Leon walked out of the house as Aerith ( the brown haired girl) walked over to Sora.

" Here you go, Sora. Leon thought you would like this." She hand Sora, Donald and Goofy. a card.

" Hollow Bastion Restoration Committee." Goofy said as he looked at the card.

" Ooooo. Fancy cards!" Aya said as she looked at the cards.

" Ziden. Please let me come with you." Terra pleaded as Ziden shook his head.

" You stay here and help with the Heartless problem. I'll take of clown boy and this caped freak as well!" Ziden said as the group walked after Leon.

" Ziden, please be careful. That man... He said he was one of twelve Rulers of Darkness and that you and your friends are on their hit-list." Upon hearing this Ziden ran his hand through his spiky hair. Ziden walks and leaves to catch up with the group. They find themselves in a corridor with a balcony over looking a cliff. They saw Leon standing next to it as they observed the corridor some more. There was an iron gate opened where they came in from and a pathway leading outside to some stairs going downwards.

**Reviving Hollow Bastion ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

" Sora. We have been trying to weed out this heartless problem, but it seems that there are some problems with that. Like that for one." Leon pointed down at the ravine as everyone looked down and was shocked. In the Ravine were at least a thousand Heartless. Reimu and Marisa decide to fly and check it out, shocking Leon before he regained his cool.

" Man! That is a lot of Heartless!" Remilia said as she whistled.

" Man, they look like lava dipped in Soy sauce!" Sora said as he looked at them.

" Not only that, but there is also that." Leon points to the black castle in the distance. " And that." He points some Dusks walking on the blue cliff below.

" Oh yeah. Those are Nobodies. They are formed when a person with a strong mind is turned in to a Heartless. But there are these guys called Organization 13 who rule the Nobodies and are attacking the worlds." Sora said as everyone felt a dark presence.

" You called?" A voice said as Ziden and Sora ran out to the stairs. They don't see anybody as several Dusks appear around them.

## **Desire for All That is Lost ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

The Dusks fly by Sora and Ziden only to sliced by Leon's Gunblade, Revolver. The Gate to the town suddenly closed.

" Guys! Don't let any of these Nobodies break through that gate!" Leon said as he assumed his battle stance.

Several Dusks charged at the gate as Mokou stood in front of it. " Phoenix Wave!" Mokou releases a wave of fire from her that knocked the Dusks into the ceiling.

Sora and Ziden ran back inside to help his friends as Creeper and Assassin Nobodies spawned in front of them. " Sonic Blade!" Sora

dashed through the Nobodies 5 times ending with a strong thrust that knocked them away.

" Narrow Spark!" Marisa shot out a beam that took the airborne Creepers for a wild ride!

" Toriya!" Ike slammed his sword down on a Creeper that was coming towards him.

" Blizzard!" Donald shot out a chunk of ice that slammed into an Assassin, slaying it.

Youmu noticed a new type of Nobody appearing among their ranks. They were humanoid and had a sword on each waist. " That thing. Is it a Samurai?" Youmu drew her sword and shot a sword wave at the Samurai Nobody.

He dodged the attack by bending his body back since Nobodies bodies are rubbery. " What the hell?" Reimu uttered as the Samurai grabbed his sword and disappeared in thin air. He reappeared in front of Youmu and swung his sword at Youmu's neck.

She barely blocked the attack as she leapt back and touched her neck. " *That was close. These Nobodies could be a big problem if I don't focus!*" Youmu swung her sword at the Samurai Nobody's neck as he blocked the attack. Youmu quickly swings at its legs as it lost balance. " Rising Falcon!" Youmu leaps into the air and dive bombed the Samurai with her swords. The Samurai exploded into Munny as three more Samurais appear.

One of them looks at Patchouli and teleports behind her and slashes her hard across the back as she screamed in pain.

" Patchy!" Remilia tries to reach her friend only to be tackled by a dusk.

The Samurai raised his sword for the slammed it down only to hear the clang of steel instead of the tearing of flesh as he looks and sees

Ziden blocking the blade with Crimson Edge. " Ziden. Thanks." Patchouli said as he helped her up with his free hand. A barrage of coins flew from Ziden's right shoulder slamming into the Samurai's face knocking him back few inches. "Huh?" Ziden looks at his shoulder and sees Komachi staring at him. " When did you get here?"

" I've been here since you and your girlfriend were arguing about that leopard thing in front of the house." Komachi said as Patchouli dusted herself off.

" Stay behind me, Patchouli. I'll keep them off you!" Ziden said as he ducked a sword swing.

" Ziden its-"

" The Exspheres prevent your magic from harming allies, so cut loose with the magic little lady!" Ziden slashed a Dusk in half as Patchouli started casting magic.

A Samurai was fighting Youmu with both of its swords drawn as she scrambled to dodge the assault. Youmu slashes the Samurai hard against the stomach. Youmu cross slashes the Samurai taking it out as she sees Marisa and Mario charging up an attack.

" Unison Attack: Master Tornado Spark!" Mario performs a spin attack with his Ultra Hammer as Marisa fired her Master Spark at Mario as it wrapped around him creating a tornado that sucked in the Nobodies and scattered Munny everywhere as Sora and Reimu collected it.

" Sora! Behind you!" Reimu warned as Sora turned around and locked eyes with a Samurai as they both struck a stance. Sora dashed through the Samurai as a bright light surrounded Sora as a small sphere that the ice element in it.

Everyone ran outside as they heard the voice from before. " The Keyblade. A marvelous weapon... were it in more capable hands."

They could here multiple voices laughing.

" Show yourselves." Sora demanded as 13 Corridors of Darkness appeared up on a building above them.

### **Organization XIII ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

13 people wearing black coats appeared out of the portals as they disappeared.

" That's Organization XIII!" Sora said as he swung his keyblade.

Remilia decides to step up and flies off the ground. " Which one of you is that pink haired freak that attacked me at the shrine!?" Marluxia removes his hood as Remilia dashes at him only to be kicked by another member hard against the stomach as she is sent flying into a wall.

"Sorry. But this is not the place we will fight." The leader said as the portal appeared behind them.

" Remi!" Patchouli runs over and catches Remilia as she slid down the wall.

Sora starts to run to stairs only for an Organization member to appear in front of him.

" Uh-uh Sora! Don't need you doing anything stupid!" The man said as Sora shot a glare at the man. " Funny! He used to give me that glare too! Do I have to remind you how tough the crowd you're dealing with truly is?"

" Huh? Remind me?" Sora asked as the man formed a corridor and ran through it.

" Damn! He got away!" Reimu said as she ran over to Sora. " We'll get those Organization freaks."

### **Laughter and Merriment ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Patchouli and Aya tugged on Ziden's sleeves as he turned to talk to them.

" Um? Is it just me or is Reimu being nice?" Patchouli said as all three of them thought for a minute.

" I got it! She's got a crush on Sora!" Aya said this loud enough for Marisa, Reimu and Sora to hear. " This is going to be a great scoop!"

Ziden and Patchouli look over to each other as they chuckled.

" Oh yes! I meant to ask Ziden? How old are you anyway?" Patchouli asked.

" Me? I'm 19!" Ziden said as he flexed his muscles.

" Really? Hmm. We've got quite the age difference. I'm over a hundred years old."

" Doesn't matter to me! Age is just a number... What's going on over there?" Ziden sees Sora's card floating into the sky surrounded by a red light.

Sora pointed his Keyblade diagonal to the ground as a white crown formed at his feet. Sora found himself in a realm of cloud as the card shot a light into the sky, summoning a Keyhole. Sora leapt back while swinging his keyblade as a bright light shot out from it and struck the keyhole causing a bright light to shine out.

" Woah! What was that light!?" Ziden and Mokou said in unison.

" That was the road to the next world opening up." Sora said as Leon walked up to them.

" Sora. It looks like you got a lot on your plate this time. Be careful out there kid." Leon said as Ziden summoned the magic circle to take them back to the ship.

They looked out of the windows on the ship and saw two new worlds had appeared. One looked like a castle with a rose underneath it, the other looked like a Chinese palace which Meiling looked excited about.

" Hey Ziden? Can we rest and wash up before we head to the next world?" Reimu asked as he nodded. Everyone began to wander around the ship and rest. Nitori runs up to Ziden to ask an important question.

" Doesn't time move faster in space? Won't that mess up things?" Ziden wraps his arm around her as she scoots away from him. " Eep! Please don't do that!"

" Hahhaahha! Ah that was funny! Anyways, no. Time, thanks to a petition I brought up at the Monthly God Summit, moves slower in space now."

" Oh I see. Hey Mister Ziden? Do you have a workshop here so I can work on making some weapons to help with our fights?"

" Yep. Follow me." Ziden leads Nitori through the Bedroom hallway and past the dining room as he opened a door ( totally forgot but the door to the bedrooms are wooden with knobs while all other doors are steel and open automatically) to the workshop.

The workshop had a lot of repair tools, tools for taking apart and putting things back together. There were several pieces of machinery that were there for scrap metal. Nitori was drooling at this sight. " Well hello Ziden." A woman's voice said.

The woman walked over to them with a watch-like device in her hand. She was wearing a white lab coat with a red dress that showed her curves and reached her knees. She had hip length orange hair and dull green eyes. " ah. You must be a friend of Ziden's. I am Ziden's head researcher and Librarian, Diana Goldhelm." Diana did a bow before Nitori. " Please clean up after yourself. Ziden. I made something I think you'll like." She hands him



the watch. " It's the Mecha-Mimicker 3000!" A bright light shines from the device." It allows you to mimic the techniques of Mechanical beings as well as their abilities. It also allows you to view your HP and MP while in Gates. Please note that putting it on will hurt your eyes but you'll manage."

" Mister Ziden! I have to get started on some new stuff I can make to my arsenal!" Nitori said as she lifted up some scrap metal and brought it over.

Ziden walks out of the room while putting on the watch as he feels a stinging sensation in his eyes. " Holy crap that stings!" Ziden said as he heard alarms going off in the ship. " Hmm? Did someone try to take books from the Library?" Ziden hears several explosions and Marisa screaming. " Well Reimu did say she stole books from Patchouli on a daily basis! Too bad I'm not Patchouli! Hohohohohoho!"

" And what is that supposed to mean, Ziden?"

Ziden turned to see Patchouli standing behind him holding several books. " Um? I meant security wise! Heheheheheh- I'm sorry! Don't hurt me!" Ziden ducks down with his hands over his head.

" Hehehehe! Don't worry. I knew what you meant. That's why I rented some books on Magic to improve my Library's defenses and my offensive and defensive spells." She said as she walked along side him down the hallway. " Ziden? Will we ever be able to use our spell cards again?"

" Yes. I added another function to those Exspheres before I gave them to you. As they grow stronger, they will slowly unseal your sealed cards."

" I see. But I've seen Remilia and Marisa use their spellcard attacks through the Exspheres. Will our unsealed spell Cards be more powerful than they were before?" Ziden nodded. " I see."

Ziden hears a pair of scuttling feet as a cat girl in a red dress and green beret was running at Ziden. "LITTLE BROTHER!" The Nekomata tackled Ziden to the ground and started to rub her head under Ziden's chin.

"Gahh! Chen?! What are you doing here?!" Ziden asked Chen continue to snuggle against him as Patchouli giggled.

" Chen. Please stop hurting your younger brother!" A woman said as walked over to them. The woman was wearing blue and light purple dress with some blue print on the front. She had short blonde hair, yellow eyes and a light pink two tailed that had many amulets on it and it hid her fox ears. Most notable was her nine fox tails.

" Let me guess, Ran. Yukari gapped you here, didn't she?" Ran giggled at this.

" We'll talk more about this later, Ziden. First I've got to give Chen a bath!" At the mere mention of the word 'bath', Chen took off like a racehorse at the Kentucky Derby. " Darn it! Chen, get back here!" Ran chased after Chen as Patchouli helped Ziden to his feet.

" Well now that was interresting, Zidey-Widey." Patchouli teased as Ziden tried to 'touch her' only for her to grab his hand. " Gotcha. No groping here today, sir." She said as Ziden went for her chest as she sidestepped him and Ziden ended up grabbing something soft and squishy.

( Please note his eyes are closed during this) " Hah! Told ya I'd get you Pat... chou..li?" Ziden opens his eyes and sees his hands on Mokou's chest. Her face was bright red. " Um? Nice chest and I'm sorry?"

*A few seconds later...*

Ziden had a large, burnt imprint of Mokou's hand on his face. Patchouli was laughing like crazy as they walked to the T.V. Room. " Jeez. It's not that funny." Ziden said as Patchouli started coughing.

They see that Reimu, Marisa and Sora were on the couch watching the T.V. as they talked amongst themselves. He sees Kaguya playing Galaga on one of the Arcade Machines. He sees Meiling Lifting dumbbells while sitting on the couch looking at the television. Kanako was glaring at Ziden while Suwako was waving happily at him.

" Woah! Ziden? What happened to your face?" Sora asked as Patchpouli giggled.

" Ziden grabbed Mokou's chest!" Patchouli said as Kaguya stopped the game and walked over to Ziden.

" What?! How dare you cheat on your Future Wife!?" Kaguya slaps Ziden across the face as everyone in the room laughed.

" Gah! Screw this I'm going to take a nap!" Ziden said as he walked out.

" Aww! Is the little idiot of a hero getting flustered by his friends?" Kanako taunted as Ziden stopped and glared at her.

" Don't start with me, you old hag of a Goddess!" Ziden said as the room got silent.

" I'm sorry. I think I misheard you. Did you just call an old hag!?" Kanako said as she walked to him.

" Maybe you just need to get your checked, Old Hag!" Ziden said as Kanako grabbed Ziden by the collar of his shirt.

" Call that again you little twerp! I dare you!"

" Old Hag! Old Hag! Old Hag!"

This argument continues for a few minutes until Ziden heads to his room for nap as everyone else rested, ate the food made by his servants, and took nice soapy baths.

Ziden wakes up and sees Meiling drooling on his chest. Ziden rolls his eyes as he turns and sees Yuyuko's head coming through the pillow next to him. " Boo!"

" Bwaaaaaaahhhhhh!" Ziden falls off the bed taking Meiling with him.

" Come on, Ziden! The next world awaits us!" Yuyuko said as she picked up Ziden and the still sleeping Meiling and brought them to the control room so they could pick a world.

" Wow, ze! I thought Yukari could sleep!" Marisa said as she pointed at Ziden.

" \*yawn\* How long was I out." Ziden asked.

" About 34 hours." Sakuya said as she closed her pocketwatch.

" Wow. And I was aiming for at least 30 hours at best." Ziden reached behind him and pulled out a cup of straws. " All right. Everyone except Reimu, Marisa and the Mario Bros. pick a straw. The ones that change color when you take them out of the cup, will come with us to Popstar!" Everyone took a straw as the team coming with Ziden are.

Sanae, Aya, Kaguya, Reisen, Yukari, Yuyuko, Youmu, Patchouli and Bowser.

" So what the rest of are going to wait in Sanctuary?" Alice asked as Ziden nodded. " Very well."

" *I wanted to go with Master Ziden.*" Sakuya kicked the ground.

" Don't worry Sakuya! You get to bully Steve like you used to, so cheer up!" Ziden said as a wicked smile broke out on her face.

Ziden summoned the Teleporter as the group found themselves in a sunny field with bright and cheerful music playing around them.

## **Green Greens ( Kirby's Dream Land)**

Kaguya seems to remember this song as several creatures with no mouth and they had orange clothing around their bodies. " Wait a minute! Those are Waddle Dees! Then that means!" Kaguya sees the Waddle Dees carrying large amounts of food to an unknown location. " Come on, guys! Lets follow them!" Kaguya races after the Waddle Dees as Yuyuko chases after the food.

The food was being brought to 2 tables and placed on them as two people walked and sat down at the table. One was a pink puffball that had blue eyes, red feet and short pink arms. The other was a large penguin wearing a royal red robe, a round red cap with a yellow poofball on the top of it and a golden rim around it. The penguin noticed the pink haired ghost staring at the food in front of him.

" Hey! Get away from my food!" The penguin said as Yuyuko continued to drool.

" Can I have some?" Yuyuko asked as her eyes sparkled.

" No way! This food is for me and Kirby's Eating contest: The Gourmet Race!" The penguin said.

" Can I join in?" Yuyuko asked as her stomach grumbled. Ziden and friends ( Bowser is still walking to get there for a very specific reason) caught up to her. " Nephew! Make this fat penguin let me join this Gourmet Race!"

" King Dedede. Please let this poor beggar woman compete in this eating contest. Besides it's not like she'll win anyway!" Ziden said as Dedede laughed.

" You're right, Ziden! All right, girlie! Waddle Dees! Bring another table and alot of food!" Dedede said.

" Wait a minute. Ziden, you think that I, the great ghost princess Yuyuko Saigyouji, can't beat an oversized penguin and a puffball in an eating contest? I feel greatly disappointed in you. How about this? If I win this contest you have to let me hug you with no resistance at all, you must always call me Auntie Yuyuko and you have to make me food whenever i want from now on!"

" And if you lose, you don't get any of that stuff!" Ziden said as Yuyuko nodded.

Kaguya sees Kirby and begins to hyperventilate and passed out. Yuyuko takes her seat. A Waddle gives the signal to start.

" Go!"

### **Gourmet Race ( Kirby Super Star Ultra)**

Dedede starts to shovel food into his mouth as he looked over to Kirby and Yuyuko as they were inhaling their food down. Dedede ended choking on a cupcake and lost as Kirby and Yuyuko countinued their battle. Yuyuko chomped through a chocolate cake as Kirby ate 5 apples in one bite. The food race was going neck and neck until Kirby surprised everyone by sucking in the entire pile of food.

" Well that's not surprising! Looks like I win, Yuyuko!" Ziden taunted as she finished her meal.

" Hmm. Just because he won the contest doesn't mean he won this war!" Yuyuko fired a ball of energy that slammed into Kirby knocking him away from the table.

" What the-!? Man! Yuyuko wants to win badly!" Ziden said as the battle of gluttons began!

### **Boss Battle theme ( Kirby 64 The Crystal Shards)**

Kirby is rolling from the attack as Yuyuko started to fire butterflies at him. Kirby gets up and runs around to dodge the attack as Ziden decides to interfere.

" Kirby! Stop running and inhale this!" Ziden throws a buzz saw at Kirby. Kirby runs in place before inhaling the buzz saw like a vacuum nearly sucking in Yuyuko.

Kirby leaps into the air as a yellow cap with eyes and wings on the lands on his head. A white blade flies around Kirby before it slams into his hat finishing the transformation.

Everyone except Ziden and the now conscious Kaguya is surprised by the transformation. " Say hello to Cutter Kirby, Yuyuko!"

" Thats Autie Yuyuko to you, Ziden!" Yuyuko said as Ziden got the reference.

Kirby throws multiple boomerangs blades at Yuyuko, cutting her sides as she staggers from the attack. Youmu sees her master hurt and decides to jump in only to be stopped by Ziden. " Don't Youme. You'll only get yourself hurt."

" I don't care! I must protect my mistress!" Youmu runs forward as a veil of blue cloth knocked her away.

A new person had entered the field! The man was Kirby's size and was wearing a white mask with a V shaped hole for his yellow eyes. He had white gloves on with a blue cape wrapped around him and had a golden hilted sword on his side. " This is a one-on-one duel, girl. If you wish to interfere, you must get through me! Meta-Knight!"

Youmu gets up and feels Ziden patting her on the back. She dashed at Meta-Knight as he countered with a move of his own.

" Mach Tornado!" Meta Knight spins like a tornado and sucks in Youmu sending her skyward as she fell to the ground unconscious. " Thank you, Ziden."

" No prob!" Turns out when Ziden patted Youmu on the back, he was using the Armor Break technique to lower Youmu defenses to minimum.

" Ghostly Butterfly!" Yuyuko summons several ghosts that transforms into butterflies and flew at Kirby only to be sliced away by the boomerangs.

Kirby runs at Yuyuko with a blade in his hand. " Final Cutter!" Kirby does an upward slash with the blade taking Yuyuko skyward and then slamming downwards with the blade as they landed releasing a shock wave that dragged Yuyuko along with it.

Yuyuko fires a ball of ghostly energy that knocks Kirby back into his regular form. " Hmm. This is quite fun! Show what else you can do, Kirby!"

" Kirby! Inhale this! Burning Slicer!" Ziden shoots a blade of fire from his leg as Kirby inhaled the attack.

Kirby leapt into the air and a band of light forms a red headband with a yellow star on it slips onto his head before slipping off as he grabs it and placed it on his head. He performs several punches before he lands on the ground.

"\* gasps\* That's Fighter Kirby! I can't believe I'm seeing this with my eyes!" Kaguya said as Ziden summoned chairs for them to sit down.

" Yeah. You'll probably see more characters from games I know you've played." Ziden said as he relaxed in the chair.

Yuyuko fires more butterflies at Kirby. " Vulcan Jab!" Kirby fires multiples balls of energy at the butterflies causing a pretty explosion to occur. " Smash Jab!" Kirby fires a powerful ball of energy at Yuyuko's stomach causing to fall to her knees.

" My my! You're certainly tougher than you look, Kirby! But lets see you handle me now!" Yuyuko flies into the air as Kirby looked up with



surprise.

" Poyo! Poyo!" Kirby said as he jumped up and down.

" Lights of the Undead!" Yuyuko shot out five lasers that Kirby struggled to dodge the attack.

" Kirby get up there and teach that ghost a lesson!" Kaguya and Ziden yelled in unison.

" I never would have expected a puffball to be so tough!" Reimu said as she looked on in awe.

" Well Kirby is one the strongest people I know. He could probably take me and Yuyuko on at the same time!" Yukari said as she fanned her face.

" Those transformations of his sure are impressive." Patchouli said while adjusting her glasses.

Kirby was shooting several balls of energy at Yuyuko was grazing them with ease as Kirby floated up to her. " Spin Kick!" Kirby shot a blade of energy at Yuyuko that exploded against her and slammed her back to earth.

Yuyuko was losing strength fast as Kirby looked like he could keep going with that goofy look on his face.

Kirby runs at Yuyuko and prepares his strongest technique. " Rising Break!" Kirby does a rising uppercut with blue energy as the blue energy hit Yuyuko in the jaw and sent her skyward.

" Yes! I won the bet!" Ziden said as he fist pumped. He saw Yuyuko plummeting towards him. " Oh God no!" Yuyuko crashed into Ziden knocking him out.

" Oh no. I lost against Kirby. Hmm?" Yuyuko looked down and sees Ziden unconscious beneath him. " Yay! I won the bet!"

Youmu was now conscious. " What? But you didn't beat Kirby."

" Not that bet, my silly little Youmu! The bet I had with Yukari! She said I couldn't knock out Ziden. I made the same winning conditions as this one."

" What?!" Ziden said in complete surprise.

Green Greens ( Kirby Dream Land)

Dedede is now awake and sees Kirby holding a solid gold trophy for his victory. He also sees Bowser catching up to the group.

" Humph. It's about time you got here, Bowser!" Kaguya said as she covered her mouth with her sleeve.

" Gah! Whatever!" Bowser notices Dedede walking over to him. " You!"

" You've got some nerve showing your face in my kingdom, turtle boy!" Dedede said as Bowser cracked his knuckles.

" If you want to throw down, then lets go tubby!" Bowser said as he cracked his neck.

" Fine! Come to my castle and get ready to get put down (euthanized) turtle!" Dedede said as he summoned his Waddle Dees, who were carrying his throne, as he leapt on to it and was carried away to his castle in the distance.

" Mama Mia." Mario said as he shook his head.

" I wonder what Tiff and Tuff have been up to since our last visit, huh Ziden?... Ziden?" Yukari looks over at Ziden who was being smothered by Yuyuko as Reisen and Kaguya struggled to get him out.

" Man! Can this day get any worse?!" Ziden asked as an unknown voice answered.

" Indeed it can, Ziden Icrim." A female voice said as everyone heard a viola start playing.

Author's Notes: Well school sure is annoying. It's the main reason why it takes a week to pump out these bad boys. Time for some bios also I'm adding Heartless to these bios as well! R&R friends! R&R!

Bowser

First Appearance: Super Mario Bros

Fighting Style: Slow, but extremely Powerful.

Info: This hulking monster of a turtle has terrorized the Mushroom Kingdom for years. He mainly kidnaps Princess Peach on a daily basis only to be stopped by Mario and Luigi. His latest achievement is destroying the Dark Star with the aid of Mario and Luigi.

Heartless Bios:

Shadow

Danger Level: Low

These Heartless are low on the chart of danger due to the fact of how weak they are. They can melt into the floor and are invincible while doing so.

Soldier

Danger Level: Low

These heartless are a pain to fight due to their fast kicks and movements. Can be easily dispatched with the Cyclone Reaction Command.

Red Nocturne

Danger Level: Medium

These Magic users fire off fire balls that can Ignite the Illusionary Heroes causing them periodic damage over time. They absorb fire magic while Ice and Water magic one-shots them.

Large Body

Danger Level: Medium

These Large being are known for being able to launch Sora around while being immune to frontal assaults. Their weakness lies in their backs and head. Magic, however, can hit them anywhere. Watch out when they are weak/angry, they move much faster and turn quicker.

# Clash of the Kings!

The woman was playing the viola while on a branch in a tree. She was wearing a suit jacket that was black, a white dress shirt with a navy tie and a black skirt that reached her knees. She had hip length pink hair and dark blue eyes. She had teardrop tattoos under each of her eyes. She had an ample chest as well as a white tiara on her head. Her viola was black and perched on her shoulder.

" It has been awhile, hasn't it Ziden Icrim?" The woman said with sadness in her voice.

" You're that Musician girl!" Ziden said as he drew his sword.

" You don't even remember my name. How sad." She said as she continued to play the viola.

" Ziden? Who is this woman?" Kaguya asked.

" Don't remember her name, but I know she's a member of the Ultima Brigade!" Ziden said as everyone drew their weapons.

" That woman. I hope this will be easy like killing that Raijinmaru guy!" Reimu said as lightning began to strike the ground.

" You called!? Gahahhahahaha!" A lightning bolt struck in front of Ziden as Raijinmaru appeared before him.

" What the-?! How are you alive, you lightning freak?!" Marisa asked as Raijinmaru began to laugh.

" Lord Ultima that's how! He sees my great power and will revive me when I die. And this time I will kill you, Ziden Icrim!" Raijinmaru declared as Ziden stared blankly at him.

"... Who the hell are you?" Ziden asked.

" Ziden. That was the guy you fell on while you were fighting Rankyogan." Yukari said as she fanned herself from the hot air.

" You were always pathetic, Raijinmaru. Nothing like that older brother of yours. You even copied his moves and made them terrible." The woman said.

" How dare you!" Raijinmaru said as he stomped his foot.

" Yukari. Can I kill this guy?" Ziden asked as she nodded.

" Hah! You'll never defeat me you overly pompous buff-" Were the last words Raijinmaru spoke as Ziden sliced him down the middle.

" And so the fool falls." The woman stops playing and leaps down the ground. " Know that you will not get such an easy victory from me, Melody Requiem! The Sorrowful Queen!"

### **The 13th Struggle ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Melody snaps her fingers as a new form of Heartless appeared around her. They had round, black bodies with a yellow vehicle horn where their mouth was and blue headphones with a black music note on its head. Their Heartless emblem was on their chest.

" Oh no! She summoned some new Heartless!" Sora said as he summoned his Keyblade.

" Wait you don't know what these guys are?" Reimu asked.

" Nope!" Donald answered as he pulled out his staff.

" Well I think we should call them something." Yuyuko added.

" How about Crescendo?" Reisen added as everyone looked at her. " Well they look like they could be called that." She kicks the ground at her feet.

" I don't know why, but I get the feeling that these things are going to be annoying." Aya said as she readied her fan.

" It is time to play, young ones. Elegy of the Damned!"Melody plays a song on her viola causing a blood red music with various music notes flying at the group. Everyone dodged at the assault Kaguya launched an assault of colorful bullets at Melody, knocking her back.

" Got ya!" Kaguya declared as the Crescendos began to toot a song as a green and sparkling light surrounded Melody healing her.

" Oh great those things can heal!" Marisa shouted.

" I think we should leave Melody to Ziden and Kaguya while we deal with the Heartless." Yukari stated.

" No way! I'm fighting that pompous girl, as well!" Reimu and Marisa declared as Kirby ran up and joined the fight.

" Fine by me!" Ziden said as he cut a music note in half.

"Persuasion Needles!" Reimu shot out several pink needles at Melody who dodged them with ease.

" Is that all you got!?" Melody taunted as Reimu pointed to the sky. Melody looks up and sees Kaguya above her winding up a kick.

CRAAAAAACCCCCCKKKKKK!

Kaguya's kick landed hard against her face, effectively breaking her nose as blood sprayed out.

" Why you! Symphony of Despair!" Melody summons a ring of purple music notes that spreads outward to the attackers.

"Whoa! This girl has a lot more fight than Raijinmaru thats for sure, ze!" Marisa said as she started chant a spell.

" You are mistaken to think I could be easily defeated like the weakest of our group, Raijinmaru!" Her attack became fiercer as the music notes began to split apart and multiply.

" Man! This is like a Danmaku battle!" Reimu said as she struggled to graze the attack.

" Time to go! Sonic Boomerang!" Ziden throws Crimson Edge at Melody as she jumped over it with a smug look on her face. " The attack isn't called Sonic Boomerang for nothing." She quickly moves her head to the right as Crimson Edge sliced her on the cheek.

" Once again, you harm the beauty that is my face." Tears begin to form on her face as she began a new attack. " Let us see if you can handle this, Kingdom Wrecker! Serenade of Chaotic Water!" A mysterious tune played as blue music notes appeared in the sky. They slammed in ground creating a large tidal wave that slammed Ziden into the ground as he let out a loud scream of pain.

" GRRRRRRRRRRRAAAAAAAAAAAHHHHh!" Ziden screamed as his body steamed.

" Holy crap, ze! What the hell is happening to Ziden?!" Marisa asked.

" Ziden, due to having a Phoenix of Fire bonding with him, has obtained the weaknesses and strengths of the elemental Fire." Yukari said.

" How does it feel to be hit with your weakness, Ziden Icrim?" Melody said as the water retreated back to her and formed a ring of water around her.

Ziden got back to his feet as his wounds began to close. Ziden was panting hard from the attack.

*" I see. It makes sense from what I saw during his fight with Mokou. So I just need to keep the water attacks away from him."* Kaguya thought.



" You don't get to rest, boy! Hydra's Serenade!" The ring of water transformed into seven serpentine creatures that stared down the group of five.

" Poyo!" Kirby began to run in place and began to inhale the Hydras as the water entered his mouth.

Kirby jumped into the air and began to spin around creating a water tornado as he suddenly stopped and now had a golden crown with a central cresting wave in the middle of it. A water tornado was now on his head as he landed.

" Another transformation? The reports were right about that puffball. He is going to be a threat." Melody reforms the Hydras as Kirby got ready to fight.

" Poyo!" Kirby sprayed a large stream of water that blasted the Hydras apart as Ziden ran on the stream of water with his fist winded back.

Ziden wrapped his fist in fire as he jumped off of the stream of water. " Holy Sun Knuckle!" Ziden slammed his fist through water serpents, evaporating them as his fist slammed into Melody's face sending her flying into a tree causing her to cough up blood.

Melody got back up as she began to play another familiar tune. " Bolero of Eternal Fire!" Red Music notes appeared in tower formation while firing of fire balls causing the aerial fighters to strafe and dodge.

Ziden runs to the towering flames as he slammed his palm into it absorbing the flames as Melody mentally slapped herself. " What was I thinking using fire against you. Nocturne of Depressed Shadows!" She summoned purple music notes and slammed into the ground creating shadowy hands that surround her.

" Ugh! This is like when we fought the Shadow Queen!" Reimu said as she threw several amulets at Melody.

The hands grabbed and smashed the amulets like they were paper. "Get that Hero and Puffball!" The hands formed fists that flew at Ziden and Kirby at an amazing speed slamming into their bodies causing them to fall and lost their ability.

"Hey! Hands off him, you vile emo!" Kaguya declared as she dashed at Melody only to be grabbed by the hands.

"Let me hear your cries of despair, immortal woman." The hands wrap around her body and compress as the sounds of bones being broken were heard the moon princess began to scream/gurgle.

"Lady Kaguya!" Reisen yelled as she formed a gun with her hand and fired bullet like Danmaku that blasted the hands away from her master.

"R-R-R-Reisen. Y-y-y-your eyes." Kaguya said as Reisen completely understood what she meant.

"Oh. What is the little moon rabbit going to do to me?" Melody asked as she stared in Reisen's red eyes as she closed them and reopened them as Melody felt an explosion of force rip through her mind. "KYYYYYYYYYYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAHHHH HHHHHHh!" She stopped playing the song as the hands disappeared and Marisa finished charging her spell.

"Fallen Star Storm!" Marisa summoned a large yellow star that flew towards Melody and flew around her while shooting smaller stars that slammed into her body.

Ziden looks at the device on his right arm. "If my mimicking technique worked on something I saw on T.V. I wonder this device can do the same." Ziden placed his left hand on his right arm and aimed it at Melody as Marisa's spell ended. "I hope this works! Mimicked Skill: Rocket Punch!" Ziden's right hand became black and metallic as it flew off his arm as it flew to Melody as she struggled to dodge.

KABBBBBBBBLLLLAAAAAMMMMMMM!

The Rocket Punch slammed into Melody's gut as she is propelled into the screaming as Kaguya and Sanae watched in awe as Melody became enveloped in a explosion as she fell to the ground badly beaten and bruised as Ziden fist flew back to him and reattached to his arm and turned flesh as he looked at it in awe.

" Holy crap! That was awesome!" Ziden said as he fist pumped to the heavens. The group of five ran over and surrounded Melody who was now crying.

### **Missing You ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Melody's eyes were red and caked with tears. " Why Ziden? Why must you destroy everything dear to me?" The girls looked over to Ziden who had no emotion on his face.

" Because you are a worthless fool of a queen. Atlantis fell because of your own weakness." Ziden said coldly as he drew Crimson Edge.

" ATLANTIS FELL BECAUSE YOU ATTACKED US, YOU BLOOD-THIRSTY BASTARD!" Melody screamed as tear turned into streams of salty water.

" Humph. Does it look like I care? I was given a job and I did it. Being so advanced you could have prepared your defenses during the timeframe I gave you, but no! Being the spoiled Princess that were, you thought I was joking!" Ziden grabbed her by her collar as she screamed and tried break free. " But I must know; How did it feel when you saw me kill your parents before your very eyes?" Upon uttering these words everyone minus the Smashers and Sanae were shocked.

" I. HATE. YOOOOOOOUUUUUUU!" Melody screamed as Ziden raised his sword.

" Looks like you're all tuned out!" Ziden brought his sword down as he saw that Melody was gone. Ziden stands up as Yukari and Yuyuko approached him.

" Ziden. Is there something you wish to share with me?" Yukari asked as Ziden looked at her with emotionless eyes.

"... No." Ziden said as he sheathed his sword. Patchouli looked as though she wanted to say something.

" Hmmm. Does this pertain to that little secret that you and Ran discussed?" Yukari asked as Ziden said nothing.

Patchouli and Sanae approached Ziden. " Mister Ziden? You have to tell her your secret past eventually." Sanae said as Yukari tapped her foot.

Ziden sighed and decided to tell the group what happened during the 4 years he was gone. After the story Yukari had a shadow that covered her eyes as everyone took a minute to soak in the story of Ziden's gory past.

Yukari walked up to Ziden and slapped him hard across the face causing him to fall back. " Get up." Yukari said simply her hands were now fists. Ziden stands only to be punched back down by Yukari who continues to punch Ziden.

" I see. So this is why Ziden is able to kill with no problems." Aya said as she rubbed her chin.

" Kinda scary if you think about it, ze!" Marisa said as she ran a finger through her long blonde hair.

" To think it was the Yama who caused Ziden to be a hero." Patchouli said while dusting off her night gown.

" Yeah I remember him talking about his past in a anime I watched." Sanae said.

" Same here!" Kaguya added.

" Even after learning this, I still can trust the guy." Reimu said as Sora walked over to her.

" Same here!" Sora said while doing his signature pose.

" I do as well." Youmu added.

" I trust him because he's my lovable nephew!" Yuyuko playfully added.

*Spoiler Alert! The mood is about to get killed in 3. 2. 1.*

### **Bowser Theme ( Mario & Luigi: Bowser's Inside Story)**

" GWAAAAAAAARRRRRRRRRR!" Bowser let out a loud roar that startled everyone. " Enough with all the mushy crap!" Bowser stomped over to the badly Ziden and breathed fire on him turning him black like a cartoon. " If you guys are done being all lovey-dovey, then hurry so you guys can see a fat penguin get roasted!" Bowser stomped off to Kind Dedede's castle as Yukari stood over Ziden.

She walks away angry as Kaguya helped Ziden to his feet as he shook the soot off of him. " Thanks Kaguya." Ziden said as he started after Bowser. Everyone followed as they began to converse with each other.

*Ziden was talking to Sanae, Kaguya and Patchouli. Sora was talking Reimu and was talking to Youmu and Yukari while holding Kirby in her arms. Donald and Goofy talking to the Mario Bros. Reisen and Aya were a little chat while they were walking .*

### **Green Greens ( Kirby Super Star Ultra)**

Ziden had an annoyed look on his face as well as bruises from Yukari. Kaguya and Patchouli had his arms in vice grips as Sanae bombarded him with questions. " So Ziden. Do you think you'll ever use Final Ronin on this journey?" Sanae asked.

" Probably not unless we are fighting an army of giant robots." Ziden said.

" Also. That attack you did earlier; was that-" Kaguya asked as Ziden interrupted her.

" Yes. That was the Rocket Punch from the Mazinger Z series." Ziden said as Sanae and Kaguya averted in surprise.

" \* Sigh\* They are like kids drawn to candy." Patchouli said as she continued to read the Spell book she got from the library. " These are some interesting spells \*cough cough\*" Ziden pats her back the best he could. She took out her inhaler and took the medicine.

" So you've been around for a hundred years right? Does that mean you've been sickly and asthmatic for that long as well?" Ziden asked.

" Yes. My weak body is due the ingredients I use for magic research and the fact that I rarely leave the Library." Patchouli said as she flipped a page in the book.

" So you're a recluse essentially?" Ziden asked as she nodded. Ziden looked at her up and down. " *Not bad for a recluse!*" Ziden chuckles as Patchouli elbowed him in the gut.

" Hey! Stop hurting my future husband!" Kaguya said as Patchouli and Ziden laughed.

Over to Yuyuko's group...

" Poyo! Poyo! Poyo!" Kirby sang as he moved left and right in Yuyuko's arms.

" My my! He really does remind me of a Yukkari!" Yuyuko said as she started to drool. She lifted Kirby to her mouth and nibbled on his arm. Kirby did not seem to mind as she quickly let him go.

Yukari noticed Youmu staring off into the woods. " You sense it too?" Yukari asked as Youmu began to draw her swords. " Wait. Lets hold

off on this until we get to Castle Dedede." Youmu took her hands off her swords.

To Reimu!...

" So Sora? What is this Kairi girl like?" Reimu asked.

" Well like Riku, she is my best friend! We've known each other since we were little!" Sora said as Reimu rubbed her chin in thought.

" *That is some competition I've got to contend with.*" Reimu thought as Marisa started up again.

" Come on! Give me a Keyblade! You know you want too!" Marisa said as Sora sighed and started to run ahead. " Hey! Don't you run, you spiky haired lout!"

Reimu started to laugh as she ran after them as well.

To Reisen and Aya!...

" So what? Ziden lost his memory? Is that why he didn't remember Keine or Eirin?" Reisen asked as Aya nodded.

" Yeah! Yukari said that she knew who did it and would make person pay with a, pardon my language, 'shit-ton' of blood! Of course a funny event happened from it! Here! Look at this!" Aya pulled out her photos ( from good knows where) and showed them to Reisen as she blushed from the photo.

" Is that Ziden and Yukari m-m-m-m-m"

" Making out? Yes!" Aya said as Ziden and Yukari sneezed at the time.

The next photo showed Ziden staring Yukari's eyes as he had a disgusted look on his face while Yukari had a wicked smile on her face. The next showed Ziden running out of the room with his face looking like he was about to barf as Yukari looked like she was

laughing. " Ziden got his memories of Yukari back after that kiss, which is why he reacted like that! Oddly enough, Yukari seemed to have been enjoying it! That's probably because she's so old that she was happy when Ziden came on to her!" Yukari happened to be standing behind her as she said those last words.

" And what was that about my age, Aya?" Yukari said as a murderous aura surrounded her.

" Uh. Gotta go! Bye!" Aya took off down the road as Yukari chased after her.\

*To the Mario Bros...*

" Do you guys know why Bowser and Dedede don't get along?" Donald asked.

" Well yes I do. During the third tournament- hold on. I think everyone should hear this." Mario shouted to get everyone's attention as everyone listened. " During the last tournament, Me and Kirby were having a match when everything went wrong. My rival Wario, knocked me out and kidnaped Peach and detonated a Subspace Bomb, sucking the arena into the Subspace. An evil force was trying to take over the worlds. Dedede was aware of it and took action. Bowser came and destroyed his castle. Later in the Subspace Bowser and Dedede fought with Dedede becoming victorious. I don't know why, but it feels like that evil force is back for some reason."

" Guys. I think I should let you guys know something. I don't think the Ultima Brigade and Organization 13 aren't the only threats we have to deal with." Ziden said as everyone looked at him.

" You're talking about those 12 Beings of Darkness that Dark Ziden was refering to, aren't you Ziden?" Yukari asked as she felt a chill run down her spine.



" W-w-w-what!? Dark Ziden's back!?" Yuyuko said with panic in her voice.

" Yes. Even though I didn't tell you guys, I was attacked by one of these Rulers of Darkness as they are calling themselves. It was at the Glitz Pit. Terra also told me that she met one, One who had a sharp hatred to Lunarians. We could encounter these guys during our journey, so be careful in case we get separated while on a world." Ziden said as everyone nodded. They continued down the path as were in front of Castle Dedede.

The Castle was quite large and had a dome top as the group saw several Waddle Dees approaching them. They noticed them motioning them to follow them. They enter the Castle Garden which had a very beautiful fountain. " This place could give the Scarlet Devil Mansion a run for its money." Reimu said as she looked around.

Youmu stopped walking and drew her swords. " I know you are there, stranger! Come out and show yourself!"

A man leapt out of the shadows and towered over the group. Ziden, Yuyuko and Yukari instantly recognized the man. He had a long black trenchcoat that was sliced vertically at the bottom. The man wore no shirt but wore brown pants with suspenders that formed an X on his muscular chest. He had a silver eyepatch over his right eye and had short, scraggy blue hair. His left eye was golden and his right arm was covered in thick bandages. " Not bad, gardener." The man spoke with a heavy Russian accent.

### **Villians of a Sort ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

" Baron von Drake!" Ziden, Yukari and Yuyuko screamed in unison.

" Hello Ghost Princess and Gap Demon!" Drake said as he began to laugh.

" You monster! How dare you take Ziden's Memories of us away from him!?" Yuyuko screamed as several ghosts formed around her.

" Humph! Like I care! I only did what the scientist told me to do!" Drake flipped open his trench coat as Melody fell out of it. " I saved her from you, boy. She is a useful member of the team." A corridor of darkness formed behind him as Ziden felt rage build inside. " But before I go; I'm going to let you in on a little secret. I'm the reason you snapped and went on a killing spree only to be killed by the women who raised you!" This pushed over the edge as Ziden dashed at him and threw a kick that was quickly blocked. " Temper. Temper, my boy!" Drake throws Ziden through the wall and raised his hand into the air. A few seconds passed as something crashed through the other wall. Drake slammed his fist down creating a dust cloud that blasted the girls away. The dust cleared and showed Drake's fist smashing Ziden's stomach. Drake gets up and picks up Melody who points a shaky finger at the group.

" All of you will feel my sorrow. I will drown all of you in it." Melody said as she is carried into the corridor and vanished.

Ziden gets up and immediately starts to cough up blood as Kaguya runs over to him and helps him to walk to the arena.

### **Green Greens ( Kirby Super Star)**

They reach the ring as Ziden is placed on an empty seat as Kaguya and Patchouli sit around him. Ziden noticed two kids coming up to him. One was a girl that had pale yellow skin and hair that was formed into a ponytail by ornate purple and orange clasps. Her one piece shirt was pink on top and green on the bottom that was separated by a zigzag. She had orange shoes and had large, green eyes.

The other was a boy with light orange skin as well as the top of his hair while the tips were green separated by a zigzag. The hair covered his eyes as well. He wore purple shorts with a single red suspender. He was wearing green shoes.

" Hey. Its Tiff and Tuff. Ow!" Ziden said as he grasped his healing stomach.

" Hey guys! Didn't expect to see you guys here. Everyone in the castle was told to come into this room and watch a turtle get smashed." Tiff pointed to the ring which Bowser was in doing push-ups.

" Heh heh. I got five bucks on Bowser winning this." Ziden said as Mario and Luigi nodded.

A snail-like man had a microphone in his hand. " Ladies and Gentlemen! Please give a loving hand to your much beloved King Dedede!" Everyone in the crowd booed as Dedede walked to the ring with his favorite mallet in hand. " And in the other corner is some giant, fat turtle!" Even though the crowd didn't know who it was they cheered for him only for the fact that he was about to fight Dedede.

" Gehehheheheheh! Good one Escargoon!" Dedede said as he waved his hand. " Lower the steel cage!" A large steel cage was lowered and surrounded the ring as Ziden began to cheer.

" Bowser! Knock some fat off of that penguin!" Ziden said as Bowser cracked his fingers.

### **King Dedede's Theme ( Kirby Super Star Ultra )**

Dedede charged at Bowser as he swung his hammer at Bowser's skull as he quickly side stepped the attack. " What the-?!"

" Bwahahhahahaha! Surprised that I'm so fast!? You haven't seen nothing yet, Dededork!" Bowser winded up his fist and slammed it into Dedede's face as he flew into the cage.

" Woah! Dedede got launched!" Tuff said as Dedede slid down the cage.

" Grrrrrr! I'm gonna clobber you!" Dedede spins like a top with his hammer as he dashed to Bowser and slammed his hammer into Bowser's guts causing him to fly backwards.

Bowser grabs the cage and propels off of it as he slams his fist into Dedede's skull. Bowser assumes a boxers stance and begins to sock Dedede's face repeatedly as Dedede fell back and down.

" Had enough, penguin!?" Bowser yelled.

" Never!" Dedede holds his hammer up high as the back of it opened up to reveal mechanical parts charging up energy. " Get ready to taste my hammer!" Dedede jumped at Bowser as he performed a golf stance. " Jet Hammer! Fore!" Dedede swings the into Bowser's jaw sending Bowser airborne. He noticed that Bowser was flipping into the air.

" Thanks for the boost, tubby! Body Slam!" Bowser entered his shell and slammed down on Dedede as he screamed in pain. Bowser begins to spin in his shell creating a whirlwind that knocked Dedede away.

" Grrr! You're worse than that there, Kirby!" Dedede screamed as Kirby looked confused.

" Whirling King's Fortress!" Bowser created a giant whirlwind that sucked in Dedede and combo him into the air.

" Man! Dedede is finally getting what he deserves." Tiff said as she cheered for Bowser.

" Wow. Bowser sure is winning against that fat penguin." Yukari said.

" Man! These worlds are cool!" Sora said as watched the fight with sparkles in his eyes.

" Yep, ze! Where else can you see a giant turtle and penguin king throwdown!?" Marisa said as the crowd cheered.

Ziden ended up rubbing his stomach the whole time. " Well, Bowser is one of the strongest Smash Participants along with Meta Knight and Ike."

" I just wish he wasn't so strong so my job would be easier." Mario said as he sighed.

Dedede fell down to the ground as the lights in the room disappeared. " I've had enough of you Bowser! It's time I revealed my secret weapon!" The lights came back on as Dedede was wearing a silver iron mask with golden spikes on the top of the mask. His hammer was now silver and looked to be made of iron. " Feel the wrath of my Dedede Hammer! V3!"

### **Masked Dedede ( Kirby Super Star Ultra)**

Ziden noticed the Waddle Dees placing black and red boxes next to the cage as they began attaching cords to the cage as everyone hears a buzzing sound.

" Wow. He electrified the cage." Ziden said as his stomach felt alot better.

" So what?" Marisa asked as Reimu slapped her on the back of the head.

" It means that if Dedede or Bowser touch the cage, they will get zapped!" Kaguya says as everyone looks at her. " What?"

" Never thought I'd hear something smart from you." Ziden said as Kaguya scoffed at him.

" Grrrrrr! Do you think getting a new hammer is going to help you against me?! Think again!" Bowser said as Dedede slammed his hammer into the ground causing Bowser to fall on his back.

" Oh look! The turtle is helpless!" Dedede runs over to Bowser and begins smashing him with the hammer as Bowser roars in pain. "

Take that! Take that! Take that! Take that!"

Bowser ends up grabbing the hammer with his hand and blasts Dedede with a fire ball catching him on fire as he rolled around the ring trying to put himself out.

" GeeeeeeehhhhhH! Someone get the fire blanket!" Dedede screamed.

" Here's your fire blanket!" Bowser flips himself and grabs the burning Dedede. " Flying Slam!" Bowser jumps into the air and slams into the ring crushing Dedede underneath him.

Dedede rolls away from him as his hammer opened up. " Dedede Missile!" Several fiery bullets flew blasting Bowser into the electric fence as an electric charge tore through his body.

Bowser fell down to the ground as Dedede walked up to him. " Time to pay, Bowser!" Dedede slammed the hammer down on Bowser's arm as a loud crack echoed through the arena.

" GAAAAAAAAAAAAHHHHHHHHHHH! MY ARM! YOU BASTARD!" Bowser gets up with his broken arm as a fiery aura surrounded him.

" Hmmm? I do believe Bowser has been affected by the 'Fury' status ailment." Ziden said as he rubbed his chin.

" I've heard of this 'Fury' condition." Patchouli said.

" Really? What is it?" Reimu asked as Patchouli cleared her throat.

" Fury happens when a person takes a large amount of pain and anger and suddenly releases it. It increases offensive capabilities while making the user immune to being stunned by attacks."

" In simpler terms; Dedede is about to get his ass kicked." Ziden said as everyone began to cheer for Bowser.

" GahhhHH! Dedede began to spin like a top as he charged at Bowser.

" Sliding Punch!" Bowser slams his fist into the side of Dedede as he flies back into the cage and bounces off of it as Bowser continuously knocks him into the cage as pinball SFX are heard. " Time to go to bed, Dedede!" Bowser winds up his fist and slams it into Dedede's face, shattering the mask as he smashes through the cage and the ceiling as Bowser calms down and does a victory roar.

### **Green Greens ( Kirby Super Star)**

" Bwahahhahahah! I knew I could beat that over sized penguin!" Bowser said as he melted the cage and walked over to the group.

" So Ziden? What are you guys doing here in Dreamland?" Tiff asked.

" Well really we are looking for gateways to other worlds. Plus we are also saving the worlds from the Heartless." Ziden said as he started to stand up.

" If you guys want, you can hang out in Cappy Town until you fight off these 'Heartless'." Tuff said as he waved for them to follow. They exited the castle as they saw a town in the distance.

" Hmmm? How come we didn't notice that town before?" Sora asked.

" Probably because we were talking about stuff?" Reimu answered.

All of a sudden the ground began to shake fiercely as everyone began to lose their balance.

"Ayayayay! What's going on!?" Aya screamed as Bowser charged forward.

Everyone noticed a giant robotic version of Dedede rising out from behind Castle Dedede. Mecha Dedede flies over to the group as it's

foot casted a shadow over Bowser. " Huh? Why'd it get dark all of a sudden?"

CRRRRRRUUUUUUUUUUUUSSSSSSSHHH HHh!

Bowser is smashed under the foot of Mecha Dedede as everyone is shocked except Ziden and the Mario Bros.

" Oh man! Bowser got crushed!" Aya said as she took a picture.

" Gehhhehehehehe! Not so tough are you, Bowser!?" The voice of Dedede came from the giant robot.

" Ziden~! I think we know what time it is!" Kaguya sang as Ziden shook his head. " Why not!?"

" Because Bowser isn't down for the count! Look!" Ziden pointed to Mecha Dedede's foot as it began to shake. Everyone sees Bowser lifting up his foot as he grew bigger in size. Bowser threw Dedede into the air as Bowser stopped growing. Bowser and Mecha Dedede stared at each other as they easily towered over the group ( they should be at least the size of a tower that is average sized if that helps).

### **Clash of the Titans ( Mario and Luigi: Bowser's Inside Story)**

" What the-?! How'd you get big!?" Dedede yelled as Bowser laughed.

" Don't worry about that! Just worry about my fists colliding with that little toy of yours!" Bowser said as he cracked his knuckles which hurt the girls ears especially Reisen's.

" NYAAAAAHHH! TOO LOUD! IT HURTS!" Reisen said as she covered her rabbit ears.

Ziden ran up Bowser's back as he dodged the spikes and landed on Bowser's head. " Hey Bowser! Don't forget you can't use your tournament moves while giant." Ziden yelled as Bowser roared.



" I know that! Hmm?" Bowser notices the cliff behind Mecha Dedede.  
" If I knock him off this cliff I can win this fight pretty easily!"

" Dedede Missiles!" Dedede fires off several missiles as Bowser shot puffs of fire to destroy them.

Bowser pulls back his fist and slams it into Mecha Dedede, damaging his torso armor as he slides backwards. " Curses! Time to start cheating! Waddle Dees! Get the other machines ready!" Several more Mecha Dedede appear surrounding Bowser.

" Hey! That's cheating you jerk!" Tuff screamed as Dedede laughed.

" Humph! That just means that I can get involved!" Ziden draws the Crimson Edge and throws it into the air and catches as a red light shines at the blades tip. Ziden slices a Z in the air as it flew into the air creating a large magic circle as Ziden raised his arm to the heavens. " It's time to rock this party! Come! Final Ronin!" Ziden snaps his fingers as a giant robot crashed down next to Bowser.

The robot's arms and legs were colored black with armor covering them. Its hands and feet were covered in red armor with the hands having claw like fingers. The chest was covered in black armor with a golden orb in the center of its chest. The shoulders had golden shoulder pads similar to Eiki's. The head had a samurai's helm with a golden Z coming off of it. The eyes were green and the face of the mech was silver as was the lips ( they move as he talks in the mech by the way) The mecha had a black cape that wrapped around the neck like a scarf. There was a normal looking katana hanging from its right hip. There was a large broadsword on its back that had a red hilt with a green diamond on the tip of it.

Ziden transformed into fire and entered the golden orb as Sanae and Kaguya followed him.

Ziden entered the head of the mecha and was in a room with green tiles and a raised platform that had many machines and screens. Ziden stepped onto the green floor as the screen showed the Mecha

Dedede. Ziden saw Kaguya and Sanae coming after him. " Great. The fangirl and crazy immortal girl are here."

" Woah. So this is what the cockpit for Final Ronin looks like, huh?" Sanae said as flies to the raised platform and assumes manual controls with Kaguya.

Ziden activates the Motion Link system and gets ready to face the other Mecha Dededes as Bowser takes on King Dedede. A green aura wraps around the battlefield as a barrier surrounds the town and forest. The group carries the non-fliers to the roof of Dedede's castle and watch the fight there safely.

" Bowser! You are going down!" Dedede said as Bowser laughs.

" Yeah right! I'm going to show you why I am called the King of Koopas!" Bowser runs Dedede and hits the head of the robot with strong uppercut knocking him skyward. Bowser breathes a giant stream of fire at the airborne Dedede burning it as the armor turned red hot.

" Gaaaaaahh! Turn on the air conditioning now!" Dedede said as Waddle Dees scrambled around to find the AC button.

Bowser grabbed Mecha Dedede and leaped into the air. " Atomic Bowser Bomb!" Bowser powerbombs the mecha as the ground exploded beneath them.

" Grrrrr! Lead this guy to the ocean! Lets show him who he's messing with." Mecha Dedede gets up and runs to the beach as Bowser gave chase.

" Looks like you get a workout, Final Ronin." Ziden points his right arm at a MP Dedede. Final Ronin's arm morphed into a minigun as it began to spin. " Lets go! Hellfire Vulcan!" Fiery bullets shredded the MP Dedede into pieces before violently exploding.

The MP Dededes began to fire missiles at Ronin as it raised its right arm over itself. " Dimensional Guard!" A blue snowflake like shield appeared and blocked the Missiles.

" All right, Ziden! Lets see some melee action!" Sanae yells as Ziden cracks his neck.

" Lets go!" Ronin dashes forward as he his fists glow with white lights surrounding them. " Dehyah!" Ronin hits a MP Dedede with three quick palm strikes as he followed up with a flurry of punches lifting MP into the air. Ronin does a flip kick to the MPD and hit him with a strong kick that sends him flying to the sky. "All right! Dynamic Kill!" Ronin focuses energy to its feet. Ronin jumps toward the flying MPD and straightens into a jump kick as it slammed into it and blasted it into the heaven as Ronin landed with its arms crossed as the MPD exploded darkening the area as Final Ronin's green eyes shone in the darkness.

The dynamic Animation ended as Ronin drew his katana and held it with his right hand. " Lets party!"

Bowser chased Dedede to the beach as they stopped on the sand as the waves crashed against the shore. " Now we really get to throw down here!" Bowser said as he stomped the ground.

" Dedede Kick!" Dedede jump kicks Bowser hard in the face sending him rolling along the beach.

Bowser rolls into a green spike ball and dashes at Dedede knocking into his legs and sends him skyward. Bowser does a jumping uppercut into the robot's jaw and dropkicks the robot away. Bowser beats his chest with his fists. Dedede charged at Bowser as they slammed their fists into each other as shockwaves caused the water to rise around them. Dedede jumps back and fires more missiles at Bowser.

" I've had enough of you!" Bowser raised his arms to the side as the missiles flew by him. Dedede charged him out of anger. " Maelstrom

Lariat!" Bower perform a pin attack with his arms creating viscious tornado of water that sucked in Mecha Dedede and pounded his metallic inti rubble as it sparked with electricity. The waterspout sucked Dedede into the sky as the machine exploded as Dedede flew into the sky and became a star.

Bowser did a victory roar and leapt back to the castle as red, green and blue balls of light came off his body. Bowser shrunk down back to his normal size.

### **Green Greens ( Kirby Super Star)**

Final Ronin sheathed its katana as the trio teleported to the ground as Final Ronin flew into the sky.

" Well that was fun! But you know. I got that feeling that something else is about to happen." Ziden said.

" I do too." Yukari said while nodding.

" Hmmm. Guys! Look up!" Reimu said as she pointed to the sky.

A star shaped portal appeared in the sky as a damaged blue ship crash landed near the vicinity of the castle.

Author's Note:Well in case you didn't know, some of the rulers of darkness are going to be the same characters from Game2002 and Specter's Smash Bros. fanfics just for the fact that they are my favorite villians, but that doesn't mean I didn't pick any new characters. In fact, I picked some you guys couldn't have figured out even with proper descriptions. Also I get all of my character descriptions from the various wikis on the interweb. Final Ronin is going to make more appearences in this and future fanfics. Bet you guys can figure out what Kirby storyline i picked for the Kirby world this time. Also expect some familiar summons from the Final Fantasy universe to appear in this arc. As well as a proper introduction to a crazy Ruler of Darkness who is my favorite Nintendo villian, so look forward to that! Here is some bios! Also I have started a poll for

which Vice Admiral will fight the Illusionary Heroes so head to my profile and make some votes.

Kirby

First Appearance: Kirby's Dream Land

Fighting Style: Uses quick moves and attacks but can be launched very easily. Can copy peoples abilities.

Information: Kirby is the protector of Dreamland as he has faced countless foes over the years. Armed with his Copy Abilities, Kirby is a force to be reckoned with. It should be noted that Kirby is an infant which is why he only speaks with the word 'Poyo'. His latest achievement is saving Dreamland from the Evil Yin Yarn.

Heartless Bios

Crescendo

Type: Emblem Heartless

Danger Level: Medium

Info: These music toting heartless can blast out powerful gusts of air that can Airtoss the Illusionary Heroes. they can also heal themselves and allies with their music so they are the first people you have to take out.

Also on a side note. Good news everyone! We Americans are finally getting Kingdom Hearts Final Mix in the HD remake of Kingdom Hearts for the PS3! That is exciting! Wish we could get the Final Mixes for KH 2 and KH BBS though.

## The Dreamy Adventure Begins!

*The Illusionary Heroes found themselves fighting against Melody Requiem, a member of the Ultima Brigade. A man known as Baron von Drake appeared before the group as he attacked Ziden and rescued Melody from death. After a very one-sided battle against King Dedede, a mysterious ship landed next to the castle. The group entered the ship and saw a man unconscious on the floor.*

Kirby runs up and touches the man as he stands up so that the girls and guys can see him. He is a short alien with no feet and detached hands with white gloves. He is clad in a regal blue suit, complete with a white cape with gold trimmings and a dash of purple, gold-trimmed cog designs, and wears a white scarf with a blue buckle interwoven. His face is black-to-brown with oval, glowing yellow eyes.

" Ugh. Huh? Who are you guys?" The alien asked as everyone told him. " I see. Well I am Magolor and this is my ship, the Lor Starcutter."

Reisen and Kaguya walk up to the large screen that showed the ship in a green color with 5 parts of the ship missing. " Hey it looks like your ship is missing some parts." Reisen pointed out as Magolor approached a computer panel and started to press buttons.

" Oh no! It seems that from that attack earlier knocked some of the parts of the Lor Starcutter!" Magolor said as he panicked. Kirby walked up to him and raised his arm to the air. " You're going to help, guys?"

" We got nothing better to do.!" Sora said.

" Thank you, guys! But I am going to need sometime to find and locate these items; the emblem, the right and left wings, the oars and the sail. Why don't you guys go take a walk or a nap.? Just come

back when you are done." Everyone exited the ship as they saw the sun setting.

" I think we should find some form of shelter so we can get some rest." Yukari said as Tiff walked up to them.

" I'd ask my parents to give you guys a place to stay, but after that stuff with Dedede I don't think that would be smart." Tiff said as Ziden started rummaging through his pockets.

" Ah hah! Found it!" Ziden pulled out a small house that fit in his palm as everyone looked at it. " This is where we are sleeping tonight!"

"... Are you going to shrink us down or something?" Marisa asked as she scratched her head.

" No way! I'm not getting shrunk down!" Marisa said as Ziden chuckled.

" I don't know why! It's not like if I mess up anything on you will get smaller!" Ziden laughed after he said this as Marisa's face turned red. " But no! We're not going to shrink, the hoouse is going to grow! So Tiff? Is there any wide open space where we can put this thing?"

" Well there is near Kirby's house!" Tiff said as Ziden looked to Kirby.

### **Green Greens ( Kirby's Epic Yarn)**

" Thanks Tiff. It's getting late. You kids go on home and get some sleep." Yukari said as she petted their heads.

" All right, Yukari! We'll see you guys tomorrow!" Tiff and Tuff ran back to the castle as Kirby led the group to his house.

Kirby's house was a simple dome shaped house with a Kirby sized door. It was white color with orange colored bricks at the top. Ziden walked to a open space near the house and threw the small house on the ground as it started to shake. It exploded with a white mist as

teh small house was now a large cottage that Ziden opened the wooden door as the group looked at the inside.

The inside was a simple wooden room with large, white beds all along the walls. The room also had a fireplace with a large screen television on it. everyone minus Ziden went to lay down on the beds. Ziden left the cottage Patchouli looked over to him.

" Hmm. Why isn't he going to sleep?" Patchouli asked as Yukari appeared next to her.

" Ziden doesn't really sleep all that much actually. He doesn't need too because of his enhanced stamina. He really only sleeps to pass time and to have dreams. Of course he doesn't like to dream with me around. I tend to enter his dreams alot. Especially that weird one he had in Rogueport before you ' raped' him."

" Tch! I'm going outside!" Patchouli stomps outside as Yukari giggled.

" Looks like I hit a nerve!" Yukari said as she settled into her bed.

Patchouli walked outside to see Ziden and Meiling sparring with each other. Ziden throws a kick at Meiling who ducks it and sweep kicks Ziden to the ground and then slams her foot into Ziden's gut.

" I win!" Meiling says as she jumps up and down.

" Tch! My guard was down!" Ziden said as Meiling helped him up.

" That's what you said the last 4 times." Meiling said as she noticed Patchouli walking towards them.

" Well. That was... sad." Patchouli said as Ziden walked over to her.

" Whatever! I'm going to watch some television until the sun comes up!" Ziden walks to the house only to be stopped by Meiling who had a ring in her hand.



" Totally forgot! Mokou asked me to give you this ring back and tell her if you remember why you gave her this ring." Meiling handed Ziden a silver ring with a blood red ruby on it.

" Um? Did I propose to her?" Ziden asked as Meiling shook her head. " Well I don't know. Can she give me a hint?"

" she said that you need to remember her on your own." Meiling said as she stretched. " She also says to keep the ring until you remember her and Keine." Meiling transforms into a ball of light and enters Sanctuary.

" Ziden why don't you just examine the ring and see if that sparks your memory." Patchouli said as they entered the cottage as Kaguya was standing by the window watching and hearing everything that occurred as she glared at Ziden before going to her bed. Ziden turns on the television while examining the ring.

" Ziden. Check the inside of the ring. Maybe you inscribed something on the inside of it." Patchouli said as she sat down next to Ziden on the floor and opened her book.

Ziden checked the inside of the ring and saw ' ZI & FnM SB/A BOR 2008'

"... This is a Blood Oath Ring. You only give these to people whom you see as a true friend and ally. Did me and Mokou really have that close a relationship?" Ziden said to himself as Patchouli flipped a page in the book as she scooted closer to Ziden to eavesdrop. " That would really explain why she tried to kill me back in Rogueport. Who would have thought meeting the Moon Princess and fighting for her would cause this much problems." Ziden scratched his head. "... I'll know our relationship when I remember it. The only problem is when will I remember."

Patchouli was sitting in Ziden's lap reading the book as he flipped to a channel and began to watch the television. " You know I don't have any plans on going to sleep, right?"

" I'm fine sleeping here."

" Whatever." Ziden said as he looked at the T.V. " Hmm? Isn't that the snail guy from the ring?"

Escargoon was sitting behind a desk giving a news report of the events that happened today. " Greetings denizens of Cappy Town. We have horrible news; Your beloved King has been horribly injured by an offworlder known as Bowser." A small screen appears next to Escargoon as it showed glimpses of the fight in the ring and the giant battle. " Bowser and his destructive accomplices are wanted criminals by orders of the King. The screen now showed King Dedede wrapped in a body cast with his arms and legs raised in the air. " Any Cappy that sees these accomplices are to call the Waddle Dee squadron and allow them to capture these criminals. This has been Escargoon with Dedede News Report, signing off."

Ziden looks over to Bowser who was fast asleep as Ziden sighed. " Only been on two worlds since he joined us and he is already causing trouble."

" Ah well. By the way the audience was acting during the fight, I don't think we have anything to worry about." Patchouli said.

Ziden looked over to Kaguya who was glaring over at the duo. Aya took a quick picture of the duo sitting together as Patchouli closed the book and closed her eyes. " Good night, Ziden."

" Good night, Patchouli." Ziden said as Patchouli gave Ziden a hug and fell asleep while hugging him.

*" One of those Rulers of Darkness is here on this world. I can sense it. I should keep my guard up."*

*At sunrise...*

The group woke up and saw that Kirby, Ziden, Patchouli and Kaguya were gone.

" Hey. Where did Kirby and the others go?" Sora asked as he jumped out of the bed.

" Maybe they went to the ship?" Reisen asked.

" What makes you say that?" Mario and Luigi said in unison as Reisen pointed to a large poster that said ' We went to the ship to see Magolor. Hurry up!'

" Well we can't keep them waiting now can we?" Yuyuko said as the girls got their gear together and began their walk to the Lor Starcutter.

### **Lor Starcutter ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

The group enters the ship as Magolor was talking to the four people that got a head start on the group. " I see. So one of the pieces is in the forest, huh?" Ziden said as he placed his hand on his hip.

" What? Did you guys locate the missing ship parts?" Reimu asked.

" Yep! We found the left wing and it's in the forest!" Kaguya said as she ran over to Reisen. " Reisen! Be good while I'm away!"

" Yeah. We are going to be heading to the woods while you guys do whatever it is you guys do in your free time." Ziden said as Kirby jumped on to his head.

" Hey! We wanna come too!" Reisen whined.

" Hey! You snooze, you lose! Bye!" Kaguya said as she ran out of the ship. Ziden tells them to wait for them in Cappy Town until they return with the left wing.

The group of four made their way to the forest as they stood outside of it. " Man. These woods look huge!" Ziden said.

" How are we going to find a ship piece in here?" Kaguya asked as Ziden pulled out the device Magolor gave him.

" The device Magolor gave us should lead us straight to the left wing." Patchouli said as walked to the forest entrance.

" Poyo! Poyo!" Kirby ran into the forest as the trio followed ready to fight.

### **Forest Area ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

When they enter the forest they noticed a strange device on their wrists that showed a greenish bar with a picture of their respective faces on them. " Hmm? Did we enter a gate?" Ziden asked as he drew his sword.

" Maybe? Well lets just keep pressing on!" Kaguya said as she ran forward with Kirby.

" Wait. I'm sickly, remember? I can't run around like you guys." Patchouli said as she floated off the ground.

" Don't worry. We'll move at a slower pace and keep an eye on you." Ziden said as Kirby ran back to her and walked along side her.

They soon realized that they were stuck on a 2D plane. They began their journey through the forest as they entered a black hole with yellow stars surrounding it.

When they came out of the door they several Waddle Dees with spears were waiting for them.

" Oooo! This is like a real Kirby game!" Kaguya said as she cracked her fingers.

" Yep. Lets mop the floor with these guys!" Ziden said as he swung Crimson Edge as the WDs backed away.

Patchouli finished casting a spell. " Thunder Blade!" A large blade of lightning slammed into the group of WDs killing some as Kaguya took aim at the rest of them.

" Impossible Potluck Surprise!" Kaguya closed her eyes and fired at the WDs with a barrage of beautiful Danmaku that killed off the rest of them leaving only a bunch of yellow and orange stars on the ground.

" What are those?" Ziden touched a star as it disappeared when he touched it. Ziden noticed on the HP Device that under the life bar was a number that under his mini portrait for his lives and a number next to a star that read '05'.

" I guess these stars are points of some sort." Patchouli analyzed as Kirby ran ahead. " Kirby. Wait up!" Patchouli floated after Kirby as Ziden and Kaguya ran to chase after them. the door this time was on a large tree. They entered the tree as the saw that the path was now going upwards with several wooden platforms. They also noticed several pieces of food along the upwards path.

" Well it looks like we can fly here. Need a lift, future husband?" Kaguya said as a tick mark formed on Ziden's temple.

" Stop calling me that!" Ziden said as Kaguya laughed.

" Not until you admit you love me~!" Kaguya said as Ziden sighed.

" Um guys? Not to interrupt your little chat, but Kirby is leaving us." Patchouli pointed out as Kirby was floating up the tree while avoiding the enemies.

Ziden jumps up to the platforms while taking out the enemies while Kaguya and Patchouli fly up the tree. Ziden ends up being tackled by a Waddle Dee as Patchouli slaps the creature into the wall with her book. They enter a star door as they found themselves on a grassy plain as they several large trees with glowing stars on them.

" Hmm?" They notice that they are still in the forest as Kirby walks forward a bit. A bright flash of blue light appears as a fireball with legs appeared, shining with a blue aura. " Isn't that a Fire Leo?"

" It is... not! But it looks... strange." Kaguya said as she tilted her head.

Kirby walked up to the Fire Leo and inhaled it as Kirby obtained a brand new transformation. Kirby was now wearing a golden headband with a glowing star on it with four red rubies arranged to look like flames. His head was on fire as the music changed.

### **Super Ability ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

" Ziden. What is this transformation?" Patchouli asked as Kirby began to walk towards a tree blocking their path.

Kirby's flames began to move crazily as a dragon made of fire came out of his head and burned through the tree as several stars flew out.

" Whoa. Talk about deforestation!" Ziden said as Kirby began to blast away the trees blocking their as they ran to collect the stars as Patchouli started to cough before regaining her breath as they noticed a larger than normal tree with stars on it.

Ziden sensed a distortion in space in the tree as Kirby shot a fire dragon at the tree. Purple lightning sparked in the air as a star shaped portal appeared.

" Um? What is that?" Kaguya asked as Kirby ran up to it. " Kirby! Wait! Don't!" Kirby jumped up and touched the portal as all three of them were sucked into it.

The group found themselves in a monochrome dimension while they were standing on wooden planks with several blocks blocking their path.

### **Looming Darkness ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland )**

" Looks like an obstacle course." Ziden observed as they noticed something. Patchouli and Kaguya couldn't fly or shoot their danmaku. Ziden couldn't draw his sword and Kirby lost his ability.

" Ziden! Behind us!" Kaguya said as a giant purple wall was coming towards them.

" Shit! Move!" Ziden screamed as he grabbed Patchouli's hand and began to run with Kaguya and Kirby trailing behind him.

They carefully jumped over the gaps on the pathway as they find themselves stopped by star blocks. " Kirby!"

Kirby demonstrated a new technique as he performed a super inhale, sucking up all the blocks before spitting them out as a giant, yellow star that cleared a path for them. They continued to run from the purple wall of death as Ziden heard wheezing coming from Patchouli.

" Zi... den. Please... slow... down." She struggled to say between breathes. Ziden noticed this and stopped. He crouched down and motioned for her to get on his back. Patchouli grabbed onto Ziden's back as he began to run again. " I'm... sorry."

" Don't worry about it. We're friends here. Remember that." Ziden said as he climbed a ladder and saw a star door. They enter the door and saw that purple wall was no longer chasing them.

" Hey Ziden. What are those things?" Patchouli pointed to 2 golden pedestals. One had a star with a symbol of fire on it. The other one had a beam of some sort on it.

" Those are Copy Essences for Kirby. By touching them, Kirby can transform by touching them. They won't do anything for us." Ziden said as Kirby looked at the two copy essences. Kirby jumped and touched the beam essence as Kirby now sported a jester cap that was blue with white stars on one side and completely red on the other.

" Beam Kirby,huh?" Ziden walked forward with Patchouli still on his back as Kaguya walked beside them. They notice three balls of light flying towards them as it entered their chests. They felt their abilities

come back as they saw a gap in front of them with a platform beyond it.

" All right, shut-in. You can fly now. Get off him, you freeloader." Kaguya coldly said as Patchouli scoffed at her.

" You're just jealous that Ziden actually likes me. Not some spoiled princess like you." Patchouli said as Ziden felt the tension between the two girls increase as Komachi appeared on his shoulder.

" Humph. Well I can walk a few feet before tiring out!" Kaguya said.

" Well at least can fight on my own without having my 'doctor' come and save me!" Patchouli said as Ziden and Komachi did a collective 'oooo'.

" Well... Well... Well... At least I'm not a shut-in!" Kaguya said as Ziden heard Mokou giggling in his mind.

" You are a shut-in! Name one time you've ever left your room other than fighting Mokou." Patchouli said as Kaguya remained silent. " My thoughts exactly."

" Whatever! I am a being of pure beauty. You're obviously jealous of me." Kaguya said as she flicked her hair.

" Uh. Not to interrupt this cute little love feud, but Patchouli does have you beat in several things other than beauty." Ziden said as Komachi nodded.

" Oh yeah, Ziden? What would those things be?" Kaguya said as she tapped her foot.

" Well lets see here; smarts, niceness, magical talent and most of all her bust is fairly bigger than yours." Patchouli's and Kaguya's face turned bright red. " But seeing how I am a nice guy, I'll tell you a little secret Kaguya. If you drink milk and eat chocolate, your chest will



get bigger. Gehahhahahahahahha!" Ziden laughed as Komachi hit him with the butt of her scythe.

"Whatever! Lets go, Kirby!" Kaguya flies across the gap with Kirby floating behind her. " *Milk and Chocolate, huh? Gonna remember that for later!*"

" Um Ziden? Thanks for backing me up." Patchouli said as she off Ziden's back and began to fly. " Need a lift?"

" Pfffft! I'm a man! I can jump this gap!" Ziden tries to jump the gap as he almost reaches the other side only to start to plummet into the nothingness below him. " Oh no! This was a terrible idea!" Ziden falls into gap as a loud crunching sound was heard as Kirby's death music played when Ziden died. Ziden reappeared next to Kaguya as Patchouli flew over the gap.

" Good job, future husband! You lost a life like a boss!" Kaguya said as Ziden sweatdropped.

" Tch! Whatever! Lets just get out of this place and find that left wing!" Ziden said as they felt the air get warmer as a ball of fire formed in front of them as it formed fiery wings and tail feathers. This creature was known as a Sphere Doomer!

### **Vs. Sphere Doomer ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

" What the hell is that!?" Kaguya yelled as she formed a blue, translucent sword.

" Who cares! Just kick its ass! Patchy, support us with some water magic!" Ziden said as he pointed his sword at the Sphere Doomer.

" On it!" Patchouli said as a blue lights surrounded her.

Kirby dashed at the SD as he shot out a chain of electric orbs that shocked it. Kaguya slashed SD hard across the back as it flew into the sky. " Um? What's it doing?"

The SD began to rain down basketball sized fire balls the trio scrambled to dodge the attack. " Aquatic Saber!" Several blue magic circles formed around Patchouli as several large swords of water burst from the magic circles and slammed into the SD causing it to roar in pain.

Kirby was above the SD as he began to shoot a multitude of spark balls the SD as it bobbed and weaved the attack while shooting fireballs from its jagged mouth.

" Oh no you don't!" Kaguya flew up to the SD as she produced a flurry of colorful sword strike that severely harmed the SD as its red body began to flicker.

" Wait a minute. What's Ziden doing?" Patchouli as she looked over and saw Ziden relaxing on the edge of the screen, messing with a device in his hand.

" Lets finish him, Kirby!" Kaguya said as they charged up an attack together.

" Impossible Combo! Wave Bomber!" They yelled in unison as a gigantic ball of colorful light exploded from their hands and slammed into the SD causing it to explode into stars as another star shaped portal appeared.

They leap through the portal as they found themselves back on the path they were on before.

### **Forest Area ( Kirby Return to Dreamland)**

" Guhhhhh! It looks like we are out of that weird place." Ziden said as he stood up.

" Come on, Ziden. The device is telling us that left wing is just up ahead. Lets wrap this up so can get back to the others!" Kaguya said as she raced ahead with Kirby and others. They found a door that had golden doorway around it.

" I can sense something beyond this door." Ziden said as Kaguya and Patchouli approached the door.

" Normally, at the end of these Gates, there is usually a 'Boss' waiting for us in the end, right?" Patchouli asked he nodded. " Can you make a guess on who this boss might be?"

" More than likely it would be Whispy Wood. That guy is almost always the first boss you fight in Dreamland Gates and the Kirby games." Ziden said as Kaguya nodded.

" Reminds of when Remi got that weird device from the shopkeeper." Patchouli said.

" I was there when she said that. I also remember Yukari and Reimu telling me it would probably be in my best interest to never meet him." Ziden said as he scratched his head.

" Yes. I heard from Sakuya that man dreams of heading to the outside world. He would probably hound you for questions about the items in his shop seeing as how you are from the Outside World." Patchouli said.

" We can have this conversation back at Cappy town. I want to beat up this tree again!" Kaguya and others entered the door as the music turned ominous.

### **Boss Prelude ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

The group proceeded to travel through the upper platforms of wood as they began to fall a great height and landed before a large tree. The tree began to shake as it formed a face with a pointy nose.

" Who dares to disturb the great Whispy Woods!?" The tree said as Kaguya cackled.

" All right tree boy! Just hand over the ship part and we won't de-root you!" Ziden threatened as Whispy Woods began to shake violently.

" Ziden? Would it be safe to use fire magic on him?" Patchouli asked as Ziden shook his head.

" We don't want the whole forest to catch on fire, now do we?" Patchouli shook her head. " Use Wind and Ice magic!"

" Poyo!" Kirby said as he took out his wand.

### **Vs. Boss ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

Ziden and Kirby dashed at Whispy as he shook his branches to cause apples to fall in an attempt to hit them. Ziden performs a strong horizontal slice at Whispy that took a small bit of his health. Kirby points his wand at Whispy.

" Cycle Beam!" Kirby shoots out electric orbs in a vortex formation that buffeted Whispy as he began to spit out small puffs of air.

Kaguya sliced through the puffs of air with colorful lasers. Kaguya ran up to Whispy and perform her version of the Vulcan Jab on as he roared in pain.

" Crimson Storm!" Ziden unleashes a barrage of sword waves at Whispy who took the full brunt of the attack.

" Fusion Spell! Frozen Windmill!" Patchouli summoned frozen blades of air that were spiraling towards Whispy as they exploded against him, releasing cold air that misted up the area.

Whispy shot out several sharp roots at the group as they struggled to dodge the attacks. He focused his attack on Patchouli as she began to slow. " Gotcha!" Whispy exclaimed as he shot out a root that was going straight for her stomach only for Kaguya to knock the root away with a strong kick.

" Thank you, Kaguya." Patchouli said as she began to chant another spell.

" Hey. I play RPG's. I know to protect the mage!" Kaguya said as knocked away several roots with punches and kicks.

Kirby and Ziden took the role of fighting the boss as they dodged the attacks while thinking of a counter attack.

" Wave Beam!" Kirby shoots a large ball of energy at Whispy that exploded causing him to be to be stunned.

" Raging Tiger!" Ziden's sword became wrapped in a blue as he performs a leaping stab. The second the sword pierced through Whispy's body an explosion of force knocked Ziden away as the translucent image of a tiger's head was seen.

Whispy was now at half health as he began to grow in size.

Whispy began to suck in large amounts of air, pulling Ziden into the vacuum of it as he was eaten.

" Poyo!" Kirby spat out a star that had the beam symbol and threw it at Whispy as he spat out Ziden as he slammed against the invisible wall behind Kaguya and Patchouli.

Ziden got up and threw a regular sword at Kirby as he inhaled it. Kirby jumped into the air and began to spin as a green pointy hat formed on his head before falling over his eyes. He pulled it off of his eyes and pulled out a sword that was silver bladed with a blue hilt.

" Spin Slash!" Kirby performs a powerful spin attack the rapidly slashed Whispy.

" Demon Wave!" Ziden released a large shockwave that slammed into Whispy as Ziden who low his health as Kirby unleashed a flurry of attacks that Ziden couldn't see.

Kirby's sword glowed with a bright white light. " Sword Beam!" Kirby released a large white sword beam that slammed into Whispy as an

explosion of stars erupt from the impact as Whispy now a single tear coming from his right eyehole.

A large blue orb was floating above them that had a white wing that looked it belonged on the left side of a ship. Kirby leapt up and grabbed it as he threw it to Patchouli who caught it as Kirby performed his trademark dance as Kaguya squeed at the unholy amount of cuteness.

A bright light wrapped around them as they found themselves outside the Lor Starcutter. Patchouli threw the orb as the Left Wing attached itself to the ship as Magolor came out of the ship.

" Congrats on getting the Left Wing back! I have discovered that the Right Wing is moving towards that town as if being carried by something. According to my calculations it should be over Cappy Town by sunset tomorrow. So go and inform those friends of yours while I do some repairs." Magolor reentered the ship as they group of four walked to Cappy town.

### **Green Greens ( Kirby Super Star Ultra)**

They ended up entering a restaurant that Ziden was familiar with as they saw everyone in the restaurant sitting at the tables. Ziden also noticed several glasses of milk in front of several of the girls ( minus Reisen, Sanae, Yukari, Yuyuko and Youmu).

" Um? What's with all the milk, guys?" Ziden asked as he sweatdropped.

" I had a gap open and we were watching and hearing everything you guys said and did." Yukari said as she drank some grape juice. " Including the chest comment you said to Kaguya." Ziden noticed that Ran and Chen were here as well. Ran did not look happy with Ziden.

" Ziden I crim! What did I say about being perverted to women!?" Ran said as she pulled on his cheeks.

" Guuuuuhhhhhh! I'm sorry!" Ziden said as she pulled harder.

" Just because there is barely any men in Gensokyo doesn't mean you can sexually harrass the Librarian and the Gatekeeper!" Ran said as she released Ziden's cheeks as they were now red.

" Wait. There are barely any men in Gensokyo? I saw several boys in the village." Sora said.

" Yep, but barely any male youkai. There is only four I can name. That's Genji, the shopkeeper, Tenma and Unzan!" Aya said.

" Heh! No wonder I'm being fought over so much!" Ziden said before he remembered something important. Ziden told them what they learned from Magolor. " Oh yes and before I forget. Sakuya! Get out here now!" Sakuya materialized from a ball of light with a scared look on her face. " Outside. NOW! Sakuya quickly went outside as Ziden followed. The girls immediately went to the window to watch what was about to happen.

" Did you really think I wouldn't notice, Sakuya?" Ziden said as she looked down at her feet.

"I-I-I d-d-don't know what you are talking, M-m-m-master." Sakuya stammered.

" Okay. Playing dumb, huh? Answer me this: Why is that, even after 13 years apart, you still look like the 18 year old woman I trained and raised when your adopted parents were slain by that black haired vampire!?" Ziden said as Sakuya flinched. " Tell me the truth, Silvia!"

Sakuya flinched as she was called by her real name. " I-I-I-I froze time on my body so I could stay alive to see you again." Ziden cracked his knuckles as Sakuya knew what was coming next. She kneeled down as Ziden hit on the back of the head as a large knot formed.

" You freaking idiot! I've told you time after time, never freeze time on yourself to stop aging! Grrrrrrrr!" Ziden stomped his foot causing the town to shake.

" I'm sorry!" Sakuya reentered Sanctuary as Mokou appeared before Ziden as Kaguya grimaced.

" Hello Ziden. Seems like you are quite mad!" Mokou said as she chuckled.

Ziden calmed himself down. " What do you want, Mokou Fujiwara?"

" Hmph. You only call me by my full name when you're upset, Ziden. Which means that your memories of me are slowly coming back, huh?" Mokou asked as Ziden nodded. A smile came across her face. " Good!" Ziden feels a stinging pain in his stomach as he looked down and saw Mokou's fist in his stomach.

" \*sigh\* Let me guess, You want a rematch?" Ziden asked as she pulled out her fist.

" Sorta. Now that I know that your memories of me are coming back! So a good ass kicking/killing will do some good in getting it back!" Mokou said as she cracked her knuckles.

" Fine! I need some stress to relieve! Follow me to our battleground, mosquito bites!" Ziden said as Mokou's face turned red.

" Stop calling me that you jerk!" Mokou yelled as she followed Ziden.

The duo was unaware that an old man with a long white beard and wearing a bright yellow robe was watching them. He had electricity flowing around him. Over in the horizon was a vicious thunderstorm.

*Meanwhile in Dedede's room...*

*Dedede was talking to two individuals. One was wearing a red cloak, glasses that had spirals on them. Most notable was his green bean*



*shaped head. The other was a... pink armadillo. Odd. The red cloaked one was Ruler 10.*

" Are you sure you won't join us? It will be a delicious smorgasbord of mouth savoring deliciousness!" Ruler 10 said as Dedede grunted.

" I don't care! I don't care about your stupid ass Dark World! I'm busy trying to get revenge on Kirby and Bowser!" Dedede said as Ruler 10 and Armadillo looked at each other .

" Very well, King Dedede! we shall be on our way! We need to pay Bowser and friends a visit!" Ruler 10 and his servant disappeared in a puff of darkness as Dedede felt a dark chill run down his spine.

" *This feeling. Its just like when I was possessed by that thing all those years ago.*" King Dedede thought.

*Somewhere in space...*

The area was completely dark as a voice spoke within it. " My return is soon. When a fool is Crowned, I shall be reborn in that body. Then I shall spread my sorrow to all worlds and destroy that accursed Dreamland and Kirby!" A long white sliver formed as a trickle of blood came from it.

*Author's Note: Well I've noticed that during this whole time I've yet to recieve a single review, but at this point I don't care. If you guys don't feel like reviewing, then don't. In other news if you can't tell I love cliffhangers and plot twists so do expect those in the future. Also just to note this, the only Gensokyians that Ziden knows are these characters; Yukari, **Yuyuko** , Ran, Chen, Kaguya , **Mokou** , **Keine** , Eirin , Tewi, **Mystia** , Reisen and **Youmu** . The characters bolded are people he met but are forgotton. Underlined are people he deliberately forgotten. Also this arc is loosely following the storyline of Kirby's return to Dreamland. I plan on bringing some new bosses from past Kirby games so watch out. Note that there will be spoilers for the game. There is only one other Smash World that will be*

*following a storyline. Every other smash world will be somewhat original storylines. Read and Whatever!*

Meta Knight

First Appearance: Kirby's Adventure

Fighting Style: Godly if used properly. Can combo the crap out of characters with pure ease. He was banned from tournaments!

Info: Meta Knight is a pure mystery. He is believed to be a rival/mentor to Kirby. He is an accomplished swordsman that can cut through the sound barrier very easily. He is most likely the same species of Kirby, but matured. His sword is the Legendary Galaxia. He has a ship that looks like him and is named the Halberd.

Gensokyo Analysis Report

Yukari: so Ziden? What do you think of Reimu Hakurei?

Ziden: Well? I can tell the girl can fight, but I can tell that her shrine does not get alot of donations.

Yukari: Indeed. Like you, she has immense natural talent and she has an unbreakable will. She could probably fight you to a standstill.

Ziden: Probably if she weren't so damn lazy, yeah!

Yukari: Like you're one to talk! ' Ugh Yukari! Can you change the channel for me?'

Ziden:... I hate you.

Yukari: I love you too, nephew.

Ziden: Tch! She seems to be able to handle herself in a fight.

Yukari: Of course. She is the one who wrote the Spell Card rules.

Ziden:... Aren't those the stupid rules I never followed?

Yukari: Yep. I didn't think you would or ever will follow those rules.  
You suck at Danmaku!

Ziden:... I do actually. The only thing I do suck at.

Yukari: Well that... and my tongue that one time.

Ziden: Guhh! You said you would never bring that back up.

Yukari: I lied. Besides, it was enjoyable for me. And those wandering hands of yours.

Ziden:... You're a sick demon, taking advantage of an amnesiac boy like that. \* Walks away and leaves\*

Yukari: Humph. You were the one who came on to me.

## A Bright and Shiny Victory!

*After a very one sided fight with Whispy Woods, the group learned that the Right Wing is coming for them, tomorrow at sunset. After a few events, Ziden and Mokou began their fight in an open grassy plain.*

### Fury Sparks ( Tales of Vesperia)

Ziden and Mokou were staring each other down with a friendly grin on Mokou's face. " What's with that grin, Mokou?"

" I'm just getting excited that I get to fight you again. By the end of this, you will get your memories of me and Keine back. That's part of the promise I made to her in Gensokyo! We are going to keep fighting until you do!" Mokou said as she surrounded herself in fire.

" Fine by me. But what if the Moon Princess decides to interfere?" Ziden asked as Mokou laughed.

" Then we'll kick her ass together like old times, Buddy!" Mokou said as she stretched her legs.

" So we were buddies?" Ziden asked.

" Best friends, actually. You helped me to effectively use my fire in fights." Mokou said as she formed a katana of fire.

" Really now? All right. Lets go!" Ziden and Mokou charged at each other as Mokou leapt over Ziden. " Woah!" Mokou began to rain down fire on Ziden as he rolled out of the way.

" This isn't going to be like Petal Meadows, Ziden!" Mokou performs a dive bomb as she slashed Ziden hard across his side causing blood to spray out. Ziden quickly whips out Nosada into his right hand and Celsius into his left. " Oh? Are you about to get serious now?"

" Nope!" Ziden points Celsius towards the sky as frozen air began to form around the gun. " Frost King's Hailstorm!" Ziden fired a volley of frozen golfball sized balls of ice that flew into the air and began to rain down Mokou as she wrapped herself in a fiery aura. The hail melted against her aura as Ziden clicked his teeth.

Mokou dashed at Ziden and swung her sword at Ziden's neck as he quickly began block her strike. They began to exchange sword strike as colorful sparks rang out from the attacks. Mokou conjures a fireball in her free hand and slams it into Ziden's face.

" AhhhhhhH!" Ziden's face began to melt a bit before his regeneration kicked in, healing his face.

" Bitch." Mokou chuckled a bit as she stabbed through Ziden's shoulder with her sword as he recoiled in pain.

" Come on, Ziden! Is this the best you got?!" Mokou said as she twisted the sword causing Ziden alot of pain. Ziden could feel a spark going off in his mind as he slowly felt memories start to come back to him.

*" I can't believe this. Her causing me pain is causing my memories to come back? Well even so, I ain't losing this to fight to her!"* Ziden stabs Nosada in Mokou stomach as she cried out in pain. " Lets see how you like it! Flame Spinner!" Ziden twists Nosada like a fiery top as Mokou is blasted away by the shockwave. She flipped herself and used her hands to stop herself from flying back. Her light brown shirt was now more burnt and had a bloody hole where the stomach is as her wound began to close.

Mokou raised her leg as if about to launch a projectile. " Heh! You're not the only one who can come up with moves on the fly. Phoenix Hibachi!" Mokou wraps her leg in fire as she began to rapidly kick with the fire greatly extending her kicks length as Ziden felt every kick explode against him. " TeyahHHHHHH!" She increased her attack rate, speed and strength while letting out a battle cry. " Fly

away!" She hits Ziden square in the chest with a long range fire stomp as Ziden is launched airborne.

" GwaaaaaaaahhhhhhhhH!" Ziden is sent reeling through the sky as Mokou runs after him. Ziden is falling to the ground headfirst as Mokou jumped up and wrapped her arms around Ziden's waist and her legs around his chest as she began to spin like a drill.

" Fujiwara Style! Fujiwara Impact!" Mokou piledrives Ziden into the earth as large rocks exploded from the ground and spiraled outwards. Mokou back flips away from Ziden as she sees. his head pooling with blood.

" Jeez Mokou! Couldn't you have at least grabbed me from the front? At least then I would had a nice view!" Ziden said as Mokou's face turned bright red before she chuckled.

" Even during a fight, you're still a damn perv!" Mokou said as she leapt onto a newly created stone pillar.

" What can I say. Old habits die hard." Ziden calls Nosada and Celsius back to his respective hands. " Avalanche Breaker!" Ziden fires a gigantic ice laser at Mokou as she jumped out of the attack's path. " Pour it on!" Ziden moved the laser to chase after Mokou as she wall jumped off of the rocks to gain speed. " *What the hell? Is she some sort of ninja or something? She better not able to create clones of herself or some crap like that. Believe it!... Why did I just reference that anime?*" Mokou continued to wall jump as she dove under some rocks to dodge the frozen beam. Ziden stops the attack as he began to slowly walk around the rocky area.

" Gotcha!" Mokou's hands breaks through the ground next Ziden's feet as she grabbed them and dragged him under the ground until he was buried neck deep in rocks. Mokou snickered as she ran in the opposite direction of Ziden.

" Wait a minute! Mokou! Chill out!" Ziden struggled to try to get out of the ground as Mokou sprinted to him.

" Time for a field goal!" Mokou kicks Ziden head with such a force that it decapitates Ziden as his head is sent flying through the air. Mokou gives chase as Ziden's head flew to the beach where Bowser and Dedede fought. Ziden's head crashes into the sand and rolls, getting sand in his eyes and hair.

Mokou lands on the sandy beach as she waits for something. All of a sudden, several red and white tendrils shoot out from his neck as they arranged themselves to form Ziden's body as a cloth like material began to cover Ziden body as his clothes and body finished regenerating. He stands up while Mokou summons several fire balls to surround her.

" Was that necessary, Mokou?" Ziden said as he cracked his newly formed neck.

" Remember anything?" Mokou simply asked.

" Heh, heh! I remember that you're a C-cup!" Ziden said as Mokou felt a tick mark form on her temple.

" I'm a D-cup, you dick!" Mokou launched several fire balls at Ziden who simply rolled out of the way.

" I should know!" Ziden said as he sent a wave of fire at Mokou who takes flight to avoid it.

" Tch! I remember that crap you pulled at the hot springs!" Mokou said as fired several fiery danmaku at Ziden who simply kicked them away with quick swipes.

" Yep. I can still feel the burns and headbutts I got from that. Totally worth it!" Ziden said as he saw her form a spear of fire.

" It sounds like you really are remembering us. Do you remember what I gave you when you gave me that Blood Oath Ring?" Mokou lands on the ground as she crouched down.

" Nope." Ziden sheathed Nodasa as he grasps the hilt as he crouched down.

" Lets wrap this battle up! Phoenix Dasher!" Mokou dashes forward while spinning the spear like a drill as she neared Ziden.

" Iaido Style! Shooting Star Quickdraw!" Ziden pulls out Nosada faster than the blink of an eye as he dashed past Mokou.

A few seconds of silence occurred as an unholy amount of blood sprayed out from Ziden's chest. " Damn!... Looks... like... you... got me... ugh!" Ziden falls down dead as Mokou's body is riddled with cuts, severely tearing her shirt apart revealing a white bra, stained red by her blood.

" Jeez. Just had to tear up my shirt, huh?" Mokou walks over to Ziden and picks up Ziden body as she began to fly back to the restaurant as Ziden's soul received a dream vision about another area.

## **Villains of a Sort ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

*At an unknown location back on Ziden's world...*

Ruler 8 was talking to an old man with a brown cane. Ruler 8 wore blue long coat with three tails and a snake like pattern on the right side of the jacket. His white hair was swept back. He had a pitch black button up shirt and same colored pants. He wore brown boots that reached his knees and had two buckles near the top of them. He carried a katana that had a white hilt, black sheathe with a yellow ribbon wrapped around it.

" What will you do now that I have told you this information, Head Captain Yamamoto?" Ruler 8 asked as the old man opened his closed eyes. Ziden's dream self looked around the room as he saw that there other people wearing similar clothing to the old man.



Yamamoto had a long white beard and long eyebrows. He had red eyes as well. He wore something that looked like a pure black gi with a large white jacket draped over his shoulders. Ziden noticed that the other people were wearing similar outfits.

" What will we do? We take action of course! This, Ziden Icrim, will pay for slaying our fellow Soul Reapers! Captains! Prepare yourselves for battle tomorrow! We shall teach this..." Yamamoto's voice began to trail off as Ziden's dream self began to awaken.

*Back in Dreamland...*

### **Green Greens ( Kirby Super Star Ultra)**

Ziden felt himself laying on something cold as he heard two familiar voices chattering around him.

" What? Do we do it on three or is i go?"

" Just hit him on three, you lazy shinigami!"

Ziden hears two females counting to three as he feels something crack against his head. " Guuuuuuhhhh!" Ziden lurchs upwards as he finds himself in the restaurant with Komachi, Reimu, Mokou and Patchouli.

" Hey, lover boy!" Komachi said as Ziden rubbed his forehead.

" Was it necessary to crack my skull?" Ziden said as Komachi stood up.

" You were asleep for a while. At least 45 mins." Reimu said while tapping her gohei on her shoulder.

Ziden stares over at Patchouli who looks at him and waves happily. Ziden looks at Mokou who has a cigarette in her mouth with her arms crossed against her shirtless chest.

Ziden gets and stands next to Komachi whom is taller than him by at least a few inches ( Ziden is 5'11 while Komachi is at least 6'2). " How the hell are you taller than me!?"

" Cuz." Komachi said while holding out her hand as if waiting for something. Ziden reaches into his pocket and pulls out several gold coins which he places into her hand. " Thanks for the compensation, stranger!"

" Yeah. Use that money to take those exams that you always fail." Ziden gets jabbed by the butt of her scythe before she goes back to Sanctuary.

"Hey Ziden. Get me a shirt, will ya!?" Mokou said as she blew out a puff of smoke.

" Go back to Sanctuary, you psychotic flaming avian!" Ziden said.

Mokou walks up to him and does something that shocks the duo in the room. She kissed Ziden on the mouth before reentering Sanctuary.

"... Did she just-?" Reimu asked as Ziden wiped his mouth.

" We tell no one that this happened, got it?" The girls nodded. " Hey Patchy? I know this is a very odd question, but you don't each much do you?"

Patchouli had a surprised face. " Not really. Why?"

" Well you are pretty frail, so I was thinking of making you some 'special meals' made by the Master Chef himself." Ziden said while doing a bow.

" What's so special about them?" Reimu asked.

" Well, judging from my observations via touching, I have learned that Patchouli is extremely skinny. So therefore I'm going to make

her food that increases both her weight and her overall health!" Ziden said waving his hands.

Patchouli seemed to smile from Ziden's idea. " I can see where Sakuya got her confidence from."

" Yep. She picked up on several of my traits when she was little. So what would you like, Ms. Knowledge?" Ziden said as she tapped her lip.

" Hmm? Chocolate Brownies and some Coffee would be fine, Chef Ziden." Patchouli said as she turned around to the table.

" I'd like some cookies and some tea. Any tea will do." Reimu said while preparing to sit down.

*" All right all I need to do is get to the kitchen before she catches on and-\*feels something touching his shoulder\* Dammit! The glutton is here!"* Ziden thought as Yuyuko was drooling on his shoulder.

" I want 7 Chocolate Cakes, 18 pounds of Glazed Doughnuts and 5 bowls of Ramen Noodles. Get going, nephew!" Yuyuko commanded as Ziden wrote down the orders. Ziden was about to ask her something. " Kirby, Mario, Sanae and Reisen went off to that location to get the right wing of the ship. Chen is playing soccer with the Cappy children. Yukari is taking a nap while Ran is keeping an eye on you and Chen. Sora is training with Youmu to improve his fighting skills. Aya is off being... Aya. Kaguya is outside looking in through the window and looks pretty mad at you, especially after that kiss with Mokou. You sly little devil! Bowser is working out after that fight with Dedede. Also there is a storm above us. It looks like it's about to pour." Yuyuko motions for him to get to the kitchen.

Ziden enters the kitchen as he prepares to make the food for his friends.

Patchouli rubbed her skinny stomach as a audible growl was heard. *" I wonder if Ziden's food will make me healthier and gain a bit more*

*weight. My goal will be at least 175lb. That should be a perfect weight goal. I just need to gain at least 90 more pounds."*

" *Food! Food! Food! Food!*" Yuyuko mentally chanted.

A few minutes passed as Ziden came out of the kitchen with a large serving tray of as he handed the respective people their food.

Patchouli drooled at the sight and smell of the Brownies and Coffee. The brownies were beautifully swirled in chocolate and had several sprinkles. The coffee was in a simple white coffee cup made of ivory and silver. There was several marshmallows for dunking.

Reimu was given cookies with chocolate chip baked into them. Their smell is causing Reimu to salivate. The tea was made of various herbs and had a lemon slice on the side.

Yuyuko's food barely made it to the table. She attacked the serving tray as she devoured the food in less than 7 seconds.

Patchouli took a bite out a brownie as an explosion of flavor entered her mouth. The chocolate melted when she bit it, leaving a savory taste in her mouth. " Oh my!"

Reimu calmly ate her cookies as her mouth was filled was a dancing decadence of mouth watering excitement. The living duo felt energy course through their veins as they felt stronger.

They enjoyed their food their food as a flash of lightning roared outside.

Kaaa Craaaaaacccckkkk!

Multiple lightning bolts were hitting the ground outside as Ziden walked to the door with Crimson Edge and Nosada drawn and ready to fight.

Ziden walks outside and sees an old man wearing bright yellow robes with a bronze staff that had a lightning bolt on the tip of it. He

had a long regal beard that was white as he addressed Ziden with a voice that sparked with electricity.

" Ah! So you are the human that took down Ifrit and Diabolos? Quite the impressive feat, boy." The old man said as a Gate formed behind him.

" If you know those two, then you must be a summon like them!" Ziden said as he swung his swords.

" Indeed, but we prefer to be called Espers! I am Ramuh, Ruler of Judgmental Thunder!" Ramuh's body began to spark as he entered the Gate. Ziden noticed two figures dashing in and entering the Gate as he followed.

Ziden was now on a wastelandish cliff as he saw Sora and Youmu staring Ramuh with their weapons drawn.

" All right you two. Remember that we are playing by Life Bar rules. If you see your health getting low, use a potion. Special attacks use up magic, restore it with Ethers, got it!?" They both nodded as they looked at the devices on their arms as Ramuh prepared for battle.

### **Force Your Way ( Final Fantasy 8)**

Ramuh had 8 bars of health according to the Mecha-Mimicker 3000.

" Time to take you down a few notches, old man?" Ziden said while spinning his swords.

" Hmmm. Looks like 'he' was right about your rudeness." Ramuh simply said as Ziden felt a tingle go down his neck.

Youmu dashes behind Ramuh as she aims at his neck. Her attack succeeds due to the fact he didn't sense the attack as he is sent airborne. " Sora! Go!"

Sora, now in his Valor Form, charged at Ramuh, slammed his keyblades into the creating red pillars of energy that knocked Ramuh

airborne. " Got him."

" No. You do not. Thundara!" Ramuh summons several large bolts of lightning that slammed into the area around Sora as he dashed through the bolts.

Ziden was above Ramuh charging up an attack. " Burning Cross!" Ziden performed a vicious burning cross that drew blood from the Esper as he delivered a burning kick, knocking the Esper to Youmu who had an attack prepared.

" Lotus Stance Cut!" Youmu fires a green cross-shaped sword wave that blasted against the flesh of Ramuh as he screamed.

He landed to the ground hard as electricity sparked around him. " I've had enough of you! Thundaga!" Giant bolts of lightning stormed down on the group as Youmu pulled out a newly unsealed Spell Card.

" Human Sign! Slash of Present!" Youmu performs a powerful sword slash while wrapped in a ghostly aura as the attack brutally destroyed 5 of Ramuh's health bars, leaving only 2 bars left. " Whoa. That spell card was much stronger than usual. These Exspheres really are unsealing our Spellcards." Youmu said to herself.

Ramuh began to charge up his final move as Ziden had a ball of fire that was crackling in his hands as it turned blue.

" Die! Judgement Bolt!" Ramuh unleashes a vicious barrage of electricity that blasted through Sora and Youmu as it traveled to Ziden.

" Surge Breaker!" Ziden shoots out several bolts of blue lightning pierced through Ramuh's lightning and pierced through his body with pure ease as a bright light surrounded Ziden.

" Damn... Don't think of... this... as a victory... for the storm beast... will kill your friends." Ramuh exploded into bolts of lightning as the

trio is warped outside the gate.

### **Windy Waffles ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

Reimu and Yuyuko rushed outside to see their injured friends. " Youmu! Are you all right!?" Yuyuko asked while placing Youmu's head in her lap.

" I am fine, milady. I just can't feel my limbs, thats all." Youmu said as Myon laid down on her stomach.

" Sora!" Reimu ran over to Sora to check his wounds only to see no wounds on him at all. " What the-? How aren't you hurt? We saw you get pierced by lightning!" Reimu grabs Sora into a strong hug before she socked him across the face.

" Awww! Young love!" Ziden said as he looked up at the stormy skies.

" Ziden Icrim!" Kaguya was fuming mad and stomped over to him before punching him with an energy enfused fist. " I didn't care when you flirt with shut-in. I didn't care when you flirted with that red head, but you just had to kiss my mortal enemy, didn't you!?"

" She kissed me first. I mean if I knew you were watching, I'd have grabbed onto something soft and squishy!" Ziden was promptly slapped by Yuyuko and Kaguya.

" Moving on. You don't think that storm beast that Ramuh was talking was you-know-who." Kaguya asked as Patchouli decided to walk outside. She was holding a card in her hand.

" Hey Patchy. Are you jealous too?" Ziden asked as Patchouli did something bold.

" Not after this." Patchouli gave Ziden a strong French kiss as Yuyuko wooed at the moment. Patchouli broke from Ziden as blood

trickled from his nose as he fell down and fainted. " Oh no. Did I do it wrong?"

" Don't worry! That was a good first kiss if you could make Ziden faint!" Yuyuko said as she picked up Ziden. The rain began to pour down as everyone raced inside the restaurant.

*Somewhere above the Stormy Skies...*

### **Battle for Storm Hill ( Super Smash Bros. Brawl)**

Kirby, Mario, Reisen and Sanae were walking through a stormy plain as rain pelted them from all directions.

" Jeez. This storm is terrible!" Reisen said as they ran through the rain.

" Something tells me it's about to get worse." Mario said as he jumped up to a platform with Kirby clinging to his trademark hat.

" Yep! We've got company!" Sanae pointed at several Zealots and small creatures that looked like old fashioned wizards. They were fighting each other as a Zealot noticed them.

" Get those heretics!" A Zealot screamed as they charged at them.

" Lets-a-go!" Mario performed his jump and pounced on a Zealot before slamming his hammer into his chest, sending that Zealot to the barn.

Kirby ran over and inhaled one of the Simirrors as his transformation began.

A large mirror appeared as Kirby looked at his reflection. The began spin around when all of a sudden it broke as a jester cap that was red on one side and teal on the other with several white polka dots. The broken mirror shards formed his scepter's tip.



" Whoa. What is he now?" Reisen asked while forming a gun with her hand.

" Well if I had to guess, I guess this would be Mirror Kirby." Sanae said while cracking her fingers.

Reisen pointed her at a Zealot leaping high into the sky. " Gotcha! Mind Explosion!" A rocket shaped red bullet shot out and exploded the Zealot skyward as Mario slammed his hammer through the man's face, shattering it like glass. " Good shot, Mar- Whoa!" Reisen narrowly dodged a lightning bolt that was aimed at her feet.

" I knew it! This storm isn't natural!" Sanae said as she slammed her palm into the chest of the final Zealot.

" Something is in those clouds causing this storm! And it's above those clouds!" Reisen deducted as she began to float.

"Poyo! Poyo!"

" Huh? You think you know what's causing this?" Sanae asked.

" Poyo! Poyo!"

" Uh huh."

" Poyo. Papoyo. Poyo!"

" Okay."

" Poyo! Poyo Poyo Poooooooooooo!"

"... Did anyone understand that?" Reisen asked as the trio fell to the ground. Sanae got up and slapped Reisen in the back of the head.

" You idiot! Don't lead us on like that, you spoony rabbit!" Sanae said as lightning struck the Simirrors.

They look up into the skies and a part of the dark cloud was lit up. " Poyo!" Kirby pointed to it as he puffed himself up and started to float towards lit up area..

" I guess that's our target. Let's go ladies... and Reisen!" Sanae said as Reisen shot her a dirty look.

Mario pulled out a feather and absorbed it. Mario gained a yellow cape as took off into the stormy skies.

### **Boss Prelude ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

They flew high into the sky as they found themselves inside as large spinning vortex of clouds.

" Whoa. It is actually quite beautiful in here." Sanae said as she floated around.

" Guys! Look up!" Reisen pointed up as they saw a sight that startled them. A large white cloud surrounded by golden spikes. Most notable was its large blue eye. Kirby and Mario remembered this creature. This was the Demon Beast Kracko! A being Kirby faced alot over his journeys.

" Tch! I wasn't expecting the creator of this storm to be so damn big!" Sanae said as she slowly floated back.

Kracko sped off into the clouds as the others gave chase. Kracko led them to a floating platform that made of brown bricks as they landed on it. They became locked into the 2D plane as Kracko let out some bolts as the group separated to combat the beast.

### **Vs. Boss ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

Kracko shot several bolts of lightning at the group as Kirby stood in front of them. " Reflect Guard!" He surrounded the group in a colorful barrier that reflected the lightning back at Kracko, shocking him as Reisen assumed as slouched over with her eyes glowing red.

" Kirby! Drop that barrier!" Kirby did as she said as the bright light in her eyes grew more intense. " Illusionary Blast!" A large red laser slammed into Kracko's eye as it violently shook. Kracko's spikes began to retract and shake violently. The spikes shot out like missile catching everyone off guard as they sliced and stabbed them.

" Gahhhh! It hurts!" Sanae pulled a spike out of her shoulder as she held the bleeding hole in her arm. "Falling Stars!" Several stars formed above her head. They aimed themselves at Kracko as they flew towards him and slammed into his body with an explosive force.

Reisen dashed around Kracko while firing bullet Danmaku. " Yeah! Lets empty that health bar!" Reisen did several flips and rolls while firing at the cloud beast.

Kracko, tired of the relentless assault, dispersed into clouds and reappeared in the middle of the stage, surrounded in a ball of electricity.

Mario pulled a spike out of his foot before taking to the sky. " Uh oh! Looks like he's planning something big!"

Just as Mario said, Kracko released 4 bolts of lightning that shot out from the four corner spikes. " Guys! Take flight! Now!" Sanae commanded as everyone except Reisen took flight.

The lightning began to move in clockwise motion. " Hah! Watch this!" Reisen tried to sidestep, only to slam into the invisible wall. "... I forgot that wall was there! Kyaaaaaaaaahhhhhhhh!" Reisen was shocked to the point that a loud 'boom' was heard as Kirby's death music played. Reisen disappeared and reappeared next to Sanae with one less life. " Oops."

Sanae shakes her head as they moved in a fashion that allowed them to avoid the attack. Kirby, using the scepter's tip, formed a white blade and flew to Kracko. " Mirror Cut!" Kirby slammed the blade through Kracko's eye as he shook violently. signifying his half health condition.

" Here I go! Hammer Throw!" Mario throws the Ultra Hammer at Kracko who blasted it away using lightning. The lightning bolt took aim at Mario. Mario swung his cape to reflect the attack back at Kracko.

" Come on! We've got this guy!" Sanae exclaimed as Reisen and Kirby unleashed a volley bullets and Mirror shards exploding against Kracko as Reisen and Kirby devised a powerful combo attack to finish off the storm beast.

" Kirby! Lets do this!" Kirby shot out several mirrors as Reisen's eyes gave off a red glow. The mirror arranged themselves in manor similar to that of a cage. " Illusionary Blast!" Reisen fired the laser at the mirrors as they traveled around Kracko forming a cage of lasers.. "Lunatic Cage!" The cage compressed itself around the large Kracko as it slowly squeezed Kracko before exploding with red energy. Kracko only had a sliver of health left as Kirby decided to take the final blow.

" Mirror Body!" Kirby split himself into several copies of himself as he surrounded Kracko. The clones dashed through Kracko, effectively slicing him apart as Kracko violently exploded, killing the storm clouds around as the warm rays of the sun shone down on them.

The familiar orb appeared as it held the right wing. Mario jumped and got it as the Kirbys performed their trademark dance.

Back at the restaurant...

### **Green Greens ( Kirby's Epic Yarn)**

Ziden was still unconscious as Yuyuko had his head placed in his lap. Patchouli was calmly drinking her coffee, acting as if she hadn't caused Ziden to go unconscious.

Ran was wrapping Chen in a dry towel. In one way or the other, Chen had received her bath/shower.

Yukari was now awake as she was waiting for the others to get back.

Donald and Goofy were complaining about how bland their food was.

Luigi was talking to the injured Youmu who had bandages wrapped around her stomach. Kaguya was fiddling with the device that Ziden was playing with during their sphere doomer fight.

Reimu was enjoying her tea as she kept her eye on Sora and Marisa.

Aya was talking to Ran as she dried Chen off.

" Hmm. It looks like they did it." Yukari said as she closed the gap in her hand.

" Great! Now if only Ziden would wake up!" Yuyuko said as tickled Ziden's nose with a feather.

" Yes. I wonder why he is unconscious?" Kaguya looked over at Patchouli while drinking her coffee. Kaguya glanced back at the game she was playing. " What the-!? Why does a Magikarp know Hyper Beam?!"

" If I didn't know better, I'd say you were jealous Kaguya." Patchouli said as rested her in her palm.

" Pbbbt! I'm glad it you that kissed him. At least now, he won't have Mokou germs in his mouth." Kaguya scratched her jaw as Aya immediately ran over to Patchouli.

" What!? You kissed Ziden!? I knew this would happen! Was it enjoyable? What did he taste like? Is he a good kisser? What is his shoe size? What's his favorite color? Boxers or briefs? Pants or Slacks? Pork chop or Steak? Answer the questions, woman! I'm dying from the suspense!" Aya said as she pulled out a notepad.

"... No comment." Both Patchouli and Kaguya said.

"Ayayayay! You are no fun!" Aya said.

" Why don't you ask the budding new couple over there?" Patchouli pointed to Sora and Reimu as they both blushed. Aya attempted to walk over to them as she saw Reimu holding several needles in her hands.

The group of four entered the restaurant and saw them having fun and joking around. They took their seats as they relaxed a bit.

" You know? I wonder what Ziden is dreaming about?" Reisen asked as she looked over Kaguya's shoulder.

*In Ziden's dream...*

Ziden was standing in a grassy plain surrounded by sunflowers. They seemed to be dancing around him while whistling a wonderful tune.

### **Village of the Blue Maiden ( Legend of Zelda: Four Swords Adventure)**

Ziden wandered around until he found a certain red haired colleague, slicing the flowers with her scythe. " Is there a reason why you are here? Disturbing my dreams?"

" I'm bored. And you need to wake up! I'm tired of getting massages and such!" Komachi while cutting through a flower.

" I'll wake up when I feel like it! \*crack!\* Owwww! That hurts you know!" Ziden rubbed his sore head.

" Wake. Up." Komachi said while pointing her scythe at Ziden.

" I'll do it for a kiss!" Ziden said.

"... Sure. Close your eyes!" Komachi said as Ziden did just that. Komachi assumed a golf stance as she slammed the blade of her staff between Ziden's legs.

*Back in the real world...*

Aya was leaning over Ziden as he lurched upwards, slamming his forehead into Aya's, knocking her effectively on her rear.

"Ayaayayayay! Jeez give a girl some kind of warning next time." Aya said as she rubbed her forehead.

Ziden gets up and notices Kaguya holding something of his. " Hey! Give me back my 3DS, you thief!"

Kaguya is offended by this. " It's half mine anyway, so technically I didn't steal it."

" Tch! You better not break it!" Ziden said as he walked over to Patchouli.

" Good Morning, Sleeping Beauty." Patchouli said.

" Oh. Giving me nicknames, are we now?" Ziden said as he sat next to her.

" It fits. You've been asleep ever since that fight with Ramuh, yesterday." Patchouli said.

Ziden looks out the window of the restaurant and notices everyone minus Kirby, Bowser, Yukari and Yuyuko, looking out the window. " Guys? What's going on!?"

" I'll show you." Patchouli walks outside with Ziden as he sees what is going on.

Ziden sees that the sky is rapidly changing from Night to Day and vice versa. Ziden sees the sun and moon clashing with each other as he scratched his head. The other Cappies of the town were scared as Reimu was doing her best to calm them down Sora aiding her.

" What the hell!? Why are those two fighting again!?" Ziden asked as Patchouli shrugged her shoulders. " Are you just going to act like you didn't kiss me?"

" No. I just don't like talking about that stuff. Besides there are more pressing matters at hand." Patchouli said before coughing into her hand.

" Indeed. Library girl." A voice that sounded familiar to Mario, Luigi and Ziden.

A flying spinning platform appeared above them as Ruler 10 and his armadillo servant were on it.

" What the-?! Fawful! How are you alive!?" Ziden said as Fawful let out his trademark chuckle.

### **Fawful Theme ( Mario and Luigi 3)**

" Simple! Fawful has been given a second chance by a deliciously dark power that revived me and Midbus!" Fawful said.

Mario and Luigi ran outside as they had their hammers drawn. " We saw you die in Bowser's stomach!" Mario said as Ziden told him what he said.

" I guess that makes you a Ruler of Darkness, huh!?" Ziden said as Fawful laughed.

" Yes! Fawful is one of such people you are referring to! This is such happiness. I could have fury from this!" Fawful said as he spun around.

" So I guess you're the reason those two are fighting!?" Ziden said as he pointed to the sun and moon slamming into each other.

" Oh yes! This is part of Fawful's amazing plan to destroy you and your friends! But Fawful is feeling the niceness today, so Fawful shall tell you 2 secrets! 1: Fawful is not the only familiar face you shall



see! 2: The cloudy marshmallow is not the only powerful being I've revived from Kirby's past! I HAVE FURY!" Fawful is wrapped in a giant orb of darkness as it flew off to an unknown location.

" Tch!" Was all Ziden said before kicking the dirt at his feet.

" Mama mia! It looks like we have our hands full today." Mario said as he removed his hat.

" This Fawful character. Can you guys tell me about him?" Patchouli asked Mario and Luigi told her their history with him.

*Meanwhile at the Legion of Doom- I mean to Kirby and friends...*

They were traveling through a snowbound field as they shivered from the frosty wind's embrace.

### **Sundae Snowstorm ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

" Ahhhhhhhhchhhhhhooooooooo!" Bowser sneezed out an intense blaze of fire that warmed up the area. " Grrrrrr! Why'd the oars have to be located in this place?!"

" Stop complaining! You can breath fire to keep yourself warm!" Yuyuko said as she floated forward.

" Besides. It could be worse." Yukari said.

" \*sniff\* Yeah! We could be getting attacked some new type of those Heartless freaks!" Yukari and Yuyuko slowly around to Bowser who sweatdropped. " What?!"

The familiar orbs of darkness appeared a brand new type of Heartless appeared. They were humanoid shaped with a female figure. They were the size of a short woman and wore a blue dress. They had pale blue skin, their hands were icy claws that looked like they ached to rip out hearts, they had Sapphire high heels. Their hair was violently bright blue with a glowing aura around them. They had a frozen lily in their hair that radiated darkness. Their mouths had

sharp fangs and their eyes were black with bright, yellow irises. Their Heartless Emblem was above their bosoms.

The group was locked into the 2D plane as the new heartless let out a battle cry.

" Umm? What are those things!?" Yukari asked as she backed away slowly.

" Lets call them Snow Lilies!" Yuyuko said as several ghosts surrounded her.

" Works for me!" Yukari said as she took out her umbrella from a gap.

" Grahhhh!" Bowser breathed fire at the Snow Lilies who jumped with grace and dodged quite easily. A Snow Lily unleashed a barrage of icicles that stabbed Bowser all through out his body causing blood to spray out everywhere. " Guuuuuhhhhh!"

" Poyo!" Kirby performed a small run before attempting to inhale the Heartless. Several icicles entered Kirby's mouth as he transformed.

A chilly wind causes Kirby to shiver and turn blue as icicles began to form on his head. The camera zooms in on the icicles while slowly turning. An icy blue visor formed around the base of the icicle as Kirby's transformation finished.

" Hmm? Wouldn't ice be ineffective against these Snow Lilies?" Yuyuko asked.

" Maybe. Different world, different rules. I guess." Yukari said as she observed Ice Kirby.

Kirby unleashed a large breath of ice that slammed against the Snow Lilies stunning them.

Bowser recovered from his pain as he charged into the group of Heartless knocking them towards Yukari and Yuyuko.

" Ghostly Butterfly Hidden in Zen Temple!" Yukari spun her umbrella like a fan, racking up hits on the Snow Lilies as they got knocked upwards and caught by Yuyuko and Kirby.

Yuyuko slapped a Snow Lily across the face as Kirby inhaled a Snow Lily shortly before spitting her out. The Snow Lily was in a block of ice before it slammed into the icy earth and exploded into bloody chunks and Munny.

A Snow Lily snuck up behind Kirby and clawed him hard against his back.

" Kirby!" Yuyuko threw her fans at the Snow Lily slicing her in half as she raced to catch the falling Kirby.

The last of the Snow Lilies were defeated as they continued their trek through the snow.

" So Yuyuko? Who exactly did you leave in charge of the Netherworld again?" Yukari asked as Bowser ran to catch up with them.

" I left someone who I know could run things while I'm gone." Yuyuko simply said before floating over a gap.

" I see." Yukari said they entered a door. They enter a new area as they saw a grassy plain that was grass, half ice. They noticed that the sun and moon looked closer.

### **Boss Prelude ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

The sun and moon seemed to stop fighting as the sun came down to the earth. The sun was about Kirby's size and was fireball with a mean expression on his face. He had white gloves attached to his body. His eyes were radiating a dark mist. The moon was a cartoony, yellow crescent moon. Kirby recognized this deadly duo. They were Mr. Bright ( sun) and Mr. Shine ( moon)!

" Looks like they are the reason that day and night are acting screwy!" Yuyuko said while summoning ghost familiars around her.

" Yep. Luckily it looks like they are going to fight us one at a time. Bad news; They can rest between fights and possibly regain health." Yukari observed.

" Hmm? How do you know that, Yukari?" Yuyuko asked.

" That's a secret, Yuyuko." Yukari said as she held the umbrella like a sword.

**Boss Theme ( Kirby 64: The Crystal Shards)** Note: They aren't in this game. The song just fits, thats all!

Mr. Bright shot out several fire balls as Kirby countered by firing ice shards at them causing an icy mist to form. Several ethereal butterflies began to swirl around Mr. Bright. The sliced at him rapidly while Bowser was charging up a ball of fire in his mouth.

" Time for you get roasted by yours truly!" Bowser fired a giant fire ball that exploded against Mr. Bright, temporally stunning him. He had several yellow star and birds rotating around him.

Mr. Shine did not like seeing his partner/rival getting beaten. He began to glow with moonlight as he fired a beam of light down on Bowser.

" Gwwwaaaaaaaahhhhhhh!" Bowser was hit hard with the beam severely depleting his health.

" Great. Ghostly Butterfly!" Yuyuko fired homing butterflies at Shine. Shine tried to move out of the way, but the attacking butterflies stopped that stupid idea. Shine was slammed into the ground as he assumed his true form. He had sneer on his face, white, string bean-like arms and legs with white gloves.

Shine looked at Bright before focusing on the four enemies in front of them.

Shine began to fire crescent beams at Yukari who returned the attack back using a gap.

" Ice Sprinkle!" Kirby spins while breathing ice breathe. It created a whirlpool of ice that buffeted the celestial duo.

" Lights of the Undead!" Red lasers fired from around Yuyuko as Shine and Bright barely grazed the attack. " Yukari! I think it's time for some spellcard action!" Yuyuko pulled out a spell card as Yukari did the same.

" Death Sign: Ghastly Dream!" The spell dissolved as several rings of colorful butterflies surrounded her. She noticed the butterflies were bigger and giving off more power than normal. Bright surrounded them in a barrier of fire that was quickly smashed through it with ease. They were viciously sliced by the ghost assault as Yukari activated her spellcard.

Before she activated the card, she appeared in front of them. " Border Sign: Quadruple Barrier!" Yukari formed several boundaries that overlapped each other. The barrier spun at inhuman speeds, brutally striking the duo as only a quarter of their health was left.

The duo had enough of these unknowns beating them senseless like this. They turned into their other forms as they began spin around each other like a wheel. Electricity and fire energy began to wrap around them.

A bright flash of blue light appeared as a snowman wearing a bucket appeared. Kirby spat out his ability and inhaled the Super Chilly. Kirby now had a bowl of soft serve vanilla ice cream that had a large snowflake on it . A yellow star was in the middle of the snowflake.

" Ohhh! A new ability!?" Yuyuko asked as she saw the ice cream on Kirby's head.

Kirby floated into the air as icy air wrapped around him. Kirby became a giant snowball that towered over the spinning duo. Kirby lurched forward and slammed into them causing them to get stuck in the ball of snow. Kirby kept going towards a town in the distance as the others chased behind him.

Kirby could barely stop in time as the snow ball exploded, destroying Bright and Shine as the orb containing the Oars flew towards the restaurant. The group ran and collected the orb as Kirby did his little dance.

All of a sudden, the ground began to shake violently as Yukari and Yuyuko flew to the sky and saw something that shocked them. They saw a large ship in the horizon with a large white mask on the front of it.

*Author's note: Hurray. I got my first review and it's positive. That's good. Only two more chapters until the Dreamland arc is finished. I am also stopping the Smash Contestant bios and focus on the Heartless and Gensokyo Analysis with Ziden and various chars. On other news, I am currently playing through Luigi's Mansion Dark Moon. It is freaking awesome. Also I have a Steam account. If you play Killing Floor or Team Fortress 2, Look up chaosziden on Steam and friend up if you to play with me. The Snow Lilies are an original Heartless created by moi. Please note that are going to be more Original Heartless and even bosses. If you can't tell this story is a combination of the KHII Final Mix story and an original story involving the Smash chars and the Touhou chars as well as other chars that will appear. I chose Fawful because we need a funny over-the-top villain on the side of the Rulers of Darkness. Also starting from this chapter onwards, the spell cards are coming back stronger than ever! As well as familiar techniques in the Tales series! R&R dudes!*

Gensokyo Analysis

Ziden: Great. Now i get to talk with my 'favorite' person in the world.

Mokou:...

Ziden: \*sigh\* So it's Marisa we're talking about next, right?

Mokou: Yes. The ordinary magician that will steal anything and everything from a person.

Ziden: She sounds like a terrible person.

Mokou: Yeah. But she claims that she is only borrowing the items. She said she'll give them back before she dies.

Ziden: Isn't that nice of her?

Mokou: Besides that, she is a very capable fighter. She took me on and won.

Ziden:\*scoffs\* Please. You lose to everyone you fight. Dante, me, Kaguy- Gack!

Mokou: \* Proceeds to strangle Ziden to death.\*

Marisa: Jeez. I didn't even get to show my Master Spark to the audience, ze.

## Prelude to Sorrow and Despair

" Hmmmm?! Fawful is back?!" Yukari said in pure shock.

" Yep. It also looks like we may be seeing more familiar faces in those Rulers of Darkness." Ziden said while scratching his chin.

" Yeah, but I think we have a bigger problem." Reimu pointed up to the giant spaceship floating above them. The ship had a mask on the front that looked similar to that of Meta Knight's. The sides of the ship had large, purple wings on the for stabilizing the ship. The rest of the ship can't be seen from the bottom.

" Ziden? You don't think that the next ship part is on that ship, do you?" Kaguya asked as Yukari pulled out the tracking device. A large red arrow came out and pointed at the ship.

" Of course it is." Yukari rolled her eyes at this.

Youmu had recovered from the fight with the esper, Ramuh, now had a fierce look of determination written all over her face. " I wish to go upon this journey and retrieve the ship parts from this Meta Knight."

" Are you sure kid? Meta Knight is no pushover. He can, very easily, slice through the sound barrier." Ziden said as Youmu placed her hands on her swords. " Very well. You will have Kirby helping you after all."

" I'm going too!" Everyone looked over to Luigi. " I may not be the bravest person in the world, but my jumping skills will be able to help out."

" Of course, Sir Luigi. Your assistance will be greatly appreciated." Youmu bowed before him as he did the same.

" Poyo! Poyo!" Kirby seemed to join the party as well.



Everyone was waiting for a fourth person to join as Ziden pushed Aya forward. " Jeez! I'll go!"

" I feel much safer with the Fastest of Gensokyo on our side." Youmu said as Aya blushed from the praise.

" But we still have a problem; How are all of you going to get up there fast enough?" Reimu asked as the four scratched their heads.

" How about the Warp Star?" Everyone turned to see Tiff walking towards them.

" Yeah. That could work. Call it for us, will ya?" Yukari asked.

" I got it, Yukari! Kabu! Send the Warp Star!"

"Warp Star!" A loud voice echoed over the town as a large yellow star landed in front of them.

Kirby jumped onto the star as he motioned the trio to grab onto it.

" Grab on to it tight! And don't let go, Luigi!" Ziden said as Luigi blushed and rubbed the back of his head. " Get going and take down Meta Knight! And his rebuilt flying ship, the Halberd!" The trio jumped onto the star and flew towards the Halberd as Ziden felt a dark presence coming from the ship.

" Ziden~! Lets have ourselves a little chat in private!" Kaguya said as she started to drag Ziden back into the restaurant.

" That's going to have to wait! Look!" Reimu pointed to the Halberd as it started to release black orbs that covered the village.

" W-w-what is this!?" Sanae asked. Mario had a look of terror on his face.

" N-n-n-no! It can't be!?" Mario said as all the color drained from his face.

" Grrrrrrrr! What are these things doing here!?" Bowser said as he readied himself for a fight.

" Great. Looks like Fawful wasn't kidding when he said he set up some opposition against us." Ziden said as he unsheathed Crimson Edge.

The orbs began to pool together as several creatures dressed in green began to form.

Sora, Donald and Goofy drew their respective weapons as the creatures closed in on the group.

" \*sigh\* Looks like I won't be training some Pokemon today after all." Ziden said as he cracked his neck.

" Same here." Kaguya said as she formed a longsword.

" Tiff! Go get somewhere safe and hide!" Yukari said as Tiff ran and hid inside the restaurant

" Enough chatting, ze! Lets kick some ass!" Marisa said as the group charged at the unknown enemies.

*In the skies above the Halberd...*

### **Meta Knight's Revenge ( Super Smash Bros. Brawl)**

The Warp Star began to circle around the Halberd as they observed it. The top part of it had a large airstrip that led to a large cannon with a claw attached to it. There was a large building that had windows at the top.

" That's the cockpit! That's where Meta-Knight has to be!" Luigi said as he heard chuckling coming from Aya.

" Ha. 'Cockpit!'" Aya said before laughing again.

" ? What's so funny about the word'cockpit'?" Youmu asked.

" Don't worry about it, Youmu." Luigi said. *" I can see where Ziden got his pervyness from... as well his immaturity."*

" Poyo!" Kirby directed the Warp Star to land on top of the walkway as the was locked into the 2D plane.

" All right guys! We hit these guys hard and don't stop moving no matter what!" Aya began to run as the others chased after her.

" Hmmm. Who are those guys?" Youmu asked.

There was several knights dressed in purple and green armor. They were no bigger than Kirby and had swords drawn.

" Those are Sword and Blade Knights, knights that work for Meta Knight!" Luigi said he absorbed a fire flower.

Kirby began to inhale one of the Sword Knights as he transformed into Sword Kirby.

" We won't let you get to Lord Meta Knight!" A Blade Knight stated while waving his sword to intimidate the team of four.

" No matter! We'll just blast right through you!" Aya dashed through the Blade and Sword Knights at inhuman speeds.

" Green Missile!" Luigi launched forward like a missile slamming his head into the gut of a Blade knight.

" Lotus Stance Cut!" Youmu fired a green, crossed shaped energy wave that she fired from her blades that caused several Blade Knight to explode into stars.

" Multi Sword Attack!" Kirby attacked the Knights with a flurry of lightning fast cuts that couldn't be seen by the naked eye.

" Get the cannon ready! They will not reach Meta Knight!" A retreating Sword Knight yelled as Youmu and others gave chase.

They approached the large cannon with the claw attachment as they got a better view of the cannon.

This mechanical war machine was known as the Combo Cannon, a weapon used by Meta Knight used to shake Dreamland out of its peaceful state.

" Uh oh! I remember this cannon from the third tournament! It shot lasers and cannonballs at us during matches! Man those lasers hurt and I bet they'll hurt more here!" Luigi said as he pulled out a Ultra Hammer.

" We've got no time to waste on this thing! Gust Fan!" Aya fired a powerful gust of wind that created a dent in the Combo Cannon's armor.

It retaliated by firing off several cannonballs at them.

" Back at ya!" Aya, using her superior Tengu strength, kicked the cannonball back at the cannon blasting off the claw. Youmu and Kirby finished off the Combo Cannon with a barrage of cuts. They ran past the exploding cannon and entered the ship.

*Meanwhile in the cockpit...*

" Lord Meta Knight! The intruders are about to reach us!" The bird captain reported.

" Very well. I shall have my revenge against Kirby for destroying the Halberd all those years ago! Release the Heavy Lobster!" Meta Knight said as a dark aura enveloped him.

*Back to the heroes...*

They found themselves in a long corridor filled with boxes they have to jump and fly through in order to get through. They began to make their way through the maze of boxes as they heard loud noises coming from behind them.

" Guys! I think something else wants a piece of us!" Aya said as she ran ahead. They quickly ran to an open area as they saw several boxes flying off in several directions as they heard loud alarms going off behind them. Youmu and Kirby turned back and saw a large iron gate closing behind them. Aya pushed them through the gate.

" You two, go and take down this Meta Knight guy! Me and Green 'stache here'll take on this thing chasing us!" Youmu took this as an act of gratitude as the duo entered the doorway that had purple stars surrounding it.

The duo found themselves in a pitch black room as they heard a voice yelling at them.

" So you two have finally made it! Good! Now I get two destroy you and the accursed King Dedede!" Meta Knight's voice echoed through the room. Kirby and Youmu tightened their grips on their blades as the room lit up revealing a medium sized room with several windows, revealing an orange sky with various clouds in the sky.

The room itself had a metallic floor. They looked up and saw Meta Knight waiting patiently

on a small platform. He revealed his purple bat like wings before he leapt down. " Prepare yourselves!" Meta Knight drew out a golden sword handle as lightning pulsated out of the blade hole forming a spiky golden sword.

" Kirby! Let us stop Meta Knight and retrieve this ship part!" Youmu and Kirby braced themselves as Meta Knight launched himself at the group as the camera froze.

*Back to Aya and Luigi...*

Aya was flying up and down dodging various fireballs as Luigi was countering the fireballs with his green fireball slammed against the unknown assailant's attacks.

Aya began to take pictures of the attacks as she caught a glimpse of the attacker. The attacker was a golden mechanical lobster that had green lens like eyes. This machine was Heavy Lobster, a machine made on another planet.

### **Heavy Lobster ( Kirby Super Star Ultra)**

Heavy Lobster continued its fiery assault on the duo as Luigi burrowed himself under ground. Aya noticed that the Heavy Lobster didn't see Luigi disappearing as it continued firing fire at her. She flew down on to the Heavy Lobster's back and slammed her foot into its metal back.

Luigi had now positioned himself directly underneath Heavy Lobster and performed his trademark jumping uppercut that sent Lobster skyward and on fire with a loud screeching sound ringing out.

Aya was surprised at this. " Whoa! Green Bean! How did you do that!?"

" Well, with that attack if I hit an opponent at a close enough range, my Super Jump Punch gets a boost in strength and sets my opponent on fire."

" Cool. Well, keep pulling out those crazy attacks and we'll break this lobster!" Aya watched as Heavy Lobster fell from the ceiling and landed hard.

Heavy Lobster opened his mouth as several miniature versions of him flew out and dashed at Luigi. Luigi, using his superior jumping skills, leapt over them and threw a flaming hammer at Lobster, causing it to catch on fire again.

" Here! Let me help you cool off! Gale Fan!" Aya fired bursts of cold air that battered Heavy Lobster's armor. It began to crack as Luigi was crouching down as if charging up an attack.

" Green Missile!"

Ka boooooommmM!

The ground exploded at Luigi's feet as he propelling forward like a rocket, slamming his head into Heavy Lobster causing to explode and break.

" Whew! That was way too easy!" Aya said as she raised her fist to the sky in triumph. Luigi face palmed at this. " What?"

" Aya. I know that you're new to this adventure thing, but you never say things like ' That was easy' or ' What's the worst that could happen'! Something bad, like that, happens!" Luigi points off into the distance as three more Heavy Lobsters came crashing forward.

" Well, hopefully Youmu and Kirby are having a better time than us." Aya said as she winded up her fan.

Back to the Boss fight...

They were doing a good job against as they had already knocked off a quarter of his health.

" Humph. I was wrong to underestimate you two. Well no more! You both will die here by my sacred blade Galaxia!" Meta Knight said as he released a burst of darkness that blasted them out of the room and onto the outside walkway they were on earlier.

" Poyo! Poyo!" Kirby seemed to be upset by something. Youmu seemed to understand what Kirby was saying.

" I agree. This is not your friend. Rather, it's like we are facing a being of darkness!" Youmu gripped her swords.

Meta Knight landed before them flapping his wings as the air was charged with dark energy.

**Meta Knight Battle Theme ( Kirby Super Star Ultra)**

Youmu and Kirby dashed forward at Meta Knight who launched a sword beam at them.

" No you don't! Lotus Stance Cut!" Youmu fires her cross sword wave as it tore through Meta Knight's sword beam and smashed into his mask.

" Spin Attack!" Kirby hits Meta Knight with a fierce spin attack that sent him skyward.

" Tch! This is definitely not the Meta Knight who knocked me out." Youmu watched as Kirby exchanged sword blows with Meta Knight.

Back to the fight with Aya and Luigi...

They had finished fighting off the Heavy Lobsters and severely destroyed floor the causing Luigi to be carried by Aya. Aya, having a keen reporter's eye, saw a floating door beneath where the floor was.

" Hey! There's a door beneath the floor here." Aya flew into the door and found themselves in a warehouse filled with various boxes.

" Hmm? Just a warehouse with boxes in here. Well at least I can stretch my legs for a bit." Luigi said as they walked a bit.

" Ohhhh! Maybe we can find a ghost in here!" Aya said as Luigi began to shiver. A box at the end of their path.

" Gaaaaaaaahhhhhh!" Luigi ran from the box and hid behind another crate. Aya walked to the crate and kicked it open. What came out confused the duo. Meta Knight? Bound in rope that Aya quickly cut off of him.

" Thank you for freeing me, friend of Ziden and Yukari." Meta Knight said as he began fly.

" Wait! Hold on a sec- ond." Aya tried to stop Meta Knight only for him to fly through the door. " Come on, Greenie!" Aya grabs Luigi in



a choke hold before flying after Meta Knight.

*Back to the Boss Fight...*

Meta Knight was soundly beaten by Youmu and Kirby as he began to let out an evil laugh. " hahhahahahahahahh! You punks think you have beaten me, the mighty Meta Knight! Hah! Surely you jest!"

" That is because you are not the real Meta Knight! I am!" A purple cape fluttered in the air as the real Meta Knight pointed at the fake Meta Knight as his body took a transformation.

His mask gained a scar over the right eye and his cape became navy blue and tattered. His body became dark grey and his shoes turned bright red. Most startling was his sword turning from golden to silver. This imposter was Dark Meta Knight.

### **Dark Meta Knight Theme ( Kirby & the Amazing Mirror)**

DMK launched into the air and began to rain down a vicious assault of star s and sword beams.

" I knew this man was a fake!" Youmu exclaimed as she jumped backwards, slowly getting closer to the edge of the ship.

" Sword Beam!" Kirby launched a silver sword beam at DMK who simply blocked the attack with his cape.

" Humph! You will not beat me again, puffball!" DMK roared as landed from his aerial assault. " Dark Drill Rush!" DMK launched himself at Kirby while spinning like a drill.

Youmu sped past DMK and blocked the attack with a large amount of effort on her part. " *Dear gods. This strength is inhuman. We'd best be on our guard at all times, Myon.*"

" How dare you interfere girl!?" DMK grabbed Youmu by her blouse in order to set for his next attack.

" Dark Shuttle Loop!" DMK hits Youmu with a upward slash, drawing a lot of blood as he flipped backwards.

" Tchh!" Youmu clutched at her wound as she began to feel dizzy.

" Sword Spin!" Kirby runs and jumps while performing a vertical spin that slashed DMK across the back. " Final Cutter!" Kirby does a rising slash that knocked DMK upwards before doing a flip and slamming downwards, dragging DMK with him.

" Slash of Life and Death!" Youmu follows up with five successive slashes across DMK's face as he recoiled from the attack.

DMK lands a hard kick across the face of Youmu as she is knocked to the ground. " Die! Dark Drill Rush!" DMK spiraled towards the downed Youmu as a powerful gust of wind knocked DMK away.

" Aya." Youmu said as she got up. Aya lands behind her with Luigi unconscious in her arms. She dropped Luigi to the ground as he slowly regained consciousness.

" Humph! Getting more bugs to aid you won't help you in this battle!" DMK flipped into the air as Kirby and Youmu chased after him. " Fools!" DMK disappeared in thin air before reappearing behind Kirby and slashing him hard across the back causing him to fly towards the edge of the ship. Youmu, Aya and Luigi raced to catch as DMK landed and charged up energy into his blade.

He slammed the blade into the ground creating vicious pillars of wind that raced towards the group of four.

Whooooooooooooosssssssshhhhhhh h

The wind storm blasted the girls and guys off of the ship as DMK and Meta Knight flew after.

" You know that you cannot interfere in this battle, Meta Knight?" DMK asked as Meta Knight growled. " Good. Then watch as your

new friends die by my hand!"

" Gah! Why can't we fly!?" Aya asked as she felt something grab her wings.

" Aww! So the bird can't fly? Then allow me to take these useless wings from you!" Upon hearing these words, Aya began flip out and kicked DMK away.

" No! GET AWAY FROM MY WINGS, YOU BLACK ARMORED BASTARD!" Tears streamed from eyes as she frantically created powerful gusts of wind to blast DMK higher and higher into the air. The ground was rapidly approaching as Youmu and Luigi glided over to Aya to try and calm.

" GET AWAY! GET AWAY! GET AWWWWAAAAAAYYYYYY!" The group of four slammed into the ground, landing on a rocky cliff (reference to the first fight with Dark Meta Knight in Amazing Mirror).

Aya was still freaking out as she suddenly took flight and flew off into the direction of Cappy Town.

" Aya! Wait!" Luigi wailed as Youmu stopped him.

" Hopefully she'll be heading towards Reimu and the others." Youmu said as DMK landed in front of them.

Luigi fired several fireballs at DMK who swatted them away like tennis balls.

" Come Kirby! I shall end you now!" DMK charged at Kirby only to be knocked away by Youmu.

" Get ready, dark being! Lotus Stance Cut!" DMK tried to dodge Youmu's projectile only to be hit by it at full force. " Heart Carving Cut!" Youmu wraps herself in a pink aura and dashed forward, aiming her sword at DMK's feet. The attack knocks him skyward.

" I got him!" Luigi jumped up and slammed his flaming Ultra Hammer into the skull of DMK as he was now at quarter health.

" ENOUGH!" DMK refused to lose to that puffball again. Not when victory was so close to being his. " Die! Dark Tornado!" DMK spins with his sword raised high, turning into a small black tornado as he sucked in Kirby and Luigi. Youmu could hear the sounds of steel hitting flesh as Luigi and Kirby fell out of twister, bloodied and unconscious.

" Mister Luigi! Kirby!" Youmu looks at DMK. " How dare you do that to my friends!?"

" You'll be dead along with them so don't worry!" DMK charged at Youmu. He unleashed an unholy, sound barrier shattering, lightning fast slash attacks that sliced Youmu. Blood began to pool around Youmu's feet as she screamed in pain. DMK ended the attack with a strong diagonal cut that sent her flying towards Luigi and Kirby.

" Hah. Hah. Hahahaahahaahahaha! I did it, master! I have slain your enemies master!" DMK celebrated unaware of Youmu rising to her feet with a golden glow in her eyes.

" I... must... defeat... you... FOR MY FRIENDS!" A burst of light erupted from her body blinding DMK. When he regained his sight, he saw Youmu standing with several rings of light surrounding her. " Double Demon Fang!" She fired two shockwaves that slammed into DMK as he struggled to stay standing.. " I'll show what happens to people who hurt my allies!" Youmu's blades shined with a bright light. " Tiger Blade! Tiger's Rage! Omega Tempest! Hurricane Thrust! Sword Rain Alpha!" In rapid succession, she unleashed powerful arte after powerful arte as Meta Knight feed Kirby a Maxim-Tomato, fully healing the star warrior.

" Here. I found this in the crate I was trapped in." Meta Knight handed Kirby a star with an image of an hammer with a blue aura around. Kirby absorbed the star as a rope wrapped around his head and waist. He now had a colorful hammer in his hand.

Kirby ran to the injured DMK and jumped high into the heavens as Youmu backflipped away.

" Nooooooooo! Not when my victory was so close at hand!"

Kirby's hammer grew 2 extra sizes as it turn giant and golden as he plummeted to the earth as heat wrapped around it. " Grand Hammer Bomber!" The giant hammer smashed DMK as massive shockwave ripped through the area, even reaching as far as Cappy Town.

DMK let out a scream before shattering in mirror shards. An orb containing the emblem appeared Youmu as the lights surrounding her vanished. She felt all of her renewed energy leave as she passed out.

### **Green Greens ( Kirby's Epic Yarn)**

Youmu awoke with a panic as she saw Yuyuko trying eat Myon... again. She saw a rock chop her hand, forcing her to drop Myon. The rock came from Ziden who had Aya sitting in his lap crying softly into his shoulder. Kaguya was and Patchouli sitting next to him as KAguya was rubbing a new ring on her finger.

Everyone else was resting on beds... wait beds? Why are there beds in an restaurant? Youmu looked around and saw that they were in the cottage that Ziden put up a a day ago.

" Oh. Ziden, look! The egg is hatching!" Kaguya said as Ziden sighed.

" Wow, Ziden. Guess you should have read the fine print on that Doctor Bill, huh?" Patchouli teased, which is a rarity on its own part.

" Yep. Because I didn't, I am apparently married to a person whom I never wanted to be with in the first place! Damn that crafty doctor!" Ziden said as he shook his fist.

" Oh well. At least you can still marry other woman." Patchouli said with a shrug of her shoulder. " I totally forgot to ask this about you. Are you a Magician Youkai like me and the puppeteer? I sense that you have intense magical prowess."

" Me? Nope. 'I'm just an ordinary human who does ordinary things' just as my original self says." Ziden said.

" So you can use magic? How come I don't see you using it?" Patchouli asked.

" 2 reasons. One is that it's gone with my other powers and weapons. The other is I'm more of an physical attacker than a Magical anyway." Ziden explained.

" I see. Do you think that Ziden, Donald and Goofy will be alright getting the final ship piece?" Patchouli asked.

" Don't you worry, Patchouli! Donald and Goofy are both strong! They'll be back no problem!"

Sora said.

" Knowing you, you're probably complaining who tall that tower is." Yukari said.

" Oh come on. I'm don't complain that much... do I?" The clone Ziden asked.

" Yes. And, I hate saying this about my favorite and only nephew, you are also extremely lazy." Yuyuko said.

" No. I'm pretty sure I'm not that lazy." Clone Ziden said.

" Please! You asked Chen to change the channel on the T.V for you." Ran said as Chen nodded in agreement.

" And?" Ziden said.

" The remote was in your hand!" Chen exclaimed. While some of the girls didn't understand what a T.v or remote was, the ones that did looked at Ziden.

" My gods! You are as lazy as that anime depicted you!" Sanae exclaimed. " I don't see what that red haired girl saw in you!"

" Don't you worry! I'm going to break him out of his laziness!" Kaguya said as Ziden glared at her.

" Don't talk about that red head. It's already annoying that she drops by unannounced and gets mad when I don't go to her races or see her modeling shows! I don't know why I sponsor her." Ziden said as he scratched his head.

" Well now, lets see what those four are up to right now." Yukari opened a gap over where the T.V was as it formed a large screen. The screen showed Kirby, Donald, Goofy and Ziden climbing up the tower. The screen showed their health bars and lives. Ziden's health bar was the only one nearly empty.

*All right! This part was originally going to be hard for to do, but please follow this with ease. The four characters speech is normal print while the cottage dwellers are italicized. The four characters can hear the cottage dwellers talking and vice versa.*

### **Nutty Noon ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

" Oh. My. Gawwwwwddddd! Why is this tower so damn big!?" Ziden complained while laying down in an rest room as Donald and Goofy fought to catch their breath.

" Gawrsh! I don't know! Lucky there are these rest rooms every so often." Goofy said while resting against a wall.

" Poyo!" Kirby jumped onto Ziden's head and began to rest.

" I wonder what Sora is doing right now?" Donald asked.

" Probably swapping saliva with that Shrine Maiden." Ziden simply said.

Reimu heard this while drinking tea as spat it all out. " *What the hell, Ziden!*"

" Hmmm? I could have sworn I heard Reimu yelling at me." Ziden said as he scratched his jaw.

" *I am yelling at you, you retarded hero!*"

" Oh shit!" Ziden realized that Yukari was watching them from a gap and heard everything. " Reimu! I just want to go on point and say; it was Donald that said that."

" Wak!"

" *Bullshit and a half! I heard and saw you say that!*"

"... No you didn't."

" Yes! *!! Did!*"

" Obviously. That was an illusion of your mind!" Ziden moved his hands in mystifying manner. " Oooooooooooo! AhhhhhhHhhhhhhh!"

" *Ziden. Please stop being stupid.*" Yuyuko said with a serious tone in her voice.

"... You stop being smart!"

"... "

" *Kill him when he gets back, Yuyu.*"

" Okay!"

" *Good job, husband! Way to piss off the Ruler of the Netherworld... even if she's your aunt.*" Kaguya's voice rang into the room.



" Yeah. I'm getting ready for that ass beating when I get back. Of course I could have said something much more suggestive about Reimu and Sora." Ziden said as he got and walked to the door.

" *Oh? Then let me hear it, smartass!*"

" Oh, it's nothing much. I just wonder how long it will take for Sora to use his 'keyblade' to open your 'keyhole'!" Ziden laughed at this.

Everyone took a moment to register the joke as their faces ( minus Sora and Chen) turned bright red.

" *Oh my! How uncouth!*" Kaguya chuckled at this.

" *My. My.*" Patchouli covered her face in a book.

Reisen looked at her feet. Yuyuko was being immature and wooing. Marisa was doing the same. Aya calmed down after hearing the pervy joke and giggled into the clone's shoulder. Bowser let out a laugh. Youmu got the gist of the joke and shook her head in shame. Reimu was pissed off from the joke while Sora didn't get the joke at all. Chen didn't get the joke at all, as well.

" *I don't get it. Why would Reimu have a keyhole? She's not a world.*" Sora said as everyone facepalmed.

" Come on guys! The top of the tower is just up ahead." Ziden said as he entered the door.

### **Boss Prelude ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

The group of four saw that they were a white floor and the background was a colorful vortex that seemed like they were in another dimension.

" Oh dude! Look! The Sail!" Ziden ran to grab the orb as he blasted back by something. However the blast did damage and caused to lose a life.

A ball of fire consumed the sail as it gained fiery mohawk, fiery wings, tailfeathers and red eyes. This being was the Sphere Doomer to end all Sphere Doomers; Grand Doomer!

### **Vs. Grand Doomer ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

" Shoulda saw that coming!" Donald said as he took out his staff.

" Gosh Ziden. I guess you should have thought before you leapt." Goofy said as Ziden respawned.

" Nah! That's just how I roll! Lets teach this phoenix knock-off a lesson!" Ziden said as pointed Crimson Edge at Grand Doomer.

Ziden charged at the large Boss enemy and performed 3 swift kicks that missed their target completely. Turns out Grand Doomer can teleport to dodge attacks!

" Oh great! It can teleport!" Ziden said as he landed to the ground.

" I got it! Thunder!" Donald summoned a bolt of lightning from the sky that slammed into Grand Doomer.

" I got 'em!" Goofy threw his shield at the stunned Grand Doomer, causing miniscule damage.

Grand Doomer fired several balls of fire at the group of four. Kirby inhaled the balls of fire, becoming Fire Kirby. Kirby wrapped himself in fire and dashed through the balls of fire and through the Grand Doomer itself. Grand Doomer wrapped itself in more fire and floated off into the right side of the screen. He exploded across the screen hitting everyone except Kirby because he guarded.

" Tch! Razor Flare!" Ziden fired a blade of fire that was spinning like a buzzsaw. Grand Doomer dodged the attack by teleporting. However Ziden anticipated this and dashed towards where Grand Doomer reappeared, slamming his fist into the face of Grand Doomer.

Grand Doomer flew into the background. Grand Doomer began to home in on Kirby, as Donald unleashed a new spell.

" Aero!" A barrier of wind surrounded and guarded against Grand Doomer's attack.

" Demon Lancer!" Ziden lunged forward and performed a dashing stab attack that exploded against Grand Doomer.

Grand Doomer had enough of this as he emitted a bright light and became a brown ball with white eyes. Several golden stars were on this ball version of Grand Doomer. A bright flash of blue light appeared as a Blade Knight glowing with the familiar aura.

" Kirby. I think you should inhale that there monster." Goofy said as Kirby spat out his ability and inhaled the Blade Knight. He donned his trademark sword hat, but everyone noticed something that the hat was different.

The hat was bigger and had crystalline figures on the sides of the hat. The sword was even different as it was larger and had a large star on it.

### **Super Copy Boss 1 ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

Grand Doomer began to bounce around as Kirby spun his sword above his head before it grew gigantic and he slammed it into Grand Doomer, causing cracks to form on the ball.

*" Whoa! Could kirby always do stuff like this!?" Sora asked.*

*" Maybe. This is the first time I've ever seen him do this." Mario replied.*

Grand Doomer jumped into the background as he slowly approached the stage. He landed on the stage, only for Kirby to slam a giant version of a Chef's Knife into the ball, causing more cracks to form.

Kirby followed up with a giant paper fan that shattered the ball, revealing an angry Grand Doomer. It appeared to be charging up a desperation attack.

*" Kirby! Finish it!" Everyone chanted in unison.*

" Poyo!" Kirby began to combo Grand Doomer with various giant instruments of pain, ending with a strong slash from his over sized sword.

Grand Doomer began to violently explode as the sails flew into Goofy's hands as everyone did various victory poses as they were warped back to the Lor Starcutter.

### **Lor Starcutter ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

Magolor was on the hull of the newly rebuilt ship, clapping happily. " Thank for helping to rebuild my ship. High fives, low fives and all that jazz." Magolor said.

Reimu, Marisa and Sora arrived on the scene. Reimu did not look happy with Ziden as she tapping her gohei in her hand.

" Okay now Reimu! Those were just jokes! There is no need to-"

" Marisa. Spark him." Reimu simply said as she walked to the ship with Sora and Kirby.

" Now Marisa. There is no need to- Oh God!" Ziden ran for his life as he saw Marisa charging up a Master Spark.

" Master Spark!" A giant colorful laser blasted Ziden skyward as she tucked her hakkero away and walked to the ship as Donald and Goofy ran back to the cottage. She rummaged through her pockets as she pulled a stack of spell cards and looked through them. Some of the spell cards were fully restored while the rest were still being unsealed by her Exsphere.

" So Magolor? Are you going to head back home?" Reimu asked.

" Indeed. You four are welcome to come with me." Magolor said as all four of them nodded their heads. " Very well. To Halcandra!"

The group of four felt the ship lurched upwards. Magolor pressed some buttons as a star shaped gap appeared and they flew through it and saw a large volcano. All of a sudden the ship is buffeted by a large amount of fireballs as they crash landed near the top of the volcano.

" Dear Gods! What was that!?" Reimu screamed as she dusted herself off.

" It can't be! Why is Landia attacking us!?" Magolor exclaimed.

" Landia?" Sora asked.

" A Dragon that has protected Halcandra for generations." Magolor simply said.

" Poyo!" Kirby had a look of determination on his face. As did Sora and Reimu.

" So are we going to take down this dragon or what!?" Marisa asked as she hopped on her broom and took off.

### **Boss Prelude Extra ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

They found themselves on a Mountain summit as Kirby grabbed a purple star with a ninja star image on it as Kirby began a transformation sequence that was postponed until their fight with this Landia creature.

They entered the battle arena which was a grassy platform with lava in the background. The creature known as Landia descended to the ground in front of them. The dragon had four heads, arranged in a diamond formation. The top head had a golden crown on its head as well as an X shaped scar. All of the heads had green eyes. The dragon was about Dyna Blade's size ( when compared to Kirby).

" All right! Time for a Dragon to get Sparked!" Marisa said.

### **Vs. Landia ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

Landia fired several fireballs at the group as they easily dodged the attack. Kirby proceeded to transform.

Kirby flips into the air as an energy shuriken formed as well as autumn leaves blowing around Kirby. They eventually vanish and formed a skullcap with a metal headpiece imprinted with a star insignia. He pulls out a small katana and landed to the ground.

" Cool! He looks like a ninja!" Sora said.

" Focus Sora!" Reimu shouted as she fired several purple needles at Landia.

Kirby threw a flurry of kunais at Landia as it bellowed in pain. Sora jumped and hit Landia with a strong three hit combo, sending Landia reeling with the third hit. Reimu hits Landia across the head with an arc kick as Marisa tackled Landia into the invisible wall.

Landia slapped Marisa and Reimu away with its tail before blasting them with fire balls. Kirby slashed Landia hard across the chest, drawing blood as Sora pointed his keyblade at Landia.

" Deep Freeze!" A small chunk of ice fired out from his keyblade and exploded with chilling air against Landia's wound. Sora followed up with a strong swipe of his keyblade and slammed it across the jaw of the left head.

" Homing Amulets!" Reimu threw several large spinning amulets that racked up alot of hits on Landia as it let out a loud roar.

Landia got low to the ground and began to perform several tail swipes hoping to catch Sora with the attack. Sora crossed his arms across his chest and blasted Landia away, by activating his Valor Form.

" Quad Shock!" Kirby slashed Landia with his katana as several shockwaves hit Landia, causing more damage. Sora followed with a flurry of aerial combos as Reimu flew in to assist Sora with the assault.

" Youkai Buster!" Reimu fired a large amount of amulets at Landia, causing to rage out.

The crown on its head let out a bright light as something shocking happened. Landia split into four different dragons.

" All right! One for each of us!" Sora said as slammed his keyblades together.

" Well I got my one! Miasma Sweep!" Marisa performed a flying uppercut that slammed into jaw of Landia.

" Yeah! Knock them all together and finish 'em in one blow!" Reimu said as batted a Landia into the center.

" Ninja Kick!" Kirby performs a downward kick that knocked another Landia into the center. All four Landias were in the center as Sora and Reimu began their final attack.

" Sora!" Reimu shouted as Sora threw her the Star Seeker and she caught it. "Hi-yahhh!" They slashed through the Landia as it fell to the ground defeated and beaten. Its golden crown rolled off its head and stopped at the feet of someone they didn't expect.

" What the- Magolor? What are you doing here?" Sora asked as Reimu was playing the Star Seeker.

" My. My. \*claps\* I had expected you guys to strong, but to take down Landia. That is impressive! I must thank you for allowing me to obtain this valuable treasure." Magolor picked up the crown and placed it on as power began course through him.

**Let Me Explain Everything! ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

" Y-y-y-you used us!" Reimu said in anger.

" Of course I did. This crown, The Master Crown, was what I truly wanted." Magolor stated. " With the Master Crown, I can rule over the universe! And I'll start with Dreamland!" Magolor began to transform into a new form.

Magolor's body now was a gaseous, blood-red body with a purple-blue aura emanating from it. His hands had a magical sun shaped runes seperating them from his body. His hat grows outward and furls into a jester's hat, obtaining a purple hue with white tips. His scarf now becomes white and is cinched together by purple, silver-buckled belt. The Master Crown sits atop his head, its claws noticeably claspng down on said head.

" Goodbye you fools!" Magolor flies off into gap created by the Starcutter as the Landia's placed the group of four on their backs and flew after them.

*Back on Dreamland...*

Everyone was outside looking at the dark skies. A portal opened next to Youmu, sucking her in as Ziden and Meta Knight dove in after her before it closed.

They found themselves on a orange pathway in an another dimension as a pick crystal containing a Kirby sized Warrior appeared in the background.

A large mirror sucked in Sanae as Reisen and Donald dove into it to save her.

Kaguya was sucked into a void as Patchouli and Aya dove into to save her. They found themselves on a rainbow colored path as a small Kirby sized creature was bouncing on a ball.

A dark vortex sucked in Yuyuko as Mario, Luigi and Goofy charged in after her. They found themselves staring down a black star shaped



enemy with a pinkish eye.

Yukari saw that there was giant dark form looming over Castle Dedede. She, King Dedede and Bowser drove there using his car as they recognized the form.

" I told you I would return, denizens of Dreamland!" The dark form bellowed as Dedede paled.

" Gahhhh! You're-!"

The Illusionary Heroes are now neck deep in trouble as they must free them selves from the evil beings that have captured them. But unknown to them, they were being watched by three Rulers of Darkness.

One was Fawful. One was a man wearing a black trenchcoat with a black shirt underneath. Black pants and was wearing black sunglasses hiding his glowing red eyes. The man had combed back dirty blonde hair( I think.). This was Ruler 5.

The other was also a male but was wearing a black leather coat that is red on the inside and lined with yellow, and also has a large grey section that covers the lower half and shoulders of the coat. He had Amber orange eyes and long white hair, as well as the three spikes on the top and sides of his head. Most notable about this man was thee Heartless Emblem on his chest. This was Ruler 9.

" Humph. Let us see if those two are worthy of ruling alongside us." Ruler 9 said.

" Yes. I'm interested to see how these evil beings from another world fight." Ruler 5 said while observing the fights closely.

*Author's Note: The battles of intense Kirbyness shall commence next chapter. The next Chapter ends the Kirby arc and begins the next Arc. Even though you wouldn't have thought about it but I personally think of Sora and Reimu of being a good couple. Seeing as how they*

*are both similar to each. Immense natural talent and major importance of their respective storylines. Also this Chapter shows more of Ziden's personality. He is that lazy when not adventuring and is extremely perverted ( close to Master Roshi level). Ziden does make offensive jokes and is extremely immature. Those evil beings that Ruler 5 was talking are all final bosses from past Kirby games, so try and guess them. R&R!*

## Gensokyo Analysis

Ziden: So its Alice on the chopping block today, huh?

Alice: Huh? Are you about to eat me or something?

Ziden: Nah. That's just a term from the Outside World. So then you fight using dolls, correct?

Alice: Yes. I specialize in using dolls to swarm my opponents in Danmaku.

Ziden: Well your dolls are finely crafted. You make them yourself?

Alice: Yes I do. I do have alot of time on my hands. I do live by myself.

Ziden: Yep. Yukari told me how you live by yourself. With a bunch of dolls.

Alice: Did she tell you about my dream to make a self operating doll? Capable of doing things without me controlling them.

Ziden: That is quite the dream.

Alice:\* stares blankly at Ziden\*

Ziden:\*sigh\* I guess I can lend you some Spellbooks to help you out.

Alice: Thank you.

Ziden: Jeez. Must I always crumble under the gaze of girls like you?

Alice: Like me?

Ziden: Girls with doll-like qualities.

Alice:... Is that supposed to be a joke?

Ziden: I don't know. Judging from how Yukari and Marisa describe your lifestyle, I'd say you are socially awkward.

Alice:... I'm not socially awkward.

Ziden: You kinda are.

## Final Boss Blitz: 0's Revenge

" Great! What's going on now!?" Ziden exclaimed as Meta Knight walked to his side.

" I'm not sure. I can only say that it is not good." Meta Knight said as the crystal began to spin in place.

" It is my fault for dropping my guard like that." Youmu hung her head in shame. Ziden calmly places his hand on her shoulder to reconcile her.

" Don't worry about it, kid. Everyone drops their guard and gets caught in a trap sometimes." Ziden said as Youmu cheered up.

" Thank you for that, Ziden. Even though Yukari told us about your rude personality while you were asleep, you are a really nice person." Ziden scoffed at this. Yukari was always spreading rumors about when she wasn't hibernating.

" *Damn gossiping Hag.*" Ziden thought as they heard the sound of something breaking. They all turned to see the Crystal had several cracks in it. Ziden and Youmu could sense the power emitting from the crystal. They shuddered from the immense power as Meta Knight didn't seem to be affected by it.

" So. Fate has allowed me to test my skills against you again." Meta Knight said as he drew Galaxia.

The Crystal exploded as the figure inside floated down in front of the trio.

The kirby sized being had a hot pink body, wore whitish-platinum armor with two golden horns rising up from the top of his mask. His mask had a cross shaped opening that showed his glowing dark red eyes that seemed to pierce through the bodies of Youmu and Ziden.

What threw them off the most was his angelic like wings which seemed to contradict Meta Knight's bat-like wings.

" So, we meet again young knight." The Knight said as he approached Meta Knight. The scared duo noticed that the knight was somewhat larger than Meta Knight. " I see that you have allies with you." He sets his gaze on Ziden and Youmu who felt the very blood in their veins freeze. " I see. Those two are sensing my power and are frightened by it. But I would be wrong to say that these guys are weak. I sense a dormant power in the girl and the power of the phoenix coming from the boy."

Those words shook Ziden back to reality as he turned to Youmu. He grabbed her hand and stared into her Exsphere. " Well I'll be..." Ziden muttered this as Youmu looked confused. " Youmu? When you fought against that fake Meta Knight, did you feel a surge of power flow through you and rings of light surrounding you as well?"

Youmu thought back at her rare burst of anger against Dark Meta Knight and how she brutally attacked the man. She had remembered the rings of light surrounding her and the surge of strength she felt while attacking the vile being. " Yes."

" I can't believe it. You achieved Overlimit; a technique that boost the strength and endurance as well as allowing access to the powerful artes known as Mystic Artes." Ziden explained as Youmu strangely understood everything Ziden said. She was a smart girl, but she was very dense to the ways of people. This allowed for people to easily trick her.

" Can I activate this 'Overlimit' at will?"

" Only if the Overlimit bar is filled." Ziden points to her Exsphere as she noticed something new.

On the golden part of the Exsphere ( the Key Crest. Yeah, thought I forgot about that, didja?) there was a black line that looked a bar of some sort.

" How do I fill it?" Youmu asked.

" By giving and receiving damage." Ziden simply said as they turned to the unknown powerhouse.

" I believe that the time for talk is over. I've traveled through the infinite reaches of time and space to face you again, knight." The knight said as Ziden was shocked.

This man had apparently traveled through time, just to fight Meta Knight.

" Ziden. The man you see before you is known as Galacta Knight." Meta Knight said as Ziden's face paled.

" Hmm. Judging from your expression, you know who I am." GK said as Ziden's legs began to shake.

*" No. This can't be! Why? Why did we have to encounter someone this powerful, this early!?"* Ziden's panic was easily seen by Youmu and Meta Knight. Ziden, normally wouldn't be afraid to fight the legendary warrior that Yukari told him about in stories when he was a child, but he had lost his powers and a lot of his weapons.

" Ziden. Don't forget, you have allies to help you in this." Youmu's encouragement brought Ziden back to his senses. So what if Galacta Knight, the man who single handily took out the Outer Gods and was sealed because the Gods feared his power. Ziden's fear was replaced with a sharp grin on his face.

" Be warned, warriors. I have become much stronger since I last fought the Knight and the Star Warrior, so you all had best prepare yourselves." GK summoned a pink lance to his left hand and a white shield that had a pink cross on it.

" Prepare yourselves!" Meta Knight roared as intense music began to play.

## **Vs. Galacta Knight ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

Ziden made the first move as he jumped over GK and slashed him hard across the back. GK spins around and stabs Ziden in his right shoulder with his lance, causing to clutch it in pain.

Meta Knight performed his Drill Rush attack and drilled into the back of GK. GK kicked Meta Knight away with a powerful kick to the face as Youmu appeared above him.

Youmu slashed GK across the face with a horizontal slash with Roukanken and a follow-up vertical slash with Hakurouken.

Ziden performed a sliding kick that knocked GK upwards as he retaliated by firing several Knight Beams at Meta Knight as Youmu stood in front of him.

" Netherworld Reflection Slash!" Youmu, using Hakurouken, slashed the air in front of her, creating a blue barrier that absorbed the Knight Beams. The Knight Beams spun around in the barrier before flying back at GK at double strength. They exploded against him as he chuckled.

" Not bad girl." GK stated as he placed his shield over his face as the four points on the cross began to glow. An intense barrage of stars flew out from the shield as they rapidly slammed into her reflective shield. Ziden noticed the shield was cracking against the pressure of the attacks as Ziden attacked.

"Lightning Stinger!" Lightning blasted out from Crimson Edge as they pierced through the body of GK, dealing massive damage to him.

GK flew towards the center of the room. He raised his lance to the sky as starry beams shot out from it as it began to move in an clock-like manner.

Seeing how Meta Knight and Youmu could fly, they had no problem dodging the attack. Ziden, however, could not fly and this is what

happened.

" Gwaaaaaaaahhh!" Ziden is slammed and dragged along the path as he screamed for Youmu and Meta Knight to help him.

" Rising Falcon!" Youmu dive bombed at GK as she dashed through him using Roukanken as she landed with grace and style.

GK was slammed to the ground by the attack. Ziden was able get up as Galacta Knight used his own version of the Mach Tornado.

Ziden noticed that the tornado was homing in on him. " Ziden! Watch out!" Youmu tried to warn Ziden, but was too late. Ziden sucked into the tornado and then thrown skyward as he shouted something to Youmu.

" Youmu! Finish him off!" Youmu fished around in her pocket and pulled out a freshly unsealed Spellcard.

" Life Ending Sword: Slash of Meditation!" Youmu wraps her sword in light, greatly extending extending its reach as she raised it over her head. " Ittou Ryoudan!" Youmu slices through the powerful knight as powerful energy exploded from his body.

Youmu did not notice that the ground was glowing beneath her and Meta Knight. A large pillar of fire erupted from the ground underneath Meta Knight and Youmu as they were scorched from the attack.

" Alas. I'm afraid that this battle is over, Warrior Ziden." GK said as Ziden felt rage fill his being.

" I refuse to lose! I will win against you!" Ziden exclaimed as he heard a familiar voice in the back of his head.

" *Then summon your power. With it your victory will be assured.*" This was the same voice that was in Ziden's dream back in Rogueport. Ziden held out his left hand as fire formed the weapon that Ziden had in his dream.



The exact same Keyblade that Ziden held in his dream.

" T-t-that weapon! Then that means that you are- Gahhhh!" Ziden had slashed through Galacta Knight as he floated up into the background. " Not bad, Chosen One. Use your power wisely and do not worry about your friends. They will be healed when you leave this realm." Galacta Knight said as he vanished in a burst of light.

They reappeared back on the field next to Kirby's house. Youmu and Meta Knight get back up and noticed that their wounds were gone.

" Ziden. Is that a-" Youmu asked as she pointed the weapon in Ziden's left hand.

" We'll talk about it later." Ziden said as he looked around. Ziden noticed the large being floating over Castle Dedede. " Wait a minute! Isn't that-!?"

" Ziden. Youmu. Let's go!" Meta Knight began to run down the path towards the castle as the large being turned to them and snapped his sharp, clawed finger as they heard a familiar sound.

A large amount of Soldiers, Crescendo, Large Bodies and Snow Lily Heartless surrounded them. And this wasn't a small amount of Heartless either. This was an army amount of Heartless.

Ziden sees this and sheathes Crimson Edge as he places his new Keyblade in his dominant hand. " All right! Let's see what a keyblade can do!" Ziden and Youmu charged forward at the army of Heartless, ready to fight for their lives.

*To Sanae, Reisen and Donald...*

They found themselves on a brick pathway.

### **Rainbow Route ( Kirby & The Amazing Mirror)**

" Tch! This is ridiculous! Why do we have to deal with this crap while Reimu and her boytoy gets to go on some alien planet!?" Sanae

complained as they walked down the path.

" Hmmm? If I didn't know better, I'd say you were jealous of Reimu." Reisen pointed out.

" I'm not jealous, you crazy rabbit!" Sanae continues to walk down the path.

" I hope the others are alright." Donald said as the girls looked confused.

" Did you understand what he said?" Sanae asked.

" He said something about hoping that the others are alright." Reisen answered.

" Well we might as well have a conversation while walking,huh?" Sanae asked as Reisen nodded. Donald just continued walking down that path.

" So Sanae? Why didn't you get into that Milk craze that Ziden caused?" REisen asked.

" Umm? Maybe because I'm already grown enough?" Sanae made a good point. She was definitely more blessed than the other girls. Maybe it's because of her powers to cause miracles. Maybe Kanako and Suwako snuck some sort of godly blessing on her. Who knows?

" But Ziden and Ike said something that seems to be coming true." Reisen looked at Sanae who looked into her eyes before she continued talking. " Ike said that on this journey, we need to get used to the sight of blood and the thought of killing our foes. This adventure is so different from our ones in Gensokyo. There all we did is blast each other with Danmaku and Spellcards. I'd never thought that I would ever have to kill someone in all my life."

" Yes. This is adventure is one we are never going to forget. It was very smart of you guys to come and enlist the help of Lady Eirin. Of

course, the only reason that the Princess wanted to tag along was because of Ziden. I just hope that in the event that Lady Kaguya and Mokou end up landing on a world, Ziden will be able to stop them from fighting." Reisen sighed as she remembered Ziden's relationship with the two immortals. *" Even though I will never admit it to my master's face, but what she did by tricking Ziden into fighting Mokou was beyond cruel. It was downright evil. Forcing two lovers and best friends into killing each other. I can still hear Mokou crying in pure rage. What's worst is that Ziden doesn't fully remember his relationship with Mokou. \*shudders\* I remember that episode of his anime when he raged out on some criminals tore them limb from gory limb. If he regains his memories, will he do the same to us?"*

" Hello? Dreamland to Reisen?" Sanae tapped her knuckles on Reisen's forehead, similar to knocking on a door.

" Huh? Oh. I'm sorry. I was just thinking about something." Reisen as they felt a chill run over them.

They look up and saw a being in a purple cloak floating ahead of them. He had purple hands with claw like nails. His purple head with yellow eyes had a helmet that had two eyeholes above his eye and 5 golden horns coming out the top of it.

Most notable about this creature was the two golden rimmed, rectangular mirrors floating around him.

" Hey! Who are you!?" Donald rudely asked.

" I am the future ruler of this world. You worthless fleas can call me Dark Mind." Dark Mind said as Donald pulled out his staff.

" Oh yeah!? Well you're going have to deal with us first!" Sanae exclaimed as she assumed a battle stance.

" Very well. I shall teach you your place insects!" Dark Mind teleported in front of the trio as they were locked into the 2D plane.

## **Dark Mind Phase 2 ( Kirby & The Amazing Mirror)**

" Haaaaahhh!" Dark Mind fired a barrage of red stars. Reisen blasted the stars away with bullet Danmaku.

Sanae ran up an invisible wall and vaulted off the wall with her foot stretched out. Sanae slammed her foot into Dark Mind's face causing him to clutch it in pain.

Donald kept up the damage intake by blasting him with the Thunder spell multiple times. Dark Mind swiped Sanae across the stomach, forcing her away and drawing blood in the process.

" Illusionary Blast!" Reisen fired her laser into the face of Dark Mind, causing to scream in even more pain. After all, it is a laser to the face, so no doubt about the pain he's feeling.

" Grrr!" Dark Mind opened his cloak to reveal a burning red eye that functioned as his body. Reisen saw this, and thanks to years of Kaguya forcing her to play video games with her, and automatically assumed it was a weak spot.

" Mind Explosion!" Reisen fired the rocket bullet straight into the eye orb, dealing intense damage to mirror deity.

" Hi-yah!" Sanae, seeing the amount of damage that Dark Mind took when his eye got struck, follows up with a barrage of kicks and punches straight to the eye.

" Damn you fleas!" Dark Mind threw a bomb at the trio. Donald batted the bomb back at him, exploding with a crack of force.

" This guy is pathetic! Let's finish him with a spell card!" Reisen pulled out a spellcard with Sanae doing the same.

" Prayer: Charm of Good Commerce!" A large number of amulets flew into the eye of Dark Mind as Reisen prepared the killing blow.

" Charming Look: Disjointed Circular Corona!" Reisen fired enormous rings of lunatic energy that slammed into the weak point of Dark Mind as his body violently exploded in to mirror shards. But little did they know, this will not be the last time we see Dark Mind.

" Hah! Well that was awesome! My spell card was alot more powerful than it was before!" Sanae said as a bright light enveloped them.

They found themselves back outside the cottage as they see Ziden, Youmu and Meta Knight fighting off hordes of Heartless.

" Huh? Our friends are in trouble!" Reisen said while taking pot shots at the Heartless horde.

To Kaguya, Patchouli and Aya...

" I know who you are, you vile trickster!" Kaguya said to the being bouncing on the ball.

" Oh. I didn't know I was famous! I guess there is no reason for to keep up this charade." The small creature jumped into the air as he showed his true form.

His hat was reminiscent of Mirror Kirby. His brown shoes grew in size. He gained two yellow rodlike wings with colorful scales.

" Guys! Get ready for a fight! This freak of nature is Marx, a devilish trickster who got all his power from a wish!" Kaguya exclaimed.

" Aya. Are you sure you're alright to fight?" Patchouli asked.

" " I'm fine. But just to make sure I don't relapse." Aya tucks her wings away and proceeds to fight on the ground.

" Aya! We gotta protect the magician while she's casting, got it!?" Aya nods. " Good! You're going back to hell Marx! Where you belong!" Kaguya said while forming 2 light katanas.

**Marx Battle theme ( Kirby Super Star Ultra)**

Marx lets out a cackle while teleporting around. " Patchouli! If you have any Lightning Magic, use it! Its his weakness!" Kaguya said while trying to pinpoint where Marx will appear next.

Aya saw where he reappeared and shot out several blades of air at Marx whom was unable to dodge the sudden attack.

Blades slashed his face drawing blood as Patchouli casted a spell. Kaguya ran up behind the stunned trickster and performed an rising spin attack that sliced up Marx's back.

" Why you!?" Marx spat out an orb that slammed into the ground, splitting into two ice orbs that went in opposite directions.

Aya, knowing that if she jumped over the attack it would hit Patchouli, stood her ground and kicked the ice orb back into the face of Marx.

He began to glow with a blue light while puffing up his face.

Kaguya jumped over to duo and stood in front of Patchouli to guard her from this brutal attack.

A burst of blue arrows flew out from his mouth and slammed themselves into the body of Kaguya as blood began to pour from her body and pool on the moving rainbow path.

" Gahhh! Why didn't you die!?" Marx exclaimed as he floated to the top of the screen.

" Spark Wave!" A large ball of electricity formed around Marx. The sphere of lightning began to zap Marx as he cried out in pain from being hit by his weakness.

" Patchouli! I think you should hit him with your brand of magic." Aya said while helping Kaguya pull arrows out of her body.

" Summer Flame!" Patchouli shot out a fast fire ball that slammed into the electrified Marx causing him to be set of fire. He shot up into

the sky as 4 green seeds fell to the ground.

The seeds sprouted large thorns that the trio grazed with pure ease.

" Watch out! He going to come out of the ground now!" Just as Kaguya said an electrified shadow appeared underneath Aya and began to follow her.

Aya jumped into the air as Marx flew upwards to slam into her body. Aya, using her Tengu strength, slammed her foot into Marx's face, causing it to cave in around her foot.

" How can this happen!? Nova was supposed to make me all powerful! This is just when Kirby bested me all those years ago!" Marx said as a white light shone off of him.

" Emerald City!" Pillars of green crystals surrounded the girls as Marx finished charging his attack.

Marx fired a powerful white heat beam that slammed into the crystals and effectively... did nothing.

" Time for a double spell card combo!" Aya said while pulling out a spell card as PAtchouli did the same.

" No! I refuse to die again!" Marx screamed at the top of his lungs.

" Fire Metal Sign: St. Elmo's Pillar!" Patchouli summoned an intense pillar of fire that slammed into Marx.

" And for the finishing touch! Whirl Sign: Maple Leaf Fan!" Aya swung her fan creating a large tornado that slammed into the pillar of fire, creating a twister of flames that roasted poor ole Marx alive as he fell down.

" No. I refuse to lose!" Marx tried to split in half to form his powerful black hole but failed miserably.

" Man! I thought our combo attack would have finished him!" Aya said.

" Indeed. " Patchouli said while holding her grimoire to her chest.

" Then I'll finish it!" Kaguya crosses her katanas across her chest. " Ziden's not the only one who can copy cool moves! Oni Giri!" Kaguya dashed through Marx with a cross slash as Marx's body was cleaved into 4 parts as he violently exploded.

The girls left the area as they were back on dreamland as they Yuyuko and her group standing next to them.

" Hey. did you win your fight already?" Aya asked.

" Yep! Mario, Luigi and Goofy did some awesome combo attack to finish off that Dark Nebula guy!" Yuyuko happily said.

" Hmm?" Kaguya looks over the hill and sees Ziden the rest of the group fending off swarms of heartless. " Oh no! My hubbie is in trouble!"

" I'll save you nephew!" Yuyuko charged down the hill with the others following close behind.

Back to Kirby, Sora, Reimu and Marisa...

### **Another Dimension ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

After their fight against Landia, Magolor claimed the MAster Crown and flew off into a star shaped portal. Landia forced the group of four onto their backs and chased after Magolor and the Starcutter.

After battling through waves of Heartless and enemies created by Magolor. They found themselves battling the Lor Starcutter with Magolor assisting it.

" Hah! You punks think you can take me on!? Get real!" Magolor said.



The Starcutter fired its wings like Cutter projectiles as the 4 heroes dodged the attack.

" Get ready to go down! I'll handle this ship, ze! You three go after Magolor!" Marisa pulls the broom off her back and jumps off Landia and proceeds to fight along side it. The trio chased after the fleeing Magolor.

" All right, ze! Time for some demolition!" Marisa cracked her knuckles as Landia let out a roar a roar.

The Starcutter fired several stars from out its emblem. " So the emblem is the first to go!" Marisa fired several Magic Missile at the emblem piercing through the stars in the process.

The ship fired its wings at Marisa. Landia fired a blazing star that burnt the wings to dust.

" Hah! This ship is nothing!" Marisa grazed the rapid attacks.

The oars shot out from the ship like spears. One of them slashed Marisa across her side.

The sail sucked in large volumes of air while spinning in 360s. Marisa moved in circles to dodge the vacuum attack. " Enough of this! Love Sign: Master Spark!" Marisa fired her trademark laser attack that swallowed the ship, severely damaging it and stopping it from fighting anymore.

" All right! Time to go help Reimu and the others! What the- Whoa!" Marisa was sucked into one of Yukari's gaps and found herself floating next Yukari.

" Good. At least I got one of you. And a cute little dragon as well!" Yukari petted Landia as they heard the giant figure laughing.

" Doesn't matter how many reenforcements you get, you'll never stop this Nightmare!" Nightmare exclaimed as Yukari, Bowser, Dedede,

Marisa and Landia took battle stances.

*Back to the Kirby fight...*

Kirby, Reimu and Sora stared down Magolor while standing on a starry path.

" So! You're still going to try and beat me! How foolish! I shall drown Dreamland in my sorrow!" Magolor exclaimed as Kirby felt a familiar presence coming Magolor.

### **Vs. Magolor ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

" Persuasion Needles!" Reimu throws several purple needles that stabbed into the body of Magolor.

Sora, still in his Valor Form with Reimu still holding Star Seeker, slammed keyblade into the skull of Magolor.

Magolor fired several purple balls of energy at the trio. Sora used his Guard ability to block the attack as a loud ringing sound rang out.

Sora noticed him charging up as a large green triangle was surrounding him. Sora charged forward as Magolor fired a giant ball of energy at Sora. Sora stopped the ball by swinging his keyblade at it like a baseball bat. The ball was pushing Sora back as he applied more force and launched it forward.

Ka boooooooooommmmmmmM!

The ball exploded against Magolor causing him to scream in an demonic voice. Reimu ran at him and stabbed into his chest with the Star Seeker. She began to combo Magolor with stylish attacks as colorful stars rang out with each blow.

" No! You will drown in our despair!" Magolor crossed his arms as an eye formed on his stomach.

" Gross!" Reimu exclaimed as she backflipped away.

" Ragnarok!" Sora fired a stream of orange lasers that pierced through the body of Magolor.

" Graaaaaaarrrrrrrr!" Magolor roared while forming a void that threatened to suck them in.

Reimu and Sora back to avoid getting sucked in. Magolor formed a star barrier around himself.

A blue flash appeared as a Super Hothead appeared in front of Kirby. Kirby inhaled it and became Monster Flame Kirby!

Kirby fired a dragons of fire that shattered two parts of the star barrier. A super Waddle Dee appeared next as he absorbed it and became Flare Beam Kirby.

Kirby formed a ball of electricity that slammed into the barrier, destroying two more parts. One part remained as a Super Blade Knight appeared. Kirby absorbed it and became Ultra Sword Kirby!

Kirby sliced through the last barrier part. Kirby caused his blade to go giant and slam it down on Magolor. Magolor blocked the attack by summoning one of the sun glyphs to block the attack.

Sora and Reimu watched in awe at the power struggle. Kirby broke through however and sliced him multiple times before going back to his default sword and making it larger than normal. Kirby cut him with the giant sword, shortly afterwards spinning it above his head.

Magolor's body violently exploded as Magolor returned to normal and fell to the ground injured. The Master Crown floated up to the sky as a white orb emerged from it. The orb had blood-like wings, a halo and a green thorny tail.

" Kirby!" The orb roared as its eye formed.

Its eye had a red iris with blood coming from its eye. " I am Zero! Ruler of the Dark Matter race! I will use this Crown's power to drown

Dreamland in sadness and despair!" The Master Crown began to spark. Zero transformed into a copy of Magolor when he used the Master Crown to fight the trio. " Now watch true despair in the making!" Zero began to transform into more fiendish form as the Music changed.

### **C-R-O-W-N-E-D ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

Zero's hat now grows to enormous proportions and becomes even more curved at the ends, now resembling a ram's horns. The Master Crown has sprouted golden tentacles that wrap around Zero's horns and head. Zero has a pair of red eyes and an empty white grin on his face that everyone and a while Zero's trademark red eye appeared in his white mouth. Zero's red, gaseous body reforms itself to become two large wings outlined in blue that are set behind his hat and a pair of smaller ones located at his base. He had arms that had several spiked armbands.

" You will all drown in my darkness!" Zero said while roaring akin to that of a reptile.

" Kirby... Inhale... this." Magolor summoned a Knuckle Joe before he passed out.

" So this freak was possessing Magolor!?" Reimu asked as she gripped Star Seeker harder.

Kirby became Fighter Kirby and hit Zero across the face with a Rising Break, knocking him into the sky. Sora followed up with Ragnarok blasting him with a flurry of orange lasers.

" Die!" Zero summoned a swirling star shaped black hole that tried to suck in the trio.

They escaped the attack as they saw several star shaped portals that appeared in the corners of the screen. Black spikes shot out of them which the trio dodged easily.

" Tch! Time for a spellcard! Treasure Sign: Dancing Yin-Yang Orbs!" Reimu summoned several Yin Yang orbs that bounced rapidly into the body of Zero as he screamed from the pain of holy energy buffeting his body.

" Yeah! Go Reimu!" Sora cheered as Kirby grabbed a bouncing orb, performed a judo throw launching the orb straight into the mouth of Zero.

" Next one! Spirit Sign: Fantasy Orb!" Reimu fired a colorful orb of light into the face of Zero as he roared at them.

" Roar at this you jerk!" Sora slammed his keyblade into the ground, creating pillars of energy that blasted Zero skyward.

" Poooooooooooooooooooo!" Kirby was glowing with a blue aura. Kirby jumped up into the air in front of Zero. " Vulcan Jab!" Kirby fired a barrage of blue chi bullets into the mouth of Zero, rapidly damaging his eye.

Zero pulled two giant, dark versions of Galaxia and swung them vertically. Sora and Reimu blocked the attack as Kirby rushed in.

" Somersault Kick!" Kirby performed a flip kick to the jaw of Zero.

" Give it up Zero! You can't win!" Sora said.

" I will never give up! Dreamland. All we wanted was friendship, but because of how we looked, we were shunned! Why should they feel the warmth of friendship, when we couldn't? Because of this we came to a conclusion; if we can't feel happiness, NO ONE WILL!"

" Even so, we will stop you! Just because you couldn't make friends doesn't give you the right to take away the happiness of people!" Sora said as Reimu walked up next to him.

" Enough of you both!" Zero fired a giant brown beam with white specks at the duo.

Kirby placed his hands together as energy spiraled into his hands. " Super Force Beam!" Kirby fired a blue spiraling beam that collided with Zero's beam, ensuing in a power struggle.

Zero's beam began to overpower Kirby's as Sora and Reimu sprang into action. They performed a cross slash into the back of Zero throwing off his concentration.

" No!" Zero screamed as Kirby's beam blasted through Zero's and slammed into him full force. " Noooooooooo! My vengeance! CURSE YOU KIIIIIRRRRRRRBBBBBBBYYYYY!"

Zero was completely engulfed by the attack and was turned to dust from it leaving only the now normal Master Crown. Sora held onto the crown as the three Landia scooped up the trio and took them from the alternate dimension.

### **Final Battle EX ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

They were brought back to Dreamland as the two large beams slam into Nightmare. One of the beams was obviously Marisa's Master Spark albeit looking more bigger and more powerful. The other was golden and had a green aura coming from it.

Reimu grabbed Sora's hand and flew to the castle.

" Noooooo! How is this possible!?" Nightmare exploded in massive fiery blast that blew the dark clouds away.

Reimu landed on the roof and saw Ziden wrapped in a golden light with an orange ring glowing behind as the light died down. Ziden's clothes were torn.

MARisa looked like she ran through a blender as did Yukari.

Bowser was unconscious and so was Dedede. Tiff was also there as Kirby ran up to her.

The Crown in Sora's hand shone in a red light as his keyblade let off that bright light. He did the whole song and dance and opened a pathway to another world.

### **Sora ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

" Oh Sora! Here." Reimu handed Sora back the Star Seeker. They both had their hands on it as a faint light shimmered across the keyblade ( if you played Birth by Sleep, you know what this means).

" What was that?" Tiff asked.

" We have to go now." Ziden simply said.

" Oh before you go! Meta Knight asked me to give this to you." Tiff handed Ziden a small box. Ziden opened it and saw something familiar. The item was white with red streaks over it. Near the tail end was several colorful feathers.

" This is the Dragoon; One of the Legendary Air Ride machines!" Ziden exclaimed.

" Come on, Ziden. Onto the next World!" Yukari said while grabbing Ziden's arm and pressing some buttons. Kirby jumped onto Ziden's head as they teleported back to the ship.

Magolor looked at his damaged ship while sighing as several Cappies came to help rebuild it. " Thank you for saving me from Zero, Kirby. I hope we meet again in the future."

*Back on the Zeta Dreadnought...*

Ziden was looking into space from the Control Room filled with other Bridge workers. Two new worlds appeared. One was was a planet surrounded by a large green creature. The other was a continent with various castles on it. Most notable was the large tower that was glowing with a golden light. Please note that there is windows in the Control Room.

" Great. More worlds." Ziden said as he yawned. Everyone had scattered themselves among the ship. Well except Meiling and Sakuya as well as Yukari. They were in the control room as well.

" Ziden? Something seems to be on your mind. Tell me about it." Yukari said.

" Well its about that dream I had after Mokou killed me in Dreamland." Ziden told in great detail the dream he had to Yukari. Yukari was deep in thought about something.

" I'll be right back." Yukari disappeared into a gap leaving the trio back in the Control Room.

" Welp. I'm heading heading elsewhere." Ziden got up and looked at Sakuya up and down and all around.

" What's wrong, Master Ziden?" Sakuya asked.

" Nothing. You look cute in your little maid outfit." Ziden snickered as he walked down the hallway.

Sakuya and Meiling followed him. There was a sound ringing through the hallway. It sounds like the wings of a certain destructive vampire child. Ziden turns and sees Flandre hiding quickly behind a corner.

" Hmm? What's Flandre doing following me?" Ziden asked.

" Perhaps she wants to play with you again." Sakuya said as Ziden shivered.

" TAG!" Flandre leapt forward and tackled Ziden into the wall. " You're it!" Flandre touched Ziden's nose before flying off.

" Why you little munchkin!?" Ziden took off after Flandre as Sakuya and Meiling laughed.



The chase went on for a few minutes before Ziden caught her and ended the game. Ziden promised to play more games with her. Ziden went to the TV room and sat on the couch next to Mokou and strangely enough Kaguya. Ziden changed the channel to the news on his world and watched it.

" Honey! I was watching some anime!" Kaguya complained.

" Too bad! I want to see what's going on in my world!" Ziden said as they watched the News Report.

The News Reporter was a gray haired man with shiny white teeth and orange eyes. " Tom Silverhawk here with the 5:00 news. Today in Bellwood, evil genius Dr. Animo was once again taken down by the efforts of Ben 10 otherwise known as Ben Tennyson. This rambunctious hero has time and time again beaten off Alien threats from Earth. The Justice League stated that they didn't like the idea of a child wielding a powerful weapon known as the Omnitrix. But after his actions from dealing with the creature known as Daigon, they have decided not to take action against this young hero. Later in this news cast, I will be joined by Will Harangue and we will have a talk about Ziden Icrim, the Legendary Hero who stopped the Large-Scale Demon Invasion with Ben Tennyson's aid."

" \*sigh\* Jeez. All they talk about is Ben Tennyson and his handy dandy Alien Watch." Ziden was leaning over to rest his head on Mokou's lap while placing his feet on Kaguya's.

" Ziden? What are you doing on my lap?" Mokou asked.

" Resting my head before we head to the next world." Ziden fell asleep on Mokou as she smirked at Kaguya.

" Humph. I'm actually married to him, so hah!" Kaguya said as Ziden's foot slammed into her gut.

*A few hours later...*

Everyone is led into the teleporter room as Ziden has them pick straws again. The following people are picked for this world.

Utsuho, Nitori, Eirin, Youmu, Yukari, Ike, Meiling, Sakuya and Remilia.

" Oh and before we go, Ziden I have something to tell you. I talked to that man you saw in your dream and I have stopped those Captains from coming after you. Unfortunately, four of them had already left so you may have to fight them. Oh! Why don't you show everyone what you got in Dreamland!"

Ziden held out his hand as his keyblade formed, shocking everyone. Marisa threw a tantrum at Ziden getting a keyblade. Ziden activated the teleporter as they found themselves on a plaza.

Ziden looked around as he saw a youth in a green tunic approaching them.

*Author's Note: Alright! This ends the Kirby Arc! Kirby is the newest member of the team, so only one more team member. Ziden's world contains alot of series you guys are familiar with. And if you're wondering if Ziden's past relationship with Mokou, then keep on reading and find out. There is reason for multiple marriage partners on the Isle of Hope that does make sense, so Ziden is married to Kaguya via the old 'Fine Print' trick. Kaguya is going to have her ditzy/cold personality from the Touhou books I read. It should not be hard to guess what Arc is next, it is my second favorite game series. Welp I got my first review which makes me happy! Keep 'em coming! And also don't worry about this becoming a sappy harem story. This is an action/adventure with large amounts of humor in the mix. Love is there for other purposes for the later stories. Also there is a reason for Ziden getting a keyblade, I didn't give it to him for a random reason. His beginning keyblade is called Hero's Strife and is the first out many keyblades he will receive.*

Gensokyo Analysis

Ziden: Alright. So I get interview the Gatekeeper of the SDM, huh?

Meiling: Yep! I can keep any intruder out of my Mistress' Mansion.

Ziden: Yeah, except Marisa apparently.

Meiling: She is a crafty one.

Ziden: Yep. She's tried to steal books from my library, but failed miserably.

Meiling: But I'm always scared that the Mistress is going to fire me.

Ziden: Don't Worry. If you get fired, just come live with me. I could use a Tai Chi instructor in my services.

Meiling: Thanks! Man, you are so nice. I wish Sakuya was as nice as you.

Ziden: She must be hard on you. I mean I'd be hard on you, but I mean that in a different way.

Meiling: Oh? You are a pervert!

Ziden: Oh well! We all can't be perfect!

Meiling: You're lucky I don't mind perverts otherwise you'd be sent flying right now.

Ziden: Pfbt! Yeah Right!

Meiling:... Low Blow: Sky Dragon Kick!

Ziden: GahhhhhhhhH! Why... would... you... aim... there!?

## A Legend Begins!

*The girls observed the man approaching them. He was wearing a simple green tunic, light brown pants with brown boots. The man had dirty blonde hair with blue eyes. He had a brown belt adorned with several pouches for holding adventuring supplies. He had a sword that had a blue hilt as well as a simple wooden shield.*

" Who are you people?" The man asked as Ziden looked confused.

" Umm? What are you talking about, Link? It's us, Ziden, Yukari, Ike!" Ziden said as Link walked up to him and looked at him up and down.

" Sorry, but we've never met before in my life. It is strange that you know my name." Link said as he observed the group.

Yukari walked up to Link and looked at him for a while before walking to Ziden and whispering something in his ear.

" Well I guess we don't know you after all, Link. Everyone introduce yourselves." Everyone gave Link their names and the reason why they are on this world.

" I see. You are trying to open gateways to other worlds in order to save them all from darkness, correct?" Link asked as everyone nodded. " That sounds like a challenge, but so is my quest to save my best friend Zelda."

" Save? Care to give an explanation?" Eirin asked. Link told them everything that happened so far.

" That's some story, dude. Would you mind if we helped you out?" Ziden asked.

" I wouldn't mind, after all, you guys are looking for these gateways. Best way to find them would be to journey with me, but my Loftwing won't be able to carry all of you." Link said as he approached a

wooden dock. The group noticed something very important. They noticed that the town that they were in was floating in the sky.

" Don't worry about it, Link. We can fly!" Reimu proved this by floating in the sky as did the other fliers.

Remilia flew over to Ziden. " Psst! Is this world like the Link to the Past game?" She asked.

" Nah. Different game, same mechanics." Ziden simply replied.

" Ooooo! That means Temple exploring and Boss bashing, right?" Remilia sees Ziden nodding.

Sora was talking to Donald and Goofy with a sad look on their face. " So you guys are gonna be in Sanctuary from now on?" Sora said with sadness emanating in his voice.

" Turn that frown upside down! We'll still come to your aid if you call for us! Ziden made these assist cards for you!" Goofy handed Sora several cards with Donald and Goofy's face on them as they disappeared into balls of light.

" Okay! Even if they are in Sanctuary, they can still fight by my side when I need them!" Sora ran over to Link.

" Well. I've already done some shopping for the surface trip, so lets get going shall we?" Link asked.

" Can I carry you, Ziden?" Meiling asked.

" Sorry red head, but I got my ride right here!" Ziden threw the box to the sky as a larger version of the Dragoon appeared ( look up pics of the Dragoon on the Kirby wiki) and floated in the air next to Ziden. He jumped onto it and sat on it Indian style ( legs crossed). " I've got enough room for one more!" Ziden patted his lap as Meiling jumped into his lap with her knee accidentally slamming into his crotch.

" Oops! I am so sorry!" Meiling said adjusting herself Ziden's lap.

" I'll carry Sora!" Reimu exclaimed as Sora sweatdropped.

" Yay! We get to start an adventure!" Nitori exclaimed as she ran to the wooden dock.

" Indeed. I am interested in seeing what this world has to offer." Eirin placed her bow on her shoulder.

*" This would be the third world I've went to on my Journey with Master Ziden. I wonder what Yoko and the others are doing right now."* Sakuya thought.

" So, Mister Link? Where are we heading?" Youmu asked.

" To the surface. Follow me!" Link jumped off the dock, falling victim to gravity. Link let out a whistle as a large red bird caught him on its back. The group took flight after him as they followed him.

" So are we just going plunge through the clouds and hit the ground running?" Ziden asked in a high pitched voice. He was obviously still in pain from the accidental crotch shot.

" No. We're going get there via that green column of light." Link said as he steered his Loftwing towards the column of light. Link jumped off of his Loftwing and glided into the pillar of light as everyone followed. They saw a lush green forest as they landed on a grassy cliff.

" Hmm? So the forest is first, huh?" Ziden said as he observed their surroundings. He walked to the edge of the cliff and noticed something something. The grassy pathway spiraled down to circular part that had a stone pedestal with mysterious symbols on the ground around it. Ziden also noticed a temple entrance on the path ahead.

" Guys! Can you feel that!?" Reimu asked as her body shivered.

" This place... it reeks of evil." Yukari said.

" Not just evil, its pure evil." Sakuya added.

" ? What are you guys talking about?" Link asked as a blue flash appeared from his sword and took the form of a armless woman with a crystal blue head, purple and crystal blue sleeves that acted like arms, a purple dress that stopped at her hips and black stockings with greens lines over it.

" Master Link. It appears that some of your new allies can sense the presence of evil." The woman looks over the group before speaking in her machine-like voice. " It appears that 90% of you are shocked by my sudden appearance. You may refer to me as Fi." Fi looked to the temple in the distance. " It seems that some of you have already started walking to the temple."

Reimu looks and sees Ziden, Remilia, Sora and Kirby walking to the ancient looking temple. Utsuho was already at the temple waving at them. Nitori was already running to catch up with them. Reimu flew into the the spiraling chasm as she stared at the mysterious seal.

*" That seal... its weakening with every passing second. Whatever is sealed in there must be powerful beyond belief."* Reimu thought to herself as they made their way to the temple. They entered it and saw an old lady sitting near a door in the back. The old lady was wearing a red cloak that covered her eyes. Her face was wrinkled beyond belief. She had a ropelike pendulum swinging in front of her.

Sealed Temple ( Skyward Sword)

" Ah. The chosen hero has arrived... and he has friends with him as well." The old woman said.

" Excuse me. Have you seen a blonde haired woman come through here." Link asked.

" Ah yes. A blonde woman did come through here. As fate would have it, she is a chosen one like you. She has gone to the Skyview Temple to purify herself for her journey." The old woman said as Link

had a hopeful expression on his face. " But beware of the creatures known as Heartless and Nobodies, they infest the path to the temple, but your allies seem to be well equipped to fight these creatures."

As if on cue, Ziden and Sora summoned their keyblades, causing Fi to appear.

" I see. You two wield the keyblades of legend. With you two helping us, our chances of defeating Heartless and Nobodies increasing to 99.9%." Fi said as Ziden and Sora high fived each other.

" Unyuu? Heartless? Nobody? Are we fighting words?" Utsuho asked.

" Hmm? It seems that your bird friend isn't that bright." The old lady said as Ziden snickered.

" Don't know why you're snickering, Mr. Houraisen." Eirin teased as Ziden glared at her.

" Grrrr! My name is Ziden Icrim! Not Ziden Houraisen or any crap like that!" Ziden exclaimed.

" Ziden Icrim? Ah yes. A woman stopped by here telling me about you." Ziden looked at the old woman.

" A woman? Your wife won't like that." Ike said before he chuckled.

" Should have read that fine print, Master." Sakuya decided to join in the tease feast as well.

" I hate you guys. Can you explain the woman to me?" Ziden walked up the steps and sat down in front of the woman.

" Yes. She had hip length dark blue hair. Pale blue skin. A white sleeveless shirt with no back to it. A blue skirt that went all way to her feet and was sliced open on the side to show off her legs. The woman carried a blue hilted sword with her." The old lady's



description of the woman seemed eerily familiar as he pulled out his blue pistol.

" Welp. Sounds like Celsius is here, and she has my sword. Ama-no-Murakamo." Ziden said the name of the sword as Youmu and Eirin approached him.

" Why are you using a ceremonial sword like Ama-no Murakamo for battle?" Ziden looked confused from Eirin's question.

" The hell are you talking about? My sword isn't ceremonial." Ziden said.

" Indeed it is not." A new voice said as everyone minus Ziden, Yukari and Ike looked around for the source of the voice. " Down here, humans." This time the voice spoke with a condescending tone. Ziden lifted up Nosada as it was glowing with a red light.

" Wait a minute. A talking sword? That is so cool!" Nitori said as drooled at the sight of the sword.

" Of course I can talk, you useless buffoons. I do not like that my sister was called a ceremonial sword, so I demand that you take that comment back before I roast the flesh from your bones!" Nosada, while awing the girls, was effectively pissing them off at the same time. Remilia walked up to the sword and pulled out the vampire card.

" I don't know who exactly this flaming toothpick is calling a buffoon but he had better check his tone before he gets smashed into fiery pieces!" Remilia puffed up her chest to size up the sword.

" Enough Nosada! We both know you wouldn't be acting this way with Murakamo here, so zip it before I throw you to the wolves." Nosada grew silent under Ziden's threat.

" Ziden's sword isn't the same sword that you are thinking about, Eirin. It's merely that the fact that she picked the same name as the

Sword of Heaven, Kusanagi or Ama-no-Murakamo." Yukari stated.

" I see." Eirin said as Utsuho still looked confused.

" Man! I wish Orin was here so she can help explain things to me, but she has to help with the reactor while I'm gone." Utsuho feels Ziden patting her head.

" Come on guys. We have a temple to explore." Sakuya said as she opened the large stone door that was to the right of the old lady. Everyone followed Sakuya through the door as they found them on a small raised platform.

### **Faron Woods ( Skyward Sword)**

" Jeez Sakuya! Can't you wait?!" Meiling complained as Sakuya shot her a glare that could melt steel.

" I agree with Sakuya! If we hurry we can catch up with this Celsius woman and Zelda!" Remilia said as she flew into the small clearing.

" So what do we just head to this temple and find this Zelda woman?" Meiling asked.

" Please Meiling. It is never that simple." Ziden said before he walked off the cliff and began walking to the small clearing.

" Can someone explain to me what's going on with this sword business?" Utsuho asked, flapping her wings frantically.

" \*sigh\* Here. Satori had one of the kappas working the furnace make this for you in case you get confused." Yukari handed Utsuho a remote with a single red button on it.

" Where do I put this? I don't have pockets." Utsuho said as Nitori took the device and placed into one of her many pockets.

" Come on guys! Time to do some forest exploring, ze!" Marisa entered the clearing as Link thought to himself while he walked to

the clearing with everyone else.

" *These people are strange, but I bet my journey will be easier with them at my side!*" Link thought as he stopped and stared at the creature observing a bird statue.

The creature was a large rocky creature all Zelda fans should know by heart. He had a backpack that mountain climbers would wear with a large map resting on top of it. " How fascinating! This must be a part of the Sky civilization!" The Goron exclaimed.

" Hey Ziden? Isn't that a Goron?" Remilia asked.

" Hey it is! So cool!" Ziden said as he ran up to the Goron.

" Hmm? Oh! A human! Its been a while since I've seen one of your kind! I am Gorko, a traveling archaeologist that seeks to uncover the mysteries of this world." Gorko said while striking a pose with light spiraling behind him. Everyone sweatdropped from the sight of this.

" Except I don't remember Gorons being this eccentric." Ziden said while twirling one of the spikes in his hair.

" Wow. These guys look like they would be good at Sumo Wrestling!" Nitori exclaimed.

" I remember having to Sumo Wrestle one of these guys. Not fun!" Ziden said while rubbing his chest.

" I remember how they sent you flying!" Yukari said.

" Oh! You've Sumo Wrestled with a Goron, huh? I'm surprised that you are able to do so! We Gorons are quite strong!" Gorko proclaimed.

" Um guys? Sorry to interrupt this fun little conversation but who is that?" Sakuya points to a blue woman sitting in front of a pillar of ice that was blocking the pathway to the forest.

" About time you got here, hero." The woman said as she walked towards Ziden.

" Uhh? Is anyone else here getting Deja vu from this?" Sora asked as everyone nodded.

" Just like how Mokou first encountered us." Reimu stated.

" Oh no. Is Ziden about get his kicked again, ze?" Marisa taunted.

" Please! I obviously kicked her ass and Dante's ass, didn't I Sakuya?" Ziden asked.

" Yep. You showed them a graceful defeat, Master Ziden." Sakuya simply stated.

" \*cough\* Kiss ass \*cough\*." Marisa sees Sakuya glaring at her.

" Anyway, how are you Celsius and why are you blocking our path?" Ziden asked as Celsius let out a breath of cold air.

" Simply to test your skills. There is an opponent I want you to face ." Celsius clapped her hands as a Gate appeared in the middle of the clearing.

" What the-! She summoned a Gate!? How?!" Eirin asked.

" Well when powerful opponent challenge me to fight or want me to face something, they are given the ability to summon a Gate via Henry's power." Ziden explained.

" If you win against this opponent, I'll let you pass and give you your sword back." Celsius said.

" And if he loses?" Remilia asked.

" I'll kill him. As simple as that." Celsius coldly replied.

Sakuya was about impale the ice girl with knives before Ziden stopped her. Ziden ran to the Gate and leapt into it.

Ziden found himself standing in a dark forest as he saw a single beam of light coming from behind him.

" What is that!?" Ziden asked as he drew out Crimson Edge.

Everyone heard a loud train whistle as they saw an old fashioned Steam Train barreling at Ziden. This train was known as the Phantom Train, a train that ferries souls to the afterlife.

" I shall your cursed soul to the abyss!" The Phantom Train exclaimed as Ziden rolled out the way and jumped onto the train. Ziden climbed to the top of the train and saw a stereotypical Grim Reaper waiting for him.

" I'll take a guess and say you're the spirit of this cursed train." Ziden said as he rested his sword on his shoulder ( his sword stance).

" Indeed I am! Your soul is mine!" The Phantom Train exclaimed.

" Sorry! But I've already got two people who have claim to my soul and they do a good job at protecting it!" Ziden referred to Komachi and the Yama before cracking his neck. " Bring it!"

### **The Decisive Battle ( Final Fantasy 6)**

The Reaper dashed at Ziden while spinning his scythe like a fan. Ziden dodged the attack by rolling to the side and fired a stream of fire at the Reaper setting it ablaze.

" Eat foot, specter!" Ziden slammed his foot into the face of the Reaper knocking him away before he recovered from the attack.

" Blizzard!" The Reaper launched a small chunk of ice at Ziden who simply bent backwards to dodge the attack.

Ziden dashed towards the Reaper and hits him with a strong roundhouse kick to the face. Ziden followed up with a flip kick that knocked him on his back. Ziden raised his foot high into the air and slammed it down only for the Reaper to roll out of the way. Ziden's foot created a small crater on the top of the train as it let out a whistle to signify pain.

" Tch! Is this all you got!? The music is going to waste here, man!" Ziden complain while drawing out Crimson Edge.

" Then let me show what I can truly do!" The Reaper slammed his scythe into the train, creating a wave of pink energy to slam into Ziden's chest and blast him backwards.

Several Soldier and Red Nocturne Heartless appeared to aid the Reaper. Ziden dashed forward while fire was wrapping around his sword. " Dragon Bursting Impact!" Ziden slammed Crimson Edge into the train, creating large pillars of fire that blasted the Reaper and the Heartless skyward. Ziden waited until the Reaper was getting close and dashed towards him faster than the eye could perceive and shot a point blank sword wave into the back of the Reaper as he cried out in pain.

The sword wave caused an explosion on top of the train, effectively destroying the Reaper.

" Guess thats it then." Ziden waited for a second as a question mark appeared above his head. " Why am I still here?"

" Because you have not stopped me!" The Phantom Train roared while shaking violently. The violent shaking knocked Ziden off the top of train and next to the train.

" Master Ziden! Use your speed to keep up with the train and launch attacks to defeat it!" Sakuya yelled as Ziden began to run alongside the train.

Ziden checked the amount of health that the train had. " Huh? Only four bars? Piece of cake!"

The Phantom Train fired several colorful beams out at Ziden as he struggled to dodge the attack. Ziden fired sword wave after sword wave into the body of the train. Ziden followed up with a jump kick and five successive punches that dented up the armor of the Train.

" Wheel!" The Phantom Train fired a wheel at Ziden. The wheel cracked against his skull causing blood to pour over his face.

" Alright! Time to end this!" Ziden hits the Phantom Train with the Burning Lancer attack, melting a part of the train. " Suplex!" Ziden went to the front of the train and lifted it up before slamming it down. A bright light enveloped the Train as Ziden was brought back to his allies.

### **Faron Woods ( Skyward Sword)**

" Ziden! You did it!" Meiling ran up and grabbed Ziden in a strong hug. Ziden felt some one glaring at him as he looked at Eirin. He knew why she was staring at him. Ziden decided to push his luck. Ziden returned Meiling's hug by wrapping his arms around her waist. " Eh? Ziden? What are you-Mmph!" Ziden kissed Meiling as everyone's jaw dropped.

Eirin had a tick mark on her temple. Ziden, deciding to see how Eirin would react, slid his hand down a few inches as Meiling face turned red but didn't seem to mind. Ike immediately covered Sora's eyes, seeing as how Sora was a bit to young for this kind of action.

Ziden broke the kiss as a strand of saliva appeared from their lips.

" Ziden I crim. I know you did not just do that, to a woman that isn't your wife!?" Eirin had her bow aimed at Ziden's skull.

"Oooooooooooooh! How fascinating!" Gorok said while observing the now activated Bird statue.

" Hmmm? Did you guys do something while we were talking?" Link asked.

" Nope!" Ziden simply said.

" Well it looks like you won, hero. Here." Celsius throws Ziden his ice katana as she throws a card to Nitori. At the same time this happened, a card floated down into Youmu's hand that read 'Doomtrain'.

" Are you two done swapping saliva yet!?" Reimu asked.

" Y-y-y-yes! Lets get going!" Meiling ran to the forest entrance as Everyone followed.

They proceded to wander through the forest aimlessly while Link was using his sword to track Zelda. Marisa was trying to take the quite large mushrooms in the forest but was stopped by Reimu.

They continued on their path as they encountered a large Tanuki like creature that gave Link a slingshot that will help them reach the temple. They reached and entered the Skyview Temple.

Skyview Temple ( Skyward Sword)

" Well. This is the first temple huh?" Remilia looked around and saw some stairs descending downwards.

" Well Sora. Time to bust up some freaks in this place!" Ziden exclaimed while walking down the stairs.

They walked down the stair while slicing through several large spider webs. Ziden noticed how close Meiling was to him as they walked through a door Link opened.

The room itself was a 2 floor room with the bottom half looking like it could be filled with water, which it was. They noticed that the room a had three doors with the one directly across from them locked.



" Alright! We should go and explore this temple!" Remilia said as Sora approached the door and unlocked it. " No! We have to explore the temple and find treasures!"

" Calm down! Its just the first temple. It shouldn't take long to explore this place anyway!" Ziden said while prying himself from Meiling's grip.

They entered the door as they see a dome like building in the middle of the room. They entered the room and saw that the door closed and locked behind them.

They see a skeleton wielding two large swords standing in front of them. Everyone got ready to fight this creature as Link stepped forward.

" I will face this creature alone." Link drew his sword and shield while approaching the Stalfos.

Stalfos Battle ( Skyward Sword)

The Stalfos charged at Link while swinging his swords frantically trying to hit the agile Skyloftian. Link countered with a strong horizontal slice that knocked the Stalfos backwards.

" Hi-yahhhh!" Link followed up with a jumping slash which the Stalfos blocked with his swords. Link performed a multitude of thrust attacks that the Stalfos struggled to dodge.

" Spin Attack!" Link spun in a circle, slicing the Stalfos across his bony chest. The Stalfos slammed his swords downward into the shield of Link as a loud crack was heard.

" Tch!" Link jumped back and raised his sword to the sky as a blue light traveled down the blade, covering it with a blue light. " Goddess Strike!" Link fired a blue sword beam at the Stalfos slicing it in half as it exploded into a dark mist that resembled a skull. Two treasure

chests appeared in the room. One was much more decorated than the other one.

SkyView Temple ( Skyward Sword)

" Ooooooh! Treasure, ze!" Marisa saw Link walking a treasure and opened it. Some music was playing while he was opening it, he pulled out a mechanical beetle while striking a pose. Remilia raced to the other chest and opened it while taking out a puzzle piece-like key also doing the same pose as Link.

" What the- Wait a sec!" Ziden reached into his pocket and threw something at Marisa who caught it.

" Marisa found a rock!" A mysterious voice rang out around them.

Marisa was also doing the pose as well.

" It seems that this world has a mysterious magic that seems to be affecting us into doing a pose when we receive an item." Eirin explains as Link walked over.

" Lets go guys. I think we should keep moving." Nitori said as she ripped the bars off the door and opened it.

They proceeded to walk to a another door and entered it as they saw a tightrope and a large door adorned with a fancy lock. They decided to fly across the ravine and land in front of the door.

" Okay. This is the boss door. Some sort of powerful Monster is going to be behind here. But of course this is the first temple, so it should be easy." Ziden explained.

" Heh! I'm not scared! I'll just blow him or her up!" Utsuho bragged.

" Whatever birdbrain." Sakuya said as she stood next to Ziden along with Meiling.

" So? How do we open it? I don't think my Keyblade will open it."  
Sora said.

" Nor will mine." Ziden added.

" What about that thing that Remilia found in that fancy chest?" Mario asked as Kirby jumped onto his head.

" Time to work!" Remilia lifted the key as it grew bigger. Remilia proceeded to attempted to rotate the key to try and fit it into the hole. This went on for a few minutes until Eirin gently pushed her out of the way and in a matter of seconds the key entered the lock. The door opened as they entered the room.

The room was circular ( As most Boss Rooms are) and there was a golden door with a familiar symbol on it. There was a man in the room trying to force the door open with dark magic. He was a tall and slender man with albino hair and grey skin. He was wearing a red mantle and a white bodysuit that was decorated with diamond patterns.

" Hmmm? Ahh! It appears I have guests." The man turned to the group as they felt a dark power emanating from this man.

" Who are you?" Ike asked.

" Ah! You must be those heroes that man told me about! No matter. My name is Ghirahim, Demon Lord." Ghirahim said as he bowed.

### **Ghirahim's Theme ( Skyward Sword)**

" A Demon Lord. That would explain this powerful aura in this room." Ziden said while frowning.

" I am so frustrated! We were so close in catching that infernal woman. But then..." The room began to shake as he angrily looked at his fingers. " Those useless fools! I need to vent my anger on

someone! YOU!" Ghirahim points to Link as he stepped forward with his sword and shield drawn.

" I can take this guy alone! Besides, this guy tried to kidnap Zelda!" Link tightened his grip on his weapons.

" So you know the girl, huh? That's wonderful! When I capture her, I'll make and tell you how I killed you. Slowly and Painfully!" Ghirahim's mantle disappeared into black particles.

### **Ghirahim Battle ( Skyward Sword)**

Link attempted to hit Ghirahim with a diagonal cut only for him to dodge very easily. Ghirahim hits Link across the face with the back of his hand, causing him to spin and fall to the ground.

" He may need help in this fight. Demons that are ranked in the Demon Lord class are very strong.' Ziden said while rubbing his jaw. Eirin had punched him earlier for disrespecting Kaguya by kissing Meiling like he did. " Sakuya! Keep your knives and stopwatch ready for when and if he falls in this fight!"

" Yes Master Ziden!" Sakuya had her items prepared.

Link began to swing his sword wildly at Demon Lord who simply moved side to side to dodge the wild attack. Ghirahim came at Link with a roundhouse kick. Link countered the attack with a well shield blow, leaving the Demon Lord wide open to attack..

Link hits Ghirahim with a flurry of attacks as he teleported away. Ghirahim reappeared a far bit away from Link.

### **Snaaaaaaapppppp!**

Several magic black diamonds appeared in a horizontal row in front of Ghirahim before he commanded them to fly forward. Link slashed the attack away as Ghirahim reappeared behind Link and punched him hard in the spine causing him to keel over and cough up blood.

" What's the matter, sky boy? Can't handle a demon?" Ghirahim circled around Link while crouching. Ghirahim grabbed Link by his jaw. " What are you going to do now, sky boy?" Link promptly spat in the face of the Demon Lord. " WHY DIGUSTING LITTLE INSECT!?" Ghirahim punched Link hard in the face, sending him into the wall.

*" Master Link. You will not be able to win against this powerful with your current level of skill. You should trained more before descending to the Surface. Your friends maybe strong enough to fight this Demon Lord. Their chance of Victory is 79% while ours was 23%."* Fi said to Link as he coughed up more blood.

Ghirahim dashed forward with a punch only only to be intercepted by Meiling. " Try me, you vile woman!" Ghirahim threw a punch at Meiling. Meiling let the fist slide past her shoulder and slammed a chi infused fist into his sternum causing him to fly back.

" Heh! Didn't expect that did you?!" Meiling said while cracking her knuckles.

" You're not human!? Why would a fellow demon side with a bunch of humans like them?!" Ghirahim asked with rage in his voice.

" I'm not a Demon! I'm a Youkai that loves her friends! Some more than others!" Meiling looked over at Ziden who was playing Go Fish with Yukari and Luigi with Kirby sitting Yukari's lap.

" LOVE!? You would stay with these people because you love them!? Very well! I show you how I 'love' these humans when color this place red with their blood and organs!" Ghirahim summoned a black sword and licked his lips with his long tongue.

" Stay back, Meiling!" Eirin summoned a magic arrow and fired it into the chest of Ghirahim, blasting him back a few feet.

Sora, now in his Valor Form, charged at Ghirahim. " What the- The Keyblade!?" Sora hits Ghirahim with a strong horizontal slice knocked Ghirahim down as he teleported away.

He reappeared behind Meiling and slashed her hard across the back causing blood to spray out. " KyaaaaahhhHH!" Meiling flew forward from the momentum of the attack as Remilia caught her.

" How dare you hurt my Gate Keeper!?" Remilia summoned several red circles to appear next to her. " Demon Lord Walk!" Remilia tackled Ghirahim at a lightning fast speed, knocking him away. " Servant Flier!" Several red bats fly into the body of Ghirahim, buffeting him as Sakuya delivered several strong kicks to the face with a mysterious white aura surrounding them.

Nitori had several mechanical arms coming out from her backpack that grabbed Ghirahim and slammed him into the ceiling as he fell to the ground.

He gets back up, still willing to fight the group. " Humph! I underestimated you guys. Time for me to step things up!"

SNAAAAAPPPPP!

A multitude of black diamonds flew out from around him. Utsuho fired several balls of energy at the diamonds and tried to slam into his body. Ghirahim dodged with ease as he saw Youmu and Ike coming at him. " Nyaaaaaarrg!" Ghirahim moved at fast speeds towards the duo at fast speeds. He slices Youmu hard across the chest slamming her hard into the wall. He also delivered a swift kick to the chest Ike knocking him across the room.

" Tch! Vampire Claw!" Remilia flies towards Ghirahim and slashes him with her claws as he flipped backwards.

" Enough of this! Time to finish thi-... Tch! I've spent enough time venting on you worthless Youkai and Humans. Know this, the next time you interfere with me, I'll end your lives! Especially you, Sky Boy! Wielder of Keyblade! And you, Demon Hunter!" Ghirahim pointed to Link, Sora and Ziden respectively before he disappeared into black particles. Everyone carried their injured comrades into the next which was a spring with a blue emblem that Link struck with a

Goddess Strike. Fi came out and performed a dance while telling everyone where to go next.

It seems that Zelda purified herself in the springs here and made her way to the Spring at Eldin Volcano. Ziden teleported everyone back to Skyloft so they could heal themselves. Youmu and Ike decide to train Link into becoming stronger for his journey. Sora and Reimu decided to hang out together... ALONE. Marisa decided relax in her room. Eirin was treating Meiling's wound to prevent it from becoming infected. Ziden was forced by Kaguya to spent the day with her after that incident with Meiling. Everyone else was in their rooms resting.

Skyloft ( Skyward Sword)

" I cannot believe you did that!?" Kaguya was still yelling at Ziden whom was lying down next to her in the bed.

" Whatever! Sheesh! I said I'd give you that treatment sometime in the future, so calm your self woman." Ziden said while trying to sleep. He feels Kaguya snuggling up to him as Mokou growling at him in his head.

" You'd better. Eirin's pretty mad at you, so watch what you eat~!" Kaguya laid herself on top of Ziden's body and swiftly fell asleep.

Ziden feels her grab him in a tight hug, preventing him from escaping. Mokou appeared on Ziden's shoulder, looking at him with a look of jealousy. "What?"

" You womanizer." Mokou simply said while resting on his shoulder.

" What? Jealous I didn't touch you like that?" Mokou responded by punching Ziden in a tooth.

" Freakin' Perv!" Mokou roars as her face turned red.

" Yet you still love being around me though! Is Patchouli jealous too?"

" Nope." Ziden turned his head to a full sized Patchouli reading a book next to him. Mokou decides to become full sized as well and both wrapped their arms around Ziden.

*" Hmmm? This is... new. Never had 4 girls coming at me at once though."* Ziden thought as he heard soft snoring coming from Patchouli and Mokou. " Let us see where the Dream world takes me this time."

Ziden drifts into a deep sleep.

*On another planet...*

One of the Rulers of Darkness was talking to a man wearing an orange gi with a blue shirt underneath it. The man had spiky black hair and goofy outlook on life.

The ruler of Darkness was a man wearing a suit with a police emblem and black hair that showed that the man just got out of bed. This was Ruler 12.

" So let me get this straight; This guy you want me to fight is some evil being bent on destroying the universe!?" The man asked.

" Eheheheh~! Yep! I know where he will go next. There is a tournament in a place called Unova, so no doubt he will appear there, Mister Goku." Ruler 12 said while handing him a card.

" So then I'll just head to this Unova place and wait for him with my friends waiting for him!" Goku said with a serious face. " But if I may ask, what's your name anyway?"

" If you must know, it's Tohru Adachi!" Adachi said before disappearing in a puff of white mist.

Back to the real world...

Ziden woke up with a startle and knocked Kaguya off of him and onto Mokou. Kaguya feels her hand grab something soft as she



opens her eyes and sees Mokou's emotionless face staring at her.

A few seconds later...

BOOOOOOOOOOMMMMMMMMMMM!

Ziden made his way outside and saw Reimu and Sora walking and talking to each other with the former having faint blush on her face. Ziden still remembers his dream as he walked to the plaza, ready to hit next temple. Ziden pulls his Ifrit Summon Card and stares at it for a while before putting it away.

Everyone gathered at the Plaza as Link pointed at the pillar of red light before jumping onto his Loftwing. Everyone took flight as Reimu decided to ask a good question.

" That man, Ghirahim, he refered to himself as a Demon Lord. Do demons really rank themselves like that?"

" Yes. In demonic circles, Demons rank theirselves according to their level of strength. It ranks from weakest to strongest; Demon-Demon Lord-Demon King-Archdemon-Demon God-Overlord-Tyrant Overlord-Supreme Overlord. Even though you guys are strong, I'm never going to let you guys any Demons classified as Overlord and above. They are too strong for you guys. Only professional Demon Hunters like me or Dante could take on an Overlord." Ziden said Dante's name with a strain as if his very name was venom to Ziden's tongue. Remilia flew up close to Ziden and talked in a low tone.

" I see. Then would be-"

" At Demon King class with the level of strength I've from you so far, although you'd be ranked higher if you were a nateral born Vampire instead of one that was once Human but was drained by a Vampire." Ziden's words brought shock to Remilia. How did he know that about her. ( This will explained more later.) " Don't worry, it'll be our little secret, 'kay?"

" Fine. But if you tell a soul, I'll have Patchouli trap you in a bubble of water for a month!" Remilia said as Ziden cringed at the thought.

They approached the pillar of light as they dived into it, ready to explore new lands.

Author's Note: Yep shorter chapter this time. Welcome to the Zelda Arc that follows the storyline of Skyward Sword albeit with some twists from yours truly. Several summons and a surprise character will appear during this Arc. Also from now on, I'm starting a Trivia section to explain certain things like references and Bosses.

Trivia:

1. Phantom Train is from Final fantasy 6 ( Which is my Favorite handheld RPG besides the Pokemon games). That boss is infamous for the fact that you can Suplex the Boss even though most large enemies and Bosses can't be Suplexed.

2. Doomtrain is a summon from Final Fantasy 8 that is HELL to obtain because you have to beat 10 of the worst enemies in the series ( Malboros! Dun Dun Duuuunnn!). I gave it Youmu because it is a ghost train and she is half ghost. Yukari would make more sense but the coin landed on heads which was Youmu.

3. Tohru Adachi is from the Persona series. Look him up at your own risk.

4. Dragonball Z is the final shonen Jump anime I picked and I revealed a world and its concept.

Gensokyo Analysis

Ziden: If it isn't my favorite student, Silvia!

Sakuya: Can you stop calling me by real name? I much prefer Sakuya now.

Ziden: Sure. I don't need to ask what you can do, do I?

Sakuya: No you don't Master Ziden.

Ziden: \*sigh\* Why do you keep calling me 'Master'? You know that annoys me.

Sakuya: But, you're my Teacher! I have to refer to you as Master Ziden or Ziden-Senpai. Otherwise I'm being rude.

Ziden:\*snorts\* Yeah right! You were rude for the 13 years I knew you! If Yoko hadn't taught you how to act like a proper lady, you still be acting like a ruffian!

Sakuya:... Nuh-uh!

Ziden: Uh-Huh!

Sakuya: Don't make me stab you Master.

Ziden: Whatever? Have you been doing your training for the 13 years we've been apart?

Sakuya: Yeah. Even if Patchouli put a spell on me so that I'd slowly forget you, I still continued my training to properly use Temporal Energy in my fights.

Ziden: Good, my fine bodied student! I'm glad you don't use pads anymore! \*stabbed rapidly by a bunch of knives\*

Sakuya: Good to see you can still piss me off Master~.

## Stuck between a Rock and a Scorpion!

**This Chapter is going to contain 2 temples, some backstory to Ziden losing his powers and weapons, and spoilers for Skyward Sword. You have been warned!**

They proceeded to dive down to the ground as they found themselves in a very hot locale with rocks and lava everywhere.

" This Volcanic Region is known as the Eldin Volcano. This place will be filled with fiery enemies and lava, so please be prepared." Fi explained before disappearing.

**Eldin Volcano ( Skyward Sword)** Note: I love this theme! It fits the mountain theme very well.

" Oh. My. Gods! It's so hot, ze!" Marisa began to sweat from the heat.

"\*pant pant\* My gods! I think I'm going to melt from this heat!" Reimu said while fanning herself.

" I don't like this place. Too much heat, not enough shade." Remilia complained.

" We could dehydrate from this heat." Eirin said while wiping sweat from her brow.

" Screw exploring and lets just fly to the top!" Nitori said.

" You guys can head up there by flying. Me and Link are going to do this the old fashioned way." Ziden said. Ziden does not seem to be affected by the extreme heat. The group excluding Link and Ziden began to fly to the top of the Mountain as they walked their way to the top.

Ziden and Link made their way to the top while fighting off various monsters as they made their way into a mountain filled with creatures known as Mogmas, creatures that resemble moles in humanoid form.

" So? These red creatures are in here?" Link asked as Mogma nodded his head.

" Alright then! Lets take 'em out and catch up with the others!" Ziden said with enthusiasm.

They entered a blue cavern with various raised platform, perfect for archers and snipers.

**Doooooooooooooot Doooooooooooooot**

They hear a horn blow as they see a large number of red Goblin-like creatures charging at them with machetes. Ziden and Link drew their swords while charging at the creatures known as Bokoblins.

Ziden ducked a knife swing and swung his sword upwards slicing the the Bokoblin in half while getting covered in blood. Ziden jumped into the air and dived bombed while slashing wildly, somehow taking out a number of Bokoblins.

Link began to use his training with Ike and Youmu and began to slash through the Bokoblins as if they were paper. By focusing on his foes and keeping a calm mind, he was able to defeat the Bokoblins without taking damage.

However they were unaware of the archers taking aim at them. They unleashed their arrows onto Link and Ziden, stabbing their bodies multiple times, killing them instantly... Just kidding! Several silver knives and energy balls slammed into the archers' skulls, causing them to explode violently.

Ziden blocks a machete chop while looking at the two new combatants, Sakuya and Utsuho. " My my. I didn't even sense you

following us." Ziden knocked the blade away and slammed his sword into the skull of the Bokoblin.

Sakuya flipped into the air while throwing her knives into the walls. They ricocheted off the walls and began to slice apart the other Bokoblins.

Utsuho pointed her arm cannon at some Bokoblins while charging up a ball of energy. She releases the ball as it slammed into the chest of them while releasing a shock wave that blasted them into the wall.

*" Huh? Her arm cannon works like Samus's... but why do I get such a bad vibe from it?"* Ziden thought while roundhousing a Bokoblin in the crotch. ( I'm sure it's possible to do this!)

Link saw the Bokoblin Leader and charged at him. Link performed a rising spin attack that blasted the Leader skyward and dead. The Mogma thanked Link by giving him special gloves that allow him to dig holes ( So useful!). They continued their ascent up this fiery mountain of doom!

They encountered a strange woman dressed in black telling them to hurry up and rescue Zelda. They made their way to the temple as they regrouped and entered the temple.

### **Earth Temple ( Skyward Sword)**

" Great. There's lava in here too!" Sora complained about the heat of the area.

" Guys. I think we are going to need to do some flying in this place. Man! That lava looks so nice!" Ziden said while dipping his hand in the lava, shocking the group.

" Oh! I think I know why I feel so comfortable around you! You and I must be the same species!" Utsuho said as everyone fell down.

" Umm? Sorry kid, but I'm human. Not a Tengu like you." Ziden said as everyone looked at him with a strange look.

" Unyuu~?" Utsuho looked confused.

" I had a Phoenix once, so thats probably why you feel so comfortable around me." Ziden looked at Crimson Edge while mentioning the Phoenix, Blazette. Yukari noticed Ziden staring at his sword. Unlike most people, Yukari knew what happened to Blazette after Ziden detached her from his body. She still has a hatred for her ruining Ziden's innocence like that.

" Did you think this whole time, that Utsuho was a Tengu?" Nitori asked as Ziden nodded.

" She's a Hell Raven, Ziden." Yukari said as Ziden looked confused.

" You don't know what a Hell Raven is? Hah! Some Demon Hunter, ze!" Marisa laughed before Reimu kicked her in the shin.

" Tch! Please girl! I've written books on classifying Demons and Monsters, so you shut your damn face!" Ziden said angrily, scaring Marisa. " I've given Eirin, Patchouli and Yukari one of them each, mainly because of their high intelligence."

" Oh! So thats why I like being around you! You have a Phoenix with you! All birds respect and pra... prai... love the divine elemental birds!" Utsuho grabbed Ziden into a backbreaking hug.

Eirin had to pry Ziden from her grip due to Ziden's arms being down. They decide to proceed through the temple as quickly as they could. Various puzzles blocked their path, but due Remilia's experience with the dungeons of the Zeldaverse, she solved the puzzles very easily. Of course they weren't expecting to face off against lizard people.

They found themselves fighting two lizard people with a large stone gauntlet and a spike ball tail. These are Lizalfos, a powerful enemy

of the Zeldaverse.

Link and Ike decided to take on this reptilian duo by themselves with everyone else observing the fight.

" Do you think Link cn handle this? He did get his ass kicked by that Demon Lord pretty bad." Reimu said as Youmu approached her.

" He can win this and future fights after the training me and Sir Ike put him through." Youmu stated while crossing her arms.

" That's strange! I thought that Link was supposed to be a seasoned warrior?" Yukari thought aloud.

" I thought so too. After all, he is the Hero Chosen by the Goddesses of Hyrule." Ziden stated while twirling his hair spikes.

" Hi-yahhh!" Link performs his trademark jumping slash at the Lizalfos who jumped right to dodge the attack. Lizalfos threw a fist at him, Link blocked it with his Iron shield, stunning the Lizalfos. Link thrust his sword rapidly into the chest of the Lizalfos, drawing blood.

Now the Lizalfos did something that surprised Ziden. The Lizalfos countered with a rising uppercut that knocked Link into the sky. Ziden's jaw dropped at the sight of this as it reminded him of a certain wandering warrior who doesn't wear shoes... odd.

" That. Is. Bullshit!" Ziden said, outraged at this.

" Indeed. To think that the Lizalfos learned how to do the Shoryuken. Impressive." Meiling said as Ziden and Yukari looked at her.

" How do you about the Shoryuken?" Yukari asked.

" From manga! And some scrolls in Patchy's library. I could replicate it if you want." Meiling said as Ziden shook his head.



Ike charged at the other Lizalfos and slammed his through the creature's stone gauntlet and the bone, leaving a bloody stump. " Time to end this. Quick Slash!" Ike slashed the Lizalfos across the chest with an extremely fast cut.

Link pierced the skull of the Lizalfos as the familiar chests appeared. They found an orange Rupee ( 100) and a bomb bag. Link takes the bomb bag and they continue their trek through the temple as they found the boss door.

" Hey. Did we ever find that key?" Nitori asked.

" Actually, I think I can see the chest over there." Sakuya pointed to the Boss Chest as Ziden raced towards it. " I don't ever think I'll get used to Master's speed."

" You have to get used to it eventually, Sakuya." Remilia said.

" I hope I do, Mistress." Sakuya said as Remilia's face lit up.

" *She called me, Mistress! So she isn't going to leave!*" Remilia thought in her very child like mind.

Ziden opened the chest and obtained the key. Of course, it is never that simple. There was a large dragon head behind the chest. It opened to reveal a large boulder that proceeded to crush the chest and began rolling towards Ziden.

" HOLY GIANT BOULDER BATMAN! CHEESE IT!" Ziden proceeded to run towards the boss door while screaming. Everyone dove out of the way as the boulder entered another Dragon's mouth. They entered the boss room as they saw a shackle on the floor.

" Someone was here. Recently here." Ziden said as they jumped down and began walking up the steep slope.

" Someone's watching us!" Reimu looks up and sees Ghirahim chilling on a high balcony.

## **Ghirahim's Theme ( Skyward Sword)**

" Well now. If it isn't the Sky boy and friends." Ghirahim said while pacing back and forth. *"\*sigh\** It just makes me so mad that my henchmen are so idiotic. I heard that they captured the Spirit Maiden. I was so happy, that I got here as fast I could. Only to learn that a despicable Agent of the Goddess rescued her!" His fury began to build. " Lucky for me that you guys are here. You see it is unhealthy for someone to keep all this anger inside of themselves, so my 'friend' is going to fry all of you to crispy corpses. Have fun!" Ghirahim disappeared as the large boulder rolled into the room via a railway and slammed in the bottom of the slope as it cracked.

" OOOOo! I'm so scared! Mister Gay-hir-him sent a big ol scary boulder at us!" Ziden said in an extremely mocking voice as the boulder grew three pairs of fiery legs. It stood up and roared revealing its fiery maw.

" That is Scaldera, a being known as a Pyroclastic Fiend. Its rocky armor will more than likely repel your attacks so you will have to destroy it somehow." Fi said.

## **Scaldera Theme ( Skyward Sword)**

" Aha! I think I know what to do! Link! Use the bombs!" Remilia shouted as Link sweatdropped.

" The Bomb Bag was empty." Everyone remained silent for a while as a Crow was heard cawing.

" Goddammit Link." Ziden said as he saw Scaldera firing large balls of fire at them.

" I got this!" Utsuho fired several energy balls at the fire, canceling them out. Scaldera let out a roar and set itself on fire. Utsuho fired a powerful laser at Scaldera, blasting at full force. Unfortunately the blast nothing to the Fiend as it continued to climb up the slope.

" Run to the top!" Yukari said as everyone sprinted to the top. They saw a happy sight. Several Bomb Flowers were at the top of the ramp as well as the golden door.

" This is... awfully convenient." Sakuya said.

" Sakuya. Don't look a gift horse in the foot. I've told you that countless times already." Ziden said as Sakuya squinted her eyes at him.

" And I've told you countless times that that is the wrong saying!" Sakuya spat at Ziden.

Link grabbed the bombs and loaded them into the bomb bag. Link launched a bomb at Scaldera knocking him down the slope as Link dashed down towards him. Scaldera recovered and began to inhale large amounts of air.

" Throw a bomb into its mouth! Hurry!" Eirin shouted as Link threw a bomb into the creatures mouth. The bomb exploded in its stomach causing it to fall down, leaving its weakpoint exposed for Link. Link began to strike the eye multiple times before he got back up, enraged at his attackers.

He lifted himself up high in the air and ran up the slope. " I don't like this." Nitori said.

Oh crap! Scaldera is using Rollout down the slope, but everyone dodged the attack.

" Alright! Time to start blasting away that armor!" Marisa flew into the air while pulling out a spellcard. " Love Sign: Master Spark!" Marisa fired her trademark beam down onto Scaldera, blasting off several pieces of armor.

" Good Idea! Monster Cucumber!" Nitori began to fire a multitude of cucumber shaped missiles that exploded against the body of Scaldera, showing his body off to the world. His body was a ball of

fire with small horns on the top of it. His single eye was darting around his body.

" Talk about ugly! Aether!" Ike's sword flashed in the air before Ike caught it and slammed it into the eye of Scaldera.

Scaldera blasted Ike away with a fireball that ignited him and knocked into the top of the slope.

" Ike! Take this you ugly freak!" Yukari opened a gap above Scaldera as large amounts of debris slammed into his body.

" Critical: Heart Break!" Remilia threw a powerful spear into the mouth of the Fiend, causing a red, misty explosion as Scaldera roared.

Scaldera fired several cackling balls of fire at the group. Ziden jumped down into the path of the fire balls. Ziden thrust out his palm and absorbed the fire. Meiling vaulted off of Ziden's head and slammed both of her feet into the eye of Scaldera.

" Illusion Sign: Killing Doll!" Sakuya threw a myriad of silver knives into the air. They began to spin and flew into the eye of the Fiend as it roared in pain.

" HiyahhhhhhH!" Link jumped into the air and stabbed his blade into the eye of Scaldera. Scaldera let out a death roar before exploding in black smoke. Everyone did a victory pose before they walked through the door and saw a surprising sight.

" Zelda!" Link shouted as the two woman turned around. One was a blonde haired girl wearing a white dress. The other was a tall woman with a shirt with a red eye that Ziden recognized.

" Link." Zelda looked at Link with sad eyes. Link walked up to her only to be stopped by the other woman.

" You sure took your time getting here, hero. Because of how late you were, I had to step in to save her." The woman said as she stopped Zelda from walking towards Link. " Zelda. You know you two have your own paths to follow. You two shall meet later, I promise you that spirit Maiden. Lets go." The woman walked Zelda towards the door of light and entered it.

Link was saddened and happy at the same time as he walked up the stairs and obtained the tablet needed to reach a new land. Ziden teleported everyone back to Skyloft. Ziden decided to have a little talk with Yukari and Eirin.

Knight Academy Theme (Skyward Sword)

" I'd like to know how you lost your powers and weapons, Ziden." Yukari asked as Ziden cracked his knuckles.

" Sure, but it would probably be better if everyone is present for this." Ziden said.

Yukari placed a fan over her face as opened several into the unused Classroom they were in. Alot of them ended landing in uncomfortable positions. Meiling landed headfirst onto the table that Ziden was sitting in front of. Most funny was when Sora and Reimu landed on top of each other, acciedently kissing each other in the process. Their faces turned red as everyone minus Eirin and Sakuya laughed.

" Alright! I'm going to kill you, Yukari!" Reimu said while summoning Yin Yang orbs.

" Enough! Ziden's got a story to show you guys." Eirin said as Ziden began to tell his tale.

Ziden told them about how the Prince of Darkness finally decided to invade the Earth by opening a Gate of Hell that was located in one of the evil locations in the world, Detroit, Michigan.

Ziden decided to skim over his fights with the four Generals of Hell: Belial, Pazuzu, Beelzebub and Legion. Ziden personally didn't like Pazuzu due to him constantly flashing his genitalia to the world. Ziden found that out of all of the Generals, Belial was the one that actually came close killing Ziden if it wasn't for the fact that Ziden's allies, Ben Tennyson and Tier Harribel( there is a reason that she is in the human world instead of Hueco Mundo), came to his aid.

They had heard from Belial that Lucifer's army of demons was marching through the now destroyed city of Detroit. They reached the city and saw that it was disaster zone. It was now a wasteland with no buildings or corpses around around as they saw the army of demons led by the infamous Fallen Angel himself.

### *Flashback*

Ziden, Ben and Harribel watched the army of 3000 Demons marching towards them wearing black armor with various weaponry, sharpened and ready to rip the flesh off of some inferior humans.

Harribel was a dark skinned woman with green eyes wearing a miniskirt adorned with bones akin to that of fish. She had a collar that resembled shark fins that had an extension that covered her large breasts as well a spine like structure on her stomach. She had two ribbon-like extensions coming from the back of it. She wore knee-length boots that seemed to be made of bone. Her weapon resembled a large shark tooth with several gills and the weapon was attached to her arm.

Ben Tennyson wore a green jacket that had a 10 on it. He wore a black shirt with blue jeans. He had brown hair with green eyes. He had a large green device on his arm that he currently had a hand on.

Ziden was wearing the exact same clothes he was wearing now, minus the shirt. The shirt was black with a red Omega with the initials 'GoW'. Ziden had a new katana that had a rectangular guard with a ring on the tip of the hilt. Ziden's hair was longer and reached

his shoulders, but was still spiky. Ziden's face still had that carefree attitude about him.

" Jeez! Look at all those Demons! Man! I'm ready to go home and eat some Chili fries." Ben complained.

" Hmph. Stop complaining boy. These weaklings are no match for us. I'll take them out with one Cero." Harribel said.

" No. Save your strength for the big man. I'll take care of the small fry. You guys wait here and rest until I call you guys to help." Ziden drew Nosada and Ama-no-Murakamo as he crossed them against his chest. " Burn through the souls and flesh of my enemies, Nosada!" Nosada erupted into flames. " Freeze my enemies to their very bones, Ama-no-Murakamo!" Murakamo's blue blade became shrouded in ice. " Get ready to face the power of Hell Frost Sword Style!"

" Whoa! Cool swords!" Ben said while drooling at the sight of the blades.

*" Those swords... they seem like a Soul Reaper's Zanpakuto. But I don't sense any form of Spiritual Pressure coming from them."* Harribel observed.

Ziden leapt from the cliff they were on and charged at the army.

" Should we really just sit here and do nothing while he takes on an army of Demons?" Ben asked.

" I may have only known Ziden for a few months, but I do know that he can handle himself in a fight. He protected my friends against that creature, Pazuzu I think he was called, even if they didn't get along at all." Harribel said.

Ziden stared down the army as they began to surround him. " Tch! The fight hasn't started yet and you guys are already breaking the rules to fighting me. Rule Number 4: Never surround me!"

## **The Encounter ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Ziden crossed his swords across his chest. " Freezer Burn Cyclone!" Ziden performed a spin attack that created a tornado of fire and ice that blasted several demons upwards and in bloody chunks.

Ziden leapt into the group of Demons and began slicing through them like they were wet paper. A large demon tried to slam his battleaxe on Ziden. Ziden sidestepped the attack, jumped onto the chest of the demon and placed his sword at both sides of the demon's neck ( like a scissor to be precise.) and slammed them inwards, beheading the demon.

Ziden landed and dashed around at supersonic speeds, knocking demons airborne while Ziden charged up an attack. " Winter's Embrace!" Ziden stabbed Murakamo into the ground, creating pointy glaciers that impaled the demons bodies while a vicious snowstorm ran through the area, freezing demons solid, inside and out. Sub-Zero would be proud to see this.

Lucifer was not happy about this. His armies numbers were being destroyed by the one being which supposed to be on his side. He hadn't expected that God would send the Seraph and Archangel Flonne to alert Ziden about the Demon invasion that was supposed to kill off the humans and build their empire on the fallen Earth that would then attack Heaven and dethrone God.

Lucifer was wearing pitch black armor with a large broadsword that had human faces that were crying on the face of the blade. He punched a face on the blade, causing to explode into blood. He had pitch black hip length hair that seemed to made of smoke. His eye were pitch black with light yellow irises. He had several veins on his face. His pale white skin seemed to come from his countless millennium in hell.

" Tch! Damn that Yama and that ninja girl! If it wasn't for them, I'd have a powerhouse of a soldier! That Gap demon and Ghost princess are to blame for this as well. This is just like with Gabriel,



that accursed bastard! I'll crush him after I destroy Ziden Icrim!" Lucifer roared. " Send in those useless ravens!"

Several Hell ravens took flight as they flew around in the sky above Ziden and army of demons. They began to rain down fireballs onto Ziden. Ziden sensed the attack coming and performed a counter attack. " Shadow's Dance!" Ziden disappeared into thin air while the Hell Ravens looked around to try and find him. Ziden reappeared behind them and performed a vicious attack that slashed the Hell Ravens into a bird puree.

" Huh. I didn't know there were Tengu in hell." Ziden said to himself as he landed back onto the ground. The soldier backed away from Ziden as he decided switch weapons. He sheathed his katanas as he pulled a scythe. The scythe had a light blue shaft that was at least a few inches taller than Ziden. At the top and bottom of the Scythe were golden clocks. From the left side of the clocks were silver blades that glistened with a mysterious energy.

" Are you ready to slay some demons, Temporal Slicer?" Ziden asked his weapon. Ziden spun his scythe above his head, creating several blue embers to form around him.

Ziden dashed through several demons, spraying blood and limbs everywhere. " 'Time' to have some fun!" The clocks began to glow while he spun the scythe in front of him, creating a clock face in front of him. " Time! Bend to my will! Perfect Stop!" The entire area became grey as everything stopped. The air, the sound of battle, the body parts and airborne blood. All things stopped.

" Time for some devastating magic! Solar Burst!" A giant ball of fire formed in the sky as it began to rain down large balls of fire onto the frozen enemies. Several giant explosions ripped through the area. Rock flew into the air before freezing in place. To the remaining demons, it felt like something brushed their skin ( Perfect Stop freezes time while the people are able to perceive the fact that time has stopped. In other words, they are aware that time has stopped, but are unable to move.)

" Time moves on." Time begins again as large amounts of blood explode into the sky. The amount of blood shocked Ben as he unaccustomed to seeing it.

The entirety of the army was slain as Ziden stared at Lucifer whom was glaring at him. Lucifer teleported in front of Ziden.

" Hmmhmmhmm. What's with that look?" Lucifer asked.

" I'm glad you're here. Now I can get my vengeance on you for you did to my old man!" Ziden said as he swung Crimson Edge.

" Why? Was it the fact that I forced into selling his soul by cursing your mother with a death curse or that I turned him from the nice and loving warrior father to the murderous lunatic willing to kill his unaging wife and sacrifice his son to me?" Lucifer said as he saw Ziden's sword cackling with red electricity. " What the?! No!"

" Immortal Reaver!" Ziden slashed Lucifer across the chest as green energy exploded from his wound.

" No! Dammit!" Lucifer backed away from the enraged Ziden.

" By overloading you with external life energy, I've rendered your immortality null and void. Now you're nothing more than an over glorified Super villain." Ziden said as he sees Lucifer summoning black energy around him. " Your life ends here! Traitor to Heaven, Lucifer!"

### **The Final Confrontation ( Castlevania Lords of Shadow)**

Ben fiddled with the device on his arm and slammed it down. A bright green light shined out. " Humungousaur!" He became a large orange dinosaur that towered over the duo. Humungousaur jumped towards the duo ready to help.

Harribel appeared next to Ziden. " I'll start things off. Trident!" Harribel concentrates a powerful amount of energy and fires it into

gut of Lucifer, causing him to fly back.

Ziden opens fire on Lucifer who blocks the bullets with his blade. Ziden flips into the air and slams his foot into the skull of Lucifer causing him to cough up blood.

Ben charged forward and launched Lucifer with a haymaker. Ben jumped into the air and slammed his fist onto Lucifer knocking him towards Ziden.

Ziden slams his fist into the face of Lucifer, causing a cracking sound to be heard.

Lucifer recovered and fired several dark bolts at Ziden, piercing through his body. Lucifer charged at Ziden and began to swing his sword at Ziden. Harribel appeared in front of Ziden and blocked it. Ziden vaulted over Harribel and slashed him across the chest, tearing through the armor as if it was paper.

*" I can't believe I'm fighting against the Devil! This is awesome!"* Ben thought as he body slammed into Lucifer, causing an imprint of Humungousaur to form in the ground.

" Darkness Storm!" A destructive whirlwind of darkness blasted from the body of Lucifer launching Ben skyward. Lucifer flew up and continued to punch Humungousaur higher and higher into the sky, ending with a strong hammer blow that slammed Ben into the ground, causing an explosion to blast Harribel and Ziden back.

" Tch! I knew this wasn't going to be easy! Ben! Use that Ultimatrix and call out something stronger!" Ziden yelled as Ben returned back to normal.

Lucifer charged forward with his sword, pointed at Ben's chest. Ziden intercepted the attack with his sword and slammed his foot into one of the faces on his sword, causing a bloody explosion that blasted Lucifer backwards.

" I think its time for some 'Big' backup!" Ben presses a button and turns thee dial on the Ultimatrix. He slams it down as a giant shadow loomed over the group.

" This boy had a creature this big under his command!?" Lucifer exclaimed.

" I hope this creature can help us in this fight." Harribel said to Ziden.

" So this is a To'kustar. These things do look like Ultraman!" Ziden said aloud.

" Way Big!" Ben roared. Ben was now a gigantic red and white Alien that towered over the battlefield.

Ziden warped behind the stunned Lucifer and..." Donkey Punch!" slams his fist into the back of Lucifer head, causing him to cough up blood.

" Cascada!" Harribel created a massive wave of water that Ziden jumped to dodge. The water slammed into Lucifer, creating a whirlpool that trapped Lucifer in the center. Ben slammed his giant fist into the body of Lucifer, releasing a shockwave of pure energy that blasted the water away.

" Damn you all!" A giant burst of dark energy was released from the body of Lucifer as he charged up a ball of energy. Ziden and Harribel jumped up to the shoulder of Ben as they charged up attacks.

A large red magic circle formed in front of Ziden. A yellow light enveloped Harribel's sword. Ben arranged his like that of an L.

" Annihilator Beam!" A gigantic red laser shot out from the magic circle and slammed into the ball of energy.

" Cosmic Ray!" Ben fired a pale blue energy beam that slammed into the ball of energy.

" Cero!" Harribel swung her sword, releasing a wide yellow beam that collided with the large beams.

The beam struggle went on for a while as Lucifer's ball pushed forward. Ziden wrapped his hand in fire while swinging them in a circle. Ziden slammed his wrists together as the beam increased in size and power. The beam pierced through the ball and into the body of Lucifer. He let out a demonic roar as his body exploded. The explosion ripped through the area blasting the trio back a few feet.

When the explosion cleared they saw Lucifer face down on the ground, with blood pooling around him.

" We. We did it. WE WON!" Ben yelled as he returned back to normal.

" Well, we just saved the world. Shame that Detroit got more wasted than it already was." Ziden looked around.

Unfortunately for them, they didn't notice Lucifer charging up a ball of dark energy in his hand, aiming it at Ben's chest. " Die human!" He roared at the top of his voice. He fired the beam as time slowed down.

Ziden saw the attack coming and pushed Ben out of the way. The beam pierced Ziden through his chest, causing the dark energy to rip through his body.

" Aaaa  
agggggggggggghhhhhhhh!" Ziden body was torn apart by the pain as several orbs of light flew out of his body. His weapons were blasted away from his body and flew into the stars.

Ziden fell to his knees and glared at Lucifer who struggled to his feet. " You bastard! " Ziden got to his feet and charged at Lucifer. Ziden brought down his sword.

CLAAAANNNGGGG!

A jet black katana blocked Ziden's attack and knock him back as Ziden's face turned red with anger. "yoooooooooooooooouuuuuuuu!"

The man Ziden was talking looked a lot like Ziden. His hair was blue and hip length. His eyes were green and fierce looking. The man had pale skin. He wore a sleeveless black shirt with a bloody pentagram wrapped in fire. Black pants and pitch black clogs that gave off smoke. "Milord. Let us return to Hell and mend your wounds." A portal opened behind Lucifer as he crawled into it. He shot a glare at Ziden while mouthing the words 'I'll get you for this!'.

"Damn you! I'll end your life here!" Ziden dashed forward.

"Very well, son. I shall kill you again!" Ziden's father had his sword swords clashed as the flashback ended.

*Back to the present...*

### **Knight Academy ( Skyward Sword)**

Everyone was shocked at the story they just saw and heard. Eirin and Yukari had looks of anger on their faces for reasons only they would.

"Wow. Talk about an intense battle." Reimu said.

"So this is how you lost your powers." Yukari said cooling herself down.

"..." Eirin remained silent. Ziden noticed this.

"Even more surprising that you can use magic. It could be that the Phoenix allowed for him to-"

"Even without the Phoenix, Ziden would still have powerful magic skills because of his bloodline." Yukari said, interrupting Eirin

" What? Do you mean his mother? I do remember you telling me that she is a Shrine Maiden." Ike said.

" Yes and no. There is a famous Vampire hunting clan blood running through his veins. These vampire hunters were known for their magical expertise and for aiding against the Dragon." Yukari said.

" The Dragon?" Marisa asked.

" Dracula. My ancestor." Remilia said proudly.

" Impossible." Everyone looked at Ziden as he began to speak. " I know for a fact that Dracula had only one son and that son was forcibly changed into a vampire. Besides, Dracula wasn't a true vampire to begin with." Ziden said simply. ( Play Castlevania: Lords of Shadow to learn about what Ziden's talking about.)

" So Ziden can use, crazy destructive magic and stop time!?" Nitori asked as Sakuya nodded.

" Ziden taught me how effectively manipulate time. While I can't stop it to the point that he can, I can focalize it on one person and perfect stop them." Sakuya explain

" Welp guys. I told you guys an interesting story, so lets get going. I'm bored of just sitting around." Everyone gets up and walked to the door except Ziden and Eirin.

" Ziden. We need to have a talk about the princess and her 'affections' towards you." Eirin said as Ziden sat next to her.

"... This has something to do with the fact that she didn't make me do that Impossible Request thing." Ziden said as she nodded.

" Yes. More so, it has to deal with your father." Ziden scooted in closer. " I must ask before I tell you this, is it possible to time travel?"

" If one has a high of control over Time and Space, then yes. I do remember sending my father back in time in hopes never having to

deal with him." ziden said.

" Unfortunately, he found the princess and she fell for him. I don't what he did, but I remember him telling her that ' he will never love her, but his son will show you the love you want'. I believe he put some type of spell on her, making her fall head over heels for you. She stopped giving her impossible requests to suiters saying ' that she is waiting for her Prince to arrive'." Eirin said. ( Note that Ziden sent his father back in time before he met Mokou or any of the IN characters).

" Tch! I knew that bastard would try something like that. Manipulating the poor girl like that. He truly isn't my father anymore." Ziden said while clenching his fist.

" Do you think you can ask her about what he did? She would more than likely tell you than me." Eirin asked.

" I'll try, but it will most likely be a spell placed on her. If I had my magic I could break it.. I'm used to dealing with his dark magic." Ziden said as he got up.

" Hmm. I always assumed that you didn't like Kaguya for what she did." Eirin said as Ziden stopped at the door.

" Meh. I'm over it. If I was her I'd do the same thing. The only one who is truly pissed about this is Mokou." Ziden said as Eirin got up and walked over to him.

" There is another thing I want to know; why do you act dumb instead of showing your true intelligence?" Eirin asked as they walked outside.

" Simple! Its fun being dumb!" Ziden said while smiling. Ignorance is bliss after all.

They flew to their new destination as they landed in a ruinic mine.



" This is the Lanayru Desert. This place was a bustling mine in ancient times. It seems Zelda must have made her way here. We must catch up to her." Fi said.

### **Lanayru Desert ( Skyward Sword)**

" AhhhhhH! Feel that dry desert air! Man it feels wonderful~!" Ziden said while walking forward.

" Dear gods! I just realized that we didn't get anything to drink! We are going to die out here, ze!" Marisa said, wiping the sweat from her brow.

" Hmmm? It doesn't feel that hot to me." Utsuho said while flying.

" Don't worry. I packed several bottles of water in my medical bag." Eirin said.

" I'm so glad we have a doctor now! Now I can fight without being worried about injuries!" Meiling said while stretching.

" Please note that I am going to send you some medical bills when this all over." Everyone began to protest. " Oh hush! While it is my obligation as a doctor to heal people, alot of the things I use are very expensive."

Sakuya was looking around as she sensed something. " This place... it is filled with Temporal energy." Sakuya said as Ziden stopped.

" Indeed it is. Perhaps we will figure out why when we enter this place." Ziden continued to walk forward.

" Poyo!" Kirby ran ahead as Mario and Luigi ran after him.

" Kirby is like a small child. I wonder why we can't understand him?" Nitori wondered.

" Simple. Kirby is a baby. He was awakened alot earlier than he was supposed to." Yukari said. Everyone was flabbergasted at this. The little puffball that took on Yuyuko, and fought off various monsters was nothing more than a child.

" Kirby is such an interesting creature. Even on the Lunar Capital, I've never heard of a creature that copy the abilities of the things it eats." Eirin said to herself, but loud enough for everyone else to hear.

They made their way to a large circular room with a purple crystal in the middle. Sakuya threw a knife at the crystal as the whole room was sent back in time. They saw several small mining robots mining for those purple crystals. They proceeded to keep going while Meiling picked a purple flower and held on to it.

They made their way through harrowing quicksand and the infamous Octoroks. They made their way to the actual part of the desert as they saw large, electrified snails called Ampilus.

" Are those giant snails?" Reimu asked.

" Yeah. They are." Sora said as he began to walk towards it. The Ampilus entered its shell and attempted to roll over Sora. " Whoa!"

Sora ran to one of the platforms and stood in front of it. The snail rolled its way to Sora who dived to left, causing the Ampilus to crash into the wall and fall on its side. Link ran up and stabbed the snail through the shell. They noticed several cages with bones and an old robot in them.

There was a crystal inside the cage. " Another one of these crystals. Hitting them seems to send the area back in time. This place must have been beautiful before it was a desert." Remilia said.

" Yeah. Time is cruel to places like this. *But it has been cruel to me the most.* " Ziden said the last sentence in a low tone that almost everyone barely heard.

" Master Ziden..." Sakuya said with a hint of sadness.

Kirby decided to float to the top of the cage and fell into the cage. He kicked the crystal as the area was sent back in time. The skeletons came back to life as red goblin like creatures wearing goggles, a silver vest and shorts. They had sword-like clubs that were sparking with electricity. Technoblins.

Ike decided to strike first, aiming at the club in hopes of smashing it to pieces, but...

**Zaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaappppppppppppppppp!**

Ike was electrified by the club as he fell backwards. The Technoblin raised his club and...

**CLLLLLIIIIIIIIINNNNNNNKKKK!**

Sora used the Kingdom Key to block the attack as the guard of the Technoblin was swiftly broken. Link dashed forward and slashed the Technoblin in half, causing intestines and blood to fly out.

" Ghhh! Thanks Sora. Link." Ike got to his feet with the aid of Youmu and Yukari who promptly slapped him in the back of the head. " Ow! What was that for!?"

" That was for leaping before you think Ike. God, you are worst than Ziden sometimes." Yukari said.

" Wow. Glad to see my recklessness is spreading to others. It'd be boring if I was the only one doing stupid things." Ziden said while smirking.

The robot walked over to Link. " Thank you for helping me, bzzt! I notice that you have prototype of one of our creations. If you give it to me, I can finish it for you." Link handed the Robot the beetle as he began to tinker with it.

He finished upgrading it as everyone observed the new item. It had a large pincer that could very well carry objects.

" Thank you for this." Link said while bowing.

" No problem, human. Please take care now." The robot began to wander around in the time field as Link began to douse for Zelda. They began to trek through this treacherous desert. The heat beam downed on the heroes, causing them to sweat profusely. Ziden decides to be a joker and tells Marisa to drink some cactus water so the heat wouldn't affect her anymore. She did this and became delirious, spouting nonsense and gibberish. Eirin promptly shot an arrow in his face for this.

Mario and Luigi found this very funny. They continued their trek as they found themselves in front of a large wall with a part collapsed, preventing them from entering this place.

" We could just fly over it." Reimu said.

" Or... We could find a different entrance, travel through a crazy dungeon and fight a boss!" Ziden said as Remilia nodded frantically.

" Orrrrr! We could just fly over the wall!" Yukari yelled into Ziden's face.

Unknown to the group, Link had been talking to Gorok who was talking avidly about the place beyond this place, the Temple of Time. Link finished his conversation and activated a Timeshift Stone and received a map based on the past version of this place.

" Guys. Apparently there is another way to get beyond this wall via the Lanaryu Mining Facility. The entrance to it is back in that area we were in before." Link said while walking back towards that area with everyone except Reimu and Yukari following them.

" Freaking idiots." Reimu said as she flew to catch up with them.

They made their way to the location and found themselves staring at a strange powered up device. Link stabbed his sword into it and began to turn it. After a few tries, Link got the correct positioning of the keys as a rumble rolled through the area. A large pyramid rose from the sand in the center of the area.

Utsuho turned around and saw something interesting. " Hey! Ziden? Isn't that a Gate thingy over there?" Ziden looked over to where Utsuho was pointing and noticed that it wasn't active.

" It is not active right now. Lets just get through this dungeon." Ziden said.

While in the dungeon, several notable things happened. Ziden got face hugged by several baby scorpion creatures. Link obtained an Item known as the Gust Bellows, which as the name suggests blew out wind which could clear away sand. Meiling ends up being caught in quicksand, from which she was saved from by Ziden whom she hugged with a force to crack his spine.

Marisa finally began to 'sober up' as she slammed her broom into the groin of Ziden causing him to clutch himself in pain. Eirin wanted to check and see if Ziden would be capable of reproducing after this torture, but he quickly refused her. They made their way to the boss room as they see a large lump in the sand moving. A large black scorpion with a single closed eye appeared from the sand and let out a roar that caused the group to ready themselves for battle.

" This is Moldarach, the Thousand year Arachnid. Take caution against this foe. This will be no easy task." Fi said.

### **Moldarach ( Skyward Sword)**

Moldarach began to charge at the group as they dispersed to dodge his charge. The large scorpion opened his claws to reveal eyes in his claws.

" This is one creepy creature, ze." Marisa said while taking flight.

" What is this thing anyway?" Utsuho asked as everyone was silent.

" Its a giant scorpion. A cousin of spiders and such." Ziden said while ducking a claw swipe.

" Oh! Okay!" Utsuho opened fire on Moldarach, blasting its armor but doing no form of damage.

Meiling charged at the scorpion and slammed her fist into the shell of it, sending him into the wall, but still did no damage. " Jeez! This thing is durable! GahH!" The scorpion caught Meiling with her claw. She slammed her fists into the claw with such a force that forced the claw to release her.

Ike slashed the inner part of the claw, causing damage to Moldarach it roared in pain.

" I see. Striking the eye in the claw will cause damage to it. That's good to know." Eirin placed an arrow in her bow and aimed at the pulled the bowstring back and...

**FwiiiiiiippppppP! Baaaaannnnnnnggggg!**

The arrow flew and slammed into the claw, exploding with red and blue Danmaku. The claw was no longer there. The Moldarach didn't notice Youmu getting ready to slice off the other claw. She cross slashed the eye, effectively destroying it.

Moldarach opened his eye and began to burrow into the ground. " Link!"

" Got it!" Link pulled out the Gust Bellows, which looked like a rod with a bell-like object at the end of it. Link unleashed a burst of wind from the item as parts of the sand was blown away, revealing the scorpion.

" Gotcha!" Meiling slammed a chi powered fist into the eye of the scorpion, sending it flying back into the wall.

" Time for me to finish off a boss! Critical: Heart Break!" Remilia threw a red spear through the eye of Moldarach as it exploded into a red mist.

" Jeez! These battles are way too easy." Marisa said.

" Yeah. I was hoping for alot more in these 'bosses'." Nitori said.

They continued their way outside as they found themselves outside. They looked into the distance and saw Zelda and that other woman standing front of a large gear. Everyone began to run towards it as they see the sky darken.

" Oh no!" The mysterious woman ran to the bridge as they see Ghirahim charging towards her. She blocked his attack with a golden barrier that was quickly being overpowered.

" What's wrong!? You can't handle my strength, can you goddess serving dog?!" Ghirahim said as Link and Ziden charge from behind and tried to slash him only to miss via him flipping over the duo. " You two!?"

" Hey get going and protect Zelda while hold him off!" Link ordered as the woman ran to Zelda.

" Link! You'll need this to see me again!" Zelda throws Link a golden harp. " Go see the old lady at the sealed grounds! She'll tell you what to do!" Zelda raised her hands to the heavens as the gear opened, revealing more gears. Zelda and the mystery woman ran into the portal and it closed behind them.

" NOOOOOOOo! YOU FILTHY PIGS WOULD DARE TO INTERFERE WITH MY PLANS TO REVIVE MY MASTER, THE DEMON KING!?" Ghirahim was furious. Ghirahim slammed his foot into Link's chest, sending him flying into the gear and fell down in large amount of pain. " As for you disgusting humans and youkai! My new servents will deal with you!" Ghirahim snapped his fingers as a barrier surrounded the bridge that Ziden was on. A large orb of darkness

appeared above the others as several pieces of purple armor fell down in front of them. " Void Wanderer! Deal with this demon hunter and foolish hero!" Ghirahim disappeared as a purple portal appeared in front of them as a man cloaked in red appeared from the portal.

" Your swords. I want them." The man said as Ziden took a battle stance.

Author's note: I really am enjoying writing this story. It is a good stress reliever for School and other problems in my young life. The next chapter is going to be fight heavy. I may not be good at making long fights ( Minus that Bowser battle), but this is a good time to practice. R&R!

Trivia.

1. Ben Tennyson is from the successful cartoon series; Ben 10. The battle against the Demons took place some time before his battle against the Daigon.
2. Tier Harribel is from the anime series; Bleach. She is an Arrancar, namely the third Espada in the now sealed Aizen's army. She is currently living in Ziden's mansion with her three servents.
3. Ziden's world is the same as the alternate storyline of Castlevania: Lords of Shadow. Lucifer design, minus the armor and sword, is taken from there.
4. The Disgaea universe is also in this story as well. After all, it is my favorite SRPG of all time.

Gensokyo Analysis

Ziden: So I get to interview you next, eh Patchy?

Patchouli: Yes. You don't mind if Koakuma is with me as I do this interview with you.

Ziden: Not really. As long as she doesn't pull any funny tricks.



Patchouli: Well now. Well if you didn't know before, I'm a Magician Youkai.

Ziden: I'm well aware of that fact.

Patchouli: Because of the elements I use for magic research and because of my diet, my body is extremely frail. Plus the asthma that I suffer from also has a tendency to interrupt my spells and- \* cough cough\* sorry, speech.

Ziden: Lucky you've got your inhaler with you.

Patchouli: Yes, as well as you.

Koakoma: Oh! Lady Patchouli! Do you have a crush on this man?

Patchouli: That is a secret that will not leave this room Koakoma. Unless you want to be punished again.

Koakoma: Y-y-yes, Lady Patchouli!

Ziden: \*shudders\*

Patchouli: Back to the subject at hand, I specialize in Fire, Water, Wood, Metal and Earth magic. My magic skills are very high to the point that on my best of days, I could take on any opponents. But I am very interest in the science of the Outside World. I believe it to be similar to our magic.

Ziden: Hmmm. They are very similar. They allow us to fly, communicate over long distances, and wield destructive powers. \*notices Patchouli sitting awfully close to him\* Fine. When I get some free time, I'll tell about the Science and magic of the outside world.

Patchouli: Thanks.

## **Clash on the Big Bridge and Koloktos!**

The man Ziden was staring at had a grey complexion, four arms, red/orange armor as well as a red cloak wrapped around him. In his hand he had a naginata which he was pointing at Ziden.

" Tch! Who the hell are you!?" Ziden asked while drawing Crimson Edge and Efrete.

" Me? I am the Void Wanderer, Gilgamesh!" Gilgamesh struck a pose with light shining around him. Ziden sweatdropped at this. Ziden looked over at the others as the purple armor began to form itself.

It formed purple armored feet, a purple armored body with the Heartless Emblem, purple armored gauntlets with silver claws and a purple helmet covered with a silver mask. This was the Guard Armor, an Emblem Heartless that Sora fought in the past.

" Don't worry about your friends. I'm the one you need to worry about, my friend!" Gilgamesh pointed his naginata at Ziden.

### **Clash on the Big Bridge ( Final Fantasy 5)**

Ziden fired a barrage of fiery bullets at Gilgamesh who simply deflected them with his naginata. Ziden used this opportunity to dash forward and aim for Gilgamesh's neck. Gilgamesh bent backwards to dodge the attack and swung his leg upwards to strike Ziden in the jaw.

Ziden's jaw cracked from the attack and flew backwards to get back. "Dragon's Surge!" Ziden fired a blue energy dragon at Gilgamesh who jumped to dodge the attack. Ziden saw him pointing the spear downwards at him as gravity began to kick in. Gilgamesh dive bombed towards Ziden at an incredible rate. Ziden backflipped out the way of the attack.

" Not bad, boy! This shall be a true battle of manliness!" Gilgamesh slammed into the ground creating a dust cloud.

Gilgamesh charged at Ziden with the naginata pointed at him. Ziden blocked the attack with Crimson Edge and pointed Efrete at his chest.

**BANG BANG BANG BANG BANG!**

Ziden fired bullet after bullet into the chest of Gilgamesh, burning him. Ziden landed a strong kick to the side of Gilgamesh's head, knocking him off the bridge.

" Good riddance freak." Ziden turned to his comrades and sees them fighting against the Guard Armor. " I'm coming guys!" Ziden hears a weird sound coming from beneath the bridge. It sounded like a helicopter.

Ziden looks to his left and sees Gilgamesh spinning his lance above his head like a fan, floating up to the bridge and landing on it. " Hah! This is big surprise to you, is it not?" Gilgamesh places his naginata inside a purple portal. " And now! We fight!" Gilgamesh pulled out a blue, water-like sword that Ziden recognized.

" Isn't that the Brotherhood?" Ziden asked while drawing Nosada and Murakamo.

" Indeed it is! This blade shall trounce you multiple times!" Gilgamesh charged forward and aimed at Ziden's neck. Ziden blocked the attack with Nosada and slashed him across the chest with Murakamo.

Ziden jumped back and stabbed Murakamo into the ground. " Glacier Range!" A large line of frozen spikes charged at Gilgamesh. Gilgamesh jumped into the air and shot a blade of water that hit Ziden across the chest, causing a steaming wound to appear on his chest. " Gaaaahhhhhh!"

" Hohohohohohoh! So water is your weakness, huh? Then this blade truly will be your end!" Gilgamesh slashed through the glaciers and prepared to bring the sword down on Ziden skull.

**CLAAAAAAAAANNNGGGGG!**

Ziden looked up and saw an iron shield blocking the attack. " Link!"

Link pushed Gilgamesh away and helped Ziden to his feet. " Looks like you need help, Ziden." Link said while spinning his sword.

" I could use some back up against this guy. This guy is much stronger than he looks." Ziden said.

" Then lets take him together!" Link and Ziden charged at Gilgamesh, ready to start round 2!

*To the Guard Armor fight...*

### **Shrouding Dark Cloud ( Kingdom Hearts)**

Mario and Luigi ( while in their fire forms) were firing a barrage of fireballs at the Guard armor. The gauntlets began to spin around and flew towards Mario and Luigi. They were caught by the attack and knocked into the wall.

Meiling ran forward and delivered a hard kick to the arms, stopping their attack. She followed up with a powerful axe kick that slammed them into the ground.. Youmu charged at them and hit with several successive slashes.

Kirby ran forward and performed a drill stomp on the gauntlet. Sora ran up and slammed his keyblade on the downed gauntlet. Sakuya took aim at the body of Guard Armor and unleashed a barrage of knives that slammed against its armor.

The gauntlets got back up and flew to the sides of the body. Guard Armor began to stomp forward creating shockwaves and swinging his claws. The attack knocked several of the heroes back.

Eirin took aim at the Heartless with her bow. The arrow was glowing with a golden light. " Moonlit Arrow!" The arrow fired and pierced through the Heartless, stopping the attack while a golden moon appeared around it. The moon exploded into light and slammed into his body.

" Vampire Claw!" Remilia slashed Guard Armor across the torso, knocking him back.

" Monster Cucumber!" Several missiles flew out from her backpack and exploded across Guard Armor's body.

Utsuho took aim at Guard Armor while charging up an attack. Her third leg took a purple glow with same colored lightning flashing around. " Wave Breaker!" A large electric beam slammed into Guard Armor, enveloping him while doing massive damage.

" Whoa! That's new!" Marisa said.

The Guard Armor took alot of damage from the attack, but still had all of its body. He leapt into the air and slammed down onto Utsuho, burying her under the purple armor. Ike and Sora took this opportunity and began to combo the crap out of the Guard Armor. From this beat down it lost one of its Gauntlets.

" Jeez this thing is tough!" Reimu said while throwing orbs at it.

"Take this! Love Sign: Master Spark!" A large, colorful beam erupted from her hakkeru, enveloping the heartless.

" Marisa! Did you forget that Utsuho is under there?" Nitori yelled as Marisa rubbed the back of her head.

The Guard Armor got up and revealed the flattened Hell Raven.

Meiling pulled out a spell card. " Colorful Sign: Colorful Wind Chime!" She creates a powerful whirlpool of chi that slammed against the body of Guard Armor.

" I'll finish it!" Sora jumped up dashed through the Guard Armor, causing a ball of light to form around it.

The heartless had several explosions happening around it as its head fell into its armor. A large crystal heart rose out of the armor.

" Good now that that's over, lets go help Link and Ziden!" Reimu ran forward towards the bridge, only to find a barrier blocking her path.

" A barrier. It seems that Ghirahim really doesn't want us to help our friends." Eirin said.

" I hope Link will be alright against this foe." Youmu said.

*Back to the battle against Gilgamesh...*

### **Clash on the Big Bridge ( Final Fantasy 5)**

Ziden and Link were covered in cuts as well Gilgamesh who was holding 4 swords. Tidus' Brotherhood, Cloud's Buster Sword, Squall's Revolver and Odin's Zantetsuken.

" This guy is tough." Link said between pants.

" Yeah. It doesn't help that he has four swords to our three swords." Ziden said getting up and letting his wounds close.

Link pulled out a bottle filled with a red liquid and drank it, healing himself.

" Now we fight!" Gilgamesh charged at Link and Ziden.

Ziden ducked the attack and slashed Gilgamesh across the side, drawing blood. Link performed a spin attack on the stunned Gilgamesh, knocking him skyward.

" Frostburn Cross!" Ziden jumps after Gilgamesh and hits across the back with a burning cross attack knocking him higher into the air. Gilgamesh landed to the ground.

" Oh... no... I'm... losing." Gilgamesh seemed to be losing consciousness.

" Well it looks we won this on-" Ziden started to say before-

" Psyche! Protect!" Gilgamesh is covered in a orange shield. " Shell!" A green barrier surrounds him. " Haste!" A red clock appears in front of Gilgamesh with its hands moving forward at a very fast rate. Gilgamesh dashed past Ziden, faster than a lightning strike. Ziden's body sprayed out blood as he fell to the ground. " Jump!" Gilgamesh jumped high into the sky and slammed downwards, piercing Ziden through his body as he screamed in pain.

Gilgamesh charged at Link who knocked his attack away with a well placed shield bash. " Oh no!" Link proceeded to stab Gilgamesh rapidly with the Goddess Sword. Gilgamesh was protected by Protect but was still taking large amounts damage.

" Spin Attack!" Link sends Gilgamesh flying with a powerful spin attack. Ziden gets up and stares at the airborne Gilgamesh.

" Not bad! 1000 Needles!" Gilgamesh fires a barrage of Cactuar needles at the duo as they scrambled to dodge the attack.

" Link. I'm going to throw you up there. Can you deal the finishing blow?" Ziden Link who nodded.

" Not so fast! Aqua Breath!" Gilgamesh fired a blast of water from his mouth aimed at Ziden.

Ziden thrusted Murakamo into the water, freezing it before it touched him. Ziden dashed over to Link and threw him at the airborne Gilgamesh. Link placed his shield behind his back and gripped his sword with two hands.

" Hi-yahhhhH!" Link slashed Gilgamesh hard across the chest, smashing through Protect. Gilgamesh fell towards the bridge and landed face first on the bridge.

" Ouchie." Gilgamesh got back up. Ziden and Gilgamesh stared at each other for a while before Gilgamesh started laughing. Gilgamesh throws a card towards Ziden as well as an orb.

" What the- How Did you get this?" Ziden shows him the orb.

" I found it journeying the Void. I sensed it had been giving off a faint aura, similar to yours." Gilgamesh opened a purple portal. " Call upon me if you need of me, or I shall appear and aid you if I feel like it. Let us fight again someday!"

Ziden had a emotionless face for a few second before he had a smile on his face. " Sure! Next time, I'll kick your ass next time, Gilgy!" Ziden held out his fist.

Gilgamesh walked over to Ziden and fist bumped him. Gilgamesh walked towards the portal and stopped. " You remind me of an old friend I had. What's your name."

" Ziden. Ziden Icrim." Gilgamesh chuckled at this. " What's so funny?"

" I never thought I'd ever meet the Legendary Hero, that's all. May we meet again, buddy! Tally ho!" Gilgamesh jumps into the portal and disappeared. The barrier blocking off the bridge disappeared and everyone ran to Ziden.

" Ziden! Are you alright?" Eirin asked as Ziden shrugged.

" Um Ziden? Where is Link?" Reimu asked as everyone looked up.

"Whhhhhhoooooooooooooooooaaaaaaa!" Link was soaring higher and higher into the skies. Looks like Ziden put in too much strength behind that throw.

" Yukari! Do something!" Youmu pleaded.

" Don't feel like it." Yukari said, waving a fan in front off her face.



Ziden jumped onto the Dragoon and headed into the sky with everyone following him.

In the skies, everyone sees Link being saved by his loftwing as they flew towards the green pillar of light. When Link neared the pillar, a large red haired man tackled Link, causing him to plummet down towards the surface.

Everyone followed and sees the red haired man baffled by the surface creatures. The man had his hair done like a rooster's comb. (Look up Goose pics to see what it looks like.) He had a strong face, wore a green tunic-like shirt and brown pants and boots.

Apparently this man, named Goose by the way, had decided to take to reins of Link's journey and ran towards the temple.

Ziden decided to take a look at the orb he received from Gilgamesh. It had a magic circle inside of it. He absorbed it and felt magic energy coarse through his veins. " Good. Now I can help the moon princess out." Ziden said to himself.

They entered the temple and saw Goose arguing with the old lady. According to Link, the old lady told Goose that he isn't the one who will save Zelda. Goose looked over to Link with a sneer as he walked past him. Goose stopped by Ziden.

" You. If I can't save Zelda, then you can! You look tough. I even saw that story you told at the academy. That pipsqueak can't save Zelda. I know it!" Goose walked out the temple as Link walked towards the old lady.

" So Zelda has gone back in time. In order for you to go join her, you must make use of the Harp she gave you. Allow me to teach you a song." The old lady proceeded to teach Link the Hymm of the Goddess. After hearing the beautiful performance, everyone felt calm and relieved. The old lady snapped her finger as a large purple-black pillar appeared in the middle of the room.

All of a sudden, the whole temple started to shake. " Oh no! The seal has been broken!" The old lady exclaimed as everyone ran outside. Goose was panicking from the sudden earthquake.

The girls were shuddering from the amount of power coming from the seal. Ziden, Ike and Link were not fazed by this. " Ziden. Link. Let's go!" Ike jumped down into the spiraling chasm along with Link and Ziden following him. They landed in front of a Sealing Spike that was covered in darkness.

" Something is coming out of that seal!" Reimu exclaimed.

The darkness exploded out from the spike as it took the form of a large, hairy bipedal monster. The creature's black, scale-like hair seemed to glow red every so often. The creature's maw was filled with sharp teeth that wanted tear something apart.

" The Imprisoned has broken free! Link and friends! You must reseal him!" The old lady exclaimed.

" The Imprisoned. This is not going to be easy. That thing is huge!" Eirin said.

" Humph! I don't care how big he is, ze! A good ole fashioned Master Spark will knock him down some pegs!" Marisa hops on her broom and starts flying.

" Good thing I'm here! Time for this freak to get sealed!" Reimu took flight.

" Sakuya. Meiling. Neither of you are to hold back in this fight. Hit this creature with everything we've got." Remilia commanded.

" Yes, Mistress Remilia!" They both said in unison.

" Whatever you guys do, don't let him get near this temple!" The Old lady said.

" Got it!" Everyone said as they readied themselves to fight.

## **Imprisoned Battle ( Skyward Sword)**

The Imprisoned made his way up the spiraling pathway as the swordsman trio chased after him. Ziden ran up and slashed the Imprisoned across the back, only to see that it did no form of damage.

The airborne girls were unleashing attack after attack on the giant beast.

Ike noticed the four white toes on each foot and thought of something. " Ziden! Link! Aim for its toes! Without the toes, there no possible for it to stand!"

" Got it!" Link charged forward and stabbed the back toe on the right leg of the Imprisoned, causing it to explode into black blood. The Imprisoned felt this and kicked his leg back, knocking back into Ziden, slamming them both into the wall.

" Ouch." Ziden got free from the wall and ran towards the Imprisoned with fire wrapped around his right leg. " Burning Lancer!" Ziden jumps and slams his foot into the back of the Imprisoned, causing him stumble from the attack.

Reimu noticed something when he stumbled. " Hey! The sealing spike is still in his head!"

Ziden heard this and smirked. " Looks like we found our weak ! You keep launching attacks at him to slow him down!" Ziden yelled as the fliers nodded their heads.

Ike dashed forward and slashed through all of the left foot's toes. Link threw a bomb at the right foot, causing an explosion that destroyed the right foot's toes, causing him to fall backwards, leaving the sealing spike in reach of the swordsman. Link struck the sealing spike with 3 upward strike, causing to enter the Imprisoned's skull.

The Imprisoned lurched upwards and caused the sealing spike to reappear on his head and then he did something totally unexpected. He laid down belly first and began to slide up the spiraling ramp.

" What the what?! Yo Spikes! Do something, ze!" Marisa exclaimed as Ziden ran up the walls a fair bit up. Ziden looked at the Imprisoned sliding up the path. Ziden pointed his fists at the creature as they turned black and metallic. They began to spin, creating visible winds to swirl around it.

" Lets Rock! Mimicked Skill: Turbo Smasher Punch!" Ziden's fists flew from his arms and flew towards Imprisoned and slammed into the jaw of the beast. Due to the amount of force and the momentum of the spinning rocket punches, the attack stopped him and flipped him onto his back.

Link ran and forced the spike back into its skull. The Imprisoned screeched in pain as it got back to its feet. Its legs were spiking with red electricity. Every time he stomped his foot, a red electric shockwave rang out.

Ziden noticed that they needed to do this one more time and this freak was going down. But the creature continued to walk up the ramp as if nothing happened. " Everyone! Time to seal this freak back up!" Ziden yelled.

" Love Sign: Master Spark!" The beam slammed into the Imprisoned and slammed him into the wall.

" Critical: Heart Break!" A red spear slammed into the mouth of the Imprisoned, causing red smoke to come out of his mouth.

Everyone began to hit the Imprisoned a barrage of spellcards, but he still remained standing. Ziden thought how much more did they need to put him down. Ziden sees Link sprinting up the ramp and towards him. He saw the determined look in his eyes. Link was grabbed by Ziden and thrown upwards, towards the sealing spike.

" Hiyaahhhh!" Link performed a diving thrust on the sealing spike, slamming into the skull of the Imprisoned. It began to glow white as it exploded into black particles. The sealing spike went back to the bottom of the pit.

" Link! Use a skyward strike to complete the seal!" The old lady screamed. Link jumped to the bottom and hits the sealing spike with the Skyward Strike. The spike slammed into the ground at the command of Link, effectively creating a new seal.

" Whew. That was no ordinary beast. Whatever it was, I doubt this is the last time we will see him." Ziden said while walking up to the temple.

" You all did a good job on sealing the Imprisoned. But you should know that he will break free again." The old lady said. " Link. In order to activate the Gates of Time, your sword needs to be sharpened by the 3 Sacred Flames. However, in order to reach these three flames, you must find the Island of the Gods. There you will know what to do."

Ziden teleported everyone to Skyloft, leaving Goose and the old lady alone. Goose punched the wall and walked outside, feeling useless.

### **Knight Academy ( Skyward Sword)**

Ziden had discussed a plan with Eirin about how to break the spell on her. Ziden had Kaguya held in a chokehold as Eirin injected her with a special sedative that knock her out until the spell is broken.

Ziden placed her on the bed and began to break the spell. Several magic circles were above Kaguya's sleeping body. Ziden's fingertips were covered in magic energy that were attempting to find the weakpoints of the spell and unravel it.

" Its been about 50 mins. Are you almost done?" Eirin asked.

" I'm done, doc." The magic circles began to shatter as Kaguya began to stir. Kaguya's eyes opened as she saw Ziden smiling at her. " Morning sunshine!"

" Ugh. My head. Ziden. What did you do?" Kaguya began to sit up.

" Is the spell broken?" Eirin asked as she got closer.

" Time to find out. Kaguya! How do you feel about me?" Ziden asked.

Kaguya placed a sleeve over her mouth and thought for a second. " You seem interesting, plus being married to you makes Mokou upset and me happy about her being upset."

" Yep. The spell is broken." Ziden said while standing up.

" Princess. Would you mind telling me what that man did to place that spell on you?" Eirin asked.

" Who? Joshua?" Ziden growled at the mention of his father's name.

" Simple. He told me that he wanted me to marry his son whom would be born sometime in the future. He gave me a kiss and afterwards I felt lightheaded and passed out. When I came to, I found myself in a dark place held in place by chains. I could see a screen in front of me showing what I was doing. Calling off the Impossible Requests and began staying in my room more and more. Sometime after this, Mokou came into the picture and the rivalry between us began. Our battles always ended with one of us killing each other. This went on for several centuries until the day you came across us fighting."

"..." Ziden remained silent.

" The second I saw you and my heart fluttered. I finally get to meet the man I was told I could marry. The look on Mokou's face when I ran over and hugged you made me laugh. Of course you pushed me off you. I was relieved when you did that. Being forced to watch your body do things out of your own control is disturbing. I knew that

Joshua placed me in some kind of love spell and replaced my personality with one that would most likely cause you to fall in love with you. But he didn't count on one thing though."

" Mokou attacking me." Ziden said as Kaguya looked at him.

" Ah yes. I remember the Librarian saying that your memories of Mokou were coming back after your fight. Speaking of that, I'm very disappointed in you. Throwing the fight like that when you know you could have won."

" Yeah. So to make things short. I ended up fighting and killing Mokou, who came back to life and knocked me unconscious. We became friends and you tried your hardest to make me your husband. When I was brought back to Gensokyo 4 years ago ( Several months after the events of Imperishable Night), you learned that my memory of Gensokyo was gone and you jumped on that opportunity and sweet talked into believing that Mokou was an witch that hunted you for fun."

Kaguya looked down. " Do you hate me for tricking you?"

Ziden sat on the bed next to her and ruffled her hair. " Don't worry about it, Princess!" Ziden heard growling coming from his right and sees Mokou glaring at him. " When the hell did you get here?"

" She's been here the whole time.' Eirin said.

" So? Your old man turned Kaguya into that love struck fool? Talk about evil." Mokou said while stretching her leg.

" Whatever Mokou." Kaguya said glaring at her.

Ziden could feel the tension in the room as a knock was heard on the door. " Come on."

Link entered the room. " Ziden? Are you busy?"

" Just the person I wanted to see. Kaguya? Come with me please." Ziden walked out of the room with Link and Kaguya following him. They made their way to the grassy balcony of the Knight Academy.

" All right Link. I know that you are currently receiving training from Ike and Youmu, but i think you should learn some cool Sword techniques from me that will help you take on powerful foes like Ghirahim." Ziden pulled out Crimson Edge as Link pulled out his sword and a new shield he bought.

" I'm ready." Link said.

Kaguya was sitting down watching the training exercise with eager eyes.

" Ahem! I am aware that you know the Ending Blow and Shield Bash, but I am going to teach you techniques that will help you against all types of foes." Ziden said as Link nodded.

### **Hidden Technique Theme ( LoZ: Twilight Princess)**

" The Shield Bash is an effective way of dealing with shield bearing opponents, but what if the opponent is armored in the front. I shall teach you a technique that will allow to get behind an opponent and strike them from behind. Be ready to learn the Back Slice!" Ziden jumped to the side and rolled behind Link and performed a rising spin attack, stopping at Link's neck. " Hit me with this technique!" Ziden returns to his original position.

Link nods and jumps to the side, rolls behind Ziden and hits him across the back with a rising spin attack that sends Ziden flying forward.

" Heh! Not bad! You have learned the Back Slice!" Ziden said.

Link performed the attack as special music played to signify he learned the technique. Link put away his shield and swung his sword two times, spun it and placed it back in its sheathe. ( In short, he did



his Boss Defeat and Technique Learned Animation from Twilight Princess).

" Not bad, Link!" Link looked up and sees Ike and Youmu clapping.

" So where to next?" Ziden asked.

" We have a Trial to overcome in Faron Woods." Link said.

Ziden told Kaguya to reenter Sanctuary and everyone walked towards the dock. They made their way to Faron Woods and began their search. They found themselves at the entrance to the deeper part of the woods as they saw a Gate on top of what is believed to be the place to start the trial.

Ziden entered the Gate and found himself in a hallway of Mirrors. " Great. Am I about to fight a clown?" Ziden turns and admires himself in the mirror. Ziden turns away as the audience notices something about the reflection. The reflection stopped moving and was holding a knife while coming out of the mirror.

Ziden sensed an attack coming from behind and quickly slams his foot into the creatures face. The creature began to change into its true form. It now looked a man-like creature wearing a white mask with a beak and red eyes. He was wearing red cloak that covered his body. This being was Paranoia, a powerful demon that resides in Mirrors.

### **Into the Dark Night ( Castlevania: Dawn of Sorrow)**

The arena began to spin as it now formed a circular battlefield surrounded by mirrors. Ziden was crouched down with his jacket fluttering from an unknown source of wind. Paranoia began to fire a thin beam at Ziden who easily dodged the attack.

" Humph! That all you got, mirror freak! Grah!" Ziden was pierced through the stomach by the laser. " Shit! I forgot about the mirrors!"

Ziden fired a sword wave at Paranoia, exploding against his body. Ziden followed up with a strong kick to his hip. Ziden spun himself and slammed his other leg across the face of Paranoia.

Paranoia was sent flying by the attack. Paranoia unleashed a barrage of lasers that forced Ziden to dodge. Several lasers began to pierce through Ziden's body as he felt his health get dangerously low.

Ziden fell to his knees and saw Paranoia charging up a laser. Ziden closed his eyes and braced himself for a knockout blow. *" Whelp. This wouldn't be the first time I lost in a Gate. Guess I'm Level 5 for no reason then."*

Ziden waited and waited, but noticed that nothing happened. Ziden opened his eyes and saw a woman in a green Chinese dress that showed off her strong legs standing in front of him and blocked the attack for him.. *" Get up, Ziden!"* This voice came behind Ziden as he saw several red bats slam into Paranoia. Ziden turned to see the Scarlet Devil grinning at him.

Meiling cracked her neck and jumped towards Paranoia and axe kicked him into the ground. Remilia crouched down with her arms stretched out to the side. *" Scarlet Shredder!"* She launched forward while spinning like a red drill. She slammed into the chest of Paranoia, rapidly slashing the mirror demon.

Ziden finished drinking a high potion, regaining health up to the 80% mark as he stood up.

Ziden stomped his foot into the ground and twisted his body around while gripping his sword with both of his hands. *" Infernal Buster!"* A powerful stream of fire slammed into Paranoia knocking him into the mirror A red skull appeared over his head as Paranoia looked dazed.

Ziden walked forward and thrust his sword through the chest of Paranoia. Paranoia exploded into blood, covering the mirror in crimson life.

" Well that was too easy!" Meiling began to celebrate before she sensed something. All the mirrors shattered and formed a giant mirror. The red blood began to spiral into the air and formed a giant version of Paranoia was floating above them.

Paranoia slammed his foot onto the arena, causing a shockwave to travel through the arena.

Meiling gathered red chi energy into her arms and slammed her palms into the shin of the giant monster. " Red Energy Release!"

Snaaaaaaaaappppppppp!

The explosive force shattered the femur of the mirror demon as Ziden was holding Remilia like a baseball with her nails glowing with a crimson energy. Ziden launched Remilia at the giant while spinning like a cannonball with her claws stretched out. She flew past its shoulder, causing to spray out blood. She quickly flew to his chest and pulled out a spellcard.

" Scarlet Sign: Red the Nightless Castle!" Scarlet energy erupted from Remilia, creating a red pillar of light that knocked Paranoia skyward.

Paranoia countered by firing beams of energy that Ziden struggled to dodge. The Scarlet duo, having years of experience dealing with attacks like this, were dodging the attack easily maneuvering around the attack quite easily.

Ziden decided he had enough of this malarkey. Ziden focused electricity into his sword as he crouched down. " Let's go! Spark Rave!" Ziden transformed into lightning and dashed around Paranoia, rapidly slashing him as he teleported above him.

A purple ball appeared on his abdomen as he pulled his arms up. " Get out of here! Mimicked Skill: Getter Beam!" A large purple beam shot out from his stomach and slammed into the face of Paranoia, slamming him into the ground.

Meiling crouched down, focusing chi to her right leg. " Sky Dragon Kick!" Meiling leapt upwards with her leg wrapping in a dragon silhouette, pointed at the face of Paranoia.

**Ka-Craaaaaaaacccccckkkkkk!**

Meiling's foot cracked through the mask of the demon causing a large red skull to appear above his head.

Ziden cracked his knuckles as two large vortexes appeared in the air. Ziden threw a punch and shocked the audience. A giant fiery fist came through the vortex and struck Paranoia in the face. Ziden started to throw more punches as the fiery fist began to pummel the face of Paranoia. The mask was shattered and revealed a human-like face. Ziden winded up a punch and threw it. The fist slammed into Paranoia with such a force, that it ripped him in half causing his gore to spray all over the trio. A pillar of light surrounded Ziden as they were teleported to the Faron Woods.

" That was a surprise. How come that Demon looked so human-like?" Eirin asked as the demon expert began to talk.

" Well, while most demons, unlike their Youkai cousins, tend to look like you would think them to look. Evil looking, non human features, wings. But some Demons like to take Human qualities to hide their powerful forms from professional hunters. Of course demons are alot more cruel and vicious than their Youkai cousins." Ziden explained as Link played Farore's Courage. A blue pedestal appeared and Link walked up to it.

" So Youkai and Demons are related? I didn't know that." Reimu said.

" Yeah. Demons tend to look down on us because of their superior personalities as they tend to believe themselves to be the ultimate race." Yukari explained.

" Terrible it is. That's why you rarely see Demons socializing with us Youkai. They refer to us as 'reject demons' and 'human lovers'" Nitori said.

" I guess thats why that Ghirahim guy dislikes us so much." Meiling said.

" Yeah. Even so, you guys don't compare to the hatred they share to a single being." Ziden said while to Link's side.

" Oh. You mean 'him'." Yukari said.

Link thrusted the sword into the pedestal as he, Ziden, Ike, Sakuya and Youmu vanished into a burst of white light.

They found themselves standing in some form of safe zone as they saw several statues holding large weapons. " Master. This is the Silent Realm, a place where you will prove your worth to the Goddess. You do not have access to any of your items, so you must rely on your own skill and your comrades to protect you. The minute you leave this safe zone, the guardians will activate. By collecting all of the Tears of Farore will you pass this trial." Fi said as Link stepped out of the safe zone. The whole area turned red as the Guardians activated.

### **Silent Realm Guardians ( Skyward Sword)**

Link noticed green tearlike objects scattered through the chaotic forest as a large Guardian wielding a large mace charged at Link. Ike charged into the Mace Guardian, knocking him into a tree as Link collected a Tear of Farore. Link began his trial to collect the tears as the Guardians converged on the 4 warriors.

" So these are the Guardians, huh?" Ike asked.

" Yep. This will be fun. Sakuya and Youmu, you guys handle the flying ones. Me and blue hair here will handle the ground ones!" Ziden cracked his knuckles. " Heroic Eruption!" Ziden slammed his

fist into the ground creating a pillar of fire that blasted an Mace Guardian airborne.

Time slowed down as an orange blade was in the air next to it. "Aether!" Ike grabbed the sword and slammed it into the body of the Guardian, dragging him into the ground.

The guardian quickly got back up and slammed his arm into Ike's side. Ike was sent flying into a tree and flew through it. Ziden threw a fiery fist into the face of the Guardian, quickly following up with a haymaker to the jaw.

Ziden spun his body like that of a wheel. "Rampaging Skull Crusher!" Ziden slammed his foot into the skull of the Guardian, causing a burst of wind to blast out. The Guardian's head exploded from the impact as he sees Ike running towards him.

Ziden ducks being hit by a mace as Ike jumps over him and slashed the Guardian across the chest, staggering him. Several silver knives slams into the Guardian as it violently exploded from the assault.

Ziden salutes his student while she fights two sword wielding Guardians that were flying. Ziden didn't sense the Guardian behind as it slammed the mace hard down onto the body of Ziden. Ziden is crushed by the attack while his ribcage shattered, piercing many of his organs. He coughed up large amounts of blood while the Guardian winded up another hit.

Ike intercepted the attack with Ragnell and coupled with his inhuman strength, effectively blocked the attack. Ziden regenerated his bones and punctured organs. Ziden got up and flipped away. Ziden took his sword and spun it in front of him as green lights emitted from his body.

"O benevolent winds! Use thine Sylven powers and carry my enemies away on the wayward winds! Cyclone!" Ziden summoned a vicious green tornado that sucked up the Guardians and blasted them skyward. A bright flash came from their bodies and...

**Booooooooooooooooooooooooooooommmmmmmmmmmmmmmmm!**

The Guardians exploded into dust as Youmu had a shocked look on her face. " Heh! Didn't know I can use powerful magic like that, didja gardner?" Ziden said as she shook her head.

Youmu returned her attention to the Sword Guardian coming at her. She ducked a swing her head and swung her swords across the face of the Guardian, causing a large slash to appear across it. She was about to finish off the creature as everything suddenly stopped. Link had collected all of the tears and was standing oon the safe zone. There was an orb of light coming from Link's chest. This item was the Water Dragon's Scale, an item that allows the person to swim like a fish.

They were returned to the forest as Fi told them something interesting. She had picked up location of where the flame was, in the vicinity of Lake Floria. They made their way there as they found themselves in front of a stone door with an incomplete symbol on it.

" Hey Ziden? Who was that guy you were referring to? The one that was hated by demons?" Reimu asked.

Ziden looked to Yukari and Eirin with a sly smile. " Should I tell them?"

"Hell no." Yukari said. Everyone looked at her with confused looks.

" Oh, don't worry about her. She's just heartbroken." Ziden said.

" Ooooo! Do tell!" Marisa sat down, ready to listen to this story. Link continued to try and draw the symbol.

" Well now. Once upon a time, there was a Demon known as Sparda. This demon was widely known as traitor to his race, because he decided to protect the humans instead of hunting them. He ended up falling in love with a human woman and bore two children." Ziden explained.

" Okay. So what does that have to do with Yukari?" Reimu asked.

" Simple. She was in lo- Mph!" Ziden's mouth was covered by the sudden appearance of Ran and Chen.

" Oh my. The powerful Yukari Yakumo falling in love with a rebellious demon, only for him to marry a mere human. How sad." Remilia said while chuckling.

" Shut. Up. Now." Yukari said in a tone so cold, it could have frozen the sun.

" Yep. So sad." Ziden said as the door opened.

" Ziden!" Ziden saw Ran trying to grab him as he suddenly disappeared. Ziden was now at the cliff over looking the lake.

### **Lake Floria ( Skyward Sword)**

" Great. There's water here. Hey idiot. Does the magic seal-"

" Probably. Can any of you guys swim?" Ziden asked as many of them shook their heads.

" Well we can, but we don't want get our clothes wet." Meiling said.

Ziden remained silent for a second. " Sakuya. You know what to do." Sakuya nodded and walked over to Ziden.

The girls, minus Ike, Yukari, Link and Remilia, were floating over the lake now. What? If you are confused, Sakuya stopped time and Ziden teleported them over the lake. They fell into the Lake angry at Ziden and Sakuya. Sakuya performed a Swan dive into the water and quickly rose to the surface. A trio of judges appeared out of nowhere, two of them gave her a perfect 10. The Russian judge, however, gave her a 2.5. This actually made her upset.

" What?! That was a perfect dive!" Nitori angrily yelled.



" Russian judge says no." The judges disappeared, leaving the girls confused.

" Whatever." Sakuya began to relax in the water as she arguing coming from above them.

" What? I told you that I don't want to get wet!" Ziden yelled.

" Me neither. Wings are so hard to get dry." Remilia said while flapping her wings.

A few seconds later...

" Gaaaaahhhhhhh!" Ziden and Remilia were thrown headfirst into the lake.

Yukari floats herself down to the Lake and casually dips into the pond. Ike and Link dived into the pond with no hesitation. Ran and Chen decided to stick Ziden.

" Now you be a good little bro and carry your big sister through this Lake!" Ziden responded by dropping Chen right into the water.

"Ziden!" Ran slapped Ziden in the back of his head.

They began their trek through the watery caverns as they found themselves talking to a dragon. After doing something completely out of the way, the dragon revealed herself to the group. She was wearing a blue robe with a cascading waterfall on her underbelly.

Faron led the group outside and opened up a waterfall, revealing an entrance to the temple. Everyone went inside except for Ziden. Ziden stopped as if thinking. Faron noticed what Ziden doing.

Up above on one of the cliffs was three people. One of them was the man in red that attacked Ziden at Glitzville. He was Ruler 4.

Another was one that seemed to exude power. He was dark skinned with orange hair that formed into a beard. He wore black armor that

had a black cape that was red on the inside. Most notable about him was the glowing wound in his chest. The other person was Ghirahim. Around them were several Shadow heartless. They noticed Ziden stopping and sensing their presence.

" So those are the Rulers of Darkness, huh hero boy?" Faron asked.

" Yeah, but I sense something else. Something... pure. Can you keep an eye out for a green haired girl wearing a red dress?" Ziden asked as the Guardian dragon nodded.

Ziden entered the dungeon and he instantly saw that he wouldn't like it. The place looked like and gave off the Water Temple vibe.

" This is not going to be fun." Ziden said.

" Jeez. More water." They began their trek through the temple. Taking down various enemies and solving puzzles. Yadda yadda. Taco bell.

They found themselves fighting against a four armed skeleton in golden armor. It had two of its arms crossed with the other two holding swords. This guy was a Stalmaster, who according to Fi was a strong opponent.

Ike and Youmu volunteered to fight the creature. Link was about to join them when time stopped in the room. Link turned around to see Sakuya closing a silver pocketwatch.

" Link! Before you face this foe, I shall teach you a new skill; the Helm Splitter! Let this skill be hewn into your mind." Ziden said drawing his sword. " When facing off against opponents that are fully armored, the Helm Splitter is the perfect attack to pierce through their defenses." Ziden jumped over Link and slashed the air next to his head and landed behind him with his sword aimed at his neck. " Now you try." Ziden returned to his original location.

" Helm Splitter!" Link jumped Ziden and slashed him across the head with a vertical slash and landed behind Ziden. Link hits Ziden across the back with a strong diagonal slash.

" Congrats, hero! You have mastered the Helm Splitter! Use your new skills to defeat the Stalmaster while I enjoy a healthy meal!" Time flowed again as Link stood by Ike and Youmu. Ziden was indeed eating a properly made sandwich.

### **Stalmaster battle ( Skyward Sword)**

Ike dashed to the side and tried to slash his side, only be blocked by his right sword. SM knocked Ike away with a strong kick to the ribs. Ike recovered and stabbed his sword into the ground. " Eruption!" An explosion of fire blasted the Stalmaster back only for him quickly. Luckily Youmu was there and cross slashed the skeleton.

Link decided to wait until the Stalmaster was occupied was Youmu as he made his move. Link jumped to the side and rolled behind the bony freak. " Back Slice!"

Slaaaaaassssshhhhh!

Link rapidly slashed the man across the back. Youmu decides to use this opportunity to unleash a new arte. " Hurricane Thrust!" Youmu stabbed Stalmaster in the sternum. A powerful blast of wind knocked him into the air.

The stalmaster looked his left and his eyes widened ( just an expression. He doesn't have eyes, but a gold light in his eyes.), a bomb was right next to his face. It exploded and blasted him.

" Hehehehehe. I have underestimated you guys. Now, I shall no longer hold back." The Stalmaster drew another sword and an axe.

" That thing can talk!?" Ziden exclaimed.

The Stalmaster slammed two of its swords into Youmu who blocked using Roukanken. She saw the other two arms swing towards but was unable to dodge in time so she was able block one of the attack with Hakurouken. The other one slashed her across the stomach.

Stalmaster promptly kicked her away as he jumped over to Ike. Ike fired a blue sword wave at him. Stalmaster sidesteps the attack and fired four sword waves arranged in a diamond at Ike. Ike jumped through the diamond and stabbed the Stalmaster.

Link sprinted up from behind, jumped over Ike and " Helm Splitter!" Link slashes the Stalmaster across the head, knocking off the helmet and getting behind the creature. Link crouches down and slashed his leg, effectively crippling him.

" Link! Finish it!" Ziden yelled still holding the uneaten sandwich. Link jumped and stabbed the Stalmaster through his golden armor. The enemy exploded and a chest appeared. Yay.

Link opened the chest and received a whip. The group remembered seeing several things that needed the whip to operate. They made their to the Boss Room after dealing with cursed enemies. They entered the room and saw a giant six armed golden Hindu like statue. They noticed Ghirahim resting on the statue.

" I knew I sensed you nearby, you snake!" Ziden exclaimed as Ghirahim clapped.

" Very good of you to sense me, human. I was expecting one of your youkai friends to sense me." Ghirahim chuckled. " Well I would stay and chat, but I have an appointment with my new allies, so my friend here will crush you for me!" Ghirahim snapped his finger as a dark fluid entered the statue. The statue came to life and summoned two throwing axes into his upper two hands as everyone got ready to fight.

## **Koloktos Battle ( Skyward Sword)**

Nitori noticed a red core in Koloktos' chest before covered it with his two lower hands. " Guys! I saw his weak point! Its in his chest!" Nitori yelled.

Ziden dashed to the large statue and kicked it across the face. Being a statue, it of course did not react to being hit. It slammed Ziden into the ground and was about to slam an axe into his body. Remilia rescued Ziden before the axe slammed into his body.

" Thanks. I owe you one." Ziden said.

Remilia flashed one of her fangs. " Yes. You do." Remilia flew off and began to throw red balls of energy.

Yukari decided to watch from the sidelines along with Ran. " So how much has Ziden been improving his skills?" Ran asked.

" From the fights I've seen, yes. Although, if Ziden had all of his powers at the start of this journey, alot of the tougher opponents we've faced so far on this journey wouldn't be a challenge. I am surprised that Ziden received a keyblade. I always thought you had to inherit one." Yukari stated.

" \*sigh\* Ziden lost his powers again?" Yukari nodded. " What will we do with that child? It is bad enough that he is such a troublemaker and is usually hunted down by various assassins."

" Yet, barely any of them survive meeting him. The ones that do are his servants for life. But I should tell you something. Do you remember that time Ziden went insane and slaughtered those villagers?" Yukari said.

Ran's yellow tails drooped down as she remembered that tragic event. The only other event that saddened her this much was that event that occurred during September 12 years ago, the one in which her fiancée was killed.

" I remember." Ran said.

" I found out why he went insane. Baron von Drake, the Death Kaiser." At the mere mention of Drake's name, Ran's sad demeanor was replaced with one of rage. She knew that the man was responsible for the erasing of Ziden's memory in order to train him into a war machine that would destroy Gensokyo. To learn that the reason that she had to snap Ziden's neck and rip out his heart was all his fault, she became furious.

Her tails became frizzled and her eyes turned red. Yukari placed her hand on her shoulder to calm her down. " We'll get revenge on Drake for what he did to Ziden. We did promise Roxanne after all."

Chen was running around on all fours, trying to lure Koloktos into slam the axe into the ground. Being a cat, Chen was extremely nimble and flexible. Her perfectly manicured nails aren't just for decoration, they could slice through steel and silver weapons.

Link noticed when the statue slammed the weapon into the ground, he saw that there was a screw he pull out to dismantle the arm. Koloktos finally did it and Link took the whip and unscrew the arm, causing it to fall to the ground.

Ike saw this opportunity to slice off the arm of the Koloktos using Ragnell's unnatural sharpness. He revealed his core to the heroes. Nitori saw this and inhaled deep, causing her cheeks to puff up. She released a powerful stream of water from her mouth that slammed into its weak point.

Mario and Luigi performed a combo attack involving Mario grabbing Luigi's hand and spun him around. Mario released his grip and Luigi flew towards Koloktos with his foot stretched out.

Blammmmmmmooooo!

Koloktos, simply put, slapped Luigi away with the amount of force that knock the urine out of an elephant. " Wahhhhhhhhh!" Luigi was sent flying into a wall with yellow stars and birds flying around his head.

" I saw that coming, ze!" Marisa said while relaxing on her broom with Reimu and Sora waiting on the ground.

" This thing is hiding alot of power. We'll strike when it makes its move." Reimu said with Sora agreeing with her.

Youmu was dashing around the statue, giving the illusion that there was multiple copies of her. Eirin fired a barrage of arrows into the weak point. It threw an axe at her which she quickly spun under and shot more arrows into the weak point.

" Ah. You are all fighting so hard! So unfortunate that my friend is about to 'step' things up!" Ghirahim said while resting on a wall.

Koloktos' lower arms pressed against the floor and raised up a bit. It revealed that it had golden legs and rebuilt its destroyed arms and summoned six large swords to its hands.

### **Koloktos Battle Phase 2 ( Skyward Sword)**

The statue began a more aggressive battle strategy and walked toward Ike. Ike barely came up to the statue's thigh, but Ike was not deterred by the large size difference. Ike dodged a sudden kick from the golden statue, but failed to dodge a golden fist to his stomach, knocking him into the ceiling.

Utsuho aimed her cannon at the automaton and rained down hell on the back of the statue, causing it fall on one knee. Link and Youmu charged at it only to be slashed across the chest and sent flying into a wall.

Sword Kirby charged up power into his sword. " Sword Beam!" Kirby fired a large white sword wave at Koloktos who took it head on. Meiling focused chi into her legs to boost her next attack.

" Swallow Kick!" Meiling followed up with a series of flying kicks, rapidly damaging the cage protecting the weak point.

Remilia tacked the statue in the face, causing it to fall backwards. Ziden and Chen decided to try a team distraction.

" Yoohoo! Over here!" Ziden taunted.

" Your mother was a fool!" Chen taunted as Koloktos got up and chased them. They led him right towards Sakuya who holding a spell card.

" Wound Sign: Inscribe Red Soul!" Sakuya swung her arms frantically, creating an rapid series of visible cuts to be seen in the air. The cuts slammed into the body of Koloktos, staggering it.

Now it did something that surprised everyone, Koloktos jumped into the air and slammed his sword into the ground around Sakuya, knocking her off balance and onto her rear. Ziden happened to be in front of her and blood sprayed out of his nose. She quickly got up with a blushing face as she leapt backwards.

Ike charged at the large statue. Ike jumped and landed on the head of the statue while stabbing it multiple times. Koloktos slapped Ike off of its head and onto the ground. Koloktos raised his to stomp on Ike.

**Smaaaaassssssshhhhhh!**

Koloktos looked at the ground where Ike's body was supposed to be and saw only a cracked crater. Yukari had opened a gap underneath where Ike was and moved him out of the way. Kirby ran towards the statues legs and sliced through them like butter.

Unable to move around, Koloktos began to swing his swords in a circle, creating a vicious whirlwind that blasted everyone back.

" Take this! Star Sign: Meteonc Shower!" Marisa fired a powerful storm of star shaped missiles that exploded against the body of Koloktos. Sora ran forward and thrustured his keyblade through the chest, severely damaging the weak point.



" I'll finish him!" Nitori's backpack opened and a large blue rocket flew out of it. The rocket flew forward and exploded into the weak point, releasing intense bursts of water into the room. Koloktos began to violently explode as Ghirahim was furious, but managed to contain himself. He vanished as everyone entered the flame room as green fire was burning in the background.

The green fire was absorbed into the blade of Link as it grew in length and sharpness.

" Great! Now we just have to find the other two!" Utsuho happily said.

" Yay." Ziden said.

*Meanwhile at Eldin Volcano...*

The man known as Aokiji was waiting near a temple entrance with cold air surrounding him. " Jeez. When is this Ziden guy getting here? I want to hurry up and head back home." Aokiji simply said.

*Meanwhile at Lanayru Desert...*

A scientist looking man with a really long nail was waiting next to what appears to be a dragon's skull. " My my. I wonder when this Ziden person will get here. I absolutely cannot wait to dissect him! Nemu! Hurry up and make the tent!" The weird man commanded.

Trivia!

1. Gilgamesh is from the Final Fantasy series. Because of the events that occurred in Final Fantasy 5, he is trapped in the void, unable to return home. Please note that this not the last time we'll see this joker.

2. Paranoia is from Castlevania: Dawn of Sorrow. Even though he is a pathetic boss, he is required to be able to fight the true final boss. Note that I used a Castlevania boss for the Gate. This should be a hint for the Ruler of Darkness that will appear in the next world.

3. Guard Armor is a Heartless Boss from Kingdom Hearts. He is a very easy boss to take down, even on proud mode.

4. Turbo Smasher Punch is the Rocket Punch of the super powerful Mazinkaiser. This is one of Ziden's favorite mechs and Animes. Expect to see Ziden using its skills in hard fights. Mazinkaiser himself MAY appear in this story.

5. Getter Beam is the technique used by Shin Getter 1. This is another of Ziden's favorite mechs and Animes. Same as 4.

*Author's Note: Yes! Yet another chapter done! The Marines have started their plans to take down Ziden and Remilia. Can any one guess the Soul Reaper that is waiting for Ziden in the desert? I've started to make the fights progressively more longer and intense. This story is one I wanted to do for a long time. And before anyone asks, the One Piece world is not a part of Ziden's World. In case you want to know what powers Ziden currently has, head over to the profile and take a gander. You'll also see the stories I plan on doing in the future. R&R!*

Gensokyo A.

Ziden: I am here with the (self-proclaimed) Queen of Night, Remilia Scarlet! \*applause\*

Remilia: Thank you! Thank you!

Ziden: So Miss Scarlet? How is it that obtained the title of Scarlet Devil?

Remilia: Simple. My body used to get bloody from the corpses of my prey, staining my dresses red.

Ziden: Interesting. What of your staff?

Remilia: Sakuya is a very good employee, Patchouli has been my friend for a very long time and Meiling is... useful at times.

Ziden: I see. What of your sister? I'm sure you two must have trouble keeping them in line.

Remilia: Actually... because of how destructive she is, I keep her locked up in the basement. This is the first time she has been outside in a very long time.

Ziden: I see. She seems stable to me.

Remilia: She probably is good because she knows I'll punish her if she does something wrong on this trip.

Ziden: Wow.

Remilia: You know... I'm feeling kind of thirsty. \*flashes fangs and stands up\*

Ziden: No! Drink some water! STOP! GAHHHHH!

### 3 Days of Relaxation and Training

" Huh. You know I'm starting see why tentacles and girls wearing skirts don't mix." Ziden said. The camera panned upwards and showed Reimu, Marisa and Youmu being grabbed by tentacles.

" Ziden! Let me go save them! I wish to contribute to the fight!" Terra said. Wait what? Why is Terra here? Wait and find out.

" Sure. This Tentalus freak needs a good ass beating!" Ziden said.

Tentalus was a large humanoid, octopus haired monster with a large yellow eye.

**Scaldera Battle ( Skyward Sword)** Note: They share the same boss theme.

Terra jumps into the air and slashed through the tentacles holding the girls. The girls retort by blasting the octopus creature in the face with large amount of danmaku.

Ike fired a sword wave at the head of Tentalus. The attack sliced off several tentacles in his hair. He lets out a roar and reveals his eye. Eirin and Link took aim at the creature's eye and fired. The arrows hit their mark and Tentalus falls to the ship, with his eye opened. Ziden ran up and winded up a strong punch.

**Keeeerrrrrrrrr Plllllllloooooooooowwwwwww!**

Ziden's fist slammed into the eye with a sickening pop. Ziden had apprently hit the creature with too much force for when Ziden pulled out his fist, the eye came out with it. Disgusting. Tentalus exploded into black dust as Nayru's flames appeared behind them. Link's sword absorbed it and transformed into the Goddess White Sword!

" Wow. That was too easy." Reimu said.

" Reimu! Are you alright!?" Sora seemed worried about her.

" I'm fine. No way a tentacle would ever do me in!" Reimu said as Remilia and Meiling snickered.

" Shut up Ziden." Yukari said to Ziden who was about to say something either smart or snide.

" Well, from those books I've seen that the princess hides under her bed, those tentacles could have 'done' something to you." Eirin said.

" Violated by tentacles. Terrible way to go." Ziden said, holding an imaginary hat to his chest.

"... What are you saying that those tentacles could have-"

" Raped you guys? Yep!" Ziden said with a completely happy face.

" Gahhhh! That's disgusting!" Youmu said while shaking.

" The fact that the moon princess has books about tentacles monsters scares me." Nitori said.

" Creepy as hell is what it is." Ziden said.

Yukari, getting bored of this conversation, gapped everyone to Skyloft. The group decided to take three days of training and relaxation.

**Warning: The following parts contain vast stupidity and suggestive scenes. You have been warned.**

## **Day 1**

*Reimu and Sora decided to spend the day together. Via Remilia, Ziden is forced to take both Meiling and Patchouli on a date or risk being mauled by a Loli Vampire. Mario and Luigi are off doing... plumber/Italian stuff.*

*Eirin planned on studying her Exsphere. Terra decides to shadow Ziden with Sakuya shadowing her. Ike and Youmu are training Link again. Yukari, Ran and Chen decide to see how Ziden's forced date is going.*

*Marisa and Nitori began working on some magical experiments. Utsuho and Kirby are off playing with the children on the island.*

Sora and Reimu was on the same balcony that Ziden started training Link on.

" Why exactly are we here Reimu?" Sora asked.

"... No reason." Reimu said. " *Are all guys this blind when it comes to girls?*"

" So why did you want to hang out here alone?" Sora asked.

" *Yep. Totally blind.*" Reimu thought.

" *Hmm? What is she thinking about?*"

" Sora? Lets spar." Reimu said.

" Uh why?" Sora asked.

"... Because uhhhhh... I don't believe that you saved all worlds from darkness. I want to see your skill firsthand!" Reimu declared.

" Fine!" Sora summoned the Kingdom Key and dropped into his battle stance. Reimu smiled at this. She could tell that Sora hasn't trained with the Keyblade, but was so skilled with it. His natural skill reminded her of herself.

" Come on, Sora! Just cause I like you doesn't mean I'm going easy on you!" Reimu charged at Sora before he could ask what she meant by that.

Ziden's date was severely awkward having to deal with two drastically different women. One was a calm, silent girl while the other... was Meiling.

They were at a restaurant of sorts, waiting for their meal to arrive. The duo were sitting on both sides of Ziden with their arms wrapped around his, making it extremely hard to move them. Their food arrived with Ziden unable to eat with his arms restrained. Patchouli was mainly focused on one of the books she brought while resting her head on Ziden's shoulder. Meiling finished her food and was talking to Ziden about her job.

" I mean, its not like I don't like the job, but I'd enjoy it more if I wasn't always being blasted by a Master Spark everytime Marisa comes to the mansion to borrow some of Patchy's books." Meiling said.

" Indeed. Whenever I try to stop her, she'll either get away with books or blast me with a Spark as well." Patchouli said.

" Jeez. Sounds like she is a thief with violence on the brain." Ziden said.

" Yes. In total, she has borrowed at 1257 books from my Library and it is still rising. I even heard that she 'borrows' other things as well." Patchouli said while turning a page in the book.

" Meh. As long as she remembers not to touch my stuff, she's fine." Ziden said while looking at the book.

" Huh? What are you two reading?" Meiling releases Ziden's arm and moves into his lap, causing several men at the restaurant to murmur amongst themselves.

" That man is a lucky one, I tell you."

" The guy has two hotties all over him!"

" I hear that the guy's married!"

" What?! Does she know about this?!"

" Yeah! I overheard them talking when at the Academy! Even saw her too! She is beauty personified!"

" Dammit! That guy has 3 hot girls wrapped his fingers! That lucky bastard!"

" My. Isn't Ziden the ladies man!" A voice that obviously belonged to Yukari.

" Indeed." Ran's voice said.

" So why are you reading about fruit any way?" Ziden asked.

" These aren't just any fruit, these are the mystical fruits known as Devil Fruits." Patchouli said while waving her finger back and forth.

" Devil Fruit? Why does that sound familiar?" Ziden said.

" Hmmm? Oh! Didn't that Lucci guy said he ate one of them?" Meiling said.

" Yeah. That man was powerful. I'd hate to see what other kinds of powers there are." Ziden said.

" Yes. This book says that there are 3 types of Devil Fruit users. Paramecia are types whose Devil Fruit gave their bodies additional attributes like turning it rubber or even turning into Diamond. There are even ones that can steal the shadows of people. In simpler terms, they become superhumans. " Patchouli explained as Ziden wrapped his free arm around Meiling's waist, not out of affection but out of curiosity.

" Great. I'm glad we didn't face any ' Paramecia' types. They sound powerful." Meiling said.

" Zoan types can be simply stated as shapeshifters from my observations. They give their users powers and forms akin to animal.



They can even assume half beast forms, like we saw with Lucci."

" Great. So there are more freaks like Lucci out there?" Ziden asked.

" Yes. There are even fruits in this category that are classified as other types like Ancient and Mythical. These users can transform into more powerful beasts like a Phoenix, a Dinosaur and even a Buddha like form."

" It sounds like these guys are formidable to fight." Meiling said.

" Yes but these guys can't compare to the last category, the Logia types. Out of all three categories of Devil Fruits, these are the rarest and the strongest. Logia Fruit users gain the ability to completely transform into elements like Fire, Ice, Sand or even Darkness. It seems that they can't be harmed while transformed unless hurt by using their elemental weakness or by something called Haki. Their bodies are fluid-like which explains why you can't hit them." Patchouli closed the book and looked Ziden in the eyes.

" Tch! Can't be harmed, huh? But the fact that their bodies sounds like a ghost gives me an idea of what to do if we ever meet one." Ziden gets up. " Come on ladies. Lets go outside and watch the moonlight reflect off of the river!" The trio gets up and leaves the restaurant as the group of five spies follow them secretly.

They reached the bridge as they find two women bickering about something.

" Jeez. Why are you two here!?" Ziden said to the two women.

" Shut up, Ziden." Mokou coldly said.

" Don't speak to him like that!" Kaguya retorted back. Yeah. This is happening.

" Well at least we can still rest here." Patchouli said while wrapping her arms around Ziden's. Mokou and Kaguya noticed this.

" Are you two on a date?" Mokou asked.

" Yep. Jealous?" Meiling retorted.

" Not really. Me and Ziden have been on a lot more dates than you idiots." Mokou said while scratching her head.

" Hmm? You and Mokou were dating?" Patchouli asked. Ziden shrugged his shoulders to signify he didn't remember.

" Can we just relax here and finish the date? This is my first date after all." Patchouli said.

" Sure." Ziden walks forward and turns towards Patchouli.

" I think a prank is in order." A gap opens near Ziden's foot as a banana peel comes out. Ziden stepped on it and fall forward and onto Patchouli causing her to scream.

" That was a nasty fall..." Ziden looked down and sees Patchouli's red face. Ziden looked down and sees his hands grabbing Patchouli's chest. The trio of girls were also red faced. From their angle they could see Patchouli's legs spread apart, not helping the situation at all.

Everyone heard the flapping of bat-like wings as they see Remilia standing over Ziden with an angry expression on her face. " What the hell are you doing to Patchouli!?"

" Wait! Hold in a sec! I can explain!" Ziden said, trying to save his life.

" Save it! How dare you try to rape Patchy!?" Remilia's fangs and claws were shining in the moonlight.

" Wait! I didn't try to- Aaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaahhhhhhh!" Ziden was tackled by Remilia and in cleaner terms, mauled to death by the Loli Vampire.

" Mukyu~." Patchouli uttered with a still red face. Everyone heard a certain Gap Youkai laughing her behind off.

*An hour later...*

Ziden is in a bed being tended to by Kaguya and Patchouli. " Ziden. I'm so sorry about Remy attacking you like that." Patchouli hung her head in shame.

" Don't worry about it. I know Yukari had something to do with this. She just loves pulling this crap on me!" Ziden said, leaning his back against the wall.

" You and Yukari sure have a strange relationship. But I can tell you two care for each other." Kaguya said as Ziden huffed.

" I don't care for that old hag! She can go jump into a volcano for all I care!" Ziden said while his arms.

" Whatever." Patchouli and Kaguya sit down on the sides of the bed around Ziden.

" Talk about a crappy date." Ziden said.

" It wasn't bad, Ziden. It was very fun before Remilia attacked you. I'll treasure my first date forever." Patchouli opened a book.

" When will we go on a date, Ziden?" Kaguya asked.

" Hmmm? Sometime in the future, Kaguya." Ziden said while sighing.

" Now that I think about, it sounds like we are involved in a Harem, Kaguya." Patchouli said

" Yes we are, Patchouli." Kaguya said. The duo noticed the confused look on Ziden's face.

" What the heck is a Harem?" Ziden scratched his head.

" Well in terms you'll understand, essentially a person is in relationships with a bunch of other people and they are mainly fine with it albeit that some jealousy should break out." Patchouli explained.

" So basically, it's just some random person dating multiple people at once? Makes sense, but in my personal opinion I hope that it stays at 4 girls with me. It's bad enough that I've got a crazed vampire girl attacking me, I don't need more women attacking me out of jealousy like Mokou does." Ziden shuddered at the thought.

" Where is Mokou, that hot headed fool?" Kaguya asked.

" She is sparing with Meiling outside and from what I saw, Meiling is going to win." Patchouli said.

" Welp." Ziden gets up and jumps out of the bed. " I want to see this." Ziden leaves the girls in the room and leaves to the fight.

"Hmmmmmm?" Patchouli seemed to be thinking about something.

" Wondering how Ziden survived that attack from Remilia?" Kaguya said.

" Yes. He was dying to opponents and getting injured before this. Is he somehow getting more resilient to damage now?" Patchouli wondered.

" Ziden once told me that when he is missing his powers, the powers still in his possession are severely weakened. Each time he reobtains a power..."

" His current powers get stronger! So that means his regeneration is stronger than it was before he got his magic back." Patchouli said. " You are smarter than you look, Kaguya."

" That is thanks to Eirin teaching me things she thinks I need to know in order to live on Earth." Kaguya gets up. " Come on, Patchouli!

Lets go join Ziden outside!" The duo made their way outside.

Marisa was in the Library with Nitori and boy, were they upset! They were going through the library, looking through books hoping to find new magic and technology from the books.

" Jeez! Why do none of these books have anything on magic, ze!?" Marisa was throwing around book after book in hopes of finding new magic.

" Yeah! There isn't anything on technology either! Only history and that silly stuff!" Nitori said.

" Yeah, stuff only that stuffy schoolteacher would like." Marisa said as a certain teacher sneezed.

" Fire!" Marisa and Nitori heard Sora scream out his spell.

" Homing Amulets!" They also heard Reimu calling out an attack.

" Hey Nitori?"

" Yeah?"

" Wanna go watch Sora and Reimu fight?"

" Yep!" The duo went up to the balcony and started to watch the duel between the two naturally gifted fighters duel it out.

Sora and Reimu had smiles on their while gripping their respective weapons. Sora charged at Reimu and swung his keyblade at her head. She quickly ducked the attack and slammed her gohei into Sora's side, knocking him away from her.

Sora fireed a chunk of ice into the stomach of Reimu, stunning her and allowing him to follow up with a combo. Sora hits her with a thrust attack to the stomach,, a strong vertical hit to the head, ending with a strong horizontal strike to her left hip, causing to cry out in pain.

She jumped back and began to throw several pieces of at Sora. They stuck to his skin as he looked confused. Reimu began to float in the air the tags started to glow.

" Sora~! You'd best get those off or you're going to go boom!" Reimu began to channel spiritual power into the amulets as Sora began to frantically remove the tags, but was too late.

Kabooooooooooooooooommmmmmmmm!

A holy explosion rocked the balcony as Sora is seen rolling out of the smoke completely unharmed. Reimu looked shocked at this.

"How are you unharmed!? I know that attack doesn't harm the pure of heart that much, but you still should have taken some damage from it!" Reimu was flabbergasted.

" Well, I blocked it? With my Keyblade?" Sora said as a visible vein appeared on Reimu's forehead.

" Oooooo! Good ole armpits getting beaten a kid wielding a giant key!" Marisa taunted.

" Um Reimu? You aren't mad are you?" Sora felt an angry presence coming from Reimu.

" No! I'm happy about this!" Reimu pulled out a card. " This just means it will be more fun to win against you, Sora!" Reimu decides to up the ante by summoning several Yin Yang Orbs that flew around her. Taking a cue from her olden days, she swung her gohei into an orb, causing it to fly into Sora, blasting him backwards.

" Whoa! That was a strong attack, Reimu! But I'm not going down that easily!" Sora charged at Reimu while dodging the orbs. Sora jumped into the air while placing his keyblade behind him. " Fire!" A ring of fire wrapped around him and blasted into the ground.

Sora landed in front of Reimu as his keyblade began to glow with a orange light. " Ars Arcanum!" Sora unleashed one of his strongest techniques on Reimu. Sora performed a vicious flurry of horizontal and vertical strikes on Reimu who desperately blocked the attack with her gohei. Sora ended the attack with a rising spin attack followed by a powerful downward slash that knocked her back some.

" Not bad, Sora! Now I can believe you saved the worlds from darkness if you can go toe-to-toe with me in a real fight." Reimu held out her hand and Sora gladly took it.

" Aw! Isn't this a cute sight." Yukari was sitting on the roof of the academy with binoculars, looking out onto the bridge that Ziden's so called harem was on.

" Shut up, Yukari!" Reimu snapped at the Gap Youkai.

" Why? Am I ruining your little moment with your little boyfriend there?" Sora's face turned red as Yukari chuckled. Yukari got a banana and quickly consumed it.

" So what?! Me and Sora are just good friends, that's all!" Reimu said.

" Good friends who want to swap saliva with each other!" Marisa said to Nitori.

" I think a good prank is in order." Yukari dropped a banana peel into the gap.

" I am going to kill you both. Right now." Several orbs began to spin Reimu as exclamation marks appeared over Marisa and Nitori's head. Everyone heard a loud scream that obviously Ziden's coming from the bridge. They heard Yukari laughing very loudly as Reimu dragged Marisa and Nitori inside.

The sounds of two girls being beaten by an angry shrine maiden were heard as Yukari decided to talk with Sora alone.

" Sora. I must ask you a very important question; What are your feelings towards Reimu?" Yukari asked.

" W-w-well she's nice and a good friend." Sora said.

" Hmmm? You can't hide your feeling from me~!" Yukari teased.

" Okay! I maybe like her alot okay?" Sora said with his arms crossed.

" I just wanted to know. I guess Ziden was right about you two liking each other." Yukari disappeared into a gap. Sora noticed that Reimu was peeking her head through the door before she quickly ducked back inside.

*Back at the Eldin Volcano...*

" Hmmm. That guy said that the cards can teleport us near this Ziden fella right?" Aokiji asked himself. " Man. I'm tired of waiting, I'll just teleport to this guy and capture those three for execution so I can go home." Aokiji summoned a portal that led to Skyloft and entered it.

*In Ziden's room...*

Ziden was now back in bed with Kaguya laying on top of him, snuggling with him because 'that's what earth couples do'. Ziden felt a portal opening in the town but decided to ignore it.

" That was a very interesting fight." Kaguya said.

" I'm not surprised Mokou lost to Meiling. Mokou is way too overconfident in her skills, therefore getting her ass kicked by Meiling." Ziden said.

Sakuya and Terra were on the floor sleeping in sleeping bags. " Jeez. I can't believe a Dimensional Crack brought Terra here from Hollow Bastion. That space deity sure knows how to piss me off sometimes." Ziden said.



" Ziden. Try and get some sleep,, dear. Me and you are going to spend all day tomorrow, like a good married couple, okay?" Ziden nodded as Kaguya kissed him on the cheek. They both drifted off to sleep.

## Day 2

Ziden awoke and found a strong chill in the air. Kaguya was wrapped Ziden like a snake in order to keep herself warm. " Wow. I can say that I like this Kaguya more than the other one. I like this whimsical personality over the pushy one any day." Ziden carried out side as he saw several ice pillars outside.

" What the-? Did Sub-Zero decide to crap ice everywhere?" Ziden began to wander around until he sensed someone above him.

" About time I found you kid." Aokiji jumped down from an ice pillar and landed in front of Ziden, towering over him with his height.

" Who are you!?" Ziden draws Crimson Edge with his free hand.

" I am Aokiji, an Admiral in the Marines." Aokiji said. Ziden immediately recognized the name 'Marines'.

" Tch! You're a part of those Marines that Lucci was talking about!" Ziden's yelling woke up Kaguya who quickly got into a defensive position.

" Enough talking. Lets get this over with." Aokiji's arms become wrapped in ice as Ziden and Kaguya got ready to fight.

## **Blizzeta Battle Phase 1 ( Twilight Princess)**

" Burning Slicer!" Ziden shot a fiery blade from his kick that flew towards Aokiji. Aokiji shot a wave of icy wind at the fire blade, engulfing it.

Kaguya took this opportunity to charge at Aokiji and started to throw several punches and kicks at him. Aokiji took a kick to the face and

Kaguya smirked.

" Kaguya! Your leg!" Ziden screamed as Kaguya's leg began to freeze. Kaguya jumped away from the man as she landed improperly and shattered her frozen leg.

" Oh, my." Aokiji said while scratching his head. " I wasn't expecting to be attacked by the girl. A shame about her leg though." Aokiji looked as though he didn't take any form of damage from the attack . This shocked Ziden as he remembered the info he learned from Patchouli last night.

" Are you a... Logia type I think it was called?" Ziden said as Aokiji nodded.

" Unfortunately for you, you don't seem to know Haki. If you did, you might stand a chance against me." Aokiji formed a sword of ice.

" Doesn't matter if Ziden or me can't use this 'Hockey' power! We are still going to kick your rear back to the rat infested hole that you came from!" Kaguya struggled to get back up to her feet while her leg was starting to regenerate.

" Oh, my. That is quite the power you got there, girl. But I've got no reason to fight you, I only want Ziden Icrim, Yukari Yakumo and the winged girl named Remilia Scarlet." Aokiji walked forward as Ziden stood his ground.

Ziden jump kicked Aokiji across the face, sending him reeling into a pillar of ice. Ziden set his leg on fire in order to melt the ice on his leg.

Aokiji walked out of the pillar and brushed himself off. " Oh, my. The report wasn't kidding when it said you were fast. Looks like I'll just have to stop playing around." Aokiji appeared in front of Ziden faster than the blink of an eye. Ziden was slashed across the chest and sent flying through an ice pillar and landed on a frozen building.

Aokiji appeared a few feet behind Ziden. " Partisan!" Aokiji throws several trident tipped ice spears at Ziden who jumped high into the air to dodge the attack. Fire began to spiral around Ziden's right leg as a bright light was seen in the sky. Ziden's leg appeared to be made of fire now.

Ziden raised his foot high into the air and performed a dive bomb kick towards Aokiji. " Flare Bomber!" Aokiji raised his palm into the air and let Ziden's leg slam into it.

Boooooooooooooooooom!

An explosive force erupted from the attack, blasting Aokiji away Ziden landed. Ziden threw a thumbs up to Kaguya who was charging up a ball of light in her hand. She slammed the ball into the chest of Aokiji knocking him high into the air.

" Hmm? Why is it so frozen out here?" Ziden and Kaguya turned to see Remilia walking towards them wearing a blood red scarf.

" That guy up there." Ziden pointed to the falling Aokiji as he landed on his feet. Now it looked he took some damage.

" So Remilia Scarlet is here as well? Oh, my." Aokiji got the mindset that this battle was going to get harder.

" Careful when striking this man. The guy's got ice powers that freeze you and protect him." Ziden said.

" Correct. I ate the Hie Hie no Mi. It gave the power over ice and it made me a Logia type as well." Aokiji said while lying on his side.

"... This guy sure is carefree." Remilia said.

" Enough talking. Lets finish this so I can go home and sleep." Aokiji became surrounded by cold air!

**Blizzeta Phase 2 ( Twilight Princess)**

" Ice Age." Aokiji slammed his palm into the ground as a thicker coat of ice traveled towards them. The fliers took flight to avoid the the ground focused attack. Ziden did not dodge the attack because he was listening to the music.

Ziden's body frozen up to his neck as Aokiji appeared in front of him, ready to smash the hero.

Kapooooooooowwwwwww!

A pair of red feet slammed into the face of Aokiji, knocking him back as he sees a pink puffball.

" Kirby! Thanks for the save!" Ziden said.

" Kirby? That creature sure can hit hard for a puffball." Aokiji rubbed his face.

" My turn! Servant Flier!" Red bat bullets flew out from Remilia's hand and flew around Aokiji. A burst of cold air froze the bats and they dropped to the floor and shattered.

" Poyo!" Kirby began to inhale Aokiji as he fought to stay his ground. Kirby got tired after a while as Kaguya came down and started blasted blasting him with bullets.

" Eat this, you icy freak!" Remilia threw several red spears at Aokiji who dodged them easily. Aokiji grabbed Kaguya by her sleeve and slammed her into the ground.

" I am sorry for this. Ice Time." Ice began to freeze Kaguya's sleeve and began to freeze her as well. She began to scream in pain as her body was frozen solid up to her neck.

" Ice Block: Partisan!" A large number of ice tridents appeared and slammed into Remilia's body, launching her high into the air. She landed on the ground with a partisan in her stomach. She pulled it

out and was about to throw it at Aokiji when an idea sparked in her head.

" Kirby! Inhale this!" Remilia throws the partisan at Kirby and inhaled it. In honest fact, Ziden and Kaguya was expecting Kirby to transform into Ice Kirby, but he didn't. Kirby gained a hairstyle similar to Aokiji's and was wearing the sleep mask above his head.

" Oh, my. This is a shock." Aokiji said.

" Partisan!" Kirby fired several ice tridents at Aokiji and slammed into his body, actually damaging him.

" What? Not only did he use my technique, but he hit me with Haki as well." Aokiji observed. " This Kirby is much more dangerous than I expected." Aokiji pulled out a card. " You guys are lucky this day. Because of your little puffball friend here, you shall evade capture this day. But know this, we will send our other 2 Admirals after you and they won't be as nice as I am, especially Akainu. We may even those 7 worthless pirates after you as well." A portal appeared behind Aokiji as he walked into it and disappeared.

The trio felt fear enter their hearts at Aokiji's words as Ziden thawed himself off. Ziden walked over to Kaguya and began to thaw her out.

" This is bad. Real bad." Ziden said to Kaguya and Remilia.

" Tch! So we're being hunted by these 'Marines'? No matter! I, the Scarlet Devil Remilia Scarlet, shall not back down from a fight."

" So full of pride. I hope we can win against these guys. It's bad enough we have to deal with these Rulers of Darkness and the Ultima Brigade, but we have to deal with super powered Marines and Pirates now!? Dang nabbit! This journey is sucking worse than the Three Stooges movie!" Ziden exclaimed.

" Calm down. Lets go back to bed and rest. We'll tell everyone what happened when they wake up, okay Ziden?" Kaguya took Ziden's

hand.

They entered Ziden's room which is the warmest room due to Ziden's power over fire.

" Ziden? Can I have that 'game' thingy back. Now that I'm free from that spell, I wanna try it myself." Kaguya said as Ziden handed her the 3DS.

Ziden looks around the bed and sees Terra and Sakuya on the bed passed out with the latter sleep talking about things Ziden should never have to hear from his student/adoptive daughter.

" Hmm mmm. Don't touch me there Master Ziden~." Sakuya said in her sleep.

Ziden simply sighed and smacked Sakuya across the face with a paper fan ( same one from the Smash series) waking her up.

" Owwww! What was that for?!" Sakuya was angry before she noticed it was Ziden who hit her. " Did I talk in my sleep again?" Ziden nodded.

" I normally don't mind what you dream about, but if it involves those weird fantasies of yours, I'm slapping you awake." Ziden said.

" Sorry." Sakuya lays back down and doesn't fall back asleep.

" Jeez. So much for going outside today. Luckily that ice'll melt soon." Ziden sits and begins to think. " But these other people that are after me, I wonder how strong these Soul Reaper guys are? But something else bothers me... that man with the blue jacket. Why did he remind me of Dante?" Ziden thought out loud.

"..." Everyone was silent.

" Do you think that the Rulers of Darkness are behind these outside sources attacking us, mainly you?" Everyone turned and saw Patchouli sitting a chair, reading a book.

" No doubt about it. I do doubt that they will try and side with the Ultima Brigade." Ziden said.

" What shall we do now?" Sakuya asked.

" Keep doing what we've been doing. Find the gateways and stop the Ultima Brigade." Ziden summoned his keyblade and looked at it.

" Everyone. Spend these two days resting, for I sense a great battle coming and Link may be the only one that could stop it." Ziden said.

Sakuya looked up to the ceiling and saw a gap closing.

Kaguya noticed it as well and sat close to the warm Ziden. Everyone got the same idea and swarmed on Ziden.

" Get off me! I'm not your damn personal heater!" Ziden yelled.

" But you're so warm~!" Patchouli said.

" Damn you ice! Melt faster!" Ziden squirmed from their collective hugs.

" Stop whining or do you want me to get Eirin in here?" Kaguya said as a chill went down everyone's spine.

" Fine." Ziden stopped squirming.

" Did you call for me princess?" Eirin was hugging Ziden. For a seconds, the room was completely quiet.

" Gahhhhhh! The evil doctor is here!" Ziden screamed as Eirin chuckled.

" 'Evil' huh? Ziden, I think you'll be the perfect guinea pig for an experiment of mine." Eirin pulled out a syringe filled with a strange blue liquid. Eirin grabbed Ziden's arm. " Don't worry. This won't hurt at all~!"

**Stttaaaabbb!**

" Gahhhhhh!" Eirin stabbed the needle into a vein and injected the serum into Ziden's body. Ziden's vision become blurry. " See you in a few minutes." Ziden passed out as he heard Kaguya saying something.

A few minutes, Ziden opened his eyes and saw the girls staring at with blushing faces and sparkling eyes as if they are seeing something cute. Ziden notices that the girls are alot bigger than he is. " Why are you guys so big?"

Ziden looks down and is shocked, Ziden was now a white furred wolf puppy and he was not happy.

" Awwwww! Look at his wittle tail! Its adowable!" Kaguya grabbed Ziden and began petting him.

" M-m-m-master! You're so- You're so- fluffy!" Sakuya begins to pet Ziden as well.

" My my. What interesting results. And cute as well." Eirin was inflicted with the cuteness as well.

" \*sigh\* I'm going back to my room." Patchouli gets up and leaves the room.

" Hmmm? Doesn't she want to pet Mister Ziden like us?" Terra asked.

" Who cares? More snuggling for us?" Kaguya said. She looked down and saw a white outline of the puppy. " Heh?! Where'd my puppy go!?"

Patchouli entered her room and locked the door. She walked her bed and got under the covers. Ziden is seen coming out of her mobcap and landing her chest. Ziden noticed another bed that Meiling was sleeping in and we see why Ziden never invited her into his bed. The



covers were a mess and she sprawled out on the bed with a snot bubble coming out of her nose.

" Awww! Look at the cute little puppy! I didn't know you liked pets, Patchouli." Remilia said while coming down from the ceiling.

"... I don't. This is Ziden." The minute she said this, Remilia burst into laughter.

" Hey! Stop laughing at me!" Ziden barked, pun intended.

" Oh man. Aw. Does Fido want a treat? Does he?! Does he!?" Remilia scratches Ziden under his jaw. Ziden bites her finger and hangs onto Remilia's finger as she tried to shake him off. " Get this mongrel off me!" Meiling sensed her mistress in trouble and kicked Ziden into the wall. He slid down the wall as Patchouli giggled.

" Mistress Remilia! Did that foul beast harm you?" Meiling examined Remilia's finger.

" Wow, Ziden. That must have hurt." Patchouli said as Ziden got up.

" Huh? Ziden?" Meiling looks at the puppy with sparkling eyes. She grabs the puppy and hugs the air out of it. " Aw! You're so cute and fluffy!" Ziden's face was slowly turning blue from the loss of oxygen.

" Help... me." Ziden was quickly losing consciousness.

" Hohohohhohohoh!" Remilia was laughing from this.

Ziden bits Meiling in the arm, forcing her to let go. " Thank... god." Ziden began to breathe in rapid gasps of air. " As soon as this wears off, I am going to burn that doctor alive." Ziden said while scratching his ears with his hindlegs.

" How do you know this will wear off?" Patchouli asked.

" It better. Or I'm going to get a new immortal doctor chew toy." Ziden said while growling.

" \*sniff\* You didn't have to bite me~!" Meiling cried as Remilia glared at him.

" Uh. Patchouli? Can you open the door for me?" Ziden clawing at the door in an attempt to open the door.

Patchouli got up and walked to the door and opened it. " Aren't you supposed to be spending the day with Kaguya?"

" Do I look like I can spend the day with her?" Ziden said while walking through the door.

Ziden began to walk through the hallway, trying his hardest not be caught in his furry state. He hears the door to his room being opened as Kaguya walked out, obviously looking for Ziden. Ziden dived behind some barrels to hide from his wife.

" Ziden! Where are you? Ziden!" Kaguya is screaming, hoping to get Ziden to appear before her. Ziden wasn't surprised when a fireball slammed into her face.

Mokou walked down the hall with her hands in her pockets. " Jeez. Can't you keep quiet, you idiotic princess?"

Kaguya gets up with a look of anger on her face. " Go away, Mokou. I'm not in the mood to deal with you."

" Too bad. Ziden isn't around to stop me from killing you, so I'm itching to shed your blood." Mokou continues to walk forward until she stops in front of Kaguya.

" Oh really?" Mokou hears Ziden's voice and sucks her teeth. Ziden walks out from behind the barrels and stops in front of Kaguya. Ziden claws at her skirt, which prompts her to pick him up.

" Ziden? I-I-Is that you?" Mokou was obviously trying to not laugh.

" Where were you?" Kaguya asked.

" Biting a vampire." Ziden simply said.

" Hmm. Ironic." Kaguya said.

" Well I don't care if you are here, Kaguya is going down." Mokou wrapped her hands in fire.

" \*sigh\* Time to get my paws dirty. Arf!" Ziden pounced on Mokou and mauled her as Kaguya clapped.

A few minutes later, Ziden decides to wander around the school as he hears a familiar song being whistled. A song he usually whistles when he is by himself. He goes outside to the balcony and sees Komachi sitting at the edge of the balcony.

" Why were you whistling that song?" Ziden asked.

" What? 'Ballad of the Windfish'? To get your attention. Someone wants to see you." Komachi points over to a woman ( one of the few people Ziden will rarely ever try and fight).

She had green hair and held a golden rod. Her hair was longer on the right side and blue eyes that were piercing through Ziden's tiny frame. Her dark blue, white and black with gold decorations with ribbons on both sleeves. Her hat was blue and white with a gold emblem on the front of it. On the back was a red and white that was balanced equally. Her face was indifferent to Ziden's new form.

Ziden was shocked that she was here and not judging souls at the Ministry of Right and Wrong.

" What do you want, Eiki?" Ziden said.

" It's good to see that you're still as rude as ever, Ziden Icrim." Eiki walked up to Ziden and picked him up.

Ziden noticed Aya flying around taking pictures of them, much to Ziden's anger. " is there a reason you are here?" Ziden asked.

" Yes. I've come inform you on the situation in Gensokyo. It appears that Outsiders have entered Gensokyo and are causing trouble all over. Keine has hidden the Village to protect from those cultists." Eiki informed.

Ziden sat down and tapped his chin. " Let me guess, those cultists are going around saying that ' We eradicate these godless heathens in the name of God."

" Yes. We have placed a new barrier, blocking the entry of anything else, but those cultists keep getting somehow. They've been killing Youkai and human alike. It also seems that they are fighting the Zealots off as well. Luckily that Buddhist has been aiding the humans and youkai that were injured in those attacks."

" Tch! The Covenant of the Cross knows how to piss me off." Ziden said while scratching his ear. Komachi noticed and grabbed him into a hug.

" Komachi! Put him down!" Eiki commanded.

Komachi complied with her boss' order. "\*sigh\*" Eiki waved her hand as Ziden felt himself returning to normal. Ziden also remembered that Eiki was also taller than him and Komachi, forcing him to look up to her.

" You know of these cultists?" Eiki asked.

" Yeah. These assholes think that their god is the only that should exist, so they go around killing people who don't worship their god. They have all been excommunicated from all Christian churches and don't get any form of support from them." Ziden said.

" You've dealt with them before, haven't you?" Komachi asked.

" Yep. They tried to get me because of 'that' incident I caused. Through that incident, the world learned of the existance of gods and the supernatural." Ziden said.

" Ziden. I must know, why did you do? Why did you try and kill the 4 Holy Ones?" Ziden looked down upon hearing the Yama's question.

" Because Lucifer tricked me into doing it. That bastard disguised himself as an old woman and told that Heaven had taken over. So I attacked in an effort to 'save' Heaven, only to be defeated by the 4 Holy Ones; God, Zeus, Odin and Amaterasu. God cursed me with the inability to age and made so that it could be only broken with the power of all four of them." Ziden explained.

" That damned Lucifer." Eiki was angry.

" Yeah. When we learned that I was set up, they quickly apologized and tried to break the curse but Odin said it was what I deserved for my foolishness. God took mercy on me and allowed me into hell, so I could take my revenge on Lucifer."

" I remember hearing how Hell was destroyed by a human, but I never thought it was you." Eiki was surprised.

" But through that, the world learned about the Gods and supernatural because of an invisible camera following me. The church wasn't happy to learn that I got to meet God and not them, marking me as a the #1 target for the Covenant of the Cross. Their leader, Chosen Herald, is said to be extremely powerful, matching the strength of an Tyrant Overlord."

" You've never met him?" Komachi asked.

" Nope. I hope I don't." Ziden said.

" But in order to stop this cult, the leader must be slain." Eiki said.

" I know." Ziden said.

" I think I should also let you know that the Buddhist is building a 2nd temple on your property." Ziden choked when he heard this ( even though he isn't eating or drinking anything.). " Your mom is allowing

her to build the Shrine because of the youkai living in the area. I think the Buddhist is taking an interest in you."

" Great." Ziden received a chop to head from Eiki's Rod of Judgment.  
" Ow!"

" That's for sexually harassing your co-worker! Now my break is almost up, so I must be going." Eiki disappears into thin air, suggesting she must have teleported here.

Aya flew down and crashed into Ziden's back. Ziden looked up and saw Yukari's gap closing. " Uh oh. Looks like that's going to be another Yukari beating for my future." Ziden said.

" You'll live." Komachi said ironically.

" Ziden. Can I sleep with you? I'm still a little shaken about the Black Knight thing." Aya asked.

" Sure... if you show me your panties." Ziden said, before he was punched in the face by Aya and then hugged.

" Ahh! Interspecies love. Technically if you two were to sleep with each other, it'd be considered bestiality." Komachi laughed at this as she walked inside.

" Well it is STILL frozen out here, so lets go back to my room and rest." Ziden takes Aya to his room and passed by the mauled Mokou and sees Kaguya waiting for him, still playing the game.

" Hey Ziden! I'm really liking this 'Pokemon' game! It is really fun!" Kaguya said.

Ziden sits down and lays down next to Kaguya. Aya snuggles herself under Ziden. Kaguya remained calm and remembered how broken she was in Dreamland.

" That Black Knight. I launched everything at him, but it did nothing at him. Then he began to torture me and those soldiers... they tried to

have their way with me, but the Black Knight killed them before they did anything. Then he flipped me over and smashed my wings, leaving unable to fly. Then he sliced through them to send you a message."

" Me?" Ziden was confused.

" Yeah. He wants revenge against you and Ike. Apparently you did something to this man, to cause him to hate this man." Aya said.

" There is only one person I know that has that much hatred to me and it explains why he was able to shrug off my attacks. The Lunarian named Dark Star, real name unknown. I heard him saying that he found a power that will destroy me." Ziden said.

" Dark Star. A Lunarian. Why does he hate you?" Kaguya asked while getting close to Ziden.

" He hates me because I keep stopping his plans to destroy the Earth and kill all lowly humans." Ziden said. This man was obviously the evil rival that Dante was talking about.

" I see. It saddens me that a Lunarian would go as far as to attack the Earth." Eirin said, startling Ziden. " But that nickname, it sounds familiar."

" Yeah. But he wasn't pulling the whole ' Lunarians are better than humans' speech. Maybe the spirit attached to the armor is taking him over." Ziden said.

" Ziden~! Can Aya scoot over?" Kaguya asked.

" Sure. I hope tomorrow will be better than today." Ziden lets Kaguya snuggle up to him. Ziden gives Kaguya a 'touch of affection' causing her to blush. " Sleep with both eyes open, Doc. I'm getting you back for that puppy fiasco."

" You touch the princess like that again and you'll asleep in an iron maiden while submerged underwater." Eirin threatened.

" Okay. I'll make sure and touch her with more affection... and body parts." Ziden said.

" Oh my!" Kaguya's face turned bright red.

" Nighty night!" Ziden said, falling asleep.

### **Day 3 ( Final Day)**

The Moon was now unnaturally close to Termina as the heroes waited until midnight to stop the evil mask.

... What? Wait, wrong Zelda universe? My bad! Back to Skyward Sword!

Ziden woke up after having a terrible nightmare, shocking everyone in the room awake.

" \*pant pant\* Damn. That memory still haunts me. I should have never let Yukari fight him." Ziden said aloud as he felt arms wrapped around him. Ziden turned his head and sees Yukari resting her head on his shoulder.

" Morning." Yukari increased the pressure on her hug, causing Ziden to scream in pain. " Hmm? Why are you acting like such a child? Break free like you always do."

" But... I can't." Yukari noticed how timid Ziden's voice sounded and realized too late what was happening.

**Crrrrrrraaaaaaaacccccccckkkkkkk!**

Yukari crushed Ziden's ribcage as she released him and he fell to the ground, unmoving. Yukari got up and observed his chest expecting him to regenerate, but he didn't. Eirin checked his pulse and showed that that he was dead.



" Why? Why did you kill him?" Aya asked as tears streamed down her face.

" I-I-I-I-I thought that-" Yukari was shocked beyond belief.

" I thought that Ziden's regeneration would stop this. Something's off here. For one thing, why isn't Kaguya mourning over Ziden's death." Eirin observed.

Kaguya got up and showed her fanged teeth. Darkness swallowed the room as they found themselves on a moonlit grassy hill with an mysterious cherry tree with a man standing next to it.

The man was cloaked in black robes that hid his face which looked skeletal. The cloak was adorned with several chains and sealing charms. His hands were clawed and he had a black aura surrounding them. He had a ghostly tail with a mouth filled with sharp fangs.

" I should have expected the Brain of the Moon to sense my trap. Trapping multiple people in a nightmare is so hard. Ace was right about you being a threat." The man said.

" Phantom!" Yukari summoned her umbrella as she looked at the man named Phantom.

" Yukari? You know this man?" Eirin had her bow armed and pointed at Phantom.

Aya got up and pulled out her orange fan.

" Allow me to introduce myself. I am Phantom, the Specter of Chaos." Phantom payed no attention to the women and focused his gaze on the tree which gave Yukari bad vibes.

" Where is Kaguya?!" Eirin demanded.

" Oh. You mean this foolish girl?" Phantom reached behind him and grabbed the severely injured Princess by her throat. Her clothes

were badly damaged and bloodied. A smile formed on his face as he threw Kaguya and summoned a black scythe. He swung it at her, hoping to hear the sound of her flesh being torn, only to hear the flapping off wings. Aya caught Kaguya and placed her next to Eirin.

" That tree... isn't it-?" Yukari asked.

" No. But the real version of this tree shall be in my grasp soon. The souls stolen by the fabled Saigyou Ayakashi shall be mine!" Phantom declared. He began to float in the air. " Oh and before I forget; you can forget about your allies coming to save you for we sent our second strongest male member to deal with them while I kill you four."

*Back in the Real World...*

Ziden and Mokou are blasted outside into the plaza as Komachi ran towards them.

" Tch! Why is he here?!" Komachi asked as she brandishes her scythe.

A creature in a completely black body suit and doll-like face that seemed lifeless. The face had yellow eyes and a cracked mouth filled with severely disfigured fangs. His black wormlike hair seemed to move on their own.

" Hiiiisssssshhhhhh!" The creature's fork like tongue moved rapidly in the air. " Father! I've found you again!"

" Tch! Rankyogan! Stop calling me that, you useless clone!" Ziden said.

*Meanwhile...*

Link, Youmu and Ike had snuck off to the Eldin Volcano and entered the temple containing Din's Flame. They battled through fiery foes

and magma beasts. They found themselves staring down Ghirahim whom was waiting for them.

Trivia:

1. Rankyogan and Phantom are both my OCs so don't try and go looking them up.
2. Aokiji is one of the few Logia types that can't dissolve away because his element is solid. Plus he is from One Piece.
3. God, Odin, Zeus and Amaterasu are sibling gods in my stories. Due to their existences being revealed by an unknown source, a massive surge of faith erupted from mortals. This allows youkai to exist in the outside world. Gods and Goddesses as well.
4. Komachi was involved in the big war against the Ultima Brigade in case if you were wondering.

Author's Note: Yeah, some odd things happened in this chapter. It mostly happened because I was sick and I get weird thoughts when I am sick. As I said before, love is just a side element, Action and Humor are Major players in this story. I am very happy that people finally started to review this story... and they are positive! Keep 'em coming! I'd love to know about your feelings about the story so far, negative or positive. R&R! No Gensokyo Analysis today. Sorry.

## **The Sword of Evil's Bane**

Rankyogan let out a destructive burst of energy that blasted the trio back into a puddle of water.

" Looks like we got to deal with the Forsaken Abomination, Rankyogan. Oh boy, how fun." Ziden said with a voice filled with sarcasm.

" I'm going to kill you, 'father'! When I feast upon your flesh, I shall be whole again! Afterwards," Rankyogan looks at Mokou and Komachi with lustful eyes. " I shall add those two to my collection of slaves. I'll make sure and use you two daily, especially the Shinigami!"

" Tch! You disgusting freak! As if I'll ever be your slave!" Komachi said.

" Yeah! Nobody touches her but me!" Ziden said, beating his fist across his chest. Komachi kicked Ziden in the shin for that comment.

" Raaaaaaahhhhhhggggg!" Rankyogan roared signifying that the time for talk is over.

### **Vim and Vigor ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Rankyogan shot out several sharp tentacles at the group who seperated from each other to dodge the attack. Ziden fired several streams of fire at Rankyogan who drilled into the ground to dodge the attack. Komachi slammed her scythe into the ground releasing bursts of energy and blasted Rankyogan from his rocky retreat.

Ziden jumped and slashed RKG across the chest, causing black blood to spray out. RKG flew to the ground and slammed into it, causing spiky tendrils to rise from the ground.

Komachi came from behind and slammed her fist into his back, causing him to fly forward. Mokou slammed her fist into RKG's face,

allowing him to wrap his tentacles around her waist and lifted her into the air.

" Be turned to dust, wench. Shadow Flare!" Black fire crawled up the tentacles and wrapped her in black flames. She screamed in pain as the unholy fire began to burn her flesh and clothes.

" Burning Lancer!" Ziden slammed his flaming foot into the back of RKG's head, forcing him to release Mokou from his grip. Ziden placed the palm of his hand against his back. " Demon's Piercing Cannon!" An explosive shockwave ripped through the body of the forsakened clone, damaging it both internally and externally as well.

Komachi slashed RKG across the chest with her scythe and kicked him hard in the chest, knocking the wind from his sail. Mokou stopped burning and got up slowly with white flames wrapped around her leg.

" Phoenix Hibachi!" Mokou launched a vicious barrage of fiery kicks into the chest of RKG, causing him to roar in pain. Mokou increased the rate of her attack, making it look like large waves of fire were crashing into a dark humanoid's body. Ziden noticed that there was still several large ice pillars left over from yesterday's battle.

Ziden ran over to one and lifted it up like a club. " Mokou! Get out of the way!" Mokou slammed one final powerful kick into his chest, knocking him back some. Ziden slammed the ice pillar down onto RKG, crushing him underneath an avalanche of ice.

RKG broke free from the icy boulders and formed what appeared to be a black minigun on his chest and arms. " DIE!" Black blob like bullets fired from the guns. Ziden got hit with the bullets as they tore through his body. Ziden fell down to his knees as Rankyogan formed a mallet in his hand.

" Oh no you don't! Flare Wave!" Ziden swung his hand upward and released a wave of fire that into RKG and knocked him back. Ziden

ran towards him and ducked a horizontal swing from the mallet and kicked him in the jaw.

Mokou appeared behind RKG and slammed a fire ball into his back. RKG slammed the mallet into her chest, causing to fly through an ice pillar.

Komachi landed a powerful kick on RKG's neck and knocked him towards Ziden. Ziden wrapped his right arm in fire and crouched down. " Mimicked Skill: Shinryuken!" Ziden hits RKG with a flame imbued, rising spinning uppercut that ignited the deranged clone.

Komachi jumps and pulls out a spell card. "Poor Fate: Short Life Expectancy!" Komachi slashed RKG across the stomach, causing an explosion of purple energy to erupt from the wound.

RKG roared in pain. " Enough of this! Time for all of you worms to die!"

RKG's body began to grow in size as he now towered over the group. He became more muscular and his face now had cracks in it. His eyes were now bulging with a steady stream of black blood pooling from the eyes. His hands were now clawed with several tendrils all wrapped around his body. He now stood at 50ft and let out an earth shattering roar.

### **The Dread of Night ( Kingdom Hearts: Dream Drop Distance)**

Ziden and Komachi stepped away from the gargantuan RKG. Ziden crouched down and jumped high into the sky while pulling out Efreet and Celsius. Komachi threw several coins into the vicinity around RKG as Ziden unloaded bullets onto the coins. The bullets reflected off of the coins and proceeded to slash through his body.

RKG slammed his hand into the ground as several black spikes appeared on the ground. Komachi took flight to dodge the attack as Ziden was plummeting towards the spikes. A red laser pierced through the arm RKG, ending his attack.

" Nice shot, doc!" Ziden said as he landed on his feet. Eirin, Yukari, Aya and Kaguya stood on top of a building ready to take on this creature. RKG turned to look at the new group of fighters.

" Yukari Yakumo! I should have known you would have escaped his trap. Now I get to kill all of you at once!" RKG roared as he struck the building. The group of four dodged the attack and took to the sky. RKG felt a large burst of fire slam into his side.

" Possessed by Phoenix!" Mokou now had the aura of a phoenix around her as a large barrage of blue bullets and red fireballs slammed into the chest of RKG. The attack kept going and pushed RKG back as she began to charge up an attack. " Go down, you freak!" A laser made of fire slammed into RKG blasting him onto his back.

" Rooooooooooooooooarrrrrrr! Tendril Storm!" A multitude of black spiky tendrils erupted from his body and flew towards Mokou who was caught off guard by the sudden attack. Ziden jumped up and took the full brunt of the attack as the tendrils pierced through his skin. " You're mine, Ziden Icrim!"

RKG grabbed the tendrils and yanked down on them, causing Ziden to fall towards him. RKG slammed his fist into Ziden with an unholy amount of force that created a visible shockwave, launching Ziden far into the sky.

RKG got back to his feet and let out another roar.

Yukari let out a sigh and opened a gap next to her. Out of the gap came a white hilted katana that she began to wield. " Looks like we need to get involved, Snow White." Yukari's katana was whiter than snow and seemed to give off a powerful frost from its blade.

Eirin pointed her bow to the heaven as multiple arrows appeared on the bow. " Raining Arrows!" A vicious barrage of arrows slammed into the body of RKG. They slammed into him with enough force to stun him.

Kaguya was now wearing a red robe that seemed to radiate with the power of fire. " Impossible Request: Robe of Fire Rat!" She fired several red balls that surrounded RKG and then exploded around him.

" How dare you!?" RKG stretched his arm and launched it at Kaguya who threw her hands up to protect herself. " Arghhh!" Rankyogan retracted his now burned arm. Kaguya had unknowingly formed a barrier of fire that burnt the hand of RKG.

" Huh?! The Robe of Fire Rat could never fire or create barriers of fire before this. Why now?" Kaguya wondered.

Mokou came out of the rubble and dusted herself off. The two rivals shot a glare at each other before refocusing on RKG.

" Damn! Shadow Flare!" RKG fired a ball of black fire from his mouth that was aimed at Eirin.

Eirin dodged the attack and fired several arrows at RKG. He blocked the arrows with his forearm and slapped her out of the sky and into the ground. RKG unleashed vicious stomping barrage on the downed Eirin causing her to scream in pain with each thunderous blow.

RKG was so focused on attacking Eirin, he didn't notice the prayer slips on his shoulder.

Boooooooooooooooooommmmmmm!

RKG's shoulder exploded with holy power before it regenerated. RKG looked up and saw the rest of the group joining the fight as well.

" Jeez! What the heck kind of monstrosity did you guys piss off, ze!?" Marisa said.



" I am Rankyogan, the Forsaken Abomination! I am the second strongest male in the Ultima Brigade!" RKG roared to assert his power.

Everyone except Yukari and Komachi was shocked at this revelation. This horrid creature was the second strongest male member.

" Tch! Whatever! This is still going down even if this freak is strong!" Reimu declared.

" Time to die!" RKG threw a punch at airborne group. They dove past the attack and landed on the icy ground.

Utsuho fired several balls of energy into the body of RKG, staggering him for a few seconds. Remilia slashed RKG across the face and landed a strong kick on his face knocking him back.

RKG morphed his arm into a large drill and took aim at Remilia. The attack was stopped by Meiling who jump kicked the drill to stop it. She followed up by rolling past the drill and landing on the face of RKG. She slammed her fist into his fist, releasing a burst of chi into his face.

Sakuya continued the assault by throwing silver knives into his body, stunning him. RKG summoned tendrils from his back and they headed towards Sakuya. She dodged the tendrils and ran on top of one of them. She threw a knife into one of his eyes, causing it explode into black blood.

" Chaos Serpent!" RKG's tendrils fused together to form a large black serpent with large fangs. A purple liquid was dripping from the fangs and dropping onto the ground. Each time it hit the ground, it steamed and corroded the ground.

" This creature shall feast upon the bones of your poisoned corpses!" The serpent separated itself from his back and crawled his way to the girls.

" Hissssss!" The snake lurched forward and slammed into the ground, trying to bite the girls.

" Don't let that thing bite you!" Yukari yelled.

" Me and Luigi shall take on this creature! You guys focus on Rankyogan!" Mario said.

" No way! We take down this snake and then we'll focus on tentacle boy later!" Reimu said.

" Fine. Yukari and the others will handle him. But where is Ziden though?" Luigi asked.

RKG threw a powerful punch at the group, blasting them away. Yukari slashed RKG on the arm, freezing it whole. Aya followed up by crashing through the ice at incredible speeds, shattering it.

Sora ran up the serpent's back and slammed his keyblade onto his head. Meiling punched the snake on its soft underbelly, causing it to fall backwards. Sakuya jumped onto its stomach and stabbed into soft belly, ripping it open.

Several tendrils emerged from his stomach and grabbed Sakuya, pulling in the sky. She struggled to break free from the tendrils as she was brought closer to the serpent's mouth. She was dropped into the mouth of the serpent, only for his mouth to be held open by Remilia. The fangs of the snake were piercing into her forearms, injecting her with large amounts of venom.

" Mistress Remilia!" Sakuya landed on the snake's face and threw several knives into the snake's mouth, forcing it open. Remilia flew out of it as her wounds closed, but her arms now had a purple hue signifying that she was poisoned.

Yukari shot several blades of ice at RKG who blocked the attack with his other arm. " Go away you fly!" RKG opened his mouth as several tendrils erupted from there and headed for Yukari. Yukari lazily

dodged the attack and flew toward his head. She landed on his head and proceeded to rapidly stab the skull of RKG as he roared in pain. He shook himself violently in attempt to get the gap youkai off of his head, only for her to hold on and not fall off.

Aya swung her fan and created frosty gusts that wrapped around RKG knocking him back some. Eirin was now fully healed from the assault she took earlier and aimed an arrow at RKG's leg. " Air Slicer!" The arrow transformed into a large wind blade that sliced through the RKG's leg, knocking him off balance.

" All right, don't screw this up Kaguya!" Mokou declared.

" Funny. I was going to tell you the same thing." Kaguya said.

Kaguya and Mokou had their legs wrapped in fire. They ran towards RKG, aiming at his leg. " Twin Synchro Kick!" They jumped into the air and jump kicked the kneecap, eventually piercing through it and slicing it off. RKG fell onto his back and flailed his arms trying to get up.

" It seems that you have weakened over the past year, Rankyogan." Yukari said while sitting on a gap.

" Yeah. Maybe something happened to him." Komachi wondered.

" Damn... you... Ace." Rankyogan muttered.

The serpent crawled up a icy tower and roared to assert its power over the group. Several shards of ice were sent into the air from the vocal discharge from the reptile. Luigi, deciding it was time to brave for once, took a step forward and slammed his fist into his hand.

" Its Luigi's time to shine!" Luigi charged up a ball of lightning in his hand, aiming it at the serpent. " Thunderhand!" A large bolt of electricity slammed into the serpent, it fell off the building and towards Meiling who had a spell card in her hand.

" Attack Sign: Roc's Fist!" She slammed her fist the face of the serpent as red chi energy ripped through the creature as it is sent flying into Rankyogan fang first, injecting unholy amounts of venom into the clone's body.

Rankyogan roared in pain as he shrunk back into his regular form. His body began to fizzle and smoke while bubbling.

Everyone had a look of horror when Rankyogan transformed into a lookalike of Ziden. His skin was melting away while letting out a horrendous scream as lightning struck one of the buildings and a two people were seen standing there.

The man was wearing a bright yellow robe with lightning bolt designs all over it and the Japanese Kanji for 'lightning' on the back and on a pocket protector on his right pectoral. His pants were yellow as well and was decorated with black storm clouds. He wore black dress shoes with yellow spikes adorning them. His hair was short and straight and more yellow than a lightning bolt. His green eyes and uncaring face sent chills down the group's spines.

The woman wore the black coat of the organization. She had bright yellow hair that was slicked back and had two antenna like extensions in her hair. She had a slim hourglass figure and had several yellow knives in her hand.

Eirin and Kaguya looked at the man in shock as they recognized the man.

" It has been far too long, Eirin Yagakoro and former princess Kaguya Houraisen." The man said before jumping down and landing in front of the melting Rankyogan. " Tch. You useless clone. After all that time I spent creating you from Ziden's cells, you still turned out useless after you began to waste away a few months ago. I'm fairly certain that I'm now considered the strongest male member of the Ultima Brigade and that you were demoted to 4th. But alas, your life ends this day." The man stomped on the skull of Rankyogan, crushing it underneath his boot as he began to laugh.

The man pulled out a black hilt and swung it releasing a literal Lightning Blade. He spun in front of him and placed it above him. A loud clashing sound rung out, blasting everyone back. Eirin saw Ziden and the man clashing swords before seperating and staring each other down.

" Ziden Icrim." The man said with malice in his voice.

" Lightning Ace!" Ziden screamed.

" Ace..." Eirin said aloud.

" To think that Ace is the strongest member now... what does that make Phantom!?" Yukari asked.

" To think that I would see fellow Lunarians amongst a bunch of worthless humans and youkai, what a horrible joke!?" Ace began to laugh uncontrollably as the serpant began to rise.

" Ace! Why are you trying to destroy the universe?!" Kaguya asked.

" Simple. I wish to rid this world- no, all worlds from the impurities of darkness and of man!" Ace moved his hands dramatically and walked around the former moon princess. " But truly I am saddened for you princess, being forced to fall in love with someone is terrible, but totally expected given your low brain power."

" Ace! Don't you dare insult Kaguya after all she's done for you!" Eirin said.

" Or what? You know my power will turn your arrows and any projectiles against you!" Ace said. " I should thank you Kaguya. Without you, I'd be dying in that well and wouldn't be here, plotting to destroy the universe."

" Jeez! Enough talking already! Do what you came to do and be done with it!" The woman said.

Ace scoffed at the woman and clutched the sword with both hands. " Begone, hero!" Faster than the blink of an eye, everyone saw Ziden get torn to shreds and get sent flying with blood trailing behind him. Ziden is seen crashing through the clouds below as Aya took flight to catch him.

" I am Lightning Ace, the Brain of Chaos and Head of Research and Weapons Division in the Ultima Brigade!" Ace announced.

" I am Larxene, the Savage Nymph and Number XII of Organization XIII!" Larxene jumped down and landed next to Ace.

" Wait a minute... you're that woman who kidnapped the princess!" Mario said.

" Yep." She simply said as she stared at Sora.

Sora noticed that and took his battle stance.

" Phantom! It is time to go!" Ace yelled.

Phantom appeared out of nowhere and floated over to Ace. " How does it feel to be the strongest male, Ace?"

" Wonderful, although I wish was the strongest member out of all genders." Ace said.

" We both know that's going to be impossible to do. She is far too powerful for any of us to take on." Phantom said.

" We shall meet again, Gensokyo girls." Ace said before he disappeared in a flash of lightning, taking the other two with him.

" Guys! Remilia is hurt real bad!" Reimu screamed.

Everyone ran to Remilia and saw that her face was blue and was grabbing at her chest.

" She's been poisoned by that snake. Eirin, please tell me if you have a cure of some sort." Nitori asked.

" I could make some antivenom from that snake." Eirin said.

" The snake is gone." Utsuho said. " That Ace guy took it with him."

" Crap! What are we going to do now!?" Marisa exclaimed.

" Don't worry about me." Remilia struggled to get up and almost fell down, were it not for Meiling catching her.

" Lets go find Ziden. Knowing him, he'll probably have a cure on a hand." Yukari said.

" Oh? Do you know where he fell?" Mokou asked.

" Well he fell near that green pillar of light, so he must be in Faron Woods somewhere." Everyone turned to look at Kaguya. " I can be observant sometimes."

" Yukari? Can you-" Reimu's question was answered by Yukari gapping them to the Sealed Grounds. They noticed something strange, there was a wooden pathway with rails encircling the sealed spike.

" Whoa. What is this?" Sora asked while walking along it.

They hear a series of coughs coming from Patchouli as they noticed something. They saw several black feathers on the pathway leading to the temple. They entered the temple and saw Aya asleep next to the bloodied Ziden.

" Hey guys." Ziden said.

" Ziden! We need your help!" Meiling carried Remilia and placed her in front of Ziden.

" Ziden. Please tell me that you have something to save her life."  
Reimu asked.

" I do, but it will have have some side effects. Some that she may like." Ziden said while scooting closer to Remilia.

" Ziden. You know you can't give her your blood." Yukari said.

" I have to. It's her only hope of survival. Rankyogan's venom is mysterious in the fact that it changes based on the species, meaning that it is never the same, always different. My blood will cure the poison and heal her, as well as make her stronger. Maybe even other things as well." Ziden said.

"... Do it." Sakuya said.

" Are you sure about this, Sakuya? She did brainwash you into her servant." Ziden said.

" Do it. Even if she did take advantage of my overconfidence, I'm not going to let the person who spared my life and allowed me to meet such wonderful people, die in front of my eyes." Sakuya said.

Ziden thought for a moment and decided to save the young vampire's life. Ziden told Remilia to open her mouth as he poured his blood into her mouth. Her body began to convulse as Ziden snapped his fingers, causing Remilia's clothes to shine.

She began to scream in pain as Sakuya grabbed her hand in hope of calming her down. Ziden sat back against the wall, watching the scene with indifference. Yuyuko came through the wall and rested her head on Ziden's, waiting for the vampire to calm down. Patchouli and Meiling came to the aid of their friend.

Remilia calmed down and stopped moving. Grannie walked over to them and it was then they noticed something. There was a large gear in the room and Ike was sitting down with Ragnell resting next to him.



" Hey Ike!" Sora, Mario and Reimu ran over to Ike.

" Where the heck were you when we were being attacked by Rankyogan!?" Reimu asked.

" What?! Rankyogan attacked you guys!?" Ike was in shock.

" Yes, but that is not the bad news. It seems that Phantom is no longer the strongest male member, now it belongs to Lightning Ace." Mario said.

" I'm not surprised. As dangerous he is, Ace is much more dangerous via his high intellect and his power of telekinesis." Ike said.

" What's telekinesis?" Reimu asked.

" I know! That's when you can control objects with your mind!" Sora said with Ike nodding in confirmation.

" Coupled with his lightning powers, he is very powerful unlike his little brother." Mario said.

Everyone looked to the Gate of Time as Link and Youmu walked with sad looks on their faces.

Ziden noticed this and walked up to Link. " Everything alright, kid?"

" Yes, but Zelda isn't coming back anytime soon." Youmu said.

Ziden looked at the sword on Link's back and gasped. It was a purple and green hilted sword that was radiating holy energy, much stronger than the holy energy that Excalibur gives off. This was Sword of Evils Bane, the Master Sword.

" Link! How did you get that sword?" Ziden asked.

" Well..."

*Flashback...*

" Gaze upon true beauty! My arms are now the ultimate defense, can you pierce through them?" Ghirahim asked. His arms were now coated in a black metal and was not wearing his mantle.

### **Ghirahim Second Battle Phase 1 ( Skyward Sword)**

Ike charged in and tried to cut through Ghirahim's waist, only for him to stop it with his arm. " What?!"

Ghirahim pushed him away and kicked him in the jaw. Ike is sent flying into the ceiling and lands on it feet first. Ike propelled himself off the ceiling and slammed his sword into Ghirahim's arm, causing a powerful gust to blow through the room.

" Hiyaaaahhhh!" Link charged in and slashed him across the back, drawing blood. Link followed up by slamming an arrow into his Achilles Heel.

" Grrr! Away with you!" Ghirahim swung his arm at Link who ducked under it and countered it with a strong punch to the jaw.

Youmu used her Lotus Stance Cut and fired a green sword wave at Ghirahim blasting him into the wall. Several black diamonds fired out from the dust cloud and slammed into Ike's leg. Ghirahim appeared behind Ike and punched him into the ground, creating a crater that Ike was in the middle of.

Ghirahim fired more diamonds at Link who returned them with simple sword swings. Ghirahim sidestepped the returned attacks and punched the ground causing a black energy to travel along the ground and straight towards Link. Link is pushed out of the way by Youmu.

" Thanks Youmu... Hmmm?" Link saw that there were two Youmus in the room before he noticed that this was Myon.

Link got up and threw a bomb at Ghirahim who didn't see it coming and was blasted into the ceiling.

" Enough! Time for you to die!" Ghirahim summoned two black cutlasses and charged at Myon, slicing it on the chest.

Youmu cried out in pain as the wound that was Myon's chest appeared on her's. " So you feel the pain of your copy here!? What a useless ability!" Ghirahim said as Youmu stared at him.

" So what? That doesn't mean I'll lose to you!" Myon jumped and slammed her swords into Ghirahim's, pushing him back. " Heart Carving Cut!" Youmu slid forward and slashed Ghirahim's legs knocking him down.

Ghirahim snapped his fingers, summoning black diamonds that surround Youmu. She took a page out of Link's book and used a spin attack to release a pink energy wave that blasted the diamonds away.

Ghirahim rolled to his feet and slammed his swords into Link's, forcing the young hero to his knees. Myon kicked Ghirahim in the groin, causing him drop to the ground.

" Myon! That was uncalled for!" Youmu yelled.

Ike jumped out of the pit and slammed the flat of his sword against Ghirahim's face.

Ghirahim punched Ike in the gut with a strong right hook and slammed his heel into his skull. Ike was sent tumbling from the attack and used Ragnell to regain his balance. Youmu and Myon ran in criss-cross patterns and performed a pincer attack. They struck with lightning fast strikes that Ghirahim had trouble dodging. The continued assault was quickly agitating the Demon Lord.

" Out of the way!" Ghirahim slammed his sword into the ground and released a burst of energy that blasted the duo away.

Ghirahim tackled Myon to the ground and started to punch her stomach rapidly with large amounts of power. Youmu clutched her stomach in pain and fell to her knees while coughing up blood.

" Helm Splitter!" Link jumped and slashed Ghirahim across the face.

" Grahhhh!" Ghirahim clutched his face in pain while stepping away from Myon as she slowly got back up and returned to her marshmallow form. The familiar golden light wrapped around Youmu as she stared down Ghirahim.

" I'll show you how powerful I really am, Ghirahim!" The lights around Youmu exploded as pink cherry blossoms began to surround Ghirahim. They began to spin around him, forming a vortex that was spinning around him trapping him inside.

Youmu grabbed Roukanken with both hands and let out a breath of air. Her eyes were sharp with determination and was about to strike with a brand new attack! She dashed through the tornado multiple times, leaving a pink streak behind with each dash through the twister. Link and Ike noticed that the streaks were going higher and higher into the sky while at the same time, Ghirahim was screaming in pain.

Youmu was speeding up her movement while slashing the demon lord to pieces as they reached the top of the twister. She pulled out Hakurouken and cross slashed Ghirahim and flew past him, landing on her feet while slowly sheathing her swords. "Cherry Blossom's Dance." She sheathed her swords as an explosion of cherry blossom petals erupt from Ghirahim as he fell to the ground, gravely injured and almost unconscious. He disappeared into darkness as Link and Ike ran over to Youmu.

" Link. I'm fine. Just go get that flame." Youmu said before she passed out.

*Flashback ends*

Ziden looked at Youmu with an amused look on his face. " I had a feeling you'd be the first to gain your very 1st Mystic Arte."

" Yeah. To think that she took down Ghirahim with that Mystic Arte thingy." Marisa said before drooling. " I bet mine is going to blow everything up, ze!"

" Whatever. I'm certainly not going back to Sanctuary after all this excitement." Mokou said while piggybacking off of Ziden.

Ziden was about to yell at Mokou when Ziden sensed something. Ziden ran outside and sees Goose manning a catapult like device. Ziden nods to Goose as the ground began to shake.

The three swordsman, Mokou and Kaguya jumped down to the sealing spike as the Imprisoned broke free, now sporting arms.

### **The Imprisoned ( Groosenator) ( Skyward Sword)**

The Imprisoned made its way up the temple while the heroes chased after it. Link and Ike ran between the monster's legs and slashed the toes of the creature. The creature stopped and stomped his foot, knocking the swordsman away before continuing his walk of destruction.

Ziden was still injured from the attack from Ace was evident in his staggering up the path. Mokou saw this and shook her head all while running up the slope. Sora decided to help Goose by gathering bomb flowers and placing them into onto the catapult.

Ziden forced his body to jump and shot out an extended fiery arm that slammed into the back of the creature. Ziden flipped onto the creature's back and raised his leg 90 degrees into the air as fire wrapped around his leg. "Kiyyyyaaaaahhhh!" Ziden slammed his foot onto the creature's back causing an explosion that blasted Ziden off the creature's back.

Ziden landed in front of the temple, exhausted out of his mind and unable to move. Yuyuko ran over to Ziden and propped him up so he could watch the rest of the fight with Yuyuko hugging him while smiling.

Mokou ran up the creature's back and rapidly punched the sealing spike into his skull. The Imprisoned shook Mokou off of his head and punched her into the wall. He walked forward only to be blasted by a Master Spark and pushed back.

He did something that shocked everyone and opened his large mouth and ate the Master Spark whole.

Aya waved her fan and created a powerful gust that slammed into his 'throat', causing him to choke on the Master Spark. Aya tackled the creature onto its back so that Link could reach the sealing spike. Link thrust his sword into the spike, entering his head for the second time.

The Imprisoned got back up and slammed Link into the wall. He stretched his arms up into the air and tried to slap the fliers out of the sky. Aya stopped one of the arms with her own natural strength, but was unable to stop the other from slamming into Utsuho. She plummeted toward Ziden and slammed into him, knocking the trio down with Utsuho landing on top of Ziden.

Mario and Luigi waited by the temple with their hammers ready. Ike landed a powerful blow to one of the creatures toes, causing it to explode violently. Ike followed up with hitting the creature with Aether across the chest. Reimu threw several yin yang orb into his chest knocking him back.

The creature was weakened alot and was on its last legs. Then he did something COMPLETELY unexpected. A mysterious halo appeared above his sealing spike as he began to slowly began to float into the air.

" Whoa! When did this thing learn how to fly!?" Goose yelled. " Doesn't matter! The Groosenater will blast him out of the sky!" Goose places the bomb onto the catapult, positions it in front of the creature and fires. The bomb slams into his face and knocked him all the way into the pit as Link jumped down and struck the sealing spike. The creature exploded and was resealed by Link as everyone celebrated.

Eirin is checking out Ziden's condition with his friends huddled around him. Ziden wounds were slowly closing and Ziden couldn't catch his breathe. Eirin deduced that the attack done to Ziden tore apart his lungs, explaining why he had trouble breathing. Everyone was more surprised with what happened to Remilia. She now looked older and seemed to give more power than she did before.

Ziden told her that she can now change her age and appearance at will due to his blood being in her body. She decided to remain looking like a 16 year old girl with bat wings and sharp nails.

Link told everyone what happened and they all had a goal in mind, to find the Triforce!

" Did Zelda tell you where to find this Triforce thing?" Reimu asked.

Link shook his head. " All she told was me was to 'find Levias and he shall reveal their location to you'."

" Levias? You can find him in the Thunderhead, but I remember hearing that he was being attacked by a weird giant bird." Goose said.

" How can call him though? If he's being attacked, then he should be hiding, right?" Nitori asked.

" Yeah. All have to do is stand on the Rainbow Isle and yell his name with gusto." Goose said.

" Wait. So we don't have to do anything complicated to meet him, like carry some pumpkin soup and fight some parasite thingy. All we have to do is call his name?" Remilia seemed suspicious about this.

" Well there is that weird bird thing to deal with, Mistress Remilia." Meiling said.

" Of course. I can't wait to see how strong I've gotten now." Remilia looks upon her older body and laughs. " Looks like I've beaten you, Reimu!"

" S-s-shut up!" Reimu's face flushed red.

" \*sigh\* See what you caused, Ziden? Now my little Reimu feels bad~." Yukari said.

" Whatever. Yuyuko? Can you let me go?" Ziden asked as Yuyuko increased pressure on her hug.

" Ziden~!" Ziden looks and sees Mokou teasing him before he flipped her off. " Wow. Don't have to mean about it. You're going to make me cry now."

" Bah!" Ziden said.

" I agree with Ziden, stuff a sock in it Mokou." Kaguya said.

" Why don't you make me, shut-in?" Mokou retorted. They approached each other and exchanged glances at each other.

" Let me guess. You two aren't going to back to Sanctuary, are you?" Ziden said as they nodded.

Patchouli looked around and noticed that two people aren't here. " Ziden? Where is Terra and Kirby?"

" I know! They are back in Skyloft, probably still sleeping." Utsuho said.



"Ayayaya~! Talk about sad. We didn't even notice they were gone."  
Aya said.

" Want me to go get them Ziden?" Komachi asked.

" Yeah, but send Terra to Sanctuary and bring Kirby to the Rainbow Isle." Ziden said.

" Got it. See you in a bit." Komachi exited the temple as everyone took to the sky.

They entered the Thunderhead and saw the Rainbow Isle. They landed on it as everyone drew their weapons and prepared themselves for battle. Ziden called for Levias as a giant whale like creature appeared from the clouds below them.

" Hohohohoh! It has been a long time since I've had visitors!" Levias bellowed.

" We need for you tell us where the Triforce is." Link said.

" Hmmm? So you are the Hero Chosen by the Goddess, huh? Normally I would tell you where they are, but I've got a problem I need help with." Levias said.

As if on cue, a large orb of darkness appeared. Out of it came a large purple bird, holding a treasure chest in it's beak.

" A Heartless!?" Ziden summoned Hero's Strife and placed it on his shoulder.

" Great! Time for a fight!" Remilia cracked her knuckles.

Trivia:

1. Rankyogan is one my more visually disturbing OCs ( abd trust me, he isn't the last one) and was one of the stronger members of the Ultima Brigade. As far as I know, his name doesn't translate into anything.

2. Several references to the actual Skyward Sword storyline were made in this chapter.

3. Mystic Artes are the Ultimate Moves of the Tales Universe and each Touhou girl is getting 3 and with each one obtained they get stronger.

*Author's Note: Yeah. Shorter Chapter this time because... well I feel like the next one is going to be a long one. The Zelda Arc is going to end in two more chapters and then we go the KHII Arc Part 1! Man these next two chapters are going to be crazy, So get ready! Still no Gensokyo Analysis this week.*

## **Ziden and Eirin vs Mayuri Kurotsuchi**

" So that's the Heartless, huh?" Ziden observed the creature and pulled out a book, wondering if what he was about to do was going to work.

A blue light came from the book and scanned the Heartless as the book opened up and recorded information on the creature. The book began to speak with a female voice.

" This is the Emblem Heartless known as the Ruler of the Sky. It resembles a skeletal parrot with purple plumage and a finely designed jeweled, gold collar. It had several skulls comprising its tail and its wings were made of four golden cutlasses with red and purple gems alternating between the swords. Its mouth looks like a brown treasure chest with black spikes making up the teeth. It had a violet and gold crown that had its emblem on it. Beware! This Heartless has unrivaled speed and power in the air, hence its name. Capable of using water based attacks. Recommended Hunting Level: S!"

RoTS sped past the platform and blasted Ziden and Sora off the platform as they began to fall to the clouds below. A barrier ends up sealing off the island and stopping them from helping in this fight.

Ziden and Sora felt a strange sensation running through their body as they heard a voice calling to them.

" Believe in yourself and take flight against this foe!" A voice rang out around the duo as they took its advice and began to rise into the air.

They both had golden sparkles around them as they got ready to fight the RoTS.

**Struggle Away The Fight For My Friends ( Kingdom Hearts: 358/2 Days)**

RoTS began to fly around the duo while staring at them with his trademark yellow eyes. Sora glided over to the Heartless and swung his keyblade at the Heartless, only for it to disappear.

" Sora! Its over there!" Ziden got an idea and began to run on the air, using the Geppou technique he saw Lucci use. Ziden ran at high speeds to catch the Heartless, but it kept dashing out of his range.

A blue light was forming on the Heartless' tail as a ball of water slammed into the back of Sora before he quickly recovered. Ziden appeared behind the RoTS and slashed it across the back with Hero's Strife.

Sora followed up with a powerful flurry of keyblade strikes to the bird's face while Ziden rained fiery kicks onto its back, sandwiching the Heartless between a barrage of attacks. The Heartless fell beneath the clouds as Ziden and Sora felt cold air around them. Ziden feels something pierce through his stomach as his eyes widen in shock. A sharp ice pillar slammed into Ziden's stomach and knocked into the air. The Heartless flew through the sea of clouds and started to circle the duo while firing a large number of water balls at them, forcing them into a defensive position.

Ziden was being comboed by his elemental weakness while Sora was blocking them the best he could. Yukari decided to send aid to the keybladers and opened a gap to send everyone to aid them.

Several wind gusts wrapped around Ziden and protected him from the water barrage. Aya decides to chase the speedy Heartless as they sped through the air.

" Tch! Don't think you're faster than me, bird monster!" Aya kicked it into high gear as she hit Mach 1 in a matter of seconds. She was speeding around RoTS so fast that it gave the illusion that there was multiple copies of her.

The Heartless disappeared into thin air and appeared above Aya with its mouth open.

## **Ka-ching! Ping Ping Ping Ping!**

A barrage of coins fired from its mouth and tried to hit Aya, to no avail, but it still continued the monetary assault. The girls had trouble dodging the coins due to their speed and unending rate.

The coins found their mark on the gluttonous ghost and sent her flying into an island. Youmu shot a sword wave into its face, stunning it and stopping the coin barrage.

" I got you now!" Aya flew towards and tried to tackle the Heartless, only for it to sidestep the attack and raised its swords, ready to cleave through the body of the now frightened Aya. She closed her eyes and screamed as she heard flesh got torn apart by steel. She opened her eyes and saw a bloody Ziden staring at her with angry eyes.

Ziden slaps her across the face and grabs her by the shoulders. " Aya! I know that getting your wings chopped off was traumatizing for you, but you've got to snap out of it!" The swords in Ziden's back were digging deeper into his body and caused him to cough up blood onto Aya's shirt.. " I told you that I'd never let something like that happen to you again didn't I?! Now stop being such a spineless coward and become the Aya who was and is my best friend! The one that never gave up and was able to beat me in a race and several fights! Not this lily livered chicken that I'm looking at now!" Aya clutched her heart as Ziden's words struck her heart.

Aya knew that Ziden was her best friend and that he would always be by her side. She smiled and calmed down. " Thanks Ziden. I can't say that I'll recover immediately, but I know with your help I will get over this." Aya sees the swords tear through Ziden's body as he melted into black sludge.

Meiling took this opportunity and slammed her foot into the Heartless' back. The Heartless' tail reared up and stabbed Meiling in her side, forcing her to place some distance between them as she clutched her bleeding wound.

The Heartless gained a pink aura before he took off at supersonic speeds while leaving a trail of water bullets behind it. It crashed through several members of the group as they tried to dodge the attack, but were too slow to dodge the fast creature.

A red chain wrapped around the Heartless as Remilia yanked the RoTS towards her. She clenched her fist and pulled it back. She slammed it into the face of the Heartless, with the impact causing visible shockwaves to be seen.

Remilia looked at her fist while opening and closing it, admiring her newly obtained strength.

Reimu saw the Heartless slam into the Island that Link went to in order to learn the songs to enter the Silent Realms. She summoned several Yin Yang orbs and threw them at the Heartless, dealing intense amounts of damage via the holy attributes of the orbs.

The Heartless proceeded to fire more coins at the group as they barely grazed the attacks. Mario and Luigi slammed into the back of the Heartless and began to spin in place. At first, it would look like they doing nothing to the avian but after a while puffs of smoke were coming from their feet. They were creating friction by spinning on the creature's back and set it on fire.

Utsuho pointed her arm cannon at the roasted bird while charging up an icy ball. "Freezing Glacier!" The ball slammed into the Heartless, putting out the flames and healing the Heartless.

"What the!? That thing just healed from that attack!" Mario noticed.

"Don't use water or ice based attacks! Just pound the crap out of him with other magic and attacks!" Ziden said, reappearing behind Reimu scaring her in process.

"Fine. Lets go!" Reimu flew around, throwing several amulets at the Heartless.

The Heartless began to fly around, creating ice pillars that tried to impale the group. Ziden and Mokou proceeded to melt the ice with fire while Kaguya fired several colorful lasers into the back of the Heartless.

Of course the Heartless countered by firing coins at the Princess who used a stone bowl to block the attack. Link was firing arrows in tandem with Eirin as they exploded against the creatures back causing it fall.

Sora decided he would be the one to finish the Heartless as he slashed through the creature at fast speeds. The bird began to thrash around and crashed into the clouds below while a crystal heart floated up into the sky and disappeared.

" Hahahahaha! So you really are heroes! Very well, I shall tell you where to find the Triforce. They are in the hands of the three dragons of the surface." Levias said.

" Great. I think we should head to the Desert first. After all, we heard about the Dragon of that area having a shield that couldn't be broken. It would be nice for Link to have for future fights." Reimu said.

" Hurray! We are going back to the desert. That... extremely hot... and dry desert." Meiling said.

They began to fly towards the desert as Komachi caught up to them with Terra and Kirby in tow, still sleeping.

They landed in the desert and made their into the cavern and rested before seeing the dragon.

Mario and Luigi took a nap, preparing to rest up for this journey. Kirby was playing with Yuyuko and Chen. Sora was sparring with Reimu and Marisa in order to improve his newly obtained flight. Nitori was observing Utsuho's third leg and making sure it was acting right,

after all, nuclear fission doesn't involve ice and she has never fired ice from the control rod before.

Youmu was training Link who was keeping up with her speed. Meiling decided to practice her Martial Arts and practice her artes while Remilia and Sakuya watched. But of course Ziden was not having a fun time. You see, Ziden was in the middle of tug of war match between Kaguya and Mokou while Eirin and Patchouli just watched, drinking tea and coffee.

" Back off, Mokou! He's my husband!" Kaguya pulled Ziden over to her.

" In your dreams, princess!" Mokou pulled Ziden back towards her.

Ziden was obviously annoyed by this which was evident by the tick mark on his temple.

" I think Ziden doesn't like being the center of their conflict." Patchouli said, taking a sip of the coffee that Ziden made.

" Yes. I do believe he is about to run away or do something stupid." Eirin said.

" Don't I get a say in this?" Ziden asked as the two immortals glared at him.

" NO!" They said in unison.

" I'm guessing that you two over aren't going to help at all, are you?" Ziden asked.

" You are smarter than you look, Mister Ziden." Eirin said.

" Wonderful. All right, let go!" Ziden yanked his arms inward causing them fall forward.

Mokou got up and glared at Ziden as Kaguya mimicked her action. Mokou tackled Ziden to the ground and sat on top of him with her



nails digging into Ziden's shoulders.

" Got you now!" Mokou declared.

" Hey get off of him you flaming wench!" Kaguya yelled while clenching her fists.

" Time to claim my prize!" Mokou took her hand and tore off Ziden's shirt while he stared at her with an emotionless face. Mokou closed her eyes and moved her face closer to Ziden's, in an attempt to kiss him.

" \*Sigh\* Repel." Ziden's body released a focused burst of energy that blasted Mokou into the air and held her there. " Time for a timeout, you psychotic rapist." Ziden kept her in the air as Terra walked over to him.

" Ziden? What was that woman about to do to you?" She asked.

" You'll learn when you are older." Eirin answered.

" Ziden~!" Ziden was grabbed into a hug by Kaguya and stuck her tongue out at Mokou.

" You know... this love thingy is going to either get me killed or kidnaped by one of you guys, lock me in a basement and forced me to love them forever." Ziden said while staring at Mokou.

" Please! I'd do the former before I'd ever do the latter." Mokou said while blushing.

" I don't know about that." Ziden said.

" I doubt that Kaguya would ever do anything like that. Although I would expect desperate people like the gatekeeper and Mokou to do something like that." Patchouli said.

" Hey!" Mokou was about to yell at her before she felt Eirin's gaze on her.

" Ziden~!" Kaguya lifts up Ziden and spins around, slowly but surely making him dizzy.

" Would you let me go!?" Ziden asked.

" No~! I don't wanna!" Kaguya replied while dragging him over to Eirin.

Mokou ends up falling on her face and got up looking angry. Ziden, based on his memories of Mokou, knew that she would try and attack him, but Ziden had a ace in his pocket.

" Mokou! If you attack me, I'll tell Kaguya all about that 'thing' Keine forced you to do." Mokou doused her flames as she glared at Ziden.

" You better not." Mokou said as she sat next to Patchouli.

Ziden broke free of Kaguya's grip and scuttled over to Eirin.

Ziden noticed that Eirin was staring at Terra who walking over to Ziden and rested her head on his arm.

" That girl... she doesn't seem to understand her own emotions. Can you tell me what happened to her." Eirin asked.

Ziden gives her a brief recap of Terra's story and her battles against the forces of evil on her world. He even told them about her enemy whom Ziden calls the 'Crazy God Clown' who absorbed the power of the Warring Triad and became the source of all magic on her world.

" I see. That explains why she doesn't understand her emotions. Being mind controlled for so long would have adverse effects on someone." Eirin said.

Mokou looked at the girl, surprised at how hard life must have been for her. Having your world destroyed twice must be a horrible event to experience.

" The magic on that world sounds interesting. I would to see her use it someday." Patchouli said.

" I can use it too. After all I have been to several worlds that use that kind of magic." Ziden said.

" Wait a sec. Didn't that girl say something about that clown being brought back to life? Shouldn't we be worried?" Mokou asked.

" Yeah. He may be the closest thing to a god that we will fight on this journey." Eirin said.

"... Kaguya? Please get off of my back." Ziden said as she nuzzled her face on Ziden's cheek.

" Did she drink that cactus water like you tricked Marisa into drinking?" Eirin asked.

" Not as much trick, more of ' I wanna drink it because Mokou drank some and I want to be better than her at everything'." Ziden said.

" That would explain their behavior." Patchouli said.

Sakuya made her way over to the group and sat in Ziden's lap, causing the knives strapped on her legs to scratch him.

" What?" Ziden asked. Ziden recieved no answer as Sakuya fell asleep on his shoulder.

" When I first met Sakuya, she'd always say that her Master would come and save her from my grasp. Everyday she'd defy me day in and day out, always saying that Ziden would come and save her. I'm starting to see why she trusted you so much... a bit too much. She obviously has strong feelings for you. I found by reading her diary while she is sleeping, that she is in love with you." Remilia said, startling Ziden. She had returned to her child-like form.

" I've noticed. I may be dense in certain subjects, but I've can tell when my student is in love with me. I already told her that I don't

date my students/adoptive daughters." Ziden said.

" Hmm? That is quite the statement there." Remilia thought for a second and found the courage to ask Ziden something. " Ziden? You said that a black haired vampire killed Sakuya's parents... was he wearing black slacks and clogs and had extremely pale skin?"

Ziden was shocked, but then quickly recovered. " Yes. So he attacked you and Flandre when you were little and turned you both into vampires. Looks like you want revenge as well, huh?" Remilia nodded. Ziden clutched his chest as he felt a sharp pain in his heart. Yukari and Yuyuko immediately ran to Ziden's side, forcing everyone out of the way.

" Ziden! Are you alright!?" Yuyuko was worried about Ziden and knew why he was pain.

" I'm fine, Yuyuko. I don't know where that pain came from and I don't care." Ziden calmed down and forced his head onto Yukari's lap and passed out.

Yukari and Yuyuko both looked at each other and remembered what happened to Ziden all those years ago.

*Flashback...*

Yukari and Yuyuko were in the living room of Yukari's house, relaxing and enjoying the nice peaceful day.

" What a nice day! I'm glad you invited me over for visit!" Yuyuko said.

" Yeah. After all, I could use the company. Ran and Chen are out shopping for supplies with that girl that Ziden brought here, leaving me and Ziden with a grouchy baby." Yukari was not happy.

They remained silent as they sensed someone standing in the room with them. " About time you noticed me, Demoness of Boundaries."

The duo turned and saw several men standing along the wall, eyeing the women with lustful eyes.

" Don't try and resist us either. Our boss sealed off those abilities of yours so we can have some fun with YOU two." The men began to surround the girls.

" Ah man! Look at the rack this ghost lady has! It looks divine!" The man reached out and ripped off the front of her dress, revealing a pink bra with purple butterflies on them. She screamed as several men began to grab at the remaining parts of her dress.

" Why did you scream!? We didn't do anything to you yet!"An American man said.

" And you aren't going to." The men turned and saw a 17 year old Ziden leaning against the doorway.

" Huh? Wait a sec. I thought the boss said that these two hotties were the only people here?" A surfer dude asked.

" Who cares! Just waste the punk so we can rape these broads!" An Italian man said.

Several men began to walk towards Ziden while cracking their knuckles. Ziden summoned Crimson Edge to his hand and slashed a man across the throat, killing him in seconds.

" You little bastard! I gonna bust your ass for that one!" The African American charged at Ziden only to be throat slashed by him as well.

Ziden pounced on the Italian man and strongly thrusts the blade through his eye and began to stab him multiple times as the blood sprayed onto his face. The other men back away in terror and ran out of the door screaming for help.

Yuyuko was shocked at Ziden ruthlessness before she covered herself.

" Are you two alright?" Ziden asked while still stabbing the man.

" Yes and I think that man is far past alive Ziden, so you can stop now." Yukari said.

Ziden stopped and got up and walked over to Yuyuko. He stopped when he heard the sound of flesh being torn apart. He turned the door and saw a black haired man leaning on the doorway wearing only black slacks and pure silver dress shoes. His hands were covered in blood and his smile revealed two sharp fangs.

" Who are you!?" Ziden asked.

" I don't tell my name to little boys who are about to die and become my lunch." The vampire said while walking towards him.

Yukari's eyes widened when she sensed how powerful the vampire was. " Ziden! Get away from him!"

Ziden turned around to ask Yukari why when the vampire's fist slammed into the side of Ziden's head and sent him crashing through the wall.

Yuyuko was in shock before she and Yukari chased after Ziden. Ziden sent flying into the abandoned village next the home of Yukari Yakumo and slid across the ground. Ziden struggled to get up as he saw the vampire standing in front of him. Ziden tried to stab the vampire in the heart with his blade, only for to be blocked by the vampire's finger.

" Surprised, weakling?" The vampire asked.

Ziden was angry at being called weak so he swung his sword wildly and with no control. It was obvious that Ziden was not skilled in using a sword nor did he know any form of hand-to-hand combat or magic.

The vampire was blocking the attacks with only his finger and was yawning which pissed Ziden off even more. " Is this all that the slayer

of Overlord Oscura can do?" The vampire asked.

Ziden swung the sword at faster rates in an attempt to hit him but the vampire was still blocking all of his strike with ease.

" Enough of this." The vampire slashed Ziden across the face with his claw, causing Ziden to stop his attack and clutch his bleeding face.

The vampire pounced on Ziden and began to tear the flesh off of Ziden's body and devouring it. Ziden was screaming in pain as the vampire feasted on Ziden's flesh. Ziden's body was trying its hardest to heal the damage but the vampire was eating the flesh way too fast for his regeneration to catch up and heal.

The vampire grabbed Ziden's arm and ripped it off, causing blood to spray out which the vampire happily lapped up similar to how a cat laps up milk but much more fast.

Then the vampire proceeded to beat Ziden over the head with his own severed arm and was laughing while beating Ziden to death. Tears were now flowing from Ziden's eyes as he cried for someone or something to help him.

The vampire stopped and threw away the arm while licking his lips. His fangs glistened in the sunlight as he sunk his fangs into Ziden's jugular. He was drinking the large amounts of blood with pure ecstasy as he was moaning and his eyes were rolling into his skull.

He then stopped drinking and wrapped his teeth around Ziden's throat and ripped it out before swallowing it. Ziden could no longer scream as his throat was ripped out.

" Now for my favorite part of the feast!" The vampire took his claws and dug them into Ziden's ribcage and gripped them with hungry eyes. He pulled them out of Ziden's body, leaving Ziden's heart and lungs exposed to the vampire.

He reached into Ziden's chest and carefully pulled out Ziden's heart with all of the veins still attached to it. He began to lick the heart all over while staring at Ziden with sadistic intentions.

" You look like you are in so much pain, Ziden Icrim. Allow me to end your suffering!" He raised his other hand, ready to pierce through Ziden's heart when a large flock of bats slammed into the vampire and sent him flying into an abandoned building.

" Ziden! Are you alright!?" A woman ran towards Ziden and picked him up in her arms.

The woman had spiky pink hair and blue circles around her orange eyes that was obviously eyeliner. She had black spiked armbands around her wrists, neck and ankles. She wore a black undershirt with a white skull on it as well as the undershirt showing off her cleavage. She wore a black miniskirt with ruby red Mary Janes on her feet. She looked like she was no older than 19 but she was much more older than that.

Ziden couldn't answer his vampire friend because his throat was still healing.

Ziden heard the sound of a paper bag being dropped as he heard his name called. He felt strong arms wrap around as he sees Ran crying over his mangled body. He also saw Chen and Rena, now sporting her natural dark blue hair with light blue wave designs, standing around him.

The vampire walked out of the building, looking completely unharmed and glares at the female vampire who struck him. " Disgraceful. A vampire saving a human. What a disgusting creature you are." The vampire said.

" You! How dare you do this to Ziden!?" Ran's claws were out and her rage was visible.



" Damn. I forgot that the Gap Youkai had a Kyuubi working for her. But that doesn't matter, I have inflicted more than enough damage to cause trauma to this boy, so my job here is done." The vampire turned away from the group. " I hope the boy grows stronger and faces me in the future. My name is Nosferatu the 2nd and I shall become the God of the Night!" Nosferatu laughed before dodging a flurry of butterflies and landed on the roof.

Nosferatu looked off into the opposite direction of Yuyuko and Yukari and straight towards the Scarlet Devil Mansion. " Ahhh! So the two brats I changed all those years ago are here! What a surprise!" He laughed again as Ziden glared at him angrily while he clenched his bloody teeth.

" Clair! Are you okay!?" Clair looked up and saw Yukari floating down towards them.

" Who hired you to do that to my nephew!?" Yuyuko asked with anger lacing her words.

" A man by the name of Dark Ziden." Nosferatu said as Ziden, Rena and Clair's eyes widened.

Nosferatu transformed into a dark mist and floated into the sky.

" Thank you for saving Ziden, Clair." Rena thanked the female vampire.

" Whatever! I only saved him because I'm the only person that can drink his blood!" Clair said, punching her chest to show her pride.

Ziden's eyes felt heavy as he began to slip into unconsciousness.

*Flashback ends...*

" After we took Ziden back to the house, Ziden ran into his room and locked himself inside. Ziden was truly traumatized by the attack and was plagued with nightmares that destroyed his chances of rest. I

tried to seal off the memory of the event, but Ziden refused anyone's help in the matter. So I got an idea, I'd let his mother help him through this trauma and train him to get stronger over the course of two years. I would even send Ran and Chen to go with him so they wouldn't miss him or be worried about him. Of course they didn't come back within the two years and I got worried." Yukari looked sad while looking at Ziden who didn't really seem to care.

" I learned that Ziden was given a job to save to Heaven from four invaders, only to later learn that he was tricked and cursed with the inability to age. When Ziden returned to me and Yuyuko, we were shocked at how strong he had gotten. Apparently he fought with his mother daily and began to expand his skills with the Prime Elemental Fire and gained new powers through it. His swordsmanship was alot more diverse and flashy and he learned various Martial Arts from his Older Sister Selena, who is a vampire by the way, and learned magic from his Mother and older sister Eris. We were so happy. Ziden had overcome his trauma and had become stronger, but he picked up on his mother's mannerisms and... behavior." Yukari and Yuyuko didn't seem happy about that last part.

" Roxy sure did love making offensive remarks and causing trouble wherever she went." Yuyuko said.

Yukari and Yuyuko both sighed and noticed how silent everyone was after seeing the flashback. Remilia looked furious and Sakuya did not look happy at all. Meiling was biting her lip and Patchouli looked saddened. One could assume that they all met the vampire and something tragic happened to them. Ziden had a look of pure hate written across his face as his eyes changed from blue to red.

Mokou came up from behind Ziden and gave him a strong hug while kissing his cheek. Ziden's eyes returned to normal as he tried to fight off Mokou's advances.

" \*sigh\* For Ziden to start acting like Roxanne was terrible! Ziden became sarcastic and lazy, but he also became sadistic and hard headed as well. His interest in woman also showed up when he'd hit

on Clair and Rena, neither of which ended well for Ziden. But Ziden was nice enough to build me and Yuyuko a nice little mansion on his property, so we could live near our beloved nephew and our best friend." Yukari said. To the listeners of tale, it looked like the story would never end.

" Um Yukari-" Marisa was about say something to stop this tale when Ziden's 'love interests' shot deadly glares at the teenage witch ( not Sabrina,... not Sabrina).

" Please continue." Kaguya shoved Sakuya off of Ziden's lap and sat herself in Ziden's lap.

Sakuya forced herself from stabbing the immortal in the face when she felt Eirin's glare on her. Man, nurses can be scary sometimes. Especially super smart, space nurses.

" Well after those attempts, we learned that Ziden's regenerative abilities increased which was good because Clair kinda ripped out Ziden's reproductive organs and system." The males in the room flinched at the sentence as Ziden shuddered. " I found it quite hilarious and I recorded the whole thing too! But that's all I'm going to tell you about Ziden's past for now ." Yukari placed a fan over her mouth and stared at Ziden.

" Jeez. Just tell them all my dirty little secrets, will ya?" Ziden sarcastically asked.

Ziden didn't notice until now but he noticed that Mokou and Kaguya were passed while holding him, rendering him immobile. Ziden also noticed something else.

" I smell poison! And its coming from that building over there!" Ziden pointed to that building as a Soul Reaper captain walked out holding a golden blade with a face on it that was spewing out poison.

" My my. I was hoping that I could catch you off guard so that capturing you would be so much more easier!" The Soul Reaper

said.

He had a black paint on his face with several white lines going down his face. He wore a golden headdress that extended down to his midback. He wore a purple scarf around his neck and a white jacket over his black kimono. His sheathe was between his legs and he had blue fingernails with one being really long.

Ziden was creeped out by this man as he slowly approached Ziden. Ziden sensed danger as he jumped into the air to dodge a sudden attack by the weird man. Mokou and Kaguya were awakened by Ziden's sudden action and saw the strange man with the golden sword.

" Just who the hell are you, bub?" Ziden asked.

" I am Mayuri Kurotsuchi, Captain of Squad 12. Anything else you wish to know can until I've dissected you!" Mayuri said.

" Sorry, but you aren't dissecting anybody today!" Mokou declared.

" Oh! Then let us hear what my Zanpakuto, Ashisogi Jizo, has to say about that." Mayuri began to release a strange pink energy.

### **Vim and Vigor ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Mayuri suddenly appears behind Ziden and slashes his left arm. Ziden threw a kick at the crazed Soul Reaper and knocked him into the ground. Mayuri got up and dusted himself off before looking up at Ziden.

Ziden noticed that he had no feeling in his left arm and he struggled to move it, to no avail. Eirin noticed this and saw a purple mist coming the face on the blade.

" Everyone! Watch out for that blade! It is releasing a powerful poison that is capable of paralyzing limbs!" Eirin said.

" Hmm? My my. Being able to figure that out from just one attack, you must be a Lunarian! How remarkable to see another one after so many years!" Mayuri said.

" How do you know what a Lunarian is?" Sora asked.

" Simple! One of them wandered into the Soul Society, preaching nonsense about she was far superior to us Earthlings. The look on her face when I started to cut into her body. But it was so disappointing to learn that Lunarian's organs are not that much different from a human's organs." Mayuri said as Eirin felt rage in her heart.

" You sick freak! Who gave you the right to go around and start slicing people!?" Ziden demanded.

" Why, being the Head of Research and Development in the Soul Society, I can do whatever I want to those little test subjects! Just like how I'm going to dissect you, Ziden Icrim!" Mayuri said as he disappeared again.

Ziden's eyes were covered by a shadow as Mayuri swung his sword at Ziden's neck. Ziden blocked the attack with his left arm and grasped the blade with his hand. Mayuri was visibly suprised at this before he smiled. Ziden wrapped his right hand with blue fire.

" Take this! Blazing Spector!" Ziden threw a barrage of burning punches into Mayuri's body while walking towards a newly discovered cave. Ziden added his other arm into the assault as the distance between Ziden and Mayuri increased, but Ziden's fiery punches were increasing their range and power.

Ziden slammed a final fiery fist into Mayuri's chest and sent him flying into a pillar. Mayuri got up with no difficulty as he disappeared.

This time, he aimed at Patchouli and aimed at her back. A large stone bowl appeared behind her and blocked the attack with relative ease. Meiling slams her fist into Mayuri's fist sending him flying

towards Remilia. Remilia raised her hand and slapped Mayuri across the face, knocking him through the wall.

Youmu, Ike and Link began to rapid fire sword waves into the dust cloud, hoping to deal damage to this monster in human flesh.

Mayuri appeared behind them and slashed their legs and arms, crippling them in the process. Mokou tried to slam a fiery fist into the man's face, but he sidestepped the attack and slashed her arm. "Damn!"

"Dammit Mokou! I thought I told you to DODGE!" Ziden yelled.

"You didn't tell me anything, you idiot!" Mokou replied.

Ziden ran outside and jumped into the air, using the Geppo technique to stay airborne. Mayuri was really impressed with this research specimen. "Remarkable! Not only is his body capable of healing itself, but he is also capable of walking on air! This boy could very well be the first superhuman I get to dissect in my entire career!" Mayuri was consumed with thoughts of studying Ziden like a test animal and slicing him open to see his organs.

"Yeah right! This is the only thing that you are getting from me! Augmented Skill: Rankyaku Raiba (used Google Translate for this one. Translates to Lightning Fang... hopefully.)!"

Ziden fired a blade of lightning that transformed into a wolf's head and opened its fang filled maw, ready to electrocute the crazy researcher. The attack exploded in a burst of dust and lightning as Ziden brought up his sword to block a back attack from Mayuri.

"Ziden! Move!" Ziden jumps away to dodge an arrow that pierced through Mayuri's shoulder. Eirin began to fire a barrage of exploding arrows that exploded against Mayuri, forcing him back.

Ziden appeared behind Mayuri and slammed the heel of his foot into his skull and slammed him into the ground as Ziden tucked his

thumb inside of his fist. " It's gonna feel odd using this type of attack, mainly because of the element." Ziden gathered icy energy into his hand and Mayuri noticed as well and smiled.

" Nemu!" Mayuri called out what Ziden thought was an attack name when he felt a strong force strike him from as he is sent flying by the attack, straight towards Mayuri who had a smile on his face.

Ziden was slashed across the throat, causing the poison to rapidly spread through his body. Eirin looked up and saw a woman floating in the air. She had green eyes with long black hair that is pulled back into a long braid with barely parted bangs. She wore a short kimono that barely made it to her mid thigh.

" Good job, Nemu! Now then, be a dear and take care of those friends of his while I deal with the boy and the Lunarian archer." Mayuri turned his sights onto Eirin who glared at the man.

---

Nemu disappeared and reappeared in front of Mokou and slammed her foot into the jaw of the Immortal woman. A loud audible crack was heard as Mokou's jaw shattered like glass and she was sent crashing into the ceiling of the cave.

Kaguya is shocked at how fast the woman was and nearly emptied her stomach's contents when Nemu's foot slammed into her stomach and threw her into the wall.

" Oh boy. She just took out both of the Immortal girls! In one attack, no less! Everyone, keep on your guard!" Reimu said.

Nemu appeared behind Patchouli and threw a powerful kick at her head, only for Meiling to intercept the attack with her leg. Meiling had a smile on her face as she stared into the empty eyes of Nemu.

" Sorry, but I'm going to be your opponent today!" Meiling proudly declared. " This will be a one-on-one fight!"

" Very well. I shall win for Master Mayuri's sake." Nemu said with no emotion at all in her voice.

" Do you think Meiling can take her?" Nitori asked.

" Of course she can. She is my gatekeeper after all. Also, Marisa, I want you to pay very special attention to this fight and I want you to thank Reimu and Meiling for two things; Reimu's spellcard rules that prevent us fatally harming each other in a Danmaku Duel and the fact that Meiling views you as a friend otherwise... you know what?" Remilia shows her fangs, startling Marisa. " We'll just let see how powerful Meiling really is."

---

Eirin was running around firing several arrows at Mayuri whom was batting them away with his sword. Eirin focused energy into the arrow with a golden light. " Moonlit Arrow!" The arrow takes flight and slammed into Mayuri's chest, leaving the faint image of a golden moon that disperses into golden balls of light. The balls of light slammed into Mayuri, dealing extra damage that stunned him.

Ziden struggled to get to his feet and breathed fire on the mad researcher, setting him ablaze. Mayuri rolled on the ground and doused the flames, getting with an annoyed look on his face.

Ziden refocused the icy energy into his right hand. " Augmented Skill: Tobu Shigan Shimo no Dangan!" Ziden fired a frozen bullet into Mayuri's leg, freezing it and rendering him immobile.

Eirin throws an explosive flask into the back of Mayuri, causing him to stumble forward.

" Tch! Enough of this! Time for you test subjects to learn your place. Bankai!" Mayuri released a powerful burst of energy from his body as Ziden and Eirin felt a large opponent enter the battlefield.

---



Meiling was exchanging blows with Nemu as their blows rang out shockwaves as the group watched in awe. Meiling and Nemu were moving around at lightning fast speeds, clashing with each other every so often as Sakuya and Patchouli watched with shocked expressions on her face.

Back in Gensokyo, they had always thought of Meiling as a semi-competent Gate Keeper whom would fall asleep every so often while on duty. But now, they saw that she was alot stronger than they would have expected.

Meiling was using her forearms to block the strong kicks coming from the unexpectedly strong Soul Reaper. Meiling slammed her foot into the ground and threw a strong punch into the solar plexus of Nemu, taking every last drop of air out her lungs as Meiling delivered a spin kick to her face.

Nemu recovered and kicked Meiling square in the jaw, sending her flying into the stalactite filled ceiling. Meiling grabbed one of the stalactites and threw at Nemu. Nemu's arm spun like a drill and smashed through the rock, creating a dust screen that blocked her line of vision.

Meiling came through the dust cloud and slammed both of her feet into Nemu's chest and forced onto the ground, shattering it beneath them. Meiling raised a chi empowered fist and slammed it into Nemu, releasing a shockwave that spread through out her body. She countered by punching Meiling in the nose, forcing her to grab it and get drop kicked by Nemu. Meiling was sent flying by the attack, but recovered by landing feet first on the wall. She vaulted off the wall and began to spin like a buzzsaw with her leg stretched out.

" Hi-yaaaahhhhhh!" Meiling slammed her leg into the right shoulder of Nemu, knocking her off balance as Meiling followed up with her Spiral Light Steps attack. Nemu was buffeted by the attack but countered with a drilling punch into the gut, causing a hole shaped wound to be made in her stomach.

Meiling ignored the pain as she crouched down. " Not bad, Nemu! I think its time for you to see how strong I really am! Tiger Chi Release!" A burst of chi erupted from her body as she cracked her neck and stood up.

---

Ziden and Eirin looked at the large creature towering over them. The large creature had a golden baby like face with pupil less eyes and a large silver halo over its head. The creature was wearing a red scarf around its neck and it had a caterpillar like body.

It was releasing a purple mist that Ziden and Eirin both breathed in, causing their throats to start turning purple.

" Konjiki Ashisogi Jizo." Mayuri named this creature as Ziden and Eirin glared at him. " I thought I should let you know that unlike the previous poison that you were dealing with before, this one is fatal and I shall enjoy watching you two suffer!"

" Tch! Eirin! Are you alright?" Ziden asked as they both looked fine after inhaling the poison.

" Yeah. It's a good thing that Mokou bought these Antidotes back at Hollow Bastion, otherwise we might have been in trouble." Eirin got up and dusted her clothes off.

Ziden draws Ama-no-Murakamo and Nosada and activates their power. Ziden crouches down, tightening his grip on the swords and lets out a breathe of cold air from his mouth.

Mayuri was watching Ziden with eager eyes as carefully watched what the young hero was about to do. An aura began to wrap around Ziden's swords, resembling eastern dragons coiling around him, letting off roars every so often.

At the same time, Eirin's bow was taking a green glow with golden aura surrounding her and the arrows. Her eyes were showing sharp look of hatred for the soul reaper captain.

" Let us end this so that I can return to the Soul Society and begin experimenting on you, Ziden Icrim!" Mayuri commanded his weapon to lurch forward and attack the duo. A multitude of large swords came Ashisogi Jizo's mouth.

Ziden jumped into the air while spinning like a fiery drill, surrounded by frosty cloud of sleet and snow. " Final Move: Soaring Dragon Emperor-" Ziden dashed through the large creature and faster than the eye could perceive, landed next to Eirin with his back turned to the creature and his swords were partially in his sheathe. "- Twister!" An audible click was heard as an explosion of blood came from the creature as it disappeared and Mayuri feel from the attack.

Eirin aimed her bow at the falling captain. " Calming Winds: Halcyon's Flight!" She fired a golden arrow that transformed into a giant golden bird that exploded into the body of Mayuri, sending him crashing into the earth with pure white eyes and blood pouring down his head.

Ziden fell to his knees as he feels Eirin helping him to his feet. " Man. That attack always did take alot out of me." Ziden rested his head on Eirin's shoulder and passed out.

*In a dark and Mysterious castle somewhere unknown...*

The 12 Rulers of Darkness were sitting at a purple round table, discussing their future plans.

" Tch! So it seems that Ziden was able to fend off that Soul Reaper. Damned pain in the ass brat!" Ruler 4 said.

" I'm still furious that he and that damned android girl defeated me a year ago!" Ruler 7 said. He was a bald man with no pupils and purple scars over them.

" Yes, I forgot that you told us that were a part of the Ultima Brigade once." Ruler 1 said.

" Those idiotic dreamers. Believing that they can erase darkness from the universe. How preposterous!" Ruler 9 said.

" They also seem to be aware of us as they sent several Zealots and Devastators after us." Ruler 8 said.

" Pathetic creatures. Although those Zealots were a good source of nutrition!" Ruler 3 licked his fangs. He was a pale skinned man with long silver hair and wore regal clothing that gave off an air of elegance in the room.

" Back to the subject at hand, boys." Everyone turned their heads and looked at Ruler 11. " Ziden and his posse of friends are becoming a thorn in our side. I was hoping that the Gap Youkai wouldn't involve those girls from Gensokyo, but of course she did."

" Ziden, I've heard stories of him when I was alive." Ruler 5 said.

" Yeah, before you got blasted into a volcano by a muscle bound idiot." Ruler 2 said, angering Ruler 5.

" At least I didn't get killed by an elf in a green skirt!" Ruler 5 retorted.

" Jeez. Are we really going to play the ' you got killed by so and so' card?" Adachi asked.

" Such tasteful conversations! It makes me drool excitement from my soul!" Fawful said while laughing his trademark laugh.

" Pathetic. Why am I messing around with you idiots when I could be killing those disgusting Lunarians!?" Ruler 6 said.

" And what? Get killed by them again, Zemus?" Ruler 1 said, revealing Ruler 6's identity to the readers.

" Indeed, Zemus. Such foolishness will get you killed quickly." Adachi said.

" How dare you talk to me like that!? I'll crush you where you stand!" Zemus threatened as a surge of power came from Adachi.

**" Remember who you are talking to, Zemus! My power is that of a god and I am one! I will not hesitate to kill you or anyone else here!"** Adachi was enraged and his eyes turned golden.

Everyone minus Ruler 1, 2 and 3 flinched from the monstrous presence that was enveloping the room. They found it hard to believe that this being was killed by a group of teenagers.

" Enough! We must continue to enlist more people to our cause. We already have the Space Pirates and that evil looking F-Zero racer willing to join if they can kill those meddling heroes." Ruler 1 said.

" I am in the process of recruiting that egghead doctor." Ruler 11 said.

" I'm recruiting that fat kid from Eagleland." Ruler 10 said.

" I'm recruiting that Demon Lord and King from that world that they are currently on." Ruler 2.

" We plan on facing those fools on that world as well." Ruler 8 said while getting up and leaving with Rulers 2 and 4 following him.

Back to the Adventure!

Ziden woke up and found himself sleeping in Patchouli's lap, with her running her left hand through his spiky hair and the other was holding a book. Ziden felt something laying on top of him as he looked down and saw Aya and Okuu sleeping on his chest with blushing faces.

" Adding two more to the Harem." Patchouli said before she giggled.

" W-w-what?! No! Me and Aya are just friends!" Ziden said as one of Aya's eyes popped open.

" Oh? I couldn't tell, judging from where your left hand is." Patchouli said. Ziden instinctively clenched his hand and felt something soft and firm as well as hearing a yelp from Aya. Ziden's face turned red as he looked down and saw his hand on Aya's bottom and saw her looking at him.

" Oh my! So brazen!" Aya said. Ziden immediately pulled his hand away from her. " Hey! You didn't have to stop!" Some blood dripped from Ziden's nose at Aya.

" Um Ziden? Why is your hand on my butt?" Ziden looked and saw that he was groping Okuu and she didn't seem to mind. In fact, she didn't seem to understand what was happening.

" Yukari did this, didn't she?" Ziden said as Patchouli nodded.

Ziden sat up and pushed the duo off of him. The temple felt a powerful earthquake rip through the area as the rest of the group entered the room. They set their gazes on Ziden and Aya, mainly the latter because she was latched onto Ziden and breaking his back with the force she was applying.

They also noticed that Ziden's hands were gapped onto Aya's bottom as they glared at Yukari. " I'm going to kill you, Yukari!" Ziden yelled as Aya was giggling.

Reimu looked at the sight while thinking for a few seconds. Reimu came to realization and turned to Yukari.

" I get it! You're forcing Ziden to do this to Aya because it will help her overcome her trauma." Reimu said as Yukari clapped her hands.

" Plus! This is a good way for Aya to show her hidden affection for Ziden. After all, she did mouth rape him when he returned to Gensokyo when he was 16." Yukari said as she heard Ziden yelling at her.

Komachi and Sakuya looked at the sight and were frowning for two different reasons.

Sora looked at this sight and wondered if he ever would have to go through situations like this when he got older. The accidental kiss with Reimu and then finding out that she has crush on him is very awkward, especially when Marisa picks on them for it.

Ziden heard a door opening as he saw Zelda walking through it, wearing a white dress. She was about to say something when Ghirahim crashed through the group and nabbed Zelda, taking her into the Gates of Time with everyone giving chase.

They saw that Groose and Impa were badly beaten and were struggling to stay conscious.

They ran outside and saw Zelda surrounded by two people, Ruler 4 and Ghirahim. Ziden jumped into the spiraling abyss and waited for his comrades to join him.

" You're too late! Demise is about to be reawakened and there is nothing you can do!" Ghirahim boasted.

" Then we'll just take you both down!" Marisa declared.

" Such cockiness! You remind me of that blonde street fighter who fought alongside Ryu against me, all those years ago." Ruler 4 said. He took off his cape and took his trade mark battle stance. " I am M. Bison! Leader of the Shadoloo organization and a Ruler of Darkness!"

Ziden sensed an attack coming from above and jumped back, dodging a stab attack from Ruler 8.

Ziden looked at the man and his face turned angry. " I knew it!" Ruler 8 stared at Ziden with an emotionless face as he spoke. " Damn you! I knew you were a traitor Dante!" Ziden said as everyone minus the Rulers of Darkness fell down.

Dante appeared out of nowhere and punched Ziden in the head. "That's not me you jackass!" Dante turned his attention to a man he had not seen since his death.

" Hello... brother." Ruler 8 said.

" It can't be... Vergil. You're alive." Dante said.

*Author's Note: Whew! School is almost out and I'm extremely happy about it! I should let you guys know that the Kingdom Hearts worlds are going to be shorter than the Smash Bros worlds, mainly for reasons you should know if you played the game. Also I should let you guys know that the following news only applies for 3DS owners that live in America. June 25, the biggest crossover in handheld History comes out and you should buy it if you saw the trailers. Project X Zone!, Back to the topics I wanted to talk about, I wanted to talk more Ziden. I've noticed that in most fanfics I've read, the OCs of the stories are always the ones to save the other chars when most of the time, the OC is just some regular guy or girl that gains some cool power and begins to outshine everyone else. Ziden isn't going to be like that at all. As you've seen so far, Ziden has been saved by his comrades in fights I've deemed to tough for him to fight alone and I've even killed him several times as well. I don't pick favorites in stories I write and I let everyone get there chance to shine, especially when the battles against the Org XIII get started. I also think that my writing skill in depicting fight scenes are improving. Next Time: Demon King Revived: Struggle Against The Forces of Darkness! R&R!*



## A Legend Created and Beast's Castle

**Warning: This chapter contains spoilers for Skyward Sword.  
You have been warned, beloved viewers.**

Everyone was in shock from the sudden appearance of the Rulers of Darkness and that Dante's dead brother was a part of them.

Dante and Vergil were staring each other down with their respective swords drawn. Dante with his Rebellion and Vergil with his Yamato.

" Everyone leave Vergil to me! Focus on Bison and Ghirahim!" Dante said as Ziden, Youmu and Ike walked up to him with their weapons drawn.

" You should listen to Dante, you humans are out of your league in this fight." Vergil calmly said.

*" I don't think that this guy is bluffing. I can tell that this guy means business."* Ziden thought to himself.

" Sorry Dante, but we're helping with this fight." Ike said.

" Hmph. Then allow me to get rid of you then." Vergil appeared behind Ike and sheathed his sword. Blood sprayed out from Ike's chest as he fell down to the ground, unconscious.

Ziden and Youmu looked on in shock before they recovered. " Eirin! Take Ike and get back inside the temple!" Ziden ordered as she complied and grabbed Ike.

M. Bison cracked his knuckles and surrounded himself in a purple aura. Ghirahim coated himself in a black metal and stared at Link while growling. Zelda's body began to glow with a red light as she rose up into the sky.

" Looks like a full blown battle is about to go down." Marisa said.

" Indeed. Watch out for Bison! That guy is alot stronger than he looks!" Yukari yelled.

" I can tell that this is going to be a long a day." Nitori said.

" Tch! At least I get to fight today!" Mokou declared.

" \* Sigh\* I hope my asthma doesn't act up during this fight." Patchouli said.

" Enough talking! Time for you humans and worthless Youkai to die!" Ghirahim roared. He summoned a large black broadsword and charged at Link.

### **Ghirahim Third Battle ( Skyward Sword)**

Link blocked the attack with his unbreakable shield and knocked Ghirahim back with his enhanced strength. Link jumped into the air and shot a Goddess Strike into Ghirahim's chest, blasting him back.

Link charged at Ghirahim and bashed his shield across his face and followed up with a kick to his chest. Ghirahim swung his sword at Link's neck, only for to duck under and counter with a spin attack. Link threw a bomb at Ghirahim's face and fired an arrow into it, detonating it and knocking Ghirahim skyward.

Terra jumped into the air and slashed Ghirahim across the back. She followed by clasping her hands together. " Tornado!" She summoned four whirlwinds that spun around her and combined to make a large tornado that sucked up Ghirahim and threw him higher into the air.

Link sheathed his sword and walked over to where Ghirahim was going to land. Ghirahim pointed his sword down at Link while descending at incredible speeds. " DIE!" Link sidestepped the attack and drew his sword.

" Mortal Draw!" Link slashed Ghirahim across the chest, releasing a large burst of holy energy that blasted Ghirahim into the wall.

Mokou jumped into the air and tried to grab Zelda when Vergil appeared behind her sliced off her legs and kicked her into the ground.

Bison was throwing punches at Meiling and Kaguya with the both of them dodging the attacks

very easily. Meiling slammed her fist into his face while Kaguya kicked the man in his gut.

Bison cracked a smile and started to laugh. " Is that all you got!?" Bison fired a ball of Psycho energy at the duo whom scattered to dodge the attack.

A flurry of colorful butterflies slammed into Bison and threw him into the air. A gap opened up above him and began to rain down flaming debris on Bison, trapping him between the two attacks.

Utsuho fired a concentrated beam of energy at Bison and blasts him with nuclear energy. Bison is actually harmed by the attack and sent flying towards the ground. Komachi slashes Bison across the chest and kicked him in the jaw. Komachi quickly followed up by slamming the blade of her scythe into Bison's stomach, causing him to cough up blood.

" Why you!? Double Knee Press!" Bison recovered and performed a front flip, slamming his legs into Komachi smashing her into the earth. Bison crossed his arms and descended into the earth feet first and slammed into her stomach, letting a scream of pain.

Several frozen sawblades flew towards Bison and slashed him across the chest. He turned towards Patchouli and sneered. " Psycho Crusher!" Bison jumped and spun like a drill with psycho energy wrapped around him. Patchouli, in an attempt to move out of the way, tripped over a rock and fell to her knees.

Sora jumped in front of her and blocked the attack with his keyblade, completely stopping the attack and shocking Bison before he

chuckled. " So that's one of the keyblade's abilities that ? was talking about. Looks like he is going to be as much as a problem as Ziden and that Gap user."

Meiling came out of nowhere and slammed her elbow into Bison's back, leaving wide open to Sakuya's knives and Remilia's Heart Break.

Mario and Luigi knocked Bison into the air with their uppercuts sent him flying.

Bison landed with a thud and got up with rage filled eyes. His purple aura began to spike and increase until...

" Bison!" Bison looked up and saw Ruler 2 floating down the battleground as Ziden, Yukari, Komachi and Dante were shocked by who the man was.

" No way!" Komachi said.

" Tch! Out of all the assholes we fought and took down a year ago, why did this guy have to come back!?" Dante said while blocking an attack from Vergil.

" The only person to have ever pushed me and Ziden to our limits. The Self Proclaimed King of Evil and Twilight-" Yukari drew Snow White and pointed it at Ruler 2.

" Wielder of the Triforce of Power, Ganondorf!" Ziden said as Ganondorf performed his trademark laugh..

Ghirahim got up and looked at Ganondorf with a shocked expression. His shocked expression quickly turned into a happy one when a surge of darkness came from the ground where the Sealing Spike was. The Imprisoned appeared and ate the spirit of Zelda, transforming into a new being.

He became a muscular humanoid with hair that was made of fire. demonic red eyes and cloak wrapped around his legs.

Ganondorf looked at the large demon and smiled.

" So I have been reborn. How long have I awaited to be free again." Demise looked around and sees Link. " So you are the goddess's chosen hero. How sad." Demise slammed his fist into Ghirahim's chest and transformed him into a large jagged broadsword that oddly looked like an evil version of the Master Sword, complete with the Triforce on the blade.

" If you are truly willing to fight me, then enter this portal. But know this, when I'm done killing you, your friends are next and then this pitiful world. Then I shall take my rightful place as a Ruler of Darkness!" Demise created a portal of darkness and walked through as Link and Terra chased after him.

" Youmu! Lets leave Vergil to Dante! We have to focus our efforts onto Ganondorf!" Ziden said as Youmu nodded.

Link and Terra looked around at their surrounding and was taken in by how beautiful the environment was. An infinite pool of water and a beautiful clear sky was quickly forgotten by them as they turned and saw Demise walking towards them with his sword in hand.

" I must say, you two are the bravest humans I have ever seen. How unfortunate that you two will die here." Demise walked forward and stopped in front of Link.

### **Demise Battle Phase 1 ( Skyward Sword)**

Demise slammed his sword into the ground and created a large shockwave that was rolling towards Link. Terra blocked the attack with the Quake spell, swallowing the shockwave whole and leaving Demise wide open to attack.

Link jumped over the chasm and tried to slash Demise across the chest. Demise blocked the attack with his forearm and slammed the hilt of his sword into Link's skull, stunning him.

Demise spun his sword around and slashed Link in half, only to find out that his blade went right through him. "Blink!" Terra protected Link by casting a spell on him that prevents Link from being hit by physical attacks while the spell is active.

Demise was angered by this and charged at Terra with his sword over his head. When he slammed the sword into Terra, she rolled out of the way of the attack fired a Fira spell at Demise's foot, causing him to hop up and down clutching his burning foot while blowing on it.

Link dashed up to him and slashed him across the back, drawing blood as he ducked to dodge a strong fist to the skull. Link continued to jump backwards to dodge the rapid assault of punches and the sharp blade coming towards him.

"Thundaga!" Terra summoned a large number of powerful lightning bolts that electrocuted Demise and left him wide open to a rapid stab assault by Link. The holy energy that came from the Master Sword was heavily damaging the Demon King, but being a demon, this would not be enough to kill the Demon King. Link was not aware that Blink had worn off and decided to take Demise's attack head on.

Demise slammed his fist into Link's chest, knocking all the air out of his lungs. Demise kicked him hard in the chest and sent him sliding across the floor. Demise jumped into the air and slammed his foot into Link's stomach, forcing his gag reflex to kick in.

"Link!" Terra ran over to Link, only to be grabbed by Demise and slammed head first into the water. Demise proceeded to attempt to drown the young girl as she struggled to obtain oxygen.

Link finished drinking a sparkling bottle of red potion as all of Link's pain melted away as if it never existed in the first place. Link saw

Terra being drowned by the powerhouse demon. Link fired a sword beam at Demise, forcing him to release his grip on Terra. She got up and began suck in large gasps of air, attempting to fill her empty lungs.

Demise punted Terra toward Link and charged at them, causing storm clouds to form in the sky. " I've had enough of you two worms! DIE! ALONG WITH THIS PITIFUL WORLD!" Lightning struck his sword and he shot a blade of lightning at Terra, shocking her as he brought his sword down onto her back.

Clannnnngggggg!

Link's sword blocked the attack that would have more than likely killed Terra. Terra fell into the water and casted Cura on herself, healing her wounds. But even after the healing, she was still too tired to move.

Link mimicked Demise and enhanced his blade with a lightning bolt. They began to exchange blows that caused the air to become charged with electricity. Terra watched the fight while drinking an elixir.

She regained her energy as she pointed her hand at Link. " Holy!" Several white orbs entered Link's blade and charged it with holy energy.

Demise punched Link in the gut, forcing the elf-like man to cough up blood. Demise slammed his fist into Link's jaw, forcing him to spin and fall. Demise proceeded to rapidly punch Link in the face while taunting the Chosen Hero.

" WHAT'S WRONG BOY!? WEREN'T YOU GOING TO BEAT ME AND SAVE YOUR PATHETIC WORLD!?" Demise taunted with each thunderous blow.

Another cast of the Holy spell slammed into the chest of Demise, blasting him away and freeing Link.

Link's Triforce mark began to glow with a bright golden light as Link placed the Hylian Shield on his back and gripped the Master Sword with two hands. Demise chuckled as he looked at Link walking towards him.

" Do you really think that you can beat me, Hero? How laughable! I am the Demon King, the strongest of my race! If you think that a lowly human can beat me, then you are welcome to try!" Demise charged forward, ready to deal a killing blow.

Link pointed the back of his hand at Demise, which shot out a beam of light that trapped Demise between two large Triforces. Link charged in and began to slash Demise rapidly, with each slash drawing blood and causing golden sparks to fly out. Link was relentless with his attacks as he increased the speed of his attacks.

Demise was screaming in pain as his blood sprayed onto Link. " *This is- This is- IMPOSSIBLE!* "

" It's over Demise!" Link stopped his attack and crouched down. " Triforce Slash!" Link dashed through Demise, leaving a large cut across his chest as he fell to his knees.

Demise turned to Link with a rage filled face. " This isn't... over... boy." Demise's sword disappeared into nothing as he laughed and pointed at Link. " You will pay for this! For this treachery, I shall place a curse on you and your descendants. They will never know peace for an embodiment of my evil will be born whenever they exist and will cover their homes in darkness and the blood of their friends! Your descendants will never know peace!" Demise laughed while exploding into a black mist which was quickly absorbed by the Master Sword. Link fell the ground as they were teleported out of the battleground.

Link got up and saw that the Rulers of Darkness were gone but almost everyone was unconscious but Ziden was the one that looked the worst. Ziden's left arm, most of his right leg, his right forearm and most of his chest was blasted off and was slowly regenerating.



Utsuho was crying and trying to shake Ziden awake. Link and Terra noticed that the orange device that is usually on her right arm was not there, but in Ziden's lap, severely damaged and looked exploded. Only Dante, Yukari, Sora, Reimu, Mario and Marisa were standing and looked relatively unharmed.

" What happened here?" Terra asked.

" Ganondorf happened. That bastard was throwing us around like ragdolls. If it wasn't for Reimu and Sora attacking him with holy weapons, he'd probably have killed us by now. But man, Ziden." Dante stopped when Yukari shot a cold glare at him.

" Ganondorf caused Utsuho's third leg to overload and Ziden absorbed the explosion, thinking it was a simple fiery explosion. He didn't know it was a nuclear explosion and it tore through his body. Utsuho is torn up about it and is trying her hardest to wake him up." Reimu explained.

A bright light began to shine from the Master Sword as it floated up into the sky. Sora opened a gateway to another world as Yukari gathered everyone and opened a gap.

" Link. You take of yourself, okay?" Yukari said as she entered the gap.

Link nodded his head and took Zelda up towards the temple.

Sora and Reimu looked at each other a bit before they entered the gap together.

Eirin took Ziden to the hospital room on the Zeta Dreadnought and began to treat Ziden as Patchouli and Utsuho stayed by his side the whole time. Several hours passed as Eirin worked with the high tech equipment to remove the radiation from his body.

" Thank gods. His wounds are finally regenerating and I got most of the radiation out of system." Eirin wiped the sweat from her brow.

" Then he is going to be alright then?" Patchouli asked, worried about her friend.

" He'll be fine. All he needs to do is rest and allow his wounds to heal." Eirin said, completely unaware that Ziden snuck out of the room.

" ... "

" ... "

" Unyuu? Where did Ziden go?" Utsuho began to look around the room, trying to find Ziden.

" I'll go get him." Patchouli got up with several small balls of water orbiting around her and flew off after him.

Eirin observed this and chuckled. " Young love... how adorable!"

Ike was watching the whole thing from his bed and simply sighed. " Glad I'm not in Harem. Sounds like Ziden is to be beaten up alot by his love interests." Ike thought about something else as Eirin walked over. " I just hope that the Phazon in his heart doesn't act up because of this." Ike said as Eirin overheard him.

" *Phazon? In his... heart?*" Eirin did not know what Phazon was or the horrors that it brought to many planets.

Ziden was walking down the hallway, fully clothed and mostly healed. He walked down the hallway, being wary of the fact that Patchouli and Eirin would force him to stay in bed, something he didn't want to do.

" Would have never expected that raven girl to have powers of nuclear fission, otherwise i would have teleported the explosion away. Nuclear energy always was a weakness to regenerative beings like myself." Ziden said to himself as he heard Mokou and Kaguya arguing about something.

Ziden entered the game room and that the two rivals were playing Mario Party against each other.

*" Dear god. They are playing the game that could ruin friendships and start wars, Mario Party! I'm surprised that aren't killing each other right now."* Mokou and Kaguya noticed Ziden standing in the doorway.

They pointed to the couch and a controller on the floor as Ziden was forced into a game of Mario Party 3 ( my favorite Mario Party). Ziden sat down as Kaguya forced herself into his lap and proceeded to pick their characters.

Ziden noticed that Remilia and Reisen was watching the game with the former being eager to watch the betrayal and the latter being forced to watch.

Ziden had picked Mario, Mokou had picked Yoshi, Kaguya had picked Peach and the CPU was a Hard difficulty Luigi.

They decided to play for thirty turns and on that Ice map whose name escapes me.

They were keeping up with each for the first fifteen turns with human characters each having 3 stars, but Ziden had over a hundred coins from him landing on the bank space multiple times and winning the mini-games like a champ. Ziden had in his possession a Boo bell and decided to use it when he was right next to a boo space on the final turn.

Mokou and Kaguya looked worried because they knew that Ziden about to steal one of their stars and they couldn't do anything to stop it. Of course Ziden had a more devious plan in the works.

Ziden used the Boo Bell and called Boo to his location. Ziden ends up spending 50 coins to steal Mokou's star, earning a glare from her and a kiss on the cheek from Kaguya.

Ziden ends up going to the Boo and steals Kaguya's star, causing his face to get slapped by Kaguya, but he didn't care. He was about to win this game when all of a sudden.

" What the heck? A Chance time space? Or a Bowser space? Screw it! Chance Time!" Ziden said as Kaguya sneered at him.

Ziden's happy face turned sad when Ziden was forced to exchange all of his stars with Luigi whom had none. Ziden fell down in sadness when the game declared the CPU the winner. Kaguya laughed at Ziden before she walked out of the room, looking for Eirin.

Mokou sat next to Ziden and wrapped her arm around his neck, in a pseudo friendly fashion. " So? You decided to steal my star,huh?" Mokou's hand erupted into flames. " I'm afraid I'll have to punish you for that."

" No you won't Mokou." Patchouli said while sitting down next to Ziden.

Mokou glared at her before giving Ziden a punch on the shoulder and left. Ziden noticed Patchouli sitting extremely close to him, keeping her gaze locked onto him.

It didn't take long for Ziden to find out what was going. " You're going to keep an eye on me, are you?"

" Yes. I don't want you to overexert yourself, Ziden~." Patchouli said.

" Well, I feel like wandering around so you'll have to come with me." Ziden stood up and took Patchouli with him while holding her hand.

Remilia and Reisen watched the sight until they realized that the game system was freed from the tyrants. They grabbed the Mario Kart cartridge and plugged it in.

" If I win, you have to be my servant for a week!" Remilia declared.

" If I win, you'll be my servant for the week!" Reisen said as they started the game. Little did Remilia know, Reisen was a pro at this game.

Ziden walked aimlessly through the hallways at a brisk pace, but not too fast as he didn't want to cause Patchouli's asthma acting up. Even though she was clinging to his arm like a leech, she was very comfortable.

Just like the last time, several explosions were heard coming from the library as Patchouli giggled.

" Looks like thats two times that your security has stopped Marisa. I am quite jealous." Patchouli said.

" Yeah. It is a security system I got from Master Hand." Ziden said.

" Master Hand... he's the guy that ran the tournaments that Mario and Ike competed in right?" Patchouli asked as they entered the rec room.

" Yes and he gave us this ship to help us travel through the worlds. Apparently Yukari and Master Hand knew each other and contacted us to stop the Ultima Brigade. So he told us to head to the Smashers worlds and gather up a fighting force to take those freaks down." Ziden said while sitting down. Patchouli sat next to him and rested her head on his shoulder while reading a book on Western Magic and Demons.

" Yukari seems to know a lot of powerful figures in these worlds. I always assumed that she slept all the time and caused mischief in Gensokyo every now and then." Patchouli said.

Ziden agreed to what Patchouli said as Meiling snuck up behind Ziden and grabbed him into a strong bearhug. Patchouli just watched as Meiling happily squeezed the air out of Ziden and would have more than likely have knocked him unconscious, if it wasn't for Patchouli clearing her throat.

She placed him back down and sat next to him as they both stared at him for obvious reasons.

" Ziden. If that hand of yours goes any higher than it is now, I'll use you as target practice for my water spells for a month." Patchouli threatened as Ziden placed his right hand on his lap. The left hand quickly joined his companion.

" Haahhhhahahah!" Ziden looked up and saw Dante laughing at him.  
" Damn. Not even officially a couple and she already has trained to obey!"

"..." Ziden remains silent as Patchouli smiled.

" Umm? Question Mr. Dante, but how did you get to Rogueport in the first place?" Patchouli asked.

" One of those Dimensional Cracks that Palkia creates every so often appeared in front of my shop and i was like 'why not?' and I jumped in. I saw you guys walking through the town and saw my ol' pal Ziden and thought ' why don't I drop in and say hello, Dante style!'" Dante said while smirking.

Ziden looked at with an annoyed look. " Just be grateful that Yukari didn't tear you limb from limb after you broke her heart like that." Ziden said.

" Hey. All we did was snuggle and she wanted to marry me but I kindly declined." Dante said.

" By kindly declined, you mean you ran like hell and hooked with some random floozy." Ziden said as patchouli and Meiling glared at Dante like he was the devil.

" How cruel, Dante. Breaking her heart like that." Patchouli said.

" How dare you break a woman's heart like that!?" Meiling got up and tried to punch Dante in the face but Ziden stopped her.

" You can't Meiling. Yukari already said that she'll teach him a lesson for toying with her heart like that. You're really lucky that Ran and Chen didn't murder you right there and then." Ziden said.

" Ziden, I do hope that you've never done anything like this in your life." Patchouli asked.

" Nah. Normally I break a girl's heart when she catches me eating up all of her food and accidentally breaking all of her furniture. Or blowing up her house, sell all of her underwear on Ebay, let her dog get eaten by a Russian bear or get attacked by Zangeif, that happened once. It was an odd Tuesday. I think I made an odd reference, I really do."

Patchouli and Meiling blinked at Ziden's list of things he did and made a single mental note that they both shared outloud.

" I'm gonna make sure to lock up my underwear around you." They said in unison as they all started laughing.

They were completely unaware that Flandre was hanging up on the ceiling watching the whole conversation with a child like grin on her face.

" \* Sigh\* Dealing with the Ultima Brigade a third time is definitely more than enough times to deal with these guys." Ziden said.

" Oh? This is your third time fighting them? Because it is only my second time fighting them." Yukari was standing behind Ziden as he turned around and looked into her eyes.

" Hey. Not even going to lie to you, I fought them while in the Outside World. Ran and Chen do know, but I will take any punishment form you plan on doing to them because of this." Ziden said.

"... Very well. So you guys were talking about Master Hand, right?" Yukari sat down as Ziden began to walk on a treadmill.

" Yes. We were wondering how you knew this man." Patchouli said.

" Sorry, but that's my little secret." yukari said.

A gap opened over the treadmill and she began to mess with the treadmill controls, speeding it up. " Gahhhhhhhh! Stop Yukari!" Ziden was struggling to keep up with the speeding work out machine. Yukari increased the speed to the point that Ziden couldn't keep up and fell down. The treadmill launched Ziden like a torpedo and sent him crashing into the dumbbell rack and knocked him for a loop.

Yukari proceeded to turn her attention to Dante whom was quickly trying to get away. " Oh Dante~! I have some presents for you~!" Yukari chased after Dante with her parasol in hand. Dante ran like the dickens to get away from the Gap Youkai that was chasing after him.

Ziden found himself back in the Infirmary with Utsuho hugging him and crying. Eirin was bandaging Ziden's head so that the wounds wouldn't become infected. Kaguya decided to visit him, despite the whole Mario Party fiasco.

Ziden merely sighed as he attempted to leave, only to be shadowed by Kaguya the whole time. The crew of the ship stared at the duo while gossiping as they passed by them.

" So that's Ziden new wife. She's beautiful." A female crew member said.

" I wonder if she has a sister." A man daydreamed.

" If she does, then I Sebastian Goldhelm shall claim her hand in marriage!" Sebastian said as a silver knife impaled him in the skull.

" There you are, Steven!" Sakuya was walking towards Steven with silver knives in her hands.



" Oh hey. Since you are my wife, I should introduce you to the family punching bag, Sebastian Goldhelm, a.k.a Steven." Ziden pointed to the butler named Steven.

Steven was wearing a black business suit with messy red hair and green eyes.

Steven pulled the knife out and tried to run only to see Sakuya standing in front of him with glowing red eyes.

" What did you do this time, Steven?" Ziden asked.

" This creepy butler was spying on me while I was taking a shower!" Sakuya yelled as Kaguya glared at the man.

" Kaguya, because you are my wife and therefore is able to abuse and punish Steven as you see fit, as said by the Yama. Do not feel bad for his pain, especially you readers, because this is HIS version of hell." Ziden said.

" My god. He must have committed a truly terrible crime." Kaguya said.

" Yes and the person who was the victim of his crime, hates him with the fury of a thousand suns." Ziden said while leaving Steven to be tortured by the angry Sakuya.

Ziden and Kaguya continued to wander around until they bumped into Kanako and Suwako.

Ziden shot a glare at Kanako who glared back at Ziden. They stood there completely silent before they walked past each other as Suwako waved at Ziden.

" Jeez. What was that all about?" Kaguya asked.

" I guess she's still mad about me causing her dream to be completely halted or something." Ziden said.

" When did this happen?" She asked.

" During the Galactic Council that occurs every month. She said something about wanting to upgrading her lands into a more higher tech society. We told her that unless the inhabitants of her land are willing to accept these change, only then would she be able to do it. But several people were against, namely me and Yukari, and we told her that we would not allow her go through with her goal. She told us that she didn't need our permission to industrialize Gensokyo and that she would do it anyway." Ziden paused for a second and sees Kanako following them with a scowl on her face.

" What happened?" Kaguya asked.

" Those bastards threatened to send Omega to my shrine!" Kanako yelled.

" Me and Yukari were against sending Omega after you if you did decide to go through with your plan. That machine is too destructive to be used on such a minor offense. After all, Omega is one of the few beings that can go toe-to-toe with Shinryu, the Dragon Overlord and any other Universal Powerhouses." Ziden said.

" Ziden? Have you ever fought any of these Powerhouses?" Kaguya asked.

" Yes. Shinryu and Omega are one of the stronger members, but even they could be beaten if one trained hard enough. We were unfortunate of angering Shinryu during the last journey and nearly lost our lives because of it, but I gave that scaled freak a nice scar he'll never forget!" Ziden said.

" Humph! So what!? I can't believe that they would even threaten the safety of Gensokyo just because I wanted to introduce technology to Gensokyo. At least I introduced technology to the Underground and the Youkai Mountain." Kanako seemed like she was upset.

" Whatever. Why don't you go and mope somewhere else?" Ziden said as he shoed Kanako away.

Kanako left before she felt the need to strangle the life out of Ziden. The duo made their way into the Control Room and looked at the two new worlds that popped up.

One was a space station that looked like a casino with several spaceships flying around it.

The other was a large floating city with various skyscrapers and a large golden badge with a lightning bolt on it was floating around the city.

" That space station... I've got a bad vibe coming from that thing." Ziden said as he locked onto the world that looked like a castle with a red rose underneath it.

" Aww? Are we going to that world now?" Kaguya asked.

" No. After that Ganondorf incident, we need a tad break from this. Remember, time moves differently in space, so we can rest a bit." Ziden said.

An audible growl came Kaguya's stomach as Ziden began to laugh. " Come on. Lets get you some food in that belly!"

Ziden took Kaguya to the dining room and got the kitchen ready to be used by the young chef.

" What do you want eat Kaguya?" Ziden asked.

" Hmmm. I'm craving something sweet... so how about some chocolate cake?" Kaguya answered.

" Sure thing." Ziden began to prepare the ingredients when Kaguya asked for something else when Ziden sighed. " I'll see what I can do about your predicament, Kaguya. Please go wait in the dining room until I'm finished cooking the food for you."

Kaguya went into the dining room as he thought to himself. " Jeez! *What is it with women and being jealous of other women's breast sizes? I swear, even with my long life, I will never understand how a woman's mind works.*" Ziden got to work on making the cake.

Kaguya was looking down at her ring and possibly something else as Ziden brought her the chocolate cake and drooled at the sight of the cake.

The cake was covered in a dark icing with several blocky pieces of chocolate sprinkled on it. The cake itself was flash frozen, but only to prevent the icing and chocolate pieces from melting.

Kaguya proceeded to calmly eat the cake as a dignified woman would while Ziden sat down and tapped his fingers on the desk.

" *What am I going to do? Those marines... I don't think that they are going to give up so easily. But worries me are those Logia types... we were only able to harm that Aokiji guy because his power is ice, a solid elemental power. What if we faced a Logia type that isn't solid at all?*" Kaguya finished eating as she noticed a worried look on Ziden's face.

" Ziden? Is something wrong?" Kaguya asked.

"... Yeah." Ziden stood up and opened a vortex to a large blue and white mansion. " Kaguya. Let Yukari know that I'll be heading home for some training and that I'll be back shortly."

Kaguya looked at Ziden with a worried expression on her face before she grabbed his hand and held on tight. " I'm coming with you."

Ziden was about to tell her no, but he saw the determination her eyes and knew she wouldn't back down. " Alright, but don't expect this training to be easy. I don't even know what to expect." Ziden and Kaguya entered the gap and saw that there was a large man on the roof, drinking sake from a very large gourd.

The man was very muscular and an upside down mustache, styled like a white crescent moon. The man had a black bandana and a large white jacket resting on his shoulders. He was wearing a pair of black slacks with a purple sash around his waist. There was a circular scar on his chest that looked like a burn, a BAD burn.

Ziden and Kaguya jumped onto the roof and looked at the man.

" I know why you are here, boy. You wish to learn a way to fight Logia types." The man said.

" Yeah. And she does as well." Ziden said.

" Yes. Can you please teach us a way to combat those Logia types?" Kaguya asked while kneeling before the man.

The man let out a breath of air and looks at the two before he stood up. " Very well! I shall teach you brats how to not only fight Logia types, but how to harm them as well!" The man cracked his knuckles. " Heh! Time for you two brats to learn Haki!"

*Back on the ship...*

Komachi was angrily pacing around as if she was angered by something. She was gripping her scythe tight and blood was beginning to drip down the handle.

" Stupid jerk... flirting with... other people... starting a Harem... without me! Graaaaaaaaahhhhhhhh!" Komachi was raging mad as steam bellowed out her ears and nostrils.

Jealousy was riding her like a tick on a dog's back. Komachi began to calm herself down until she saw Steven running towards her.

Her jealousy turned to rage as she tried to behead Steven with the scythe. " You're gonna pay for what you did to me!" Steven's face turned blue and he ran from the Shinigami whom was wildly swinging her scythe.

Reimu and Sora were once again sparring against each other and Marisa was covered in burns and cuts.

" Darn it, ze! I want those books!" Marisa was steaming mad, but was ignored by the two fighters.

Yukari was watching the television while Remilia is forced to give Reisen a foot massage while moon rabbit gets nice and comfortable.

Yukari relaxes and stretches, showing small hints of her chest under her heavy garbs. The girls noticed the move and ignored her display.

Yukari noticed this as well and scowled at the girls. " You're just jealous of my body!" Yukari exclaimed.

" Jealous of what? An old hag with saggy cow udders? No thanks." Remilia said while getting in between Reisen's toes.

" Yes. I'm glad I'm still young and perky! Not all old and deflated!" Reisen taunted.

Yukari looked furious as she began to fire an unholy amount of bullets at the duo whom was running and screaming while dodging the bullets.

Mario saw this and sweatdropped. " This is going to be a long trip. Mama-mia."

Luigi's cry for help hits Mario's ears as he entered Hero mode and dashed to find his brother. He entered the docking bay and saw Mokou throwing several fireballs at Luigi. Mario immediately throws his hammer at Mokou's face, smashing her nose and staining her shirt red.

" What the hell was that for!?" Mokou demanded.

" Why are you attacking my brother!?" Mario counter demands.

" Tch! I was just using him as target practice because that little cheat stole a victory from my Ziden's nose!" Mokou said.

Mario looked dumbfounded at the girl before he absorbed a fire flower and pointed his fiery hand at Mokou.

Mokou cracked her knuckles and charged at Mario, ready for a good brawl.

Mokou is later seen badly injured and wrapped in blood stained bandages, resting in the infirmary. " Stupid mushroom eating jerk."

" It's your fault for stupidly attacking the guy's brother. I mean really now." Dante said while being bandaged by Eirin.

" Shut up! I could have taken him!" Mokou yelled.

" Yep. Just like how you so called 'took care of me and Ziden.'? The only time you kicked anyone's ass was Bowser's and that's only because he called you a female Spikes." Dante said.

Mokou was about to burn the bandages off and attack the half demon, but notices Eirin glaring at her and she calmed down.

Dante was deep in thought as he stared out the window into space. "*Vergil... why were you revived and taken over by the darkness? When we fought just now, it felt like you were under 'his' control again. Does that mean that he is back too?*" Dante continued to think while staring into space.

" Hey Dante." Dante turned to look at Eirin. " Have you seen Ziden or Kaguya? I haven't seen them in a while."

Mokou tried to get up only to be stopped by Yuyuko in a nurse costume and Kirby who was wearing a stethoscope.

Dante decided to say something to anger Mokou, knowing that she wouldn't be able to do anything to stop it. " So Eirin? Do you think that Ziden and Kaguya are getting to 'know' each other better?"

Eirin smirked when she realized Dante's plan, she decided to go along with it. " Yes. After all they are married and I do remember hearing that Kaguya did want children a long time ago."

Mokou began to growl and she began to set herself on fire. Yuyuko slapped her across the face with a frying pan, knocking her out cold.

Dante began to laugh, completely losing his sad mood. Of course, at this point Dante was hungry for his two of his favorite things; Jack Daniels and Pizza!

Eirin decided to leave and search for the missing princess and idiot, only to be startled by a vortex opening in front of them. Ziden and Kaguya came through the vortex, with their clothes torn and bruises all over their faces and exposed skin.

They were both sweating and were breathing hard. Dante, of course, had to say something. " Dear god, Ziden! She must have given you quite the workout!" Dante was laughing and clapping.

" Screw. You. Dante. My. Lungs. Are. Killing. Me." Ziden fell to the ground face first and Yuyuko raced over to him and placed his head on her lap.

" Training. Was. Too. Hard. Arms. Legs. Feel. Like. Jelly." Eirin ran over and caught the princess before she fell down. Mokou had one eye open and was staring at the tired princess. She was thinking about what kind of training that they went through.

Yuyuko was petting Ziden like he was a puppy but he didn't seem to mind. In fact, Ziden seemed to like it. She was scratching the area near where the soft spot is when a memory sparked into his mind.

Ziden remembered that when he was little and was upset. Yuyuko would always scratch that spot and Ziden would feel better and calm down. This was Ziden's first memory of Yuyuko to reemerge and it showed that Yuyuko truly is his aunt... sorta. She did help to raise



him whenever she'd sneak out of the Netherworld and leave her poor gardener to frantically search for her.

Ziden now felt bad that he called her crazy and apologized, only for her to smile at him and gave him a ghost hug that took the air out of his lungs. " You remembered me~! You remembered that I'm your aunt!"

Kaguya watched this and smiled, but stopped when she saw Mokou in the bed staring at her.

Ziden was still tired but he knew that he still had people to check up on. Ziden was worried about the hell raven that was crying over him. He was concerned about Aya's newfound affection towards him. Ziden wanted to have a chat with the so-called Strongest in Gensokyo ( all Touhou fans knows that isn't true... sorta.). Ziden wanted a little chat with Marisa regarding his books.

Ziden also wanted to check up on Alice's progress on making the dolls completely animate. Ziden also wanted to see what Nitori is up to right now. Ziden also has to watch his back for Flandre as he has been told of her special little ability.

Ziden got free of the hug, only to be gapped into the teleportation room and saw Yukari and Terra waiting for them.

Ziden looked at Terra and shook his head. " Before you say anything Ziden, Terra is now joining because of her expertise in black and white magic." Yukari said.

" Fine. Everyone, pick a straw." Ziden said.

The people whom were chosen to go to this world was; Mokou, Cirno, Remilia, Flandre, Patchouli, Meiling, Aya, Dante and Ike.

Eirin knew that several people on this list were injured and was about to object to them going until Terra stepped forward. " Curaga!" A green light wrapped around everyone as they feel their wounds

close and their exhaustion melt away like it never existed in the first place.

" Alright, if you guys want to stay on the ship and explore it, feel free to do so. I know that Sanctuary isn't much compared to the ship, but hey, it works. Have fun!" The Illusionary Heroes descended to the world.

They found themselves in a dark foyer to a castle. Sora, Donald and Goofy were together again and were walking down the carpeted path. The room consisted of a large foyer that had four large grey pillar that had scratch marks on it. There were four doors in the room that were arranged across from each other. In the front of them was a staircase that led to door and diverged off to the left and right parts of the castle.

### **Waltz of the Damned ( Kingdom Hearts 2)**

" Hmm. Nice music here." Ziden said.

" Indeed. It fits for a nice castle like this." Remilia said.

Mokou was staring at Ziden, feeling like something was off about his appearance when she realized it. " Hey Ziden? What happened to your weapons?"

Ziden looked at himself and noticed that all of his weapons were gone. Ziden was panicking and searching all over the place while the trio of Sora, Donald and Goofy were talking.

" I wonder what world are we on right now." Sora asked.

" This place does look kinda spooky." Donald said while shivering.

" Gawrsh. It feels like someone we know lives here." Goofy said.

" Roarrrrrr!" A loud roar came from the western part of the of the castle, startling everyone.

" What in the world was that?!" Ziden asked.

The roar happened again and Sora instantly recognized that roar.

" That's the Beast's roar!" Sora said, happy to know that he will see an old friend.

" Bah! He calls that a roar! I have heard louder roars coming from my stomach." Cirno proudly declared.

A shadow heartless appeared on the ground entered a room with Sora, Donald, Goofy and Ziden giving chase.

When they entered the room, they noticed that it was simple room with a beautiful red carpet and nice fire place. What they noticed the most about the room was the red rose in a glass case on a table in the corner.

Donald approached the case and stared at the rose before the shadow heartless appeared in front of him, surprising him and causing him to fall back. Several Shadow Heartless appeared the group of four. Ziden summoned Hero's Strife, Sora summoned the Kingdom Key and they got ready to fight.

### **Dance of the Daring ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Ziden used Guard to block a claw swipe from a Shadow and knocked it skyward. Ziden shot streams of fire at the Shadow, blasting into dust. Sora was juggling them with the Fire spell and hit them with quick three combos, knocking them all around the room.

Donald was blasting with various spells and beating them senseless with his staff. Goofy slammed his into the back of a Shadow before throwing at a Heartless that was about to hit Donald.

Ziden sensed a Shadow was trying to slice him across his back and he bent forward, allowing the attack to pass over him harmlessly. Ziden slammed his hands on the floor and brought the heel of his

foot into the jaw of the Shadow, allowing Ziden to flip and slash the heartless across his stomach.

This fighting was going on for a few minutes before the group was starting to get tired.

" Man! These guys won't stop coming!" Sora said.

" SOMEBODY HELP US!" Donald screamed.

The door bursted open and a furry creature wearing a purple cape and greenish pants. The creature slashed through the hordes of Heartless.

Sora approached the creature. " Way to go, Beast!" Sora said before the Beast threw him against the wall.

The Beast proceeded to throw both Goofy and Donald against the wall. Ziden approached the Beast and yelled at him. " Hey buddy! What the heck is your problem!?! \* SMACK\* Oh God!" Ziden is sent flying into the wall, losing his shoes in the process and getting stuck in the wall.

The Beast picked up the Rose and admired it for a few seconds before he left. Sora got up and rubbed his arm, which was in pain from the attack from the Beast.

" Why did the Beast just attack us?" Sora asked.

" Maybe he didn't recognize us?" Goofy suggested.

" Maybe. I think we should go and figure this out." Sora said.

Little did they know that a dark force was watching over them.

Ruler 3 was outside the castle, looking down on the group that outside the castle, looking around the courtyard.

" Too bad that the young vampire hunting girl isn't here, I'd love to take vengeance on her for killing me all those years ago." The full moon was behind the man and illuminated the aura around the man.

Another presence was wondering around the castle, holding a large blood red scythe and talking to herself. " \*giggling\* I can sense that my love is here in this castle. Ziden Icrim, you shall be mine!" The woman had brown hair, styled into two pigtails. She wore an unbuttoned red blouse and a black skirt with skulls on them. Her silver eyes were glowing in the darkness.

*The heroes had saved Link's world from darkness and defeated the Demon King, Demise which in turn set up the future adventures for his descendants. After an intense training session, Ziden and Kaguya came back to the ship, stronger and with new powers under their belts, but will these new powers be enough to stop the evil beings lurking in Beast's Castle? Stay tuned to find out.*

Trivia:

1. M. Bison is from the Street Fighter series and is one of my favorite villians in video games.
2. Vergil is from the Devil May Cry series and is Dante's twin brother.
3. Do I even need to say where Ganondorf is from? I really shouldn't.
4. The man you see on top of the mansion is well known person in a certain Anime series involving pirates and there is a reason for his... condition in the story which will be revealed later.
5. The woman with the scythe is an OC, so don't try looking her up.

*Author's note: Finally! School is out and I am graduating in just a few days! No more having to wake up 5:00 in the morning and go to bed early! It also means that I can pump out this story faster. And yes, I do realize that Ziden sounds like a really overpowered OC, but don't forget that even with every power in the world, a person can be*

*beaten even by a weaker opponent. Gensokyo Analysis will come back next chapter. I would love some more reviews for this story. The one's I have been getting so far are positive and I'd like some more as well.*

# Of Puppets and Knights

## Waltz of the Damned ( Kingdom Hearts II)

Sora, Donald and Goofy were trying to get the young hero unstuck from the wall, but were having difficulty.

" Jeez. I don't think we can get him out." Goofy said.

" Hey? Where did everyone else go?" Sora asked.

" Maybe they went outside?" Donald suggested.

" Then lets go get them. We could use their help." Sora said.

" Wait! Don't leave me here!" Ziden said, flailing his legs.

" Wow Ziden. That is a good new look for you." The trio turned around to see Mokou leaning against the wall.

" What the hell? Mokou!? Were you there the whole time?!" Ziden yelled.

" No. I came in around the time when the trio of idiots were trying to pull you out of the wall." Mokou said.

Mokou walked over to Ziden and pulled hard on his legs. She pulled with enough force to dislodge Ziden from the wall and throw him into the table that the rose was on.

Ziden ended up breaking the table and landed on his neck, with yellow stars and birds flying around his head.

" Ow." Ziden uttered as he tried to get up.

Sora helped Ziden to his feet and stopped him from falling on his face.

Ziden regained his senses and glared at Mokou. " Not my fault that you're so light." Mokou said while walking outside.

Ziden saw a treasure chest and opened it to obtain a map of the castle. Ziden could tell that the world wanted him to use the keyblade in order to get a better feel for it. Ziden wasn't complaining.

" Ziden. We should take a look around and find out what's wrong with the Beast." Sora suggested.

They left the room and regrouped with the others.

Sora explained what happened to them while everyone else was looking at the courtyard. He also explained that the Heartless are infesting this castle.

" Great. I guess we are going to be doing alot of fighting today." Reimu sighed.

Cirno puffed up her chest and laughed heartily. " I'm not afraid of these ' Heartmore' creatures! I'll beat them all up because I'm the strongest!"

Ziden looked at the ice fairy and chuckled. " And I believe you could do it, Cirno." Ziden said.

" Yeah. And more than likely get her Fairy butt kicked, ze~!" Marisa taunted.

For some reason, Kirby went to Cirno's defense and blew a strong puff of air into Marisa's face, knocking off the broom and onto the floor..

Aya immediately took a picture of the puffball defending Cirno from the kleptomaniac on a broom.

" Mama mia! Are you guys always like this?" Mario asked.

" Yep. It's never a boring day when we're involved." Aya said.



" Well, most of us anyway. I don't know what those two do for fun."  
Reimu pointed to Patchouli and Meiling.

Dante knew that they were about to defend themselves and immediately said. " I'm pretty sure reading books and gate keeping don't count as fun."

" They could." They both said in unison.

Ziden only sighed before he walked up the stairs to the east wing of the castle.

" Hey! Don't just leave Ziden! Wait for us!" Aya flew up to Ziden and walked next to him.

" You think I'd get used to this kind of behavior from Ziden and Yukari, but I didn't." Ike said.

" You'll get used to it, Mister Ike." Terra said.

" Hyack! It feels different adventuring with other people!" Goofy said.

" It does, but it also means that we have to be extra careful about the Heartless." Donald said.

" And the Nobodies." Sora added.

" Come on guys. I'm tired of waiting around." Ike said.

" Right!" Everyone made their way into the East Wing and found themselves fighting several Soldiers and two Large Body heartless.

Ziden summoned his keyblade and slashed a Soldier into the air, and blasted him with Thunder magic. Ziden followed up with an aerial combo and eradicated the Heartless into Munny. Mokou and Meiling were attacking one of the Large Body's. Meiling distracted the Large Body by rapidly striking the Heartless in the stomach.

Mokou slammed her burning fist into the Heartless' back and knocked it into the air. Aya fired several wind blades at the Large Body, slicing it apart.

Remilia and Flandre were attacking the other Large Body in unison and using their brute strength to overpower the fat creature. Patchouli was firing several laser beams at the remaining Soldiers, finishing them off.

Ziden sensed something running towards an unaware Flandre and ran over to her. Ziden used Guard to deflect a new Heartless' attack.

The heartless was a small blue dog, with a large head and a toothy maw to match. Its swirly yellow eyes and crooked tail, as well as the red collar around its neck.

" What kind of Heartless is this?" Ziden asked. The dog was bouncing around and acting extremely playful, causing the girls to awe at the cute... ish Heartless.

" Rabid Dog." Sora said.

" That's the name of the Heartless? It doesn't look rabid to me." Marisa said.

Several more Rabid Dogs appeared and surrounded Ziden and Flandre while still acting playful.

" Awww! Can I keep one, sis?" Flandre asked.

" No! Besides, cleaning up after animals is a tedious task and I don't any animals mauling my maids." Remilia said.

Flandre pouted and turned to Ziden, using her natural cuteness to try win over Ziden.

" Can I get a puppy, Ziden?" Flandre asked.

" Sure." Ziden said as Flandre celebrated.

" Hey! I told her no! She doesn't under your roof, so she isn't getting a puppy and that's final!" Remilia declared.

" Then I'll live with Ziden! Is that okay with you?" Flandre asked while jumping onto Ziden's back.

" Sure, as long as you don't bug me while I'm napping, I'm fine." Ziden said.

" Uh guys?" Dante pointed to the Heartless that were firing sound waves at Ziden and Flandre. Ziden jumped into the air and dodged the attack.

Dante slammed his blade down on one of the Rabid Dogs and tore it in half. No blood because Heartless don't have blood, only that little pink heart that comes out the Emblem Heartless when they 'die'. " Hah! If I had my shotgun, I could have made him go the way of Old Yeller!" Dante laughed at his joke as a Rabid Dog came up and chomped down on his leg.

Mokou blasted both the Heartless and Dante's leg with fire, igniting them both as they both ran around trying to put out the fire. Cirno was firing ice cubes at the Rabid Dog that was to bite Kirby on the back. Kirby inhaled the frozen mutt and became Ice Kirby.

Mario ducked a pounce attack from a Rabid Dog and Super Jump Punched the Heartless on its underbelly, raining down coins on the battleground.

Luigi ran towards Reimu and Marisa and hid behind them as the trio of Rabid Dogs made their way to him. Reimu threw several needle at the Heartless while Marisa blasted them with green bullets.

Flandre pointed her hand at one of the Rabid Dogs on the ground while Ziden watched her. She seemed to be gathering some form of energy to her palm. She closed her hand and the Heartless exploded into a black mist with the pink heart fluttering out.

*" So that's her power. She just blew up that Heartless just by closing her hand. Dangerous indeed. I'll have to keep my eye on her."* Ziden thought.

The last of the heartless was dealt with as they walked down the hallway with Sora and Ziden opening the Treasure Chests, scattered along the way.

Remilia started to sniff the air as if she was smelling something good. " I smell... a Maiden! And she smells delicious!" Remilia started to drool uncontrollably and Meiling grabbed her in order to stop her from attacking this maiden.

They arrived at the door and heard a voice from behind. Donald leaned against the door and listened in on what the person was saying.

Donald heard enough and prepared to charge into the door. " Somebody is in there!" Donald charged towards the door and ended up dashing through the door when someone opened the door and Donald dashed into the room and fell.

Everyone watched as a woman picked up Donald and started to hug the poor duck. She turned around and saw Sora and Goofy. " Sora! Goofy! What are you guys doing here!" Belle asked.

Ziden observed the woman's clothing, they were very common. Her brown hair was tied back with a blue bow, she wore a white shirt and a white apron and black shoes. Ziden couldn't tell if this woman was a servant or not.

Sora explained the situation to Belle and she looked saddened. " I see. I've noticed how different the Beast has acting as if late. He hasn't even talked to me in so long. He even locked up his servants and placed them in the basement." Belle said.

Ziden broke out his gaze and walked up to the woman. " Where is this basement, ma'am?" Ziden asked with little interest.

" Over in the West Wing, Mister-?"

" Ziden." Ziden said as he walked off.

" Hmm? Why'd Ziden just leave like that?" Meiling asked. Mokou felt an ominous chill in the air as she ran after Ziden.

Everyone minus the plumbers and the Keybearer and friends, felt a surge of demonic power wash over the room. Reimu turned to Sora and said. " So that's why Ziden left so suddenly! Ziden must have sensed that demonic energy!"

" But how did he sense it before us? It only just appeared. He shouldn't have been able to sense it before it even appeared." Remilia wondered.

" That doesn't matter now. We should focus on saving those servants in the West Wing." Patchouli said, reminding everyone of the mission at hand.

" Really? Because I'd thought you'd be worry about your boy-toy running head first into trouble." Dante said. Patchouli turned and glared at Dante.

" I'm starting to see why both Yukari and Ziden find you annoying, because frankly, the very sound of your voice is giving me a migraine, so be quiet and don't speak unless spoken to, got it?" Patchouli said while glaring at Dante.

Dante decided to stay quiet and walked into the hallway.

Aya noticed that Meiling was also glaring at Dante and wondered why. Of course, she was more worried about that presence that Ziden went after.

Aya ran after everyone else as they made their way to the West Wing. Sora, Donald and Goofy left after opening a treasure chest in

Belle's Room and telling her that they would save the servants and return the Beast back to normal.

As they left, Belle thought to herself. *" It seems that the keyblade wielder has made some very interesting friends and it seems he grown attached to one of them as well."*

Ziden made his way to the door leading to the courtyard as he felt a familiar weight on his back and sees that his weapons have returned and at the perfect moment too. Ziden opened a vortex next to him as Sakuya walked through it.

Sakuya had several silver knives in her hands as she looked over to Ziden.

" It's him, isn't it?" Ziden nodded at his student's question.

" Yep. No doubt he wants revenge against us." Ziden said as the door opened. They entered the courtyard and saw two people fighting. One was Ruler 3 and the other was a woman that Ziden hated with a passion.

The woman was bleeding in several places but it didn't seem to bother her at all.

" About time you two got here, Ziden Icrim and Silvia Icrim." Ruler 3 said.

The woman turned and saw Ziden and her eyes transformed into pink hearts. " Ziden! My love!"

Sakuya looked at Ziden, whom had a disgusted expression on his face. " Master Ziden? Do you know this woman?"

" Yes. This is Angel, the third Strongest Female member of the Ultima Brigade and she's in love with me." Ziden noticed the look on Sakuya's face. " The bad kind of love, Sakuya. She wants me all to

herself and is willing to kill any female that shows affection to me that isn't family."

" Who is that girl, Ziden? Are you cheating on me?! Don't worry. After I chop off her head and limbs, we'll be together forever." Angel said while swinging her blood red scythe.

Ziden rolled his eyes and fired a volley of fire dragons at Angel, slamming her into the wall as she screamed in pain.

" Don't worry about her. She won't die no matter what we do." Ziden said.

" What about your Immortal Reaver and Cleaver techniques?" Sakuya asked.

" Wouldn't work. She's not Immortal, she's Undying. Cursed beings rejected by Death." Ziden said as Sakuya swallowed hard.

" Not only do we have to deal that psycho, but we got fang face to deal with as well." Ziden pointed to Ruler 3.

" Don't worry! I'm not here to fight you two personally. I have a servant here that will teach you a lesson!" Ruler 3 disappeared into a mass of bats and flew into the distance.

" Servant? Is he talking about 'you-know-who'?" Ziden asked as Sakuya shook her head.

" I doubt it. Something tells me differently." Sakuya said.

Ziden turned and saw Mokou walking towards them with a strange expression on her face and her movements seemed erratic.

" Hey Mokou? Is something wrong?" Ziden walked towards Mokou.

" Stop! Don't come any closer!" Mokou yelled.

Ziden noticed something was up and his eyes turned silver. Ziden's vision changed to an X-ray like mode and saw several white lines attached to Mokou's limbs. Ziden threw his sword at the lines and sliced through them, freeing Mokou.

Ziden noticed a mass of darkness forming in the courtyard. Ziden ran outside and saw it form a large wooden head with four, skinny wooden arms coming out of the head.

Sakuya was shocked by the sudden appearance of the wooden creature and then ducked down to avoid being decapitated by Angel. Sakuya spun around and threw several silver knives into Angel's throat and chest, causing the silver in the knives to burn the Undying girl's throat and chest.

" Master Ziden! I shall deal with the Undying girl while you deal with... whatever that creature is." Sakuya said.

" Alright! Aim for her Heart and Brain! They're the weak points of an Undying, but remember, she can't be killed! Focus on knocking her unconscious!" Ziden said.

The wooden creature started to laugh. " I am the Puppet Master and soon, all of you shall be my puppets!"

Ziden unsheathed Crimson Edge and Murakamo and assumed a battle stance. Ziden placed Crimson Edge on his right shoulder and held Ama-no-Murakamo behind him, wielding it in a reverse grip.

Mokou regathered her senses and ran outside to see several Dusk Nobodies surrounding Sakuya. " Glad I didn't miss the party!" Mokou formed her fiery wings and flew towards Sakuya with fire forming on her palms.

Sora and the others were not having having an easy time getting into the basement. A wardrobe with a woman's face was sleeping in front of the door to the basement and she would get angry whenever they tried to move her.



Remilia was getting very impatient and decided to do something drastic.

" Screw this! Flandre, break that cabinet!" Remilia ordered.

" Hold on! I think I can do this if I give it one more try!" Sora said.

" Nope. I've got this!" Dante walked over to the Wardrobe and kicked it over.

"..."

"..."

" I can't believe that worked." Patchouli said.

The wardrobe seemed upset about being knocked over but was quickly ignored as they entered the Undercroft and saw a large door with two statues on them. Donald walked up to the door and placed his ear against the door and heard voices behind it.

Donald didn't notice the statues on the door coming to life and was caught off guard when the statues' arms tried to crush him.

The statues gained color as Patchouli pulled out the Monster/Demon Bestiary and pointed it at the Heartless.

" Enemy Scanned. This Emblem Heartless is known as the Thresholder and Possesser. The Thresholder looks like a muscular, black skinned demon with a thin, jagged mouth and a spherical head and traditional yellow eyes. One of their arms was built into the door and their hidden arms are clenching the lock to the door. Capable of stretching its arms and attacking from across large distances. Recommended Hunting Level: C." Patchouli closed the book and hid the book away in her pajamas.

" Looks like we've got a Heartless to deal with!" Reimu said.

" Then we just have to beat it!" Ike said.

## **Dance to the Death ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Sora saw the lock and locked onto it. Aya's sharp eyes also noticed that darkness was pouring out of it. Aya smirked and shot several wind blades at the lock.

Thresholder responded by trying to punch the Tengu, but only hit air. The Heartless looked up and saw Aya flying. He roared in anger, summoning a new type of Heartless.

These purple, oval shaped bat had hooks attached to their tails. " Oh! Oh! Hook Bats!" Flandre happily said.

The Hook Bats charged at the group and began firing ultrasonic waves at the girls. Dante rolled under one of the sound waves and opened fire one of the Hook Bats with Ebony and Ivory. Due to how weak Ebony and Ivory were, it took alot of shots to put down the Heartless.

Sora and Meiling rushed at the Thresholder, taking aim at the lock. Thresholder slammed his arms into the ground in an attempt to hit the duo, only for Meiling to jump on the arm and run up it. She reached the left Heartless and kicked it hard on the head, stunning it.

Sora threw the keyblade at the right Heartless as it slammed into his chest and stunned him as well. Sora began to rapidly attack the lock with the Keyblade, almost breaking it before the Heartless grabbed both Meiling and Sora and threw to the upper entrance of the Undercroft. Sora used Aerial Recovery to stop in midair, but Meiling slammed into a suit of armor and was trapped under the collapsed suit of armor.

Remilia and Flandre were dealing with the Hook Bats and were being swarmed. Remilia was forced to use a spellcard in order to deal with them. " Scarlet Sign: Red the Nightless Castle!"

A large burst of burning red energy erupted from Remilia's body and began to incinerate the Heartless into Drive Orbs and Munny, which

Reimu quickly picked up.

Patchouli also pulled out a spellcard and focused it at the Threshold. "Earth Water Sign:Noachian Deluge!" Several water bullets began to fly towards the Heartless Duo and almost instantly they were blasted with a barrage of water.

Sora saw an opening and pointed his Keyblade at the lock and unlocked it, releasing the Possesser Heartless which looked a puff of black mist with yellow eyes.

Ike saw the Heartless and slashed it in half. The Possesser Heartless faded away and went elsewhere. "Good. Now we can save those servants."

"Yeah. I mean, what else can go wrong today." Aya said, uttering the infamous sentence that always makes more problems appear.

Several Gargoyles came to life and began to hop towards the group. More Hook Bats and 4 Large Bodies appeared behind the group, trapping them in a pincer attack.

Everyone turned slowly towards Aya and glared at her, as she shrank under their glare. "Sorry about that." Aya quickly apologized.

"Wait. Aya! Get over to Ziden's location quickly! I smell some powerful foes in the courtyard! Take Meiling with you and help him and Sakuya out!" Remilia ordered as Aya grabbed Meiling whom was protesting to leaving her Mistress with this Heartless horde, and flew towards where Ziden was.

Ziden looked at the Puppet Master with a steel gaze and noticed the 4 Iron Maidens which were all located near his hands.

Ziden noticed that Sakuya and Mokou were having an easy time against their opponents and Ziden was just staring down the Puppet Master while circling the demon.

" Tch! It's time to take you down puppet freak!" Ziden declared as the Puppet Master laughed.

### **Into the Dark Night ( Castlevania: Dawn of Sorrow)**

Ziden charged at the demon and slashed it across the cheek, drawing blood. A barrage of red bullets came from the Puppet Master's mouth which caught Ziden off-guard. Ziden created a shield of ice to protect him from the bullets.

Ziden rolled to the side and ran behind the Puppet Master. Ziden jumped into the sky and dive-bombed the demon, leaving a large icy cut across his face.

" Time to show you why I am called the Puppet Master!" The Puppet Master said as several wooden child sized puppets appeared around the Puppet Master.

Ziden noticed that some of the puppet had long noses and had green shoes while the others had had knives in their hands.

" Lightning Dolls and Killer Dolls as well. Should have seen this coming!" Ziden said.

Ziden rolled and dodged the barrage of lightning bolts with some of the bolts nicking his legs every so often. Ziden found it hard to find an opening between the waves of attacks and was forced onto the defensive.

Ziden's defenses were being assaulted by the wooden puppet, completely unaware that the Puppet Master was placing a wooden puppet that was wearing Ziden's jacket into an opened iron maiden.

" Now die!" The Puppet Master placed the doll inside the iron maiden as it suddenly appeared where Ziden was. A loud, blood-curdling scream came from the Iron Maiden as Mokou glanced and saw one of the Iron Maidens shaking violently. Mokou threw a fireball at the Iron Maiden, freeing Ziden from the spiky cage.

Ziden's body was riddled with holes from the spikes and he looked at the Puppet master with a look of anger. " So he can make people switch places with his puppets. I'm gonna have to get more aggressive!"

Ziden appeared underneath the Puppet Master and began to spin. " Blazing Sword Secret Technique: Blazing Tornado!" Ziden created a powerful tornado of fire that slammed into the jaw of the Puppet Master and began to burn and cut the large demon.

The tornado was also sucking in the mass of puppets as well. Ziden saw several gold coins fly out of the twister and knew that the dolls were getting destroyed in whirlwind inferno.

" Good! Now I can- WHOA!" Ziden dodged some knives and lightning bolts and flipped back towards where Sakuya was and they stood back-to-back.

" Having fun over there, Master?" Sakuya said sarcastically.

" Nope. Are you having fun against that psycho?" Ziden asked.

" Not really. This woman is a pain to deal with." Sakuya looked over to woman being surrounded by Dusks and Samurais. Mokou was throwing punches and kicks at Angel whom was desperately blocking the attacks while the nobodies were trying their hardest to hit Mokou, but she dodging and attacking at the same time.

" Wanna Switch?" Ziden asked.

" Sure. Have fun with your crazy girlfriend." Sakuya said.

" Alright. 1. 2. 3. Switch!" Ziden and Sakuya switched opponents. Ziden ran towards Angel and Sakuya ran towards the Puppet Master.

Sakuya began to throw a large amount of knives at the Puppet Master while grazing the lightning bolts. She kept a careful eye on the hands of the Puppet Master as she saw what happened to Ziden.

She also knew that if she were be sent into those Iron Maidens, she would more that than likely die from the blood loss and shock.

" Misdirection!" Sakuya threw several of her knives against the floor and they bounced off it, gaining momentum and slammed into the eye of the Puppet Master, causing him to roar in pain.

" How dare you!?" Puppet Master summoned a wooden puppet that was wearing a Maid uniform.

" No you don't! Magic Star Sword!" Sakuya threw several time accelerated knives the doll, destroying it and saving herself from a spiky coffin.

" You forgot about the other one, girl!" Puppet Master had another Sakuya puppet and it was right next to the Iron Maiden.

" Colorful Rain!" A myriad of colorful spike shaped bullets destroyed the doll and destroyed the Puppet Master's hand as well. Sakuya turned around and saw a familiar face running towards her.

" Meiling!" Sakuya was happy to see her co-worker coming to her aid.

" Don't worry! We can take this freak together!" Meiling cracked her knuckles.

Sakuya grabbed several of knives from off her leg and to throw them at Puppet Master. Meiling jumped into the air and landed on Puppet Master's head.

" Eat this! Yellow Quake Kick!" Meiling slammed her foot into the skull of Puppet Master causing large amounts of damage to the demon.

Sakuya pulled out a spellcard and began to glow. " Conjuring: Eternal Meek!" Sakuya began to throw a large number of knives at

lightning fast speeds as they tore through the body of the Puppet Master.

" You disgusting Youkai! DIE!" The Puppet Master threw a puppet that was wearing Meiling's clothes into an Iron Maiden as Sakuya's eyes widened.

The doll appeared where Meiling was and a scream was heard coming from the Iron Maiden. Sakuya threw a knife at the Iron Maiden, freeing Meiling from the torture device as Puppet Master began to explode into woody chunks.

Meiling's body was filled with bleeding holes but otherwise she seemed fine. She was crying a bit from the pain but she was walking like she wasn't impaled by spikes a few seconds ago.

" Meiling! Are you alright!?" Sakuya asked.

" \*sniff\* I'm fine, but it hurts!" Meiling said.

" Don't worry. We'll get you patched up in a second!" Sakuya said while giving her a High Potion. Meiling drank it and most of her wounds closed up.

Meiling was watching Ziden and Mokou's fight against Angel. " Do you think they can win?"

" I don't know. That woman had some power surrounding her. My knives were being repelled by some form of barrier surrounding her." Sakuya said.

Ziden was exchanging blows with Angel whom smiling at him. " Why are you letting these harlots corrupt you like this? You know I'm the only woman you need!" Angel said.

" Please! The minute I learn how to kill you Undying freaks, you're the first one on my list to die!" Ziden said.

" HAahahahaha! I can't wait to see that day, Ziden Icrim!" Angel said while spinning her scythe.

### **You Will Know Our Names ( Xenoblade Chronicles)**

Ziden dashed around Angel while firing sword waves at her. Angel was blocking them with her scythe and dodging them when she could. Mokou was throwing several fireballs at Angel whom was deflecting them back at Mokou.

" Hmm? I could have sworn that was something else that made her annoying to fight. What was it?" Ziden said to himself.

Ziden jumped into the air and dive bombed towards Angel with his sword pulled. Angel held her palm before Ziden slashed at it and it was then that Ziden remembered why he hated Angel.

An octagonal barrier appeared and blocked the attack without much effort. " Dammit! She has that freaking barrier!" Ziden jumped back and resumed his battle stance.

" Did you forget about my barrier, my love? Don't worry about the Absolute Terror that my barrier brings to the table, but that doesn't mean that I won't let you stab me with... 'other things'." Angel was giving a seductive look to Ziden.

" Dear gods, Ziden. Where the hell did you find this freak?" Mokou asked.

" Not my fault that I'm charming and a chick magnet." Ziden said

" Jackass." Mokou simply said.

Ziden jumped high into the air and pointed Murakamo down towards Angel. A large iceberg formed on Murakamo as Ziden began to plummet downwards. Angel formed the barrier above her head and smirked.



" Glacial Impact!" Ziden's attack slammed into the barrier and several bursts of frozen air began to spread through the 's confident smirk began to disappear as she saw cracks forming in the barrier.

Mokou ran in and performed a sliding kick to Angel's ankle that knocked her off of her feet and onto her back. Angel opened her eyes and saw Ziden's attack crashing the barrier and crushing underneath an iceberg of pain.

Ziden noticed that a sharp blade was touching his stomach and saw Angel next to him, gripping her scythe. She yanked Ziden upwards and threw him into the glacier, shattering it pieces in the process.

Ziden was crushed underneath all of the pieces of ice as Angel was charging up an attack with her scythe. " Undying Love!" Angel fired a heart-shaped beam at Ziden whom was hit directly by the attack.

"Tch!" Mokou took flight and soared towards the Undying girl.

" Die, you disgusting harlot!" Angel slashed Mokou hard across the chest horizontally as Mokou countered by blasting her in the face with a fireball.

" Oh no! Not your bee stings!" Ziden teased as Mokou looked at him with a flushed face.

" They are not bee stings! Stop talking about my chest, you perv!" Mokou yelled as Ziden chuckled.

Angel was surprised that Mokou's wounds were closing. " Tch! You're Immortal? That'll make killing you much harder." Angel said while licking the scythe clean. " Mmm. Tasty."

" Freak." Mokou said.

" How dare you try and seduce my Ziden with your disgusting body?!" Angel asked as Mokou looked offended.

" Oh? Jealous that Ziden actually loves me?" Mokou said while placing one of her into her pocket.

" Oh god. Mokou doesn't realize what fire she just started. I knew her well." Ziden said while chanting a spell.

Angel began laugh crazily while floating towards Mokou. " Loves you? That's impossible! How dare you speak such lies, you Immortal slut!" Angel angrily said as her power began to spike.

" Whoa! This is a Rated T Fanfiction! Watch that language, you jackass!" Ziden yelled only to be hushed by Angel.

" Not now, honey. Break the fourth wall after I tear this... floozy to shreds." Angel said.

Ziden finished his spell. " O Divine Stars! Devastate my foes with your brilliant colors and power! Prism Stars!" Multi colored balls of light began to slam into Angel, causing extra damage due to her weakness to light based attacks.

Angel withstood the attacks and charged at Mokou. Angel ended up slicing off Mokou's left arm, causing Mokou to cry out in pain.

Ziden saw Angel preparing to behead Mokou and knew that he wouldn't make it to her in time.

" Domination Dash!" A black blur is seen slamming into Angel and launching her into a wall. The black blur is seen floating next to Ziden giving him a high five.

" Nice one, Aya. I had a feeling you'd wait until one of us needed to be saved before you joined the fight." Ziden said.

Aya had her orange fan in hand and she looked ready to fight. Aya whipped up several gusts to keep Angel against the wall.

Ziden jumped into the air current and allow himself to be carried by them. Ziden released large streams of fire at the Undying woman as

she screamed in pain. The fire and winds combined to created an inferno that was roasting the Undying girl alive. Angel had activated her barrier and was walking through the burning storm.

" That freaking barrier, again!" Ziden yelled.

" Graahhhhh!" Angel was now charging through the fire and flames and barreled through Aya and Ziden. Angel tackled Ziden to the ground and sat down on his lap with her scythe's blade getting close to decapitating Ziden.

" You're mine now!" Angel was licking her lips as she got closer to Ziden's face.

Aya kicked the woman off of Ziden's lap and blasted her with a gust of wind. Angel got up and began swing her scythe wildly as Aya sidestepped, ducked and jumped to dodge the assault.

Angel stopped her assault and slammed her scythe into the ground, causing a tremor that knocked everyone off of their feet. Ziden recovered and shot icy blasts at Angel whom dodged the attacks.

Aya pulled out a spellcard and focused her attack onto Angel. " Whirl Sign: Maple Leaf Fan!" Aya created a powerful tornado that sucked Angel into its powerful suction. Mokou saw this as an opportunity to attack Angel as she set the twister on fire, dealing even more damage to Angel.

" Tch! Time to finish this!" Ziden jumped into the air and launched himself towards the twister while spinning like a drill. " Final Move! Infinite Star Impact!" Ziden's attack involved a series lightning fast slashes that tore through Angel. The attack finished with Ziden landing on the ground and sheathing his swords as a large number of stars exploded out of Angel as she fell out of the twister and landed in front of the castle.

Angel struggled to get up as she glared at the girls with pure hatred in her eyes. " You dirty wenches! How dare you corrupt my Ziden

with your disgusting bodies?!"

Ziden felt sick about how obsessive she was towards him. Her body was severely torn apart and her blood was pooling around her feet. Ziden saw her shuffling backwards and sensed something was behind the door and it was a familiar presence to Ziden.

A white blade pierced through the heart of Angel as she is shocked by the sudden attack. Her body is lifted up into the air and thrown into the distance by the unknown assailant.

At the same time, the other group had gotten to the East Wing with Beast in tow, only to find out that Belle was gone. They made their way back to the foyer as they heard Belle's voice coming from the ballroom. They almost charged in when they heard the sound of steel piercing flesh.

The group turned and saw someone they encountered back at Rogueport. Ike immediately charged in and jumped into the air. Ike aimed for the unknown person's skull only for the attack to be blocked. The fighters began to exchange blows with their blades causing sparks to ring out.

Ike saw that the unknown man's blade was covered in green fire which Sora recognized as the man swung his blade at Ike and knocked him into a pillar before the man walked outside.

Ziden held Crimson Edge with both hands as he stared at the man walking towards him. Aya immediately hid her wings and scowled at the man.

" It has been awhile, hasn't it 'hero'?" The man asked.

" It has been a while, hasn't it Dark Star!?" Ziden asked.

The man removed his black helmet and Ziden was visibly shocked. " You're not Dark Star! Who the hell are you?!"

The man was a blue haired man whose identity was well known by Ike. " The Black Knight. Zelguis... how are you alive?"

" Everyone! Hurry up and save Belle. We'll deal with the Black Knight while you get to saving that girl!" Ziden said.

Sora and the others ran into the ballroom and saw Belle being chased by a black ball-like heartless. They also noticed that she had the Rose that Beast needs to return to normal. Sora summoned his keyblade and assumed his stance as the heartless turned to engage them.

Ziden was staring down the Black Knight as he walked towards the group outside.

" Are you two still sore that I killed you so easily back at that port town?" The Black Knight asked.

Ziden wrapped his sword in fire and Mokou wrapped her entire body in fire. Aya had her fan out and Sakuya and Meiling were ready to fight.

" I don't care if your armor is invincible to our attacks!" Ziden declared.

" We'll just rip you out of that armor and beat your ass senseless!" Mokou said.

" You'll pay for slicing off my wings!" Aya said.

Black Knight swung his sword and charged at Ziden. Ziden swung his sword at Black Knight who countered as they had power struggle.

*Beast's Castle, the home of a once proud prince before he was transformed into a cruel beast by a vile magician when he refused her shelter. In order to return to normal, he must find true love before the last petal on the rose falls or else he will remain a beast forever.*

*After a hectic battle against the Heartless and a battle against a servant of Ruler 3, a being from Ziden and Sakuya's past, the Black Knight appears before the group, ready to fight the group of heroes. Will they be able to defeat the powerful knight or will they fall before his blade, Alondite?*

Fun Fact:

1. Angel's barrier is the same kind of barrier that the Angels in Evangelion use to defend themselves. The AT Field in this story is based off of the Super Robot Wars version... i.e if a move is strong enough, it can pierce through the barrier. Angel is a Yandere if you can't tell from her obvious obsession with Ziden. She was in love with Ike before Ziden appeared before her.
2. The Undying are beings that have been rejected by Death ( From Soul Eater) and are undead that are unable to die. Ziden has no current techniques that can allow them to be killed.
3. The Immortal Reaver and Cleaver are techs that Ziden uses to remove a person's Immortality by overloading their Life Energy. In my stories, in a person's body are two forms of energy regarding Life. Life Energy and Death Energy are at different levels depending on the person. When a person is Immortal, their Life Energy becomes like a balloon and wraps around the Death Energy, constricting it. When more Life Energy is added via the Immortal Reaver tech, the 'balloon' will burst returning the person back into a mortal.

Author's Note: Yep. I've decided to make the Kingdom Hearts worlds three chapters each. The first chapter will introduce the chars of that world, second will be alot of fighting and the third will be the boss fight. I enjoy this Idea although I have to make shorter chapters for the Kingdom Hearts worlds. Yeah. Next chap will be the fight against the Black Knight and the Heartless. R&R!

Gensokyo Analysis

Ziden:...

Flandre:...

Ziden: \*blinks\*

Flandre: Yay! I win!

Ziden: Gah! You cheated!

Flandre: No I didn't. If I wanted to cheat, I would have made your eyes go Kyuu~

Ziden: See? I knew it, you abuse your powers to win at games. Cheater.

Flandre: That cat girl said that you always cheat when you know are about to lose.

Ziden: Oh yeah! Well at least I don't have Christmas Decorations for wings.

Flandre: Oh yeah! \* Points her hand at Ziden\*

Ziden: !

Flandre: Kyuu~!

Ziden: Gahhhhh!

Remilia: \*sigh\* Idiot.

# A Dark Thorn in my Side

## Unstoppable Destiny ( Fire Emblem Radiant Dawn)

Ziden blocked an attack from the Black Knight and kicked him in the stomach with a lot of power behind it, causing the Black Knight to skid backwards. The Black Knight fired a large wave at Ziden whom simply ducked to dodge the attack.

Mokou jumped over Ziden and threw fireball after fireball at him while the Black Knight took the attacks head on and took no damage. Aya continued the assault by whipping a windstorm and focused it on the Black Knight.

Ziden slammed his foot into the ground and released a shockwave that knocked Black Knight off balance and Sakuya threw knives at his chest to knock him down.

The Black Knight got back up and slashed Ziden across his chest and slapped him with the flat of his blade. Ziden recovered from the attack and slashed the Black Knight across the chest, knocking him back but didn't harm him due to his armor's blessing.

Meiling charged in and slammed her feet into the Black Knight's chest, knocking him onto the ground. " Tch! None of our attacks are doing any form of damage!"

" That armor is a pain to deal to with." Ziden said.

" Hey Ike! Hurry up and get to work on helping us fight this guy!" Mokou yelled.

Ike got up and shook his head in order to clear out the dizziness in his head. Ike ran outside and joined his comrades.

" Hmm? You seem to be more difficult to deal, hero. Is it because you aren't blinded by rage this time?" The Black Knight asked.



" No. That wasn't the reason you beat me that day. I underestimated you that time, but this time I'm taking you seriously this time." Ziden said.

" I see. My time dealing with you lot is at an end. Son of Gawain, we shall meet in combat again one day. What is your name, hero?" The Black Knight asked.

" The name's Icrim. Ziden Icrim." Ziden said with a flourish.

" I see. I shall remember that name in the future. Send the keyblade wielder my regards as well. Tell him that Maleficent has returned." The Black Knight said while walking towards the other door in the courtyard. He snapped his fingers before he disappeared into a magic circle.

Ziden sensed a dark presence beyond the doorway as he summoned Hero's Strife and ran towards the bridge beyond the door. Everyone followed and was shocked with what they saw.

A large box like heartless on four black wheels was moving towards the group. There were 3 archer heartless on top of the bigger heartless, surrounded by a wooden guard rail. The jagged mouth of the large heartless looked like it could hold alot of hidden weapons.

" Great. At least with this guy, we can deal damage to this guy." Ziden said.

" True. But I wonder if this guy is going to be a pain to deal with." Meiling wondered.

" If he is, then I've got something that'll take care of him." Ziden was holding the Ifrit card and gripping it tightly.

The heartless was one that Roxas faced in his mysterious past, the Infernal Engine!

---

The other group was staring down the Heartless that was chasing Belle. Patchouli used the book and scanned the creature.

" Enemy Data obtained. Shadow Stalker belongs to the Pureblood class of Heartless. It has sphere shaped body with several twisted tentacles coming out of its body. Two of these tentacles have metal bands around them. The tips of the tentacles are orange. The inside of the Shadow Stalker's jagged mouth was red and its yellow eyes were surrounded by dark circles. Most notable was the two chains that were wrapped around the Heartless that had conical weights at the bottom of them. This Heartless is capable of possessing objects and disappearing at will. Recommended Hunting Level: C!"

" Looks like this is going to be fun!" Dante said while spinning Rebellion.

Remilia looked around the room and saw several things that the Shadow Stalker could possess. The pillars and the chandelier could be possessed and used as means to attack them.

" Lets-a-go!" Mario said, jumping into action.

### **Dance to the Death ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

The Shadow Stalker began to transform the room into a darker version of the once bright ballroom. The Shadow Stalker disappeared and reappeared inside the large window in the back of the room.

The Heartless fired several pillars of energy at the group as they scattered to dodge the attack. Reimu noticed a small puff of darkness making its way to the chandelier.

Reimu saw the chandelier come down into the ground and began to fire lasers in a circle. Sora dashed at the Heartless and began to attack the possessed object. The Beast also rushed in and clawed at the Heartless in an attempt to knock it outside of the object.

Sora released light into the object knocking the Heartless out of the object. The Shadow Stalker was stunned by the light.

Reimu threw several Yin Yang orbs at the heartless and Marisa fired several stars and green bullets.

Mario and Luigi threw several fireballs at the Shadow Stalker, igniting it. Terra began casting Blizzara and blasting the heartless with ice magic. Dante jumped into the air and began to slash the heartless in the face.

The Shadow Stalker disappeared into the floor. A purple void appeared under Beast as a large mouth ate him whole. He was quickly spat back out and fell to the floor. Remilia and Flandre began to fire scarlet bullets at the heartless and it seemed to be working. The Heartless roared as it wrapped itself in a dark cocoon.

" Garsh! What's doing now?" Goofy asked.

" I'm not sure." Beast said while scratching his jaw.

" I think it's evolving somehow." Patchouli said.

" Wait. If this thing is evolving, then doesn't that mean it will be stronger and much more difficult to deal with?" Reimu asked.

" Yeah. Why do I get that feeling that this thing is going to end up beating the hell out of us?" Marisa said.

" Well, then we'll just have to keep it stylish!" Dante said.

" I'll freeze this monster into submission!" Cirno said.

" Poyo! Poyo!" Kirby cheered.

The cocoon exploded open as a new form of the Shadow Stalker appeared in front of the group.

Patchouli scanned the new creature with her book. " Enemy Data Obtained. Dark Thorn is a Pureblood Heartless that evolved from the Shadow Stalker. Its large black body is wrapped in teal thorns. It has manacles on its wrists and ankles with chains on them, but only the ankles chains are connected and not broken. It has a enormous orange mane and two enormous orange horns. Each of its limbs sports three digits with each one having a long, red claw. Its red toothy maw and yellow eyes are traits that it shares with its past form. Beware! This Heartless is capable of becoming invisible and is very powerful. Recommended Hunting Level: B!"

The Dark Thorn disappeared and slapped the Beast into a pillar, knocking him unconscious.

" Oh crud! Where is he!?" Marisa was looking around the area trying to find the Heartless.

Reimu summoned several yin yang orbs and threw them randomly around the room. One of the orbs struck the invisible heartless and stunned him.

Sora ran up to the heartless and vaulted off of him and leapt into the air and grabbed the chandelier. He applied weight to the chandelier and caused it slam to the floor. He spun around on the chandelier, causing it to spin and catch the Dark Thorn and launched him towards the window and canceled his invisibility.

" There he is! I got him!" Cirno began to blast the heartless with icicles and Kirby was breathing large streams of icy winds on to the heartless.

The Dark Thorn jumped into the air and pounced onto Kirby. The Heartless grabbed Kirby and threw him at Cirno, sending them flying towards Dante who ducked to avoid them.

" Stinger!" Dante performed a dashing stab to the Heartless' chest and knocked him back some. The Dark Thorn countered by punching Dante into the air and then kicked him back down into the

earth. The Dark Thorn pointed his claws, downwards towards the young half demon and descended towards Dante.

Remilia tackled the Dark Thorn away from Dante and threw a red spear at its skull to deal damage. Patchouli summoned a fireball that flew towards the Dark Thorn, only for him to swat it away and at Luigi. Luigi ducked the fireball and sighed, thanking that the fireball didn't hit him directly.

Luigi noticed that he was smelling something burning and noticed that the seat of his pants were on fire. " Wahhhhhhhhhhh!" Luigi began frantically running around as Terra and Mario chased after him trying to put out the flames.

" Oops." Patchouli said as she watched the comedic scene. The Dark Thorn was trying to hit Remilia out of the sky, but was unable to touch the speedy vampire. The Dark Thorn then proceeded to fire out balls of darkness at Remilia as she struggled to dodge the attacks.

Patchouli summoned a pillar of water that erupted underneath the Dark Thorn and threw him into the air. Goofy threw his shield into its jaw as Donald empowered his shield with fire magic. Sora began to combo the Heartless into the air and finished with Blizzard.

The Dark Thorn grabbed Sora and threw him at one of the pillars, but Sora spun around the pillar and flew towards the Dark Thorn while doing a spin attack. The attack stunned the heartless as Remilia slammed her feet into the heartless' back, forcing it into the floor.

" I hope the others are doing alright in their fight." Sora said.

---

## **Vim and Vigor ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

The Infernal Engine was giving the group a difficult time as it continued to fire cannonballs at the group. The archers were not

helping the situation at all as they constantly fired arrows at the group.

" You know, this fight would be so much easier if a certain SOMEONE hadn't gotten stuck on a wall!" Mokou pointed back at Ziden whom was arrowed into the wall and upside down with an annoyed look on his face.

" Not my fault! The arrows caught me off guard, that's all!" Ziden said.

Mokou rolled her eyes and threw fireballs at the Heartless. Sakuya threw several knives into the Infernal Engine's mouth and at the archers on top of it. The archers dodged the attack and returned fire at the maid. Sakuya backflipped away from the attacks and threw knives at the remaining arrows, knocking them away.

Ike was trying to free Ziden from the wall and was not having an easy time. " Meiling! Can you help me out!?" Meiling ran over to Ziden and proceeded to yank him out of the wall. Unfortunately, Ziden flew from her grip and was launched headfirst towards the Infernal Engine. Ziden's head slammed into the Infernal Engine with enough force to push it back a few feet.

Ziden fell to the floor, clutching his bleeding head while rolling around on the floor. Mokou ran towards the Infernal Engine and slammed the both of her feet into the Heartless' face, damaging it some more.

Ziden got up and pointed his keyblade at the Infernal Engine. " All right, you overgrown treehouse on wheels! Time for you to become some firewood!"

Ziden charged forward and winded his arm back, only for a mallet to crush him completely.

Sakuya ran towards her completely pancaked teacher and looked confused at what she saw. Ziden was now a completely flattened

pancake that was running around as she panicked trying to figure out how to return him back to normal.

Aya quickly took a picture of Ziden in the confusion as Sakuya got a bicycle pump and placed the hose in Ziden's body... somehow. She began to pump air into Ziden's body as he began to inflate like a balloon and his body began to return to its regular form.

" Thank goodness." Sakuya takes the hose from Ziden's mouth as he rapidly deflates and flies around uncontrollably before he lands in the courtyard, deflated like a balloon.

Mokou slapped her forehead as she watched the scene play out. " Why do I even bother with that idiot?" Mokou said to herself.

Meiling had smashed the mallet to pieces with a chi infused kick and slammed her fist into the Infernal Engine, causing it to be stunned for a moment. Ike followed up with a powerful slash that took out the archers. Mokou sensed something coming from behind as Ziden held his summon card high into the sky.

Green orbs containing fire appeared around Ziden as glint appeared in the sky. A large meteor was descending towards the Infernal Engine at incredible speeds. Ifrit was riding on the back of the meteor and he punched it, setting it ablaze before it exploded against the Heartless in a massive fiery explosion that rocked the area around them.

Ziden walked away while placing his keyblade on his shoulder, ignoring the angry looks that Mokou and Ike were giving him. " What? Jealous?" Ziden asked while smirking.

Ziden didn't know that the Infernal Engine was still alive until its battering ram to knock Ziden into the castle. " That's what he gets for trying to steal the show!" Mokou proudly declared.

Mokou didn't even notice the wind blades slicing the Heartless apart as a crystal heart floated up into the sky.

Mokou noticed that the Heartless was destroyed and she glared at Aya. " She just stole our kill!" Mokou was angry as she stormed off towards the castle. Ike and Sakuya looked at each other before they sighed and said in unison. " Jeez, she acts like Ziden."

They both walked towards the castle, completely unaware of the battle taking place inside.

The Dark Thorn was giving the group a run for their money and was beating them senseless at the moment.

Marisa was tempted to use the Master Spark to blast the Heartless into nothingness, but she didn't want to hit her allies that were nearby.

Reimu proceeded to throw Yin Yang orbs at the heartless as he ran around to dodge the attacks. Remilia was slashing the heartless across the chest with her claws as Beast began to regain consciousness. He woke up and saw that Flandre was grabbing one of the pillars and yanked them free, shocking the Beast whom didn't expect a little girl to be so strong.

Everyone was shocked when Ziden crashed into the room and was flying towards the Dark Thorn headfirst. The Dark Thorn punched Ziden away as he sent flying into the wall near Reimu and Sora as he slid down it.

Ziden's eyes were now swirls and he was now struggling to get to his feet. " Great. First I get stuck to a wall, then I get flattened like a pancake, and now I get punched into a wall by some angry troll creature. I'm really starting to hate today." Ziden said.

Ziden sits down and decides to watch the fight as he observes the Ifrit card.

Patchouli decided to cast some magic as Donald and Goofy protect her from the Dark Thorn. Sora and Terra decide to use a pincer



attack. Sora charged in from behind and slammed his keyblade into the spine of the heartless while Terra slashed him across the chest.

Patchouli unleashed her spell and aimed it at the heartless. "Spread!" A large geyser of water erupted from underneath the Dark Thorn and blasted him into the air. Flandre waited until the heartless was coming back down to the earth as she prepared to swing it.

Flandre swung the pillar with all her might and shattered the pillar against the heartless, sending said Heartless flying into the window, but somehow not breaking it.

The Dark Thorn was obviously on its last legs as Remilia pulled out a spell card. "Critical: Heart Break!" She launched a red spear into the chest of the Heartless, causing a bright light to shine out into the room.

Everyone watched as the Dark Thorn began to melt away into darkness. The Beast walked towards Sora with some questions.

"Thank you, Sora. And friends. Without your help, Xaldin would have completely corrupted my mind with anger. I wonder why he wanted to?" Beast wondered.

"I think I know." Everyone turned to Reimu. "I think that Xaldin might have been trying to turn you into a Heartless."

"Yeah! Then Xaldin could have taken your Heartless and your Nobody!" Goofy added.

"Nobody?" Beast asked.

"A Nobody is created when a person with a strong will is turned into a Heartless. And those guys that Xaldin is a part of, Organization 13, they control the Nobodies." Sora explained.

"I see." The Beast said as Belle entered the room with the Rose in her hands.

" Belle! I'm so sorry for the way I treated you. Please forgive me."  
The Beast apologized.

" I forgive you, Beast." Belle said as the Beast had a smile.

The Rose began to glow and lift into the air as Sora unlocked the gateway to a new world. An orb containing a green leaf appeared in Sora's hands as he put his keyblade away.

The Beast was looking at the bright lights before he decided to talk again. " Sora. Be careful out there."

The group disappeared in a flash as a painful moan was heard coming from behind Beast and Belle. They turned and saw Dante still crushed into the ground before he was sucked into a purple gap. They both chuckled before they started to dance

The group decided to mostly disperse amongst the ship except for Mokou and Kaguya whom were sticking to Ziden's side like some kind of gluelike substance.

" Hey! Can I get some time to myself?" Ziden asked.

" No." They said in unison as they glared at each other.

" Welp, then you are going to hate when I do this." Ziden ran away from the duo at lightning fast speeds he heard them calling after them.

Ziden knew that he had lost them when he entered his ship's library. Ziden watched as the tiny white gloves began to organize the books into alphabetical order as he wandered around. He noticed Marisa holding several books closely to her chest as she noticed Ziden walking towards her.

" Before you even ask, yes. You have my permission to borrow them." Ziden saw the happy look on Marisa's face and sensed Patchouli standing behind one of bookshelves, eavesdropping on the

little conversation that Ziden and Marisa was having and she was not happy about it as speed walked over to the duo and stomped her foot onto the ground.

" \*Sigh\* I know that you are upset about this but I promise you'll love the catch about borrowing my books." Ziden said with a smirk on his face. " In return for me allowing you to borrow my books, you HAVE to return Patchouli's books in order to borrow mine." Marisa's smile vanished when she heard this.

" Oh yeah? And what if I don't?" Marisa said, gripping her mini hakkerō and pointing it at Ziden.

" I'll just take them while you are asleep. After all, Gensokyo is now right next door to my mansion. I could raid your house faster than you could sneeze." Ziden said while smiling. " I am a Master Thief, after all. I could steal something off your person before you even noticed it!"

" Yeah right!" The two magicians said in unison.

Ziden was spinning something around his finger while whistling. " Man Patchy! Does everything you wear have to be purple? I mean really now." Patchouli was confused about what Ziden was talk about until Ziden stopped spinning the object and her face turned red.

" Whoa. I am impressed Patchy! I would never expected them to that big." Ziden's nose began to bleed as Patchouli snatched the item away from Ziden.

" Pervert!" Patchouli stomped her foot onto Ziden's foot, causing him to hop up and down holding his hurt foot.

" Oh calm down, Patchy! It's not like he wasn't going to see them eventually!" Marisa teased.

" Whatever! You'd better get my books back!" Patchouli yelled.

" Fine! Ziden's books look alot better than your old rusty tomes!" Marisa said while sticking her tongue out at Patchouli.

" Rusty old- Listen here you thieving little witch! I keep all of my books in perfect condition!" Patchouli was getting angry and Ziden seemed typing something on his sleeve.

" Besides, my library is twice as large this one is anyway." Patchouli gloated.

" That's because I haven't given any of you guys access to the 2nd and 3rd floors yet." Ziden said.

Patchouli's eyes widened as she listened to what Ziden said. " 2-2-2-2nd and 3-3-3-3rd floors?!" Patchouli started to hyper ventilate before Ziden poked her side.

" Calm yourself. Here. Since you are 'technically' dating me, I'm giving you access to those levels. Ask the hands to lead you to the lift leading to the upper levels, okay?" Ziden asked.

" Yes! Thank you!" Patchouli gave Ziden a kiss before she ran off. Ziden wiped his lips as Marisa grew jealous.

" I'll give you the passcard to the upper levels once YOU either learn a Mystic Arte or obtain a summon. Right now, I'm about to get ready to get us going to the next world after I check something." Ziden disappeared from her sight as she began to quickly read the magic tomes she obtained.

Ziden appeared in the control room and saw several spaceships surrounding the Earth. " Cowardly Incurseans! Attacking the Earth while I was away!" Ziden said while laughing manically, scaring some of the crewmen on the bridge.

" So the Incurseans decided to make their move after all." Ziden leaned back and saw Eirin and Yukari approaching him. " I'm not surprised that they waited until you left the planet to attack. Although

you are drastically weaker than the Universal Powerhouses, you are still somewhat feared in this galaxy. The Incurseans are probably worried about you retaliating against them." Eirin explained.

" Yeah. As much as I want to back to the Earth, we have a more pressing matter to deal with, Organization 13 and the Ultima Brigade." Ziden said.

" That Maleficent woman and her cronies. Not to mention those Rulers of Darkness and the idiots that they tricked into coming after us." Yukari added.

" That Soul Reaper Captain made me sick to my stomach! To think that he showed no care for innocent life! I'm glad we him beat him to brink of death!" Eirin said.

" Indeed. Mayuri is... a quirky individual." Yukari said.

" I don't know how you know these... Soul Reapers, but I don't care to know either. According to what you told me about them, only three more are left, right?" Ziden asked as Yukari nodded.

" Do be careful of the Soul Reaper with the bells in his hair. That man is a true battle maniac and would give you trouble, even if you had all of your powers when you face him." Yukari warned as Ziden smiled.

" Good! I want a good challenge from these 'Soul Reapers', but it is not my soul that will be reaped. I shall be the Reaper of Eternal Flames that shall send them on return trip back to whatever trash pit they came from!" Ziden laughed a prideful laugh that would have put a certain overlord brat to shame.

" Gather up everyone! It is time for the next world!" Everyone gathered into the teleporter room.

Everyone drew their straws and the following people got picked to explore this world was: Bowser, Komachi, Alice, Meiling, Sanae,

Youmu, Yuyuko... oh my! It seems that the Fates are conspiring against Ziden's sanity.

" You've got to be kidding me." Ziden's eye was twitching.

The last two people who were picked were... glaring at each other with utter hatred. Yes. The last two people picked for this were none other than Kaguya Houraisen and Fujiwara no Mokou!

" Moon bitch!" Mokou yelled.

" Filthy commoner!" Kaguya countered.

" At least I'm not a spoiled NEET!" Mokou yelled.

" At least I have a loving husband! What do you have? Oh wait, you don't have anything!" Kaguya said while covering her mouth with her sleeve.

That was the last straw. Mokou grabbed Kaguya by her throat and tried to choke the life out of her rival's throat. Ziden decided to intervene and separated the two while giving them a murderous glare. " Mokou! Kaguya! Did you two not agree that you would not attempt to kill each other during this journey, did you not?!"

Mokou and Kaguya cowered under Ziden's gaze. It had been a long time since they last saw this gaze and they weren't happy to see it again. " Yes." They said in unison.

Everyone else noticed how quickly Ziden's attitude changed after that and smiled before he pinched the rears of two immortals before they teleported to the new world.

*Back in Gensokyo...*

Keine was fighting off several Zealots and Dusk with a sword and Chun-Li was assisting her as well. " Damn! These guys are really starting to get on my nerves!" Keine slashed a Zealot in half.

She didn't see the Shadow Zealot appearing behind as she heard the sound of flesh being pierced coming from behind her. She spun around and saw Lucci and another man with a long rectangular nose holding two swords before he ran off to fight the Zealots.

" Thank you for saving me." Keine said.

" Don't worry about it. We have bigger problems to deal with." Lucci cracked his knuckles as more Zealots appeared.

" \* Sigh\* It's times like these when I wish Mokou or Ziden were here to help. Those 2 would love to fight this many enemies." Keine said as Lucci smirked.

" So you know Ziden and that Mokou woman?" Lucci asked as Keine nodded.

" But how do you-"

" Know them? I fought the former and the latter I saw fighting a creature named Bowser. She did not like being referred to as a female Ziden." Lucci said.

" Yeah. She never did like when Ziden called her that." Keine said.

" Hey guys! Can you guys help me out over here!" Chun-Li was being swarmed by the Zealots.

" Hadouken!" A blue energy ball slammed into several Zealots. Chun-Li performed a Spinning Bird Kick to clear out the rest of them.

Chun-Li looked back as she saw a man wearing a white gi approaching her. Lucci looked at the man and stared at him. He could tell that the man was well trained and he could probably hold his own against these Zealots, after all, this man made it to the first rank and then walked away.

" About time you got here!" Chun-Li said.

*Meanwhile in the Palace of the Earth Spirits...*

A machine-like being was hidden away from sight and was observing the Nuclear Energy Plant, ready to make its move. This Machine was scanning the Nuclear Energy, ready to take it at a moment's notice.

" Soon. Even that fleshbag, Ziden Icrim, won't be able to stop me." The machine said to itself.

### *Fun Facts*

*1. Ziden's body is a mixture of your typical anime character mixed with a cartoon character, so that means you'll see plenty of slapstick and nosebleeds coming from him.*

*2. I'm revealing the purpose of the Harem to you guys. The closer Ziden gets to the other girls, the more skills he'll get from there. And he'll get a keyblade from each of them as well.*

*Author's Note: Well, this story has hit 1100 views and I'm happy about it. I'd like it if I were to get more reviews, but I digress. Thank you for reading my story and I hope you continue reading yes, over the course of this story there will be opportunities to see Ziden's super robot, Final Ronin in action. I love having giant robot fights. Ziden will also be getting brand new weapons during this adventure. Also, I don't view Ziden as a Gary Stu or Overpowered. He can get his ass kicked at any time and anywhere! Besides, I don't make hero chars overpowered, only powerful villains that CAN be beaten. Also Ziden is an extremely sadistic char but you only see that side of him when he is facing a large group of weak soldiers. Even then its more psychological terror than anything though. Anyway I hope you enjoy this story! R&R!*



# The Land of Dragons

The group looked around and found themselves in the middle of a bamboo thicket as they tried to find out where they were.

Sora noticed a large shadow on the wall that looked like an eastern dragon. "Guys do you think that was a heartless?" Sora asked.

"Probably. Shhh! Listen!" Reimu heard two people talking as one of the voices sounded familiar to Sora, Donald and Goofy.

"Wait a minute! That's Mushu's voice!" Sora said as he ran out and saw the two figures that was startled by their appearance.

One was an extremely tiny red eastern dragon and the other was a man wearing black and green Chinese armor with martial arts clothing underneath the armor.

"Hmm? Sora! Donald! Goofy!" The dragon whose name is Mushu ran up to the keyblade wielder.

"Do you know these guys Mushu?" The man asked.

"Yep! I've been kicking all kinds of bad guy butt with these guys, although I don't know who these other guys are." Mushu said.

Everyone introduced themselves as Ziden and Goofy stared at the man.

"Well my name is Mu- I mean Ping! My name is Ping!" Ping said.

"Wait a second. You're a girl, aren't you?" Goofy asked as Ping was shocked.

"Don't worry. We won't tell anyone else. Can you explain why you are dressed up like a male soldier?" Ziden asked.

Ping explained her situation to the group as they listened carefully. " I see. You are joining the army in place of your sick father? Man! Thats touching!" Ziden wiped away his manly tears.

" Yes, but this is risky, Mulan! If they find out you're a girl, you'll get executed!" Meiling exclaimed.

" What?! Why!?" Reimu asked.

" That's because women aren't allowed to join the army." Ziden answered.

" So that's why I have to disguise myself in order to join the army. I have to do this for my father." Mulan said.

" Well, I'm guessing we are going to get dragged into this battle somehow, so we might as well get enlisted." Mario said.

Ziden thinks of something and an idea pops into his head. Ziden snaps his fingers as a bright light wraps around the girls.

" There. I've disguised you guys as men so we can go ahead and enlist in this army and help out our good friend Mulan! \*sniff\* Her story has touched my heart! We must help her in her task." Ziden said.

The Home of Dragons ( Kingdom Hearts II)

" Whatever! Lets just go already!" Mokou had already started walking off as the others chased after her.

They made their way into the Imperial Camp as they see a line. Sora, Donald and Goofy go and stand in line as three men cut in front of them. One of them was really short ( his name is Yao), one was really skinny ( his name is Ling) and the other was a large bodied man ( his name is .

Chien-Po).

"Hey! You can't just cut, you jerk!" Sora exclaimed.

Yao turns around and punches Sora in the face, knocking him to the ground while the others just watched the events played out.

They watched as a fight broke between Sora and Yao as Ping approached them. " Hey guys! Knock it off!" The duo ignored Ping's words as they continued to fight. " Please!"

They stopped fighting and looked at Ping. " What? Whose side are you on? I just got punched!" Sora exclaimed.

" Want another?" Yao asked they got into a fighting stance.

" Idiots." Mokou said as she got in line.

Ziden and Kaguya sensed someone coming towards them as they got in line.

" Enough!" A loud voice boomed as they got back in line.

The captain of the army walked up to them as they observed his features. He had a muscular build and he wore Chinese armor with a red cape. His jet black hair was tied into a topknot.

He observed the soldiers as Sora noticed something bad. " Heartless!" Indeed, several Heartless appeared in the camp as Ziden observed that they looked like that weird undead girl he met during the last war.

They saw that it was wearing purple and magenta robes and they had sharp claws on their hands. It had a spherical head with a jagged mouth and glowing yellow eyes with black rings around its eyes. It had a yellow slip of paper on its head which had its heartless emblem on it.

" Hmm? I think we should call it a Nightwalker!" Yuyuko said before summoning some ghosts.

" Sure! It fits. Time for some Heartless slaying!" Ziden said while summoning Hero's Strife.

## **The Fields of Honor ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Sora ran up to a Nightwalker and slammed his keyblade into the skull of one before blasting it with a Blizzard spell to the face.

Bowser jumped into the air and drop kicked a Nightwalker into a tent. Bowser chased after it and slashed it with his claws. Bowser didn't notice the Soldier Heartless behind him and it spin kicked him into a Guardtower.

Yuyuko fired a volley of ghosts at a Nightwalker as Youmu fired a sword wave at it, dealing damage to the Heartless.

Komachi spun her scythe over her head and slashed a Soldier across the chest with a diagonal slash.

Alice summoned several of dolls which were armed with lances as they charged the Heartless. Several Soldiers and Shadows were impaled by the lance wielding dolls and they exploded into munny and magic bubbles.

Ziden dodged a claw swipe from a Shadow and a Nightwalker at the same time as he countered with a fiery spin attack. Kaguya was firing colorful bullets while using a jeweled branch as a gun. She blasted several Nightwalkers into Munny as she celebrated.

Mario and Luigi were using combo attacks to deal with heartless. Mario knocked a Soldier into the sky and Luigi slammed the Heartless into the ground with his hammer. They high-fived before they continued their assault.

Donald was surrounded by the Shadow heartless as the closed in on him. Donald used fire to surround himself with a ring of fire that knocked them into the air where Marisa was.

Marisa fired several green bullets at the airborne heartless as they exploded into Munny and Health orbs.

Ping was clumsily fighting off a Shadow Heartless and seemed to trip every so often during her attacks.

Reimu was throwing several amulets at the remaining Heartless, destroying them while she collected the Munny.

The battle was over as the group heard the Captain clapping his hands. " Not bad. It seems that some real warriors have decided to join the army this time." The captain said.

Ping walked up to the captain. " I am Ping. I am here in place of my father, Fa Zhou and-"

" You should return home." The captain said, interrupting her.

" But that would bring shame to my family!" Ping declared as the captain glared at her.

" You'd rather dishonor my troops?" The captain asked as Ping remained quiet.

" At least give the kid a chance. I can tell he has potential." Ziden said.

"..." The captain looked he was thinking. " Very well. I shall give you a chance to prove yourself. Complete this mission." The captain gave the group a Heartless extermination mission.

" Thank you, Captain-"

" Li-Shang."

" \*sigh\* We have to fight more Heartless!? Bah! This starting to get annoying!" Bowser roared.

" If it's getting annoying, I can get Yukari to send you right back to your crappy castle!" Reimu said as Bowser growled.

The group made their way into the mission area as the heartless began to appear.

" \*sigh\* Looks like we'll be doing more fighting." Alice said while summoning her dolls.

" What a pain. And it looks like a tough one spawned too." Komachi pointed to the centaur looking heartless that was standing behind the Nightwalkers.

The Heartless had a muscular upper body which was covered in Chinese armor. It was wearing a helmet with two curved silver feathers and a red cape. The helmet's opening showed every the Heartless' golden eyes. It had a long Guan Dao that had an angular gold blade, a silver handle and a red tassel near the base of the blade.

" That thing looks mean." Sora said.

" Yes. It will not be easy to take down." Terra said.

" I think we should call it, Assault Rider!" Yuyuko said.

" Fine by me, but we should come up with a strategy to deal with this thing." Reimu said.

" I don't think that will work. Ziden already charged in." Komachi pointed out.

" Wait, you idiot!" Reimu yelled.

Ziden slapped the Nightwalkers away and slammed his keyblade into the face of the Assault Rider and followed up with a kick to the face. " Time for this horse to be put down!"

Ziden tried to hit the Heartless again, but the Assault Rider blocked the attack with its spear. " Oh crap! Ziden's screwed, ze!" Marisa said.

The Heartless stabbed Ziden in the stomach and the power of the thrust launched Ziden into the rocky cliff behind the group.

Terra saw that the Heartless was now charging at the group with small explosions trailing behind him. " Everyone! Move!"

Everyone scattered to dodge the attack. The Assault Rider stabbed the ground near Luigi, causing an explosion that threw Luigi into the air. " Mama-mia! Luigi!" Mario pulled out his hammer and charged at Heartless as the others tried to stop him.

Mario slammed the hammer into the stomach of the Heartless but the Heartless was not fazed by the attack. The Assault Rider spun his spear like a fan and caught Mario in a flurry blows that sent Mario flying into the pond.

" Whoa! This thing is tough!" Meiling jumped back to dodge a spear thrust. Meiling rolled past the spear and deliver a strong punch to its stomach knocking it back a few feet.

Kirby charged forward and does a spinning kick to the Heartless' legs, causing it fall down under its weight.

Sora fired a trio of ice chunks at the down Heartless and it exploded into Munny and Drive orbs.

" All right, that was easily resolved! Lets go back before something bad happens!" Marisa shouted.

Over near the pond, two more Assault Riders spawned and everyone glared at Marisa. " Gah! Why don't you learn to keep your mouth shut, you dumb blonde!?" Bowser yelled.

" Who are you calling a dumb blonde, you overweight turtle?!"  
Marisa retorted.

Sanae just watched as the argument escalated into in a fight as she summoned some winds to separate them.

" Hmm. Maybe I should start putting the results of that training into use against these powerful foes." Kaguya said aloud as Mokou walked past her.

" Go ahead. I'll enjoy watching these things tear you apart." Mokou said with a smirk.

Kaguya watched as Mokou was tackled by one of the Assault Riders into a wall as she chuckled.

" You're trying to stab through my right shoulder." Kaguya said as the Heartless raised its spear and aimed for the right shoulder just as she said.

Kaguya sidestepped the attack and delivered a strong kick to the Heartless' stomach, knocking it into the air as Donald blasting it with Thunder and Sanae hitting the Heartless with powerful winds.

Alice locked onto the other Assault Rider as it launched Bowser and Marisa into the same cliff that Ziden is trapped in. Alice sent her dolls in and they stabbed into its body, stunning it as Sora ran towards the stunned Heartless.

" Ars Arcanum!" Sora unleashed a flurry of blows that ends with a rising spin attack and ends with a powerful vertical strike that sent the Heartless flying.

" Sora! Watch out!" Reimu yelled out as Sora was sent flying by an explosion from the other Assault Rider as she flew over and caught him. Reimu threw several amulets at the Heartless while Youmu charged in from behind and slashed the Heartless across the back with her swords.



Kirby followed up with grabbing the Heartless and punching it a few times. Kirby jumped into the air, taking the Heartless with him as he flipped in the air and slammed the Heartless head first into the ground as Kirby collected the Munny that came from its defeat.

" Hmm. That puffball is tougher than he looks." Yuyuko observed.

Ping decided to charge in and slashed a leg off before he was knocked out by the Heartless when it stabbed the spear into the ground next to him and caused an explosion that threw him near the pathway to the Imperial Camp.

Meiling saw Ping get sent flying as rage filled her heart seeing a fellow Chinese woman getting hurt like that.. Meiling focused a large amount of chi energy to her arms and jumped onto the back of the Heartless.

" Red Energy Release!" Meiling focused the full brunt of the attack on the Assault Rider's back, causing a shockwave to rip through its body, destroying the Heartless and leaving the spoils for everyone else to gather up. Meiling ran over to Ping and helped him to his feet.  
" Ping! Are you alright!?"

Ping slowly regained consciousness as the trio of wall-dwellers got out the wall after being through it by those powerful Heartless and Bowser and Marisa were still arguing as Ziden was rubbing his bleeding head.

" Man. Those Heartless were strong." Ziden was walking towards Kaguya and gave her a high five. " Not bad, kiddo. Wish I thought of using 'that' on those guys."

" Don't worry about it,, Ziden. You'll get to use it eventually." Kaguya patted Ziden on the back.

Komachi was staring at Ziden while tapping her fingers on her scythe and Ziden noticed her doing it.

The group heard someone clapping coming from behind them as they see Li-Shang walking towards them with a satisfied look on his face.

" It seems that I was wrong about you, Ping. That was brave of you to attack an enemy that strong and deal an injury to it." Li-Shang said.

" Thank you, Captain." Ping said while trying to bow.

" Tomorrow, we will heading up the mountain in order to combat the forces of Shan-Yu's army. I want all of you to rest up for tomorrow." Li-Shang said as he walked back to camp.

The Home of Dragons ( Kingdom Hearts II)

" Hey Komachi? Is there something you want to talk to me about?" Ziden asked Komachi walked over to him.

" Yes, actually. I like how you started a Harem without yours truly helping you out. You know how you suck with women." Komachi said while wrapping her arm around Ziden's neck while walking towards the camp. " Besides, I'm a matchmaking expert. I can totally help out."

" How are you a matchmaking expert? All you do is talk about death and suicide! That is the exact opposite of a matchmaking expert if you ask me!" Ziden yelled as Komachi chuckled.

" So? I'm still a woman and I can help with the girls and keep them in line, especially the two rivals." Komachi pointed back towards Kaguya and Mokou whom were glaring at each other.

"... Fine, but you'd better not slack off on this." Ziden said.

" Why would I? You are going to be paying me double your usual death rate!" Komachi said as Ziden sweatdropped.

" You know what? I think I'm fine on my own!" Ziden said.

" Too late! You already agreed to it and you didn't cross your fingers, so the contract is full effect!" Komachi disappeared from Ziden's sight as he wonders who she is able to disappear like that.

Ziden noticed that Kaguya had caught up to him and walking next to him asking him about his past adventures. Of course, Ziden began to brag about his past stories and the enemies he defeated.

" Ziden sure seems to like bragging about himself. Its pretty weird." Alice said.

" Not really. Ziden just loves to tell stories about himself and the friends he makes on those journeys. I'm pretty sure there are alot of heroes like that in the Outside World." Yuyuko said.

" I kinda want to explore the Outside World now. I wonder what kind of people live out there." Marisa wondered.

" Probably, everyday people that aren't really interesting. I do wonder about those 'superheroes' that exist in Outside World. They sound interesting." Youmu said.

" Wait. I thought that the Outside World didn't have magic or Youkai? Wasn't that the whole purpose of creating the Great Hakurei Barrier? So that Youkai could survive the rapid decline of magic?" Reimu asked.

" Well, some of the stronger Youkai have survived in the Outside World and Yukari visits it on a various occasions and she said that the amount of magic and faith in the Outside World seems to have increased since 2008. Eiki said that an event must have happened in the Outside World because she noticed that several Shrines were constructed in several places around the world." Yuyuko said.

" Hmm. Wait, didn't Ziden go off to his mother's place in the Outside World two years prior to that event?" Everyone turned to Mokou as they wondered how she knew the date of when Ziden left for the

Outside World for training. " Ziden told me that he was born on July 7, 1989. 2008 would have made him 19 which he is now."

" Wait. Ziden is still 19 now, which means that Ziden lost the ability to age at 2008!" Reimu figured out.

" My my. How deductive of you, Reimu! But do you think that Ziden losing his ability to age and the increase of faith in the Outside World are related to each other?" Yuyuko asked as they entered the camp.

" They could be." Reimu and the group listened to some of the gossip that the soldiers were having.

" Hey guys. Did you hear about those 2 weird woman that were spotted near that village at the mountain summit? They say they can control the snow and ice and that they'll kill any being that comes near them." A soldier said.

" Please! There is no such thing as a being that can control ice and snow! Be quiet and focus on your duty." The other soldier said.

The group overheard the conversation and were wondering if those weird women were Yuki-onna .

" I doubt it." Reimu said.

" Yeah. Do you think that they could be those 'Esper' creatures?" Sora asked.

" Huh?! Why would the Espers be attacking people?! That's not like them!" Terra declared as everyone remembered that Terra is half Esper and that she encountered many Espers in her journey.

" Well, we were attacked by several Espers already Terra. Do you think that they could be affected by that Clown guy that's after you?" Alice asked.

" Maybe. He has driven them berserk before, but it could the fact that their world was drowned into darkness. They could be possessed by

the darkness and its driving them towards us." Terra said.

" Bah! Bring them all on! I shall show them the true strength of the Koopa King!" Bowser bragged.

" Whatever, you overgrown reptile." Mokou said.

" I can't wait to get a Summon Card of my own! I hope I get a Wind elemental or even a Water elemental summon!" Sanae hoped.

" I want mine to blow up everything, ze!" Marisa exclaimed. They noticed that Kaguya was still listening to Ziden's story with eagerness written on her face.

*" Celsius is here and she's got a friend with her. This could be trouble for us."* Ziden spoke between the seams of his story.

*" Is she going to cause us trouble when we reach the Mountain Summit tomorrow?"* Kaguya questioned him.

*" No doubt about it. Me and her never really got along, kinda like how you and white hair get along minus the killing."* Ziden said.

*" Why don't you two get along? Did you dump her or something?"* Kaguya asked.

*" No! She's like that to mostly everyone, she is an Ice elemental. Cold and distant, but she was a big help during the war against the Ultima Brigade, last year."* Ziden said while stretching out his back.

*" Well, I'm guessing we'll just have to fight her then."* Kaguya said while Ziden shook his head.

*" As much as I'd like your help, Mokou'd be a better partner for this, after all, she can use Phoenix Fire which would be helpful against Celsius. Fire is her weakness, after all. Plus if we beat her, she may join us."* Ziden said as they got near their tent.

" Since we're disguised as men, me and can't sleep next to each other right next, can we?" Kaguya asked.

" Nope, but you'll live. We have a big day tomorrow, so get some rest." Ziden pats Kaguya on the head as he walks off.

Ziden proceeds to walk around, looking for treasure chests as he finds several around the camp. Ziden finds several potions and AP ups for himself. Ziden even found a recipe for something called a Hero's Recipe. " I wonder where I could turn this in at?"

" Oh! You found a Recipe! If you find a Moogle, they'll allow you to craft that Recipe and you'll get a strong piece of equipment to use!" Ziden turned and sees Sora, Mario and Reimu coming towards him.

" What's a Moogle?" Reimu asked.

"... I'm not exactly sure. All I know is that they sell items on worlds like these." Sora said.

" Well, what do they look like?" Mario asked.

" Well, they look like white plush dolls with a large red pom-pom on their heads. And they have purple bat wings on their backs." Sora described.

" Oh, I remember now. Moogle are those weird little creatures that say Kupo at the end of their sentences!" Ziden realized.

" Yeah! We always find them when we need them the most." Sora said.

" Helpful. We could use some more Potions and Ethers, maybe those Elixirs as well." Reimu said while looking through her full wallet.

" I severely doubt that you'll find that Currency Exchange place on this journey, Reimu." Ziden said as he sees the tip of Reimu's gohei in his face.

" Don't be so negative, Ziden. I'm sure we can find a Currency Exchange somewhere on these worlds or I'm not Super Mario!" Mario said while doing one of his trademark jumps.

" Wait, isn't your name 'Mario Mario'?" Sora asked as Mario shook his head.

" No! My name is just Mario!" Mario exclaimed as Reimu jumped in.

" Well, you and Luigi are the Mario Brothers, so your last name would have to be Mario, right?" Reimu asked.

" Yes. My last name is Mario." Mario gave up instantly when Reimu pointed out that little fact.

" \*sigh\* I can tell there are some Gates that I'm to have deal with on these worlds, but I really don't feel like dealing with them. I wouldn't mind it if I had all of my powers or the fact that I've needed to be saved in order to complete the Gate." Ziden seemed saddened by this fact until Reimu chopped him in the head with her gohei.

" Well, if you were to stop being so overconfident, then we wouldn't have to bail you out of trouble all the time." Reimu said.

" Besides Ziden, we're friends and friends help each other, so don't be so distressed about us having to help you out so much. We're in this together, remember that." Sora said while doing his signature pose.

Ziden cracked a smile after hearing that and summoned his Keyblade. The 4 protagonists raised their weapons into the air and slammed them together. " All for one and One for All!" They chanted.

Ziden felt a warmth in his chest as he walked through the camp with his allies walking with him.

Ziden walked towards the Bamboo Thicket as he spots more treasure chests. Ziden opens them and finds several materials for

crafting inside them.

Reimu ends up spotting a Moogle setting up shop nearby and runs over to it. " Hey there. Is your shop open yet?"

The Moogle nods his head. " I was wondering, do you have a Currency Exchange program?" Reimu asked.

The Moogle nods again and pulls out a suitcase, marked with a money symbol. " Place your money in here and tell me what form of currency you would like to obtain, please."

" Yen, please." Reimu placed all of the coins and Munny into the briefcase and closed it. The briefcase began to glow as light escaped from the cracks of the briefcase.

" Kupo!" The Moogle jumped into the air and landed with grace as the briefcase reopened and several stacks of Yen were inside. " Thank you for using the Moogle brand Currency Exchange Service. We hope to see you again, kupo!"

Reimu placed the Yen inside her wallet before she ran off to rejoin the others.

Sora and the others decided to head back to the camp in order to get some rest for the big mission tomorrow as Ziden decided to stay back in the Bamboo Thicket.

Ziden looked around the Bamboo Thicket as he caught a glimpse of a small, blue creature that was following them ever since they got here.

Ziden tried to approach the creature, but it ran away the minute Ziden got close to it. "... It doesn't seem like its aggressive. It just seems to be shy."

Ziden decided to walk off and headed back to camp. Ziden entered his tent and placed Murakamo and Nosada on his lap.



" Are you two ready to fight Celsius again?" Ziden asked.

" I am! I shall roast the flesh from her bones!" Nosada exclaimed.

" Master Ziden. Is there any way of ending this non-violently? I prefer not to cause harm unless it is needed." Murakamo asked.

" I doubt it. Celsius isn't exactly the type of person to talk things out. Besides, I'd doubt we'd be able to with Nosada's loudmouth with us." Ziden said.

" What was that!?" Nosada asked while letting out some heat.

" Nosada! Calm yourself! You know Ziden is right about your mouth, little brother! You need to learn to be quiet and to watch your tongue! I heard how you almost got attacked by a vampire because of your arrogance!" Murakamo was lecturing her younger brother as he noticed Komachi sleeping in his tent.

Kaguya was also outcold and was softly snoring, occasionally turning over every so often.

Ziden decided to fall asleep while Murakamo continued to berate Nosada for his behavior.

Ziden was soon forcibly woken by Kaguya when she tackled him to the ground. " Wake up already!"

" Jeez. Can't a guy get some shut-eye for a few more hours?" Ziden asked as he felt something kick him in the head.

" Wake up, you jackass!" Komachi kicked Ziden in the head again, forcing him up.

" God damn! My aching head!" Ziden got up while rubbing his head as he glared at Komachi.

" Come on, Ziden! We're late!" Ziden barely got a chance to gather his senses as he dragged along the ground by Kaguya as they ran

towards the Checkpoint.

" I'm sorry we're late Captain! Whew. Gotta catch my breath." Kaguya was exhausted and sweating, attempting to catch her breathe.

Ziden was unconscious from having his head rammed into several rocks that were scattered along the ground.

Yuyuko picked up Ziden and placed him on her back as they listened to the captain's orders.

" Alright, listen up! We are going to be heading up to a village near the summit. Our order is to intercept the Hun army! Shan-Yu has been spotted near the village and we will stop him and those monsters he has under his control! For China!" Li Shang yelled.

" For China!" The Soldiers cheered as the heroes began to climb the mountain.

Kirby stopped when he noticed the same small blue creature that Ziden spotted yesterday. Kirby tried to approach the creature before he was picked up by Yuyuko.

Kirby watched as the creature flew towards the top of the mountain, but he didn't realize that Yuyuko was watching the creature as well.

But the group was unaware of the dangers that awaited them at the top of the mountain.

*Author's Note: Yet another chapter done. I'm trying to get these chapters pumped out as fast as I can, but I am only human after all. If you couldn't tell, these chapters are going to be shorter than the other ones, but they will get longer. Especially on the next world. Keep on reading and enjoy!*

# Snowcapped Mayhem and Secrets Revealed

## The Home of Dragons ( Kingdom Hearts II)

The army began their long trek up the mountain having trouble scaling up the mountain with the cold air buffeting them. It didn't help that some of the girls were wearing clothes that were ill suited for this weather.

The Mario Bros. and Kirby seemed to not mind the cold, after all they have traversed frozen wastelands and lakes as well and have survived. Sora, Donald and Goofy didn't seem to mind the cold weather as they climbed the mountain.

Ziden was still unconscious and piggybacking off of Yuyuko which would have kept her warm if she was alive.

" Great. If I knew we were going to climbing a mountain, I would have brought a scarf or a coat." Reimu said while shivering.

" It doesn't help that our living heater is out cold right now, otherwise we'd be nice and toasty right now." Marisa said.

" Yeah. What kind of hero gets knocked by a bunch of rocks, anyway?" Reimu asked.

" Well, he is still classified as a human." Mario said.

" Plus his defensive ability is pretty low, so he could be knocked out if he gets hit on the head and he's caught off guard." Luigi added.

" Wow, that's lame." Meiling said.

" But wait, wouldn't his regeneration prevent him from being knocked unconscious?" Alice asked.

" It does, he'll probably waking up sometime soon unless he falls asleep when he reenters consciousness." Yuyuko said.

" Achhhoooo!" Everyone turned to see Bowser sneezing and blowing away several of the soldiers with his powerful sneeze.

Bowser wiped his nose and waited for someone to say something in accordance to his sneeze.

" ... "

" We're not saying it, you overgrown lizard!" Marisa yelled as Bowser roared.

" That's rude, you little brat! How about I give you a knuckle sandwich and teach you some manners!?" Bowser said while winding up his fist.

Marisa responded by pointing her mini hakkero at Bowser's face. " Why don't you make me, turtle boy?!"

" Wow. Looks like you two are becoming good friends!" Yuyuko said while clapping.

Marisa and Bowser shot a glare at each other before they continued climbing.

" Meiling! Slow down!" Kaguya yelled while trying to stop the jumping Gate Keeper from advancing too far ahead of the group.

Meiling heard Kaguya telling her to slowdown as she stopped her hasty climb. " Sorry, but I want to hurry up and get to this village so we can warm up! My legs are freezing!"

" Then wear some pants, you stupid Gate Keeper!" Mokou yelled as Meiling rubbed the back of her head.

" *I wonder if Chun-Li ever has to deal with these problems with her dress.*" Meiling thought while shifting her legs.

" \*Yawn\* I wonder when we'll get to the top? I'm feeling a nap coming on." Komachi said while carrying her scythe on her shoulders.

" Of course you do, you lazy shinigami." Reimu said as Komachi chuckled.

" Lady Yuyuko? Are you sure that you don't want me to carry Ziden?" Youmu asked as Yuyuko shook her head.

" I'm good, Youmu." Yuyuko began to float up towards the mountain path.

" Finally. I was getting tired of jumping up this mountain." Sora said.

" Man, this was a small mountain. I didn't get to break a sweat." Mario said with Luigi agreeing.

" Well, at least this mountain isn't as big as the Youkai Mountain." Marisa said while walking along the path.

" Yeah, that was a fun little adventure!" Reimu said.

" Not for me. I got beat up in that incident." Sanae said while scratching her head.

" That's why it was so fun!" Marisa said.

" Wow, I'm pretty Reimu beat everyone here that is from Gensokyo." Alice said.

" Really? That little squirt beat all of you guys? Bwahahahah! You guys must be weak, especially white hair over there." Bowser said with Mokou glaring at him.

" You want another beating, turtle boy?" Mokou said while wrapping her hands in fire.

" Mister Bowser, please stop picking fights with everyone. I personally don't want to see you get hurt again." Terra said.

" Please! I'm the King of Koopas! I took over galaxies and built a galactic empire!" Bowser bragged as nobody believed him.

" And yet you got beaten by a plumber in space and got sucked into a black hole." Komachi said.

" Wait. Bowser really did conquer galaxies?" Mokou asked as Mario nodded.

" Poyo!" Kirby hopped up and down in Yuyuko's arms.

" Yeah, and Mario beat his face in." Luigi bragged as Mario simply blinked.

" Wow, it seems that Mario is alot tougher than he looks if he can travel the Universe and beat aliens and overgrown turtles." Alice said.

" Yeah, me and Luigi have had some crazy adventures in our days. From rescuing the princess to fighting Bowser every so often, our adventures are rarely easy." Mario said.

" Bah! I could beat Mario any day I wanted to." Bowser proclaimed.

" I doubt it." Alice said.

" Yeah, right." Mokou said as well.

" Soldiers! Hurry up!" Li-Shang yelled as his soldiers sped up their pace to catch up with the other characters.

" Are we there yet? My feet are killing me!" Donald asked.

" I just thought of something, why aren't we flying?" Kaguya asked.

" Because the soldiers who we are with can't fly, so we are walking so that they can keep up with us." Mokou explained.

" At times like this, I wish we brought the carriage, I'm not used to all this walking." Kaguya said while panting.

" Pathetic. Maybe if you went outside and exercised instead of messing with those Outside World items, maybe you wouldn't be tired at this point." Mokou taunted as Kaguya glared at her.

" You know what Mokou? How about I get some exercise by kicking your sorry, commoner ass!?" Kaguya said, lighting the fuse on a possible fight.

" Oh? Is that so~? I'd like to see you try, you spoiled NEET!" Mokou spat while cracking her knuckles.

" Whoa now. Why don't we just calm down before you two do something you'll regret later, okay?" Mario said, attempting to defuse the situation.

" Shut it, Mario!" They yelled in unison while walking up the mountain path.

" Oh boy. Those two look like they're about to tear each other limb from limb. Shouldn't we stop them?" Goofy asked.

Reimu thought for a second and thought of something. " If you two decide to fight, just know that we'll have to take care of you. ALL of us." Reimu said with several Yin Yang orbs floating around her.

The two rivals turned around and saw a sight that made a chill run down their spines. Marisa had several colorful orbs spinning around her, Alice had an army of dolls surrounding her which were armed with lances and swords, Komachi was spinning her scythe, Sanae had several small twisters next to her, Youmu had her swords out and was crouching down, Yuyuko had several spirits and butterflies floating next to her, Mario and Luigi had their hammers drawn, Kirby

had an angry look on his face, Terra had her sword and was preparing to cast a spell, Ziden was still unconscious on Yuyuko's back while Bowser was laying on his side, completely uncaring of the situation.

Kaguya quickly surrendered and calmed down. Mokou scoffed and stormed off for some reason.

"Are we there yet?" Luigi asked.

Reimu saw a town off in the distance and yelled out to everyone that the town was nearby. Everyone ran into the town and found that it was abandoned.

"Where did everyone go? Shouldn't there be people here?" Reimu asked as the Soldiers settled into the empty buildings.

"Yeah. Something fishy is going on here." Komachi said while entering a large building.

The inside of the building was wooden with a hole in the middle of the room which is used as a fire pit to keep warm at night. Reimu looked through the window and saw that the sun was setting as they began sit around the lit fire.

Yuyuko placed Ziden down and began to rummage through the inside of his jacket. "Where are they? I know they should be in here somewhere. Aha~! Found them!" Yuyuko began to pull out several sleeping bags out of Ziden's jackets and began to distribute them to the group.

"How the heck did Ziden's jacket store all of these sleeping bags?" Reimu asked as Ziden turned over. A snot bubble soon formed in Ziden's nose as he began to lightly snore.

"Well, I wish he hadn't fallen asleep so he could explain this better." Yuyuko said while placing head on her lap. "Well basically, Ziden created a space within his jacket where he holds all of his other



weapons and gadgets. I believe people in the Outside World refer to it as a 'hammer space'." Yuyuko simply explained.

" Whoa. Do you think he could make a 'Hammer Space' for me? That'd make borrowing things so much more easier, ze!" Marisa said as Meiling glared at her.

" I'm confused. How exactly did Ziden create a Hammer Space for his jacket anyway?" Alice asked.

" I don't know. Ziden tried to explain it to me, but I didn't understand it all. But then a mysterious man explained it to me and I understood it! I wish that man was here now." Yuyuko said.

" You guys sure are weird." Ping said.

" I think that man was magic. With his dark skin and his deep voice that would make him sound like he'd be a good storyteller. He didn't even simplify anything either!" Yuyuko happily said.

" Wow, Lady Yuyuko. You've met some interesting people when you leave the Netherworld." Youmu said.

" Don't worry! The next time I take a trip with Yukari and Ziden to the Outside World, okay?" Yuyuko asked as Youmu nodded.

" Thank you, Lady Yuyuko." Youmu bowed before her mistress.

" \*sigh\* Sounds like we're going to fighting tomorrow. How tiresome." Komachi said while scratching her chin.

" Hey Ping? What's this Shan-Yu guy like?" Alice asked.

" Shan-Yu is a vile man whom has murdered innocents and conquered several lands. They say he has strange creatures under his command, much like those ones we faced yesterday at the Checkpoint. He is said to be very powerful and is rumored to have dark powers under his control." Ping explained.

" So this guy is controlling the Heartless, right? If thats the case, then I'll take care of him with my keyblade!" Sora said while raising his keyblade into the air.

" Yeah! Shan-Yu will know what it feels like to get his butt kicked by a bonafide Guardian Dragon!" Mushu exclaimed.

" Bwahahahah! I'll show this Shan-Yu punk how a true conquerer works!" Bowser exclaimed.

" I'm worried about those snow women that the soldiers were talking about yesterday. They could be working with Shan-Yu." Youmu said.

" They could be working for him. If they are, then that means more trouble for us." Meiling said.

" If we beat them, doesn't that mean we'll gain the ability to summon them, right?" Alice asked.

" Yeah, but if they're ice women, then they'd probably go to Cirno. I mean she is an ice fairy, after all." Sanae pointed out.

" Great, so if we beat these guys, Cirno will get two strong powerful Espers under her control. Lets just give her all the Espers, why don't cha?" Marisa said while waving her hand.

" You're just jealous that you haven't gotten one yet." Reimu said.

" All right. Remilia has one, Ziden has two, Patchouli has one, and Youmu has one as well." Reimu listed.

" Well, there are alot of Espers where I'm from and I learned that Espers exist in other worlds similiar to mine." Terra said.

" So that means, all of us should be able to get one." Reimu realized.

" But we should be careful, some of the Espers are really powerful. Don't take them lightly or they could kill you." Terra warned.

" Thanks for the warning, Terra. Although the Immortals don't really need to heed that advice." Sanae pointed over to Kaguya and Mokou whom were both asleep next to Ziden and Yuyuko.

" I can't wait to take on an Esper with my own bare hands. It feels pretty good to not be held back by the Spell Card System. I may not be that good in Danmaku, but I'm nearly unrivaled in Martial Arts prowess!" Meiling stated.

" Oh crud! Everyone's Spell Cards back in Gensokyo were sealed by that pink haired freak! What if some of the more feral Youkai attack the humans and try and wipe them out?" Reimu said, worried about the Human Village.

Yuyuko pulled a purple crystal out of Ziden's pocket and placed it on the floor. " Reimu? What's the name of that Buddhist Priestess again?"

" You mean Byakuren Hijiri?" Reimu asked.

" Connect me to Byakuren Hijiri, please." Yuyuko asked

The crystal began to glow with a purple light as a large purple screen appeared showing Byakuren praying with several Youkai and Humans surrounding her.

Byakuren looked up and saw the screen and the group behind it. " Oh my. This is a surprise." Byakuren said while getting up.

" Byakuren! We have to ask, have any Youkai attacks been reported?" Reimu asked as Byakuren chuckled.

" Reimu, there hasn't been a single Youkai attack since the old barrier fell. Actually, the humans and Youkai have teamed up and are fighting against the Ultima Brigade. Humans and Youkai have been living together in the village for a while now. And peacefully if I might add." Byakuren seemed happy about that fact.

" Has anything else happened. Is Keine and her kids alright?" Mokou asked, now awake.

" Yes. Apparently she was saved by a man named Lucci." Byakuren said.

" Wait! How did Lucci get to Gensokyo?!" Meiling asked.

" He said that a weird, dragon like being appeared before him and his friend and opened a rift in space to bring them here." Byakuren explained.

" Hmm? A dragon capable of opening up rifts in space? Wouldn't that be the legendary Pokemon, Palkia?" Sanae said to herself.

" Oh yes, Yuugi and Suika have been a major help against those cultists and those weird silver, reptilian beings the Zealots had with them." Byakuren said as Komachi sat up.

" Devastators. Those things gave us trouble in the last war. Their skin was hard as hell to pierce through and they reflect light magic as well. Even Ziden and Yukari had trouble dealing with those things, though I'm not surprised an oni took them down." Komachi said.

" Yes. What's even more weird is that we've been getting reports of weird creatures entering Gensokyo." Byakuren said as Sora approached the screen.

" Are they black creatures with yellow eyes? Or weird looking creatures with a Red and Black Heart Emblem on their body?" Sora asked.

" Some of them are those creatures that you described. The others are wandering around our graveyard, holding lanterns and butcher knives. The others ones are mysterious snake women that have been attacking Youkai and humans alike." Byakuren said as Komachi yawned.

" Those things in your graveyard are Tonberries and those snake women are Lamia. They are both powerful monsters that you shouldn't take lightly, especially the Tonberries." Komachi saidn.

" Monsters? Then they aren't Youkai yet?" Byakuren asked.

" Nope. They are still feral and therefore still classified as monsters." Komachi said.

" Huh? What's the difference between monsters and Youkai anyway?" Reimu asked.

" Monsters are usually beastlike and lack the intelligence that we Youkai have. Monsters are also more dangerous to deal with because they can rarely be reasoned with." Byakuren explained.

" I see. Well we don't want to hold you up any longer, Byakuren, so I guess we'll-"

" Hold on a sec! We heard a rumor that you were building another shrine somewhere near Ziden's house! Is it true?!" Sanae asked.

" Yes. I gained the permission of Ziden's mother to build a shrine near her home. I wish to spread the Myouren Temple's influence to the Youkai of the Outside World as well." Byakuren said.

" Yeah right! You just want to spread Buddhism to the Isle of Hope and gain all that free faith!" Sanae delared.

" I would do no such thing. And besides, didn't you ask the Tengu to construct a Shrine near Ziden house as well?" Byakuren asked as Sanae nervously chuckled.

" Wow. Talk about shady." Reimu said.

" Well I must get going. It appears that Miss Xiaomu is causing trouble with Nazrin and I must stop them before they cause property damage. \* Sigh\* It's bad enough that I have to help unseal everyone's spellcards, now that trouble making kitsune is causing

trouble with Nazrin, at least Nue isn't involved in this nonsense. Bye now and tell Ziden I said hello!" The screen disappeared from sight as Yuyuko took the purple crystal and placed it back into Ziden's pocket.

" Seems like everything is going fine in Gensokyo, minus the Heartless being there." Marisa said.

" That crystal was one of Spatial Comms Crystals, wasn't it?" Alice asked.

" Yep! Good for communicating with people over long distances!" Yuyuko exclaimed.

" Well, I guess we should get some rest for tomorrow's battle." Reimu said.

Everyone prepared themselves for bed as the moon shone over the village. Almost everyone woke up when the sun rose over the mountain and shined its rays down onto the village. The soldiers gathered outside and began their trek up the mountain. Ziden was now awake and walking up the path, opening up the treasure chests along the way as they saw a large slope.

Up on the slope was a man standing on snowy slope. The man was muscular and had a Fa Manchu Mustache, he wore a black hood with two racoon tails dangling in the front of it. He wears grey pants and black, knee high boots. He wore a jacket that is pale yellow on the left side and front and black on the right side. He also wore a black glove on his left hand. His eyes were orange and black.

He noticed the soldiers standing at the bottom of the slope as several bee-like Heartless. The Heartless had a spherical black head with glowing, yellow eyes and was covered in a orange two pronged, beak-like helmet that sports a black spike on either of its sides.

" Rapid Thrusters! A perfect name for these guys!" Yuyuko said.

The Rapid Thrusters began to charge towards the soldiers as they charged in. " Wait! Stop!" Li-Shang tried to stop his soldiers from attacking the Heartless but was too late in stopping them.

The Heartless tore Li Shang's army apart in a massive curbstomp that stained the slope red with blood.

Sora summoned his keyblade and charged at the large swarm of Heartless. The others tried to aid him but they were intercepted by the Rapid Thrusters that had finished killing the other soldiers. Li-Shang was distraught by the sight.

" Tch! Those Heartless took out those soldiers like they were nothing!" Meiling said, mourning their lost comrades.

Sora watched as the large number of Heartless surrounded him as he took his battle stance and prepared himself to fight the large Heartless Swarm.

### **Dance to the Death ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Sora jumped into the air and performed a spin attack that knocked alot of the Rapid Thrusters away. Sora followed up by throwing his keyblade at the Rapid Thrusters and watched as it tore through them.

Sora began to run around while firing off Blizzard spells, easily dispatching the weak Heartless. Sora soon ran out of magic as the Rapid Thrusters surrounded him and dog piled on him.

Ziden noticed this and tried to get over to but were stopped by a new type of Heartless that look a living tower with the Heartless' face being at the bottom.

" Tch! Get out of my way! Burning Lancer!" Ziden wrapped his leg in fire and jump kicked the Heartless in the face, burning it and knocking into the ground.

Another tower-like Heartless appeared behind Ziden and reared its body and slammed into the ground, creating a shockwave that blasted Ziden into the air. The tower Heartless fired bolts at Ziden, but Ziden blocked the attack by creating a barrier of fire that blocked the lightning bolts.

" Alright. Time for you to go down, you pesky Bolt Tower!" Ziden declared as he dived bombed towards the Bolt Tower.

The Heartless dog pile was soon blasted into the air as Sora is revealed standing on the ground in his Valor Form. Sora slammed his Keyblades into a nearby Bolt Tower before continuing to combo the poor Heartless death. He quickly turned and jumped into the air, slashing wildly in the air, creating streaks that struck nearby Heartless and destroying them with raw power and raw power alone.

Meiling slammed her foot into one of Bolt Tower's downed bodies, crushing it beneath her feet before she jumped into the air. She grabbed a Rapid Thruster as she gather chi into her arms. " Arc Toss!" Using her strength, she flipped the Heartless into the air as it crash landed onto another Heartless, taking them both out.

Meiling turned to avoid being hit by a bolt of lightning that was fired by another Bolt Tower before she saw Mokou kicking it rapidly with her feet. Meiling also noticed that Heartless swarm was still looming over them.

" Enough of this!" Mokou reached into her pockets and pulled out a spell card. " Possessed by Phoenix!" Mokou's fiery wings appeared as a large amount of blue and red danmaku began to decimate the large amounts of Heartless.

" Spirit Sign: Fantasy Orb!" Reimu begins to blast the large number of Heartless with colorful orbs that were brimming with holy energy. They caused large explosions to rip through the Heartless army.

" Bowser! Lets do this!" Ziden yelled as Bowser entered his shell. Ziden jumped onto the shell as Bowser began to spin, creating a



whirlwind as Ziden held out his hands.

" Unison Attack: Twin Tyrant Inferno!" Ziden unleashed streams of fire from his hands, creating a massive vortex of fire that was rising into the air, sucking in the Heartless. The vortex continued to rise into the air and burning the Heartless into a crisp. Bowser and Ziden were high in the sky as the vortex disappeared and Ziden and Bowser continued to blast fire onto the Heartless while falling.

Large portions of snow were melting from the intense heat that the fire was giving off as everyone watched as the Heartless army was destroyed by their intense attacks.

" Incredible. I knew that these guys were strong, but not this strong." Ping said as he watched the Illusionary Heroes fight off the Heartless army.

Shan-Yu was not happy about his army being decimated. He ended up calling some more Rapid Thrusters to his side as he ran down the slope. Yao obtained a firework launcher that was shaped like a dragon's head and aimed it at Shan-Yu. Ping saw this and looked at a nearby snowy cliff and got an idea.

Ping shoves Yao out of the way and aimed the firework at the snowy cliff. He looked around for something to light the fuse with when he saw Mushu next to him. He grabs Mushu and forces him to the fuse before throwing him away. The fireworks launched into the air and slammed into the snowy cliff, creating an avalanche that was rolling down the slope.

Ping tackles the captain out of the way of the roaring avalanche as everyone else took to the air to dodge the avalanche's rampage. Shan-Yu was crushed under the avalanche as it rolled off the cliff.

Everyone landed, happy that Shan-Yu was now dead. Mushu was very upset though.

" Man! This is some junk! Getting used like some common lighter! I'm a Guardian Dragon for crying out loud! Come on, Mulan and lets go home already!" Mushu said out loud.

Li-Shang's eyes widdened when he heard this and turned to Ping, angry at this trickery. " You're a woman!"

Ping nodded as he turned around and looked at the group. " Most of you are women as well! To disgrace my army like this!"

Ziden's magic to disguise the girls, faded when Ping was revealed to be a girl. " The punishment for treason is death! You're all dismissed. Consider it my thanks for saving my life back there." Li Shang left with his remaining soldiers as everyone stood there.

A few seconds later, Mulan is now without her armor and her hair is now down. Mushu was upset about the turn of events that occured because of what he said.

Ziden looked up and saw a falcon flying around above a cliff below them. A hand soon came out of the snow as a body climbed its way out of the snow was soon revealed to be the still alive Shan-Yu.

" No way!" Komachi said.

" To have survived an avalanche without a scratch, most impressive." Yuyuko said with a serious tone.

Shan-Yu began to jump down the cliff as everyone saw where he was going to. " He's heading towards the capital! The Emperor's in danger!" Mulan said.

" Then we should go save him then! Charge!" Donald ran towards the village with everyone following him to the village when they noticed something.

" What the-?!" Komachi was trying to figure out what happened to the village while they were gone.

" Ziden! You don't think that the Ice Admiral came back, do you?" Kaguya asked while shivering.

" No. I know who did this. Celsius! Come on out! I know you're here!" Ziden yelled as ice gathered in front of the group.

Two figures began to form as they took on human shapes. One of them was Celsius, whom had an indifferent look on her face. The other also had blue hair and skin, with icy scales covering parts of her body. She had an icy veil wrapped around her as Terra recognized the woman.

" You're Shiva, the Esper of Ice!" Terra realized as Shiva stared at her blankly.

" Do I know you human?" Shiva asked.

" It's me, Terra!" Terra said as Shiva shook her head.

" I don't remember you, but it doesn't matter, I shall kill you all for my master, Shan-Yu!" Shiva declared as everyone tensed up. A large ball of fire slammed into her face and threw her into a pillar of ice as Ziden placed Crimson Edge on his shoulder.

" Everyone get going, I'll take of Celsius and her icy friend while you guys get going and save the Emperor from Shan-Yu!" Ziden ordered as Kaguya and Mokou stepped towards Ziden.

" Get going. We'll make sure he doesn't die to these girls." Mokou said while glaring at Kaguya.

" Fine. I'll make sure kill you two as well." Celsius said while cracking her neck.

The other group quickly made their way to the Capital as they see Li Shang walking to the Capital building which housed the Emperor.

Li Shang turned around saw Mulan coming towards him. " What do you want?" He coldly asked.

" Shan-Yu is still alive! You have to protect the Emperor!" Mulan warned him.

" Why should I believe you?" Li-Shang asked.

" You have to believe me!" Mulan begged.

Li-Shang felt a chill run down his spine as he looked up and saw Shan-Yu's falcon flying around the palace. He looked around and saw Shan-Yu standing on a building before he jumped off.

" Protect the Emperor! Don't let the enemy get any where near the palace!" Li-Shang's remaining soldiers charged towards the palace as some of them lingered behind. " What are you doing! Hurry up and-!" He watched as the soldiers transformed into Nightwalkers as Sora and Mulan stepped in front of the captain.

" We'll take of these guys while you get to the Emperor." Sora said as Li-Shang looked around.

" That's an order!" Donald said as Li-Shang ran towards the palace.

Sora struck the Nightwalker in the chest with his keyblade and Meiling followed up with a strong kick to the back of Heartless.

Youmu charged forward using the Heart Carving Cut to slice the bottom half of a Nightwalker off before following up with Tiger Blade to finish it off.

Sanae fired several wind bullets into a Bolt Tower that was about to crush Terra as she casted Thundara on a group of Shadows that were attacking Goofy.

Yuyuko slashed a Bolt Tower across the face while summoning spirits to strike the other Bolt Towers. Komachi threw her scythe towards a Nightwalker as it tore through its body and returned to Komachi's hand.

Mario and Luigi stood back to back as they fired off a barrage of red and green fire balls at the Nightwalkers that were approaching them as the Heartless were igniting from the flames of the fireballs.

The Heartless were soon wiped out as the group made their way to the palace and saw Shan-Yu holding a blade to the Emperor's throat. " Now you shall bow to me!"

Shan-Yu turned and saw the group standing at the stairs, He was distracted by them and didn't see Li-Shang sneaking behind him and palming him in the face and taking the Emperor inside the palace as he turned to look at Mulan before the doors could close.

Shan-Yu recovered was about to charge through the doors as he sees Sora, Donald, Goofy and Mulan blocking the door.

The others were behind him as a red magic circle appeared behind Shan-Yu as silver humanoid creature with a reptilian head.

The creature's body was muscular and completely silver. The talons on the creature were extremely sharp and were only on its feet. The hands of the creature were normal human hands, but had magic circles on the back of them. The creature's head was dragon-like and the eyes were cat-like.

" Oh great. We had to encounter a Devastator, didn't we?" Komachi said.

" So this is a Devastator? Looks like we have a fight on our hands." Yuyuko said while pulling out her fans.

" Careful. These things are powerful, much stronger than those Zealots we fought before." Komachi warned as a dark aura surrounded Shan-Yu.

Trivia:

1. Devastators are my OC creations and some of the tougher creatures you'll see in this story.

Author's Notes: Whew! Took awhile to get this chapter done! Had alot of distractions like TV and Project X Zone keeping my attention, but these chapters will still come out weekly. The next world will star one of my favorite chars and character from a certain pirate series. See you soon!

# **A Devastating Battle! China's Salvation!**

## **Vim and Vigor ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

A barrier came down in front of the door in order to stop Shan-Yu from entering the palace as several Nightwalkers appeared in front of him.

" Attack that barrier, my loyal army!" Shan-Yu commanded as the Heartless proceeded to head to the gate.

Sora intercepted them and used Fire to blast them back towards Shan-Yu. Shan-Yu jumped into the air and slammed his sword onto Sora's keyblade in hopes of breaking it, but Sora's keyblade didn't break from the attack. Sora began to push Shan-Yu back, shocking Mulan who was watching.

" Wow. Shan-Yu is being pushed back by Sora! Just how strong is he?!" Mulan asked.

" Trust me Mulan. Sora is alot stronger than you think!" Mushu said.

Sora swung his keyblade upwards, breaking the power struggle that he and Shan-Yu were having and then swung his Keyblade downwards against Shan-Yu's chest, sending him flying towards the airborne Meiling.

Meiling flipped in the air and slammed the heel of her foot into Shan-Yu's nose, breaking it and sending him flying towards Goofy as she used her forearm to block a kick from the Devastator. The attack was alot stronger than Meiling anticipated as it sent her flying down the stairs. The Devastator chased after her as the others ran down the stairs to help Meiling out.

Goofy winded up his shield arm and delivered a haymaker to Shan-Yu's face, slamming him into the ground as the Heartless charged at the off guard Goofy. Donald charged towards the Heartless while

preparing a Thunder spell and shocked the Heartless into becoming Munny and Drive Orbs.

Sora and Mulan thought up of an attack they could use to damage Shan-Yu and his Heartless Army as Mushu fired balls of fire into the air. The fireballs slammed into the ground and exploded sending the Heartless and Shan-Yu into the air.

Sora and Mulan became shrouded in explosive fire as they slammed into the enemies, lighting them on fire with every strike. Shan-Yu jumped away from the attack before it caught him as he summoned his dark powers to aid him in this fight.

Sora and Mulan's combo attack ended when Mushu unleashed a final volley of fire balls that exploded against the ground, destroying the Heartless as more of them spawned.

Shan-Yu charged forward and caught Sora and Mulan within a powerful rising spin attack surrounding the attack with purple streaks that extended the reach of the attack. Sora and Mulan were sent flying into the doors of the palace.

Sora got up and charged at Shan-Yu with keyblade winded back and he slammed it against Shan-Yu's sword, pushing him back as Shan-Yu swung his sword at Sora's neck. Sora ducked the attack and slammed the tip of his keyblade into the stomach of Shan-Yu, causing to grab his stomach and hold it because of the pain he felt.

Mulan slammed her foot into Shan-Yu's throat and slashed his stomach with her sword, causing him to bleed.

Sora slammed his keyblade into Shan-Yu's skull and blasted him in the face with a Blizzard spell, freezing it as he rapidly punched the ice to break it. Shan-Yu was dangerously close to the stairs as Sora and Mulan noticed this and ran towards him.

They tackled Shan-Yu and pushed him down the stairs as he tumbled down the stairs with Sora and Mulan chasing after him down



the stairs.

Shan-Yu landed headfirst at the bottom of the stairs and flipped backwards onto the red bridge before he cracked his back and gripped his sword with the both of his hands while channeling darkness through the sword. Sora and Mulan reached the bottom of the stairs and saw Shan-Yu summoning a lot of dark energy to his sword.

" Die!" Shan-Yu swung his sword downwards, creating a large wave of darkness that was charging towards Sora and Mulan as they covered their eyes and tried to protect themselves by placing their weapons in front of them.

" Fierce Demon Fang!" A large red shockwave slammed into the dark wave and canceled each other out as Sora opened his eyes and saw Youmu standing in front of them with her swords drawn.

Sora also noticed that her clothes were a bit torn and her skin had bruises on it. " I know what you're thinking, I can still fight. Lady Yuyuko said it would be best for me to help you and Mulan out with Shan-Yu." Youmu said while spinning her blades.

" Is that Devastator creature really that powerful?" Sora asked.

" Yes. It doesn't help that it can absorb and reflect certain types of magic depending on the color of that crystal on its right pectoral." Youmu said as she watched Devastator slam Meiling into the ground before it started to rapidly start punching her in the ribs as the sounds of cracking bones were heard.

Komachi tried to slice off the creature's head but it ducked and slammed its talons into Komachi's chest and pushed her back as Reimu threw several Yin Yang Orbs into the face of the creature stunning it as Marisa slammed into the creature while riding on her broom.

The creature fell hard onto the ground as Meiling appeared above with gathering in her fist. "Attack Sign: Roc's Fist!" She slammed her fist into the Devastator, severely damaging the creature and the ground as it exploded into a crater filled with rocky pillars.

The Devastator got back up and punched Meiling in the stomach, launching her into a rock as it chased after her. It began to punch and kick Meiling deeper into the rock as it increased the power and speed of the attacks.

Marisa pointed her mini hakkero at the Devastator and charged up magic energy into the magical furnace. "Time for you to go down! Love Sign: Master Spark!" Marisa fired her trademark laser at the mysterious creature and crushed it underneath its magical power.

Meiling punched her way out of the rock and jumped out of the crater. Meiling saw her attack damaged the entire courtyard up to the red bridge where Shan-Yu was standing.

The entire courtyard was filled with rocks that were large enough to use for cover. The creature escaped the destructive beam as a saw blade formed in its hands. The creature threw them at Marisa as she flew around to dodge them.

"Wowza! Talk about a close shave, ze!" Marisa exclaimed as a saw blade whizzed past her hat.

Sanae watched as the creature started to summon several green leaves to surround himself as Sanae seemed to recognize the attack. "That attack looks familiar, but where did I see it though?" Sanae asked herself.

The creature jumped into the air and threw the leaves at Marisa whom was caught off guard by the attack and cut her across her body as she fell off her broom.

"Oh no! Marisa!" Reimu watched as Marisa began to fall towards the ground before a small twister caught her and slowly carried her to

the ground. Marisa landed feetfirst as her broom fell to the ground next to her.

" Tch! Looks like this guy can put up a fight!" Reimu yelled while throwing several amulets at the creature. The creature's crystal turned white as his body absorbed the amulets.

" Oh crap! Hit the deck!" Komachi hid behind a boulder as everyone followed suit. The Devastator unleashed a barrage of amulets that flew out and began to chase down Reimu throughout the sky.

" Cautionary Border!" A blue barrier formed in front of Reimu as the amulets crashed into the barrier and caused cracks to form in it.

" I see. So whatever it absorbs, it'll reflect with twice as much power. Quite dangerous indeed." Yuyuko observed.

" Thundaga!" Terra summoned a large bolt of lightning to strike the creature as the electricity damaged the creature's body as it began to move much more slowly.

Mario and Luigi ran up to the creature with their hammers. Luigi delivered a powerful uppercut to the creature as Mario threw his flaming hammer into the creature's, melting a piece of its face off as everyone looked at the creature and learned something new.

" Its face." Marisa uttered.

" It's a robot! So cool!" Sanae's eyes were sparkling as the robot let out a mechanical sounding roar.

" Time for round 2!" Meiling said while cracking her knuckles.

*Meanwhile...*

Ziden is seen jumping into a building to avoid a barrage of icicles that were coming from Celsius. Ziden had Nosada and Efrete in his hands and was breathing hard as he sees Mokou and Kaguya flying through the window.

" Gods! These women are a pain! My body's freezing out there!" Kaguya complained before she sneezed.

" This is bad. She's utilizing one of Ice's deadlier abilities to take us down." Ziden said while lighting a fire next to Kaguya to warm her up.

" She's trying to freeze us to death. Great." Mokou said while shivering.

" Kaguya, do you have anything that gives you control over fire?" Ziden asked as Kaguya pulled out a red robe and put it on. " Where the heck did you get that fancy robe from?"

" That's a secret!" Kaguya said as she coughed.

" Looks like I'll need to deal with Celsius, you two deal with... Shiva." Ziden realized what he just said as the two rivals stared at him.

" \*Sigh\* Mokou, you'll fight Celsius with me while Kaguya deals with Shiva, okay?" Ziden asked as Mokou nodded.

" Fine by me. Just don't let that Ice Girl kill you, Kaguya. I'm the only one that gets to kill you." Mokou declared as Kaguya walked over to Ziden.

" You'd better not die, Ziden or I'll kill you myself, got that?" Kaguya asked while poking Ziden in the nose.

" Got it. Celsius is going to lose to my burning spirit! There's no way I can lose!" Ziden said while stretching his legs.

" Are you guys done talking yet, or am I just going to have to freeze you all right now?" Celsius asked while leaning on the wall next to Ziden.

" ... "

" ... "

" Gahhhh!" Ziden, Mokou and Kaguya immediately ran out of the building as a barrage of icicles chased after them.

### **Fighting of the Spirit ( Tales of Symphonia)**

Ziden fired several fire bullets at Celsius as she created an ice wall to block the bullets. Ziden ran towards the ice wall and delivers a burning spin kick to the ice wall, shattering it as he followed up with a sword swing to Celsius' neck.

Celsius ducked the attack and delivered a strong kick to Ziden's throat, sending him flying into a icy tower as Celsius chased after him.

Ziden fires off several waves of fire towards Celsius as she flipped and dodged the attack by countering with a large barrage of icicles.

Ziden ducks to avoid a roundhouse kick to the head and counters with a strong punch to Celsius' stomach, taking the air out of her lungs as Ziden delivered a wicked flip kick to her jaw, throwing her into the air and leaving her completely defenseless.

" Phoenix Hibachi!" A flurry of fiery kicks began to slam into Celsius' body as Mokou kicked her higher and higher into the air.

Ziden watched as Celsius is sent crashing into an ice pillar as fireballs rain down onto her.

Celsius appeared behind Mokou and slammed her palm into her spine and then kicked her through an icy pillar.

Celsius chased after Mokou as Ziden intercepted her and performed a spin attack that forced her to jump back to avoid the fiery spin attack.

Celsius raised her hand as sharp icicles rose up from out of the ground and raced towards Ziden. Ziden ran away as the icicles

continued to chase after him. Celsius increased the speed of the icicles as Ziden got caught in a dead end.

" Oh damn. This is going to hurt." Ziden said as the icicles slammed into his body and impaled him in the wall. Celsius manipulated the snow around the area and formed several snowy fists.

" No, Ziden, THIS is going to hurt." Celsius said as the fists began to rapidly punch Ziden's body deeper and deeper into the wall as his bones began to break.

Celsius watched as Ziden's blood began to pool on the snowy floor and clicked her tongue as she sensed someone approaching her from behind. She threw an icy kick behind without even looking as she hears the person behind her, coughing in pain.

Celsius spun around and grabbed Mokou by her throat and slammed her into the ground. " So you're immortal, huh? That would explain how you survived being hit in the spine with the amount of force I used on you. Doesn't matter now, though. I can tell that you and Ziden have some form of bond between you two, so therefore, you are my enemy in this fight." Celsius increased the pressure of her grip in attempt to crush Mokou's windpipe as she grabbed Celsius' arm and tried to pry off her grip.

" Magma Harpoon!" A fiery spear pierced through Celsius' shoulder as blood and fire bursted out of the wound. Celsius is knocked off her feet by the power of the attack as Mokou tries to catch her breath.

Ziden walks out the wall with his weapons sheathed and his arms shrouded in flames. Ziden let out a puff of fire from his mouth as he looks at Celsius with an annoyed look.

" Something tells me I should use every fire attack at my disposal. Original and Copied. I hope Kaguya is having an easier time than we are." Ziden said aloud as Celsius got up and whipped up a magical snowstorm that forced Mokou and Ziden indoors.

" Blizzara!" A large chunk of ice was sent flying towards Kaguya whom created a fire barrier to melt the ice shard before it even touched her.

" This is way too easy! I even beat your strongest attack, give up already!" Kaguya gloated as Shiva was on her knees, covered in bruises and burns.

" Never! I'll defeat you for Master Shan-Yu!" Shiva began to gather a large amount of ice as Kaguya gather up some fire in her hands.

" Oh no you don't!" Kaguya unleashed the fire from her hands as it transformed into a wild spray of fire that wrapped around Shiva as she screamed in pain. Kaguya tried to stop the attack but couldn't as she watched the fire beginning to burn the surrounding area into ash.

" No... I'm... sorry... Master." Shiva's body transformed into a green crystal that flew into the sky and disappeared from sight.

" About time! Now I can help Ziden out in his fight!" Kaguya noticed Ziden and Mokou running into a large building as she jumped through a back window.

Ziden and Mokou proceeded to enter the large, empty living area of the house as they noticed Celsius was standing in the middle of the room, looking at the duo with an annoyed expression on her face.

" Infernal Cross!" Ziden fired a cross shaped blade of fire that Celsius couldn't dodge because of how sudden the attack was. The attack blasted Celsius through the wall as Ziden chased after her with Mokou following after him.

Ziden fired several fire at Celsius as she took off down the hallway. " Nowhere to run now, Celsius!"

" Who said I was running? Freeze Lancer!" Celsius created a magic circle that was rapid firing icicles at duo as they took cover behind a dresser.

" I should have known better than to let her get into a narrow area like this hallway! It's going to be hard to get close to her at this rate." Ziden said as Mokou frowned.

" Great! Now we can just sit here and freeze to death! Just wonderful, Ziden!" Mokou was obviously upset at this turn of events. An idea came to her head as she realized something. " Wait a minute. You can regenerate faster than I can, why don't you just run through her attack and beat the crap out of her?"

" No way! Getting stabbed hurts, you know?" Ziden said.

Mokou simply stared at him before she decided to push Ziden into the line of fire as the icicles pierced his flesh as he ran towards Celsius.

Ziden got closer to Celsius as his leg became wrapped in fire. He throws a kick her neck and she blocked the attack with her forearm.

" Swallow Kick!" Celsius hit Ziden square in the chest with a barrage of kicks that was assaulting him into the air. She finished the attack with a strong kick to Ziden's skull that sent him crashing into the floor as he skidded along the ground, staining the wooden floor red with his blood.

Celsius proceeded to calmly walk towards Ziden as ice began to coat the walls. " Did you really think that you could sneak up on me, girl?" Celsius turned to the side and dodged a clumsy punch from Kaguya as Mokou dashed over and threw a kick at Celsius.

Celsius dodged Mokou's attack and grabbed both of the immortals by their hair as she spun around, causing the girls to scream in pain from having their hair pulled.

Celsius released the girls' hair from her grip as they are sent flying into Ziden, knocking him down. Ziden struggled to get up, but the women were too heavy and he couldn't move at all.



" Can't move, can't you? How unfortunate." Celsius performed a sliding kick that struck all three of the downed fighters as the attack scattered them across the hallway as she grabbed Mokou by her neck.

Celsius proceeded to rapidly punch and kick Mokou down the hallway as the latter is screaming in pain from the impact of the hits began to break her bones. Mokou kicked Celsius in her jaw, stopping her assault and she proceeded to exchange kicks with Celsius.

" Not bad, Immortal girl. Seems you can put up a fight." Celsius said as Mokou smirked.

" Maybe you should watch your back!" Mokou said as Ziden was crouched down behind Celsius with a faint blue barrier around him.

" Mimicked Skill: Rising Fire!" Ziden performed a fiery uppercut that sent Celsius into the ceiling as she fell down.

Ziden jumped into the air and slammed both of his feet into Celsius' chest as she is crashing back into the living room.

The trio ran into the living room as they watch Celsius freeze the exits in the room as she stared at them with an icy glare.

" Time to finish this!" Celsius and Ziden declared as they charged at each other. Ziden threw a fiery punch at her head as she threw an icy punch his head. Their fists collided with the other person's jaw with enough force that the floor beneath them was shattered and scattered along parts of the room.

Ziden is sent flying from the attack and Celsius tried to attack the stunned hero, only to be intercepted by Kaguya tackling her into the ground.

" Get off of me, you wretched girl!" Celsius slammed her fist into Kaguya's chest and she pierced through her ribcage and grabbed her spine.

Kaguya screamed in pain while Celsius began to tug on her spine with the intent to rip it out as Mokou stomped on Celsius' face with a burning foot, forcing Celsius to let go and cover her face with her bloody hands as Kaguya crawled away from Celsius, scared from that new sensation of pain.

Mokou had never tried something so brutal to kill her so she was frightened with this new level of pain. She was almost driven to tears before she felt Ziden petting her on the head.

Ziden is seen holding a long red sniper rifle that was cackling with energy as he took aim at Celsius, steadying the gun and keeping his index finger on the trigger. " Care to help me on this shot, Princess?"

Kaguya nodded and grabbed the gun with her other hand and helped Ziden to aim the gun at Celsius as she battled Mokou. " Get out of the way, you idiot!" They yelled in unison as Mokou jumped out of the way and Celsius looked over to Ziden and Kaguya with a shocked expression on her face.

" Looks like we win, Celsius!" Ziden declared as Celsius chuckled.

" Indeed. Looks like I'll be helping you guys yet again. I'm looking forward to seeing Yukari again. Just make it quick." Celsius accepted her fate and waited as Ziden and Kaguya finished charging their attack.

" Time to end this! Efrete Buster Cannon! Dead End Shoot!" A large fiery beam was fired from the rifle as it melted the floor and slammed into Celsius while blasting through the walls of the building and fired through the sky as the citizens of China watched the large beam rip through the clouds and sky.

Ziden and Kaguya clutched their arms which were broken from the recoil of the attack. " Damn. I always hated the recoil on that attack. You alright, Kaguya?" Ziden asked.

" Y-Y-Y-Yeah. I'm fine. I was just shocked that she tried to rip out my spine! Not even Mokou would do something that painful." Kaguya said as Mokou laid down next to them.

" I don't think we'll be able to help in that fight with Shan-Yu. I'm too exhausted to move." Mokou panted out.

" Don't worry. They've got Meiling and Yuyuko with them. They'll win, I know they will." Ziden said as the two immortals huddled next to Ziden to keep warm.

" There should be bedrooms in here, lets find a bed so we can get warm." Kaguya suggested as they made their way into a nice and warm bed.

*" You guys better win! I don't feel like cleaning up for you guys!"*  
Ziden thought to himself as he slept in the bed, unaware that the girls are facing one of the creatures that he couldn't beat by himself.

Alice had an army of dolls whom were holding holding muskets that were aimed at the Devastator that was fighting off Komachi and Yuyuko with ease.

The dolls opened fire on the Devastator as the magic bullets exploded against its body and damaged the machine as it turned its attention to Alice and morphed its hand into an arm cannon. He fired a pointy mine that stuck itself into Alice's stomach as she looked at it confused as what it was doing.

**Kabooooooooooooooooommmmm!**

The mine exploded and threw Alice into wall before she slid the wall and landed face-first onto the ground.

Meiling punched the machine hard into the ground as she wrapped her arms and legs with chi energy. " Spiral Lights Steps!" Meiling began rapidly punch and stomp the machine deeper and deeper into the ground as she let a war cry.

A blade of darkness slammed into Meiling's back as she sent flying from the force of the attack.

" Fire Raid!" Sora threw a fire infused keyblade at Shan-Yu's face, stunning him as Youmu slashed him across the chest and delivered a strong kick to his jaw.

" Enough of this! DIE!" Shan-Yu released a burst of dark energy as the music changed.

### **Boss Battle ( Megaman ZX)**

Shan-Yu performed a dashing stab attack towards Sora whom rolled out of the way, and missed being hit by the attack as Mulan delivered a kick to Shan-Yu's leg, knocking him off balance when Youmu followed up with a strong kick to his spine as Shan-Yu fell down onto his back.

Sora jumped onto Shan-Yu and fired a point blank Blizzard straight into his face, freezing Shan-Yu's head as Youmu stabbed Shan-Yu through the stomach.

Mulan had a firework launcher and aimed at Shan-Yu. The firework slammed into Shan-Yu and sent him flying into the sky before it exploded into a colorful display of explosions and designs as Shan-Yu's burnt body fell into the distance.

The Devastator watched as the person whom it was supposed to protect was killed by his enemies. " Target has been killed by the Heroes. Initiating Combat Mode! Classic Variable System Activate!"

" That thing can talk!?" Everyone was shocked that the machine can talk as it summoned more

saw blades and proceeded to throw them at the girls as they dodged the assault with ease.

The Devastator began to throw large cement blocks at the girls while they returned fire at the mysterious machine. The machine charged towards Komachi as its right arm morphed into a fiery blade.

Sanae was firing various amulets at the Machine as it began to violently begin to spark. " This machine's attacks, they seem so familiar. Maybe I saw them in a game I played when I was younger?" Sanae wondered as the Devastator began to fire small blue tornadoes at Komachi.

Komachi is hit hard by the attack and is badly damaged by the winds as it sliced her abdomen open. The Devastator grabbed her by the throat and threw her into the air, causing her blood to rain down onto the girls.

" Spirit Sign: Fantasy Orb!" Reimu declared her spellcard as colorful orbs began to bombard the machine as it roared in pain from the attack.

" Love Sign: Master Spark!" Marisa fired her trademark beam at the machine as her and Reimu's attack combined.

" We almost got him!" Sanae yelled as a swarm of danmaku came from Alice's dolls and slammed into the Devastator's body as it began to violently spark.

" ERROR! ERROR! DAMAGE LIMIT EXCEEDED! SELF-DESTRUCT IS ONLY COURSE OF ACTION! I AM ERROR!" The Devastator began to explode as Youmu dashed in and beheaded the machine, causing oil to spray out of its headless neck.

" Dear god! We finally beat this thing. Whew! That was easier since we only had to deal with with of these things this time!" Komachi said while falling onto her rear.

Sanae approached the fallen machine and began to examine it. The others approached her as they watched her scan the machine's body when she found an insignia on the left pectoral.

" I think I know this insignia." Sanae recognized the mark from somewhere but she couldn't put her finger on it.

The mark was a purple circle with a large W on it. Sora scratched his head, not recognizing the mark at all. Li-Shang approached the group as he smiled. " The Emperor wants to speak to you guys." Everyone followed him up the stairs as the Emperor addressed Mulan.

" Mulan. You have done several dreadful things; impersonating a soldier, lying to a commanding officer about your gender and you have brought disgrace to your family..."

" Oh come on already!" Sora was upset that they were still angry about that fact.

"... but in the end, you have saved us all." Mulan turned her sad expression into a happy expression at these words. " All hail Mulan, the bravest woman in China!"

A large uproar happened in the audience below them as Mulan is given Shan-Yu's sword as Mushu celebrated.

" Ha ha! After all this, they gotta let me be a family guardian again! They gotta!" Mushu said to himself as Sora, Donald and Goofy overheard him.

" Wait. I thought that you were already a Family Guardian, Mushu?" Goofy asked as Mushu began to stammer.

" Wait a second. You lied to us!" Sora and Donald chased after him as the sword began to glow with that familiar red light. Sora noticed this and picked up his keyblade which was on the floor for reason. Sora opened the gateway to a new world as everyone watched a large red laser tear through the sky.

" Whoa. What was that?" Mulan asked as Komachi tapped the ground with her scythe.

" That was probably Ziden. I should go get him and those two girls so we can go." Komachi disappeared from sight as she returned with sleeping trio in tow.

" Well we'd better get going. You don't mind if we come back to visit, do you?" Sora asked.

" You guys are welcome back to China whenever you wish to visit us." Li Shang said.

" All right! You two play nice now!" Sora said as Li-Shang and Mulan blushed at his comment.

The group brought back to the ship as they dispersed around the ship. Ziden sits down in control center of the ship as Mokou sits next to him.

" *The Ultima Brigade, Organization XIII and The Rulers of Darkness. This is definitely going to be harder than the last war.*" Ziden thought while looking out into space.

Meanwhile...

At a round, white table with the Nobody symbol on the middle of it, several people sitting around it as they were talking about something.

" Well now. It seems that the girls were able to take down a Devastator, remarkable." A man? with long black hair wearing a pitch black kimono.

" Tch! This is terrible! How was one of my prized creations, beaten by freaking girls?!" An older man with grey hair and mustache while wearing a white lab coat.

" A shame, even that disgusting hero couldn't even beat one of them by himself. \* Sigh\* If only that ice girl hadn't appeared on that

mountain, Ziden would getting his ass kicked by that Devastator." A red skinned woman with blue hair said.

" Indeed sister. It's a good thing though, we'll be able to get our vengeance on him for what he and those two angels did to our boss, Corset!" Another red skinned woman with green hair said, pounding her fist on the table.

" Hah! What a pathetic demon that man was! What sort of demon uses bondage as a form of attacking!?" A blue skinned man with a large yin-yang marble in his stomach said as the two women glared at him.

" Calm down, you two. He meant no harm with those words. He just didn't understand how Corset's mind worked." An extreme regal looking demon with scythe like wings said as the two girls calmed down.

" Lady Ultima, when will WE get a to fight these heroes?" A man wearing silver armor with sharp claws on the right gauntlet asked.

" Soon, my friend. I want to wait and see what these 'Rulers of Darkness' are up to. They... worry me." The black haired woman who was revealed to be Ultima said.

" Yes. The fact that Ganondorf has been revived worries all of us. He will more than likely try to retaliate against us, along with the other members of those Rulers of Darkness." The red skinned woman with blue hair said.

" Do not worry, my friends. Even though we failed at recruiting that man from the Soul Society, we were still able recieve his knowledge on those creature he had under his command. We were able to revive the ten strongest ones minus the third and they are willing to serve under us because we don't plan to throw them away like he did." A tanned skin man with amber-colored eyes and silver hair said.



" Good! We've sent one of the Nobodies to the Underworld in order to sway Hades into joining us. It's only a matter of time before Hades joins us." Ultima said as an image of the Underworld appeared on the table.

Author's Note: Another Chapter done and more villains revealed! I would also like to state that while this seems like a Gary Stu story, it's really not because Ziden isn't the all powerful beings that you normally see in those stories. The only all powerful beings that you'll see in these stories are the Villains and the Universal Superpowers that are some of the more powerful beings in my stories universe. I just wanted to state this in case you expected Ziden to go on a curbstomping spree through this whole story. See you around for the next chapter!

# Olympus Coliseum

" Ziden." A voice was calling out to Ziden while he was staring off into space... literally.

" Ziden." The voice called him again, sounding a bit irritated.

" ... "

" Tch! Ziden!" The voice was obviously angry now as two puffs of air were heard.

Crrrrrraaaaaaaaaacccccckkkkkkkkk!

" Owww! What in the Nine Worlds of Norse Mythology is your problem!?" Ziden asked as Mokou stomped on his foot.

" Pay attention! I was talking to you this whole time, you know!?" Mokou was upset at being ignored.

" Get over it, bee stings. I was reflecting on our enemies for this journey." Ziden said, calling Mokou by that dreadful nickname.

" Stop calling me that! Why is it that you barely remember me and Keine, yet you remember that infuriating nickname!?" Mokou asked with her anger rising.

" I also remember how soft your lips are." Ziden said as Mokou blushed. " And how soft 'they' were." Ziden's nose began to bleed as Mokou slammed her foot into Ziden's face.

" Freaking perv!" Mokou yelled as she got.

" Freaking perv whom you're in love with~!" Ziden teased.

" Whatever! If you weren't Immortal, I wouldn't even be interested in you!" Mokou said, bringing up a good point.

" Sure. I'm bet you're upset that I'm married to your mortal enemy though, am I right?" Ziden asked as he felt a burning glare coming from Mokou.

" Technically, we are married because of that weird ring you gave me four years ago." Mokou said.

" That is technically true." The duo looked up and saw Yukari coming out of a gap and landed on a couch between the two youths.

" Wait what?" Ziden seemed confused.

" Those rings are the symbol of soul mates and life companions, meaning that you must see Mokou as either of those. Ah! Young love!" Yukari teased as a big grin broke out on Mokou's face.

" I guess if it was your case, then it would be old love." Ziden said as Mokou gasped.

" My my. If I didn't know any better, I'd think that you were calling me old." Yukari said with a dangerous tone.

" Ziden, I think I'm just going wander around the ship with this new knowledge in my head. Maybe I'll rub this in Kaguya's face!" Mokou got up and ran over to a corner and took cover as Ziden's and Yukari's argument escalated.

" Of course I'm calling you old, you ancient fossil!" Ziden yelled.

" Who the hell are you calling old, you primordial retard!" Yukari retorted.

" I'm not old! I'm only 19 years old, you shriveled-up husk bag!" Ziden declared.

" I'm only 17 years old, you ancient delinquent!" Yukari countered.

They glared at each other as sparks came from their eyes and collided as Chen walked by.

A gap opened up and several Danmaku came from it and slammed into Ziden's face, stunning him as his anger boiled to the breaking point.

" That's it! Time for that ass beating you so definitely need!" Ziden drew out Crimson Edge as Yukari pulled out her umbrella.

" Uh oh! Ran! Ziden and Yukari are fighting again!" Chen yelled as Ran appeared and stood between the two people.

" Move out of the way, Ran! I'm about to commit Senior Citizen abuse! I'd rather not have to commit Animal Abuse as well!" Ziden said as fire began to wrap around his sword.

" Move Ran! This brat's ass is about to be kicked all over this ship!" Yukari commanded while she tapped her umbrella on her hand.

" You two knock it off! This is not the time for you two to be fighting, so knock it off!" Ran yelled as the duo glared at each other.

" Tch! Whatever!" Ziden sheathed his sword and fired a small fireball at Yukari's ruby red Mary Janes as they caught on fire.

" Gahh! Why you miserable little-!" Yukari chased after a fleeing Ziden as Ran and Chen chased after them to save Ziden's hide.

Ziden ends up spotting an air vent above Patchouli as he said a quick hello to her while transforming his body into fire and flew into the air vent. Yukari is seen running towards Patchouli with severely burnt shoes.

" Where. Is. He!?" Yukari angrily asked.

" He ran past here. He probably went to hide in his room." Patchouli lied as Yukari stormed off towards Ziden's bedroom. " You owe me for this."

" Yeah. I'll make up to you over a Cup of Joe." Ziden said in a echoing voice.

" You mean coffee right? Sure, also I overheard that conversation you were having with Mokou and Yukari. Nice going, unintentionally giving Mokou a wedding ring." Patchouli pointed as Ziden retransformed back into a human form in front of her.

" I thought was a sign of sublime friendship or some crap like that. Great now I've got two Immortal wives and they both hate each other. God, I can just see the Domestic Abuse and the property damage those two are going to cause. Money out of my pockets." Ziden said as he leaned against the wall.

" Your fault for starting a Harem." Patchouli pointed out again.

" It's not my fault! I think something in this Universe is making this nonsense happen and I shall haunt their dreams with my awesomeness and terrortudeitivity ( not a real word)!" Ziden exclaimed as Patchouli slapped the back of his head.

" You really are an idiot. Oh well. Komachi seems uneasy about the next world, she said it reeks of tortured souls. Yuyuko also seems to want to go to this world as well, saying that she wishes to help those souls to move on." Patchouli explained.

" Great, it seems like we're going somewhere with alot of dead people. I never liked going to places like that." Ziden said while scratching his head.

" Indeed, dealing with vengeful spirits is not easy, unless you know powerful magic." Patchouli said.

" Like you?" Patchouli nodded. " Good, I hope you come along on this world then, your magic would be useful, I think." Ziden said as Patchouli gripped the book she was holding.

" \*Sigh\* Ziden? Do you think that the Rulers of Darkness and the Ultima Brigade are going to team up against us?" Patchouli asked as they walked down the hallway, being stalked by Cirno and Mokou.

" No, with Ganondorf being in the Rulers of Darkness, that idea can safely go down the drain." Patchouli looked confused. " Long story short; Ganondork worked with the Ultima Brigade, they were scared of his powers so they betrayed him and tried to kill him. Well guess what? They failed, he got angry and went on a Zealot killing spree. Link ended up killing him after he killed me and almost killed Dante." Ziden seemed to remember how painful his death was that day.

Ziden seemed to space out as he walked down the hallway with Patchouli walking by him. Ziden bumped into something soft as he looked up and saw Komachi standing in front of him.

Komachi grabbed Ziden by the back of his shirt and proceeded to drag him down the hallway as Patchouli followed them. Komachi dragged Ziden into a room with a wooden desk and threw him into the room as he landed on his rear.

" I brought him just like you told me to, boss." Komachi said as she disappeared.

Ziden looks up and sees Eiki sitting in the chair with several pieces of paper in front of her and she did not look happy. " Hello Ziden. It's about time you got here."

" What do you want now? If you're going to lecture me, I'm just going to shoot myself now." Ziden said while holding Celsius in his left hand.

" I should lecture you about all those souls you have coming to my desk and complaining that they wrongfully died because of your actions." Eiki began to scold Ziden as he blocked her out, like he normally does.

*Crrrrrrrrraaaaacccckkkkkk!*

" Ow!"

" Pay attention! Because of those actions, I've decided to give you a Fairy Companion to keep an eye on your actions. She is a very kind girl that shall accompany you on this journey and future journeys as well." A child sized fairy appeared from behind Eiki and floated over to Ziden.

The fairy had green hair that was tied into a ponytail with a yellow ribbon. She wore a blue dress with white trim, sleeves and had golden wings.

" Um... nice to meet you, Mister Ziden. My name is Daiyousei, and I shall be your Fairy Companion from now." Daiyousei introduced herself as Ziden just stared at her. " What?"

" Hey Eiki? How does it feel to know this fairy has a bigger chest than you?" Ziden asked as Daiyousei blushed. Eiki's answer to this question was obvious.

*Craaaaacccccckkkkkk!*

" Stop being perverted to your boss! Daiyousei is going to tell me of your actions whenever I decide to pop up and check up on you. For every innocent person you get killed or kill, I'm taking money off your next paycheck, got that?!" Eiki asked as Ziden slowly nodded.

Ziden waited for a second in hopes of Eiki suddenly disappearing as he watched as she began to work on the paperwork in front of her. " Uh shouldn't you be going back?" Ziden asked as Eiki shook her head.

" I forgot to mention, the Head Yama decided to give me some vacation time, so I'll be commandeering this office for my work that I brought with me." Eiki said while writing away on some paper.

" Great. So you'll be annoying me when I'm on the ship, wonderful." Ziden said as he received a powerful blow to the skull from Eiki.

" Show respect to your boss! I'm also going to keeping an eye on your actions in case you try to bribe Daiyousei into lying for you. So watch yourself, Ziden." Eiki got up and began to push Ziden and Daiyousei out into the hallway, nearly crashing into Patchouli and Mokou as she closed the door on them.

" Hmmm? Why is that fairy with you?" Patchouli asked. Ziden explained the situation to them as Mokou laughed at him.

" Oh! This is funny to you! You know what I find funny!?" Ziden delivered a powerful kick to Mokou's shin, causing her to hop up and down in pain as she glared at Ziden.

" That hurt, you freaking jerk!" Mokou yelled as she kicked Ziden in the jaw.

Patchouli watched as the two idiots began to rapidly kick each other as Daiyousei tried to stop the two from fighting. Patchouli merely sighed as she sees Yukari standing at the end of the hallway, with steam blasting out of her nose.

" ZIDEN ICRIM!" Ziden and Mokou turned to see an enraged Yukari charging at them with bloodlust in her eyes. Ziden looks at her with an emotionless face before he glance over to Mokou and grabbed her arm.

Mokou looked confused before she noticed Ziden's grip increasing on her arm. " Don't you dare!"

" Sorry! I hope you'll forgive me for this!" Ziden lifts up Mokou and throws her at the charging Yukari while he breaks into a sprint. Yukari punches Mokou hard in the jaw, sending her flying into Eiki's office as Yukari chased after Ziden with fury running through her veins.

Patchouli watched the scene with Daiyousei as they both sighed. " This job is going to be harder than I thought." Daiyousei said before flying off.



"... A Fairy Companion? In a way, this will make both her and Cirno stronger. Although, I'm curious about the new abilities she'll learn from this experience." Patchouli opened her book and made her way to her bedroom.

Ziden continued to run through the hallways of the ship as he struggled a vicious Danmaku assault that was launched by Yukari's gaps. " God-dammit! She knows I suck at dodging these things! Gotta keep running or she'll kill me!" Ziden barely grazed a Danmaku bullet that was aimed at his head.

Ziden was so focused on dodging the Danmaku and running that he didn't notice the banana peel that was in front of him. Ziden lost balance when he stepped on the peel and began to fall and tumble down the hallway until he crashed into a table, breaking it into pieces as Yukari caught up to him.

" Looks like you're about to get that beating you so rightfully need!" Yukari swung her parasol at Ziden's skull or at least tried to. Ziden blocked the attack with the sole of his left foot and performed a sweep kick with his other leg. Yukari was knocked off balance by the attack and Ziden jumped onto the downed Yukari while cracking his knuckles.

" Yeah, I don't think so! Time for some facial reconstruction surgery!" Ziden winded up his fist and took aim at Yukari's face as a loud audible crack is heard. Ziden seems stunned by what happened as blood poured from his now broken nose as he fell over and passed out. Yukari calmly got up and kicked Ziden hard in the ribs as she held her fan over the lower half of her face.

Yukari was so preoccupied with kicking Ziden that she didn't notice Eiki standing behind her, tapping her Rod of Remorse in her hand.

" Ahem!" Yukari turned around and saw the last person she'd expected to see.

" A-A-Ah! If it isn't Eiki Shiki! What a pleasant surprise!" Yukari tried to get away only to be chopped by Eiki's rod.

" Yukari Yakumo! Ziden Icrim! Are you two seriously fighting each other at a time like this?! What is wrong with you two!?" Eiki began to scold the duo as they began whispering to each other.

" Oh god! She's about to lecture us again!" Ziden whispered to Yukari.

" Well I sure don't feel like standing here for two hours... let's think of a way to get out of this somehow." Yukari whispered as Ziden began to think.

"!"

" Eiki? Can you lecture us when we get back from this world? Yuyuko said that there are wrongfully condemned souls in this world, so we should really save them." Ziden said as Eiki thought for a second.

"... Fine, but you two are essentially family. There is no need for you two to fight on a daily basis, so please for my sanity, knock it off until this journey is over, okay?" The duo nodded as they ran towards the teleporter room.

Ziden used a terminal to call everyone to the Teleporter Room and before they even got a chance to ask, he told them why Daiyousei was here. Everyone began to pick their straws as the following people are picked for this world; Dante, Komachi, Remilia, Yuyuko, Reisen, Youmu, Eirin, Ike, Sanae.

" Wonderful. Dante's coming with us, hurray!" Ziden said with a sarcasm lacing his words.

" Aww! I wanna go with Daiyousei! Please let me go!" Cirno pleaded as Ziden sighed.

" You'll get a chance to play with your buddy later. We should go and deal with this world's crisis." Reimu said as Cirno calmed down.

" New world, here we come!" Sanae exclaimed as the bright light enveloped them.

The group now found themselves in a grey cavern as with several wisps appearing around them.

" This isn't the Coliseum. Where are we?" Sora asked as they walk to a circular platform with several other paths. One of them led to a rising stairwell as Donald ran over to it.

" This is the way to the Coliseum! I just know it!" Donald ran towards the stairs as the group heard a woman scream.

They turned around to see a woman being chased by several Rabid Dogs. Sora ran over to the woman and fired a Blizzard spell at the Heartless, scaring them into leaving.

Sora helped the woman to her feet as the group came over to them. The woman was wearing a long pink dress that reached her orange sandaled feet. She had her brown hair tied into a ponytail with a yellow band.

" Thanks for the help, kid." The woman thanked Sora for saving her.

" Why are you down here, anyway? This sure isn't a vacation spot." Ziden asked.

" I'm here to try and convince Hades into giving Herc a break with his opponents. Poor guy is running himself ragged." The Woman while looking down.

" Huh? You know Hercules? So we are at the Coliseum!" Sora said.

" You guys know Wonderboy?" The woman asked.

" Yeah! We're heroes too, you know?" Donald said.

" Don't you mean Junior Heroes?" Goofy asked as Donald quacked.

" Wait a minute! Hades is here!?" Sora asked.

" Then that means... we're in the Underworld right now." Komachi figured out.

" So, this world has a God we have to deal with. Great!" Ziden said, obviously not happy about this.

" We've beaten several Gods before, I'm sure we can do it again." Reimu stated as Sanae looked at the large door behind the woman.

" What's your name, lady?" Dante asked.

" Megara, but my friends call me Meg." Meg introduced herself as the group introduced themselves.

Ziden noticed that there was a large arena across the large river that was next to him. Yuyuko seemed to be walking towards the door leading to the Underworld's depths.

" Hey Yuyuko! Wait up!" Mario ran over to Yuyuko and caught up to her.

" We can relay the Message to Hades for you if you want." Sora asked as Meg thought for a second.

" Okay, but be careful. Hades is known for his trickery." Meg warned as the group made their way into the Underworld.

## **The Underworld ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

They were now walking down a snaking passage way that was coated in mist.

" Talk about creepy." Ziden said as Daiyousei latched onto his head.

" This place is nothing like the Netherworld or like Lady Yuyuko's Manor." Youmu said while keeping her hands on her swords.

" Yeah, this place doesn't feel safe at all." Mario said while shivering.

Luigi seemed frightened about something as he slowly made his way down the pathway.

" I can sense the tortured spirits in this place. This Hades is a terrible person." Yuyuko said while frowning.

" So Sora? What is this Hades person like?" Sanae asked.

" Well, he was really shady and he liked to use people. I did end up beating him with Donald and Goofy's help." Sora said while summoning a new keyblade.

" Huh? When'd you get the new Keyblade?" Remilia asked.

" When we saved China from Shan-Yu." Sora lifted up the Keyblade and showed it everyone while they walked down the path.

The keyblade had a guard that looked similar to Mushu and the blade looked a burst of fire coming out of a dragon's mouth. The Keychain was a gold medal.

" The Hidden Dragon, huh?" Eirin asked as Sora changed the keyblade back to its normal form.

" Lets keep going guys." Reimu said as she felt a heavy strain on her body. " *What is this feeling? My body feels so heavy.*"

*Meanwhile...*

In a dark room with Pete and another man sitting across from him. The man had blue skin and blue fire that functioned as his hair. His eyes were completely yellow minus his black pupils. He wore a black toga with a dark grey shirt underneath it.

This man was Hades, Ruler of the Underworld and its citizens.

" Man, Hercules is making mince-meat out of everyone we send after him." Pete said as Hades didn't seem to care. " How are we going to turn Hercules into a Heartless if he keeps beating up everything we throw at him?"

" Would you be quiet and let me think!?" Hades yelled as Pete fell out of his chair.

" Jeez, you might as well send in someone already dead to save him the trouble." Pete said as Hades slammed his fists on the throne.

" Wait... that's not a bad idea! And I know just the two dead people that can get the job done! And one of them has a mysterious power that prevents him from being harmed! There is no way that Hercules is going to survive this." Hades said while laughing.

*Back to the heroes...*

The group was now in a medium sized room with a Moogles in it.

" My gods! Are we there yet!?" Marisa asked as everyone yelled No!

" Are you guys done shopping yet!? I wanna fight something!" Ziden asked while doing squats.

" Almost! We need to stock up some more potions and Ethers. We're running low on items." Eirin said as she pocketed several High Potions and Hi-Ethers.

" Whatever. I just want to fight Hades and take a nap." Ziden said while yawning.

" Come on guys. You're acting like we're going to beat this guy easily!" Reisen said while waving her hand.

"... Meh. You guys can handle him. I don't know why, but I feel exhausted." Ziden said as everyone felt the same way.

" What about that Organization XIII member we saw earlier? Something tells me that this won't be an easy battle for us." Remilia said while flapping her wings.

"... Hey, fairy girl? Are there any enemies nearby?" Ziden asked as Daiyousei shook her head.

" Man! I wanna fight something already! This is so boring!" Sora said.

" Hey, you wanted to come down here, kid. Though I am surprised that we aren't encountering any Heartless." Dante realized.

" Nor have we seen any Zealots." Terra added.

" Lets go. Something tells me we're about to have a big fight on our hands." Yuyuko said, walking into a open area.

" Holy crap! This place is spooky!" Ziden declared as the camera began to rise upwards and showed that there was a pathway leading to several circular platforms. What was really spooky about this place was the green light coming from the pits below the platform.

" Hades! Come out!" Sora yelled as the camera went up to the building that Hades was currently in.

Hades was standing in front of a green vortex with Pete and two demons that were standing behind him, whom were named Pain and Panic. Pain was a pink skinned imp and was fat with maroon hair, while Panic was blue skinned and was taller than Pain and was skinnier as well.

" What is that!?" Pete asked.

" This vortex right here houses some of the baddest souls that have ever lived! I'm about to bring out the mother of all bad guys... that other guy I was talking about!" Hades summoned two fireballs, spun them around and then threw them into the pit. An explosion came from the pit as two figures were seen in the smoke.

One was wearing a blood red haori with blue lining that was kept closed by a thick, blue and black strap with two brown belts wrapped around it. He has his left arm tucked into the front of his haori, making it look like a sling. He has a brown shoulder pad on his left shoulder which was decorated with tan, green and blue pattern.

He wears black pants and shoes, the latter had several brown straps and triangular metal plating adorning them. He had short, dark grey hair and was spiked. He wears a black shirt with a peculiar, grey collar with intersecting brown straps that is high enough to cover his mouth. He had a long scar running down his right eye, forcing it shut as a result. His left eye is amber colored.

The other man was wearing black boots, black knee-length shorts with an eyelet-studded orange belt, and a blue pouch belted around his left leg. He also wore a short second belt with a large red "A" on the silver buckle over his right hip, but left it unfastened and threaded the free end along the back of his shorts. On his back was a mostly destroyed purple tattoo that looked like a purple cross of some sort. He has scruffy black hair and has red beads around his neck.

" Let's cut to the chase. Here's the deal I'm gonna offer you. I let you out of the slammer-no strings-you'll be free as a bird. And all for one little job. Fight Hercules, in the Coliseum... to the death!" Hades offered as the duo glared at him.

" No. This is my story and you're not a part of it." The man in red said as Hades got angry.

" What?! Do you know who you're talking to!? I am the Lord of the Dead!" Hades yelled.

" No wonder no one wants to die." The man in red said, insulting Hades.

" YOU ARE FIRED!" Hades' skin and hair turned red as he charged at the man in red as he countered with his large sword.



The half naked man was about to help the other man out when the group of heroes bursted into the scene. Hades saw several familiar faces in the crowd. " You!" Hades was shocked to see Sora and was caught off guard as he was slashed by the man in red clothes' rather large sword, that he was wielding with one arm.

" Fight!" The man yelled as everyone prepared to take on Hades.

### **What Lies Beneath ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Sora charged in and aimed for Hades' torso as he watched his keyblade phase right through his body, dealing no damage at all. Donald firing several Blizzard spells with Terra aiding him with Thunder Magic, but the magic phased right past him as well.

The Shirtless Man was confused on what was happening. Eirin and Reisen were firing arrows and bullets at him, but they did not have any effect at all.

" What's going on!? Why is all our attacks going through him!?" Reimu asked while Hades began to laugh.

" I feel funny." Sora said as the air shimmered around him.

" You should! You see, down here, heroes are zeroes! Comes with the territory!" Hades said before he tried to attack them, only to be repeled by the man in red.

" We have to go!" The man in red grabbed Sora by his arm and tried to drag him out of the room.

" Wait! We have to talk to Hades!" Sora said as the man continued to pull him out of the room.

" You were saying?" Hades had his fingers in his ears while ignoring the group.

" We gotta get outta here!" Ziden said as he ran out of the room.

Everyone ran out of the room as Hades threw fireballs at them. They got outside of his chambers and they closed the door as they took the opportunity to rest.

" This isn't good. Down here, we're being weakened by some strange power." Ike said while resting Ragnell on his shoulder.

" So who are you two?" Komachi asked.

" Auron." The man in red introduced himself.

" Ace." The shirtless man introduced himself as Ziden stared at his back. He noticed a large burn scar on his back and his front.

" Who are you guys?" Auron asked.

" Ziden Icrim."

" Reimu Hakurei."

" Super Mario!"

" Sora!"

" Donald!"

" Goofy!"

" Oh my. I hope you guys don't plan on leaving so soon." Hades appeared next to door via a burst of fiery smoke as several Heartless appeared behind them. Some of them looked like golden knights with lances in their hands. Some looked like green plants with four legs.

" Lance Soldiers and Creeper Plants." Daiyousei said as Yuyuko frowned.

" That's their names?" Reimu asked as Daiyousei nodded.

" Huh. That's pretty useful, being able to see their names. Now Yuyuko won't need give them weird names anymore." Ike said as Yuyuko pinched his cheeks. " Gah! Stop that!"

" Alright! Time for some action!" Ace pointed his hand at the Heartless blocking their way. " Heat Haze!" Ace fired a stream of fire from palm that blasted the Heartless into dust as they ran forward to the next platform, only to be stopped by a barrier and several Large Bodies, Creeper Plants and Lance Soldiers appeared.

### **Vim and Vigor ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

" Everyone! Focus on the Heartless and avoid Hades as much as you can!" Eirin ordered as everyone summoned their weapons.

Dante opened fire on a Large Body with Ebony and Ivory while Ike snuck up behind it and delivered a powerful downwards slash to its back, sending it airborne and towards Auron.

" Hmph. Know your place." Auron unleashed a vicious aerial assault to the Large Body, destroying as everyone watched Auron go to town on the Large Bodies.

" That guy has some skill! Perhaps more than you and your mother, nephew." Yuyuko said while using her fans to deflect several seed bullets back at the Creeper Plants.

" Yeah! And to think he's doing that with just one arm too!" Ziden said while dodging a lance to the face from a Lance Soldier. Ziden delivered a fiery kick to the heartless and slammed his keyblade into its face, sending flying towards Remilia.

Remilia filled her claws with magic as she began wildly swing her claws at the Creeper Plants while slicing Hades' fireballs away. Youmu fired a sword wave at Hades as he teleports out of the way.

Kirby began to inhale the Creeper Plants as a flurry of leaves surrounded Kirby as a leafy crown appeared on his head.

" Leaf Kirby? Weird." Ziden examined as Daiyousei notified Ziden of a sneak attack coming from his left as several Lance Soldiers were running at him while swinging their weapons wildly.

Ziden wasn't able to dodge the attack as he is impaled by the Lances while Komachi focused energy into her scythe. Komachi swung her scythe, firing several spinning blades that tore the Heartless apart as Ziden removed the lances from his body.

The barrier went down as Dante ran forward with a shotgun in hand. They arrived at the exit to this room as the Heartless blocked their path and Hades began to fire streams of fire as the group.

Dante found himself surround by Large Bodies as he pumped his shotgun and got ready to keep it stylish! " Fireworks! Yahoooooo!" Dante fired the shotgun while flipping it around his body, causing the bullets to spray out all around him, launching the Heartless into the walls and knocked several of them off of the platform all together.

Mario and Luigi charged up their respective attack and fired a barrage of fire balls and lightning at the Large Bodies.

" Thundaga!" Terra summoned a massive lightning bolt to strike down the last Large Body as the barrier fell.

" Oh no! You aren't leaving that easily!" Hades began to summon two large fireballs as Yuyuko summoned several ghosts and threw them at Hades, throwing off his concentration as everyone escaped into the caverns. "... Tch! Looks like the brat found some powerful allies this time around. The Son of the Traitor, Sparta. Eiki Shiki's Shinigami, The Ruler of Hakugyokurou, Yuyuko Saigyouji.

The heroes continued to run until they reached the entrance to the Underworld and a break to catch their breath.

*Meanwhile...*

" Don't you worry about those punks! I've released the Heartless all over the Underworld, there's no way they are getting out alive! So you just focus on turning Hercules into a Heartless!" Pete said.

Hades' skin and hair turned red as his toga caught on fire. " This is my Underworld, you idiot!" Hades turned back to normal and walked over to a window as a large black beast is shown. " Cerberus, go!" The creature ran off as Hades chuckled.

*Back to the heroes...*

" So you're a Devil Fruit user?" Ziden asked as Ace nodded.

" Yep! I ate the Flame Flame Fruit, giving me powers over fire and making me a Logia you're being hunted down by the Marines?" Ziden nodded as Ace clutched his chest. " I'm going to give you a piece of advice, beware of the Admiral named Akainu! That man's Devil Fruit power can burn fire and he's the reason why I'm dead!"

" I see. I'll make sure to give him an ass beating for ya! My fire can blast holes through mountains, I'd like to see him try to burn my flames!" Ziden boasted while throwing fire enveloped punches. Daiyousei sensed something coming at them as Auron repelled an attack from a large dark figure.

" Crud! The door's locked!" Ace said as Sora's keyblade appeared in his hand.

" Will that open it?" Auron asked.

" I guess." Sora pointed the keyblade at the lock as a white beam shot from the keyblade and struck the lock as it disappeared. Donald and Goofy slowly forced the door open as everyone minus Sora, Reimu, Ace, Dante and Auron ran inside of it. Sora and Reimu looked at everyone behind the open as they looked back at Auron whom was holding the creature at bay. Sora and Reimu ran over to help Auron, Ace and Dante as a barrier formed over the door, blocking any outside help.

" Well, at least this one won't be blasting me with ice." Dante said while grabbing Rebellion. " Come on, baby! Lets Rock!"

Fun Fact:

1. The Gensokyo girls are unable to fly or use their spellcards while being affected by the Underworld's curse.
2. The Smashers are unable to use their tournament techniques while in the Underworld.
3. Ziden is unable to use any of his other weapons and is restricted to using his powers over fire and his regeneration while in the Underworld. Yeah, the curse really does suck.

*Author's Notes: Another chapter done and a surprise character is revealed, Ace from One Piece! I really liked Ace as a character, plus he had control over my favorite elemental, fire. Auron is a beast in KHII because with him in your party, you can let him fight the Heartless while you take a nap or play some Goldfish with some friends. Another chapter will come out hopefully tomorrow, so look forward to seeing some Boss Fights! R&R!*

# The TRUE Legendary Hero Returns!

## Vim and Vigor ( Kingdom Hearts II)

Sora, Reimu, Dante, Ace and Auron was staring down Cerberus, the Guardian of the Underworld with their weapons drawn.

Cerberus was a large three headed dog, with each head having razor sharp fangs and glowing red eyes. The Cerberus leapt into the air and dived towards the group as they scattered to dodge his attack. The attack caused a white shockwave that traveled along the ground and caused several boulders to fall down from the ceiling.

" Sora! Anything we should know about this thing before we take it down?" Reimu asked.

" Well... I remember that he can breathe fire and fire dark balls of energy at us. Other than that, he'll probably try to bite us and try to pounce on us as well." Sora explained as Reimu began to summon several amulets.

" Sora! Why don't you use that Drive Form of yours and waste this guy!?" Dante asked as he dodged a claw swipe to the face.

Dante unholstered Ebony and Ivory and began to fire bullets into Cerberus as Auron swung his sword into its back, drawing its life crimson as it spray onto the floor.

Reimu was running around, throwing several amulets at Underworld Guardian as it fired several dark fireballs at Reimu. Reimu dodged the fireballs and threw a Yin Yang orb into its mouth, causing it to gag on the fireballs as Sora realized something.

" Hey! I can't use my Drive Form!" Sora yelled as Reimu tried to fly to avoid a shockwave as she quickly learned that she couldn't fly and knocked into the air with Cerberus running over to her with his middle mouth wide open and directly under the falling Reimu.

Ace quickly jumped into action and used his Fruit powers to slam a flaming fist straight into Cerberus faces, sending it flying into the wall as Sora caught Reimu and helped her to her feet.

" I can't fly! What's going on here?!" Reimu yelled as Cerberus roared and jumped into the air.

Auron leapt into the air and slammed his sword into the right head as Dante slammed his sword into the left one. " I think the Underworld is draining our strength. I feel alot weaker than I normally do." Dante said while jumping away from several claw swipes.

Cerberus' body lurched upwards before it slammed its paw into the ground, causing several boulders to fall down onto the battlefield as Sora and Reimu ran around to dodge the raining boulders.

" Blizzard!" Sora fired an ice chunk into Cerberus' eye, causing it to roar in pain. Dark mist began to gather in the middle head's mouth as it pour onto the floor.

" Sora! What's it doing!?" Dante asked, not noticing a purple light underneath his feet. The light exploded into a pillar of dark energy that blasted Dante into the air as multiple pillars of darkness began to juggle Dante.

Sora noticed the light was underneath him as well and he jumped out of the way while pillars chased after him. Sora kept running as the pillars began to close in on him and he jumped high into the air, performing several flips and gaining height.

Ace saw that Cerberus was causing the dark pillars to appear and attack his comrades as he coated his body in fire as a dark pillar of energy erupted from underneath him.

"!" Ace's body was blasted with dark energy and he was visibly shocked by the fact that he was harmed by this attack. " What the-!? How did that hurt me!?" Ace asked as he created two spears of fire. " St. Elmo's Fire!" Ace threw the spears into Cerberus' mouth,



stopping his attack and allowed Reimu to slam her gohei across the right head's face and threw an amulet into its eyes, blasting it with holy energy.

Dante fell to the ground and began to channel demonic energy into Rebellion. " Drive!" Dante fired a lightning fast sword wave at Cerberus that slammed into his chest and knocked him onto its belly.

Sora ran towards Cerberus and leapt into the air. " Blitz!" Sora performed a powerful leaping attack, slamming his keyblade into Cerberus' middle face three times as the other heads slammed into Sora.

The two heads lifted Sora into the air while the middle head reared back with its fang filled maw wide open. Sora got free of the two heads and jumped into the air with light gathering around his keyblade. " Dog Paddle!" Sora performed a lightning fast downwards thrust that pierced through Cerberus' body and created a pillar of light that reached the ceiling as Cerberus was now stunned.

" Eat this! Homing Amulets!" Reimu threw a multitude of orange amulets into Cerberus while Auron and Dante began to carve him up like a Christmas Ham.

" Stinger!" Dante delivered a powerful stab to Cerberus' face as while Auron slammed his sword into the ground, creating red pillars of energy to pierce through Cerberus' body.

Sora slammed his keyblade into Cerberus' fallen body as a bright light erupted from Cerberus' body as the barrier in front of the door vanished. Sora and the others quickly through the door, closing it behind them before Cerberus could get through.

The group found themselves back at the Underworld entrance as they tried to catch their breath.

" So it seems that this place is draining our strength every second we remain in here." Eirin explained.

" That's not good. The longer we stay, the weaker we'll become." Mario said while rubbing his mustache.

" Yeah. This Land of the Dead is terrible. So many tortured souls, I don't know how Charon can stand working here." Komachi wondered.

"... These poor souls. They shouldn't be tormented like this." Yuyuko was obviously upset at how the dead were being treated here.

Luigi looked around and noticed that Auron was gone. " Where did Auron go?" Sora asked as everyone looked around for him.

" Maybe he wandered off somewhere?" Goofy suggested.

" Most likely, so what's your story Ace? How exactly did you die?" Ziden asked.

"..." Ace remained silent as Yuyuko walked over to him.

" It's okay, Ace. We're all friends here, you can tell us. Besides, we maybe able to understand these Devil Fruit powers better." Yuyuko asked.

"... Very well. I'll tell what caused my death. It all started when I fought a man by the name of Marshall D. Teach." Ace began to tell his story to everyone while they listened with eager eyes and ears.

He went over everything from his battle with Blackbeard to his imprisonment on Impel Down, and his execution at Marineford when his brother, Luffy came to his aid during the Whitebeard war.

His father Whitebeard and his fellow pirates came as well and caused a war that caused many deaths. The Marines and the Seven Warlords were taking on the large force of pirates that opposed. His brother Luffy ended up freeing him as they fought together one last time.

Ace and Luffy almost made it out of the battlefield when they encountered the Marine Admiral named Akainu, a cruel man whom followed the principle of Absolute Justice. Akainu taunted Whitebeard by calling him a coward, angering Ace into a fight with the Admiral.

Ace quickly learned that his powers were unable to match Akainu's and was burned by his power. Akainu taunted Ace before he prepared to strike down Luffy. Ace quickly moved in front of Luffy and took the full brunt of Akainu's magma fist through his chest.

Ace quickly fell into his brother's arms and later died from internal organ damage and blood loss.

Everyone was shocked and angered by the story that was told by Ace. Ziden and Remilia smirked at the idea of fighting these powerful foes and Ace noticed that look. " Ziden! There is no way you could beat Akainu! He'll just burn your flames like he did to mine!"

" \*sigh\* Kid, do you honestly think that Magma boy is going to beat me when he appears before me? My powers are VASTLY different from yours." Ziden said as Ace raised an eyebrow.

" Huh? How is your fire different from his? It looks very similar to his." Youmu said as Ziden snickered.

" Ace, I hate to say it, but your control over fire isn't that impressive. You are only using very basic techniques with those flames." Ziden moved his hand over the ground and Komachi motioned for everyone to move out of the way. Ace watched carefully as fire began to gather into his palm. The fire began to coat his palm and began to pour off of it in a liquid-like stream as everyone was intrigued by what was happening.

" This technique is the start-up to one of my more... deadlier Fire techniques. Because you guys don't know much about me, I'll let you know one thing. I use psychological terror to terrorize my foes." Ziden said while the Liquid Fire began to pool on the floor.

" Psychological Terror? What's that?" Sora asked.

" It would take too long to explain. Simply put, I execute enemies in brutal ways in order to spread fear among my enemies. This technique is one of those techniques." The fire began to rapidly spread across the small platform in front of Ziden as everyone watched in awe. " Liquid Inferno." The magma pool began to move around and created several fiery spikes that pierced through the air. Ziden raised his hand as the magma began to spin around.

A bright red sphere appeared in his hand as the magma formed a sphere. " Magma Prison." Ziden slowly began to crush the sphere while magma began to compress. " Disappear into the Void." Ziden crushed the sphere as the magma exploded, releasing a large amount of power that blasted everyone back.

Ace was amazed at how powerful the attack was and looked at Ziden whom didn't really seem to care. " Remember Ace, Fire is a powerful elemental and is not to be trifled with. Just because you're dead doesn't mean to stop your training, keep honing your skills and you'll be able to stuff like that easily!" Ziden said while smiling.

" Hey guys, no need to like be rushing you guys, but I think we should leave. The curse is really draining the strength of you guys." Komachi said while leaning on her scythe.

" Yeah. I'd like to feel the sun again." Marisa said while walking towards the stairs that Donald found earlier.

" Good, maybe we can find Hercules and find a way to combat this Curse." Ike said while walking towards the stairs.

" Hercules is a Demigod, right Sora?" Sanae asked as Sora nodded.

" Yeah. He was a strong fighter, he was pretty much invincible to my attacks." Sora said as they climbed the steps.

" How did you win, kid?" Komachi asked.

" I hit him with a barrel and he was stunned enough for me to beat him." Sora said while smiling.

"... Really? You beat him with a barrel?" Reisen asked.

" Yeah! I mean, he was still a powerful opponent! He hits really hard!" Sora said while rubbing his face.

" There are some interesting people among the stars. I'd never thought I'd be in Hell and met such interesting people!" Ace said as Yuyuko ran her hand through his hair.

" Don't worry! You won't be here for long! You can come to the Netherworld with me and Youmu when this is over!" Yuyuko exclaimed as Youmu raised an eyebrow.

" Is this allowed? I thought we couldn't take souls from another Realm of the Dead." Youmu asked as Komachi slowed down and walked over to them.

" Sure you could! As long as you don't get caught anyway! Hades is known for doing this, the Yamas have been trying to catch him for years." Komachi said.

Ziden was petting Daiyousei walking up the stairs, which reminded him of the fairies he had played with when he was little. They were really friendly towards him, even when he got older. He valued those fairies as friends and still continues to visit them. " *He is about to reawaken and I'll have to return where I came from. I hope those four won't be too saddened by my disappearance.*" Ziden thought as Daiyousei was looking up at him.

Komachi noticed the distant look in Ziden's eyes and knew what was wrong. " \*Sigh\* Looks like he is about to reawaken, I prefer this Ziden's personality to the other one's." Komachi said while scratching her head.

" Oh, so the real Ziden has finally healed from his injuries? Good, it'll be nice to see him again, but he'll be surprised that he is in a relationship with four girls." Yuyuko said while chuckling.

" Yeah. But I do hope he grows out of his anti-social phase when he gains the memories of this clone." Komachi said.

" I see, so this is clone of Ziden. How different are they personality wise?" Eirin asked.

" Not much except the original Ziden is cockier and more... violent-prone. Plus he doesn't care much for strategy or for his own safety." Komachi explained.

" You said he was anti-social, do you know why he is anti-social?" Eirin asked.

" I can't tell you that. It's a secret between me, Eiki and Ziden. Although he has been making friends though, especially during the last journey we had." Komachi said.

" Yes, was it the real Ziden whom encountered the Princess and Mokou four years ago, or was it the clone?" Eirin asked.

" The original. But because his clone lost his memories, he still won't remember you guys." Komachi said.

" Should we be worried about him getting angry about the fact that he is married to the Princess through a clever ruse of my design?" Eirin asked as Komachi shook her head.

" I doubt it. After seeing how much Kaguya changed, he'll probably enjoy her presence." Komachi said as Eirin sighed. " Although, he'll probably want payback for being turned into a dog, but that's probably it."

" Master Eirin! Look!" A bright light was above them as everyone ran up the stairs and were blinded by the light.

When their eyes adjusted to the light, they saw that they were now in a sunny courtyard with a large building in front of them and two gold statues with two warriors clashing their swords in front of the building.

" So this is the Olympus Coliseum? Quite impressive." Ike said.

" My my, this place nice for a Coliseum. Not even the one on my world was this nice looking." Terra said.

" Poyo Poyo!"

" Imagine all of the strong opponents that could be in here! Oh man, I gotta fight here!" Ziden said as Komachi and Yuyuko pulled on his ears.

" Focus on our goal! We are here to meet Hercules and find a way to protect us from the Underworld curse so we can explore the Underworld and find the gateway so we can move on to the next world, not so you can fight people!" Komachi continues to pull on Ziden's ear.

" Oh look! Someone's is coming out of the building." Sanae yelled as they noticed someone coming out of the building looking depressed.

The man was wearing orange-brown armor with it ending in a metal skirt. He had a brown belt that had a thunderbolt on it. He has a reddish-brown headband tied around his forehead, pushing back his rust-colored hair, save for one bang that falls over it. His sandals are knee-high and have cross-shaped straps and are brown, as are two wristbands he also wears. He also wears a sky blue cape.

" \*sigh\*" The man noticed Sora, Donald and Goofy and immediately perked up. " Sora! Donald! Goofy! Long time no see! How you guys doing?"

" You know, the usual. Looking for friends, beating up Heartless." Sora said as he shook the man's hand.

" Junior Heroes, always busy!" The man said while laughing.

" Who's this guy?" Marisa asked.

" This guy is Hercules." Sora said.

" I see. Do you know of any way to protect us from the Underworld's curse? We got into a fight with Hades and found out that we couldn't harm him." Eirin asked.

" Well there is a stone that Gods use to protect themselves when they go to visit the Underworld." Hercules said as everyone smiled. " But even with the Olympus Stone, Hades is no pushover. I wish I could help you guys, but I have a match today. Maybe Phil could train you guys." hercules said while walking off.

" Wow. He didn't even try to learn our names." Remilia said.

" The guy's exhausted. Seems like he has been fighting a long time." Ziden noticed.

" I wonder why? perhaps Hades is behind it." Reisen thought.

" I wouldn't put it past him." Reimu said.

Meanwhile in the Underworld...

Hades and Pete are sitting in the Throne Room thinking of a plan. " So let me get this straight, that brat's Keyblade can work on any lock, right?" Hades asked.

" Yeah, why?" Pete answered.

" Did I ever tell you of the Coliseum we have here in the Underworld? My Coliseum makes the one upstairs look like an Olympic sized Kiddie Pool." Hades gloated.

" And that's where we'll end Herc the Jerk's winning streak!" Pete figured out.



" Problem, Zeus locked it up tight. So that's why we're gonna snatch that keyblade from him!" Hades planned.

" That won't work. That brat's keyblade is picky about its wielder! It won't just work for any bozo!" Pete explained.

Hades thought for a second as he held out his palm. " Situations like this requires a woman's touch." An image of Meg appeared in his hand while he laughed.

The real Meg felt a cold chill run up her spine as she watched the heroes walk by her.

The heroes saw that they were now in an arena with an square stage that had several large yellow urns on it. There was a satyr pushing the urns into place as Sora approached him.

" Hey champ, how ya feeling? Better rest up for tomorrow's match. Nobody's gonna pay to see a worn-out hero... capiche? Remember what I told you. Victory in the games comes down to two simple words: Eat, bathe, sleep!" The satyr said as Sora, Donald, and Goofy laughed.

The satyr turned around and saw Sora, Donald and Goofy and ran over to them. " It's been a while, Phil!" Sora said as Phil hugged him.

" Well if it ain't the Junior Heroes! How's it going? Have you found what it means to be a true hero yet?" Phil asked as Sora scratched his head. " Thought so. So who are your new friends?" Everyone introduced themselves to the satyr. " So what brings you here?" Sora explained the situation to Phil as he chuckled. " You kids tried to take on Hades?! Hah! You kids are crazy!"

" Hey! We could have taken him if it wasn't for that curse affecting us!" Dante yelled.

" Well, if you want, you guys can train up for a while and I could go get the Olympus Stone for you guys and girls!" Phil said as everyone

nodded happily. " Be right back guys!" Phil ended up walking off towards the exit as Sora summoned his keyblade and entered the ring.

There was a sign that explained what this training exercise was, Maniac. The sign explained that each urn contained point orbs and that you need to collect a certain amount of orbs and was good training for chaining combo.

Ace was watching Sora smashing the urns away while collecting the orbs when he noticed that Youmu was sparring with Ziden while Dante was sparring with Ike.

Ziden was having difficulty keeping up Youmu's speed as he wrapped his sword in fire. Ziden fired a large blade of fire that Youmu slid under and sweep kicked Ziden off of his feet and pointed her sword at his throat.

" Looks like you win, Youmu." Ziden said while getting up.

"..." Youmu remained silent as she sheathed her swords and walked away, leaving Ziden confused before he sensed something.

" Tch! Looks like its time." Ziden said as he disappeared from sight as Komachi and Yuyuko followed him by sensing where his soul was at.

They followed it to the courtyard in front of the Coliseum as they see a Vortex open up and see a man that looked exactly like Ziden but his spiky hair was longer.

" Hey nephews!" Yuyuko yelled as she tackled the Zidens into a strong hug.

" Hmm? Why is the ghost chick here? And why aren't we on Earth anymore?" The other Ziden asked with a relaxed tone.

Yuyuko explained what's going on to the other Ziden as he scratched his jaw. " So right now we're on a world, searching for the gateway, but we decided to help out some random chick we don't know instead of doing what we came here to do?" The other Ziden asked as Yuyuko nodded. " Cool! This means we can fight strong opponents! Now then, clone, give me my memories so that we can kick evil's ass!" The original Ziden placed his hand on the clone's head and began to transfer the clone's memories to his.

" \*sigh\* Let me guess, you want me to go back inside your brain and do what I normally do?" The clone asked as Ziden shook his head.

" Nope, you're heading back to my mansion to do a few... errands for me." Ziden said as the clone sighed.

" You want me to beat those new games you got a few weeks ago, don't you?" The clone asked as Ziden created a vortex behind him. The others came running out and saw two Zidens having a conversation.

" What the- Why are there two Zidens!?" Reimu asked as they both shrugged.

" At least tell them what's going on, Ziden. They deserve to know, so do the people watching us on the ship and those love interests of yours." Komachi said as Ziden gave a look.

" Love interests?... They aren't psychotic, are they?" Ziden asked.

" Its Patchouli, Meiling, Mokou and Kaguya. And there is a chance that Aya and Utsuho might get involved. Oh, and Komachi is your... 'winggirl', she's going to help out somehow and she's getting paid for it." The clone said.

" Yep! You've got a Harem going there, buddy! And all of the girls are into you! Lucky!" Yuyuko said while doing a thumbs up while smiling.

" That is lucky, although I'm not exactly happy about being married to two of them already. After this, I'm kicking someone's ass." Ziden said as the clone slipped into the Vortex and closed it.

" Well it's good to have you back, spikes." Dante said, patting Ziden on the back.

" So that was a clone you created to retrieve your powers and weapons while your body was resting? That was somewhat clever for a man of your intelligence." Eirin complimented.

" So you have all of his memories and powers back in your body then?" Remilia asked as Ziden nodded.

" Yep, I am very happy that I found my long-lost student after all these years. Oh man! Has she got a body on her! I'm so proud of my student!" Ziden said while wiping away tears and blood.

" Wow. This guy is more perverted than the other Ziden, that's for sure!" Marisa said.

" Yeah, I wonder if Mokou upgraded from mosquito bites to bee stings yet? I told her about the milk trick, I remember that much." Ziden wondered.

" Enough with that subject, Ziden! Jeez, I think I miss that clone." Ike said, causing Ziden to laugh.

" So wait, why were you guys in a rush before?" Ziden asked.

" Oh right! Meg's been kidnapped and the Olympus Stone was stolen by an Organization XIII member! Hercules is being forced to fight some creature called the Hydra and we have to find and save Meg!" Reisen explained.

Ziden summoned Hero's Strife and placed it on his shoulder. " Good. I could use a good brawl! Oh and Youmu! After we're done with this world, you and me are having a rematch!" Youmu cracked a smile

before they ran down the stairs to the Underworld as they felt the curse began to affect them.

" Dear god! Talk about being drained!" Ziden exclaimed.

" Hey guys, look! Isn't that Phil over there?" Ace pointed to a downed Phil.

" Hey Phil, are you alright?!" Terra asked as Phil got up.

" Oh my aching head. Oh its you guys. Man, I ended up spotting that theif that had several of those white creatures with him and I chased after him. Next thing I know, I'm seeing stars! He went down that way! You can probably catch up to him if go now!" Phil said while cracking his neck.

" Thanks Phil!" Mario said as they ran down, after the thief as they ran fast down the caves.

They ignored any Heartless that appeared they found themselves in a circular room.

" Huh? You'd think there'd be someone in here, weird." Dante said.

" Poyo poyo!"

"... Show yourself, Melody! I know you're here!" Ziden yelled as a Corridor of Darkness appeared in front of them. Melody and an Organization Member with dirty blonde hair that styled like a mullet with several bangs falling over his forehead.

" Ah. So it seems that we are graced by the original Ziden's presence. Now I can kill you for destroying my Kingdom all those years ago!" Melody said while summoning her violin.

" Huh? Ah! You!" The man said while pointing at Sora. " Roxas!"

Sora, Reimu and Ziden looked confused at the man's comment. " Huh?"

" Hmm?" The man pulled out a note. "Let's see, here... "If the subject fails to respond, use aggression to liberate his true disposition"... Right. Did they ever pick the wrong guy for this one..." The man pulled out a coin-like object.

" Hey! You're the thief!" Sora yelled as the man looked offended.

" Hey! Now that is just rude!" The man said.

" Shut it, Demyx! Hurry up and use the Stone so we can kill them already!" Melody yelled as Demyx used the stone and summoned a blue sitar that looked like the Nobodies emblem.

" Good. Its time for me to kick your ass again, Melody!" Ziden said while cracking his neck.

*Fun Facts:*

*1. The Original Ziden, while stronger than his clone, is also smarter and more perverted and lazy. Only Yukari, Yuyuko, Komachi, Reiji and Xiaomu know that Ziden uses the clone as a backup incase of injury.*

*2. Ziden is also alot more stoic than his clone that you've known so far. You'll see that during fights and the intermission scenes staring him.*

*Author's Notes: I'm sorry about the delay on this chapter! I've just been distracted by alot of things, my annoying cousin who was annoying me the whole time I tried to type. Youtube was another distraction, but not as big as the annoying little girl, acting up behind me. But I promise I shall continue to pump out Chapters! This story shall not die at all! Not if I have anything to say about it!*

# Olympus has fallen and the Dreaded Hydra

## The 13th Struggle ( Kingdom Hearts II)

Demyx starting to play on his sitar as water began to surround him. "Dance, Water, Dance!" The water transformed into clones of Demyx holding his sitar as he command them to move.

" Great. This guy can control water. That will be fun to deal with." Dante said while pulling out Cerberus.

" Well, it looks she planned on making use of Ziden's element weakness. Unfortunately, since the original Ziden is here, that plan won't work so well." Yuyuko said as Ziden spun his keyblade in his hand.

" I'll take care of Melody. You guys take care of mullet guy over there, whatever his name was." Ziden said as he took a battle stance. Ziden placed his keyblade in front of him, holding it with his right hand.

" Oh? Think you can take me by yourself? How overconfident! I'm going to enjoy wiping that overconfidence all over this floor!" Melody began to play a melancholy tune as blue music notes began to dance around her.

" Ace. Feel like being my back-up?" Ziden asked as Ace smirked.

" As long you don't get in my way." Ace said as Melody began to laugh.

" Time for you idiots to drown in sorrow!" The music notes morphed into watery fists and flew towards the fiery duo. Ziden disappeared from sight as Ace rolled out of the way.

" Fire Fist!" Ace threw a large fiery fist at Melody as she conjured a watery fist to counter Ace's. The two fists collided, releasing steam

that fogged up the room.

Ace pulled back his fist as he clutched it in pain as steam enveloped it. " Oh! So Lord Ultima was right! Magic can affect you pesky Logia types! That's good to know!" Melody summoned more watery fists and made them fly at Ace. Melody felt a stinging pain go down her back as she saw Ziden winding up a fire imbued kick.

" Go down!" Ziden slammed his leg into the side of her neck, sending her flying into the wall as a red light surrounded him. " Burn! Flame Spiral!" Ziden unleashed a large spiral shaped burst of fire that slammed into Melody lighting her on fire.

A water clone of Demyx jumped towards Melody and doused her with water, killing the fire off of her as she began to play a hateful tune. " Raging Torrent!" The watery fists merged together to form a large stream of water that was spinning around her.

" Tch! So she's going all-out with the water attacks, huh? This will be fun." Ziden said while stretching his arms.

Sora and Reimu were attacking the hordes of water clones with pure physical attack as they began to fire water lasers. Sora blocked several of the streams and reflected them back the creatures.

Terra finished charging up a spell as she focused it onto a group of enemies that were clustered together. " Gotcha! Thundara!" A large number of thunderbolts slammed into the clones dispersing them.

" How about a Spell Card to whittle down this horde? Nether Sign: Path to Yomotsu-Hirasaka!" A large amount of white ghosts emerged from Yuyuko's Spell Card and began to randomly disperse into the area.

The ghosts immediately began to damage the clones they hit as they exploded into Munny and health orbs.



Remilia was slicing through the clones and firing off small red spears towards Demyx as he panicked and dodged out of the way.

" Stay still, you empty shell!" Remilia yelled as she continues to throw spears at Demyx.

" No way! Getting stabbed hurts, you know?" Demyx said while ducking and dodging them, barely avoiding the attacks. One actually slashed him across the cheek and drew blood.

Ike and Dante noticed that Remilia was focusing her attacks on Demyx and tried to help her out, only to be stopped by the clones as they fired lasers at them. " Tch! Unless we take out Mullet boy, we'll never be finished here!" Dante exclaimed while blocking a laser.

" Yeah, but these clones aren't going to let us get close to him. Perhaps, someone can use an attack to get rid of all of these clones at once. But even then, we still have to deal with Melody." Ike said as he slashed several clones in half.

Marisa was using her broom as a spear and rapidly stabbing the clones, taking out some while grazing the lasers. " Tch! If I was able to use my spellcards, you guys would all be toast right now!"

" Mmmmm! Toast!" Yuyuko said while drooling.

" That woman can't be seriously thinking about food in the middle of a fight!?" Ziden asked while dodging a large stream of water.

" That's your Aunt, Ziden. You tell me." Komachi said while creating a pillar of purple light that launched several of the water clones.

" Come on, guys. Give it up already! No matter how many of the clones you kill, I'll just keep making more to replace them." Demyx said while making more clones.

" Then that means, if we take you out, the clones will stop appearing then!" Marisa said as jumped into the air and fired a multitude of blue

danmaku at Demxy as he created a wall of water to defend himself.

Kirby began to spin, creating a tornado of leaves that were slicing the clones apart as Kirby dispersed the leaves, sending them at Demxy as they pierced through the wall of water and sliced up Demyx. " Whoa! That puffball is tough!" Demyx yelled while jumping backwards to avoid the barrage of leaves coming at him.

" He's not the only tough person in this group!" Sanae yelled as she summoned a powerful gust into the room and slammed both Demyx and Melody into the wall.

" Huh? Didn't know she could do that." Ziden said while scratching his head.

" There's alot about these girls you don't know. Maybe you should ask them sometime during our resting periods on the ship." Komachi suggested as Ziden nodded.

" I should. After all, I'm interested in this...'harem' that the clone got me in." Ziden said as the winds calmed down.

Demyx got up and summoned even more clones as the group was completely surrounded. " All right, time for you guys to drown in my water!" Demyx yelled as Mario hatched an idea.

" Luigi!" Mario called over Luigi and they proceeded to have a conversation in Italian.

" What the heck are they saying?" Marisa asked.

" I think its Italian. Maybe its gibberish?" Sanae wondered.

" Master Eirin? Please tell me that you have plan to get out of this!" Reisen asked as Eirin continued to stare at the two brothers.

" Ah. That plan might work, Mario. Go for it." Eirin said as everyone looked at her confused. " I know many languages; English, Japanese, Russian, German and even Italian."

" Of course you do. Your not special, I know over 60 Human languages and 250 Alien languages." Ziden gloated as Eirin walked over to him.

" Oh? Well I know over 300 Alien languages and 100 Human languages. Try again when you lived longer than me, oh wait." Eirin laughed as Ziden got angry.

" Oh yeah! Laugh it up doc! I've still kicked more ass than you!" Ziden declared as Eirin shrugged.

" Mister Ziden. Those clones are surrounding us, what will we do? I'm scared." Daiyousei said as she clung to Ziden's head.

" I think Mario and Luigi have this under control." Ziden said while plucking Daiyousei off of his head.

" Ziden? Can I hide in your head?" Daiyousei asked as Ziden shrugged.

" Sure. Don't do anything to harm my brain though." Ziden said. Daiyousei transformed into a ball of light and entered Ziden's head as he shivered at the feeling of someone entering his head. " God, that's freaky. Guess I'll get used to it."

Mario reached into his overalls and pulled out a picnic basket that flew over to Luigi and floated over his head. Luigi jumped up and hit the picnic basket as alot of snacks began to fly into the air. The food began to fall down as Luigi ran around to eat the food as Yuyuko watched.

" Those snacks smell delicious!" Yuyuko tried to run over to the falling snacks only to be stopped by Ziden, whacking her in the nose with a paper fan.

" No! Those aren't for you!" Ziden said as Yuyuko got angry.

" You could have told me no!" Yuyuko said while stomping her foot.

" I could have, but I didn't." Ziden said while scratching his head.

Luigi finished eating the snacks as he rapidly grew in size and became a very obese Luigi.

" Whoa! Talk about fattening sweets!" Marisa yelled as Luigi jumped onto Mario.

Mario struggled to lift the massive Luigi as the ground beneath Mario began to crack. " Nrrrrrgggg! Hi-yaaahhhh!" Mario threw Luigi into the air as everyone looked shocked at how strong Mario was.

" Yo-hoo!" Luigi performed a flip and belly flopped on the ground, creating a massive shockwave that blasted all of the surrounding clones off of the ground.

" Wowza!" Demyx is sent flying into the ceiling and the Olympus Stone flies out his pocket and flew into Reimu's hand.

" Got it!" Reimu raised the stone into the air as light shined down over the group. The group felt the protective powers of the stone, nullifying the affects of the Underworld's Curse.

" Whoa! Back at full power! Alright, time to clear this room!" Marisa pulled out her mini-hakero and pointed it at the musicians. " Love Sign: Master Spark!" A large multicolored laser fired from her device and slammed into the musicians, throwing them against the wall.

Demyx fell down as Melody looked enraged. " Damn it! We were supposed to win this time!" Melody became enveloped in a Corridor of Darkness as she disappeared.

" Ugh! Roxas! Come back to us!" Demyx said before he disappeared.

" Man, that guy was like a broken record." Sora said as he pocketed the Olympus Stone.

The group ahead into the next room as they encountered a boulder with a keyhole on it. The boulder also had a glowing picture of Megara on it as Sora raised his keyblade and pointed it at the lock.

" Something tells me something bad will happen when we unlock this bad boy." Dante said while keeping his hand on Rebellion.

" Yeah, but we don't have a choice in the matter. Meg is beyond this lock and we are going to have to unlock it if we want to save her." Terra said as she gripped her arm.

" I wonder if Captain Asszipper is going to be down there too. I sense two people beneath us and one of them is malevolent." Ziden stated as everyone was confused.

" Oh! You're talking about Pete, right?" Goofy said as Ziden nodded.

" Hah! Captain Asszipper! That's funny!" Sanae laughed as Eirin slapped her on the back of the head.

" Focus! We have to save Megara and take Hades down!" Eirin stated as Ace scratched his head.

" *These guys sure are weird but they are friendly. Kinda of like Luffy's friends.*" Ace thought to himself as Sora opened the locked and a green pillar of light reached the ceiling.

" Welp. Bombs away!" Ziden jumped into the hole with the Mario Bros. and Kirby following him.

" Hey! Wait for us, you idiot!" Reimu yelled as she and Sora jumped into the hole.

" Looks like things never change with him. He still leaps before he thinks." Eirin examined as she and Reisen jumped into the hole.

" That's what makes him fun to be around!" Marisa said as she dove into the hole, with her mini-hakkero out and ready to fire.

" Time to rock this party!" Dante and Ike jumped into the hole with weapons drawn.

" Ah! Um, time to save Meg, I guess?" Terra said before she jumped into the hole.

" Geronimo!" Sanae jumped into the hole with Donald and Goofy following her.

" Time to save Meg! Onwards to victory!" Yuyuko declared while leaping into the hole.

" This could be very entertaining!" Remilia declared as she flew into the hole.

Komachi and Youmu were about to jump into the hole when they sensed something behind them. " Phantom. What do you want?" Komachi asked as Phantom phased through the wall and began to chuckle.

" Your hearts... they are filled with such jealousy to your new comrades. The lonely shinigami whose lover was forcibly separated from her by her boss and the loyal gardener whom is secretly jealous of your Mistress' affection to the fallen hero and the Star Warrior. The darkness in your hearts is slowly growing and will consume you." Phantom said while raising his hands to the sky.

Phantom snapped his fingers as several Zealots and Samurai Nobodies surrounded Komachi and Youmu. They both took defensive stances as Phantom summoned a Corridor of Darkness.

" Will you conquer the darkness in your hearts or will your jealousy consume you and drown you in darkness' warm embrace?" Phantom asked as he entered the Corridor of Darkness.

The group landed in a circular room with white mist coating the walls and floor. They also saw Pete standing on the other side of the room

with several Hook bats and ghost-like Heartless that had a striped hat.

" Ghehahahahahah! Looks like you bozos finally made it!" Pete yelled as everyone drew their weapons.

" Yeah, we made it! Now then, Captain Asszipper! I will give you two options; Surrender now and hand over Meg, or we'll kick your face in and then take Meg by force! The choice is yours, tubby!" Ziden threatened as Pete got angry.

" Why you!? I've got you guys outnumbered and outclassed!" Pete boasted.

"... Is that so? I'm counting at least 50 Heartless with you. Minus the fact that most of the members in this group have taken on larger numbers of enemies and that some of us can defeat them with their eyes closed." Eirin paused as Ziden, Mario, Kirby, Dante, Ike and Reimu all chuckled at this.

" Plus there is the fact that we obviously outclass you and your idiotic cronies. So yeah, you totally have us outnumbered and outmatched." Ziden said while tapping his keyblade on his shoulder.

" So what? We have a hostage!" Pete boasted again as he noticed something missing his side.

" Good job, Marisa." Mario thanked as Meg was placed in the center of the group.

Meg was surrounded in dark, cloudy rings that were preventing her from moving.

Pete was furious at this and stomped his foot down into the ground, causing the room to shake violently.

" I'll teach you punks not to make a fool out of me!" Pete slammed his fists into each other as everyone got ready to attack. " This is

going to be easy for me since the Underworld is draining your strength!"

" Do we look drained to you?" Reimu asked as the fliers took flight.

Pete looked bewildered as he quickly grew angry again. " Why you no good little-!?"

" Guys!" Everyone looked up and saw Hercules flying towards them, riding his white Pegasus before landing in front of them. " I'll handle things here! You get Meg out of here!" Hercules yelled as everyone wanted to stay but Eirin had a plan.

"... Alright Herc, we'll get Meg out of here! Come on, guys! Let's move out!" Sora yelled as he sliced through the dark bindings on Meg and flew out of the hole.

Everyone arrived in the previous room and saw Komachi and Youmu fighting off a large group of enemies.

" Sora! Reimu! Dante! Mario! Dolan! Gooby! Ace! We'll handle things here! You guys go help Hercules deal with Pete!" Yuyuko yelled as she released Ziden from her grip and he jumped into the fray with Ike cutting a trail behind him.

" Gotcha! We'll comeback as fast as we can to help you guys out!" Sora yelled as they approached the hole.

" Don't worry about us, ze! These guys are dumb if they think that they can beat us!" Marisa said while throwing and catching her mini-hakkero in her hand while she had a smirk on her face.

" All right! Let's show that overweight freak whose boss!" Reimu said as she flew into the hole with the others following her.

Pete had a smirk on his face as he ordered the Heartless to attack as Hercules noticed Pete's confident face changing to one of shock.



Hercules looked to his left and saw Sora and Reimu standing next to him with Mario, Ace, Dante, Donald and Goofy standing on his right.

" Tch! I'm going to need some back-up!" Pete snapped his fingers as several golden magic circles appeared around him.

The golden soldiers that the group encountered in Rogueport appeared from the circles and surround Pete with 30+ soldiers.

" Great. Its those soldiers again." Reimu said .

" \*sigh\* Yo, Shrine Maiden, if you can't bring yourself to kill these guys, don't worry about it. According to Ike, these guys aren't human anymore. Just a bunch of empty shells that look like humans." Dante said as he gripped Rebellion.

" No, we have to destroy these guys. As much I don't want to, these guys will continue to get in our way if we don't take them out." Reimu said while summoning Yin-Yang orbs to spin around her.

" Alright then. It looks they have some good warriors on their side." Dante observed.

There were several men wielding Lances and wearing light, golden armor ( Soldiers), men whom were wearing golden cloaks ( Mages), men whom had swords and looked like they could move ( Myrmidons), and lastly men whom were wearing heavy golden armor and wielded lances ( Knights).

" Do you recognize these Soldiers, Dante?" Ace asked while cracking his knuckles.

" Yeah, they're from Ike's world. Luckily none of them are much of a threat to us." Dante said as he spun Rebellion.

" Sora! Reimu! Hercules! You guys focus on Pete! We'll keep those guys off of you!" Mario said while absorbing a Fire Flower.

" Gotcha! You're going down Pete!" Sora yelled as several rocks fell down from the ceiling.

### **Rowdy Rumble ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Dante opened fired with Ebony and Ivory and caused the enemies to scatter. Sora charged at Pete, jumping over the Soldiers and Heartless and delivered a powerful overhead strike to Pete's skull, stunning him as Reimu threw several of her orbs into Pete's stomach.

Pete jumped away from the duo and threw a purple bowling ball as them as Sora was hit by the ball and it exploded, throwing Sora into the air.

" Get outta my way!" Pete slammed the both of his fists into the ground. creating a shockwave that flew towards Reimu at fast speeds. Reimu barely dodged out of the way of the attack as she threw several amulets at Pete.

" Not so fast!" Pete surrounded himself in a barrier that blocked the amulets. " Hehahahah! Looks like ol' Pete's invincible!"

Sora appeared above Pete and slammed his keyblade into the top of the barrier, causing it roll towards Hercules. Hercules blew air onto his fist, winded it up and delivered a powerful uppercut to the barrier, shattering it like it was glass.

Pete is thrown off guard by the attack and is sent flying towards Sora. Sora delivered a powerful horizontal strike to Pete, launching him into a wall as Hercules cracked his knuckles.

" Yahoooooooo!" Dante was tearing through the enemies with Rebellion as he stylishly dodged spears and fireballs. Dante locked on to a Myrmidon that was charging at him with a simple Iron Sword.

" Time for you to go down! Prop Shredder!" Dante spun his sword like a fan as the Myrmidon slammed into the spinning blade, getting

caught in the powerful attack as he is lifted into the air by the vicious combo attack.

The Myrmidon is sent flying into the mages, knocking them down and interrupting their spells as the Knight moved in on Dante.

The Knight were about to attack Dante as they noticed several green fireflies surrounding them.

" Firefly." Ace announced as a green glow enveloped his palms. The fireflies continued to amaze the Knights as the fireflies began completely surround each Knight. " Fiery Doll!" The fireflies slammed into the Knights and lit them on fire as their golden armor melted off of their bodies.

Dante noticed that Knights skins were rock-like and they had blood still coursing through their veins. " *Good. So these aren't human then, but they once were humans before they got blessed by that Goddess of theirs.*" Dante thought as he lifted his shotgun and flipped it behind him and fired it without even looking as the bullet blasted a Soldier's head into a red mist.

Mario focused on the Soldiers as they surrounded him. Mario sidestepped a spear thrust and wringed from the Soldier's grip and slammed the blunt side of the spear into his skull and knocked him out. Mario began to twirl the spear around, sizing up the surrounding Soldiers.

A Soldier decided to charge at Mario, only for Mario to slam the spear into the Soldier's skull, knocking him out.

The other Soldiers decided to charge in as Mario created a fiery windmill that was sucking up all of Soldiers, blasting them into the air as they flew into the ceiling and they exploded against the ceiling, causing rocks to rain down on the plumber.

" Here I go!" Mario threw the spear away and pulled out his hammer and used it to launch the boulders away and towards the Mages.

The Mages were caught off guard by the boulders flying them and were crushed by the rocks.

Donald and Goofy were taking out the Myrmidons that were attacking them. Goofy was throwing his shield into the faces of those swordsmen as Donald blasted them with Thunder Magic. They noticed that Pete was getting beaten up by Sora and Reimu pretty badly.

" All right, Pete! Its over now!" Reimu pulled out a Spell Card and pointed it at Pete as he braced himself for an attack, only to see that she pulled out a card.

" What? Bwahahahahaha! Do you really think that a card will hurt me? Are you going to give me a paper cut?" Pete teased as a smirk appeared on Reimu's face.

" Treasure Sign: Yin-Yang Orb!" A large Yin Yang Orb emerged from the card and slammed into Pete's stomach, slamming him into the wall as a bright light came from Pete's body.

Pete slid down the wall and passed out from the attack as the chamber began to shake violently.

" Uh guys! I think this place is about to cave in! We need to move! NOW!" Hercules yelled as everyone scrambled to escape the area before it caved in.

The group escaped the cave-in and saw the other members of the group standing outside the hole with alot of Munny laying around on the ground.

" Had fun down there?" Ziden asked as Reimu tapped her gohei on her shoulder.

" Not really, We had some fun beating up that fat idiot." Reimu said as she collected the Munny that was scattered along the ground.

"..." Ziden unsheathed his sword and swung it at the air next to him.

" My my. So you were able to sense my presence, even though I was invisible. Impressive, Mr Icrim." Phantom became visible as he was staring at Ziden with a grin on his face.

" You're Phantom? The Spector of Chaos whom was partly responsible for me losing my sanity and going on that massacre 6 months ago?" Ziden asked while pressing his sword against Phantom's throat.

" Ah! You must be the Original Ziden, the very one whom Drake encountered in Siberia. It seems that you are much skilled than that clone of yours." Phantom said while turning his attention to Eirin and Yuyuko.

" He has the same level of strength as me, its just our skills that differ. But our attitudes towards you and the Ultima Brigade are the same, we are going to stop you guys from destroying the Universe." Ziden said as Phantom glared at him.

*" I see. So these are the eyes of the Relentless Youth, I can see the bloodlust in his eyes."* Phantom thought as Youmu was glaring at him.

" Well well. It has been nice seeing some of you again, but know this Ziden Icrim, Komachi Onozuka and Yuyuko Saigyouji, we shall meet again and the next we meet, none of you shall survive against my newfound power!" Phantom said as he threw a green fireball into Ziden's face, lighting it aflame as Phantom disappeared into a burst of darkness.

Ziden slapped at his face to put out the flames as his skin was burnt to the point that one could see his facial muscles. " Gah! Your face is burnt off!" Sanae yelled as Ziden chuckled.

" It'll heal in a second. God! It still hurts though!" Ziden's regeneration kicked in and his face healed within a matter of seconds.

" We should get going, we still have Hades to deal with." Eirin said as everyone agreed.

" Wait... Herc, you did kill that Hydra, right?" Ziden asked.

" Yeah. I slit its throat and everything!" Hercules said.

"... \* Sigh\* Amateur." Ziden said under his breath as he opened a vortex to the Underworld entrance. Everyone stepped through and saw Hades standing in front of them.

" Well now, looks like you guys had some saving Meg." Hades said as everyone sneered at him.

" What do you want, O Great Lord of the Dead? Come to taunt us for wasting our time dealing with the fat tub of lard that is Captain Asszipper?" Ziden said with a sarcastic tone.

" Ah, Ziden! Your wit never gets old. So you do know that you guys aren't supposed to meddle in the affairs of the worlds, correct? " Hades asked as Ziden shrugged.

" Oh please! When have I ever cared for rules? I'll go wherever I want, do whatever I want, and kick anyone's ass whenever I want! That goes for you Gods and Goddesses too!" Ziden threatened.

" Oooooo! Scary! Anyway, you guys should probably get up there and check on the Coliseum. I hear that the Hydra that you failed to kill is making a real mess up there!" Hades said before he disappeared.

Ziden merely shook his head at this as he looked back at Hercules and sighed. " We should go deal with the Hydra upstairs. Man, Hydras are annoying to deal with." Ziden said while summoning his keyblade.

" Uh, why are they annoying to deal with?" Remilia asked.

" You'll see~!" Yuyuko said as she flew towards the stairs.

" Wait for us, Lady Yuyuko!" Youmu flew after her master as everyone ran after them.

" Great! So we're dealing with a dangerous monster like a Hydra? This will be fun for a Monster Hunter like you, right?" Sanae asked.

" Sure, if we weren't dealing with an A-Class Monster that annoys the hell out of me. Maybe since we're on a different world, it'll be easier." Ziden hoped as they climbed the stairs.

They saw the bright light as they climbed the steps and entered the Coliseum area as they were shocked at the sight. The Coliseum was badly damaged and several of the marble pillars were as they noticed large footsteps shaking the ground.

" No. What have I done? I'm-I'm a failure, a washout. I'm no hero." Hercules fell to his knees and quickly dropped into a depression spiral.

Phil immediately ran over to Hercules and tried to cheer him up as the Hydra appeared and climbed over the remains of a wall as the group observed the massive creature.

The Hydra is a massive, reptilian creature with dark purple skin. Its body is rather bulky and it crawls using two four-fingered hands with white claws. The Hydra's head sporting a long, serpentine neck, large mouth filled with white fangs, orange eyes with slit pupils, and spikes lining the top of its head down the length of its neck.

" \*Whistles\* That's a big lizard!" Dante said as the creature roared.

" Eep! Be careful, Mister Ziden! That thing looks mean!" Daiyousei said as she flew over to Hercules and hid behind him.

" All right! Lets kick this thing's ass!" Marisa yelled as she took to the skies.

" Sure, this will be easy. Why don't we leave this to Monster Hunting Expert?" Komachi suggested as Ziden glared at her.

" Hahahahah! You're so funny, Komachi! I've got a better idea! Why don't I feed you to the Hydra and let it die from choking on those oversized pillows you call a chest?!" Ziden yelled as Komachi pointed her scythe at Ziden.

" Want to run that by me again? Because I could have sworn you said something about my-" Komachi was interrupted by the Hydra letting out a roar that shook the ground around them.

" Knock it off you two! We have to deal with this thing before it causes more damage to this place!" Eirin yelled as Ziden and Komachi turned to the Hydra.

" This isn't going to be easy, but we can do this!" Terra said as the Pegasus ran over to them.

" We'll help out too!" Phil said as they took a battle stance.

### **Desire for all that is Lost ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Ziden throws his keyblade at the Hydra's head as it moved to the side to dodge the airborne weapon. The Hydra turned to look at the person who threw the weapon only to not see that person.

Ziden reappeared behind the Hydra's head and grabbed his keyblade while doing a spin in the air. Ziden delivered a powerful strike to the Hydra's head, slamming it into the ground and stunning it as Komachi ran up to it.

Komachi slashed one of its eyes out as green blood sprayed out of the wound. Komachi delivered a powerful chop to the creature's face, stunning it even more as Ace pointed his fist at the Hydra.

" Fire Fist!" Ace's fist erupted in flames and shot forward like a cannon, exploding against the Hydra's body as Youmu unsheathed



her swords.

" Allow me to finish this!" Youmu dashed forward at lightning fast speeds and aimed at the Hydra's neck with the intent of chopping off its head as Ziden's face turned to shock.

" Youmu! No, wait!" Ziden tried to stop Youmu but was too late. Youmu sliced through the creature's neck as its head flew off of its body and fell onto the ground with a sickening splat.

" Good job, Youmu! You just made this fight harder for us!" Phil yelled as Youmu sheathed her swords.

" What do you mean? I sliced off the Hydra's head. It should be dead, right?" Youmu asked.

" Yeah, if it wasn't a Hydra. I'm about give you girls and guys a lesson on Hydras. Everytime you cut off their heads, two more will grow back in its place!" Ziden explained as the Hydra's neck began to violently shake.

Just as Ziden said earlier, the Hydra's head grew back with two more friends as they began to breathe black fireballs onto the group.

Ziden was blasted with one of the fireballs and was sent flying into the rubble of the debris.

Remilia took flight and threw several Heart Breaks into its body, drawing more of its green blood out of its body as it began to flood the floor.

Mario and Luigi performed a Bros. Attack as Mario ran forward with his hammer out and Luigi came up from behind and slammed his hammer into Mario, causing to go into the ground and moved towards the Hydra's body.

Mario jumped out of the ground, right next to the Hydra's body and performed a powerful spin attack that was dealing large amounts of

damage to the Hydra's body.

One of the Hydra's heads lurched out and grabbed Remilia into its sharp fangs as it bit deeper into its flesh, causing Remilia to scream in pain as she struggled to get free from the Hydra's maw.

Eirin fired several arrows into the Hydra's eyes, forcing it to release Remilia from its bite as she fell onto the ground and began to heal her wounds.

The other heads focused their attention on Eirin as their eyes flashed blue. A powerful blue lightning bolt pierced through her stomach, leaving a bloody hole in her torso. Eirin fell to her knees and clutched her bleeding wound as Reisen ran over to her.

" Oh no! Master Eirin! Are you alright?!" Reisen asked as Eirin's wound began to heal.

" I'm fine, Udonge. This creature is alot stronger than I would have imagined. I can barely move because of that lightning striking me." Eirin said as she fell on her behind.

Sora was dodging the lightning bolts as they tried to copy what happened to Eirin, but were unable to hit the agile youth. Sora wrapped his keyblade in ice and threw at one of the Hydra's heads, freezing it as Reisen fired a danmaku bullet at it, shattering it as Ziden emerged from some rubble.

Kirby was running around the Hydra's body, firing sharp leaves into its body and trying his hardest not to slip up in large puddle of blood that is gathering on the floor.

" Blizzara!" Terra summoned a large icicle to slam into the creature's body body freezing it as a lightning bolt strikes her arm, burning it as she fell down and cried out in pain as she casted Cura on herself.

Youmu and Ike were running around the Hydra and dodging the fireballs and lightning that were raining down on them. Ike threw his

sword into the air, jumped up to catch it and slammed it into one of the heads, killing it as it fell to the ground.

One of the heads saw its fallen comrade and came up with a smart plan. It lurched over to the other neck and proceeded to eat the other necks.

"What the hell?! Is it eating itself!?" Ziden asked as head finished eating the necks as the heads were separated from the necks.

"Huh? That's pretty smart, it's making more heads for its body." Yuyuko examined as she felt a surge of power building up inside of her.

The Hydra now had 7 heads and was now going all out with its lightning attacks. Ziden decided to walk over to Hercules and sat next. "Screw it. I'm done for today! You kids can handle the rest of this fight as I rest here and eat this here Pizza. All. By. Myself!" Ziden said while pulling out a box of Pizza from out of his jacket.

"All right then. Time for some hand-to-hand action!" Dante announced as a bright light came from his body.

Everyone looked in Dante's direction and saw that he was wielding a new weapon. On his arms and legs were gauntlets and greaves that had several white lines going over them.

"All right, Beowolf! Time to 'lighten' things up!" Dante laughed at his pun as he charged at the Hydra's body and delivered several lightning fast punches that stunning the large creature.

"Huh, those gauntlets... I see now. It seems that they are boosting Dante's attack strength and speed. Impressive weaponry." Eirin observed as Dante unleashed a vicious spin kick on the poor 7-headed beast.

Yuyuko felt a surge power flow through her body as she unleashed her Overlimit! "Oh my! It seems that I got my Overlimit!"

" Go down, you overgrown lizard! Rising Dragon!" Dante performed a powerful jumping that slammed into its belly and caused all of the heads to cough up blood. " Not done yet! The Hammer!" Dante performed a double fisted haymaker to its stomach and sent it flying into the air.

" I got him! Love Sign: Master Spark!" Marisa fired her trademark seizure causing beam into the Hydra as it engulf the creature as several colorful butterflies.

Yuyuko began to unleash her Mystic Arte as the Butterflies landed on the Hydra as Yuyuko opened her arms as if she was about to give someone a hug. A surge of mysterious energy ripped through the Hydra's body as Yuyuko floated up to the Hydra.

" Feel the wondrous embrace of the afterlife. Blessed Departure!" Yuyuko said as the butterflies exploded and caused large amounts of damage to the creature as bright light came from its body.

The Hydra fell onto the ground, lifeless as everyone walked over to Hercules while Yuyuko and Youmu stayed near the Hydra's body.

" I'm nothing but a failure." Hercules was trailing down the river of depression and was stuck on it without a paddle, I reckon.

" Come on, Herc. Cheer up, it's not your fault." Sora said in an attempt to cheer him up, but it didn't work.

Everyone tried their best to try and cheer Hercules up, but none of their attempts were working.

" Oh wait. Hercules, I got the Olympus Stone back! Here." Sora pulled the Olympus Stone out of his pocket as a red light surrounded it. Sora unlocked another gateway as Phil approached them.

" Whoa! What's with the light show, guys?" Phil asked.

" We've got to get going, but don't worry! We're going to come back!" Sora said.

" Ace. As much I know that Yuyuko wants to take you and Auron with us, you can't come with us on this journey. You'll have to stay here until we can transfer you and Auron to Gensokyo." Ziden explained as Ace smiled.

" Hey. You make sure and kick those Ultima Brigade guys asses and keep these worlds safe! I'll see you guys when you get back!" Ace said as the magic circle surrounded the group and the Hydra.

The group was now back on the Zeta Dreadnought and Ziden was wondering why Yuyuko brought the Hydra on the ship with them.

" Why, isn't it obvious? I want you to cook it for me! Youmu can help you out if you want!" Yuyuko said while moving from side to side.

" \*Sigh\* I will never get used to you guys. All of you are weird." Ziden said as he walked off.

" We're not weird. He's weird." Reisen said as they walked to the TV room.

" Hmm? Why am I sensing magical energy coming from the Library? That Patchouli girl must doing some form of experiment. I should meet her and see if I should be angry with my clone getting me involved with her and 3 other girls. Luckily the last time it was only one girl and she was mean." Ziden thought aloud as he exploded in a burst of purple light.

*Meanwhile in the Library...*

Patchouli was standing in front of a large magic circle as she was holding a mysterious book. Alice was also here as she was interested in this experiment.

" Time to see if this book truly is a real magic tome." Patchouli said as a burst purple light appeared behind her.

" What are you doing, Patchouli?" Ziden asked as Patchouli turned around.

Patchouli turned around and looked at Ziden with an emotionless expression. " Oh, you must be the Original Ziden. I do hope that you are a lot less touchy than the clone." Patchouli said as she turned back around.

" Not bad, clone, not bad!" Ziden said as he sat down on a chair and watched this experiment as well. " Well, what are you doing?"

" I'm trying a spell that will summon a demon familiar to this realm and it will help me manage this library." Patchouli said.

" Oh, what makes you think that the spell will work and do you think that this Library is yours?" Ziden asked.

" It will and I've read in several books that in marriages the spouses share their belongings." Patchouli said as Ziden chuckled.

" Well, as long as you know that, I'm fine. You should know that the clone did get me involved with a woman during the last war and she is... uh unique. She's quite the trooper." Ziden said as the magic in the circle sparked up.

" Its working and as long as she doesn't try to kill us, I'm fine with it." Patchouli said as a black creature began to emerge from the circle and took on a disturbing shape.

" Ewww! What the F\*\*\* is that thing and why does it look like that!?" Ziden swore as he took out his sword.

" Ziden! Language and I don't know! Something went wrong!" Patchouli said as she covered her eyes.

"... Those two didn't even notice that I was here." Alice placed her head on the table and slowly cried as Shanghai patted her on the back.

*Fun Fact:*

- 1. Ace is not going to be joining the Heroes on this journey. Just thought I'd put that out there.*
- 2. Yuyuko's Mystic Arte, Blessed Departure, has a 50% chance of Insta-killing its targets.*

*Author's Note: Another Chapter is out and I'm sorry about the delay! I got really distracted by Kingdom Hearts II because I finally got the Emulator to work ( I do own the game and the system, but the latter is broken and I don't feel like buying another one.). I have also been distracted by Shin Megami Tensei games because of how fun they are, I mean, holy crap! Oh yeah, that creature Patchouli summoned is from SMT and is visually disturbing to men and children alike. You have been warned for the next chapter! Send in more Reviews dudes!*

## Battle against Mara and Disney Castle

Ziden just stared at the visually disturbing demon while he withheld the need to throw up as the creature moved from side to side.

"Wow, Patchouli. Didn't know that 'this' was the type of 'helper' you wanted. Gensokyo girls sure are lonely if they are looking for these kinds of entertainment." Ziden joked as Patchouli's face turned red and she slammed her book into Ziden's skull.

"I wasn't trying to summon... that thing! And shame on you for thinking such a disgusting thought!" Patchouli scolded Ziden as he scratched his head.

"Hey, I blame those weird animes I come across." Ziden said while shrugging.

"Whatever. Help me get rid of this thing, you perverted idiot!" Patchouli ordered as she opened a magic tome and began casting some magic.

"Gahhahahahah! Do you think you guys can beat me, Mara, a powerful demon goddess? What a joke!" Mara laughed as Ziden felt appalled.

"That thing's a woman?! Eww! You look like something you'd find in a Troll's loincloth!" Ziden said as Mara growled.

"Ziden! Would you stop with those kinds of jokes!? You are making me sick!" Patchouli yelled as Ziden unsheathed Crimson Edge.

"You'll get used to it, purple wife!" Ziden spun his blade as Patchouli blushed.

"*Purple Wife? That'd better not be my nickname.*" Patchouli thought as Alice walked in between them.



" Come on, guys. We can beat this guy... girl... thing if we work together and-"

" Gyahhhhhhh!" Both Ziden and Patchouli were startled by Alice's sudden appearance as they began to yell in unison. " WHEN'D YOU GET HERE!?" Alice fell down with an aura of depression surrounding her.

" Why didn't they notice I was here the whole time?!" Alice was clearly upset at not being noticed by the duo.

" *I think she was here the whole time, Ziden.*" Patchouli whispered as Ziden leaned over to her.

" *Really? I never even noticed her being here, my senses must be getting rusty.*" Ziden whispered back as Patchouli shrugged.

" Who cares. Lets get rid of this... thing so I can retry this experiment and summon the creature I actually wanted to summon." Patchouli said as several dolls surrounded Alice.

" Gahahahahha! Time for all of you to die- GuuuuuaaaaaahhhH!" Ziden interrupted Mara by delivering fiery jump kick to Mara's face and sent her flying into a bookshelf knocking it over as Patchouli slapped Ziden in the back of the head.

" Don't fight him here! You'll damage all of these books here if you do!" Patchouli warned as Ziden merely sighed.

" How am I supposed to get him out of here? Lead it through this maze of a bookshelves? No way, Jose!" Ziden said as gap appeared above the fallen Mara and sucked in the creature as Yukari appeared next to Ziden.

" Long time no see, Ziden. Its been awhile hasn't it?" Yukari asked.

" Yep, its been about a year since we last met, that demon invasion was a real pain to deal with!" Ziden said as Patchouli tapped him on

the shoulder.

" Sorry to spoil this little reunion, but are you two forgetting about Mara?" Patchouli asked as the duo scratched their heads.

" Kinda, sorta." They said in unison as Yukari opened another gap.

" Come on, its been a while since I've been in a fight with a strong opponent like that. Lets go!" Yukari walked through the gap as the others followed her into the gap as they found themselves in a new room of the ship.

It was a room that had walls lined with blue tiles with several green lines in between them. There a large glass window above them with the rest of the Gensokyians watching them. Kaguya waved at Ziden while she received a glare from Mokou as she waved at him as well.

" Ah. You sent us to the Teleportation Battleground room that Smashers use to practice while journeying Master Hand's world. Smart thinking, buddy." Ziden said as Yukari spun her parasol.

" Of course I did. I wanted the girls to see this fight so that they could evaluate your skills as a warrior and hero. We are going to help you in this fight, but we want you to show off your best skill when fighting Mara!" Yukari said as Ziden sighed.

" And who exactly wants to see my skills again?" Ziden asked.

" Those two up there and Remilia want see your skills, so be the show-off that you naturally come out and impress us! I sure hope you aren't rusty after all that time off." Yukari said as Youmu and Meiling were watching them closely.

" Whatever. Lets get this over with so I can take a nap. This is going to be such a pain." Ziden said as he enter walked over to a terminal and spoke into a mic. " Computer, send us a cliff-like location. I don't care which one, just send us to one so we can kill this creature."

" Okay! Activating Teleportation Battleground now!" A overly excited female voice announced as a bright light shone in the room, blinding everyone as the fighters were now in a new area.

" Hmm? What is this place? This place... I feel like something terrible happened here." Ziden said as he looked around the rocky grounds that had discarded swords in the distance or at least they looked like swords.

" Enough of this! Time for all of you to die!" Mara roared as Ziden spun Crimson Edge around.

" Enough talk, evil phallus creature! Time for you throw down with a Demon Hunter and a God Slayer!" Ziden yelled as everyone got ready to fight.

### **I'll Face Myself ( Persona 4)**

Ziden fired a powerful sword wave into Mara's body, blasting him into a wall as Ziden began to cast a spell. " Time to see what secrets you hold, Scan!" A targeting reticle appeared over Mara as a blue screen appeared next to her. Several pieces of information appeared on the screen.

" Tyrant Mara. Strong against Physical, Ice, Electrical, and Wind attacks. Nullifies Curse and Expel attacks. Weak against Fire based attacks." Patchouli read aloud as Ziden coated his sword in fire.

" Bwaaaahaahha! Even if you know my weakness, none of you have the brass balls needed to take me on!" Mara taunted as Ziden scoffed.

" Why have brass balls when I have solid diamond ones?" Ziden joked as Yukari slapped him in the back of the head.

" Summer Red!" Patchouli summoned a fire ball that flew towards Mara and slammed into Mara, dealing extra damage considering its weakness.

" Curse you, purple woman! I'll make you faint by penetrating your defenses and making you faint from my massive strength!" Mara roared as Patchouli withheld the need to vomit.

" Must this thing make sexual jokes everytime it talks?" PAtchouli asked as Ziden placed his hand on Nosada's hilt and sheathed Crimson Edge.

" Apparently, of course if she's going to bust out some jokes, then I'm going fire back with my own!" Ziden said while crouching down.

" Eat this!" Mara slammed her body into the ground and released a shockwave that everyone but Ziden flew into the air to dodge.

" Iai Blow: Infernal Star!" Faster than a flash of lightning, Ziden unsheathed his sword, swung it and quickly sheathed it as a star made of fire appeared over Mara, burning her as Yukari opened a gap over it and flaming debris rained down on her.

" Fire Metal Sign: St. Elmo's Fire!" Patchouli used a spell card and fired a large ball of fire that into the ground underneath Mara's chariot, creating a large pillar of fire that threw her into the sky.

Alice commanded her dolls to charge at the airborne demon and they swarmed onto Mara, rapidly stabbing her with their lances as Mara let out a roar to scatter the dolls.

" Take this! Hades Blast!" Mara fired a powerful blast of dark energy at the group. Patchouli erected a barrier to protect herself from the attack. Yukari opened a gap and teleported the attack away as Alice created a shield of dolls to take the full brunt of the attack.

Ziden watched as the attack flew closer to him as he gripped his sword with the both of his hands while he assumed a Batter's Stance.

Yukari saw this and decided to play along with it. " Swing! Batter Batter Batter Batter! Swing!"

Ziden swung his sword like a bat and slammed it hard into the dark energy as he summoned all his strength to push the dark energy back at Mara. " And it's a Home-Run!" Ziden reflected the blast back towards Mara. The blast slammed into Mara, exploding against her body as a red light wrapped around him.

*" Hmm? Ziden's about to use a Fire Spell on that creature? Not only that, I can sense alot of magical energy gathering around him. What magic using clan is a part of his family, I wonder?"* Alice wondered.

" Wielder of the flame, reduce these evil souls to ashes... Explode!" A large ball of fire appeared above Mara slowly descended onto her as the ball slammed onto the Demon Goddess, creating a massive explosion of fire that was severely burning the demon as Alice pulled out a spell card.

" Curse Sign: Shanghai Doll!" Alice summoned her Shanghai Doll as it fired a large pink laser into the fiery explosion, pushing Mara out of the fiery sphere as Mara is sent flying far into the distance.

" Nice shot, Alice. At least now I can take a nap... whoa. Is that a...?" Ziden jumped up a cliff and ran over to a sword as Patchouli, Alice and Yukari followed him.

" Wait a sec? That can't be what I think it is." Patchouli said as Ziden lifted up the sword.

" These things are all over the place. Did some big battle happen here?" Alice asked.

" More like a war. I smell alot of blood in this place. We should leave... now." Yukari said as a magic circle appeared behind them.

" A war... involving these weapons? What could have driven these people to fight?" Ziden wondered as he placed the weapon down and entered the circle.

They entered the circle and were teleported back to the ship as Ziden let out a big sigh. " Well, Patchouli, this should teach you not to summon familiars with an outdated Demon Summoning Guide." Ziden said as Patchouli snorted.

" Whatever. I'll get it right next time, if you're willing to help out." Patchouli asked as Ziden shrugged.

" Sure, but know that I'm taking a nap so don't cause anymore trouble, kay?" Ziden asked as Patchouli nodded.

" Oh no you don't!" Ziden looked up to see Remilia crashing through the window and landing in front of him. " You owe my Gatekeeper a proper duel!"

" No. He owes me a proper duel!" Youmu appears in front of Remilia as Ziden shakes his head.

" Too bad. I will deal with you guys after my nap." Ziden tries to leave, only for Remilia to stand in front of the door.

" Oh, no you don't! You'll fight her now!" Remilia ordered as Ziden sighed.

" All right then. Screw the nap, we're heading to the next world right now!" Ziden said as Remilia's face turned sour.

" What? But we just got back!" Remilia was upset as Yukari realized what Ziden was doing.

" And I was thinking I could make a nice meal for everyone after that nap, but if you want to interrupt that, then I guess we can go to the next world." Ziden said as he opened a vortex to the Teleportation Room.

" Wait!... You can have your nap, but after this next world, you fighting Meiling and then the bob-cut girl!" Remilia said while stomping her foot.

" Good. Welp, nap time here I come!" Ziden said as he vanished from everyone's sight.

Many hours later...

Ziden woke up to find that he was not sleeping alone in his room as he looked over to his left and saw Yukari outcold next to him while violently turning in her sleep.

"..."

Smack!

" Gahh!" Yukari snapped up and rubbed her sore face which was red from Ziden's hand.

" Stop rolling around so much. Its annoying." Ziden said while getting out of the bed.

" You didn't have to slap me in the face. If me and you weren't so close, I'd have killed you for that." Yukari threatened as she got up and Ziden noticed that she was wearing her other outfit.

" Going back to your old purple dress thing, huh? Fits your figure quite nicely, Yukari." Ziden complimented as Yukari chuckled.

" My, what a gentleman you are! I prefer my buddy over that clone of yours anyway. He doesn't have that same sense of flair that you do." Yukari said as she walked out of the room.

" He sure doesn't. I guess I should try to make some sort of food with that Hydra." Ziden decided to make some form of food with the Hydra as he made his way to the Kitchen.

Ziden looked upon the large body of the Hydra while thinking of ways to make into food. " Maybe you could grill it?" Ziden turned around and saw Sakuya standing behind him wearing a Kitchen Apron.

" That could work, of course I'd have to slice off pieces of its body in order to grill it properly. Maybe make them into Steak sized portions." Ziden said as he began to slice off several pieces of the Hydra as Sakuya helped to place the pieces onto the grill.

Ziden made sure to grab a spatula and washed it off as he turned the grill on as the meat began to cook.

" So Master Ziden, I was wondering if you could help me with something?" Sakuya asked as Ziden sighed.

" What?" Ziden asked as Sakuya flipped over a steak.

" I was wondering since you trained me to be a Vampire Hunter, maybe you could take it a step further and train me to be Demon Hunter as well." Sakuya asked as Ziden scratched his chin.

" Sure."

" Please! I really want to keep training under you! Please Master!"

" Sakuya I said su-"

Sakuya gets on her knees and bows repeatedly. " Please! \*Throck\* Ow!"

" I said sure, you idiot!" Ziden yelled as Sakuya rubbed her head.

" Thank you, Master Ziden." Sakuya said while bowing.

" Whatever. Don't expect it to be easy. Your training will start when this journey is over." Ziden announced as Sakuya eagerly nodded.

" Now lets focus on fixing this food." Ziden said as they began to focus on cooking the food.

According to Ziden's eyes, everyone seemed to enjoy the Hydra Steaks as none were remaining at the end of dinner. Yuyuko seemed to love it as well, she devoured at least 45 35 oz. Hydra Steaks.



Ziden led everyone to the Teleportation Room as he had them draw straws out of the cup as the following people were picked; Sakuya, Yuyuko Nitori, Flandre, Meiling, Aya, Yukari, Mokou, Komachi.

" Yay! I get to explore a world with my big brother!" Flandre exclaimed as Ziden stared blankly at her.

" Hold on a sec! Whom are you referring to as big brother?" Ziden asked as Flandre pointed at him. " Great. Whatever, let's get this world done and get out of here!"

The transporter activated as everyone found themselves in a docking bay as Donald and Goofy walked around with worry written all over their faces.

" So this is your home, right?" Sora asked.

" Yeah, but something feels fishy in here." Goofy said as he began to climb some stairs.

" Lets get outside. Something tells me that this isn't going to be an easy job." Ziden said as everyone went outside of the docking area and entered the garden as they immediately heard the music shift.

### **Desire for all that is Lost ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

" Oh no! There are Heartless in the Castle!" Goofy said while taking out his shield.

" Great. I take it that Heartless being here is a bad thing?" Aya asked.

" No time for talk! We have to find Queen Minnie!" Donald ran off towards a door leading into the castle, blasting any Heartless away with his magic as everyone chased after him, ignoring the Heartless as they ran through the castle's white hallways.

Ziden spotted a large white door, sealed behind a barrier as everyone entered a large room with several animate brooms

cleaning the room. They also noticed that Goofy and Donald had very stiff posture as they standing in front of mouse wearing a pink dress and a regal tiara.

" Queen Minnie! We're glad that you're safe!" Goofy and Donald exclaimed in unison.

" So this is your queen?" Sora asked.

" I'd assume so. This is a regal looking castle, I'm kind of jealous." Ziden said as he leaned against the wall.

" Oh? Would you happen to be Sora?" Minnie asked as Ziden shook his head.

" Not me, Sora's over there. The name's Ziden." Ziden introduced himself as Minnie remembered something.

" King Mickey mentioned you and a woman named Yukari in his letter." Minnie said as Yukari stepped forward.

" Wait, the King knows us?" Ziden asked.

" Yeah, we met him during the last war, remember?" Yukari said as Ziden remembered.

" Anyway, what's going on here? Why are there so many Heartless in the Castle? I thought the Heartless couldn't come here?" Donald asked.

" Something terrible has happened to the Cornerstone!" Minnie exclaimed as Reimu scratched her head.

" The Cornerstone?" Reimu asked.

" Its a stone in this world that keeps the Darkness out of the castle." Minnie explained.

" So where is this Cornerstone anyway?" Aya asked.

" In the castle's basement. I had to seal it off so that nothing evil could get in." Minnie said as she walked to the door.

" Well then lets go check it out then. Something tells me that the Rulers of Darkness are behind this." Reimu suggested as Yukari nodded.

" Possibly, but I doubt it. Something tells me its someone else." Yuyuko added.

" Only one way to find out." Mokou said as she left the room.

" Lets go." Komachi said as she stood near Queen Mickey to protect her from the Heartless that were in the hallway.

They made their way to a large white door that was sealed off by a pink barrier with a Hidden Mickey on it. " I shall unlock the door for us." Minnie raised her hands into the sky as the barrier vanished. A small portion of the door opened up for the group to enter.

They entered the room and immediately summoned their weapons when they saw the large swarm of Bolt Towers in the Throne Room.

" Oh no! They got here too!?" Minnie exclaimed.

" Sora! Get Minnie to that throne safely while we hold off these Heartless!" Ziden yelled as Komachi walked over to Minnie and Sora and placed her hands onto their shoulders. Ziden blinked once as he noticed that Komachi and everyone else were next to the throne.

" Have fun with the Heartless, Ziden!" Komachi said as Minnie revealed the stairway to the Cornerstone room.

" Hey! Don't you leave me here with these things!" Ziden yelled as they climbed down the stairs, completely ignoring him as the Heartless surrounded him. "... Well, this is going to suck." Ziden said as the Bolt Towers began to fire lightning at him.

The group found themselves in a dark basement with several thorny vines and they saw the Cornerstone that was sitting on a white pedestal.

" So this is the Cornerstone? It has alot of spiritual power in it." Reimu observed as she walked around it.

" Who could have done this to the Cornerstone of Light?" Goofy asked as a villainous laughter rang throughout the room.

A burst of green fire appeared in front of the Cornerstone of Light as everyone took an offensive stance. From inside the fire, you could see the shape of a woman wearing dark robes and a black, pointy headress and her her green skin as Sora knew this woman.

" Maleficent! You're behind this!?" Sora asked as Maleficent began to laugh.

" Of course I am! Whom else could have caused such a great tragedy as this!" Maleficent boasted as Sora summoned his keyblade.

" So this is that witch you were telling us about Sora?" Yukari asked as she walked over to his side.

" Hmm? So it seems that you have some new allies, boy. No wonder Pete had so much trouble dealing with you." Maleficent said while looking over at everyone in Sora's group.

" Maleficent! Why have you done this to the Cornerstone of Light!?" Minnie angrily asked.

" Why it's quite simple my dear queen. I'm in the market for a new castle and I came across yours and thought ' My, what a lovely castle. It would look much better with a touch of darkness!" Maleficent revealed as she began to cackle.

"Wow, that's some plan you got there. Too bad we're here to stop you." Everyone turned around and saw Ziden coming down the stairs, with his clothes torn and several burns on his skin that were starting to heal. "Thanks for leaving me to deal with all those Heartless, that was so fun by the way."

"Oh? So you must be Ziden, the Black Knight told me all about you." Maleficent said as Ziden glared at her.

"So the Black Knight is working for you! You tell that bastard I'm going to tear him limb from limb when I find him!" Aya yelled as Marisa held her back.

"Oh, will you now? I doubt that you will be able to pierce through that armor of his when even the Heartless can't. But enough of this meaningless chatter, I have other business to attend to." Maleficent disappeared in a burst of green fire.

"Oh no! This castle is going to be overrun by Heartless soon. If only Merlin was here." Minnie said, losing all hope that the castle could be saved.

"Wait, Merlin? Isn't that the name of that wizard in Hollow Bastion?" Yukari asked.

"Yeah, he supposedly trained my teacher Mima when she was starting out." Marisa said as Ziden scratched his head.

"*Mima? Why does that name sound familiar to me?*" Ziden thought as Mokou walked over to him.

"Hey! We need to head back to Hollow Bastion and get Merlin over here!" Mokou said while poking Ziden in the chest.

"Fine. Yukari, gap Sora, Donald and Goofy over to Hollow Bastion while we try to get rid of these thorns." Ziden said as Yukari waved her hand.

A large gap appeared underneath Sora, Donald and Goofy and sent them on a trip to Hollow Bastion while the group thought of ways to get rid of the thorns.

Mario and Luigi threw their hammers at the thorn, only for them to bounce off of them and slam right into Ziden and Mokou's faces, knocking them on their backs as everyone sweatdropped at the sight of them rolling around the floor while clutching their broken noses.

Kirby tried to inhale to all of the thorn, only for him to get tired and pass out on the floor.

Reimu tried blasting the thorn with her Yin Yang orbs, only for it to bounce off it and slam right into Yukari and Mokou and sent them flying in the air as Ziden laughed at them both.

After a few more botched attempt at destroying the thorns, the group decided to give up after Ziden begs for them to stop.

" Jeez. These things are durable. Everything we throw at them gets thrown back at us, ze!" Marisa yelled as Ziden and Mokou pulled several knives out of their rears and back as Sakuya scratched the back of her neck.

" Sorry about that, Master Ziden and Mokou." Sakuya apologized as Ziden pulled out the last knife as he heard Donald's voice. They looked over to their right and saw Sora, Donald, Goofy and Merlin appearing out of thin air.

" Ah! Merlin, you're here!" Minnie said as she ran over to Merlin.

" Ah! Queen Minnie, it has been awhile since I last saw you. It looks like things aren't going well here." Merlin said as Minnie explained the situation to him.

" Hmm? I believe I have a solution to this problem." Merlin said.

" Really? What is it?" Nitori asked.

Merlin waved his hand and created a grey door that appeared right next to the Cornerstone as everyone walked over to it.

" What's with the door?" Mario asked.

" My boy, that is a gateway to a special world. Someone in that world is responsible for what's going on in this castle. Of that, I'm certain." Merlin explained as Ziden punched his palm.

" I see, so all we have to do is get in there and beat up whoever is doing this to the castle." Reimu said as walked to the door and grabbed the door knob.

" Wait a moment! The perpetrators must be stopped, of course. But there's something else to do first. Somewhere in that world, there should be another door that's identical to this one. I believe our enemies are utilizing that door. As long as it remains open, the castle will be in grave danger. Listen carefully, Sora and friends. You must find that door. And when you do-lock it with your Keyblade." Merlin explained as everyone approached the door.

" Any thing else you want to tell us before we enter this world, Merlin?" Yuyuko asked as Merlin nodded.

" Yes. Now, one more thing. You're heading into a very special world. While you're there, the nature of that world may tempt you to do something dark. You must resist that temptation at all costs!" Merlin warned as Yukari, Yuyuko and Komachi all turned to look at Ziden and Marisa.

" What? We're not going to do anything! We swear!" The duo swore as the group opened the door and entered a brand new world.

When they passed through the door, they noticed that everything was black and white, although they could still faintly see the colors on their clothes. But something seemed to some of the heroes, mainly Ziden. " Hmm? Why does everything look taller, all of a sudden? Hey! Even you guys look taller all of a sudden!? What's

going on here?!" Ziden yelled as everyone looked down on his... literally.

Meanwhile at a different location...

Ruler 6, Ruler 11 and a mystery man were waiting on a rooftop near the port in town and they too were black and white.

" They are here. I can sense them." Ruler 11 said as he heard Ruler 6 laugh.

" Good! Now I can kill that wretched girl and that man whom is friend with the Lunarians!" Ruler 6 said as the Mystery man approached the ledge.

" Ohohohohoho! I can't wait to see my old buddy Terra again! Oh, how she'll die of fright when she sees me again! And if she doesn't, I'll just kill her the old fashioned way!" The mystery man said as he merrily pranced away.

*Fun Facts:*

*1. Mara is from the Shin Megami Tensei games and is well known for its... design which should be obvious what it looks like. I didn't describe Mara in this story because of how vulgar it looks like. This is the Strange Journey version of Mara which is revealed to be a female... creepy.*

*2. The Mystery Man... it should be pretty obvious who it is if you played FF6.*

*Author's note: A new chapter has arrived and a title has been given to this story. I didn't really like the old one so I changed it and it should be known that 'Gensokyo Chronicles' will always be a Touhou crossover with another good series. Also I should note that more demons from the following series will be making appearances in this story via Patchouli's summoning Mishaps; Disgaea, Devil May Cry, Shin Megami Tensei and Castlevania! See you next chapter! R&R!*





## A Blast from the Past!

Ziden looked up at all of girls as he noticed that they were all taller than him and confused him as Yuyuko slowly approached with an extremely happy look on her face.

" Ziden! You're a-!" Yukari was confused as to what happened to Ziden.

" Huh? Gahh!" Ziden was grabbed into a sudden hug by Yuyuko as he found himself being suffocated by her chest.

" You're a child again!" Yuyuko happily said as she squeezed him deeper into the hug.

" Nooo! I'm a kid again!? Whhhhhyyyyyyy!?" Ziden yelled as he struggled to break free from Yuyuko's hug.

"... Hmmm? Yuyuko? Did you dye your hair?" Yukari asked as Yuyuko looked confused. Yukari gapped in a mirror and showed Yuyuko her reflection and she was shocked.

" Whoa! What happened to your hair!?" Reimu asked as Yuyuko stared at her newly, brown colored hair.

" Why did my hair change color? What a mystery, this is." Yuyuko said as Ziden continued to struggle against her chest.

" She's not the only person whose hair color changed. Reimu and Marisa! Your hair changed as well!" Nitori pointed out as Marisa and Reimu charged at the mirror and saw that their hair color had also been changed.

Reimu's jet black hair had changed to a purple color and Marisa's hair changed from blonde to red, yet their outfits didn't change at all, nor did their height.

" Wow, ze. Haven't had red hair in such a long time, I forgot about it. At least I'm still nice and perky, ze!" Marisa exclaimed as Ziden muffled something into Yuyuko's chest as Yuyuko giggled.

" That's not nice to say Ziden!" Yuyuko said as Ziden finally broke free from her hug and tried to catch his breath as Marisa approached him with hidden hostility.

" What was that you said about my perkiness, Ziden?" Marisa asked as Ziden turned around and looked up at her with no emotion.

" Oh! He said ' how can you be perky when you're flatter than a wooden board?'" Yuyuko said as Marisa's face turned red with anger.

" Why you little!?" Marisa began to choke Ziden out as Sakuya tried to pry Marisa's fingers from around his throat. Ziden eventually got free of Marisa's death grip as he received a vicious glare from her.

" Hey guys! Something's off here! Why is everything in black and white?" Reimu asked while looking around.

" Whoa! Sora, Donald and Goofy look weird here." Nitori pointed as everyone looked at the trio.

Sora was reverted back into the outfit he was wearing before he got new clothes from the Three Fairies. Donald and Goofy looked like old timey cartoon characters ( based on their Retro appearances in The Wise Little Hen and Mickey's Revue).

" Wow! They look really different than a few minutes ago." Reisen said as Mokou noticed something about her head.

" Huh? My hair feels shorter." Mokou said aloud as everyone looked at her.

" Hmm? Hey, your hair turned black! What the hell is going on with this world!?" Komachi yelled as everyone scratched their heads.

" Who knows? We should just figure out what happened to the Cornerstone of Light and be out of here. I miss my black hair already." Reimu said as she sighed afterwards.

" Yeah, being a child again isn't fun when a hug happy ghost is hanging around me." Ziden said as Yuyuko floated over to him.

" Oh stop it! You love being hugged by me! Oh, how you would fall asleep in my arms while me and Yukari watched you sleep away. Ah, the memories." Yuyuko remembered as Ziden sighed.

Ziden sensed something approaching them as they see a Retro looking Pete coming towards them.

" Hey! You guys over there! Have you seen any bad guys around here?" Pete asked as everyone pointed at him. " That's not funny, guys!" Pete ended up running towards the pier as everyone stared at him.

" Makes sense. So Pete is the villain here, huh? This makes things easier then." Mokou said.

" Yeah! Lets go pound his face in and save the Cornerstone of Light!" Meiling said as she tried to run off after Pete only to be stopped by Yukari..

" Hold on a second, Meiling. There is something off here." Yukari noticed as Flandre was wandering off towards a large crystal with spiraling rings of light in it.

" Hey! Isn't this the Cornerstone of Light over here?" Flandre asked as everyone approached it.

" Why would they just leave something this important in the middle of a field?" Mario asked.

" Who knows? All I know is we that we better go after Pete. Something tells me that he is up to no good." Yukari said as Ziden

stared off into the distance.

" Hmm? Is something wrong, Ziden?" Goofy asked as Ziden shook his head.

" Nope. Thought I sensed one of my powers, but it just disappeared." Ziden said as he walked towards the pier, only to be stopped by Yukari.

" Absolutely not! You will not be doing any form of fighting while you're in that form! You're going to be staying here with... uhhhh... Flandre and Reisen!" Yukari said as Ziden glared at her. " Don't give me that look! It's this or I lock you up in 'that' place. Make your choice now."

Ziden angrily stomped his foot on the ground before storming over to the Cornerstone of Light and sat down next to it while pouting.

" Wow. That was very child-like." Mokou said as everyone agreed.

" Well we should go after Pete before he does something stupid." Yuyuko said as everyone minus Flandre and Reisen went towards the pier as Ziden got up and walked over to a hill and sat down on it.

The group arrived at the pier as they see Pete standing on a wooden pier, looking off into the distance over the river.

" What's he doing?" Nitori asked.

" I think he's looking out at that river." Aya answered as Sora walked over to him.

" Hmmm? You're those guys from before. What do you guys want?" Pete asked as Sora looked at him with an annoyed expressed.

" Cut the act Pete! We know who you are!" Sora said as Pete scratched his head.

" What are you talking about? I've never seen you folks before in my life." Pete said as everyone heard a loud whistle as Pete began to walk over towards the river only for Sora, Donald and Goofy to intercept him with their weapons drawn.

" Oh! So you guys wanna tussle huh?" Pete said while taking a boxer's stance.

## **Rowdy Rumble ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Pete throws a clumsily thrown fist at Sora whom easily dodges the punch and swings his keyblade into Pete's face, sending him flying onto the dirt as he tumbled and rolled until he slammed the wooden fence. Sora was waiting for Pete to get back up as he saw him struggling to get up.

" Uh, Sora? I think he's done, ze!" Marisa yelled as Pete fell down onto his rear.

" Ouch! Why are you beating me up!? What did I ever do to you?!" Pete angrily asked.

" Because we know that you're up to no good!" Terra said.

" Yeah right! I bet you're the ones who stole my steamboat!" Pete said as everyone looked confused. " Bah! I don't have time to mess with you people! I'm gonna get my boat back!" Pete ran off as everyone was confused about Pete's actions.

" That was odd, even Pete wasn't this weak the last time we fought." Reimu noticed.

" Something is off with this world. I wonder what the dark temptation that Merlin was warning us about is." Yuyuko wondered.

" We should head back to the Cornerstone of Light and figure out what to do next." Mario suggested as everyone agreed. The group headed back to the Cornerstone of Light and saw Ziden angrily

pacing back and forth as they noticed mysterious windows floating near the Cornerstone.

" Hmm? What are those things? Windows?" Reimu asked Sora approached them.

" There are 4 of them. Maybe we should split up and open them all up at once?" Sora asked as Reimu, Mario and Yukari approached a window.

" Alright, in case of these things containing Heartless we'll take a small team with us." Yukari said as Ziden ran over.

" Dammit Yukari! Let me fight!" Ziden yelled as Yukari shook her head.

" Yuyuko, stay with Ziden and make sure he doesn't do anything stupid." Yukari said as Yuyuko walked to Ziden.

" That'll be hard, Yukari~!" Yuyuko said as Ziden got angry.

" Come on, Ziden! Lets play a game together!" Flandre asked as Ziden sighed.

" Ziden, you should play a game with her. All you've been doing is running around, being angry that you're shorter a normal child when at the age of 12." Reisen said, not helping the situation at all.

"... Fine, but the minute I turn back to normal, I'm going roundhouse kick you in the skull." Ziden threatened as Yukari pulled out a fan and covered her mouth with it.

" I can't wait, Ziden. Now get to work on getting that power you sensed here." Yukari said as everyone formed into teams.

Mario's team: Luigi, Kirby, Terra and Aya. They picked the Window that had a piece of furniture on it.

Reimu's Team: Marisa, Nitori, Mokou. They picked the Window that had the image of an hammer on it.

Sora's Team: Donald, Goofy, Komachi. They picked the Window that had an image of a burning building on it.

Yukari's Team: Sakuya, Meiling. They picked the Window that had a picture of a town on it as all of the windows opened and sucked in the teams.

Ziden sighed as he noticed a stern expression on Yuyuko's face as he realized what was going on. " Why that smart little- she knew that if I went with them, I would have missed getting one of my powers back. Quite a trick she pulled on me." Ziden said as he chuckled. " Come on out, you tin can! I know you're there."

As Ziden said this, a white flash appeared behind Reisen before she knew what was going on and she felt a metallic fist slam into her skull and sent her flying into a fence, breaking it as she was stunned from the impacts.

" Good! I've been itching for a fight! Come on, you Tin Can! Let's Rumble!" Ziden yelled as Flandre looked sad.

" Does this mean we aren't going to play a game together?" Flandre said while sounding extremely sad.

"...\* Sigh\* We are about to play a game, Flandre." Ziden said as Flandre immediately perked up at those words.

" Ooo! What are we going to play? Tag? Hide and Seek?" Flandre asked while leaning from side to side.

" Even better than those! We're going to play 'Break the Robot!'" Ziden said as Flandre's eyes sparkled with excitement.

" But Big Sis said it's wrong to break people." Flandre said with a once again sad voice.



" Well it is wrong to break people, but evil machines like that thing is free game, so its okay to smash these things!" Ziden explained as the machine roared.

" Okay! So how do you win?" Flandre asked.

" Simple, first person to smash that robot to pieces is the winner!" Ziden said summoning Hero's Strife.

" Okay! I'm gonna win at this game, just watch!" Flandre said as she summoned a black rod.

Ziden looked at the machine and wondered what it was, not knowing that he is fighting against a Devastator as Yuyuko watched the duo size up their opponent.

---

Mario's team found themselves in a living room with several pieces of furniture in it. " Nice living room." Mario said while walking around the room. He noticed 4 large red curtuians in the back of the room.

" What a weird place for a window to take us. Wonder why it brought us here?" Aya asked as a black hole appeared in the middle of the room, sucking up the furniture as a mouse wearing red pants ran into the room.

" Whoa! What's with that black hole?!" Luigi asked as the mouse ran around and tried to stop the furniture from being sucked up.

" And what's with that mouse? He looks he's trying to stop that black hole." Aya noticed as Rapid Thruster Heartless appeared in front of the black hole.

" Heartless! Get them!" Terra yelled as they drew their weapons and got ready to fight the Heartless as the mouse quickly ran out of the room.

**Old Friends, Old Rivals ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Mario charged at the Rapid Thrusters and threw his hammer t them, scattering them across the room as Aya tackled several of them while moving supersonic speeds.

" Thundara!" Terra summoned several bolts of lightning that tore the Heartless as the black hole grew stronger and began to suck the group.

" Whoa! That thing just got bigger!" Aya yelled as she whipped up some winds to attack the black hole as Kirby began to spin kick some Heartless into the ceiling.

Kirby pulled out his hammer and slammed the hammer into the Heartless, sending them flying all around the room as Luigi fired lightning bolts at them. Aya began fly around the black hole, increasing her speed with every seconds as she created a ring of air that was growing bigger with each passing minute.

The ring of air was growing larger in size as it began to suck in large quantities of air into the center of the ring.

" Everyone, get down!" Aya yelled as she swung her fan, releasing a giant green blade that slashed through the ring, releasing the built up air inside the ring which created a massive vortex that tore the remaining Heartless apart and sucked up Luigi, Terra and Kirby and sent them flying into the red curtains as the winds began to calm down.

" Mama mia!" Mario got up and dusted off his clothes as he looked at the Aya's attack caused. Several pieces of furniture were saved by the attack but others were turned apart by the winds as Aya ran over to curtains and placed her hand on a rope that opens them.

The mouse appeared out of nowhere and vigorously shook Mario's hand before he ran off. Mario turned around and saw a window behind him and he opened it as he watched a scene play out as Aya opened the curtain and screamed.

" Gahhhhh! What happened to you, Luigi!?" Aya yelled as she looked at Luigi's new form.

" Hmmm? Waaaaaaahhhhhhhhh!" Luigi screamed as he looked at his now 8-Bit form. Luigi began to freak out as he jumped behind another curtain.

" Oh no! I wasn't paying attention to where he went!" Aya yelled as she began to randomly open the curtains. Terra was revealed to be reverted into sprite version of herself, causing her to freak out run behind a curtain.

Kirby was revealed to be a sprite as well, in which he ran behind a curtain causing Aya to start pulling her hair out while screaming.

Mario finished watching the scene from the window and thought to himself for a while. " *That was Maleficent, wasn't it? Then that means I saw that from Pete's eyes.*" Mario thought as he sees Aya walking over him with the unconscious bodies of Luigi, Kirby and Terra. " Mama-Mia! What happened!?"

" They wouldn't stop going behind the curtains! Gahhhhhh!" Aya yelled as Mario slowly backed away from the crazy tengu reporter.

---

Reimu's team found themselves on a rising platform in the middle of a construction site as they saw several steel beams surrounding them.

" What's this place?" Reimu asked.

" Hmm? This looks like a construction site. I wonder what they are building?" Nitori said as she looked around the site.

Reimu looked up and saw the same mouse that Mario saw earlier. " Hmm? Isn't that the King that Sora was talking about?" Reimu asked as the mouse was running around on a steel beam as he was pointing to something above them.

" Didn't we see that guy back in Twilight Town, ze?" Marisa asked as the King continued to point up above him.

" Wonder what he's trying to tell us?" Mokou wondered as Nitori looked directly and saw what he was trying to warn them about.

" Guys! Above us!" Nitori yelled as everyone looked up and saw hammer-bodied Heartless hanging up on the support chain that was pulling them up. The Heartless jumped down and almost crushed Mokou underneath their weight, but the King swung in on a rope and kicked the Heartless out of the way and landed on another support beam.

" Whew. That was close. Thanks, King." Mokou thanked the King as he disappeared from sight.

The Heartless regrouped and prepared to fight the girls as they drew their weapons. " This world's Heartless look weird. They look like Hammers." Reimu noticed as she took flight.

" They are probably called Hammer Frames or something similar to that, ze." Marisa said as the Heartless charged at the group.

The Hammer Frames charged at Mokou, prompting her to kick the Heartless away while she launched fireballs at them, burning the Heartless as one of them jumped high into the air.

The Hammer Frame slammed his body onto the platform, releasing a shockwave and shaking the platform to the point that everything standing on it was sent flying into the air.

Nitori launched several cucumber missiles at the airborne Heartless, causing them to fly all over the place as Reimu launched several amulets at the an airborne Hammer Frame, juggling it higher into the air as Mokou delivered an arc kick to a Hammer Frame and followed up with a flaming roundhouse that blasted the Heartless off of the platform.

Marisa was flying around on her broom, taking potshots at the Heartless that were airborne with several exploding flasks as she fired a barrage of colorful stars and lasers at the Heartless.

Nitori pulled a large blue rifle and took aim at the last Hammer Frame. " Time to see if this thing will work this time!" Nitori pulled the trigger on the rifle as it fired a powerful, bullet shaped burst of water as it slammed into the Heartless, piercing through its body and leaving a large hole in its body as she cringed her body and eyes. " Oops. I need to dial down the firepower on this thing the next time I use it."

All of the Heartless where defeated as the King jumped down onto the platform and shook Reimu's hand vigorously as he ran off. " That was weird. He seems different from when we saw him in Twilight Town."

" Hmm, need to readjust the firepower on this bad boy while its fresh in my mind." Nitori sat down and pulled out some tools and began to make adjustments to the water firing rifle.

Reimu noticed a window behind her as she opened and watched the scene that played out as Marisa flew down next to her and watched the scene with Reimu as Mokou watched Nitori fiddle with her weapon.

After they got finished watching the scene they thought to themselves for a second. " *Hmm? That is definitely Pete, not like that weird one we saw earlier.*" Reimu thought as Marisa scratched her head.

" *I wonder if that castle has any valuables I can loot.*" Marisa thought while planning a looting trip to that castle.

---

Sora's team found themselves standing outside a burning skyscraper as they see the King running around, trying to stop the blaze.

" Hey! Its the King!" Sora yelled as the King turned around while pointing at the flames.

" Gawrsh! He looks kinda different somehow." Goofy noticed as several Shadow and Soldier Heartless appeared in front of the building.

" Heartless! Lets take them out and then we'll worry about the King later!" Donald while taking out his staff.

Sora and Goofy charged at the Heartless and scattered them with their weapons as Sora stabbed a Shadow through the chest and slammed his keyblade into a Soldier's torso.

Goofy threw his shield between his legs and it slammed a Soldier against the wall as Donald blasted it with Thunder spells.

Sora performed a powerful upwards strike and sent Soldier into the fiery inferno as more Heartless appeared to harass the trio. These new Heartless resemble old fashioned cartoon cars with their eyes being the windshield. These Heartless are known as Hot Rods

" New Heartless? They look weird." Goofy said as the car Heartless began to walk over to them using its rear tires as feet.

Sora jumped up and struck the car over the hood with a vertical strike, followed up with a horizontal strike to the headlights and ending with a powerful vertical strike that sent the Hot Rod flying at the building.

The other Hot Rods began to rev their engines and began to drive around at fast speeds, taking aim at Sora as they rammed into him and sent him flying into the sky.

" Oh no! Sora!" Donald tried to ran over to help Sora, only for him to be hit by one of the other Heartless.

Sora recovered using Aerial Recovery and jumped onto the hood of a Hot Rod while gripping onto the Heartless Emblem hood ornament with his left hand. Sora proceeded to rapidly strike the Hot Rod in the face while it tried to shake him off of its hood.

Sora pointed the tip of his keyblade into the Heartless' eyes and fired a point-blank blizzard into its face as it flipped over and exploded with Sora leaping high into the air. Sora raised his keyblade high into the air and summoned magic into it. "Thunder!" A large bunch of lightning bolts rained down from the sky and slammed into the other Hot Rod, frying into ashes as Sora landed on the ground, sore from being hit by a car. The fires that were burning the building to ashes were suddenly put out at the same time as the Heartless were taken out.

"Man, those things hurt!" Sora said while winding up his arm.

"It looks like the Heartless are getting stronger. That isn't good." Goofy realized as the King ran up to Sora and shook his hand vigorously before running off to unknown locations.

"I wonder where the King is going?" Donald asked as a window appeared behind the trio.

Sora opened the window as a scene played out.

*An empty room in a castle was seen through an unknown person's eyes as the person let out a big sigh. "Man, every time I try to do something helpful to Maleficent, it always backfires and she takes it out on me. \*Sigh\* What I wouldn't give for those old days back when I used to pilot my steamboat. I wish I could go back to those times."*

*A bright light came from behind the man as he turned around to see the bright light forming a door that looked like the one that Sora and the others came out of.*

The scene ended as Sora, Donald and Goofy looked confused at what they saw. "Who was that?" Donald asked as Sora assumed his

trademark pose.

" I'm not sure, but I think we just saw the other door leading to this world." Sora said as everyone nodded.

" Well all we need to do is find that door and seal it!" Goofy said as everyone agreed.

---

Yukari's team of 3 found themselves in a town but immediately noticed something strange about the town.

" Whoa! How'd the town get so tiny?!" Meiling said as she looked at the tiny buildings. Sakuya and Yukari were observing a tower that had several cannons coming out of it.

" I wonder if this tower's cannons work?" Sakuya wondered as Yukari noticed something happening near a building. She turned and saw the King waving at her frantically.

" Hmmm? Why are you waving at me, Mickey?" Yukari asked as she noticed something happening in the corner of her eye.

She saw a new form of Heartless appearing near Meiling as she assumed a battle stance. The Heartless was a grey-skinned creature with a yellow scarf and a jagged mouth and the fighter plane it is piloting. Its legs were dangling underneath the plane as several more of them appeared.

" Oh, you were warning us. Thank you, King Mickey." Yukari said as Mickey ran off. " *I wonder where the real King Mickey is? As well as that other boy that was with him.*" Yukari thought as the airplane Heartless opened fired on Meiling, causing her to backflip away from the bullets as Sakuya pulled out several knives from under her skirt.

" These Heartless are going to be a pain for a close-range fighter like Meiling." Sakuya observed as she watched the Airplane Heartless continue to force Meiling onto the defense.



" Then we'll have to take care of these Aeroplanes then, won't we Sakuya?" Yukari asked while tapping her parasol on her shoulder.

" Yep. We're coming to help to you, Meiling! Hold on!" Sakuya began to throw knives at the Aeroplanes and stopped their attacks as Meiling stopped running and charged at Aeroplanes.

" Swallow Kick!" Meiling unleashed a flurry of flying kicks onto the group of Aeroplanes that sent them flying into a wall as Yukari opened several gaps around them.

Several lasers came out of the gaps and began to blast the Heartless deeper into the wall as the dust began to kick up, covering the Heartless and the gaps in a veil of dust. Several pink hearts were seen coming out of the dust cloud as several Hammer Frames and Soldiers appeared and surrounded the trio of powerful women.

" Wow. It looks like we may have some trouble here." Yukari said while sidestepping a Soldier's flying corkscrew kick.

" And to think that no one here has the keyblade to attract these creatures to us." Sakuya said while grabbing a Soldier by the neck and stabbing the knife into its face, killing it as Sakuya threw a knife at a Soldier trying to sneak attack her from behind.

" Yeah, I guess they figured out that we have two keyblade wielders with us and decided to come at us in full force." Meiling said while axe kicking a Hammer Frame into the ground. Meiling turned around and delivered a roundhouse kick to a Soldier that was about to spin attack her from behind.

Yukari lazily dodged a crushing blow from a Hammer Frame and kicked it hard at the tower as the Heartless bounced off of the tower and caused the cannons to fire and hit all of the other Heartless as Yukari whistled. " This will make the fight so much quicker now." Yukari gapped herself over to the tower as she began to repeatedly hit the tower with her parasol.

" Huh? So those are working cannons? That'll make this fight easier then." Sakuya said while throwing time-accelerated knives at several Soldiers and Hammer Frames, dispatching them as Meiling delivered a brutal haymaker to a Soldier, sending it flying into the heavens as they began to take out the rest of the Heartless.

The trio finished taking out the Heartless a few minutes later and they were sweaty and tired as they fell on their rears. " Thank Gods, we're finally done fighting these guys." Meiling said while trying to catch her breath.

Mickey ran over to Yukari and shook her hand before he ran off. A window appeared behind Yukari as she got up and opened it and watched the scene that played.

*Maleficent is looking the door and is pleased with what she sees. " Ah, so this is all before that accursed castle is built and what's this? The Cornerstone of Light is here as well. This is quite a discovery you found here, Pete. This will redeem your past blunders against those heroes. Now I must be on my way, me and the Black Knight have a meeting to attend to." Maleficent walked off as the man walked over to the door.*

*" Gehhaahahahhah! This is it! I get that Cornerstone of Light and I'm back in Maleficent's good graces!" The man said as the camera spun around and revealed that the man was Pete as he opened the door. " But first, time to find my old boat!"*

Yukari sighed after seeing this scene as a bright light brought them back to the Cornerstone of Light as they noticed that Ziden and Flandre were standing near a pillar of smoke as they both high-fived each other.

" That was fun, Ziden! Can we break another robot?" Flandre asked as Ziden scratched his head.

" Sure, later kid. I can't lie, that was very fun Flandre." Ziden said as Flandre hugged him.

" I hope we'll play some games in the future, Big Brother!" Flandre said as Ziden heard the sound of glass breaking.

" *A new bond has been established between you and Flandre.*" A mysterious voice said as Ziden looked around.

" Hmm? Who's there? Where's that voice coming from?" Ziden said as he tried to find the source of the voice as everyone minus Flandre looked at him like he was crazy.

" Oh man, ze! Ziden's gone crazy!" Marisa said as orb containing a pocketwatch rolled out of the smoke and bumped against Sakuya's leg as she picked it up.

" *Forge new bonds with your allies and obtain power from these bonds, Hero of Divine Justice. With Flandre, you achieved the Destruction Arcana Rank 1.*" The mysterious said as Ziden and Flandre looked at each other and smiled.

" Master Ziden. I've got something for you." Ziden turned to Sakuya and saw the orb in Sakuya's hands and ran over to her. Sakuya crouches down and placed the orb in front of Ziden as he took a boxer's stance, much more refined than Pete's. Ziden punched the orb with enough force to shatter it as several large glass shards appeared around Ziden as they began to spin around him.

Everyone watched as the glass shards flew behind Ziden and began to combine into a large glass circle that slowly became the face of a clock. Blue flames came from the clock and enveloped Ziden's body as the flames increased in height. The flames slowly died down as it revealed has now returned to his normal age and height.

" Aww! He's back to being a teenager again. I can't hug you anymore without you fighting against me." Yuyuko said while pouting.

" Whatever, you crazy ghost. So how did it go in there?" Ziden asked as everyone compiled their information

It seems that Pete is the one whom has the other door in his possession and he is currently planning to steal the Cornerstone of Light... and a steamboat.

" Now this makes sense. Why most of us were reverted to earlier hairstyles and ages. We traveled through time, this is before Disney Castle was built." Yukari explained as Reisen slowly crawled her way over to the group.

" Hey Ziden? Where's that fairy that is supposed to be with you?" Nitori asked as Ziden shrugged.

" Wow. Some partner." Mokou said as Ziden kicked her.

" Shut it, you!" Ziden said as he noticed something. " Where'd the Cornerstone go?"

Everyone turned around and saw that the Cornerstone was indeed gone. " Yuyuko? Weren't you supposed to be keeping an eye on it?" Reimu asked as Yuyuko scratched her head.

" I was busy keeping an eye on those two while they were fighting that Devastator!" Yuyuko said Yukari raised an eyebrow before realizing something.

" Right, this isn't that idiotic clone. Of course the Original could take care of them." Yukari said to herself as everyone heard a boat whistle.

" That must be the Steamboat! We have to stop Pete!" Mario said as everyone began to run, only to be stopped by an unknown voice.

" Not so fast, you filthy humans!" Everyone looked up and saw Ruler 11 floating down towards them with colorful, translucent wings.

" Let me guess, you're one of the Rulers of Darkness, right?" Reisen asked as Ruler 6 appeared behind her.

" You!" Reisen was startled by Ruler 6's as she ran over to the group and assumed a battle stance. " You serve those accursed Lunarian dogs!"

" Its you! You're the one who destroyed my world along with... *him* !" Terra said as she heard a disturbingly familiar laugh.

" My dear little Terra! Don't tell me that you hate little ol' me now, do you!? After all we've been through together!" Terra paled at the sound of the man's voice as he appeared next to Ruler 6.

He wears a lot of white makeup; every visible part of his skin has been painted white. He wears purple lipstick, and red patterns have been drawn around his eyes. He wears a red and yellow cape over some technicolor mail, and a red and yellow collar frilled around his neck. His upper sleeves are very puffy - the left one is red, and the right one is purple with red polkadots. His left hand is bare, while he wears a yellow, fingerless glove on the right. His pants are cut above his right knee to reveal blue tights underneath. He wears a white boot on his right foot, and a black boot on his left foot.

" Oh no! Its-"

" That's right, Terra! It is I, Kef-"

" Hey its that ass clown from before!" Ziden said while pointing at him.

" MY NAME IS KEFKA, YOU SIMPLETON!" Kefka yelled while stomping his feet like a child.

" Meh, ass clown sounds much better than Kefka, don't you think?" Ziden taunted as Kefka got angry.

" Enough of this, Lunarian Lover! Once I am done with you, I shall crush their skull open with my bare hands!" Ruler 6 exclaimed as Mokou cracked her neck.

" Sora! Get going! Stop Pete before he gets away with the Cornerstone! We'll handle things here!" Yukari yelled as Sora, Donald and Goofy ran off towards the pier with Reimu, Marisa, Mario, Luigi, Kirby and Aya chasing after them.

Ruler 6 somewhat fit the description that Terra told them back in Hollow Bastion. He is bald, blue-skinned, pointy-eared, and has blank, yellow eyes. He wears a blue chestplate with various aesthetic features and wears a two-layered cape. The top layer is red, while the bottom, longer layer is purple with tattered edges that seem to infinitely break and dissolve into nothing. His feet cannot be seen, and his black, silk bodysuit is tattered at the bottom and seems to fuse with the bottom taper of the cape. He wears a black plate with beige rims behind his head, lined with teeth that protrude toward his head.

" I am Zemus!" Zemus exclaimed as Ruler 11 flew over to Kefka and Zemus and landed next to him.

" And I am Mithos Yggdrasil! Now then, its time for all of you to die!" Mithos said as he charged at the group.

*Fun Fact:*

*1. That Bond that Ziden made with Flandre is important to the story. The bonds will only be with the Touhou chars since he already knows the Smash Chars. Very similar to the Social Link system in the Persona Series. In fact... it is the Social Link system from the Persona Series.*

*2. Ziden is not getting a Persona out of this. Thought I'd mention this beforehand.*

*3. Ziden has regained his powers over Time. Do note that Ziden will be using his Time powers in very different ways than Sakuya does.*

*Author's Note: Sorry about this chapter being so late, things came up and I'm again sorry about this delay. Well, the next chapter will come*

*much faster and I have made a Twitter in which you guys can up to date on this and future stories. Its Ziden115! Follow me and you'll get sneak peeks to future events in this story. And I wouldn't mind some more reviews guys! Also this story has almost hit 2000 views guys, not bad for my first fic! See you guys next Chapter!*

## The Return to the Land of Illusions

" Well now! Isn't this a nice little reunion!? All my dear friends are here! Ziden! Terra! And the lovely Yukari Yakumo!" Kefka said while laughing his trademark laugh.

" I wouldn't call it a nice little reunion, after all, I do hate you and your friends over there." Ziden said while tapping his fingers on Crimson Edge's hilt.

" Same here, after all, you are trying to kill us." Yukari pointed out.

" That is only because you all stand in the way of our plan." Mithos said while pointing his finger at the group.

" Oh? And what would that plan be?" Yuyuko asked as Zemus growled.

" As if we'd tell you worthless Youkai and Humans." Zemus said as Ziden scoffed.

" You might as well tell us now. We're going to end up figuring out the plan later." Ziden said as Mithos glared at the teen.

" He's right. I've seen in the animes Mistress Kaguya used to watch, the villains always reveal their plans to the heroes!" Reisen said as Mokou scoffed.

" Damned NEET." Mokou sword under her breathe as Ziden leaned over to her.

" Get used to her presence, Mokou. You are both married to me after all." Ziden whispered as Mokou let out a growl.

" Enough of this nonsense. I believe it is time for all of you to fall into the eternal embrace of darkness!" Zemus yelled as he released a burst of darkness.



## **Beat the Angel ( Tales of Symphonia)**

" Die! Blizzara!" Zemus fired a large ice chunk at the group, forcing them to disperse to dodge the attack.

Ziden fired a sword wave at the trio of villains as Mithos blocked the attack with his hand. Mithos waved his hand as he fired several balls of light at Ziden as they circled around him.

" Odd for a Ruler of Darkness to use Light based attacks, isn't it?" Ziden asked as Mithos chuckled.

" As if you're one to talk, hero. You use the power of Darkness even though you are a hero of justice. Quite ironic, actually." Mithos said as the balls of light changed into lances that were aimed at Ziden's chest. " Holy Lance!"

Ziden jumped high into the air, barely dodging the lances of light as Mithos appeared above him.

Mithos slammed his foot into Ziden's with enough force to shatter a skull as Ziden is sent plummeting into the ground.

Mithos blinks and finds himself surrounded by several silver knives. " Oh? So you can manipulate time, maid? How impressive, but worthless against me." Mithos waved his hand as all of the knives were blasted away by an unknown force.

Sakuya curses under her breath as she throws several knives at Mithos only for him to blast them away again. Meiling tried to deliver a vicious axe kick to the back of Mithos' skull, only for him to catch Meiling's leg in his hand without even turning around and he threw Meiling at Sakuya, causing Meiling to headbutt Sakuya and caused the duo to fly into a fence.

Mokou decided to try and capture Mithos in a cage of fire only for him to disappear from sight as Yukari quickly pulled Mokou out of the

way and saved her from being skewered from a lance of light that was in Mithos' hand.

" This guy is tough if he is able to shrug off their attacks like this. Perhaps we need to change our strategy." Yukari thought as Ziden crawled out of the crater he made. " Ziden, Yuyuko! Help me take on Mithos while the others take on Zemus and Kefka!" Ziden and Yuyuko nodded as they ran over to Yukari, ready to back her up.

Mokou conjured up a lance of fire and threw them at Kefka as he skipped around to dodge them. " Hold still, you stupid clown!"

" Now why would I do that when I could get hurt from those attacks." Kefka said as he continued to dodge Mokou's attacks.

" Fira!" Terra fired a big fireball at Kefka, hitting him in the back as he tumbled and rolled into a fence as Zemus turned his attention on her.

" Worthless girl! Thundaga!" Zemus summoned a large thundercloud over Terra as it rained down large and powerful bolts of lightning that struck Terra and shocked her body to the point that she could barely remain standing.

" Oh crud! Terra!" Nitori screamed out Terra's name as she fell backwards and passed out on the ground.

Ziden looked at the unconscious form of Terra with shock written all over his face. " What the hell happened?! That was no ordinary Thundaga just now, it was powered up by the forces of darkness!"

" Damn! Zemus! Why'd you knock Terra out!? How am I supposed to torture her when she's out like a rock!?" Kefka yelled as Zemus focused his gaze on Ziden.

" You're next, Phoenix Boy! Blizzaga!" Zemus launched a giant chunk of ice at Ziden as he stopped the attack with his hand.

" Nice try, bald boy. Unlike Terra, it'll take more than that to take me down!" Ziden throws the Blizzaga spell back at Zemus, whom is caught off guard by the counter attack and is crushed under the ice.

Nitori sees as Kefka walks over to Terra and picks her up by the throat, increasing the pressure of his grip as his other hand was becoming covered in electricity. " Oh well! At least I can still kill you!"

" Oh no you don't!" Mokou and Meiling charged at Kefka and got ready to kick Terra free from Kefka's grip. Their feet slammed into a orange barrier and repelled their attacks as Zemus emerged from the pile of ice, relatively unharmed.

" Protect!" Zemus casted protect on Kefka as wild smirk appeared on his face.

Kefka pulled his hand back and pierced it through Terra's torso as everyone looked on in shock.

" Oh my! That was SOOOOOO invigorating! Too bad it ended too quickly!" Kefka said before breaking into a laugh.

" TERRAAAAAA!" Ziden ran over to Terra as Kefka pulled his hand out her stomach as blood poured out her wound as Kefka threw her body at Ziden. He caught her as his eyes turned red with anger.

" You're a dead man, Kefka!" Ziden used his fire to close the wound and opened a vortex back to the ship, mainly the Medical part of the ship. Ziden gently carried her to the bed and called for a doctor as Eirin ran into the room and saw the bleeding Terra on the bed.

Ziden reappeared in front of Kefka with a cold glare. Ziden was so focused on Kefka that he didn't sense Mithos behind him as he sees a hand coming through his chest, covered in blood and was clutching a white orb.

" You shouldn't have dropped your guard you fool! Death Eater!" Mithos crushed the orb as pillars of light pierced through Ziden's

body, leaving large, bloody holes in his body as he cried in pain.

Mithos raised his hand into the sky and a purple sword appeared in his hand and he swung it down on Ziden's skull, only to hit steel as Komachi blocked the attack with her scythe.

Ziden's wounds healed his wound and threw a powerful punch into both Kefka and Mithos' torso, sending them flying into two different directions. Yukari threw a punch at Mithos, slamming him into the ground as Yuyuko summoned a flurry of ghosts to attack him while he was down.

" So these lowly worms do have some power in them. I think its time that I up the ante with my spells!" Zemus thought as he began gathering magic energy. " Blizzaga Storm!" A large magic circle appeared above him as a large cluster of giant ice chunks were flying towards the group.

" Mokou! With me!" Ziden yelled while coating his arms in fire.

" On it! Lets take these glaciers out!" Mokou raised her right leg and wrapped it in fire.

" Blazing Spector!"

" Phoenix Hibachi!" Ziden and Mokou combined their powerful fire attacks and melted and smashed the ice chunks to pieces as Zemus gritted his teeth. The duo's attacks were lighting up the sky as they continued to smash the ice chunks to pieces.

---

Sora watched as the steamboat slowed down a halt next to them as Pete sneaked off as everyone looked at the Cornerstone of Light that was in a completely shattered cage.

" What do we do about the Cornerstone though?" Aya asked while taking pictures of it.

" Leave it! We'll grab it after we deal with Pete!" Reimu said as they chased after Pete.

They reached the wharf and saw Future Pete punching Past Pete in the face, knocking him out as Sora and the others ran in front of past Pete.

" Heh! You're still wet behind the ears!" Pete taunted as Sora summoned the Star Seeker Keyblade.

" Why don't you try us then!?" Sora said as Pete cracked his knuckles.

### **Desire for all That is Lost ( Kingdom Hearts II)**

Pete threw a bowling bowl at Sora whom simply blocked the attack and sent it rolling back towards Pete, causing an explosion that sent him into the air.

Aya shoulder charged into Pete's stomach, forcing him to cough up blood as she follows up with with a powerful punch that slammed Pete into a building as he fell down.

Luigi stood underneath where Pete was going to fall and crouched down. " Super Fire Jump!" Luigi hits the sweet spot when he strikes Pete in jaw, setting him ablaze as he is sent flying high into the sky.

Marisa was twirling a flask in her hand as she launched it at the airborne Pete exploding him into the building behind him, he slid down the wall and landed face-first on the ground, completely tired from the one sided beat-down he received from the group.

" Dang nabbit! I was so close to winning this time! Just you wait you brats! You'll get yours!" Pete summoned the door he used to enter this world in the first place, quickly entering it as Sora pointed his keyblade at the door and used its power to seal the door as they hear a large explosion coming from where their allies were fighting.

" What was that explosion!?" Luigi asked.

" We should worry about it later, we have to return the Cornerstone of Light to its rightful resting place before anything else." Donald said as they rushed back to the boat.

The team was now faced with the problem of bringing the Cornerstone of Light back to its resting place as Aya rubbed her hands together.

Aya walked over to the Cornerstone and picked it up as Sora and the others were amazed by her strength. Aya summoned her wings and took flight as Reimu picked up Sora and carried him to the site where the Cornerstone was and they saw that everyone was badly damaged from the Rulers of Darkness.

" Tch. About time you got here. Hurry up and put the Cornerstone down so I can take a rest." Ziden said before falling on his rear.

" Yeah, I could go for a nice nap right now." Yukari added as Ziden agreed.

Aya placed the Cornerstone of Light on the ground where it goes.

" Jeez, were those guys really that tough?" Reimu asked.

" Yeah! We turned the tables on them at one point, but then they started to pull out some crazy magic attacks!" Reisen said as Ziden crawled over to the door.

" Those guys were really tough, especially that Mithos guy." Meiling said while carrying Sakuya on her back.

" That man's sword, something felt strange about it. It had alot of powerful magic coming off of it." Yuyuko said while rubbing her stomach.

" Lets go see if the thorns in the castle are gone yet." Mario suggested as everyone walked near the door. Mokou picked up

Ziden and carried him through the door as they saw that the thorns were gone.

" Wow! The thorns are gone!" Minnie said as the group examined the room.

" That's good. Now we don't have to deal with Heartless in the castle anymore, right?" Sora asked.

" Indeed! Thanks to your actions, the castle should now be Heartless free." Merlin said.

" Well, I'd say we did a good job here... well minus Terra getting injured by Kefka and Zemus." Nitori said.

" Terra got injured, ze? By those two clowns?" Marisa asked.

" Yep." Ziden simply said.

" Donald!" Donald turned and saw a female anthromorphic duck wearing a purple dress.

" Who is that?" Meiling asked.

" Daisy! Donald's sweetheart." Goofy said as Ziden chuckled.

" Don't know why you're laughing, Mister I-have-four-girlfriends." Mokou said while elbowing Ziden.

" Hi Daisy." Donald said as Daisy approached him.

" Donald! You have been gone way too long!" Daisy said as Donald backed away.

" Daisy! You know I have to find the King!" Donald said as Daisy stomped her foot.

" I know, but you could at least kept in touch with me!" Daisy said as she continued to lay into Donald. Donald sighed as he looked back

at the door with a mischeivious grin.

" Donald! No!" Merlin said.

" I'll just be a second!" Donald ran over to the door, only to have his tail grabbed by Daisy.

" Oh no you don't!" Daisy said as Donald shook her off. " Donald!" Dasiy chased Donald all around the room as everyone watched and laughed.

A red light came off of the Cornerstone of Light as Sora's keyblade appeared. Sora ended up unlocking a Gateway to a new world as an Orb containing a Blue Crown landed in Sora's hand and a new Keychain as well.

" What was that light?" Minnie asked.

" Well we must get going then. More worlds we've got to save." Ziden said as Donald and Daisy stopped their chase.

" Donald, make sure you come back in piece, okay?" Daisy asked.

" Don't worry! We'll return safely with the King in tow!" Donald said while doing a salute.

" Ah yes! I shall see you the next time you visit Hollow Bastion!" Merlin said before teleporting away.

" Stay safe, you guys!" Minnie said as the Magic Circle appeared around the group and sent them back to the ship.

Back on the ship, Ziden and Yukari immediately went to the T.V room and sat down on the couch and passed out. Yuyuko watched as Ziden's head landed on Yukari's shoulder and Yukari cracked a smile on her face as she fell into a deeper sleep.

" Its good to know that they still get along." Yuyuko said as Eiki entered the room with Daiyousei in tow.



" Damn. I was hoping to catch him before he fell asleep." Eiki said to herself as she looked at the sleeping duo.

" Hmm? What's wrong, Eiki?" Yuyuko asked.

" It appears that Gensokyo is having trouble dealing with the Ultima Brigade." Eiki said as Ziden snapped awake.

" What's happening now?" Ziden asked while yawning.

" The Zealots are attacking Gensokyo in full force, even those Shinra and Interpol agents are having trouble dealing with them.

" Let me guess, you want us to go back and lend a hand, right?" Yukari added as Eiki nodded.

" I know that you guys just got out of a fight with those Rulers of Darkness, it is fine if you guys want to rest before heading back to Gensokyo." Eiki said as Daiyousei flew over and landed on Ziden's head.

"... Sure. At least this would be an excuse for me to explore Gensokyo." Ziden said while getting up.

Ziden stretched his back as Patchouli and Meiling entered the room.  
" Well if it isn't the Librain and the Gatekeeper, how are you two doing?" Ziden asked.

" We're fine, Ziden. We were just coming to check up on you, after all you did take alot damage in that fight against those Magic Users." Patchouli said while walking around and looking at Ziden.

" I'm fine, I mean my body still hurts but I'm good." Ziden said while walking out of the room. Ziden walked through the hallways randomly as he noticed Mokou leaning against a wall, having a smoke.

" Hey there." Mokou said while walking over to Ziden.

" Howdy, white hair. Fancy seeing you here." Ziden said while walking next to her.

" Yep, so I heard that we're heading back to Gensokyo, is that true?" Mokou asked.

" Indeed. Looks like I get to explore Gensokyo after all." Ziden said as Mokou nodded.

" Yep, lucky you. I wonder if those Heartless got into Gensokyo as well." Mokou wondered as they stood next to Ziden's door.

" I hope not. Otherwise I'll have some work to do. At least I'll have Dante to help me." Ziden said as Mokou kicked open his door. Mokou immediately landed on his bed and took off her boots. " Was that necessary to kick open my door, Mokou?"

" It was." Mokou answered as Ziden turned on the T.V in his room. " I thought you and Dante hated each other."

" We don't, we just love to fight each other on occasion." Ziden sat next to Mokou while he turned on his game and started playing it. Mokou decided to lay down on Ziden's lap and watch him play the game.

" So what's the point of this... game you're playing?" Mokou asked.

" Simple, kill things with a Beam Katana while earning money to kill more people." Ziden said as she watched the bloodshed that Ziden was causing in the game. " Do all of the games you play involve you killing someone?"

" Nah, just most of them." Ziden answered as Patchouli walked in with a book in hand. " Hey there, care to join us?"

" Sure, may I sit next to you?" Patchouli asked as Ziden nodded.

Patchouli took her seat next to Ziden as she opened her book and began reading. Ziden enjoyed playing the game until his field of

vision became pitch black. " Guess who~?" A voice that Ziden knew that was all too familiar.

" Get off my eyes Yukari. I can't see." Ziden said as he heard Yukari giggling.

" Well, its not like you're about to die or anything. You're at full health!" Yukari stated as Ziden got hit in the game. " Well, that just took off a fair bit of health!"

" Goddamn asshat, Yukari." Ziden swore as Yukari hugged Ziden from behind.

" So how are you doing? Get past that old lady with the Laser yet?" Yukari asked.

" No. I keep dying so I'm just doing some sidequests until I figure out how to beat her." Ziden said as Patchouli chuckled.

" Maybe I can help, head to this boss and we'll see what to do about it." Patchouli said as Ziden ended up finishing the sidequest and headed to the Boss Fight. Ziden skipped the cutscene as the Boss Fight began.

" Ah, Ziden? You did notice that those buildings have wooden doors that look breakable, right?" Patchouli pointed out as Ziden scratched his temple.

" I never noticed that, hold on." Ziden sent the character over to the door and rapidly attacked it with the Beam Katana as it broke and Ziden dove into the building before the giant red laser hit his character.

" Wow, that thing could put a Master Spark shame." Mokou said as Ziden continued to jump between the buildings.

" My my, looks like you've got this. Go, Travis, go!" Yukari cheered as Travis sliced down a telephone pole and it slammed into the old

lady's cannon, stopping her from firing the cannon as Travis ran at the Old Lady.

Travis approached the cannon as the screen went black and a cutscene began to play.

" Really? That was it? That sucked." Ziden said as he watched Travis slice through the cannon barrel and leap high into the air.

" Oh well, at least you beat her. Maybe the next boss will be harder." Yukari suggested as Ziden got up and opened his closet door. Inside were a whole assortment of Game Consoles ranging from the NES to the Wii U.

" Meh. Not enough time for another game. Maybe I should just take a nap." Ziden thought while closing the door to the game closet.

There was a knock at Ziden's door. " Come in." A man wearing a black suit entered the room and bowed down.

" Boss! There is a message for you from Earth!" The man announced as Ziden walked past the man and headed for the Control Room with the Trio following him.

" Hey Daiyousei? What part of Gensokyo are you from?" Ziden asked.

" The Misty Lake near that red mansion." Daiyousei answered as Ziden entered the Control Room and saw Dante standing near the Terminal.

Ziden went to the Terminal punched some buttons as a screen appeared. The screen had an Image of Reiji on it as he started speaking.

" Ziden, about time you answered. We've got a problem over here in Gensokyo." Reiji explained as Ziden scratched his head.

" What's the problem? Too many Zealots to deal with?" Ziden asked.

" No, the Zealots aren't the problem. Its these White Creatures that have been tearing through our forces." Reiji said as Dante and Ziden looked at each other.

" It looks the Nobodies are already invading Gensokyo, regardless of the new barrier in place." Yukari said as she entered the room.

" That's not the only problem, it seems that they sent in one of the Metal Generals here." Reiji said as Ziden clicked his teeth, " Not only that, but one of our scouts spotted Phantom and Ace being here." At the merely saying these names, Ziden and Yukari looked at each other.

" Inform us more on the situation when we get there." Ziden aimed the Teleporter at Gensokyo and walked off towards the Teleporter Room with Dante and Yukari following him.

" Looks like we'll have a fight on our hands. It'll be my first time in Gensokyo so I can't wait." Dante said as Ziden called for everyone to meet at the Teleporter Room.

Everyone gathered in the room, expecting to draw straws to get picked for the next world, only to see that Ziden was not holding straws.

" What's going on? How come you don't have those straws for us to take?" Cirno asked.

" Because we're heading back to Gensokyo." Yukari said as everyone had a shocked expression.

Ziden explains what's going on before anyone starts to ask questions. " So things have gotten bad in Gensokyo fast, huh?" Sanae asked as Ziden nodded.

" But I am going to give you one warning Ziden and Dante; Do not head to the Underground. That place is too risky for you two to go to, got it?" Yukari warned as the duo nodded.

" You guys might want to head to your homes and check up on them. If they've been taken over, then take it back." Ziden suggested as everyone nodded.

" \*Sigh\* At least we'll get to see Gensokyo again." Reimu said as the Circle activated.

The group found themselves outside the Myouren Temple as Ziden and Dante approached the stairs.

" Hold up, you two." Ziden and Dante turned around and saw that Patchouli was walking over to them. " I'm coming with you two. You'll need a guide if you two plan on exploring Gensokyo."

" Wait, how does a shut-in like you, know about about key locations in Gensokyo?" Dante asked.

" I have left my library before, so I know some places in Gensokyo." Patchouli leaned in closer to the duo. " Especially where the Underground is."

" Good, although I wonder why Yukari warned us not to enter the Underground though." Ziden asked.

" Probably alot of Demons and Youkai down there." Dante added.

" She probably said that because of the abundance of Oni down there." Patchouli said as Ziden and Dante looked at each other.

" What the hell is an Oni?" The duo asked in unison.

" Powerful, fight happy Youkai that love to trade blows with powerful foes like you two. She probably said that because of the large number of female Oni down there. They do have a habit of kidnapping strong men and marking them with golden shackles." Patchouli explained.

" I see. I'd rather not deal with having a woman who could probably kick my ass, be my wife." Ziden said as he sensed two people

coming out of the Temple.

" Hey guys! And Touhou girls!" Xiaomu came running out of the temple with Reiji following behind her.

" Oh. Hey there Reiji and Xiaomu." Ziden said as they noticed that Ziden's hair was longer than before.

" Ah, so that was the clone we saw before. Well its good that we have the original with us now." Reiji said as Ziden turned around fully.

Ziden was about to say something to Reiji as Ziden smelled something and began to sniff frantically, so did Remilia and Flandre.

" That smell."

" That's blood, isn't it sis?"

" Yeah and its coming from the Human Village."

The minute Mokou heard this she immediately took flight and flew towards the Human Village, leaving everyone behind as Dante smelled something as well.

" There are demons nearby, hiding in buildings nearby." Dante said as Remilia and Kaguya ran near the steps. " Only two, but I remember them both."

" The only two buildings nearby here are Eientei and the Scarlet Devil Mansion." Reimu said.

" Flandre! Meiling! Sakuya! With me!" Remilia took flight and flew towards the Scarlet Devil Mansion with Flandre, Meiling and Sakuya flying after them.

" Princess, let us go and secure Eientei from this demon. Udonge, you're coming with us as well." Eirin took flight with the Princess and Reisen following after her.

" Well, since you're here, I'll go check up on the Outside World and make sure that everything is all right out there." Yukari said before she disappeared into a gap.

Everyone else headed to their homes to make sure that nothing had been destroyed by these invaders.

" Reiji? You staying here for now?" Ziden asked.

" Yeah, after we repelled these invaders, we plan on coming with you guys." Reiji said as Dante smirked.

" It'll be like old times, Reiji and Xiaomu. Us going to different worlds and beating up people for being evil, it'll be fun." Dante said as Ziden agreed.

" Sure." Ziden said as they descended down the stairs. " Lead the way to the Underground, Miss Patchouli."

" Very well. Follow me please." Patchouli said as she led the way to the Underground as a gap closed above them.

Mario, Luigi, Kirby, Bowser, Sora, Donald and Goofy were the only people left at the temple as they decided to stay at the temple for a rest.

*Meanwhile in the Netherworld...*

Phantom was standing in front of a massive tree that had no petals on its branch. The tree itself had an evil presence about it and seemed to radiate pure hate. " Soon, Saigyou Ayakashi, your power will be mine and your true form will be unleashed."

*Fun Fact:*

*1. Ziden was playing No More Heroes for the Nintendo Wii and was having trouble against the Rank 3 boss, Speed Buster.*



*2. No More Heroes is one of the few M rated games you can find on the Wii and is also one of my favorite games on the system along with Super Mario Galaxy 1 and 2, Sonic Colors, Metroid Other M, Metroid Prime 3, Kirby's Epic Yarn and Return to Dreamland, Xenoblade Chronicles and so much more.*

*Author's Note: Surprised? The next Arc in this story is the Gensokyo Arc, which is going to be somewhat of a large Arc. Of course, after this Arc we will return to the Smashers worlds. R&R! Remember, I have a Twitter account. Ziden115! Follow for updates on the story!*

# An Underground Adventure!

Ziden's group made their way to the entrance to the Underground as Ziden looked into the dark cave.

" That is one dark cave. Is this the entrance to the Underground, Patchouli?" Ziden asked as she nodded.

" Yes, this cave leads directly to the Underground, we'll have quite a walk down this cave so be prepared." Patchouli said as she pushed Ziden into the cave as Dante followed behind Patchouli.

Within a few seconds of entering the cave, their field of vision instantly became zero as Ziden noticed that the path went straight down.

" Wow, we are really going in deep, huh? I can't even see my own hand in front of my face." Ziden said as he felt Patchouli gripping his shoulder.

" Yes, hopefully the Youkai won't give too much trouble, after all, we are going to be facing beings that can use Danmaku." Patchouli said as Ziden sighed.

" Great. I've never been good at dealing with Danmaku users, its a good that Mokou doesn't know that when we sparred back then. She'd be harder to deal with." Ziden said while groaning.

" Danmaku... that the thing that Yukari used on us when we fought her at your mansion a year ago, right?" Ziden nodded. " That sucked when we had to dodge all those bullets and somehow figure out when to hit her."

" Don't worry, as long as you don't anger the Youkai, we should have to deal with anyone." Patchouli warned.

" Where's the music anyway? I thought Henry was supposed to be hooking us up." Dante asked.

" \*shrugs\* Maybe he's looking for the right song." Ziden suggested.

" Perhaps, it would be interesting to listen to some music right now." Patchouli said as they felt the path slope more downwards.

### **The Dark Blowhole ( Touhou: Subterranean Animism)**

" Meh, it seems too high paced for us to be walking down a path." Ziden said.

" Eek!" Ziden feels something large jump onto his back as he almost fell down.

" Gah! Patchouli! What the hell!?" Ziden yelled.

" Something just crawled up my leg!" Patchouli stated as Ziden felt something brush against his face.

" Yeah, there's something here on this path, I can't see much of anything but I see alot of things crawling around here." Dante stated while reaching for Rebellion.

Ziden immediately summoned fire to his hand and was shocked by what he saw. He saw spider webs and tarantula sized spider crawling all around the walls. " Great, nothing but stupid spiders."

" Who the hell are you calling stupid, human!?" The trio looked up and saw a blonde woman floating down towards them. The girl was wearing a black and brown dress that's poofy under the waist, some black shoes with white socks, and a yellow ribbon tied around her lower body. She had brown eyes, blonde hair tied up in a bun with a ribbon.

" Please excuse my idiot friend here, he was just frustrated about the walk here." Patchouli apologized as the mysterious girl floated over to him.

" Your friend should really watch his mouth. These Youkai spiders can attack you if they want to. I'm Yamane Kurodani." Yamane introduced herself as the trio did the same. " You guys picked a bad time to visit the Underground. We've got these weird guys dressed in blue cloaks attacking the Youkai and Demons down, so I should advise that you guys go back home."

The trio looked at each other for a minute. " Actually, we can take care of those guys for you. We've dealt with them before." Ziden said as Yamane looked at his face.

" You're a human though, but you have a divine smell coming off of you. Ah, you bonded with a Phoenix, didn't you?" Yamane asked.

" Sharp nose you got there, little lady. Ziden had a Phoenix but cut his ties with it after a falling out and took its power for his own." Dante explained as Ziden snorted.

" Well, I guess you can pass then, if you want, I can led you to the bridge that leds up to the town." Yamane offered.

" Sure. Led the way, spider lady." Dante said as they followed Yamane down the path. Ziden noticed several human skulls with spiders coming out of the eyes.

After a few minutes of walking, they notice a bridge leading to an eastern style gate.

" Well, we're here. Past that gate lies the Underground City, in which the Oni and various Youkai and Demons are fighting the cloaked humans." Yamane said as Ziden walked onto the bridge.

" It was nice meeting you Yamane." Ziden said as he waved at her.

" Thank you, Mr. Ziden. Please be careful when fighting those cloaked guys, especially those flying ones." Yamane warned as she disappeared from sight.

" Hey Patchouli? You know you can get off his back now, right?" Dante asked as Patchouli scoffed.

" I'm fine up here, thank you very much." Patchouli said as Ziden approached the gate.

" I don't mind, although you could get your chest off of my neck, they're heavy." Ziden said as Patchouli blushed.

Ziden pushed on the door, only to find out that the door was shut tight. " I think the door's locked."

Ziden kicked the door hard but it still didn't budge. " Perhaps it would be smarter to leap over the wall, I'm sure you can jump that high, at least." Patchouli suggested.

" That could work. Or it could fail horribly and get us both killed." Ziden said as Patchouli sighed.

" Just do it right and watch where you land so you don't get me injured." Patchouli advised as Ziden crouched down. Ziden leapt high into the air as he soared over the gate and found himself plummeting into a wheelbarrel. Dante merely jumped off of the wall and landed safely on the other side of the gate as Ziden got up and dusted himself off.

" Nice fall there, Ziden. You're lucky you broke my fall." Patchouli said as Ziden looked around at the damaged buildings and dead corpses laying around.

" It looks like the Zealots are putting up a good fight against these Youkai." Ziden said as the duo continued to walk down the path. Dante quickly caught up with them as they see a large city in the distance. Not only that, Ziden also saw a large Mansion in the distance.

" Man, this place looks like Hell but toned a few notches." Ziden noticed.

" Well, this used to be Hell before they moved it to a new location." Patchouli said as Ziden sighed.

" This is probably the reason why Yukari didn't want us to come down here. All sorts of things that are down here have a severe hatred for the both of us." Dante said, noticing Patchouli about to ask a question. " I'm the son of a demonic traitor and Ziden almost killed Lucifer several times in the past."

" That is true." Patchouli said as they entered the town and saw several shops and pubs.

" So this is Hell? Well, Former Hell anyway." Ziden looked around and saw several female Oni walking around holding spiked clubs that covered in blood and brain matter.

Ziden noticed a blonde Oni with a red horn staring at him as if she knew him from before. " That woman... she seems familiar. Maybe I saw her when I was little." Ziden thought to himself as he noticed a purple haired girl watching him like a hawk.

Dante looked around and saw several injured Youkai and Demons, resting in the pub as they see several medical Youkai aiding the wounded.

" Ziden, it looks like these guys took a real beating." Dante examined as they sat down on a bench.

" I don't sense anything hostile nearby, so we can take a small rest." Ziden said as he sensed the blonde haired woman approaching them.

Patchouli's eyes widened when she saw the Oni approaching them. " Great. We've been spotted by her of all people. Hopefully these two won't get into a fight with her." Patchouli thought as the woman stopped in front of Ziden and crouched down to see his eyes.

" Would you happen to be a man named Ziden Icrim?" The Oni asked as Ziden examined her clothing.

She has long, straight blonde hair, red eyes, and a single red horn coming out of her forehead. She wears a white, short-sleeved shirt with red trim at the cuffs, neck, and bottom and a dark blue semi-transparent skirt with red highlights and trim. Her wrists and ankles are manacled, with short, broken chains attached to the manacles.

" Yeah, do I know you?" Ziden asked as the woman sighed.

" Great, Yukari was right about you losing your memories after all. That means you don't remember me or the promise you made to me when you were a kid." The oni said as Ziden shrugged.

" I'll remember you eventually, lady. After all, I remember all of my memories involving Yukari, Ran and Chen, and I only hope that I remember the name of a beautiful woman that is standing in front of me." Ziden flirted as Patchouli elbowed him in the side.

"Yuugi Hoshiguma. Well now, looks like you became quite the ladies man. That's good, considering how shy you were when talking to me or Suika. I guess you still don't like alcohol, right?" Yuugi asked as Ziden nodded.

" Makes sense, given what Yukari told us about you in Dreamland." Patchouli said while adjusting her glasses.

" Yeah, alcohol can kill me if I drink the flammable kinds, that's why if I do decide to drink them, I have to make them unflammable." Ziden said while staring off into the distance.

" So is that girl your girlfriend?" Yuugi asked as Ziden nodded.

" You can say that, although fiancée would be a better term." Ziden said while taking Crimson Edge off of his back and placing it on his lap.

" Man Ziden, women just seem to like falling for you. I'm jealous. Only women I met are the ones that want to kill me or put a bullet in my head when I first meet them." Dante said, remembering how he met Lady.

" Meh, you get used to it. Getting shot really isn't that bad, well for me anyway. Really easy to heal from and they can never kill... unless it's a Sniper round or a powerful Shotgun blast." Ziden said.

" Really? What about Magnum rounds?" Dante asked.

" It could if you fired it at me long enough and I was weakened like I am now." Ziden answered.

" Man, I envy your regeneration. I mean you could heal from being hit by several stars and completely heal it off in a matter of seconds." Dante said as Ziden laughed.

" Yep, regeneration allows me to focus on Offense alot more than my defense. I mean, who needs Defense when you can heal off damage?" Ziden asked as Yuugi chuckled.

" That does make sense kid, but defense is still important nonetheless. I mean, what if you meet an opponent that can cancel out that Regeneration of yours?" Yuugi asked.

" Then I become an evasive fighter and dodge all of foes attacks while dishing out my own." Ziden answered.

" It seems that Ziden is an adaptive fighter, changing his battle style with each encounter with an enemy." Patchouli said as Ziden nodded.

" Well anyway, I'm glad you're here kid. I've been hearing alot of stories about you from the Demons that live around here, no doubt you'll be able to help out here with those weird cloaked men and those white creatures." Yuugi said while cracking her knuckles.



" Yeah and it looks like we don't have to wait." Ziden unsheathed Crimson Edge and threw it towards a small child playing in the street. The sword stopped in midair above the child as she felt something drip onto her face.

A Shadow Zealot turned visible and was revealed to be holding a stiletto knife and was about to kill the Youkai child, but Ziden's blade tore through his chest as more Shadow Zealots appeared around Ziden.

Yuugi was about to join in, but Dante stepped up with Rebellion in his hand. " Time to rock this party! Yuugi, you chill out and let the professionals deal with these guys." Dante said as Yuugi took a seat next Patchouli.

" Kill Ziden Icrim and the Son of Sparda!" A Shadow Zealot yelled as the Zealots charged at Ziden and Dante.

### **Night of Fate ( Kingdom Hearts)**

Ziden dodged a stab attack and delivered a rib shattering punch to a Zealot and smashed his skull with other fist, shocking the bystanders before they cheered.

" Huh. The kid changed since I last saw him, he never wanted to kill anyone when I met him." Yuugi said while watching the fight.

" It happened after he left Gensokyo, he became a murderous super powered child before he met the Yama, which caused him to reform and become good... ish." Patchouli informed, remembering how he acted in Dreamland.

" I see." Yuugi said while listening to the music that was playing.

Ziden grabbed a Zealot by the throat and held him hostage while whipped out Efrete while moving around with his human shield. Ziden saw a Shadow Zealot charging at him with a ice-covered sword. Ziden blocked the attack by using the bottom of his shoe to

repel the blade. Ziden points Efrete behind fires a large number of bullets into the Zealot's chest, leaving bloody holes which in the shape of a Z on his chest.

Ziden began to gather energy into Efrete as a red ball appear in front of the barrel of the gun. " Bullet Hell!" Ziden fired a multitude of giant flaming balls that flew into the air remained suspended in the air as the Zealots tried to attack him before he finished his attack.

" Too slow!" Ziden swung Efrete downwards, causing the large balls of fire to slam into the Shadow Zealots, lighting them aflame as Ziden threw his human shield into the flames as he watched Dante fight off his opponents.

Dante was dodging and parrying his opponents strikes while dealing out his own attacks. Dante slammed the flat side of Rebellion into the side of a Zealot next to him. " I'm going to take you on a wild ride!" Dante began to spin in a circle, catching more Zealots on his blade as he lifted it over his head and began to spin it like a fan, creating a whirlwind above him as Ziden watched.

Dante continued to spin his blade as he quickly began to switch hands while performing various poses which the female spectators whistled at him. Patchouli merely shook her head at the sight of Dante showing off.

Dante stopped his attack and performed a golf swing to launch all of the Zealots towards Ziden while he was spinning Nosada around his finger. " Lets go. Hell's Windmill!" Ziden jumped forward and began to spin like a buzzsaw, wrapping himself in fire as he ripped through the bodies of the Zealots as he landed behind Dante.

Ziden and Dante noticed that there were no more Zealots around as they heard the crowd cheering for them. " Not bad, Dante. Looks like you haven't been getting rusty." Ziden said as Dante chuckled.

" Same to you, buddy." Dante said as noticed Yuugi walking over to them.

" Not bad, you two. Looks like you guys sure know how to fight! Even we Oni had trouble dealing with those shadow guys!" Yuugi said while patting them both on the back.

" Well, as I said before, we do have prior experience to fighting these guys." Ziden said, trying not to fall down from Yuugi's strong pats. " God! This feels like being hit by a Goron!"

" Y-y-y-yeah! We can handle any threat that comes our way!" Dante exclaimed, also trying to remain standing from Yuugi's pats. " Dear lord! It feels like my back is about to cave in!"

" Well I hope you two had fun." Patchouli asked as Ziden and Dante chuckled.

" Sure did. Was surprised when I sensed Zealots roaming around this city." Ziden said while scratching his head.

Ziden heard someone walking towards them as he noticed a young-looking girl walking towards them and he noticed the hateful looks that the people were giving her. He even noticed that Patchouli didn't seem comfortable around this girl and was visibly showing it via a very noticable frown.

Ziden noticed the girl's clothes and observed them very closely. She has short, purple hair with a black hairband and purple eyes. A red "third eye" is positioned over her heart, with cords running to her head and wrists. Wears a blue shirt with yellow heart buttons and pink collar, a pink skirt with faint flowery pattern and pink slippers.

Ziden thought about how weird it was to have an eye floating outside of her body as the girl chuckled.

" It is not as weird as you think, Ziden Icrim." The woman said as Ziden gave a confused look.

" Hmm? How did she-? Wait, I get it now." Ziden thought while smirking.

" Indeed, I can read your mind... and it seems that you don't seem to mind having your thoughts read aloud, do you?" The woman asked as Ziden shrugged. "... I see, you can read minds as well."

" Well, not as good as yours though. You see-"

" Ah, interesting." The woman asked as Ziden looked upset. " Oh? You wanted Patchouli to hear about this as well, go ahead."

" As I was saying, my ability to read minds isn't as good as yours because I have to be in a calm state in order to do it and the person whom I'm trying to mind read has to be alive. I do know ways of retrieving memories from the dead and undead but I prefer not to because of the mess it makes on my hands." Ziden said as the woman.

" So he can read minds as well? Ziden's got alot of powers now that I think about. Right now he has 10, not counting his missing ones. I can't wait to study these powers." Patchouli thought while a sly smile appeared on her. Ziden noticed it and felt crept out.

" So to what do I owe this pleasure?" Ziden asked as the woman bowed down.

" I am in need of your help, Legendary Hero of the Eternal Flames." The woman asked as Ziden tapped his foot.

" Sure, but lets find somewhere else to talk. These women are making me feel uncomfortable." Ziden said, noticing that several of the female Oni had golden shackles in their hands, which Yuugi noticed and stood by Ziden's side and grabbed into a headlock.

" My place is not too far from here, we can talk there!" Yuugi said as she took flight with a struggling Ziden in her grip as the purple haired woman followed after them. Dante took to leaping from building to building as Patchouli flew after them.

*Meanwhile in the Human Village...*

Mokou had arrived in the Village as she noticed several people standing near the Dragon God's statue. She noticed that the men were wearing pure white cloaks and had golden crosses on their backs. To her, she also saw that they were carrying weird weapons similar to Ziden's twin pistols.

" Are these guys Zealots? No, something's different about these guys." Mokou observed as she saw a man approached the statue with a sledgehammer.

" This Godless country worships a filthy reptile instead of our God? Disgusting beings these Gensokyians are, but don't worry! We'll open your eyes to the light of our Savior!" One of the men said while preparing to smash the statue as Mokou fired a large ball of fire at the group as the man with the sledgehammer, exploded violently as the men turned around and saw Mokou.

" Another one of these Demons in human flesh. No matter, kill her like the others!" The man yelled as the group charged at Mokou with their guns firing rapidly at the girl.

Mokou immediately ran behind cover and focused fire into her hand. Mokou threw the fireball at the group, catching one of the men on fire as one of them caught her from behind.

" Gotcha!" He stabbed Mokou through the neck with a large knife as she fell to the ground bleeding out as the man continued to stab Mokou in the chest.

Mokou became light headed at her loss of blood as she lit herself aflame and severely burned her attacker as she got up and smashed the man's skull in as she tried to catch her balance.

" Dammit! I'm still dizzy after that? Tch! Who the hell are these freaks?" Mokou asked herself as she walked away from the corpses and walked through the village, looking for Keine.

" Where is she? Dammit, I hope she's alright." Mokou broke out into a run as she frantically ran around looking for Keine. She ran across near the schoolhouse as she spotted the person that she was looking for. " Keine! There you are!" Mokou found Keine, leaning against the school while clutching her side.

Keine looked surprised to see Mokou back in Gensokyo as she tried to get up only to cry out in pain before falling down.

Mokou ran over to her friend and helped her to her feet. " Thanks Mokou. Why are you back in Gensokyo?" Keine asked as Mokou brought her inside the school.

" Ziden and Yukari told us we had to come back to Gensokyo to help you guys out." Mokou explained as Keine pointed her to the workroom.

" All the fighters are in there. This is our Headquarters. The GPD is here as well." Keine said in between breaths.

Mokou opened the door and saw several familiar people sitting down in chairs. She sat Mokou down as she approached one of the people whom she saw in the Glitz Pit. " Why are you here, Lucci?"

Lucci looked up at the girl with severe disinterest as he answered her question. " I am only here because that weird dragon summoned me here. You were with Ziden Icrim, correct?"

" Yeah, I am. Because of you, he's got some bounty on his head and these lunatic Marines after him! Give me one reason why I shouldn't kill you." Mokou threatened as she curled her hand into a fist.

" Because you wouldn't leave this room alive, kid." Mokou turned and saw a brown haired man glaring at her.

" And who the hell are you?" Mokou asked as the man stood up.

The man had brown hair with long sideburns and mullet, was muscular and was wearing a red jacket with a white undershirt underneath it. He wore blue jeans with brown shoes. What noticed most about this man was his feral like appearance.

" The name's Logan, but people usually call me by other name, Wolverine." Logan introduced himself as Mokou glared. " Problem, dollface?"

" What the hell did you call me?" Mokou hands were covered in fire as Logan whistled.

" Fire and such a short temper. You remind of Spikes." Logan said as Keine was confused who he was referring to.

" He's talking about Ziden." Chun-Li said as Keine nodded.

" Oh? So I remind you of him, do I?" Mokou was beyond angry at this point as Keine tried to defuse the situation.

" Yeah, you do. What's the matter, girl? Mad because you hate being compared to your little boyfriend?" Logan teased as Mokou hit the breaking point.

" You. Me. Outside. Now." Mokou cracked her knuckles as Logan smirked.

" Sure thing, its your ass that's going to get kicked." Logan said as he got up.

" Wait! You two can't fight now!" Keine said, blocking the duo from leaving.

" Let them go, Keine." Keine looked between the duo and saw Ryu walking over to the duo. " These two obviously have a problem with each other and the only way they want to solve is with their fists." Ryu explained as Keine looked at both her best friend and Logan as she noticed their resolves.

"... Fine, but try not to die this time, Mokou." Keine asked, getting a raised eyebrow from Logan.

" I won't Keine. This time, I'm going to be the last one standing!" Mokou declared as the duo went outside with the rest of the fighters following after them. Keine quickly sat down outside and watched as the duo stood across from across from each other.

" Ready to do this girl?" Logan asked as Mokou chuckled.

" Yeah. I'll try not to kill you because you're helping out here." Mokou said while bouncing off of her left foot.

" Don't need to worry about that. I'm very durable." Logan said as metal claws popped out from between his knuckles, shocking Mokou as she realized something.

" I see now. You're like me in way. A person trapped outside of the cycle of time, cursed to live forever alone." Mokou said as Logan spat on the ground next to him.

" Sorry, but I'm different from you and Ziden. I was born with my curse, not obtained like yours and Ziden." Logan said, trying to remember his missing memories. " But enough of that! I hope you fight better than that Spikey haired Jackass!" Logan charged at Mokou as their fight began.

*Back at Yuugi's place...*

" Achoooo!"

" Whoa!" Everyone jumped back from the stream of fire that came from Ziden's mouth as he wiped his nose.

" Jeez! I didn't know you could sneeze fire!" Patchouli exclaimed as Ziden chuckled.

" Sorry about that! Someone must be talking about me. Probably about how great I am!" Ziden gloated before breaking into a laugh.



" Enough of that! I'm glad I got you before those other Oni got their hands on you!" Yuugi said while forcing him into a hug.

" Whose to say that you aren't going to try and do the same?" Patchouli asked.

" I plan to. After all, I'm not going to let this opportunity slide me by." Yuugi said as Ziden snaked away from her hug.

" Wow Ziden, looks like women are coming to you in droves. Sucks to be you." Dante said.

" What? Why?" Ziden asked.

" Well, think about it for a second, you have four women in that Harem of yours. Two of them completely hate each other and will be probably killing each other on a daily basis." Dante said as Ziden could see that happening. " And then you've got Meiling, a woman who loves to test her martial arts skills against people and no doubt she'll be wanting to fight you on a daily basis when she isn't trying to give you a back breaking hug." Ziden's face began to pale. " I don't see Patchouli giving you much trouble... well minus her experimenting on you while you are sleeping."

" And since Yuugi said you made a promise to her as a child, making her apart of the Harem now and she looks like she'll want to beat the crap out of you for just looking at her funny." Patchouli added as Ziden's skin turned blue as he looked at Yuugi.

" Don't worry! We Oni are gentle to our mates! I'll try not to break too many bones during our daily brawls!" Yuugi announced as Ziden quickly thought of something.

" Well unfortunately if you want to fight me, you'll have to get through Dante first! He is my bodyguard after all!" Ziden lied as Yuugi trained her eyes on Dante.

" Wait, what? Hold on a sec-" Dante interrupted by a fist slamming into his face, launching him out of the building as Yuugi chased after him.

" Well, now then., what exactly do you need from me, Miss-"

" Satori Komeji. Before you ask, I am a Satori... ah, you don't know what that is. I am a part of a race of mind reader that is female only. Never before has there been a male Satori although a Male could attach the eye of a Satori to his body and gain our powers. Now back to the topic at hand... please focus, Ziden. Yuugi's chest size really isn't that important right now." Ziden received a smack from Patchouli as she yelled at him to stop being perverted. " \*Ahem\* Now then, my home, the Palace of the Earth Spirits, has been taken over by those blue cloaked men and those white creatures that move erratically... ah, so they are called Nobodies, created when a person with a strong will gets turned into a Heartless, interesting."

*" Tch! The hell are you doing, Ziden?! Letting this filthy creature read your mind like an open book!?"* Patchouli angrily thought as Satori looked at her.

" I don't appreciate being called a filthy creature, Miss Knowledge." Satori retorted.

" Stay out of my mind, then!" Patchouli yelled as Ziden sighed.

" Knock it off Patchouli. Why don't you go outside and watch Dante get his ass kicked by Yuugi to cool yourself?" Ziden said as Patchouli glared at Satori.

*" Read my mind, go and die in a ditch, you mind-reading bitch!"* Patchouli stormed outside as Satori looked neutral at Patchouli's thought.

"... Don't feel sorry for her actions. Its natural for Youkai to hate me, after all, we Satori aren't well liked by other Youkai. Sorta like how most demons hate Dante. I'm not sure of the details but it seems that

his bloodline is a cursed one. Hmm?... That's nice of you to want to be my friend, but you'll end up hating me like the others." Ziden placed his hand on Satori's shoulder and smiled. "... Thank you, Ziden. Perhaps we will become good friends through this. But that woman hates me... hmm? You'll take care of it? How?... Ah, you'll tell her to keep her mind closed while around me." Satori stood up and brushed off her skirt. Ziden offered his hand to her as she took it.

The sound of glass breaking could be heard as mysterious voice could be heard between the duo.

" A new bond has been established. New bonds will make you stronger and unlock new abilities for your Keyblade. You have obtained the First Rank of the Heart Arcana."

" So that's what these bonds are for. To unlock powers for my keyblade." Ziden summoned Hero's Strife and stared at it.

" Well if you are to help me, I'll have to take you to my home. First, let me find Orin, my pet." Ziden looked confused. " I have several blaze cats and hell ravens in my care and Orin is one of them. She'll be able to get us there very quickly. And yes, Okuu is my pet as well." Ziden shrugged as he walked out of Yuugi and saw a still angry Patchouli sitting on the steps.

" Hey, Patchy. I need to tell you something." Ziden asked as Patchouli angrily got up and stomped over to him. " Hmm? This may not be easy, she seems very... agitated for some reason. Maybe her Aunt Sally has come to visit."

" What? Done talking to your new friend?" Patchouli asked while tapping her foot.

Ziden leans close to her ear and whispers something into her ear as she calms down. " Fine, but you better be ready to pay me back for this." Satori walks out of the house as Patchouli glares at her.

" Well, I've contacted Orin and she is on her way now. All we must do now is wait." Satori announced as she sat down.

" *I wonder what Sora is doing right now?* " Ziden thought as Satori raised an eyebrow.

*Back at the Myouren Temple...*

Sora was sitting in main worship area of the temple with Byakuren, Ichirin, Reiji and Xiaomu, telling them of his past travels.

" Incredible. For someone so young to go through all of that, you're much stronger than you look Sora." Reiji said, causing Sora to blush.

" Its nothing. I knew that I was going to make it and save the worlds because I had my friends at my side, helping me all the way." Sora said while placing his hand on his heart.

" Sora, have you been able to find your friend, Riku?" Byakuren asked.

" No, not yet. But I will find him eventually!" Sora stated.

" Yep, never lose hope Sora. But may I see that Keyblade of yours, if you don't mind." Byakuren asked as Sora summoned it and handed it to her. " What a mysterious weapon. Although it looks very toy-like, I can sense that it holds powerful magic within it."

" Really? It sure doesn't look like it." Ichirin said as the Keyblade returned to Sora's hand.

" So those white creatures are called Nobodies, right? Created when a person succumbs to the darkness in his heart and becomes a Heartless." Byakuren asked.

" Yeah. According to Master Yen Sid, darkness is inside everyone's hearts." Sora explained as everyone placed their hands over their hearts.

" Well now, I do hope you succeed on your quest, oh. When you find Riku, I'd love to meet him, would you bring him here for me to meet him?" Byakuren asked as Sora nodded.

" Oh well, we should at least try to save Gensokyo from being overrun by the Ultima Brigade. It'd be easier if Ziden and Yukari didn't run off some where." Xiaomu said while sighing.

" I think Ziden went underground, he'll probably be back soon." Reiji said as they noticed Reimu entering the room.

" Oh, hey Reimu!" Sora happily yelled as Reimu covered her ears.

" Jeez. You didn't need to yell!" Reimu yelled back as she sat next to Sora.

" \*Sigh\* Young love!" Xiaomu teased as Reimu blushed.

" I'm not in love, you crazy fox!" Reimu angrily yelled.

Sora laughed at the sight as he noticed a Shadow Heartless sneaking out of the room. " Whoa! A Heartless!" Sora jumped up and chased after the Heartless as everyone chased after him.

" Whoa, Sora! Wait!" Ichirin yelled while taking flight, only to grabbed by something. " Gahhhh!"

" Hmm? Ichirin! What's wrong!?" Byakuren asked as Unzan turned large and punched the air next to her, hitting something solid as she is freed from the creature's grip.

Sora and Reimu already made it outside as they spotted Lightning Ace standing outside clapping his hands while smirking. Reiji had made it outside as he spotted the Ultima Brigade member.

" Lightning Ace! What are you doing here?!" Reiji asked, reaching for his weapons.

" Ah, if it isn't Reiji Arisu, agent of Shinra! Its been a long time, hasn't it!?" Ace asked as he walked towards the trio.

" What are you doing to our home?!" Reimu asked with her voice laced with fury.

" Why its simple, Yukari Yakumo and Ziden Icrim are the reasons why we did this." Ace said as he noticed the looks that the trio's faces were showing. " Those two caused so many setbacks to the Ultima Brigade's plans. Not only that, but they almost killed our great Lady Ultima."

" Wait. Ultima is a woman!?" Reiji was visibly shocked by this.

" Indeed, but that isn't important now. We've heard about how Yukari created this place and cares deeply for it. We also know that Ziden was raised in these lands, giving him an attachment to these lands. So then, the perfect revenge for us would be to raze these lands and kill everyone they care about." Ace explained while laughing.

" Yeah right! We're going to stop you and save Gensokyo." Sora yelled while dropping into his battle stance.

" Ah, the young hero, Chosen by the Keyblade. We already have plans for you, boy." Ace ominously said as the skies became dark with clouds. Ace snapped his fingers as a large puddle of darkness appeared behind him. " Have fun with this Heartless, Roxas! It'd be a shame if you died here!" Ace disappeared in a flash of blue lightning as a large humanoid began to form from the darkness.

*Back Underground...*

Ziden was enjoying playing a Pokemon game on his 3DS as Patchouli watched over his shoulder, asking him various questions about the creatures.

" So these creatures are caught by humans and used daily as tools for combat and yet these creatures seem to love being in combat?

Such strange creatures." Patchouli asked.

" Yep, I have several of them at my place and Yukari has some around the house for Chen to play with." Ziden said.

" Are any of these creatures, good for moving around books and they can follow orders well?" Patchouli asked.

" Maybe the Psychic types. They are very smart and they are very loyal." Ziden said, noticing the smile on her face as she hugged him from behind.

" You know what I'm about to ask you to do, right?" Patchouli asked.

Ziden sighed and reached into his jacket, pulling out several cards of Psychic type Pokemon and gave them to her. " Pick 6 of these ones and I'll get them for you."

Patchouli took the cards and placed them on the ground as she looked through the Pokemon, thinking hard about her choices.

" Good, that should give me some alone time. Yo, Satori! When is your cat getting here?" Ziden asked as Satori shrugged.

" She said she'd be here as fast as she can." Satori answered, peeking at the cards that Patchouli were looking at.

" Hey Ziden? Is there a Moon based Pokemon?" Patchouli asked.

" Well there is Umbreon, a Pokemon that can evolve in Moonlight. But its a Dark Type and it can't use-"

" I want this Umbreon to go along with this Espeon Pokemon!" Patchouli said as she handed Ziden her choices. Ziden looked them over and placed them in his jacket.

" Nice choices. I'll get them when we hit the Pokemon World. Just keep this a secret between you and me, I don't want everyone asking me to catch these things." Ziden said as Patchouli nodded.

Ziden noticed Satori looking at the cards. " Oh no." Patchouli noticed the look in Satori's eyes.

" Ziden... I see, these Psychic types have powers like mine. I'd like some as well, if you don't mind." Satori asked as Ziden nodded.

Ziden heard something flying towards him as he opened a vortex and watched Dante fly into it and land behind him, completely unconscious as Yuugi walked up to him. " You had fun?"

" Yep! That was a nice warm up!" Yuugi said while cracking her knuckles and looking at Ziden as he tried to run. Ziden heard the sound of wheels coming towards as he sees a large wheelbarrel coming towards them.

" OUTTA THE WAY! I CAN'T STOP THIS CRAZY THING!" Ziden's instincts kicked in as he dodge rolled out of the way. Yuugi turned around to see the bottom of a wheelbarrel hitting her in the face and launching her into her home as the cart screeched to a halt.

Ziden looked at the girl driving the cart as Satori approached her with the cards in her hand.

The girl has black cat ears and dark red eyes, with fiery red hair styled into twin braids and adorned by black ribbons at the top and bottom of the braids. She wears a black decorated dress with green frills.

Ziden found it weird that she has human ears and cat ears. Even Chen didn't have both.

" Mistress Satori! I got here as fast as I could!" The cat girl said as Satori turned to Ziden.

" This is Rin Kaenbyou, one of my many pets. She is also called Orin and Hell's Traffic Accident. Orin, this is Ziden Icrim... my friend." Satori said, obviously not used to saying that.



" Really? Its awesome that you made a new friend Master! Nice to meet you, bro!" Rin said while shaking Ziden's hands.

" Uh, same to you too." Ziden said as Dante came to.

" Dear god, did someone get the License Plate of that truck that hit me?" Dante asked as said truck walked out of her house, barely harmed.

" Jeez! I guess we can't fight now. Looks we have a journey on our hands!" Yuugi chuckled as she drank from a red dish that she must have gotten from inside her house.

Satori explained the situation to Rin as she listened carefully to Satori's words. " Okay, so you want me to take all of you guys to the Palace of the Earth Spirits and let these guys kick those guys out of our home?" Satori nodded. " Okay! I hope you guys don't mind that you have to ride in cart."

" What's wrong with that? I don't mind it." Dante said as Ziden sighed.

" She carries corpses in that thing." Ziden said.

" Huh? How'd you know that, bro?" Rin asked.

" I see, his sense of smell is very powerful, it's twice as strong as a vampire's sense of smell. His other senses are strengthened as well." Satori said.

" Yeah, I can smell Patchouli's perfume over there as well." Ziden said, earning a blush out of Patchouli.

Ziden got in the cart first as Dante followed suit and sat diagonally across from Ziden. " Hey Patchouli! My lap's open if you want to sit in it!" Ziden yelled as Patchouli scoffed.

" No thank you." Patchouli said.

" I'll take that spot then!" Yuugi said, climbing into the wheelbarrel.

**Fwwwwwoooooooooosshhhhh!**

A fast blur of purple sped past Yuugi and tackled Ziden before settling down with a book in hand.

" Huh. I didn't even know she could move that fast." Dante said as Yuugi and Satori entered the cart.

" Me neither." Ziden simply said, continuing to play the game.

" Alright, step on it, Orin!" Satori ordered as Hell's Traffic Accident took off.

Ziden kept his senses up, in case of a sneak attack by the Zealots or the Nobodies. "So bro? Has Okuu been getting along with everyone on that journey of yours?" Rin asked.

" Yeah, she seems to be doing alright." Ziden answered.

" That's good, bro! She's been talking about you alot, mainly that she's glad you healed after that accident." Rin said, taking a sharp turn.

Ziden noticed that they were getting close to mansion as he decided to look through his clone's memories in order to remember what happened prior to him taking his place back at the Coliseum.

Satori was also looking around the property and noticed that there were no Zealots on the outside of the manor. " Weird. There are none of those Zealots or Nobodies around the manor."

" There is only one person inside that Manor. I know that person too." Ziden was glaring at the manor with his body temperature rising.

" Is it who I think it is?" Dante asked, keeping a hand on Rebellion.

" Yeah, except..." Ziden seemed to be concentrating.

" Hey. What's wrong?" Yuugi asked.

" It seems that he has changed since I last fought him, about 10 years I think. I'm fairly certain he died." Ziden said, scratching his head.

" We're here!" Rin suddenly stopped the cart, sending Ziden flying into the large door. " Oops! Sorry about that, bro!"

Ziden slid down the door as Yuugi walked to door. " So there's only one guy in here? I wonder where everyone is?"

" Maybe they abandoned this place when they learned we got here." Dante suggested.

" Doubt it. They are probably attacking another location because of the trouble they had dealing with the Underground dwellers." Patchouli said while helping Ziden to his feet.

" Hmm? I've noticed that you haven't been having coughing fits for a while. Why is that?" Ziden asked.

" \*Shrugs\* I've been feeling better after you started cooking for me. I have gained some much needed weight." Patchouli answered as she noticed Ziden opening his mouth, a sharp glare from Patchouli silenced him instantly.

" Damn, you aren't married yet and she already has you trained. I feel for you dude." Dante said faking a bow.

" Guys! Focus! Don't forget why we came here!" Patchouli yelled as Yuugi kicked open the doors.

The Mansion's Interior was quite western styled. Ziden noticed the large stairs leading up to the upper floor of the mansion as he noticed the animals coming towards them. Satori walked to her pets and roped them all in for a big hug.

Everyone heard the sound of someone clapping as they looked and saw someone floating down towards them.

Ziden and Yuugi stepped towards the man as he landed in front of them. The man was wearing platinum armor with emblem of a full moon on his armor. He was wearing a dark blue cape with segmented bird-like wings underneath it. His helm was similar to the Devastator head, although more dragon-like.

" It took you long enough to get here, wretched Earthling!" The man yelled as Ziden scoffed.

" It has been a long time coming, Dark Star. It's so nice to see you again. " Ziden sarcastically said.

Dark Star chuckled as he snapped his fingers and created a faint blue barrier behind Ziden and Yuugi, separating them from their allies.

" Should have saw that coming. And let me guess, he's going to summon something to attack us." Dante said as he heard Dark Star chuckling.

" Indeed. Have fun with my new pet!" A ball of darkness appeared behind Dante as Patchouli ordered for Satori to get out of the way as 8 large legs came out of the darkness. Dark Star turned to Ziden as red electricity wrapped around his hands. " Don't worry, you two. I'll make you two die much slower than those two will!" Dark Star charged at the duo as a large battle was about to start.

*Fun Fact:*

*1. Logan is based off of his Anime appearance because I liked that version of him.*

*2. The idea of giving the Touhou girls, Pokemon was an interesting idea and I plan on introducing the Pokemon to Gensokyo*

*Author's Note: Well, this was a long chapter. This is part of the reason why I like the Smash Worlds and Gensokyo because they aren't following set storylines and I can make the story for said world. This Arc is going to be a big one and some interesting things will be revealed for the Villains of this arc.*

## Beyond the Time! Yoruhoshi's Revenge!

Ziden stared down Dark Star as the circled around each other as Yuugi drank a sip of sake. " Let me guess, Dark Star, the reason you joined the Ultima Brigade is because you wanted to kill me, right?"

" Indeed. After our last encounter, you left me nearly dead and broken. I truly thought that my life would be ended by your hands, but a miracle happened. A white haired man wearing a pure suit appeared before me, offering me a second chance at revenge against. I was very upset that you weren't there to fight me, but now, I get my chance to test my skills against you, boy." Dark Star said as his helmet began to open up and revealed his face.

Ziden noticed something about him he never noticed before. Dark Star had shoulder length black hair and green eyes, but Ziden realized something.

" This guy looks a bit like Kaguya." Ziden said aloud as Dark Star raised an eyebrow.

" By Kaguya, do you mean Kaguya Houraisen? How do you know my half sister?" Dark Star asked.

" Huh? So Kaguya's Tsukuyomi's daughter? That should have been obvious given that she is the Princess of the Moon." Ziden said while scratching his chin.

" That didn't answer my question, boy."

" Oh, she's my wife via a trick involving that crafty doctor of hers. Plus she had the extreme hots for me at one point, but I got rid of that. Damn crafty Old Man." Ziden swore under his breath.

" Humph. I'm not surprised that my airhead half sister fell for you, only women without brains would fall for you." Dark Star said as Patchouli glared at him.

" Ziden! You kick that Lunarian's ass or I'll kick yours, got that?!" Patchouli yelled as Ziden nodded.

" Oh? So it seems you multiple women falling for you, how sad for them." Dark Star insulted as Yuugi scoffed.

" So this a Lunarian? I never expected them to be so... weak-looking." Yuugi observed as Dark Star's smile faded away.

" Humph! I am much stronger than I look, as you will soon see." Dark Star summoned a red saber to his hand as he began to laugh.

### **Scarlet Battle Soul ( Castlevania: Dawn of Sorrow)**

Dark Star charged at the duo, swinging his sword at Ziden's neck. Ziden ducked down and slammed his foot into Dark Star's chest, sending him flying into the ceiling as Ziden raised his hand into the sky.

Ziden's arm became coated in a purple energy as it began to spiral around his arm. " Gravity Slam!" Ziden swung his arm downwards, causing the gravity around Dark Star to increase and force him to plummet into the ground.

Dark Star released a current of electricity that traveled along the floor and straight towards Ziden. Lightning travels up Ziden's leg and electrocutes him to the point of temporary paralysis. The Gravity returned to normal as Yuugi charged at Dark Star.

Yuugi slammed her fist into Dark Star's spine with an insane amount of force behind it, she created a large crater that continued to get bigger as Dark Star coughed up some blood.

Ziden recovered from his paralysis as he looked at the destruction Yuugi caused with one punch. " Wow. Talk about a powerful punch."

Dark Star got up and tried to stab Yuugi with his sword, only to see that the sword shattered against her stomach as she smirked. A

vortex appeared over Yuugi's stomach as a flaming fist shot out of it and slammed into Dark Star's face, sending him flying towards the stairs before he flipped and landed on his feet.

" Not bad. You two working in unison certainly did catch me off guard, but now I think I'll start getting serious now." Dark Star started to summon a stream of water that began to spin around him. " Taste the power of Neptune's domain, Water!"

" Great. Now he's channeling the power of the Roman Gods now, this is going to be a pain." Ziden said while unsheathing Nosada and Murakumo and spinning them while walking up the stairs.

" Channeling a God's power, huh? This should be fun!" Yuugi said while cracking her knuckles.

The water flew into Dark Star's hand and he reformed it into a watery trident. Ziden charged in and slashed at Dark Star's face, only for him to block it with his trident. Ziden flips himself and slams his foot into the top of Dark Star's head, stunning him as Yuugi slammed her fist into his chest, causing a crack to form in his armor.

Dark Star jumps back and points the tip of his trident at the duo. " Die!" A barrage of water bullets began to fly out of the trident's tips. Ziden began to block and reflect the bullets while walking calmly towards Dark Star with Yuugi tanking the bullets head on.

" Is this all you got, Dark Star? I'm getting bored over here." Ziden said as Dark Star growled with a dark aura surrounding him.

" Oh, then allow me to up the ante!" Dark Star stabs the trident in the ground and created a massive wave that could swallow up the entire room.

Ziden swings Murakumo and proceeds to freeze the massive wave while continuing his slow pace. Ziden reached the massive wave and kicked the frozen block, shattering it as he noticed a large blade of water coming towards him.



Ziden was unable to dodge the blade of water as it sliced through his neck and severed his head from his body. Yuugi was shocked at the sight as his head rolled down the stairs. Ziden's body remained standing and holding his twin swords.

"That's strange, his body should have fallen by now." Yuugi said as she noticed something moving in his neck. Several tendrils came out of his neck and began to reform his head, all within a few seconds as he cracked his new neck.

"That hurt, you asshole. Looks like you are getting serious, Dark Star." Ziden disappeared from sight as Dark Star jumped backwards to dodge being impaled by Ziden's blades.

"Yuugi! Keep up if you can!" Ziden began to swing his swords wildly at Dark Star while moving forward. Dark Star blocked all of Ziden's strikes with his trident as he backed away. Dark Star pushed Ziden away as he took flight with his mechanical wings and flew into the hallway. Ziden chased after him as he kept his senses high. Ziden found himself outside of the mansion and on a stone walkway above a large pool of lava.

"Neptune's Wrath!" Ziden rolled out of the way to dodge a powerful blast of water and looked up to see Dark Star flying above him with a smirk on his face. Ziden sees Yuugi coming down the hallway as Dark Star charged at him.

Ziden bent his body backwards and dodged the tackle as he spun his body across the floor and slid across the water and laid on his side looking at Dark Star. Ziden performed a breakdance spin and leapt to his feet with Murakumo charged with energy.

"Frozen Storm Wave!" Ziden began to rapid fire frozen sword waves at Dark Star as he flew around to dodge the multitude of frozen blades. Ziden continued his attack while opening up several vortexes and shooting the blades into the vortexes as a smirk appeared on his face.

Several vortexes appeared around Dark Star and began fire the blades into his body. Dark Star screamed as the blades slammed into his body. Dark Star was frozen in a massive block of ice as Ziden raised Nosada over his head with fire spiraling around it.

" Fire Dragon's Rampage!" Ziden swings Nosada in a vertical arc, releasing a large dragon made of fire that flew towards Dark Star and coiled around the ice block. The dragon opened his mouth and let out a loud roar before beginning to violently bite the ice block, causing to crack as Yuugi reached the bridge.

The dragon began tear off chunks off ice and kept the chunk containing Dark Star in its jaws as it began to apply pressure to the ice chunk before the dragon exploded in a large ball of fire as Ziden noticed Dark Star flying out of the inferno and landed on the bridge, with his armor heavily damaged.

Ziden noticed that the armor had started to heal itself when Ziden realized something, that wasn't armor, it's his skin.

" So Ultima made you a cyborg, huh? That complicates things. Now I have to kill you in order to stop you." Ziden said while cracking his neck.

" So we're striking to kill now, good. I'm tired of pulling my punches!" Yuugi said while slammed her fists together.

" I've had enough of you two! Let's how good you two can dodge!" Dark Star spread out his wings as they began to separate into cone shaped weapons that were moving sporadically around Dark Star. " Lunar Funnels! Go!"

The Lunar Funnels flew around Ziden and Yuugi and began to rapid fire lasers that they struggled to dodge and were hit by them multiple times as Dark Star laughed.

*" Tch! These weapons are a pain in the ass! But they seem familiar to something I saw before, I'm sure I can figure a way out of this*

*mess so I can kill that Lunarian asshole!"* Ziden thought as a laser ripped through his right shoulder.

---

Dante and Patchouli dodged a laser beam that began to slow down and split into more lasers as Dante looked at the Heartless they were fighting.

The Heartless was a giant black scorpion with massive pincers. What was weird about the scorpion was the fact that its body, tail and claws were segmented and between those segments were ghost-like blue flames. The Heartless' face was round and pitch black with the trademark golden eyes and jagged mouth with scorpion fangs in the middle of the lips. The stinger was also weird looking as instead of being a normal bulb, it was a white humanoid skull with blue flames in the mouth and eyeholes. The Heartless emblem was on its forehead.

" Man, these Emblem Heartless sure look intimidating in their own ways, don't they Dante?" Patchouli asked.

" Yeah, this thing reminds me of a demon I faced a while ago. Hey ugly! Are you related to a spider named Phantom?" Dante asked while jumping out the way of getting grabbed by its claw.

" I'm fairly certain that it doesn't understand human speech, it is a Heartless after all." Patchouli said while taking flight.

" Yeah, that should have been obvious but atleast I get a good fight out of this!" Dante said as the Heartless roared.

### **Unforgettable ( Kingdom Hearts Birth By Sleep)**

" I wonder what this Heartless is called, anyway?" Patchouli asked.

" Meh, just call it the Death Striker and call it a day." Dante said while firing bullets into the Heartless' body.

Patchouli began to rain down fireballs on the Death Striker, only to see a green light surround it. " Fire heals it, I should have known."

Dante ducked to avoid getting hit by its claw and jumped into the air and began to firing bullets onto its back, to see it block the bullets with its claws. Dante put away his guns and pulled out Rebellion and performed an diving attack, slashing its body as spun around to face Dante.

" Come on ugly, let's dance!" Dante stabbed his sword into the scorpion's face, causing it to rear back. The Death Striker slammed its body back down, creating a massive shockwave that caught Dante off guard and flipped him onto his face.

" Earth Water Sign: Noachian Deluge!" Patchouli fired a powerful stream of water onto the scorpion's back, causing it to roar in pain as Dante got up and threw his sword into the Heartless' face.

One of its claws blocked the sword as Dante switch to his Cerberus Devil Arm. " Time for you to chill out, clawface!"

Dante charged at Death Striker and proceeded to violently beat him across the face with the icy nunchaku. " Windmill!" Dante began to rapidly spin the nunchaku, hitting the creature in the face at an even more rapid rate.

The Heartless leapt away from Dante and landed on the wall, rapidly opening and closing its claws as they begin to rotate.

" Wait a sec... you don't it can-"

" Separate its body? More than likely, it can. That means we'll have to be more careful." Patchouli said as the Death Striker separated itself into many pieces.

Dante and Patchouli began rapidly dodge around the fiery pieces of the scorpion flew at them, attempting to tackle them. Dante noticed

that the skull was flying behind Patchouli, cackling for a sinister purpose as the flames in its mouth increased.

" Patchouli! Behind you!" Dante yelled as Patchouli turned around and saw the skull getting ready to spray her with fire.

" Hah, please." Patchouli created a barrier to block the flames from harm, completely unaware of the claw sneaking up on her. The claw grabbed her around her waist while struggled to get free. The skull started to cackle again as a large stinger came out of its mouth.

The skull flew towards Patchouli with the intention of skewering her as Patchouli closed her eyes and heard the sound of flesh being torn, but noticed that she didn't feel any pain. She opened her eyes and Dante in front of her, holding the skull with the stinger piercing through his hand.

Dante slammed his foot onto the claw, forcing it to open as Patchouli plummeted to the ground. Dante removed the stinger from his hand and punted the skull at the head of the Heartless, impaling the Heartless with its own stinger.

The Heartless roared in pain as its body began to reform into the scorpion form it was in before.

" Come on! Ready to start round 2!?" Dante asked while spinning Cerberus around him.

The Heartless began to walk backwards before it jumped in the air and disappeared a ball of darkness.

" What?! It ran away! What a joke!" Dante yelled while kicking the floor. Dante heard someone coughing behind him as he sees Patchouli walking over to him.

" Weird, I thought Heartless acted on instinct. That one seemed to sense how dangerous you were to it." Patchouli observed as she noticed the barrier behind them had disappeared.

" Well, at least we can help Ziden and Yuugi." Dante walked to the stairs and bowed down while motioning to the stairs. " Ladies first."

Patchouli faked astonishment. " Wow. What a gentleman. You'd better keep up with me, Dante." Patchouli took flight and wrapped herself with several winds. Dante took a small breath of air as he looked up the stairs.

" Be still." Time around Dante began to slow down as he ran past Patchouli as he made it to the bridge that Ziden and Yuugi were on as he saw Dark Star holding Ziden by his throat and Yuugi was on her knee with her clothes burned and turned red from her blood. Time returned to normal as Dark Star saw Dante and smiled. Patchouli arrived shortly after and was shocked to see Dante ahead of her.

" Ah, so you dealt with the Death Stalker did you? Good, now you can witness the death of this

foolish hero!" Dark Star threw Ziden off of the bridge as the trio watched as Ziden fell into the lava.

Dante became enraged and equipped Beowulf as he took a martial arts stance. Yuugi got to her feet and had a card in her hand. Patchouli had her grimoire opened and was channeling alot of magic energy when everyone felt the bridge rumble.

Dante ran over and looked into the pool of lava and saw that it was rippling.

Dark Star was shocked at this revelation and growled to himself. " Impossible! That bastard should be dead after my Lunar Funnels tore him and that Oni apart!"

Everyone could hear a loud roar coming from the lava as everyone sees a giant arm of fire coming out of the lava as they see a giant shadow looming over them.

" Well now. Looks like the kid played one of his trump cards! Hey Dark Star! Say hello to the Flame Gigas!" Dante yelled as the giant brought its face in front of Dark Star and roared.

*Meanwhile Outside the Myouren Temple...*

" Treasure Sign: Yin Yang Orb!"

" Ragnarok!" A giant Yin-Yang orb is seen flying towards the Darkside surrounded by orange lasers as they slammed into the Heartless' face, blasting it to pieces as Sora and Reimu fell on their rears.

" About time we finished that thing off... hold on." Reimu noticed that a pool of darkness appeared under the Heartless and was sucking in the remains of the Heartless into it.

" Hmm? What's that thing doing now?" Reiji asked as the pool of darkness turned into a ball of darkness that began to fly off towards the Human Village.

" Oh no! That thing is heading towards the Human Village! We have to stop that thing!" Sora said as he ran down the steps to chase after the Heartless with Reiji and Reimu chasing after him.

---

Byakuren jumped out of the way of a laser beam as she opened her scroll and summoned a vajra to her hand. Unzan slammed one of his giant fists into the invisible being's stomach, sending it flying into a wall.

The creature got back onto its feet as it shot out a long tongue towards Unzan, only for it to pass through Unzan. Byakuren channeled light into the vajra, turning it into a sword of light as she charged at the Heartless.

Byakuren slashed the Heartless across the chest as Unzan smashed the creature with his palm. The creature quickly gets up and grabs

Byakuren by her legs and throws her at one of the pillars. Byakuren is slammed backfirst into the pillar as the Heartless leapt towards her, only to be knocked back by an unknown fist.

" Gwaarr! Can't a guy get sleep without some invisible freak causing a ruckus!?" Everyone turned to see Bowser stomping into the room with Xiaomu running after him. The Heartless was turned visible as everyone noticed that this was a Stealth Sneak, a Heartless that Sora once faced in his past.

" Thank you for your aid, Mister Bowser." Byakuren thanked while getting to her feet.

" Bah! Save your thanks until after I wipe the floor with this freak!" Bowser cracked his knuckles and let out a roar as the Stealth Sneak charged at him.

Bowser winded up his fist and slammed his fist into the creature's jaw, sending it flying into the air as Bowser retreated into his shell and began to spin very fast, creating a small whirlwind that the Heartless was being sucked into.

Bowser caught the Heartless in the whirlwind and proceeded to slice the creature across the body with his spikes. Bowser exited his shell and hit the Heartless with a jumping uppercut and a roundhouse to the face.

The Stealth Sneak slapped Bowser with its tail and sent him crashing into the floor as Bowser shook the dust out of his hair as Byakuren and the others watched the fight.

" Are you sure we should just watch, Xiaomu?" Byakuren asked.

" Yeah, unless you want to get punched by Bowser over there, we shouldn't." Xiaomu answered.

" \*Sigh\* At least we can rest a while." Ichirin said while sitting down.



" King's Lariat!" Bowser hits the Stealth Sneak with a spinning punch as the Heartless jumps away from him and turned invisible.

Bowser looks around the room, trying to find the Heartless when he felt something slamming into his body. Bowser is sent skidding across the floor as the Heartless fired more eye lasers at Bowser, blasting him into the wall as a dust cloud was created.

A large fireball flew out of the dust cloud and exploded against the creature's body as Bowser ran out of the dust cloud, with his fist pulled back and covered in flames.

" Bowser Punch!"

Smaaaaaaassssssshhhhh!

Bowser's fist exploded into the Stealth Sneak's chest, blasting it back as the burning afterimage of a spiked turtle shell disappeared from Bowser's fist. The Stealth Sneak staggered backwards before falling on his back as a bright light came out of its chest and became a crystal heart that flew into the sky and disappeared.

" Raaaaawwwwwrrrrrr!" Bowser roared while pounding his fists on his chest.

" Welll now, Bowser sure wiped the floor with that Heartless. I kinda feel bad for it... well not really." Xiaomu said while scratching her cheek.

" So that was a Heartless... such a fearsome creature. Wait a sec!" Byakuren thought for a second as Bowser walked over to them. " What if these creatures are attacking the Human Village as we speak?! Oh no! It is my duty as the head of this temple to protect the innocent from the hands of evil!" Byakuren grabs Xiaomu and Bowser immediately channeling magic to her arms and legs. " When Mario and the others awaken, tell them to head to the Human Village! Shou is in charge until I return!" Byakuren moved at lightning

fast speeds, taking Bowser and Xiaomu with them as Ichirin and Unzan sweatdropped at the sight.

*Meanwhile Outside of Keine's School...*

### **Theme of Wolverine ( Marvel vs Capcom 3)**

Mokou took flight while throwing burning charms at Logan who was running around to dodge them as he tried to figure out how to close the distance between them.

Mokou began to start rapid firing fireballs at Logan as he stopped running and used his metal claws to block the attack. Mokou transforms the fireballs into a stream of fire that beginning to burn the flesh off of Logan's body.

Logan grunted his way through the pain while he walked forward, his claws becoming red hot from the smoldering flames. Logan broke into a slow run as he threw his arms down to his side and jumped into the air, shocking Mokou as he stabbed her through the shoulders and slammed her into the ground.

Mokou shifted herself from under Logan and slammed both of her feet into his jaw, knocking him off of her as she rubbed her aching feet. Mokou rolled backwards, avoiding getting stabbed in the stomach by Logan as he pulled a large rock out of the ground and threw it at her.

Mokou kicked the rock into dust and saw Logan leaping at her again. Mokou covered her hand in fire and slamming it into Logan's face, digging her nails into his face and sending the fire into his facial muscles. Mokou punched him hard in the stomach, followed up with a palm thrust to the chin and ended with a powerful kick to the throat that sent him flying towards the school.

" Give up already! You aren't going to win this Logan!" Mokou yelled while surrounding her body in fire.

" Heh! You're real funny kid, but this fight ain't over yet!" Logan charged at Mokou, ready to continue Round 2 when he sees a large green turtle appear in front of him. " What the hell!?"

On Mokou's side she sees Xiaomu in Byakuren's grasp and sighed when she realized they were really there. " Great, looks this fight is postponed for now." Mokou reached into her pocket and pulled out a cigarette, placing it into her mouth and lighting it.

" Gah! Why'd the hell did you drag me here?! I wanted to go back and finish my nap!" Bowser asked.

" We must protect this settlement from the clutches of those Heartless creatures! Rest can wait until after this is done!" Byakuren declared as Bowser turned around and saw Logan.

" Gahhhahahaha! If it isn't claw boy! It's been a long since I last saw you!" Bowser said as Logan scoffed.

" Yeah well, I'm not glad to see that you're here, because Yukari must desperate to allow you to help out with the Ultima Brigade." Logan said as Bowser laughed.

" Of course! She and Ziden came to me, begging me for my MUCH needed help in this war. I gave it some time and decided to help these fools out because of how pathetic they are!" Bowser lied as Mokou and Keine walked over to them.

" Psst! Mokou, is this true?" Keine asked.

" Hell no! Ziden and Yukari beat the crap out of him when he broke onto our ship. I told you that when I was last here!" Mokou whispered as Keine chuckled.

" Ziden's here? Then why isn't he with you guys?" Lucci asked.

" He went underground with Dante and Patchouli. I believe he wanted to do some exploring some exploring before he got to work

dealing with the Zealots." Xiaomu explained.

" Of course he did! That reckless idiot would want to explore such a deadly place for thrills!" Everyone turned to see Ryuna walking out of the building with Kotohime following her.

" Ryuna? The Second-in-Command at the Gensokyo Police Department?" Keine wondered.

" Oh? And how exactly do you know Ziden, Ryuna?" Mokou asked with a dangerous tone.

" Of course I know that bastard! That man's a wanted fugitive for several counts of Vandalism, Bank Robberies, Murder and he's a menace to society!" Ryuna listed as Logan whistled.

" Talk about a crime record and she barely even listed his other crimes either. Heh, that kid sure knows how to raise some hell when he wants to." Logan said.

" Quite fitting since he's in the Former Capital of Hell right now." Keine said as Mokou scratched her head and saw Yukari, Ran and Chen sitting on top of the Schoolhouse while drinking tea with a black haired woman.

" Hey! Yukari! Who's that lady with you?" Mokou asked. The woman jumped down from off of the roof and landed in front of Mokou, looking at her body up and down, making Mokou feel uncomfortable.

The black haired woman looked no older than 23 and had sky blue eyes. She was wearing a shrine maiden's garb with the skirt being dark blue with a light blue sea serpent going all around the skirt. The top was white with detached sleeves and there was a black western dragon with a golden halo behind its back on the back of her top. She had a simple silver hilted katana hanging off her hip.

" Hmmm? Are you Mokou Fujiwara?" The woman asked.

" Actually its Fujiwara no Mokou." Mokou corrected her as the woman scoffed. " Now who are you and what do you want with me?"

" The name's Roxanne Icrim and I only wish to meet my 'daughter-in-law'." Roxanne said as Mokou gasped.

" Wait! You're Ziden's mother!?" Mokou asked as Roxanne laughed.

" Of course I am! Who else could given birth to such a handsome young man?" Roxanne asked while putting her fists on her hips.

" Uh-oh! Its the crazy demon lady!" Ryuna yelled as Roxanne leaned backwards to look at her.

" Now that's rude young lady! I'll have you know that 5% of those stories about my rampages aren't true!" Roxanne said while wrapping her arm around Mokou's neck. " So I hear that you aren't the only future daughter-in-laws, can you tell me about them?"

" Well, there's Meiling, red headed Chinese Youkai thats skilled in Martial Arts. There's Patchouli Knowledge, a Youkai Magician whom is a shut-in but has Ziden well-trained according to Yukari and Dante. And then... there's Kaguya." Roxanne noticed that she looked angry when she mentioned the last person. " She's the one who clings around him the most, she's an Immortal Lunarian."

" I see. Looks like that clone did a good job if I must say so myself! I'm glad he followed my instructions so well! Now I might have some grandchildren from you girls!" Roxanne declared before laughing.

" Talk about a scary woman." Bowser uttered under his breath as everyone felt the ground shake from an unknown force.

" What in the world was that?!" Lucci asked.

Roxanne closed her eyes. " That was Ziden activating his Flame Gigas transformation."

" What?! Why would he be using the Flame Gigas at a time like this!?" Ran asked.

Yukari waved her hand as a large gap opened above the group and showed the Underground battle against Dark Star.

---

The Flame Gigas was a giant humanoid covered in red flames. At the center of the chest was blue orb made entirely of blue fire. Its eyes were white flames with blue flames representing the irises. Ziden's spiky hair was present but was now red. Its mouth was jagged with dark red flames inside of his mouth. Most mysterious about the head was that inside of the head was a human sized black blur

" So, you had a transformation hidden from me? It doesn't matter, your friends will still be crushed by- gahhhhh!" The Flame Gigas slammed its hand onto the bridge, smashing Dark Star and created a gust that blasted his allies back.

**" The time for talk is over, Fallen One. I shall send you to your grave."** The Flame Gigas said in a dark and ominous voice while Dante ran over to Dark Star. Flame Gigas lifted its hand and flicked Dark Star towards Dante, who slammed a lightning fast fist into his face and performed a powerful flipkick that sent him airborne.

" My turn! Feat of Strength; Storm on Mt. Ooe!" Yuugi's spellcard summoned an unholy amount of danmaku boulders that were slamming into Dark Star's body as the Flame Gigas pulled his fist back.

" Wait a second. He isn't about to-"

" Yep. That Gigas is VERY destructive when it wants to be. Lucky for us, that thing is under Ziden's command." Dante said as Patchouli took flight.

**" Time for you to be destroyed, Lunarian Prince! Agni's Rising Dragon!"** Flame Gigas slammed his into Dark Star and performed a jumping uppercut that sent them up into the ceiling as they broke through it and continued their ascent to the surface.

" Dear gods. They are actually breaking their through all that rock and plan on getting to the surface." Patchouli said as she watched large boulders fall out of the hole.

" Come on! There's no way I'm getting left out of this brawl!" Yuugi grabbed Dante by the back of his jacket and flew up the hole.

Everyone in the Human Village felt the ground shaking violently as they looked into the distance and saw a giant flaming fist rising out of the ground. The Flame Gigas leapt into the air with Dark Star falling into the forest.

Flame Gigas let out a puff of fire as it vanished into thin air, leaving an airborne Ziden freefalling towards the earth. Patchouli flew out of the hole and saw Ziden falling towards her as she caught him.

" Looks like we took out one of the Metal Generals, I'd say we are doing great right now." Dante said as Yuugi caught up to them.

Satori and Rin are seen flying out of the hole and flew over to Ziden and Dante.

" Not bad, you two, but I sense that this battle isn't over yet." Satori said as a magic circle appeared in the sky as a metallic roar was heard.

" Damn... he summoned... that accursed machine." Ziden said between breathes.

" Heh heh heh. HAhahhahahahaha!" Dark Star began to laugh as a mechanical eastern dragon came out of the circle and roared. " Behold the finest machine to ever be created by Lunarian hands! The Mechanical Dragon Lord, Fafnir!" Fafnir roared as Dark Star

teleported to the dragon's head and sat on the throne that he had built onto the dragon's head so he watch the destruction his creation could create.

Fafnir's entire body was silver and he had the same segmented wings that Dark Star had. The Dragon's eyes were blue lenses with wooden horns and blue hair. The dragon was clutching a red orb and a pure silver orb in its hands. Most important was how large the dragon was. It could easily tower over a skyscraper and its head was bigger than an 18-wheeler.

" There's no way we can take on something that size." Dante said as storm clouds appeared in the sky.

Ziden unsheathed Crimson Edge and prepared to summon Final Ronin as Dark Star smirked. Fafnir opened his massive maw as he began to charge up a laser blast. Yuugi took off with Dante, Satori and Rin, trying to escape the blast radius as the laser fired. The massive beam flew towards Ziden and Patchouli as the beam exploded against them, creating a massive explosion that sent Yuugi and the others crashing into the schoolyard of the Human Village.

The shockwaves even reached the Village as everyone was shocked at the power that the machine had as it roared.

" How the hell are we going to deal with that thing!? That attack made the Master Spark look like a joke!" Mokou asked.

" Hey! I take offense to that, ze!" Everyone turned to see Marisa landing behind them.

" Don't worry, Ziden's going to take of it. He's used to fighting thing MUCH bigger opponents than that." Roxanne said as she felt a chill run down her spine. She sighs and stomped her feet as a pink haired ghost tackle hugged her.

" ROXY!" Yuyuko called her friend's name while hugging the life out of her.



The explosion created a large smokescreen as Dark Star noticed something weird.

The smokescreen was blasted away and revealed Final Ronin floating in the air with its katana tapping on his shoulder.

" I knew that you'd survive that, phoenix boy. I'm glad, now I get to test the powers of my Fafnir!" Dark Star stood up as a microphone appeared in front of him. " Greetings, soon to be extinct Earthlings! It is by my hand that this world shall be cleansed of its impurities! You Earthling trash have been killing this world for so many generations, but I am here to repair that! By killing all of you Human and Youkai trash, I will rebuild a new kingdom for the pure beings to rule over this world! I am Yoruhooshi, the Fallen Lunarian Cyborg and Former Prince of the Moon! Once I am done dealing with you Earthlings, the Lunar Capital shall fall before Fafnir's might! HAAHAHHAAHAHAHAH!"

Ziden and Patchouli looked at each other as they nodded. Patchouli flew up into the manual controls and looked at all of mysterious buttons and dials. " *So this is the science of the outside world? Impressive.*"

### **Beyond the Time ( Super Robot Wars Impact)**

Xiaomu instantly recognized the song that was playing for this fight. " Hey! This is Beyond the Time!"

" Beyond the what?" Mokou asked.

" Its a song that played during the Boss Fights against Char in Super Robot War games that features Char's Counterattack! It's the perfect song for a battle against a rival!" Xiaomu explained.

" I see. All this time, I honestly thought you would give up this plan of yours but it seems that I was wrong. Dark Star! I will not allow any harm to come to this world or to the Lunarians! I don't care if

Tsukuyomi gets pissed off at me, but after today, your life ends here!" Ziden yelled.

" Oh? Do you think that a lowly dog like you will stop me? Get real, just because you've beaten me doesn't mean anything to my loyal Fafnir. It's going to crush you and that filthy mech of yours!" Yoruhoshi retorted.

" Please! If you think that bucket of bolts are be enough to stop us, then you're dead wrong. This machine and my magic will crush your pathetic creation into dust." Patchouli said as Ziden smirk, causing the machine to smirk as well.

" You're welcome to try, Miss Magician, but you'll die alongside these worthless beings! I shall become the ruler of the new world! A world free from impurities like you disgusting Youkai and Demons!" Yoruhoshi yelled as Fafnir roared.

" Enough of this! Today you die, DARK STAAAAARRRRRR!"

" DIE, ZIDEN ICRIIIIIIMMMMMMM!"

Final Ronin and Fafnir charged at each other while roaring each others names.

Final Ronin delivered a powerful kick to the dragon's snout, knocking it upwards as Yoruhoshi almost fell off of the dragon. Final Ronin smashed its fist into the dragon's face, sending it crashing into a field of sunflowers, heavily damaging it as Final Ronin's arms morphed into miniguns.

" Eat this! Hellfire Vulcan!" Ziden fired a storm of fiery bullets onto the dragon, setting it aflame as the garden began to violently burn.

" Die! Quasar Spark!" Fafnir opened its mouth and fired the massive laser beam at Final Ronin as it flew away from the destructive beam.

Final Ronin watched as Fafnir rose up from the ground and flew into the air. " Let is see how you handle the power of the moon!" Fafnir pointed the silver orb at Final Ronin as energy gathered into the orb. " Looking into the full moon is said to drive people insane, I wonder what would happen if a person was blasted by its power at full force! Lunatic Pulse!" The orb fired a silver ball of energy that flew towards Final Ronin.

Patchouli shroud herself in a magical barrier as the orb exploded against the chest of Final Ronin, turning into a pale light that entered the Super Robot. Ziden watched as the light began to surround him and disappeared.

" Ziden! Are you alright?!" Patchouli asked as he remained silent. " This is bad, Ziden! Answer me!"

" ... "

Patchouli began to reach into her robe for the Jellyfish Princess spellcard as Ziden's head leaning to the side. " What was that supposed to do?" Ziden asked as he heard Patchouli relax herself.

" Thank Gods, you're still sane." Patchouli said as Ziden scratched his head.

" Aw, and here I thought you didn't care about me! Why wouldn't I be sane though?" Ziden asked.

" You were just hit by a concentrated amount of lunacy. If it had affected you, it would be up to me to deal with you." Patchouli explained.

: Oh, okay then. Well, lets take this dragon out then!" Ziden said as Patchouli agreed.

Final Ronin unsheathed its katana as a red energy was surrounding it. " Crimson Fang!" Final Ronin flicked the blade forward and fired a large crescent shape blade of energy at Fenrir.

It exploded across its face and sent it spinning higher into the air. Final Ronin crouched down and wrapped its leg in flames. " *This machine is capable of using magic as well?! Fascinating!*"

" Flare Drill Impact!" Final Ronin shot upwards like an arrow, while spinning with its leg stretched out, looking similar to a flaming drill. The attack slammed into the stomach of dragon as Yoruhoishi growled. Final Ronin pushed itself away from the cracked crater that the attack made as a blood-like liquid came out of the cracks.

" Hmm? Is that blood coming out of those cracks?" Ziden asked.

" I doubt it. It might be some kind of fuel that just looks like blood." Patchouli said.

Fafnir straightened its body out and roared while summoning fire into its mouth. Ziden looked closely into the wounds he made on its stomach and saw something interesting. " God damned bastard. That ain't no machine, that's a cyborg!" Ziden yelled as Yoruhoishi laughed.

" Indeed! I encountered this dragon sometime during the last war. It attempted to devour me but I bested this demon and upgraded his body to that of a powerful cyborg!" Yoruhoishi explained.

" Not that it matters! Once I kill you, this dragon is going down!" Ziden yelled as Final Ronin slammed its fists together.

Fafnir roared as it charged at Final Ronin with its mouth opened. Final Ronin tried to sidestep the attack, only for the dragon to bite off Ronin's right arm and leg.

Inside the mech, Ziden felt the muscles inside of his right arm and leg, violently explode as they teared open and blood sprayed out. A warning light was blaring inside the machine as Patchouli covered her ears to block off the annoying sound.

" Gahhh! Damn, that smarts!" Ziden was now in a bad position with Ronin's arm and leg being destroyed as his body healed itself. " Looks like I'm going to have to cause more pain for myself. Computer! Activate the Regeneration Program!"

" Whoa, boss! Are you sure about that? This is going to hurt you a lot dude!" The computer replied in a worried male voice.

" Just do it, Ronin!" Ziden yelled as the computer sighed.

"... Very well, activating Regeneration Program." Several clear tubes with sharp tips came out of the ceiling and stabbed themselves into Ziden's body. Ziden began to breathe rapidly as Patchouli watched carefully. Blood began to flow through the tubes as Ziden fell to his knees and yelled out in pain as more blood was sucked into the tubes.

A few moments later, Final Ronin's destroyed arm and leg were regenerated as the tube pulled themselves out of Ziden's body as he rose to his feet and glared at Yoruhoishi. Final Ronin called the katana back to his hand as he crouched down.

" Sonic Slicer!" Final Ronin dashed past Fafnir and slowly sheathed its blade. The katana slid into the sheath with an audible click as Fafnir was assaulted with a rapid assault of sword strikes.

Final Ronin performed a backflip and slammed the heel of foot onto the neck of Fafnir, stunning it as Yoruhoishi roared.

" How dare you!? Go! Dragon Funnel!" Fafnir's wings separated and flew off and began to surround Final Ronin as the funnels began to charge up energy .

" Heh! You're not the only one who can use Funnels, Yoruhoishi!" Ziden yelled while raising his right hand to the heavens. " Mimicked Skill: Fin Funnel!" A multitude of cone shaped weapons appeared around Final Ronin as a white flash appeared over Ziden's forehead.

The Fin Funnels began to fire and destroy the Dragon Funnels as the sky was filled with green and blue lasers.

" Damn you, Ziden Icrim!" Yoruhashi yelled while braking the arms on his throne.

*" I'll never win this fight unless I take Dark Star out. Looks like the Golden Savior is going to get some action today!"* Ziden thought as he flew towards Yoruhashi's throne on Fafnir's head.

" Oh no you don't!" Yoruhashi ordered Fafnir to rapid fire Quasar Sparks as Final Ronin spun himself around the beam, avoiding the attacks while pulling his fist back and surrounding it in flames.

Final Ronin spun its fist like a drill as it reached Yoruhashi's throne. Final Ronin slammed the powerful into Yoruhashi body, covering his entire body in flames as his cybernetic body began to crack. Yoruhashi is sent flying into the air as Ronin grabbed the hilt of the massive broadsword on its back unsheathed it.

Everyone in the Human Village marveled at the sight of the large golden blade. The blade of the sword was pure gold and was razor sharp. On the flat of the blade was the sketching of an angel with a large staff. The blade itself was radiating holy power as Ziden raised his sword to the heavens while a pillar of light broke through the clouds and surrounded Ronin.

" This Blade is one forged to protect the innocents from evil's embrace! I am the Legendary Hero of Eternal Flames that will always stand to protect the weak from the darkness and to train them to become strong. Dark Star! I will not allow you to take the lives of the innocents while I exist in these worlds! This Blade from the Heavens shall be your end!" Final Ronin leapt into the sky with the wind wrapping around him as he soared past the clouds and flipped himself into a downwards descent towards Yoruhashi while raised his blade over his head. Final Ronin had a yellow sparks coming out its eye while it roared a demonic roar. " Golden Savior!

Strike true!" Ziden sliced through Yoruhooshi as sparks and blood came out his body.

"... No... I was... supposed to... become... the... god of the new world. Damn... you... Ziden Icrim." Yoruhooshi uttered as a bright flash came from his body.

*Kaa-boooooooooommmmmmm!*

A massive explosion filled the sky as Fafnir fell into the forest below as Final Ronin flew above the village with a bright light coming from its chest. Ziden is seen falling out of Final Ronin with Patchouli calmly flew down to the others.

Ran immediately ran over to where Ziden was about to fall and threw up her arms to catch him, only for a strong gust of wind to push him a few feet over as he crashed into the ground, leaving an imprint of himself in the ground.

" Ouch! That's gonna leave a mark!" Dante said as Ziden slowly climbed out the hole.

" Need some help, kiddo?" Ziden looks up and sees Roxanne crouching down and offering a hand to her son.

" Thanks, Roxanne." Ziden thanked as Roxanne helped him out of the hole. " Why are you here, by the way?"

" Well, I got bored working at the Shrine and then I sensed you back here and I decided I wanted to see this little Harem of yours." Roxanne explained as Ziden groaned.

" Of course you do." Ziden said as Patchouli landed next to him. " Introduce yourself to my 'old' lady, Patchy." Roxanne elbowed him in the side for calling her old.

" I am Patchouli Knowledge, a Magician Youkai that lives at the Scarlet Devil Mansion." Patchouli bowed her head as Roxanne

frowned.

" Ziden, I'm starting to see why you like her." Roxanne said while looking at Patchouli's body.

" Meh, I could care less. I like her because she's interesting, not because of her body. I'm not like that clone when it comes to women, Roxanne." Ziden said while cracking his back.

" Well now, that's good. I hope I can expect some strong children from you, Miss Knowledge!:" Roxanne said as Patchouli blushed.

" Jeez Roxanne, we've only met for a few weeks. Don't think we're just going to have a kid like some weird game involving marriage and children from the future." Ziden said.

" Sorry to interrupt your weird family discussion, but I think we should talk about something else." Mokou said as Ziden agreed.

" Quite a few familiar faces here. Ryu, Logan, Chun-Li, Little Ryuna, Miss Keine and Lucci." Ziden said as Lucci approached him.

Ziden sensed several people approaching the village from above as he smelt blood coming from the group.

" HELP! WE NEED HELP!" Everyone looked up and saw Reisen and Tewi carrying a bloody and torn apart Eirin and Kaguya and the rabbits didn't look any better.

" What the hell happened to them?!" Keine asked as they landed.

" Looks like our rematch has been interrupted, Ziden. Count yourself lucky." Lucci said as he walked towards the schoolhouse.

" Don't mind him, Ziden. The name's Kaku, nice to meet ya." Kaku waved to Ziden before he ran over to the injured women.

" The demon at Eientei... she was too strong for us. Alice... was her name." Reisen said while violently shaking. Ziden and Dante's eyes



widened at that name.

" That woman was a monster! She killed so many of my friends and she didn't even care that she did it!" Tewi said between tears.

" Wait! Alice did this!? Why the hell would she do that?!" Kotohime asked.

" What did I supposedly do?" Alice asked as she landed next to Marisa.

" Freeze, Alice Margatroid! You are under arrest for the murder of several rabbits at Eientei!" Kotohime yelled while pointing a pistol at Alice. Marisa jumped in front of Alice and pulled out her mini hakkerō.

" Hold on, Alice was with me the whole time! She couldn't have killed anyone, ze!" Marisa declared.

" She is telling the truth." Satori said as Kotohime glared at Alice.

Ziden was about to walk over to the the women and saw how injured they were. Kaguya's clothes were torn in several place and her body had several deep cuts that were slowly healing from the damage. Eirin was missing both of her hands and she had several deep gashes on her face, stomach and chest regions.

" Tch! I should have gone with them! This wouldn't have happened if I went with them!" Mokou said while clenching her fist in anger.

Ziden was about to cheer her up as everyone heard a loud roar coming from the sky above them. Ziden looked up and saw Fafnir flying around in the sky with lightning surrounding its body.

" I am free!" Fafnir roared as Ziden sensed demonic energy coming from the cyborg dragon.

*Fun Fact:*

- 1. The Lunar Funnels are a reference to the weapons used by certain Mobile Suits in the Gundam Series and are known for their power and versatility in combat.*
- 2. Ziden referenced Fire Emblem Awakening's system of marriage and how the children came from the future to meet their parents.*
- 3. And yes, the Shadow Stalker will return in a future chapter if any one was wondering.*
- 4. Dante has the ability to slow down time via the Quicksilver style which he obtained in DMC 3.*

*Author's Note: Sorry about how late this chapter is. I've been busy with other things in my life but I promise that I won't be this late with a chapter again. Make to sure to leave a Review if you like the story so far and send a PM if you are confused about something in the story .*

# Fafnir the Divine Tempest of Destruction

Ziden looked up at the large mechanical dragon that was flying around in the skies above as he tapped Crimson Edge on his shoulder. " Jeez, looks like like my nap is going to be postponed a bit. Great."

" Well, you can't exactly take a nap with that thing flying around." Ran said as Fafnir fired a bolt of lightning into the large mountainside, setting it ablaze as Dante yawned.

" That's all you dude. Maybe you'll get a Devil Arm from that thing." Dante said while picking earwax out of his ear.

" Cool! I could use another Devil Arm!" Ziden said as the dragon roared.

" Do you need to use violence to dispatch this creature? Can't you just convince it to leave?" Keine asked.

" Hmm. That could work." Byakuren said.

" Screw that noise! Just kill the damned thing and get it over with!" Roxanne said as Ziden nodded.

" I agree, after all I think the whole peace idea kinda goes out of the window with Dante being here though." Patchouli said. Keine looked confused as Mokou whispered something in her ear.

" Yeah, that does make sense. Maybe we should grab its attention?" Ryu asked as Ziden closed his eyes and thought for a second. Ziden opened his eyes and spotted a tree near the school.

" Yuugi, give me a hand with that tree." Ziden asked as Yuugi walked over to the tree.

Yuugi easily lifted the tree out of the ground and held it above her head. " Now what?" Yuugi asked.

" Throw it at me." Ziden said as Satori read what he was thinking.

" Okay." Yuugi didn't even hesitate and launched the tree at Ziden. Ziden cracked his neck and delivered a kick on the large tree, sending it airborne as it began to split into four big chunks of wood that were flying towards the unaware dragon.

Blammmmm! Blammmmm! Blammmmm!

The wood chunks slammed into the back of the dragon's head, grabbing its attention as he spun around and saw a spiky haired man waving at him with a goofy grin on his face.

The dragon disappeared in a flash of lightning and reappeared in front of Ziden as everyone took an offensive stance. " That was very foolish of you, human. Is there a particular reason why you attacked me just now?" Fafnir asked while blowing air out of its nose.

" Well I can't have you attacking these lands for no reason so its up to me to stop you." Ziden said as the dragon chuckled.

" So you're a Demon Hunter, boy? Hah! How you Demon Hunters have sunken to the point of hiring pipsqueaks like you to hunt Demons like me!?" Fafnir taunted.

" Well I wouldn't be talking if I were you. I've taken on Demons twice as strong as you, like Sparda!" Ziden bragged as Fafnir tilted its head.

" Sparda? Who's that?" Fafnir asked as everyone looked confused.

" You don't know who Sparda is?" Yukari asked as Fafnir shook his head.

" I never really cared for the affairs of Makai or other demons for that matter. All I seek is a strong opponent to face me in combat." Fafnir

explained.

" Makes sense... I guess." Chun-Li said.

" But still, I'm afraid I'll have to kill you now. You did hit me with a tree." Fafnir said as lightning traveled along his body.

" Fine by me. I could use another workout before I take a nap." Ziden said while cracking his neck.

" Very well! I shall wait for you on my battlegrounds, boy!" Fafnir disappeared in a flash of lightning as a Gate was left behind in his place.

" Hey look, a Gate!" Marisa said.

" Hurray. Now I get to play by the Life Bar system, how fun." Ziden said, very uninterested as he approached the gate.

" Have fun, Ziden! Bring me back a gift for your Auntie Yuyuko!" Yuyuko said as Ziden jumped into the Gate.

Ziden found himself on a black platform, high in the sky as he noticed three other platforms nearby. Ziden tapped his foot on the platform, hearing a loud sound coming from it. Ziden crouches down and feels the platform with his hand and immediately frowns.

" Great, metallic platforms when I'm fighting a Thunder Dragon. This is going to be so wonderful." Ziden said as he heard a roar coming from below as the sky became pitch black with clouds. Fafnir flew into the sky and let out powerful roar that caused the wind push Ziden back.

" So you actually came, good. It has been a long time since I've been in combat, only to find out that my body has been severely changed from its original form. That doesn't matter now though. I am Fafnir, the Storm Drake! My storms will shock you into submission and my

winds will tear the flesh from your bones!" Fafnir roared as Ziden yawned.

" Shut up already. You talk too much, scale-face! Lets hurry up and get this over with!" Ziden said while spinning Crimson Edge.

### **Armageddon ( 2nd Super Robot Wars OG)**

Fafnir fired a bolt of lightning into the air, charging the clouds with lightning as Fafnir flew around the sky. Ziden looked at his watch and saw that Fafnir had 9 health bars.

Ziden jumped into the air as a lightning bolt struck the platform, creating an electric current that ran through the platform and electrified it. Ziden noticed Fafnir flying right at him with its mouth opened and ready to swallow him whole.

Ziden smirked as he dove straight towards the dragon's open maw.

" What the hell is he thinking?!" Patchouli asked as Roxanne chuckled.

" Just watch, Patchouli." Roxanne said as she watched Ziden enter the dragon's throat.

" Ah! That was a very easy meal, too bad I couldn't chew on his bones! Gahhahahah!" Fafnir said while laughing.

All of a sudden, Fafnir felt a sharp pain coming from his stomach as he began to frantically fly in circles while smoke was coming out of his mouth.

" HOT! HOT! HOT!" The smoke soon turned into flames as he breathed a stream of fire onto a nearby platform. " That was clever boy, but it won't be enough to put down a demon of my caliber!"

The flames died down as Ziden walked out of one of the flames, with several parts of his body still materializing from the flames. " Then I'm just going to have to try harder then, won't I?"

Ziden disappeared and reappeared on Fafnir's back, tapping his foot on the mechanical dragon's body.

" Humph! Go my minions and crush this insect!" Fafnir ordered as smoke appeared on his back. Out of the smoke came several demons dressed in pitch black clothing with short swords in their hands.

" Hey look, demon ninjas! How original!" Ziden joked as a ninja charged at him. " Time for some Steel on Bone!" Ziden sidestepped the ninja and slammed his blade into the ninja's neck and decapitated him as he followed up by slicing the head in half while smirking. " Who's next!?"

The ninja proceeded to jump around the dragon's back, throwing a barrage of kunai that Ziden was easily deflecting with his sword while walking forward. Ziden grabbed a ninja by the throat while slowly creating a flaming spike behind the captive demon ninja.

" Hey there buddy. You look pretty tired there. Why don't you take a SEAT!?" Ziden slammed the ninja, butt-first onto the spike as he screamed in pain.

Everyone watching from the Human Village flinched when they saw the man getting slammed the spike as Roxanne whistled at the sight.

Ziden looked at the ninja struggling to get himself free as he noticed the looks on the other Ninjas faces, fear. Ziden smirked at the sight as he placed his foot on the Ninja's face while cracking his neck. " Man, that looks like it hurts dude. Why don't you take a BREAK and relax yourself!?" Ziden pushed his foot forward, causing the ninja's spine to snap like a twig and formed a perfect right angle.

" Hey Ran, look! A perfect right angle!" Yukari pointed out as Ran covered Chen's eyes from the bloodbath that was about to occur.

" What the hell are you?! There's no way you're a human!" A ninja asked while backing away from him.

" Why its a simple answer on what I am. I'm a badass Demon Slayer that loves to make scrubs like you crap themselves when I kill their friends in front of their faces... you guys are no exception!" Ziden said while tackling the Ninja to the ground and grabbing him by the legs. Ziden begins to spin around in a circle as he locked onto the electrified platform that he was on earlier. Ziden launched the Ninja towards the platform as he landed and was immediately shocked by the voltage coming from the platform.

His skin began to melt and blacken as the smell of cooking flesh filled the air. " Talk about a shocker. Looks like we're having Japanese tonight!" Ziden laughed at his own joke as he ran to the head of the dragon as he noticed a magic circle on the spot where Dark Star's throne used to be.

" Get offa my head, you pest!" Fafnir began to shake violently as Ziden fell face-first onto the magic circle. Ziden wrapped his hand in a blue light and slammed it onto the metallic surface of the dragon's head.

" Time to break this circle!" Ziden began to rapidly stab the circle as Fafnir roared in pain. Fafnir flew high into the air as Ziden hung onto the dragon for dear life while continuing to stab the circle.

" Begone, worm!" Fafnir slammed the back of head onto the platform in an attempt to get Ziden off of his head. Ziden held onto its head as he infused his blade with fire. " Blasting Stake!" Ziden slammed the blade into the magic circle, releasing a large fiery explosion that forced Ziden to jump off of the dragon's head while landing on a platform.

" How dare you!? You will be torn apart by my winds!" Fafnir flew to the center of the sky and began to flew in circle.

" What the heck is he doing, ze?" Marisa asked.

" Hmm?" Ziden watched the dragon begin to fly faster.



" Ziden, I think that its trying to create a whirlwind of some sort."  
Yukari said.

" This ought to be entertaining then. Have at it, Ziden." Yuugi said with a grin.

" Good, if he's pulling out an attack like this now, then he must be getting desperate." Satori said.

" Or he could be trying to end it quickly." Logan added.

" Meh, whatever. He's still going to lose nonetheless." Ziden said as the clouds began to spin around Fafnir.

Ziden could feel the winds increasing in speed around him as a full blown tornado formed in front of him. Lightning began to illuminate the dark funnel of death as Ziden blankly stared at the twister.

" What's the matter, human!? Too afraid to attack now?" Fafnir taunted as Ziden shook his head.

" Way too easy to finish this now, time to end this." Ziden sheathed Crimson Edge as he walked towards the whirlwind and turned his back to it while standing on the edge of the platform.

" Dear gods, he isn't about to-"

" Yep, he is. I taught him this trick he's about to do!" Yuyuko said as Roxanne chuckled.

Ziden fell backwards and allowed himself to be carried by the winds as he enters the eye of the twister and sees Fafnir above him.

Fafnir fired several balls of electricity at Ziden as he took them head on. Ziden grabbed Crimson Edge as he let a sharp grin become apparent on his face. " Blazing Sword Secret Technique: Blazing Tornado!" Ziden created a powerful infernal tornado that went upwards and slammed into Fafnir, slicing its mechanical body to pieces as it roared. Ziden's tornado ends up overpowering Fafnir's

as he leapt out of the burning twister and dusted his jacket off. " Far too easy, next time, send me a more challenging opponent."

The tornado died down behind Ziden as a blue ball of light slowly flew towards Ziden.

Ziden turned around and saw the orb coming towards him. " Hmm? Is this what I think it is?" The orb began to generate electricity as it took the form of an ethereal dragon head.

" Not bad, human. I would have never thought that I would ever be beaten by a human of all things. I'm glad that I was able to fight you, boy, so as thanks, use my soul as a conduit of destruction. Lay waste to your foes with the power of Wind and Lightning!" Fafnir shot into Ziden's hand as blue light transformed into a new weapon.

Ziden observed the new weapon while spinning it around. It was a large mechanical spear with the shaft being light blue and the blade of the spear was a bright yellow color. Directly below the blade was a white cloud with two metal pipes coming out of it. Also in the cloud was the two orbs that Fafnir had during the Yoruhoishi fight.

" Sweet spear!" Ziden examined Fafnir while spinning it around him.

Ziden smirked as he began to perform rapid thrusts with Fafnir, causing it to look like a blue and yellow blur. Ziden jumped into the air and slammed himself into the ground, creating an electrical shockwave that traveled across the platform. He then placed Fafnir on his chest and spun like a fan while rotating in a circle, creating a green whirlwind that looked like it could tear enemies apart. Ziden focused energy into the spear as green rings appeared around it. Ziden threw the spear as it transformed into a yellow laser that dispersed the clouds blocking the pure blue skies as a bright light surrounded Ziden.

Ziden exited the Gate as he heard someone clapping as he looked up and saw Remilia descending to the ground with Meiling, Koakuma and Sakuya landing next to her.

" Looks like you had some fun fighting that dragon." Remilia said while walking towards Ziden.

" Please, that was a complete waste of my time. I should have killed him when he was down here, talking to us." Ziden said as Roxanne appeared behind him. " Ah yes, Meiling, come here a sec."

" Uh, sure?" Meiling walked over to Ziden and watched as he moved out of the way to show Meiling his mother.

" This is my mother, Meiling. Introduce yourself to her." Ziden said as he walked over to Kaguya and Eirin.

" I'm Hong Meiling, I'm pleased to meet you, Miss Icrim." Meiling introduced herself while bowing.

" Hmm." Roxanne proceeded to walk around Meiling while examining her posture and body type. " Nice to meet you, Meiling. I hope my hard headed son won't cause you too much problems."

" Oh! He doesn't cause any problems for me or my friends as far as I know!" Meiling said while scratching her head.

" That's just because we haven't been around him that long. Just wait, he's going to get us thrown in jail someday." Remilia said as Roxanne chuckled.

" You remind me of Claire when she was younger. Negative and childish." Roxanne said as a tick mark appeared on Remilia's temple.

Sakuya sighed when she saw Remilia get into an argument with her master's mother and her adoptive grandmother, she decided to head over to Ziden and see what he was doing.

" Alright, it looks like their wounds are healing but they are taking too long to heal from, so I'll just speed up the process." Ziden said as he snapped his fingers. A transparent blue clock appeared over the

severely injured duo as the minute and hour hands began to move forward, slowly increasing in speed. As time sped up for the duo, Eirin recovered and regained consciousness as she immediately summoned her bow to her hands and shot Ziden in the skull.

" Huh? How did we get here?" Eirin asked as Ziden pulled the arrow out of his skull and saw that it still had some brain stuck on it.

" Reisen and Tewi brought you back here after that demon almost killed all of you." Alice explained as Eirin instinctively pointed her bow at Alice.

" Stop Eirin. The demon only looks like Alice... and is much stronger than her." Ziden said as Eirin blinked.

" Yeah, I can tell. That girl... I never thought in my entire life would I ever encounter such a monster." Eirin was shivering, not from a cold breeze, but from fear.

"... I'm glad you guys are alright, but you should know that the demon that attacked your home is no longer there, in fact, its not in Gensokyo anymore." Ziden said.

"That's good." Eirin and Ziden turned to see Kaguya sitting up with tears in her eyes.

" We shouldn't be outside in the open like this, let's get inside and you can tell about this girl." Keine said as she led everyone into the classroom.

Ziden sat down with Kaguya sitting on his lap, continuing to cry into his shoulder as Roxanne began to lightly rub her back.

Koakuma seemed to be keeping a close eye on Ziden while licking her lips. Patchouli noticed this and bonked her over the head with a book. Remilia was observing the way Sakuya acted around Roxanne and took notes on it.

" Ziden said he adopted her after he found her in Europe, that woman is his mother and that explains why they look so similar. That means that she would be Sakuya's technical grandmother, interesting." Remilia examined as Keine sat down at her desk.

Tewi was sitting against the wall, hugging her knees to her chest while Reisen tried to comfort her.

" Alright, Eirin, since you're the only one who is able to recall the event without falling into depression. If anyone here doesn't like to see gruesome sights, leave now." Ziden said as nobody moved from where they were sitting Ziden heard jingling metal. He looked to the door and saw Flandre running into the room with Kirby following her.

" Hmm? Kirby? When'd you leave the temple?" Byakuren asked as Kirby walked over to Ziden.

" He never went in. While we were heading to the Underground, I saw Kirby wander off into the forest near the temple." Ziden said as Patchouli glared at him.

" And you didn't think to tell us that?" Patchouli asked.

" I thought you guys knew, after all, I know Yukari and Dante noticed it, he even waved at him." Ziden said as Dante chuckled.

" Man Patchouli, your senses must suck if you didn't sense Kirby then." Dante teased as Kirby jumped onto Kaguya's head.

" Allow me to tell the story now please." Everyone stopped what they were doing and paid attention to what Eirin was about to say. " It started when we first entered The Bamboo Forest of the Lost and we heard the fight between Ziden and Yoruhoishi."

Ziden sighed as he felt Eirin's glare on him. " I'm sorry that I had to kill the kid, Eirin but-"

" He had no choice. If he hadn't killed him, then he would have definitely killed us." Satori interrupted as Ziden looked out the window.

*" Satori, keep this a secret, but Yoruhooshi is still among the living and that worries me. The only people who are to be told this info is you, me, Kaguya and Eirin, that's all."* Ziden thought as Satori nodded.

" We had reached the Gates of our home, Eientei, when it went downhill from there." Eirin said while looking down.

*Flashback...*

The Eientei group had just arrived outside the gate to their home when they felt a strange wave of energy coming from inside. " What in the world was that?" Reisen asked as they walked through the gates.

" I dunno. Maybe that demon is causing it?" Kaguya wondered as they looked around the courtyard and saw that there was no rabbits around.

" Where are all the rabbits? They should have sensed that we had come back, yet they are nowhere to be found." Eirin wondered as they approached the doors and opened them.

Reisen immediately got a bad feeling when she looked around and still saw no Tewi or any of the other rabbits.

" We should check on the patients in the Clinic, I'm worried about them." Reisen said as Eirin agreed.

Kaguya seemed to be lost in thought about something as they walked through the long hallways of their home.

" Hey Eirin?" Eirin looked back at Kaguya. " Do you think that Ziden will really kill Yoruhooshi?"

"... Yes, it would be the best option. If Ziden doesn't stop him now, he may head to the Lunar Capital and destroy it as revenge for his banishment to the Earth all those years ago." Eirin explained as Kaguya looked sad.

" But... he's my only brother." Kaguya said as Eirin sighed.

" Half-Brother. Yoruhoishi is and always has been a power-hungry child, even going as far as trying to kill Tsukuyomi and even killed his own mother and servants, and then placed the blame on you, his younger half-sister." Eirin remembered as Kaguya grabbed her left arm.

Eirin heard something drop on the floor ahead of them as she turned and saw Reisen on the floor with her hand over her mouth and eyes widened with horror.

" Dear gods! What hellish creature could have done this?!" Reisen asked as she released her stomach's content onto the floor. Eirin and Kaguya ran over to Reisen and looked into the Clinic and nearly threw up at what they saw.

The room was severely destroyed and trashed with several furniture and medical equipment toppled over and broken. The injured patients were the worst part of the scene, their bodies or what even remained of them were ripped apart and had their limbs strewn about the room.

The nurses in training were laid out on the floor with all of their skins and clothes ripped off, revealing the muscles and bones underneath them. The worst one they had seen was a male patient whom was impaled into the wall by the sharp spikes in his shoulders and knees. The flesh around his chest and face were peeled back as blood poured out his open wounds. What made this scene more disturbing you ask? The victim was still alive...

The man turned his head to the women standing in the doorway. " Ki... ll... m... e... ple... a... se..."

Eirin and Kaguya felt sick from the sight as they heard a little girl's giggle coming from the hallway. " What was that?!" Kaguya asked, being extremely scared this moment when she felt something tugging on her skirt. She looked down and saw one of the nurse's in training looking up at her.

" Lady... Kaguya... Get away... from... here... before she... finds you... three!" The nurse stammered out as the giggles got louder.

" Kyaaaaahhhhh!" Reisen's ears picked up on a familiar sounding scream.

" That was Tewi!" Reisen realized as she ran down the hallway.

" Reisen! Wait!" Eirin grabbed Kaguya and ran after Reisen as they passed by Kaguya's room and entered the kitchen of the mansion.

Reisen was on guard the whole time as she searched around for Tewi while forming her hand like a gun. Reisen reached a closet as she heard several things moving around in the closet. Reisen felt her heart jump into her throat as she slowly reached for the handle of the door. She quickly swallowed her fear and placed her hand on the handle and yanked it open. Inside the closet was a cowering Tewi, with blood stained on her dress.

" Oh my gods! Tewi! Are you alright?!" Reisen asked while picking up Tewi.

" Reisen! We have to get outta here! Before that monster gets back here!" Tewi screamed as she struggled to get free.

Eirin and Kaguya had reached the room as they saw the injured Tewi in Reisen. " What happened to Tewi?!" Kaguya asked as she ran over to Tewi.

" Princess Kaguya! We need to run away from here!" Tewi screamed as she jumped into Kaguya's arms.



" I found you, little rabbit!" Tewi's blood turned cold when she heard a little girl's voice coming from the hallway.

" Oh no... we're gonna die." Tewi said in a voice so low, only Reisen could hear her words.

" Let's get out of here. It would be a bad idea to fight someone in these narrow hallways." Eirin said while drawing her bow.

Eirin and Reisen formed a defensive formation around Kaguya and Tewi while they walked down the hallway with the girl's giggles following them down the hallway.

" That demon... we all tried to stop her when she first killed one of the patients, none of our attacks were hurting her. She kept referring to all of us as toys for her to break." Tewi said as Kaguya felt angry.

" So this demon killed those poor people because she thought of them as breakable toys? We can't let her live after this day." Kaguya said as they reached outside.

" No! You can't fight her! She's way too strong for us to fight! We have to lead her to the Underground or at least somewhere with stronger people nearby!" Tewi yelled as they got outside the gates.

" Were there any survivors, Tewi?" Eirin asked.

" Yes, after those patients were killed, I ordered the rabbits to flee to the Human Village while I drew her attention." Tewi explained as they walked through the forest.

Eirin felt an icy cold presence around them as she spotted a pale skinned girl blocking their path.

" Oh no! IT'S HER! WE HAVE TO GET AWAY FROM HER! NOW!" Tewi was utterly scared from the girl's presence.

" I found my new toy! And she brought new friends that I can break! How fun!" The demon girl happily said as the group felt the evil intent

coming from her body.

" I think Tewi may be onto something about running away from her. I haven't felt this much power coming from someone since that battle with Flandre at the Mansion a few weeks ago." Reisen remembered as she sees the girl walking towards them.

" We have to make this girl pay for she did to those innocent people! We will not run!" Kaguya placed Tewi on the ground and she reached into her sleeve, pulling out a stack of spellcards.

The girl saw them and giggled. " Are you going to use those cards to hurt me?"

" Of course I am! An evil child such as you needs to be punished for her actions!" Kaguya said as she sees the girl pointing her hand at Kaguya.

" I'm an evil girl! Alice is a good girl! My uncles said so! I'm going to break you for being so mean! Die for Me!" A large barrage of cards wielding spears flew past Kaguya as several red lines appeared on Kaguya's body

Kaguya remained unmoving as Eirin felt unsettled by her sudden stiffness. " Princess! Are you alright?!" Eirin asked.

The red lines suddenly ripped open as Kaguya backwards into Tewi's arms. " Oh no. It's happening again." Eirin was about to run check on the princess when she saw Alice skipping towards the downed Kaguya.

" Stay away from her!" Eirin fired several arrows at Alice whom simply slapped them away. Alice turned towards Eirin while still merrily skipping and slapping away arrows. Alice shot several of the card soldiers at Eirin, forcing her to roll out of the way and watched as the bamboo was torn apart by the cards.

Eirin saw that Alice was very easily defending against her arrow, she analyzed that this girl was much stronger than she looked. " Reisen! Take Tewi and the Princess and get to the Village as fast as you can! I'll hold her off for now!" Eirin said as she dodged another volley of card soldiers.

" But, Lady Eirin-"

" GO!" Eirin ordered as Reisen nodded, grabbing Tewi and the unconscious Kaguya as she ran through the bamboo thickets.

Eirin made the fatal mistake of watching them leave as she felt a soft hand on her arm. " Now, what noise does your arm make when I do this?"

Craaaaaackkkkkk!

Eirin's arm was snapped like a twig as she staggered away from Alice's grip. Eirin looked at her now broken arm as she held in the need to scream in pain, for if she did, Reisen would with no doubt run to her aid. Alice walked over to Eirin and kicked her bow away. Alice swiped her nails across Eirin's chest, creating a large gash that was bleeding profusely.

Eirin slammed her fist into Alice's stomach, stunning her as Eirin increased the distance between them and grabbed her bow with her good arm. " Damn. She took out my left arm, I can't wield the bow without it." Eirin said as she jumped backwards and flew into the sky.

Eirin felt a strong tug on her hair braid as she feels herself being slammed into the earth. " I wanna see you go squish!" Alice said as she began to repeatedly slam Eirin against the ground as the sounds of her flesh being torn and her bones being shattered with each thunderous blow.

Eirin's eyes began to slowly close as she slipped into a pitch black void while she heard Alice's laughter filling the air. " Time to find those two bunnies to play with!"

Back to the Present...

Most of the people in the room were horrified with what they saw. They felt horrified that such a terrible being could exist and assume the form of a perfectly normal little girl.

Marisa, even though she was putting on a brave front, was terrified of facing such a powerful demon. Hell, everyone in the room was terrified at the strength and speed the little girl had.

Ziden noticed that Eirin's body was shaking violently and he knew why. " Eirin, that was your first time dying, wasn't it?" Ziden asked as everyone turned their gaze to Eirin who nodded. " I guessed as much. It's never easy to feel the cold embrace of death on your heart for the first time, its unsettling but you get used to it."

" That girl... she was no low level demon, was she?" Eirin asked.

" No. Alice, that demon you attempted to fight is a Star-Ranked demon, the highest rank that belongs to particular Demons and Monsters that are unique to their races. I'm glad you guys got out of there when you did, she would have killed you all without hesitating." Dante explained.

Flandre looked horrified when she remembered when she used to view people as toys and break them, only to be told off by her sister and Patchouli for doing something wrong.

" \*Sigh\* Great, it looks like the Ultima Brigade is getting serious about destroying this place. It'll be much harder to save this place at this rate." Ziden said while scratching his chin.

" Not only that, but we've got a powerful demon child hunting after Tewi as we speak." Alice added as Ziden stood up, almost dropping Kaguya facefirst onto the floor.

" I get that feeling that things are gonna end up getting worse for us here." Ziden said as Kaguya got her feet and dusted herself off.

" What makes you say that?" Yukari asked as a black blur crashed into the room.

" Ziden! I've got really bad news for you!" Aya reached into her notepad and handed Ziden a piece of paper that he frowned at.

" Hmm? What does it say, ze?" Marisa asked.

" This is a wanted poster for me." Ziden showed the poster to everyone as they frowned at it. It consisted of a picture of Ziden with a 50 million Yen reward for capturing him alive and 500 million Yen for bringing him in dead.

" That's not good." Ryu said.

" That's not all, listen. ' For anyone whom is brave enough to capture this dangerous criminal, make sure to remember that his weakness is water and ice-based attacks. He has the ability to regenerate lost limbs and is able heal small wounds very fast. Do not confuse his regeneration with those of the Hourai Immortals, Ziden will NOT give up when he gets too hurt. He is known for using powerful weapons and tricks. He can actually make it seem like he died, only to attack you when your back is turned. We will come to you once you capture him. He has also brainwashed several powerful Youkai such as Yukari Yakumo and Yuyuko Saigyouji. They are to be captured as well.' Signed by the Ultima Brigade." Ziden read aloud as Yukari slammed her fists onto the desk in front of her.

" Those dirty bastards! They plan on turning all of Gensokyo against us!" Yukari said as Yuyuko tried to calm her down.

" Well, if any of those got Underground, no doubt the OOni'll come up to find you. They don't care for money, more for the challenge of fighting you." Yuugi said as Ziden sighed.

" Don't worry! The Tengu are not allowed to come after you in any form or shape. Lord Tenma will personally execute any Tengu that tries to interfere with you, you're welcome by the way." Aya said.

" Thanks Aya. Any other Youkai or people I should be worried about?" Ziden asked.

" Hmmm. Maybe the Taoists, they'd seem likely to come after you." Byakuren added.

" I can't think of anyone else coming after you." Yuyuko said.

" hmmm. What about that Celestial girl, Tenshi? She seems like she would jump on this in a heartbeat." Patchouli asked.

" Something tells me that this Tenshi girl is going to be a problem for me." Ziden said.

" More than likely, it seems that bladed weapons aren't able to pierce through her body. My knives had no affect on her when I fought her." Sakuya said.

" I know this is off topic but Ziden, we need to talk about something." Dante said as Ziden noticed the urgency in his tone.

" Is something wrong, Dante?" Lucci asked.

" Nothing you guys have to worry about." Dante answered while walking out of the building.

" Don't worry, we'll be right back." Ziden said as he petted Kaguya on the head, cheering her up a bit as he left after Dante. Yukari kept her eye on Ziden as she opened a gap and decided to eavesdrop. The sound of a bullet was heard as Yukari quickly closed the gap and pouted.

" Guess they don't want you to eavesdrop, eh Yukari?" Keine asked as she laughed.

" No, that's what worries me." Yukari said.

" Really? Why?" Meiling asked.

" It means that its something they don't want us to know about."  
Mokou answered.

" Could it be something about Dante's brother, Vergil?" Eirin asked.

Yukari thought for a second before a look of horror spread onto her face. " No. It couldn't be."

" Is something wrong, Yukari?" Remilia asked as Ran and Chen ran to her side before she could fall backwards.

" Holy crap! Yukari!" Everyone ran over to the fainted Gap Youkai as they tried to bring her back into consciousness. Tewi ended up sneaking out and followed after Ziden.

" What is it Dante?" Ziden asked.

" It's about Vergil... I think he's being controlled by Mundus again."  
Dante said as the blood in Ziden's body ran cold.

" Damn! If having to dealing with those Rulers of Darkness wasn't bad enough with Bison and Ganondorf being a part of them, now you think Mundus is a part of them too? Shit!" Ziden began to panic as he sits down on the steps of the school.

" This is bad if this is true, Ziden. I had a hard enough time dealing with Mundus back on Mallet Island even with my Old Man's sword. What makes it worse is that the Darkness is making them stronger too." Dante said as he sat down next to Ziden.

" Dante, the next time we encounter your brother, I'll try to free him Mundus' grip but do know, he may not want to join our when I do."  
Ziden said.

" I know, I'll just have to force him to join us then. After all, we do have a common enemy." Dante said while rising to his feet.

" You guys alright out here?" Tewi asked as she sat down next Ziden.

" Yeah. Yukari fainted when she realized we could be fighting Mundus on this journey. That thing is more of monster than Alice could ever be." Ziden said.

" She wouldn't try to attack me while I'm around you two right?" Tewi asked as Ziden ruffled her hair.

" Doubt it. Me and her have had encounters in the past and she doesn't really like being around me because I interfere with her playtime, but you'll be safe with me around, after all, what are friends for?" Ziden asked while holding out his hand as Tewi took it.

" Now what? Mokou said she fought off some weird looking Zealot near that Dragon statue, so no doubt that they plan focusing their assault on this village." Dante said as Ziden scratched his chin.

" Dammit! Where did it go!? We just saw it!" The trio heard Reimu's voice approaching the schoolhouse.

" I dunno, Reimu. It just disappeared on us!" Sora's voice said as they heard a third voice sigh.

" You're the Chosen Keyblade wielder! You should be able to sense these things' presence and track them down." Reimu's voice sounded extremely annoyed with Sora.

" Well I'm sorry I'm not a freaking radar for Heartless! It will just pop up and attack us later anyway." Sora's voice said as Reimu continued to argue with the brown haired youth.

The trio saw Reimu, Sora and Reiji walking towards as Reiji was massaging his temples.

" Jeez you two. Not even married and you're already having a Lover's Quarrel? Talk about young love." Ziden said while snickering.

" Ah, that reminds me of all of my suitors back in the day of old." Tewi said, reminiscing of the past.



" What was that about us having a Lover's Quarrel?" Reimu asked while summoning several Yin Yang to spin around her. The trio began to whistle innocently as Ziden disappeared in a flash of purple light.

Ziden appeared next to the unconscious Yukari as he watched Yuyuko and Ran trying to wake up the unconscious Youkai.

" Leave it to Yukari to pass out at random moments like that." Reisen said while sighing.

" Hmm. I feel like we forgot an important Youkai that could come after us but who?" Aya wondered as Marisa and Alice looked at the Sunflower plant that was in the corner of the room.

Ziden scratched his chin for a second as he reached into his jacket and pulled a large bucket filled with ice water. Everyone around Yukari saw the bucket and moved away from her as Ziden splashed Yukari with the frozen water as she lurched upwards while shivering.

" Oh dear god." Alice looked outside the schoolhouse and saw someone talking to Dante.

" Why the hell would you do that, you little asshole!?" Yukari asked while still shivering.

" Would you prefered that I slapped you awake?" Ziden asked.

Yuugi is seen talking to Roxanne about something as she hand Yuugi something and whispers something in her ear. Roxanne is seen walking to the door as she someone outside and runs out to meet her.

" Yo Ziden! You got a big nasty problem heading your way, ze!" Marisa said as everyone felt the powerful presence of the woman entering the room.

Ziden turned around and stared at the green haired woman walking towards him, while wearing a sadistic smile on her face. " So you must be Roxanne's son, am I right?"

" Yeah, who the hell are you?" Ziden asked while reaching for Nosada.

" Good, so I have the right person to punish then." The woman moved her umbrella and thrust it through Ziden's chest.

Ziden looks down, uninterested in the item in his chest as he looked at the woman in front of him. " Looks like I'm going to have to kill an idiot today." The woman launched Ziden out of the building as the woman smirked.

*Meanwhile...*

Yoruhoshi's body is seen laying on the ground as he began to slowly die from blood loss when a red pentagram appeared next to him as a man wearing a black appeared before him, holding a scroll written in blood.

" Young Yoruhoshi, you have such a hatred towards humanity and your fellow Lunarians, only to be stopped by that human man. What if you were able to get revenge on him and become even stronger than you are now?" The man asked.

"I... would... take that... deal... and take vengeance against him!" Yoruhoshi coughed up blood as the blood began to fly towards the scroll and wrote out his name on the paper.

" The deal has been made, Yoruhoshi. I shall have you healed up in no time and then you can take vengeance against everyone. My name is... Louis Cypher." Louis said as a pentagram appeared underneath Yoruhoshi's body and teleported him to an unknown location.

*Somewhere deep within Ziden's soul...*

A green haired woman wearing a blue cloak and a cone shaped hat with a white sun on it was laughing evilly. " This fool doesn't even know that I've been deep within his soul, siphoning off portions of his powers to add my own. When I'm done here, the world shall bow down to the great Queen of Evil!" The woman held fire in her right hand and a black hole in her other hand.

*Fun Fact:*

1. Ziden was originally intended to be an OC to the Devil May Cry series which is why I gave him the Devil Arm, Fafnir.
2. Devil Arms will be explained next chapter for anyone who don't know what they are exactly.
3. The battle that took place in the Scarlet Devil Mansion will also shown next chapter as well.
4. Ziden and Tewi do know each prior to thier meeting in Gensokyo. Alice is from the Shin Megami Tensei series and is a powerful optional boss with a powerful magic attacks.

# **The Flower Master of Four Seasons**

Ziden watched as the green haired woman walked towards him while spinning her parasol in her hand. The woman had shoulder length wavy green hair and sharp red eyes. She was wearing red plaid skirt and a waistcoat of the same color and pattern over a plain white shirt.

" So what's your deal with attacking me lady? Are you after that bounty on my head?" Ziden asked.

" No, I could care less for that nonsense. I'm here about YOU destroying my precious Sunflowers with that giant knight of yours." The woman said while pointing her parasol at him.

" Really? You're mad because I killed your stupid little flowers? That's a pathetic excuse to kill someone- wait, how did you know that was me in that ' giant knight'?" Ziden asked.

" I told her!" Roxanne said as everyone minus Ziden sweatdropped.

" Of course you did." Ziden answered as he saw the frown on the woman's face.

" Stupid little flowers? My my, those words alone sealed your fate against me boy. I was going to kill you sweet and fast to save you the pain, but now I'm going to kill you painfully and slowly. Know that it was Yuuka Kazami, Flower Master of the Four Seasons, who sent you to your grave!" Yuuka declared as Ziden unsheathed Crimson Edge.

" This is going to be fun. Don't disappoint me, flower girl!" Ziden yelled as Yuuka glared at him.

**Kalle Demos Second Battle ( Legend Of Zelda: Wind Waker)**

" I hope you know that Ziden is probably going to die in this fight." Yukari said as Dante looked confused.

" Oh come on, she's just some flower lady with a strong parasol. How strong can she be?" Dante asked as Patchouli walked outside.

" That woman is Yuuka Kazami, one of the strongest Youkai in Gensokyo and she is known for killing people who harm her flowers. \*Sigh\* I should have warned him not to harm the flowers otherwise this wouldn't have happened." Patchouli said while sitting down.

" Don't worry. Either he'll die at her hands or he'll live with a lot of injuries from ole Yuuka." Roxanne said as Yuugi sat next to her.

" Yeah, even if he does die, I'll jump in and get him out safely." Yuugi declared as Roxanne smiled.

" Its a good thing that Ziden is able to regenerate, he's gonna need it for this fight, especially since this isn't a Spell Card duel." Keine said as Sora looked confused.

" Spell Card duel?" Sora asked.

" Ah, right, I never told you guys about our Rules of Combat in Gensokyo, did I?" Yukari asked as the non-Gensokyians shook their heads. " Well now, I should give you a proper explanation on how the Spell Card duels take place in Gensokyo. It all started some time before the Scarlet Mist Incident." Yukari began to explain the fundamentals of how Spell Cards worked and why they were created in the first place.

Ziden stared down Yuuka as they circled around each other. Ziden charged at Yuuka with a furious assault of spin kicks as she blocked them with her parasol. Ziden followed up with a powerful axe kick that Yuuka easily blocked with her forearm as Ziden flipped away from her.

" Is that all you got, boy? I thought you were stronger than that, Legendary Hero." Yuuka taunted while twirling her parasol.

" Heh! If you think that this is me getting serious, then you've got another thing coming, flower girl!" Ziden retorted back while hopping on one foot. Everyone watched as Ziden began to hop faster as he became a blur. Ziden dashed forward and quickly closed the distance between him and Yuuka, shocking her at how fast he was. Ziden slammed his fist into her jaw and sent her flying backwards as he fired a large wave of energy after her. The wave created a large explosion that sent powerful gusts of wind that nearly blasted everyone out of their seats.

Ziden smirked as he looked at his apparent victory as he felt something wrapped his leg. He looked down and saw a green vine wrapping around his leg as he struggled to get free.

" My my. That caught me off-guard. I wasn't expecting you to be that fast, I've always had trouble dealing with fast opponents." Yuuka walked out of the cloud of dust, looking completely unscathed as the vines reached Ziden's torso. " My plants can't wait to drink in your blood, phoenix boy. They wish to avenge their fallen comrades that you destroyed with that knight and purple magician." Patchouli swallowed hard when Yuuka mentioned her name.

The vines soon cocooned Ziden's whole body while the vines began to constrict, allowing the sounds of bones being shattered was heard. Yuuka could see the blood leaking on the vines, painting them red with his life essence while she smirked. " My plants say that your blood is divine, human! They wish to feast in your blood from now which is going to be arranged."

Yuuka's smile soon disappeared as she sees an explosion of fire coming from the vines as Ziden walked out of the flames completely unharmed.

" Great, now I'll have to make you pay for burning those flowers as well." Yuuka said as she walked towards Ziden.

Ziden calmly walked towards Yuuka while keeping his hand on Celsius. Ziden quickly drew Celsius from his jacket and fired large icy bullets at Yuuka. Yuuka spun her parasol to deflect the ice bullets as Ziden rolled out of the way of his returned bullets.

" At least you're more interesting to fight than those outsiders that Yukari brings in so often. You are overconfident but you have the skill to back that up." Yuuka said as Ziden looked at Yukari whom was smiling. " It almost reminds of that battle I had all those years ago against that knight looking demon. Now that was a battle." Ziden looked confused as he thought of the demon that met that description.

" When did you fight this demon?" Dante asked.

" About 50 years ago, I don't remember his name but I remember him being able to fight me to a stand still." Yuuka said as Ziden clicked his tongue.

" Was his name Sparda by chance?" Yukari asked.

" Ah yes, that was his name. Sparda, the legendary demon whom protected the human world from the demons 2000 years ago. Now there was an interesting outsider to Gensokyo, not like those foolish teenagers that Yukari brings here." Yuuka said as Yukari covered her mouth with a fan.

" Enough of this! After I'm kicking your sorry ass, I'm going to have a chat with Yukari regarding these outsiders!" Ziden declared as Yuuka smiled.

" Very well then. Do try to entertain me then boy." Yuuka watched as Ziden charged at her.

Ziden jumped into the air and spun himself like a sawblade as Yuuka blocked the attack with her forearm as she grinned. Ziden began to spin faster as sparks began to fly off of Yuuka's arm, forcibly causing her to slide backwards.

Yuuka grabs Ziden's arm and abruptly stops his attack while slamming him face first into the ground. Yuuka then places her foot on Ziden's shoulder and then snaps Ziden's arm like a twig as he quickly rolled away from Yuuka's grasp.

"Aw, did that hurt boy?" Yuuka asked while feigning sympathy .

Ziden looked at his now broken arm and frowned as everyone watched as he placed a hand on his arm.

"Hmm? What is he about to do?" Lucci asked.

"Its a little creepy but just watch and see." Mokou said while watching intently.

Ziden increased the pressure on his arm and proceeded to rip off as his own arm, shocking everyone. Ziden's arm quickly regenerated as he picked up his discarded arm while throwing it up and down in his hand.

"Surprised?" Ziden asked as Yuuka shook off her shock.

"Not really. I could tell that you could heal your wounds, I just didn't expect you to be able regrow your limbs that fast." Yuuka said as Ziden smirked.

"Oh, but I have alot more surprises up my sleeves, my busty friend." Ziden said as Yuuka chuckled.

"How bold~! I'm just going to have to get a bit more serious with you, won't I?" Yuuka said as she ran forward and slammed her fist into Ziden's ribcage, forcing him to lose every ounce of air in his lungs and he was sent flying into an abandoned house.

Ziden gets up and sees Yuuka standing over him, he quickly slams his foot into her stomach, stunning her as he blasted her in the chest with a fireball.



Yuuka is sent falling on her rear from the fireball's impact and Ziden follows up with a face shattering kick that send Yuuka flying outside of the building as Ziden appeared behind her.

Ziden delivered a powerful kick to her spine that sent her into the air as he crouched down and jumped into the air, speeding past Yuuka while placing his hands together. " Go down!" Ziden slammed his fists into Yuuka's face with enough force to kill an elephant in one blow, sending her crashing into the schoolyard as dust and large rocks were kicked up in the explosive force that Yuuka caused when she crashed into the ground.

Ziden was overlooking the damage he caused with that attack while panting and descending to the ground slowly. Ziden thought he had won this fight and dropped his guard due to that fact. Ziden turned around and saw Yuuka's parasol right next to his face.

" Peek-a-boo! Master Spark!" Ziden's eyes widened when he felt a massive colorful laser tear through his body and send him crashing into the earth as Yuuka laughed sadistically.

" What the hell?! Did she just use your Master Spark, Marisa?!" Dante asked.

" Actually, I kinda copied the spell from her, ze."Marisa admitted as the non-Gensokyians sweatdropped.

" Don't be surprised, she is a thief after all." Patchouli said while watching the fight.

" Hey, I don't steal, I only borrow until I die, ze!" Marisa declared.

" Weird policy you got there kid." Logan said while leaning against the wall.

" Indeed, at least she hasn't borrowed anything from the Myouren Temple." Byakuren said.

Yuuka looks down into the dust cloud as she sees Ziden's jacket fly out of it and head straight for Patchouli as it landed in her arms.

" Oh? It looks like Ziden about to get serious now." Yuyuko said as everyone felt the air become both warmer and colder at the same.

The dust cloud was blasted away by fierce flames as they took the form of a phoenix and screeched into the heavens. Ziden is seen standing on the ground with Nosada and Murakamo in his hands and with their magic activated as two ethereal eastern dragons are seen coiling around him.

" Whoa! What's with all this energy!?" Remilia asked.

" I see now. The jacket he wears functions as a seal for his magic and fire, with it removed, we are feeling a portion of this power. Incredible." Patchouli examined as Yuugi smirked.

" So this means he's not holding back anymore, right?" Yuugi asked as Yukari, Yuyuko, Mokou and Roxanne shook their heads.

" Nope. He's gonna hold back his strength and fire, mostly for our sake." Yukari answered.

" Jeez! He's still holding back even with all this magic around him!?" Reisen asked.

" Well, he does have the power of a Phoenix, so this is to be expected." Yuyuko answered.

Ziden looked at Yuuka and noticed that she had some bruises on her face and her parts of her clothes were burned and torn abit. " Ready for Round 2, flower girl?" Ziden asked while spiining his katanas.

" Round 2? When did we ever start Round 1?" Yuuka asked.

Ziden glared at Yuuka as he noticed the magic energy coming off of Yuuka's body. Yuuka once again pointed her parasol at him. " Let's

see what this power of yours can do." Yuuka said while firing another Master Spark at Ziden.

Ziden just stands there as the large laser comes barreling towards him. Ziden's fire shot upwards and formed a protective wall that blocked the laser with little struggle on their part.

" Interesting, this won't be an easy kill after all!" Yuuka happily said as she charged at Ziden.

### **Gensokyo, Past and Present ~ Flower Land ( Touhou 9: Phantasmagoria of Flower View)**

Ziden blocked the parasol with Murakamo and aimed at her neck with Nosada. She blocked it with her forearm, completely caught off guard by the explosion that occurred when Nosada touched her.

Yuuka is sent flying by the attack as she flipped herself to land on her feet, skidding along the ground until she stopped. Ziden appeared above her and stabbed into the ground, creating a massive pillar of fire that tore several abandoned houses apart.

" Dear lord! I don't remember his flames being this powerful!" Sora said as Patchouli watched intently.

" I already said that the power of his fire has increased in strength so this is to be expected." Patchouli answered.

" Oh? And how did you know that, Miss Knowledge? I doubt he told you that himself." Roxanne asked.

" Whenever he falls asleep, I study his gear and clothing without waking him." Patchouli answered.

" Oh? You 'study' my nephew while he's sleeping, how perverted!" Yukari said as Patchouli's eye twitched.

" I'm starting to see why Ziden acts the way he does now." Patchouli said as another explosion occurred in the village.

Ziden ducked to avoid the parasol coming in contact with his head and sweep kicked Yuuka off her feet and swung Murakamo across her chest, drawing blood as she stabbed him in the chest with her parasol and lifted into the air.

" Master Spark." Ziden is sent flying into the air, surrounded by the destructive lasers as several large plants sprouted up around Yuuka and began to fire salvos of green danmaku, only that these were considered as fatal.

Ziden is stuck in freefall as he noticed the danmaku that were coming towards him. Ziden flipped himself rightside-up and gripped his katanas hard. " Infernal Hail!" Ziden performed several rapid thrusts, firing a storm of fire and ice bullets that collided with the green danmaku, exploding into colorful fireworks that weren't filling the sky.

" Hmm. So he really doesn't use danmaku, huh? That's going to make things so much more easier then." Yuuka said to herself as she created more flowers to fire more danmaku at Ziden.

Ziden quickly increased the rate of his attacks and the size of them as well. Yuuka's danmaku still managed to get around Ziden's barrage and slammed into his back, halting his attack as he is pancaked between two layers of danmaku.

Yuuka smirked as she walked forward, watching her danmaku tear her opponent apart while waiting for the assault to end. Yuuka signals for the flowers to stop firing and watched Ziden's broken and mangled body fall towards the ground and landed in front of the schoolhouse.

Ziden had several large bloody holes in his body as he slowly began to regenerate his wounds.

Satori looked disgusted for some reason and Rin noticed it. " Hey boss, what's wrong?"

" Ziden just thought of an extremely bad pun and my brain hurts from hearing it." Satori said while rubbing her temples.

Ziden crouched down and wrapped his hands in fire as Yuuka appeared in his line of sights. " Time to get rocked, flower girl! Volcanic Eruption!" Ziden began to rapidly punch the ground, firing large fiery rocks at Yuuka as she summoned large vines to absorb the blows as Ziden opened vortexes and fired the molten boulders into them.

Yuuka was crushed by the molten boulders as she screamed in pain from the sensation of being burned and melted as Ziden smirked. " Looks like I killed some weeds today." Ziden said as everyone facepalmed.

Ziden walked away as he feels a fist slam into his spine and he fell face first onto the ground and feels Yuuka place her boot on his neck. " How sad, you thought that measly little attack would kill me. You are severely overconfident in your fire, boy." Yuuka said as Ziden smirked. " What's with that smirk?"

" I didn't know that flower girls wear black laced panties." Ziden said as Dante had a nosebleed.

Yuuka smiled evilly at Ziden's words. " How uncouth. Looking up a woman's skirt is not very gentleman-like. You really are Roxanne's child." Yuuka said while putting more weight on her leg, slowly crushing his neck .

Ziden set his entire body on fire as Yuuka's leg burned from the flames. Ziden crouched down as a blue light surrounded Ziden. " Mimicked Skill: Rising Fire!" Ziden performed a burning uppercut, sending Yuuka airborne as Ziden positioned himself underneath Yuuka. " Need to cool off? Mimicked Skill: Frost Tower!" Ziden created a pillar of ice that slammed into Yuuka chest forcing her to cough up blood from the impact.

Ziden noticed that her blood was green and noticed that it was weird but then remembered that she was a flower lady according to what she could do

Yuuka got to her feet and dusted off her skirt as Ziden noticed that she didn't seem to look that hurt. " Maybe I should take you more seriously, boy."

Ziden cracked his neck while pointing his fist at Yuuka. " Flame Rocket!" Ziden's fist transformed into a massive fist of flames as it detached from his wrist and fired off towards Yuuka.

Yuuka used her parasol in an attempt to block the attack as the fist slammed into the parasol and violently exploded, causing a gust of wind blast through the area. Ziden regrew his hand back as he sees Yuuka coming towards him with her parasol closed and pointed at him.

Ziden watched as a ball of colorful light formed at the tip of the parasol while bracing himself for the impact when he feels a presence behind him. He turned and saw another Yuuka standing behind him, charging up a Master Spark.

" Well, he's dead." Roxanne said as Kirby jumped up from Yuyuko's lap.

" \*Sigh\* We'll be sure to obtain his body after he falls, ze." Marisa said.

" Hmm? What do you guys mean by that?" Lucci asked.

" Ziden can revive himself after death." Ryu answered.

" Impressive. I always thought he could just heal off damage and that's it." Lucci said.

" Yeah, too bad he always gets killed one way or another." Ran said while watching Ziden's shocked face.

" Dual Spark." The two Yuukas fired a large colorful beam at Ziden, sandwiching him between the two beams as Ziden was literally torn apart by the two beams. The beams created a massive pillar of magical light that ripped through the sky above and even reached into space, allowing people on Earth to see it regardless of what time zone they were in.

The light slowly died down as everyone sees Ziden, completely torn apart by the Dual Spark as he fell forward, dropping his swords as they vanished into ice and fire.

Yuuka walked over to him and grabbed him by the collar of his shirt. " Oh my, you're about to die aren't you boy? Well don't think that dying will save you from me, for I plan on having more fun with after I get back home."

Ziden's vision began to fade out as he feels himself being let go and he hits the ground to see a pair of red feet in front of him as he passed out.

Ziden's soul exited his body and disappeared into thin air as everyone watched Yuuka stare down her new opponent while smirking.

*Somewhere within the Land of the Dead...*

Ziden stares at a familiar sight while he waits for the 30 minute time-limit to pass, Komachi sleeping while sitting up with a snot bubble in her nose.

Ziden blinks a few times before he got up and walked over to Komachi and poked her forehead. No effect, she was still sleeping. Ziden decided to turn the poke into a push as Komachi fell backwards and snapped awake.

" Rise and shine, snowflake. How was the nap?" Ziden asked as Komachi sat up.

" It was good until you woke me up, you jerk. Don't you know that we women need their beauty sleep?" Komachi asked while pouting.

" Nope, don't care." Komachi fell face first onto the ground when Ziden said this.

" Boo! How mean! I can't believe me and you used to be a thing! You are so rude!" Komachi said as Ziden chuckled.

" I'm not rude, I'm just mean spirited. There's a difference, you know." Ziden said.

" No, there isn't! Its the exact same thing!" Komachi argued.

" Dear lords! Would you two be quiet!?" A new voice said as a white blob came out of Ziden's chest.

The white blob transformed into a ghostlike woman with green hair as Komachi summoned her scythe to her hand.

The woman had green hair and green eyes while wearing a blue hat with a sun marking on it. Her blue cape has a white trim and markings and is fastened at her neck with a yellow ribbon. Her blue vest has white sleeves and buttons. She had a large staff tipped with a white crescent moon as the woman dug in her pointy ears, looking very bored.

" Howdy there." The woman said as Ziden was staring at something on her person. " What in the world are you staring at, boy?"

Ziden continued to stare as Komachi caught onto what he was staring at and slapped him in the back of the head. " Freaking perv!"

" What? Those things are big and bouncy, don't get mad at me, you lazy ass shinigami!" Ziden yelled as the woman sighed.

" Shut up, you fool. It is rude to stare at a woman's chest, especially one whom could kill you in several different ways, Ziden Icrim." The woman said earning a glare from him.



" Who in the hell are you and why were you in my body?!" Ziden asked.

" Simple, I am the Queen of Evil, Mima! And I've taken up host in your body because I felt like it~!" Mima explained.

" Great, so I've got an evil spirit living in me. Komachi, reap this ghost and get her out of my soul." Ziden ordered as Komachi twirled her scythe.

" Not so fast, my boy! If she tries to remove me from your body, your soul will come with me, trapping you within me for as long I want!" Mima said as Komachi frowned.

" Crap, that's bad. She linked herself to your soul, meaning if she is ripped from your body, she'll take your soul with her, making your body practically useless." Komachi explained.

" Well damn. So I have to deal with this loony ghost while having to deal with the Ultima Brigade? Great." Ziden said as Mima flicked his forehead. " Ow! What was that for?!"

" I'm an evil spirit, not a ghost! A sexy evil spirit at that." Mima said while posing.

" Meh, I've seen sexier." Ziden said.

" Really? Like who?" Mima asked.

" Me, of course." Komachi said while smirking.

" Sure, whatever makes you sleep at night, Komachi." Ziden said as he opens a stopwatch and sees that the time has barely passed.

" Oh yes. I remembered that one of my old associates wanted to speak with you about something. Be lucky that the human world is in danger or I would have taken you over so I could take over the Human World and rule as its queen!" Mima exclaimed as Ziden sighed.

" Whatever, dumb bitch." Ziden rudely said as Mima flinched.

" How rude! Didn't anyone teach you manners?" Mima angrily asked.

" They did, but I don't use them on people whose asses I'm going to eventually beat in the future." Ziden said.

" Funny, you said that when you were fighting Yuuka and look how that turned out. You're six feet under with an evil spirit and a boobified Shinigami with no brains, good ass kicking you gave her, Ziden." Mima sarcastically said as Ziden grew annoyed with this woman.

" You fought Yuuka Kazami!? One of the strongest Youkai in Gensokyo?! Are you freaking retarded!?" Komachi asked as Ziden scratched his nose.

" Nope, just reckless." Ziden simply answered.

" Well just know, that I'll make sure to annoy you whenever I can! Ciao!" Mima disappeared in a ball of darkness and reentered Ziden's chest. Mima's head popped out of Ziden's chest startling him. " Oh, and don't you dare tell anyone that I'm possessing you or I'll devour you soul and keep you trapped within me for a long time." Mima warned as he reentered Ziden's body as Komachi sighed.

" Way to go, champ. You got possessed by one of the evillest beings in Gensokyo's past, Mima. Welp, it looks like your return to Gensokyo has been eventful." Komachi said while sitting next to him.

Ziden sighed as he began to glow with a golden light as Komachi kissed him on the cheek. " See you around kid. Eiki wanted to see you so expect a visit from her later, okay?"

" Yeah... listen, I'm sorry about what my old lady did to you, but-" Ziden was silenced by Komachi's hand.

" Save it, nothing you say will never allow me to forgive that woman for what she did to me... and us. She ruined our relationship just because she thinks I'm no good for you." Komachi said with an upset tone.

" Humph, don't start getting depressed, the Yama learned of her trickery and punished her accordingly, don't worry about it." Ziden said while putting his hand her shoulder, cheering her up before he disappeared from this room.

" Huh. I guess he can nice sometimes." Komachi said as she got up and dusted off her skirt.

*Back in the world of the Living...*

Ziden woke up with a startle as he noticed he was in a bed with a heavy weight on his chest as he noticed Patchouli calmly reading a book next to him in a chair. " About time you woke up, you had everyone worried when you didn't revive after 30 mins." Patchouli said, not once taking her eyes off of her book.

Ziden was about to sit up when he felt a wet sensation on his chest, causing him to look down and see Meiling drooling on his chest. " Eww. Alright slobber girl, wake up." Ziden gently nudged Meiling's body, only for her to drool more and bury her face into his chest. " Come on, now. Wake up!" Ziden nudged her a little harder, causing her to grab him into a bear hug. Patchouli was watching the strange sight out of the corner of her eyes.

Ziden began to violently shake Meiling awake as she remained sleeping like a log in a storm. Ziden tried everything he could think of to get the Chinese Gatekeeper off of him, phasing though the bed only for Meiling to roll off of the bed and grab him into a stronger hug, raising his body temperature in an attempt to wake her up only caused her to sweat a bit. Attempt after attempt failed as Ziden slammed his head on the pillow and sighed loudly.

" Huh?" Ziden's face became upset when he heard Meiling snapping awake and groggily looking around before noticing that Ziden was awake again. " Must still be dreaming." Meiling dropped her head back on Ziden's chest as Patchouli grabbed her by the ear. " Ow! Stop that, I'm awake!"

" Ugh, how long have I been out?" Ziden asked.

" About a few hours. Its nighttime now." Patchouli said while turning a page.

" What happened to that flower lady after I died?" Ziden asked.

" We'll tell you later, now you need to rest." Meiling said as Ziden sighed.

" Sure." Ziden simply said while laying back down. " Where are we anyway?"

" We are in the newly constructed basement of the Schoolhouse, it is our base of operations to fight off the Ultima Brigade." Patchouli explained as Meiling got up.

" I'm going to take a soak in that hotspring for a while, care to join me Patchouli?" Meiling asked.

" No."

" Okay. Your loss then." Meiling said as she left the room.

" Mokou wanted to tell you something important so after you rest a bit, you should go see her." Patchouli said while reading her book.

" Sure thing, Purple girl." Ziden said while staring at the ceiling.

*Elsewhere in Gensokyo...*

Vergil and Ganondorf are seen walking through the Forest of Magic, searching for someone as they heard some bushes rustling.

Vergil grabbed Yamato and flicked it, releasing a sphere surrounded by razor winds into the bushes as a brown haired girl flew into the sky with a camera like phone in her hands. " Yikes, I've been like, totally spotted! Time to skedaddle, byesies!" The woman flew fast into the air, far out of Vergil's reach.

" Damn. No doubt that this will prove to be a problem for us later." Vergil said as Ganondorf laughed.

" Please, no matter, who they send after us, I'll crush them like the bugs that they are." Ganondorf boasted.

" Whatever, lets hurry and find the Ultima Brigade's base of operations and take care of them." Vergil said as Ganondorf walked after him.

On a tree branch above them, Lightning Ace and Phantom are seen watching over the duo.

" How much longer until you break the seals on that tree, Phantom?" Ace asked.

" Only a few more days and the power of the fallen Treant shall be mine. The seals that the Hakurei girl placed on the tree has been annoying to deal with but I have broken my way through it, somewhat." Phantom said.

" Good, we'll need all the power we can get in order to deal those Rulers of Darkness and to deal with that Overlord that revived them." Ace said as Phantom smiled.

" The Lord of Darkness, Overlord Oscura." Phantom said as a breeze blew through the area.

*Fun Fact:*

*1. The Mimicked Skills that Ziden used against Yuuka were moves Megaman X used in his games.*

*2. Yes, Mima is possessing Ziden's body and copying his powers in order to rule over the Human World after this is all over.*

*3. Overlord Oscura is an OC so don't try to look him up.*

*Author's Note: I enjoyed showing that fight with Ziden against Yuuka, which you would think he would win because fire beats grass... but nope. Ziden lost because he underestimated Yuuka's strength and how he dropped his guard when Yuuka used the Dual Spark. Now, who is the mystery person that takes on Yuuka after Ziden falls? Stay tuned for the next chapter to find out! R&R!*

## Kirby's Crazy Battle against Flowers!

" \*Yawn\* Man I'm bored." Ziden said as Patchouli ignored him while laying next to him in the bed.

" Deal with it, even if you can regenerate off any damage, Eirin said that your body can still give out on you if you overexert yourself while injured." Patchouli said as Ziden yawned again.

" This is still really boring though, how are you keeping sane from this?" Ziden asked as Patchouli shrugged.

" I'm just enjoying a nice book to pass the time until you get better." Patchouli said as Ziden looked over her shoulder. She turned her head slightly to gaze in Ziden's eyes with an annoyed glare. " Hands to yourself or you'll lose them and another body part."

" Jeez, talk about cold. I wasn't even going to." Ziden said.

" No, he was going to when you first said it." Satori entered the room as Ziden sheepishly scratched his head.

" Perv." Patchouli swore under her breathe.

" Oh? And it seems Patchouli wanted you to touch her as an act of defiance and a sign of interest, how cute." Satori said as Patchouli's pale face went red.

" Wow, I never would have taken you for that type of girl, Patchy." Ziden said as he received an elbow to the face.

" Stop reading my mind!"

" Stop being so open with your thoughts, I could sense your lust from my room." Satori said as Ziden tried to sneak out of the room while the two were arguing.

" *So long, suckers!*" Ziden thought as he opened the door and walked into Utsuho.

" Ziden! You're alive!" Ziden was immediately glomped into a strong hug by Utsuho while spinning him around.

" Gah! Stop spinning me around! I'm getting dizzy!" Ziden yelled as Utsuho continued to spin.

" Okuu, please stop because he's about to throw up on you and possibly us as well." Satori said as Utsuho stopped spinning and dropped Ziden.

" Peace out!" Ziden made a quick dash for the door, only to be stopped by a powerful torrent of water covering the door.

" Yeah, I knew you would try to escape so while you were dead I created some barriers to keep you in until you healed. I was being serious about not letting you leave until you are fully recovered." Patchouli said as Ziden walked over to the bed and laid down next to Patchouli. She quickly rolled onto Ziden's chest and placed her book on his face and used it as a stand.

" How cute, the lovely couple of Ziden and Patchouli snuggling in a... unique way." Ziden looked to his side to see Yukari laying next to them with a smirk on her face.

" What do you want, Yukari?" Ziden asked.

" What makes you think I want something?" Yukari asked as Ziden scoffed.

" Why else would you be here, annoying me while I'm having my face used as a bookstand by an gloomy bookworm ice queen?" Ziden said as Patchouli glared at him.

" I'd call her a gloomy bookworm tsundere instead of an ice queen." Yukari corrected.



" That would describe her much better than ice queen since she is hiding her true feeling for you via hitting you and trying her hardest to turn down your attempts to flirt with her." Satori said as Ziden sighed.

" Whatever, I like her the way she is... even if she threatens to hit me and rape my clones in their sleep." Ziden said as Patchouli mentally smiled but physically frowned.

" I never did that!" Patchouli exclaimed.

" You admitted to it in Rogueport, so yeah, you purple sleep rapist." Yukari said while covering her face with a fan.

"... I'm going to ignore all of you now so I can read this magic tome in peace." Patchouli said as Yukari chuckled.

" But don't you want to spend some time in the hot spring, soaking in the healing waters and removing the toxins from your body?" Yukari asked.

" Hell no. Knowing you, you're probably going to spy on me again and remind yourself how you can't keep a guy for more than a day." Ziden said as Yukari frowned.

" That was a low blow, Ziden." Yukari said as Ziden chuckled.

" Too bad, I don't like hot springs anyway, so go away until after I've had my nap." Ziden shooed Yukari away as she faked having her feelings hurt.

" How mean! You should really treat me better, I did raise you after all." Yukari stated.

" Yeah, when you weren't hibernating or sleeping through the day, otherwise it was Ran watching me and educating me outside of school." Ziden said as Yukari pulled on his cheeks playfully.

" Aw, but don't you remember how I'd sneak you into my room and let you fall asleep on my chest? Those were the fun times before you

grew into a grumpy old man." Yukari said as Ziden grabbed her cheeks and pulled them.

" Yet, everytime I take a shower or bath, you spy on me like a creepy old pervert!" Ziden countered as Yukari pulled harder on his cheeks.

" So what? We're not related by blood, so I don't see the problem there. You're fair game in my books... and Yuyuko's too." Yukari said as Ziden sighed.

" I swear you always seem to bug me whenever you get bored. Its annoying." Ziden said as he attempted to sit up, only to be pushed back down by Patchouli.

" At least I'm not trained and beaten by your little purple girlfriend over there like you." Yukari countered as Patchouli chuckled.

" I do have him well trained, don't I?' Patchouli said while ruffling Ziden's hair.

" No you don't!" Ziden said as he felt an icy glare coming from Patchouli. " Uh, I mean, I just so happen to listen to what you tell me to do?"

" 'Whew, I can't let her know that she scares the crap out of me when she gets mad and I'm enjoying how soft her body is.' My my, Such perverse thoughts." Satori said as Ziden felt Patchouli chuckle on his chest.

" That's very good to know, you'll just have to keep me happy and content unless you want to see my bad side." Patchouli said as Ziden sighed.

Utsuho looked confused at the entire conversation as she scratched her head. " Screw it, I'm taking a nap till I recover." Ziden tried to take a nap only realize that Yukari had dropped both him and Patchouli into one of her eye filled gap and they crashed through a table in

what appears to be a dining area. " God damn you Yukari, god damn you."

" Well, there goes the table." Ziden looked up and saw Mokou sitting on the ground indian style with a young girl on her lap.

Ziden noticed that the girl was smiling happily in her lap as she pointed at Ziden. " Is that him?"

" Yep, go say hi to him." Mokou said while ruffling her hair. The little girl ran over to Ziden as Patchouli got off of him and dusted her pajamas off.

" Uh... hi?" Ziden said as the girl jumped on him.

" Daddy!" Ziden's eyes widened at the girl's words as he felt extremely dizzy.

" Uh oh. He's about to faint." Patchouli said as Ziden dropped like a rock and passed out.

" I knew that would happen." Mokou said as the girl sat on Ziden's stomach.

" So you and Ziden had a kid? I guess he doesn't remember that, does he?" Patchouli asked.

" Nope. He'll remember everything about me and Seika soon enough." Mokou said while grabbing a bottle of water and drinking from it.

" That explains your true reason for attacking him back at Rogueport." Patchouli said.

" Wake up, daad!" Seika was slamming her tiny hands into Ziden's chest.

Ziden began to stir as he regained consciousness and saw Mokou and Patchouli standing next. " Man, I had a really weird dream just

now." Ziden turned to see Seika as he began to pass out again.

Mokou rolled her eyes and poured the water over Ziden's face, startling him awake as Mokou lifted him to his feet. " Dear god, so she's-"

" Yep. You have a daughter, congrats." Patchouli said as Ziden sighed.

" Great, now I have two daughters now." Ziden said as Mokou raised an eyebrow.

" Two?" Mokou asked as Ziden facepalmed.

" Seriously? I've told you and Keine this several times before. I even showed you a picture of her." Ziden said as Mokou scratched her head.

" Meh, whatever. Say hello to our daughter, Fujiwara no Seika or Seika Icrim, whatever surname we gave her." Mokou said as Ziden looked at Seika.

She was a four year old girl with shoulder black hair with faint silver highlights from Mokou's DNA. Seika had ruby red eyes with an extremely innocent smile. She wore a simple black kimono with a golden phoenix insignia on the back, the symbol of Mokou's clan.

" Heya kiddo. How have you been?" Ziden asked as he was tackled into a strong hug by Seika.

" I've been a good girl just like mama told me too!" Seika said happily.

" That's good kid." Ziden patted her on the head as she smiled.

" \*Sigh\* She was a handful for the past 4 years. All the crying, all those diapers, ugh... those diapers." Mokou did not seem to like changing the girl's diaper. " I'm glad Keine was able to help me out or I would been driven crazy by her."

" Nobody ever said that raising a child would be easy, all the books I've read about the subject say that it takes alot of patience, love and care." Patchouli stated as Ziden raised an eyebrow. " I felt that it might be something I would like to learn someday Ziden, so don't give me that look."

" Eek!" Ziden turned to see Yuyuko hugging his newly discovered daughter like she was a teddy bear. Seika was trying to get herself free from the sudden hug she was caught in.

" Daddy! Help! Save me from the scary ghost lady!" Seika pleaded.

" What?! I'm not a scary ghost! I'm an extremely cute and peppy ghost!" Yuyuko stated as Seika struggled harder.

" Wahhhh! The scary old ghost is scaring me!" Seika screamed as Yuyuko let her and started to cry.

" I'm not old or scary~!" Yuyuko had an gloomy aura around her as she poked the ground.

" Seika, that right there is your Grandmo- Grandaunt, I think. Anyway, this is Yuyuko, a very nice, sweet and *young* ghost whom will always look out for you." Ziden explained as Seika ran behind Ziden, hiding from Yuyuko as she stood up.

" \*Sniff\* Oh you're so nice, nephew!" Yuyuko leaped at Ziden with the intent to hug him, only for him to duck under her and watched her slam into the wall.

" Yeah, no. Don't call me nice because I'm not." Ziden said as Yuyuko rubbed her sore face.

" Humph, meanie." Yuyuko pouted as Ziden shrugged.

" Anyway, she's not going to bite you or anything, so go say hi to her before she starts crying." Ziden said while pushing Seika forward.

Seika slowly walked towards Yuyuko while remaining cautious of the ghost. " H-h-h-hi, Miss Yuyuko." Seika studded out as Yuyuko petted her on the head.

" Call me Auntie Yuyuko instead of Miss Yuyuko." Yuyuko said as Seika nodded and ran back over to Mokou.

" Sorry about that, she's shy around people she doesn't know that well." Mokou explained as Yuyuko chuckled.

" Don't worry about that! I plan to visit you everyday until you learn to love me!" Yuyuko said as Ziden sighed.

" Won't that be fun. Anyway, has anything happened since I died?" Ziden asked.

" Yes, Mario and the others were brought here by Nazrin and Ichirin an hour ago and Eirin are checking on their conditions." Patchouli said as Ziden nodded.

" Wait a second, what do you mean 'checking on their condition'?! " Ziden asked, panicked for his allies safety.

" I mean, they are still asleep and nothing we do to them wakes them up from their dreams." Patchouli explained as Ziden leaned on his side and started to think.

" That's weird. Bowser was sleeping at the temple earlier so why isn't he still asleep like the other Smashers?" Mokou asked.

" Wait a sec, Ziden, wasn't there an Ultima Brigade member that could trap people in dreams?" Yuyuko asked with a serious tone.

" Not anymore, Me and Marisa killed him back in Dreamland. Phantom could trap people in dreams for a short while but not this long." Ziden said while thinking of a suspect for this crime.

" Wait, somehow the Ultima Brigade was able revive that Raijinmaru guy, right?" Mokou asked as Ziden nodded. " So what's stopping

them from reviving this dream trapping guy again?" Ziden's eyes widened in shock at this revelation.

" Well damn, this is a big problem then if Ultima revived him of all people." Ziden said while massaging his temple.

" Donald and Goofy are also outcold as well and Reiji and Xiaomu are trying to figure out if a demon or Youkai is causing this." Patchouli explained as she sees Seika pulling on her dress.

" Hey, why are you wearing pajamas when you're not sleeping?" Seika asked.

" These are what I normally wear during the day." Patchouli answered.

" That's weird." Seika said as Ziden chuckled.

" Yeah it is, Seika." Ziden added as Patchouli shrugged.

" Anyway, we should probably get over to those sleeping Smashers and figure out what the problem is." Ziden said while picking up Seika and placing her on his back.

" Alright, but you aren't doing any form of fighting if this is the involvement of a demon or Youkai's magic." Patchouli stated.

" Fine. Come on, pajama girl, lead the way to the sleeping idiots." Ziden said while bowing and pointing to the door.

Patchouli walked over Ziden and grabbed him by his ear while dragging him out of the room.

" Mom? Why is the pajama lady doing that to daddy?" Seika asked.

" Because she wears the pants in their relationship. She's going to make my job much easier." Mokou said while smirking.

" Huh? But I thought you two were-"

" Its complicated, I'll teach you about it when you're older." Mokou said, picking up Seika and placing her on her shoulders while she started to pull on Mokou's face.

" Mommy's face is so stretchy! Its so fun to play with!" Seika happily said while still pulling on her face.

" \*Sigh\* I wish I had kids, they look so fun to play with!" Yuyuko said while phasing through the wall.

Mokou sighed as they walked to the infirmary. They saw several villagers walking around them in the long hallways as the children and women waved at Mokou and Seika.

They found themselves at the infirmary as they see Ziden and Yuuka glaring at each other, causing a discomforting atmosphere to be in the room.

Ziden noticed that the flower Youkai was covered bandages and had a hard time standing up as he smirked.

" No fighting in the infirmary!" Eirin yelled while throwing a shoe Ziden's head, chopping him and knocking him off of his feet as Patchouli sighed and breathed the word 'idiot'.

Ziden slowly got to his feet while scratching his head. " That wasn't very nice Eirin, I could have been injured but nope, you just throw a shoe at me. You're a terrible nurse, you know that right?" Ziden said as Eirin smiled.

" Oh don't worry, if you got injured, I'll just experimen on you till you get better~!" Eirin said with a dangerous tone as Ziden crept away from the moon nurse.

" Ahem! Anyway, have you figured out anything about the Smashers condition?" Patchouli asked before breaking into a coughing fit.



" Alot thanks to Miss Kazami here. She believes that the Smashers, Donald and Goofy are trapped within the dream world." Eirin explained.

" Namely, they are trapped within the nightmares of that man in green." Yuuka added as Ziden walked over to Luigi.

Ziden noticed that all of the Smashers were sleeping soundly and peacefully, which Ziden found weird.

" What can we do for them?" Ziden asked.

" Well, the best bet would be for someone to enter his dreams and kill the being that trapped them there." Yuuka explained as Ziden raised an eyebrow.

" How do you know so much about the dream world?" Ziden asked as Yuuka giggled... disturbing.

" Why, I used to live there. So I would obviously be well versed on what happens in the dream world." Yuuka answered politely.

" Whatever, so how are we going to get into the dream world safely? Me and Yukari can't open portals into 'special worlds' like the dream world." Ziden said as the aforementioned woman appeared and landed on Ziden's shoulders, covering him in her dress.

" You called?" Yukari said as Ziden stood as stiff as a board. " Um, Ziden? Why aren't you moving? Is something wrong~?" Yukari looked down and saw a pool of blood coming out of the dress as Ziden fell backwards, forcing Yukari to jump on a gap and watched as blood flowed from his nose.

" I think I saw heaven just now." Ziden said as Patchouli stomped on his face. " Ouch! What the hell was that for?!"

" Stop being a pervert for once and pay attention for once, idiot!" Patchouli yelled as Ziden got to his feet.

Youmu and Yuyuko entered the room to see a puddle of blood on the floor, Ziden with a nosebleed and Yukari laughing behind her fan. It didn't take long to figure out what happened.

" Anyway, I know how to open up a portal to the dream world so once you decide on who's going to enter the dreams of your green friend over there, let me know so I can heal off these wounds." Yuuka said as Ziden sensed something trying to sneak up on him.

" Surprise!" Ziden was grabbed into a hug by Kaguya wearing a nurse's cap as Mokou growled at the sight of her nemesis hugging Ziden.

" Hi Kaguya. Stop hugging me before I burn you." Ziden said as Kaguya released her hug and pouted.

" I think Ziden should go. Some exercise should do his body some good." Eirin suggested.

" Why? I know some exercises me and Ziden can do together that'll probably take several hours... or days at most." Yukari said as Ziden's face contorted into one of horror.

" Ew! That's sick Yukari! Shame on you!" Ziden said while pointing the Gap Youkai.

" That was a bit much Yukari." Yuyuko said as Yukari fanned her face.

" Can't blame a girl for trying, right?" Yukari asked while posing.

" Yes I can." Yukari fell facefirst onto the ground at Ziden's words. " I think I'll bring Patchouli and Youmu with me."

" Huh? Why us?" Youmu asked.

" Yeah! Why them?!" Mokou asked while rolling up her sleeves.

" Because you are too volatile, Kaguya's too airheaded, Yukari would get on my nerves and possibly try to rape me, Yuyuko... she can come but she'd better not complain about being hungry." Ziden listed off as Yukari got to her feet and pouted.

" I won't! I had a large lunch so I'm full for now!" Yuyuko said as Yuuka limped over to Luigi.

" I guess I'll keep an eye on things here." Yukari said.

" Yeah, you do that. Oh yeah, meet your granddaughter over there, blondie." Ziden pointed to Seika as Yukari smiled.

Yuuka placed her hand over Luigi's head as colorful magic radiated from it as it slowly created a cloud that was growing bigger over his head.

Ziden, Youmu, Yuyuko and Patchouli walked over to the portal as they watched it stopped growing.

" Wow. So that's a portal into the dream world, huh? Looks colorful." Ziden said as Yuuka fell back into a chair.

" Remember, this portal will lead into Luigi's dream world which is currently stuck in a state of darkness, meaning he's having a nightmare." Yuuka explained.

" That's great, that means we'll be dealing with alot of ghosts and other spooky stuff that'll get on my nerves." Ziden said while reaching into his pockets and pulled out a pair of fingerless black gloves.

" Wait. There's going to be g-g-g-ghosts in there!?" Youmu asked as Ziden nodded.

" Come now. I'm sure they won't be scary, just as long as you stay with us and don't run off and get eaten like a silly little fool!" Yuyuko merrily said as Youmu paled.

" Have fun fighting ghosts, daddy!" Seika said as Ziden waved at her.

" I will, kiddo." Ziden said as he jumped into the portal.

" \*Sigh\* Great, this is going to be a hassle." Patchouli said as she flew into the portal.

" Hurray! Lets do some dream world exploring!" Yuyuko grabbed Youmu and flew into the portal leaving everyone waiting for their allies to awaken.

" Well, I hope they succeed in this mission." Eirin said while wiping her brow.

" Is daddy going to be alright in there?" Seika asked as Kaguya walked over to them.

" Don't worry little one, he'll be fine. He's got that Half Ghost and pajama girl with him." Kaguya said as Mokou frowned.

" *Hmmm? Her personality changed. Normally she isn't this nice to me or Seika, is this her real personality showing up?*" MOKou thought as KKaguya smiled at the little girl.

Yuuka raised an eyebrow when Kirby walked into the room and spotted the dream portal. Eirin noticed the curious look in Kirby's eyes.

" Kirby, no! Stay away from that portal!" Eirin warned as Kirby jumped into the portal.

" I saw that happening. Kirby did always act on instinct. But I attribute that to him being nothing but a child, a baby if you will." Yukari said as Yuuka started to laugh.

" What? You mean that little puffball that was able to take me on and defeat me, was nothing more than a baby!?" Yuuka asked while still continuing to laugh.

" Yep, but to be honest he has fought beings whose powers could rival that of gods, so I'm not surprised he could take you on." Yukari said as Eirin raised an eyebrow.

" Really, I would have never expected such an adorable creature to take on god-like beings. Looks can be deceiving!" Eirin said while chuckling.

" Mommy? Why are all those old people laughing about something weird?" Seika asked as Mokou felt three murderous glares aimed in her direction.

" You know? I could have sworn that I heard someone call me old, just now." Yukari said with an extremely murderous tone.

" I did! Mommy said that you guys were all old hags and that I should respect you old people!" Seika said as Kaguya grabbed Seika and moved her out of the way.

" Really now? It looks like we have a mother to punish~!" Yuuka said while grabbing her parasol.

Eirin grabbed her bow and loaded it with several syringe tipped arrows and Yukari had several gaps opened around her as Mokou slowly backed away from the murderous woman.

" Uh! About that, it was Ziden who said that." Mokou lied.

" Oh please. Ziden would call us that to our face and smile like an jackass while doing it. Time for your punishment, Mokou~!" Yukari said as Mokou ran out of the room.

" After her!" The trio of women chased after the silver haired immortal.

Kaguya watched the scene played out as she remembered what happened after Ziden died to Yuuka.

Flashback...

Kirby had been standing in front of Ziden's dead body as everyone was worried for the puffball's safety.

" Oh? I was expecting the Shrine Maiden or Marisa to get involved, not this little puffball." Yuuka said as Kirby stood his ground in front of her, unintimidated of her power.

" Poyo Poyo!" Kirby mentioned to his friends and pointed to Ziden as Yuugi ran over to Ziden and brought him over to Yuyuko. Yuyuko grabbed Ziden and placed him on her lap as she frowned.

" Now that wasn't nice, I was supposed to take his body and teach him a nice little lesson when he revived. I guess I'll just have to beat the snot of you, mr. Puffball." Yuuka said while pointing the tip of her parasol at Kirby.

### **Landia Battle ( Kirby's Return to Dreamland)**

Yuuka fired a barrage of bullets that forced Kirby to run out of the way to avoid as the bullets curved to chase after him.

Kirby turned around and inhaled all of the bullets, shocking Yuuka as Kirby increased in size from the large amount of danmaku in his stomach. Kirby spat out a large yellow star that slammed into Yuuka and launched her through an abandoned building as Byakuren, Satori and Rin's jaws dropped.

" Do you think that Kirby'll win?" Sakuya asked.

" More than likely. That puffball is durable as all hell." Dante said as Yuyuko placed her hand on Ziden's chest.

Kirby walked over to the building where Yuuka was and suddenly flattened himself to dodge a Master Spark flying over his head. Several Sunflowers appeared behind Kirby and fired several green danmaku at him.

Kirby quickly ran in place as he began to suck in both the bullets and the flowers, angering Yuuka as Kirby swallowed the flowers and jumped into the air.

Several green leaves appeared around Kirby as they formed into a small tornado of leaves that slowly slammed onto Kirby's head, forming a crown of leaves that signified that he transformed into Leaf Kirby.

Of course the same four people were stunned by Kirby's new transformation as Kirby charged at Yuuka and threw several razor sharp leaves at her, slicing her arms and legs, drawing her green blood as she growled.

" You would dare to eat my plant and use them against me? I'm going to enjoy beating you senseless puffball!" Yuuka roared as giant vines broke through the ground and reached into the sky as several flowers bloomed on the vine.

Gensokyo, Past and Present ~ Flower Land ( Touhou:  
Phantasmagoria of Flower View)

The flowers began to fire salvo after salvo of colorful danmaku at Leaf Kirby.

" Leaf Tornado!" Kirby began to spin, surround himself in a hurricane of leaves as he slowly made his way towards the angered flower youkai.

Yuuka watched the danmaku, bounce off of the wall of spinning leaves harmlessly as the Flower Youkai was sucked into the tornado and was rapidly sliced by the leaves as she slammed her parasol onto Kirby, stunning him as she followed up with a powerful kick that launched Kirby into a tree, forcing him to lose his power.

Kirby got to his feet and shook himself off as he looked around for a power to absorb.

" Kirby! Inhale this!" Meiling fired a chi bullet at Kirby whom inhaled the bullet and became Fighter Kirby.

" Hmm? I've always found it weird that Fighter Kirby's attacks looks disturbing similar to mine and Ken's." Ryu said as Yukari chuckled.

" I wonder why that is~?" Yukari asked while grinning like a certain purple cat.

Kirby blocked a kick from Yuuka and delivered a flip kick to her that sent her upwards as Kirby jumped up after her.

" Vulcan Jab!" Kirby fired a rapid barrage of chi infused punches into her torso, slowly pushing her towards the ground as Kirby increased the power and speed of the attacks as Yuuka's body slammed into the ground.

Yuuka got up and fired a close range Master Spark onto Kirby, blasting him into the air as she ran to where he was to land. Yuuka slammed Kirby into the ground and proceeded to rapidly stomp Kirby into the ground.

Yuugi was about to jump into to help Kirby as Yukari stopped her from getting involved.

Yuuka looked at the crushed form of Kirby and frowned. Kirby was literally crushed into a pancake as he ran out of the hole and inflated himself back to normal.

" Great, first an opponent who could heal his wounds, now one with no bones and an elastic body. This is going to be an interesting day to say the least." Yuuka said as she dodged a spin kick from Kirby.

Kirby jumped into the air and delivered a diving kick into Yuuka's stomach stunning her as Kirby followed up with a powerful punch to her jaw.



Yuuka jumped away and stabbed her parasol into the ground, summoning a large number of thorny spears that raced towards Kirby and slammed into him, knocking him skyhigh as he lost his powerup as Xiaomu ran into the schoolhouse to look for something as Reiji followed her.

The flowers on the giant beanstalk began to fire again as Kirby ran away. Yuuka gave chase while smiling like a sadistic person chasing after a wounded animal.

Yuyuko had phased her hand through Ziden's chest and ripped Mima out of him, shocking everyone as Reimu summoned several Yin Yang orbs around her.

"Aw crap, I've been revealed to the general public! This isn't good!" Mima said in a jokative manner.

"What the hell were you doing in Ziden's body, Mima?" Reimu asked as Mima scratched her chin.

"Can't tell you that! It'll be a wonderous surprise!" Mima said as Marisa scratched her head.

"Give me one reason why I don't seal you away right now." Reimu said as Mima cackled.

"Because~! If you seal me, poor ole Ziden will have his soul sealed with me!" Mima said as Reimu clicked her teeth.

"Um, who is this ghost lady?" Sora asked.

"Hey! I'm an evil spirit, not a ghost! There's a difference, you little brat... hold on a sec. Holy cow, Reimu got herself a boyfriend, oh happy days!" Mima teased as she ducked to avoid a Yin Yang orb to the skull.

"Dammit! He's not my boyfriend you loony spirit!" Reimu yelled as Yukari chuckled.

" Well now, it looks like Yuuka is having some fun with a new opponent. I wonder if he'll do better than what Ziden did." Mima said as she slowly reentered Ziden's body, only to be stopped by Yuyuko.

" You watch yourself, ghost. The minute I find out you tried to harm Ziden, I won't hesitate to deal with you myself." Yuyuko warned as Mima faked being afraid.

" Oooo, I'm so scared! I'll be waiting for that day!" Mima said as she disappeared into Ziden's body as Xiaomu appeared with a hammer in her hand.

" Kirby! Inhale this!" Xiaomu threw the hammer towards Kirby whom inhaled it and jumped into the air.

Kirby ties a white and blue band around his head as several items appeared in his hands before a large hammer appeared in his hands.

" Oh! Hammer Kirby! One of his more heavy hitting abilities if I'm remembering correctly enough." Yukari said as Sora tried to calm Reimu down.

Kirby pulled the hammer back and slammed it into Yuuka's foot, causing her to grab her aching foot as Kirby's hammer caught on fire. " Hammer Flip!" Kirby delivered a burning uppercut to Yuuka's chest, completely shattering her ribs as everyone flinched at the sound of the impact.

Yuuka is sent flying into her giant beanstalk, crashing into it and falling facefirst onto the ground as she felt pure rage towards Kirby.

" What the hell is going on here!? How am I, Yuuka Kazami, the strongest Youkai in Gensokyo and the world, being beaten by a damned puffball!?" Yuuka angrily asked while pulling at her hair. " Kill him! Kill that little bastard!" Several sunflowers sprouted up and began firing an unholy amount of danmaku at Kirby as he increased the grip on his hammer.

" Hammer Swing!" Kirby performed a powerful spin attack that reflected all of the danmaku back at Yuuka as she was devastated by her own attacks. " Hammer Throw!" Kirby released the hammer and launched it towards Yuuka with enough force to kill an elephant as it slammed into her chest again, this time sending her through the beanstalk, toppling it over as crashed through several buildings as Kirby's Hammer Ability was lost.

Kirby was about to run over to his friends when he spots two Yuukas in the sky above him, both of them pointing their parasols at Kirby with massive amounts of magic gathering around. " Die Kirby! Dual Spark!" Both Yuukas fired a massive version of their trademark double laser as everyone panicked at the size of the attack that Yuuka fired.

" Dear gods! We are all going to die, ze!" Marisa screamed as Reisen and Tewi panicked.

" Well... we're screwed." Dante said while sitting down calmly.

" I think you should Gap us out of here, Yukari. You know, before we all get new homes in the Netherworld." Alice suggested as Yukari opened a gap and out came a large bomb like creature with a Yellow face is seen flying to Kirby as he inhaled it.

Bands of light wrapped around Kirby's head and formed a silver/golden crown with a gold star on top and an orange jewel embedded in the front as his skin became darker and his rosy cheeks became amber colored.

" Holy cow, that's a new transformation." Dante said as Yukari closed the gap.

" That's Crash Kirby, his strongest transformation." Kaguya said while mesmerized by the transformation.

Yuuka fired the Dual Spark while laughing manically as Kirby reached into his mouth and pulled out a large white orb that was

cackling with powerful energy.

Kirby focused energy into the orb as Yuuka watched her massive attack race down toward Kirby. " Lets see you stop this one, Kirby!"

Kirby finished focusing energy into the orb and released the energy in a new way that he never did before. " Supernova Spark!" Kirby fired an enormous white beam of concentrated supernovas that smashed through Yuuka's Dual Spark and swallowed her whole as the beam ripped through the clouds and passed above the moon as its inhabitants were startled by the gigantic beam.

Kirby was blasted into the sky by the recoil of the attack as Aya took flight to catch the flying Star Warrior as Yuuka burnt, unconscious body fell down in front of the group as once again, their jaws were dropped by what they just saw.

*Flashback ends...*

*Meanwhile in the Dream World...*

Ziden and the others are seen standing outside a large green mansion while it was pouring down rain.

" Just as I thought, this would be the place that Luigi's nightmares would manifest." Ziden said as everyone ran up the stairs of the mansion to avoid the rain. They entered the mansion's lobby as they see thorns on the door in front of them.

*Meanwhile in another room of the Mansion...*

A black haired woman with a long thin nose was reading a book quite throughly as she looked like she didn't know why she was here. " This is all so strange. I remember being on the Revolutionaries ship and decided to take a small nap. NOw I'm here in this weird mansion filled with ghosts. \*Sigh\* I hope Straw Hat and the others are alright after that man attacked us in Sabaody." The woman said as she heard thunder rumbling outside.

Elsewhere...

Two giant figures were seen talking to each other. One of them was Zero, the King of the Dark Matters and the other was the same cloaked man Ziden and Marisa killed in Dreamland.

" Thank you for the assistance, Zero. Because of your assistance, I am now able to trap people from across different in my nightmares." The cloaked man said as Zero chuckled.

" It is no problem. After all, we both want the same thing." Zero said as the cloaked man smiled.

" Yes, the death of Kirby!" They both chanted in unison as a large number of Dark Matter entered into a portal into the Real World.

*Author's Note: Yeah, I bet no one expected 'her' to show up in the Dream World arc. This current mini-arc will be taking place in Luigi's Mansion seeing as how it was a scary experience for him while the chars in the Real World will be dealing with the Zealots and Dark Matters as well as some other surprises. Also, if anyone gets upset that Kirby was able to beat Yuuka, please remember that Kirby is very sturdy for a puffball and he is very powerful when he access to copy abilities.*

# Luigi's Mansion 2: Weege Harder

## Main Theme ( Luigi's Mansion)

Ziden and the others were wandering around the lobby of the mansion, checking if the area is safe as they heard footsteps above them.

" It sounds like someone is above us on the second floor." Ziden pointed out.

" Gee, you think?" Patchouli replied as Ziden chuckled.

Youmu was still shivering, both from the cold and the fact that she was in a house that could be filled with ghosts.

Ziden started to sniff the air as smelled a familiar scent. " Hey Luigi!" Ziden called as he heard someone falling on the floor.

" Wow, it sounds like you scared him pretty bad." Yuyuko said as she flew up towards the second floor.

The group heard someone running down the stairs as they see a frightened Luigi scampering towards them.

" Oh thank god. Someone is here with me in this terrible place." Luigi said while still shaking.

" So this is that mansion you won in that contest you never entered, right?" Ziden asked as Luigi slowly nodded.

" Yeah, I don't remember what happened here though. All I remember is that this place is filled with ghosts!" Luigi said while turning white.

" Great, so we are going to be dealing with ghosts, this is going to be so fun." Ziden said while sighing.

" Don't worry, you've got me with you! I'll take care of any ghosts that come at us!" Yuyuko said while posing.

" Yay, we're saved." Ziden sarcastically said while walking up the stairs.

" There's no reason to be scared. All you've got to do is be strong, Youmu!" Youmu said to herself as a way to boost her courage.

" Oh right, I forgot she's afraid of ghosts." Patchouli said as Yuyuko chuckled.

" That just makes it so much fun to scare her!" Yuyuko said as Ziden frowned.

" Shame on you, Yuyuko. Picking on a poor girl's phobia like that! For shame. For shame." Ziden said while standing next to Youmu.

" But she shouldn't be afraid of ghosts because she is a half-ghost." Yuyuko said as Ziden appeared next to her.

" What's wrong with you?! How are you afraid of ghosts when you are a Half Ghost?! That makes no sense!" Ziden said as Youmu sweatdropped.

" Ghosts can be very scary, its not my fault I can't handle being around ghosts that aren't Lady Yuyuko!" Youmu defended herself as everyone stood in front of a double door that was locked.

" Thats sad in a way but anyway, lets open this door and find out where the culprit is for this nightmare is at." Ziden said as he tried to kick the door down, only for it to cave inwards and burst outwards, slamming into Ziden's chest and sending him flying into the chandelier behind them.

" That's not normal. Not at all." Patchouli said as she watched Ziden dangle from the chandelier.

" Yeah, doors aren't supposed to do that." Youmu said as she heard laughing coming inside the room.

" \*gulp\* You can do this Luigi. You're a brave plumber!" Luigi reached into his pocket and pulled out a golden key and placed it in the lock. He turned the key and slowly opened the door as the group minus Ziden entered the Parlor of the Haunted Mansion.

Luigi slowly made his way into the center of the room as a gold colored ghost appeared in front of him and scared him. Luigi fell on his behind and scooted backwards as the ghost advanced towards him.

" Hold on there youngster! I've got ya!" Everyone turned to see a tiny old man with a red vacuum cleaner on his back started to suck in the ghost attacking Luigi. The old man was being dragged around the room as the ghost struggled to get away. The ghost turned around and delivered an uppercut to the old man, freeing it from the vacuum as the old man straightened his spiral glasses.

" Hey, are you alright mister?" Youmu asked while helping the man to his feet.

" I'm fine, just a little dinged up from that ghost. I'm not as spry as I used to be." The old man said.

" Why are you here? And what is that device on your back?" Patchouli asked.

" Ah, that's a good question missy. Well the reason I'm here is-" The old man was interrupted by several Gold Ghosts appearing and forming a wall while moving towards the group. " Uh oh! Your answer is going to have to wait! We need to get out of here!" The old man urged everyone to follow him as they escaped the mansion and entered an underground lab.

Patchouli had trouble catching her breath from the brief sprint as the old man chuckled.



" Whew, that was close. A moment later and those ghosts would have gotten us." Luigi said as he wiped his brow. " Who are you anyway?"

" Me? I am Professor E. Gadd, a researcher whom is trying to discover the secrets of ghosts!" E. Gadd introduced as everyone introduced themselves to him and explained the reason why they were in the mansion. " Hmm? We're in a nightmare and you're looking for the source of it to free your friends from the Dream World that we're currently in? Hahaahaha, it looks like this mansion was holding more secrets than I expected it to."

" I'm surprised that you're taking this so well. Most people reject such a story like this." Patchouli said.

" Meh, if I'm a figment of this young'uns dream, that means I'll have to help you navigate this mansion." E Gadd said while smiling. " Well, Luigi, you should be the one to use this to capture ghosts that interfere with your goal." The Professor handed Luigi the vacuum cleaner he was using earlier. The vacuum cleaner was red and was similar to a backpack and was very light weight. " This is the poltergeist 3000, a device I created to capture ghosts!"

Yuyuko backed away from Luigi whom was putting on the device and fixed it into place as Youmu noticed someone missing.

" Uh guys? I think we forgot someone." A faint outline of Ziden appeared next to Patchouli as everyone facepalmed.

" How in the world did we forget him back at the mansion?" Patchouli asked as everyone shrugged.

" Well if you're going back into that mansion, then take this Gameboy Horror with you so you can see the layout of the mansion and I can keep an eye on your progress in the Mansion." E. Gadd handed the Gameboy Horror to Luigi as the group headed back to the Mansion's front doors.

" You guys ready for this?" Yuyuko asked as everyone nodded.

Luigi opened the door and shined his flashlight into the foyer as they slowly entered the foyer, being wary of his surroundings.

" Ziden! Where are you!?" Yuyuko yelled as they hear someone's throat being cleared as they see Ziden still hanging from the chandelier, with Kirby sitting on his back.

" Way to leave me behind guys." Ziden sarcastically said.

" Oh be quiet. You shouldn't have tried to kick down a door in a haunted house." Patchouli snapped back.

" Why is Kirby here?" Yuyuko asked as Kirby jumped into her arms and snuggled against her chest.

Ziden tried to roll off of the chandelier, only to clumsily fall off of the hanging object and land facefirst onto the floor.

" Ow, my face." Ziden said while still lying on the ground.

" Get up. We have a job to do right now." Patchouli kicked Ziden in the ribs, forcing him up on his feet while rubbing his aching ribs.

" Jeez, for a bookworm, you still hit harder than you should." Ziden said as Patchouli floated up the stairs.

" Or it could be the fact your defense is terrible." Patchouli retorted as Ziden and Youmu jumped up to the second floor. Yuyuko flew to the second floor with Luigi running up the stairs, shining his flashlight to light up the dark room.

They reached the door to the Parlor as Ziden cracked his gloved knuckles. " Alright, ghosts are a bit tricky to deal because of their intangibility so use magic based attacks to harm them or let Luigi suck them up with his vacuum thingy." Ziden explained as he grabbed the door knob and opened the door as everyone entered the room and took battle stances as nothing happened.

Everyone waited for something to happen as Kirby walked up to the candles on a stand and blew them out.

An eerie feeling envelops the room as a eerie voice entered the room. " Who dares to turn out the lights!?"

" Was it you punks that did it!?" Another voice asked.

" Don't you know that terrible things happen in the dark?" A female voice asked as Luigi and Youmu hid behind Patchouli.

" I think you punks need to learn the terror of true darkness!" Ziden slammed his fist into his palm as several Gold Ghosts appeared around the group.

Ziden delivered a powerful palm to a ghost, sending it flying into a wall as he followed up with a burning jump kick, setting the ghost ablaze.

Yuyuko summoned several ghosts that slammed into the ghosts and sent them flying around the room as Patchouli blasted the ghosts with fire.

Youmu proceeded to hide under the table with Luigi right next to her, shivering in fear.

Ziden ducked under a punch aimed for his face and delivered a powerful kick to its stomach as the creature exploded into orange dust as Ziden sighed.

" That was fun, I guess." Ziden said as he yawned.

There was now a dead silence in the room as the room lit up and a blue treasure chest appeared in front of them.

Ziden used his keyblade and opened the chest to obtain a golden key as Youmu and Luigi crawled from under the table. " My gods, are you two that afraid of ghosts?" Yuyuko asked as they both nodded.

" And we're inside a house filled to the brim with them. You guys seriously need to get over this little fear of yours." Patchouli said as she floated over to the door to the next room.

Youmu and Luigi both looked down as Patchouli unlocked the door and slowly opened it. Kirby dashed through the door and past Patchouli as the others raced into the room and discovered that it was dark like the previous room.

" So it seems that these rooms are all dark, maybe we need to deal with the ghosts inside of them to light them up." Patchouli observed.

" Or the other enemies inside of them." Ziden said while tapping his keyblade on his shoulder.

In the Antechamber they were in was soon infested with Shadow and Large Body Heartless. " Heartless? In the dream world? That's not good." Ziden said while rolling out of the way of a belly charge from a Large Body.

" Indeed, but atleast we don't have to deal with ghosts right now." Luigi said while jumping to avoid a Shadow trying slice his chest.

Youmu dashed over to the Shadow that attacked Luigi and delivered a cross slash to its chest and kicked it into the wall, destroying it.

Ziden smelt something he loved inside one of the drawers in this room, but ignored it as he jumped over a Large Body and struck it across the back with three strong blows, knocking it into the air as he gripped the keyblade with the both of his hands and slammed it into the Large Body's back, blasting it into Munny and Health orbs.

Kirby was unable to inhale any of the enemies as he ran over to Yuyuko and waved his arms up and down in an attempt to get her attention. She did not notice him, however, Patchouli did notice and fired a metal blade as he inhaled it and became Cutter Kirby once again.

Kirby threw several of his yellow blades at the Shadows, easily slicing them apart with how weak they are.

Patchouli pointed her finger at a Large Body that was behind Ziden. "Summer Red." A fireball flew over Ziden's head and slammed into the Heartless' stomach, covering it in flames as Luigi slammed his hammer into its head.

Yuyuko was just sitting back, watching her much younger peers deal with the Heartless while she relaxed herself with a cup of tea.

Ziden watched as the last Heartless was taken out by Luigi's hammer strike and watched as the room's lights turned on as he ran to the dressers.

"Ziden? What are you doing?" Patchouli asked as Ziden opened the dressers as a large amount of green dollar bills flew out. Ziden quickly ran around to grab the money and stuff them into his pockets as everyone looked at him strangely.

"Money~! Money~! Money~!" Ziden sang while whistling and stuffing more money his pockets.

"Oh my, he must sensed that treasure in that dresser. \*Sigh\* Looks like Ziden is still as greedy as ever." Yuyuko said as Patchouli grabbed his ear and dragged him into the next room as everyone sweatdropped.

"Looks like he has weird moments as well." Youmu said as Luigi laughed.

"Every moment with Ziden is weird, the same with Yukari." Luigi said while wiping a tear from his eye.

"*Yukari... Should I tell Ziden about what she has planned for him?*" Yuyuko wondered as Kirby ran into the other room, spotting the duo talking in the next room which is the Wardrobe Room. More like

Patchouli was yelling at Ziden and stopped when she spotted the group entering the room.

" We'll this talk later, Ziden. For now we have a job to do." Patchouli said as the door closed behind them.

" If ghosts appear in this room, you two are to stand and fight. If you run from this fight, I'll beat you both and make you really fear ghosts." Yuyuko said in an extremely dark tone. Youmu and Luigi both swallowed hard as they nodded.

Ziden felt a chill run down his spine when he heard Yuyuko's words to his allies. " Jeez, I didn't know that Yuyuko could be scary, or serious." Ziden said under his breath as he walked over to a Wardrobe and opened it, revealing a blue ghost that back to fly around at extremely fast speeds as Luigi sucked down his fear and flashed the ghost with his flashlight, then proceeded to suck in the ghost as it dragged him across the room, only for Luigi to start pulling back as the ghost was sucked into the vacuum and exploded into bills and gold bars.

Ziden saw the money and leapt towards it, quickly filling his pockets with money he could use later to pay his 'necessities'.

Several more Gold Ghosts appeared with a purple, lanky ghost and a green, ghostly garbage can.

" New ghosts? At least there's a variety to keep things interesting." Ziden said as Youmu knees began to shake.

" I can do this, I have to deal with my fears of ghosts, for Lady Yuyuko's sake!" Youmu unsheathed her swords and charged at a Gold Ghost. The Ghost grabbed the corners of its mouth and shot out its tongue, rapidly licking Youmu's face as she dropped her swords and shook violently as he faced turned white. " Kyaaaaaahhhhhhhhhh!" Youmu released an extremely loud scream that shattered several of the characters' eardrums and the mirror that

was in the room as she ran out of the room, barreling through Luigi and sending him flying into the ceiling.

" Mama mia." Luigi uttered while remaining stuck in the ceiling.

" Holy flying cow. That's no small fear, that's a full blown phobia." Ziden observed while punching a Gold Ghost in the face.

" Great so now we have to find her after we're done here? Wonderful." Patchouli said as she watched Kirby slice a Gold Ghost in half as she blasted a Purple Puncher with a ball of water, stunning it as Yuyuko slapped it with her fans.

Ziden focused on the Garbage Can Ghost that was throwing banana peels all over the places Ziden delivered a burning kick to the ghost's stomach and knocking it into the air as Yuyuko summoned several butterflies to attack the airborne ghost as Patchouli summoned a whip of fire to her hand and swung it at the the other Garbage Can ghost, setting it ablaze and burning it into ghost ashes as Patchouli sighed.

The Lights turned on as a key appeared on a shelf above a wardrobe as Patchouli grabbed it and floated down next to Ziden and Yuyuko as she ran her hand through her hair. " Come on, lets grab Luigi and find Youmu before we find the door that this goes. to" Patchouli decided to stop floating and walked towards the door, unaware of the banana peel in front of her. " \*Slip\* Gahhhh!" Patchouli went airborne for a few seconds before she slammed headfirst onto the ground, flipping over as she landed on her stomach. " Mukyu~!"

" Hahahaahahahahha!" Ziden burst into laughter at sight as Yuyuko could barely contain her laughter as she too joined in the fun.

" Huh? What's going on down there? What's so funny?" Luigi asked while kicking his legs rapidly in an attempt to get down.

Ziden continued to laugh while jumping up and pulling on Luigi's legs, slowly but surely pulling him out of the ceiling as Luigi landed on his feet. Patchouli's face was red with embarrassment as Yuyuko continued to laugh uncontrollably.

Ziden helped Patchouli to her feet and he dusted her clothes off as he snuck a hand on her chest and groped it hard. " Gah! You perv!" Patchouli slapped Ziden across the face as he smirked.

" Totally worth it to feel those wonderful pillows~!" Ziden said while spinning around her.

Luigi walked over to the door to the Anteroom and looked at a map of the mansion on the Gameboy Horror to see where the key goes. " Guys! That key we got goes to the door next to the

Parlor!" Luigi said as Ziden ran through the door, avoiding several large beams of water aimed at him by Patchouli.

Patchouli flew through the door as Yuyuko and Luigi calmly followed after them and entered the Parlor as they saw a table shaking.

Ziden walked over to it and ripped off the cloth and saw Youmu hiding under the table.

" It licked me! The scary ghost licked me!" Youmu was frightened as Yuyuko appeared next to her and patted her on the back.

" Its okay, Youmu. I won't let any mean ghosts bully my Gardener." Yuyuko grabbed Youmu into a hug as Ziden and Patchouli left the group and headed to that locked door that Luigi pointed out as Kirby followed after them.

Ziden unlocked the door as they entered a hallway that was more than likely the area where the bedrooms are. Ziden felt a living presence from behind the door next to them as he unsheathed Crimson Edge and slowly opened the door as he sensed the person getting up from a chair.



Ziden jumped into the room as he tumbled over a desk and slammed facefirst into the bookshelf.

" I knew that was going to happen." Patchouli said aloud as she entered the room and saw a woman with a shocked expression on her face.

" Who are you?" The woman crossed her arms across her chest and took a stance.

" Ah, you must be someone whom got dragged in here from another world." Ziden said as he got up.

" Another world? What do you mean?" The woman asked.

" The Dream World is connected between worlds and you've been snatched from your Dream World and into Luigi's." Ziden explained.

" I see, this is quite the situation I've gotten myself into." The woman wondered. " But enough of that, who are you guys anyway?"

" I'm Ziden Icrim, Legendary Hero of the Eternal Flames." Ziden introduced while bowing.

" I'm Patchouli Knowledge, Magician of the Scarlet Devil Manor." Patchouli introduced herself as Kirby jumped onto the desk in front of the woman.

" Poyo!" Kirby 'introduced' himself as the woman giggled.

" How cute. I'm Nico Robin, Archeologist of the Straw Hat Pirates." Robin introduced herself as Ziden and Patchouli raised an eyebrow.

" Straw Hat Pirates?" The duo asked in unison.

" Yes, I belong to a group of people whom are pirates but we aren't wicked like the other people of our world." Robin explained.

" On your world, are there mysterious fruit that give people superpowers?" Patchouli asked as Robin raised an eyebrow.

" How did you-"

" We've encountered a man whom had the powers of ice and referred to himself as a Marine Admiral." Ziden explained as Robin's eyes widened.

" I see. Why would the Marines... wait, I remember now. You have a bounty back on my world worth 75,000,000 Berries." Robin said as Ziden sighed.

" That ice guy was a pain in the ass, that clone sure doesn't know how to fight ice users." Ziden said while sighing... again.

" Why would the Marines go so far to deal with Ziden, Remilia and Yukari?" Patchouli wondered.

" More than likely, they're doing it because they live to uphold justice. They'll chase down a pirate or criminal to the ends of my world if he or she is a big enough threat." Robin explained as Ziden sheathed his sword.

" Whatever, if these Marines want to come after me, then they can bring it! I've taken on Gods, Ancient Constructs, Lords of Terror, Eldritch Abominations and Planet sized Monsters! I ain't afraid of no jackasses in sailor outfits coming after me! Hahahahahha!" Ziden boasted while laughing.

" Well, Mr. Hero, even if you did fight all of those things, you shouldn't underestimate any of them. They are Logia types, after all." Robin said as Patchouli smirked.

" Well its a good that I know Magic so that I may help with those Logia types." Patchouli said as Robin raised an eyebrow.

" Magic exists on your world?" Robin asked.

" Yep. Although there are some people who are writing off Magic as unexplained Science." Ziden said as Kirby sneezed.

" Well now, I know that one of my friends don't believe in magic, she's not as open minded as the rest of us." Robin said as Kirby sneezed again.

" Meh, no one can change the way certain people think, no matter how hard they try." Ziden said as he noticed that the room was lit.

" Perhaps we should team up and find a way to escape this Mansion." Robin suggested as Ziden and Patchouli huddled up.

" Do you think we can trust her?" Patchouli asked.

" She knows about those guys attacking us. Plus she doesn't seem dangerous, we might as well take her with us." Ziden said as Patchouli frowned.

" Fine, but you don't you try flirting with her." Patchouli warned as Ziden feigned shock.

" Why, I would never do such a thing in front of you." Ziden said while pinching her face.

" Knock it off!" Patchouli said while slapping his hands away.

*" Those two are very weird, much like the Straw Hats. How in the world did these guys repel Aokiji's assault, perhaps I'll learn about it by working alongside them."* Robin thought as the duo turned towards her.

" Very well, Miss Robin. We have decided that it would be in our best interest to have you come with us." Patchouli said as Ziden examined her clothing.

Robin wore a black outfit consisting of a cowboy hat, a cleavage-revealing sleeveless shirt, with a wide, yellow collar covered with black concentric circle motifs, matching pants reaching down to her

calves, and purple high-heeled Mary Janes. She also had a string of round and yellow ornaments that hung loosely from around her waist.

" *She seems to like showing off her body.*" Ziden observed as Kirby sneezed again.

" Achooo!" Ziden sneezed out another ball of fire as Patchouli stepped out of the way. Robin was shocked when she saw a fireball came out of his mouth as he noticed that Kirby and Ziden were having a sneezing fit.

" Hmm? What's going on? Why are you two sneezing so much?" Robin asked as she felt something tickling her nose.

Ziden was able to stop himself from sneezing as he smelled the air and looked confused. " Why the hell is there sand in the air?" Ziden asked as Robin looked confused.

" Sand? Why would that... wait, could it be? No but why would he be here?" Robin thought to herself for a while.

" Ziden? Do you think think that this being that has the Smashers trapped in the Dream World, could be trapping people from other worlds in this Dream World?" Patchouli asked.

" Yeah, he could, that would explain why Robin is here. She not be the only person to be sucked into Luigi's nightmares." Ziden said as Patchouli cupped her chin.

" But why would this being go through all this trouble though?" Patchouli asked.

" More than likely, he's draining these peoples power and adding them to his own, making him stronger." Ziden said as Kirby sneezed again.

" Who is this being that you guys are talking about?" Robin asked.

" Well, I believe it to be Nightmare." Ziden said as Patchouli raised an eyebrow.

" Nightmare?" Patchouli asked.

" Yeah, Nightmare. He ran a company that delivered demon beasts to people who paid high enough money to purchase them. He also had the ability to trap people in dreams and force to relive their most terrifying nightmares and grew stronger the longer that person was trapped within that dream. Kirby ended up defeating him during the Dreamland invasion during the last Ultima Brigade war, then me, Marisa and Yukari killed him on Dreamland a few days ago." Ziden explained as Kirby jumped onto Patchouli's head.

" That little guy defeated the creature trapped us here?" Robin asked as Ziden nodded.

" Yeah, but Nightmare is a real pain to deal with. But at least this Nightmare isn't as disturbing as the other Nightmare we encountered later in the journey." Ziden shuddered when he remembered what that other Nightmare looked like.

" Well, if this Nightmare person is capable of dragging people into the realm of dreams, then he more than likely trapped several powerful people from other worlds in order to stop you guys from stopping him again." Robin deduced as Ziden and Patchouli raised an eyebrow.

" How'd you figure that out so fast?" Ziden asked.

" Well, its common sense. He'd obviously get stronger foes to stop your progress in this Dream World, preventing you from going forward, so he more than likely dragged in some foes from our past." Robin explained as Ziden sighed.

" Great, that means that this will take alot longer than I thought it would, I'll have to do something about this later." Ziden said as he heard footsteps coming from the hallway.

The door opened as Yuyuko, Youmu and Luigi entered the lit room and saw Ziden and Patchouli talking to an unknown woman.

" Hey there, guys. About time you got here." Patchouli said as Yuyuko walked over to Ziden.

" Come here for a sec, Ziden. I've got something important to tell you. Very Important~!" Ziden noticed the serious tone in Yuyuko voice as she walked over to the door and opened it. Ziden followed her out of the room as Youmu and Luigi introduced themselves to Robin.

" So, do you think that a Devil Fruit user is behind this sandy air?" Patchouli asked.

" Yes, more than likely. That man was a former Warlord of the Sea, whom are seven powerful pirates that work for the World Government. They are not to be taken lightly." Robin explained.

" How powerful are we talking about here?" Luigi asked.

" They are strong enough to possibly fight an Admiral on even ground." Robin said as Luigi panicked.

" Oh no! I saw what that Ice Guy did to Ziden and the others! What are we going to do!? My *I-can't-fight-killer-super-pirates* disease is acting up!" Luigi exclaimed.

" \*giggles\* You remind me of Mr. Long Nose, Mr. Plumber." Robin said as Luigi still continued to panic.

" Calm down, Luigi. We'll be able to handle this guy, we've got numbers on our side and we can deal with him." Patchouli said as Youmu patted Luigi on the back.

Ziden and Yuyuko entered the room with the former looking pale and scared for his life before he recovered to save face.

" Wait, if this room is lit, then there should have been a key in a chest that appeared." Patchouli looked around and saw an unopened blue chest in the room. Patchouli crouched down and opened the chest, obtaining a key as everyone entered the hallway.

Luigi looked at the map on the Gameboy Horror and saw that the door at the end of the hallway had the key icon above the door. Patchouli floated over to the door and unlocked it as she entered and fell backwards when she saw who was in the room.

Ziden and Youmu ran over to Patchouli and looked into the room and were shocked with what they saw in the room. In the bedroom, asleep on the bed was Terra, minus the hole in her stomach.

Ziden and Youmu immediately ran to their ally, only to be pushed back by a shadowy arm that came from under the bed.

Robin looked at the shadow arm as it seemed very familiar to her. Ziden continued to try and to reach Terra as the arm continued to stop Ziden's attempts.

" Damned arm. We can't get near Terra as long as that arm is blocking our way. What a pain." Ziden said while scratching his head.

" Great, so Terra is trapped in here too? Well at least we know she's alright." Youmu said as they noticed that this room is lit.

" At least we don't have to do any form of fighting right." Patchouli said as Ziden sighed.

" That what sucks, I feel like having a wonderful brawl with a strong opponent right now." Ziden said while sighing.

" Well now, Mr. Hero, I have a feeling that your wish is going to be granted soon." Robin said as she opened another blue chest, obtaining yet another key as they left the room, making a mental note to return for Terra as they entered the hallway again.

They saw that the door across from them was able to be unlocked as they approached the door.

Ziden felt a strange energy coming from behind, almost as if a portal to a new area was behind this door. Robin unlocked the door and opened it as she saw a large spinning vortex behind it.

" I knew I sensed a portal in this place." Ziden said as Kirby jumped into the portal without a second thought.

" Kirby! Wait for us!" Luigi jumped into the with Youmu following him.

Yuyuko floated her way into the portal as Ziden bowed down, motioning for Patchouli and Robin to pass through it as they both walked to it.

" How very gentleman-like of you, Mr. Hero." Robin said as she jumped into the portal.

" Whatever, Ziden. Let's go." Patchouli said while dragging him through the portal by his ear.

After a few seconds of being sucked through a portal, they found themselves in a desert location.

" So where are we now?" Ziden asked.

" I have no idea. It seems to be desert of some sort." Yuyuko said as Ziden looked into the sky and saw that the clouds had eyes.

" I think we're somewhere in the Mushroom Kingdom." Youmu said.

" Naw, we're on some other world that has clouds with eyes." Patchouli sarcastically said.

" It doesn't matter where we are, this place shall be your graves!" Everyone turned to see a man with a golden hook walking towards them.



Ziden smirked when he saw this man. " Alright! Now I'm going to get a good ole fashioned brawl! I'm going to paint these sands red with your blood!" Ziden yelled as the man's body turned to sand and charged toward him.

*Elsewhere in the Mansion...*

A boy with spiky brown hair, wielding a blue and gold bow and had tiny wings was walking down the hallway of the Mansion looking completely lost. " Lady Palutena! Where are you!?" The boy was looking for someone as said person was also searching for the boy.

" Pit! Where in the world did you go!?" Palutena yelled as she ran around frantically.

*Somewhere deeper in the Mansion...*

A red haired woman wearing armor had just slashed through an unknown Heartless wielding a shield with a dog's face on it as more of them appeared. " Damn. These things just keep appearing and holding me up from getting to Natsu and the others. I hope they are alright within this ghost ridden mansion."

*Author's Note: Oh yes, I bet no expected for this Arc to have so many cameos in it did you? Don't worry, some of these cameos are planned to be a part of the Illusionary Heroes and explore the worlds with them. This arc is going to be special because its going to alternate between Ziden's story in the Dream World and Sora's Story in the real world. Meaning the next chapter is going to be Sora and Reimu focused. See you next time kiddos!*

## Lunarians and The Impure Gem of Mystery

Sora and Reimu are seen watching Ziden and the others progress through the Haunted Mansion as Sora worried about Donald and Goofy whom was trapped within Luigi's dreams.

" Calm down, Sora. They'll break this spell on the Smashers and get them out of the Dream World in no time." Reimu said while patting Sora on the back.

" Thanks Reimu, you're a good friend." Sora said as Reimu shrugged.

" I guess, after all, most of my friends are people I've beaten in the past." Reimu said as Sora chuckled.

" Well, me and you are friends but I beat you and we become really good friends because of that." Sora said while smiling as Reimu laughed.

" Oh please, I wasn't even getting serious with you Sora! If I was, you'd unconscious and I'd be sitting next to you, waiting for you wake up." Reimu said as Sora stood up and struck his signature pose.

" Heh heh! I was holding back too you know. I didn't want to beat you up, too badly." Sora bragged as Reimu smirked.

" Looks like we'll have to have a rematch in the future, now don't we?" Reimu asked as Sora nodded.

" Aww! Its nice to see the lovebirds having a tender little moment by themselves, ze!" Marisa teased while walking into the room as Reimu shot her a glare.

" Shut up, Marisa. Me and Sora are 'just' friends, thats all!" Reimu declared.

" I dunno, you told me yourself you'd like to get know him better, ze!" Marisa continued to tease as she ducked an amulet aimed at her head.

" Dammit Marisa! That was supposed to be a secret between you and me!" Reimu yelled as Luigi began to mumble in his sleep, startling the trio.

Sora walked over to Luigi and began poking and prodding his face as Luigi continued to sleep.

" That was weird." Sora said as he walked away.

" I didn't know that Luigi sleep talked." Reimu noticed as Luigi continued to sleep talk in Italian.

" He's talking in Italian though. I wonder what he is saying though, I wish I took that Italian class back in school." Sora said while scratching his head.

" Wait, you're from this world?" Reimu asked out of nowhere.

" Yeah, the Islands where I live on are near Japan. I thought I told you guys that." Sora said as Reimu shrugged.

" If you told us, I sure don't remember it." Reimu said while tapping her gohei on her shoulder.

" I don't remember it either, ze. Maybe you thought you told us, but you didn't tell us at all." Marisa said while sitting down in a chair.

" Hmm. Maybe I didn't tell you guys that, I could have sworn I did." Sora thought while scratching his head.

" Oh yeah, didn't you get some new keyblade from Olympus Coliseum and that black and white place?" Marisa asked.

" Yeah, I did! Hold on a sec." Sora held out his hand and summoned the Keyblade he got from defeating the Hydra. The blade, hand

guard, and tip are similar to Greek Ionic architecture. The teeth seem to take the form of a star and the keychain was the Olympus Stone. " Its called the Hero's Crest and it boosts the amount of damage I can do in the air relative to the number of hits I do." Sora explained as he desummoned Hero's Crest. He summoned his other Keyblade.

The Keyblade's guard is a lifesaver float while the blade is a steamboat stack. The Keychain is a ship's wheel, possibly that of the Steamboat Willie. The teeth also resemble the steam whistles from Steamboat Willie. It should be noted that it was completely grey. " This is the Monochrome, it doesn't do anything besides boost the effectiveness of healing items." Sora explained as he desummoned the Monochrome.

" I wish I had a Keyblade. Think of all the crazy magical attacks I could do, ze!" Marisa imagined what it would be like, being able to use Keyblade.

" I guess you would be blasting every fairy you see if you had one." Reimu said as Marisa.

" You're damn right, ze! Take that, you flying cannon fodder!" Marisa said while swinging her broom around, forcing Sora and Reimu to duck while Marisa began to swing her broom around madly.

" Mama Kaguya? Why is that Lady trying to attack the air?" Seika asked.

" I don't know. Maybe she's trying to clean the air with that broom." Kaguya suggested as Marisa got chopped on the head with Reimu's gohei.

" Jeez Marisa, you need to calm down some, I mean seriously. Why do you want a Keyblade so badly anyway?" Reimu asked.

" \*Sigh\* You wouldn't understand Reimu, I can tell that those Keyblades are filled with powerful magic that can be tapped into

without any risk of becoming all weak and frail like Patchouli." Marisa explained as Reimu nodded.

" That does make a little sense, I guess." Reimu said as Sora walked over to the door.

" That's why I'm going to figure out how to get one, ze. Maybe one of Patchy's books mentions the Keyblade." Marisa wondered.

" I highly doubt that, Marisa." Marisa turned and saw Alice entering the room with Shanghai and Hourai floating above her shoulders. " After all, she would have more than likely remembered about it, if she had read about it."

" That's true, I mean she seems really smart." Sora said as Reimu sighed.

" Yep, she's so smart, she fell for a bloodthirsty idiot with spiky hair and has him trained like a beaten dog." Reimu said as the aforementioned man and woman sneezed.

" I guess living in a Library alone for so long made her really desperate for someone in her life." Alice said.

" Isn't this the kind of thing that Byakuren would like to see?" Reimu asked.

" Yep, a Youkai and a Human in a relationship like that, she'd certainly be happy to see that. A wedding between those two would more than likely warm up Human-Youkai relations in Gensokyo." Alice added.

Speak of the devil, the Youkai that they were talking about entered the room with Eirin following behind her. Byakuren sat down and looked at the large screen that was in the room as they see Patchouli and the others running out of the mansion and leaving Ziden hanging on the chandelier.

" I guess that place is indeed haunted. It looks like Youmu is going to have trouble there." Reimu said as Sora scratched his head.

" Why would that be a problem for her? She looks like she could fight off anything that comes her way." Sora wondered.

" She's afraid of ghosts. I know that because when Yuyuko and Youmu came to our temple for a party and she fell victim to a prank from Nue, which involved various things. Bugs, Snakes, Monsters, none of them worked until Nue transformed into a ghost and frightened poor Youmu out of the temple." Byakuren explained.

" Hmm. That explains why she was so jittery while we were in the Underworld." Sora realized as Marisa laughed.

" That's hilarious, ze!" Marisa laughed.

" That's not nice to laugh at someone's fear, Marisa." Sora said as Marisa shrugged.

" Its even more funny when you know that she's half a ghost, ze!" Marisa said before laughing again.

" That is very ironic, by the way." Alice added.

" Hm, like if Ziden was Pryophobic?" Byakuren asked.

" Yep, exactly like that!" Reimu said while laughing as well.

" I'm glad you guys are having such a riveting conversation around my injured patients." Eirin interrupted as Marisa snorted.

" I wouldn't count them being trapped in the dream world an injury, more of a predicament." Alice said as Eirin sighed.

" Whatever, I don't know why someone trapped these guys in the Dream World, but they must have done it in order to halt our progress." Eirin said as Kaguya sneezed.

" Possibly, the Ultima Brigade must have planned for this to happen when we returned." Alice said.

" I don't think so, I think it could be those Rulers of Darkness that are after us." Kaguya added.

" What exactly are the Rulers of Darkness' goal anyway? We know that the Ultima Brigade's goal is to destroy this Universe and create a new one where they are all praised as Gods, but what do the Rulers of Darkness want?" Reimu wondered.

" Who knows, but I know they want us dead, I know that much." Eirin said.

" \*Sigh\* Well at least I'm getting some much needed money for my Donation Box, it sucks that Gensokyo got invaded though." Reimu said.

" Didn't Yukari ask you to do something for her awhile ago?" Sora asked.

" Yeah, she wanted me to apply some more seals on the Saigyou Ayakashi. I told it wasn't necessary because nothing would be able to break through those seals." Reimu declared as Sora thought for a second.

" Maybe Yukari had a good reason for asking you to do that." Sora said as Reimu shook her head.

" Doubt it. Besides, I was exhausted when I first applied those seals to the Saigyou Ayakashi and I didn't recover my strength until a week later." Reimu said as Marisa laughed.

" Yeah, ze! She was bedridden for the entire time!" Marisa added as Reimu sighed. She was about to say something when Reisen ran into the room, looking frantic as she ran over to Eirin.

" This is bad, they found us Lady Eirin!" Reisen looked frantic as two women entered the room and shocked Eirin off of her feet.

Reimu and Marisa both frowned when they saw the women walking towards Eirin and completely ignored the duo. Sora noticed the glare that the two girls were receiving and wondered why they were getting said glares.

" Oh? Its Yorihome and Toyohime! They came to visit us!" Kaguya happily said as she slowly remembered something important. " Uh-oh."

Toyohime has long, flowing, sandy blonde hair and golden eyes. Wears a dark blue dress with a strap on the left over a white long-sleeved blouse, a loose belt with a gold mirror-shaped buckle, and a white bonnet with a red ribbon on it.

Yorihome has light blue hair tied into a ponytail with a yellow ribbon; brown eyes. Wears a dark red dress with a strap on the right over a white short-sleeved blouse, and a loose belt with a gold sword-shaped buckle.

" Please calm yourself teacher. We did not come here to take you back to the Lunar Capital." Yorihome explained as Toyohime stepped forward.

" We're here to investigate that large beam of light that came from this area, several Lunarian nobles are worried that the Earth has a weapon to attack the Capital and will use it exterminate us." Toyohime explained as Eirin got to her feet.

" Don't worry, this place has no such weapon, that was just an attack Kirby launched into space." Eirin explained.

" Kirby?" Toyohime tilted her head at the mysterious name.

" A friend of ours whom is helping with our mission." Eirin explained Yorihome approached the large screen and saw Ziden fighting off



several Heartless.

" What is Lady Icrim's son fighting off weird darkness creatures on this screen?" Yorihome asked.

" Those dark creatures are Heartless." Sora said as the sisters turned and looked at him.

" Heartless?" The sisters asked in unison as Sora explained how a Heartless was created.

" So what you're saying is, that in every heart there is Darkness? That's crazy." Toyohime said while rubbing her temples.

Yorihome walked around Sora while examining him, making him feel uncomfortable.

" Well you guys found out what that laser was, so why don't you guys beat it and head back to the Moon?" Reimu said as Yorihome chuckled.

" Are you still sore about your stinging defeat at my hand, little Shrine Maiden?" Yorihome taunted as Reimu summoned several amulets around her.

" Hey, hold on a second, Reimu! You two can't fight in here!" Sora jumped in between the girls.

" It wouldn't been much of a fight anyway." Yorihome said as Reimu growled and pushed Sora out of the way.

" Whoa, I come to the Infirmary to check up on the Smashers and I get to see a Catfight, awesome!" Everyone turned to see Dante entering the room. " Gensokyo is just my kind of place if this kind of stuff happens daily."

" Hey, didn't you need Reimu's help to clear your own name, ze?" Marisa asked.

" And for that I am grateful. But we are here for something else, we came here to see Lady Icrim about something." Toyohime stated as Dante raised an eyebrow.

" You're here to Spikes' old lady?" Dante asked.

" Spikes?" Yorihome looked confused at the name.

" He means Ziden, sister." Toyohime stated as Yorihome frowned.

" Ah, him." Yorihome obviously didn't like Ziden for some reason.

" So why do you need to see Ziden's mother for anyway and why are you referring to her as 'Lady' anyway?" Eirin asked.

" Lady Icrim is a Shrine Maiden of the Isle of Hope whom has Lord Tsukuyomi as one of her three patron gods, and she has taken care of Lunarians whom have been spirited to Earth by unknown forces. For those reasons and for another reason, we respect her enough to refer to her as Lady Icrim." Yorihome explained as Dante raised an eyebrow.

" Seriously? That certified wrecking ball is revered enough to called Lady Icrim? That's crazy." Dante said while taking a seat next to Byakuren.

" We were not expecting to see you two here because unfortunately... someone else came with this to investigate this." Toyohime said.

" Who could have come with you to Earth... oh no. Tsukuyomi came here with you, didn't he?" Eirin asked as she felt a strong hand on her shoulder.

" Indeed, I am." Eirin turned to see a black haired man standing next to her.

The man was wearing a regal white kimono with a golden trim and a beautifully designed full moon on the back of them. His eyes were

pure silver and seemed to reflect moonlight, even though there is no moon in the room. His black hair reached his shoulder blades and he had a golden crown on his head.

"... It has been awhile, hasn't it, Tsukuyomi?" Eirin asked as Tsukuyomi chuckled.

" So this is where you two have been hiding from us for all those years? Impressive, it appears that the humans have not evolved much since we were last here." Tsukuyomi noticed as Dante shook his head.

" Nah dude, Gensokyo is just behind on the times. The Outside World is much more technologically advanced than this place is." Dante added.

Tsukuyomi stared at the man who addressed him so nonchalantly as he sensed a familiar presence coming from him. " Ah, you are the Son of Sparda, the Legendary Dark Knight whom defeated the Demon Emperor Mundus with the aid of several Youkai and Lunarians." Everyone's eyes widened at that revelation.

" Uh... hi daddy!" Kaguya said as she slowly approached her father.

" Calm yourself, my daughter. As much as I want to bring you back home, I can tell that you don't want to come back at the moment." Tsukuyomi said as Kaguya sighed.

" All right, enough of this! What the hell do you guys want!?" Reimu angrily asked, shocking everyone.

" Perhaps we should explain what's been happening so far to you guys." Kaguya said as she explained everything to the Lunarian. She explained the goal of the Ultima Brigade and the reason that they were exploring other worlds to save them from the Heartless and Nobodies. She even told them her predicament with Ziden and his father as Tsukuyomi felt enraged. She also told him about Yoruho.

" How dare that mongrel do that to my sweet little girl like that?!" Tsukuyomi was outraged that his daughter was used like a tool like that.

" Calm down, Tsukuyomi. There's nothing you can do about it now." Eirin tried to calm down Tsukuyomi but it wasn't working that well.

" Its okay, father. Ziden broke that spell on me and he said that he'd take care of his father the next he spots him." Kaguya said as Tsukuyomi began to calm down.

Tsukuyomi turned and saw Ziden being yelled at by a woman dressed in purple. " It is amusing that Ziden has been so well trained by this purple woman. It is quite amusing, although I hope he takes good care of you, my daughter." Tsukuyomi said.

" Yeah, Patchouli's got a nice bod, but she hides it under those heavy clothes and mean temper." Dante said while chuckling and looking at Byakuren. " But you could have her beat though."

Byakuren punched Dante in the face, sending him flying out of the room as Sora scratched his head.

" I swear, you guys are all weird." Sora said as Marisa and Reimu laughed.

" Hah! That's coming from the guy who stabbed himself in the chest with a key!" Reimu said before the trio started to laugh.

" Yoohoo! What's with all the laughing?" Roxanne asked while entering the room with Yuugi next to her.

" Why is Dante in the wall with a bloody nose?" Yuugi asked.

" Byakuren punched him after he made a rude comment about her body." Alice explained as Roxanne sighed.

" Of course he did. So to what I do owe this visit, Lord Tsukuyomi?" Roxanne asked while bowing.

" We found a mysterious object on the moon that reeked of impurity and unholy source of energy coming from it." Toyohime pulled out said object and showed it to her as she studied the object.

The object was a beautifully cut yellow jewel that was bigger than Toyohime's hand and radiated pure power from its frame.

" Whew! That's one fancy looking gem ya got there, ze!" Marisa said while trying to grab the jewel.

" I've never seen anything like this jewel before." Byakuren said while examining it.

" I don't know why, but I feel a divine presence coming from them." Reimu stated.

" I saw this thing before. It was when Ziden and that stupid shinigami girlfriend of his were playing some game of his. I don't remember what it was called though." Roxanne said while sighing.

" So basically, we won't know what this is unless Ziden or Komachi gets here, great." Eirin said while sighing.

" Ohohohoh! Looks like you girls are out of luck, aren't you?" Everyone turned to see Yukari sitting on a Gap with a badly injured Mokou passed out on the bed.

" Damn, what happened to her?" Marisa asked.

" Mama called that Old Blonde Lady a hag and she got beat up for it!" Seika explained as Roxanne spotted the child standing next to Kaguya. Yukari frowned when Seika called her old, but ignored because she was nothing more than a child.

" And who is this adorable little angel?" Roxanne quickly snatched up Seika as she struggled to get free.

" Gahhh! Let me go! Let me go!" Seika ends up burning Roxanne and getting free from her arms and hides behind Kaguya.

" Whoa, that's one bad burn that girl gave you, Roxanne." Yuugi said as Roxanne ignored the pain in her arm.

" Oh yeah, Roxanne, that little angel is your Granddaughter, congratulations!" Yukari said as Tsukuyomi panicked.

" What?! Kaguya! Why didn't you tell me I was a Grandfather?! Now I feel all old and neglected!" Tsukuyomi was sitting in the corner with an aura of depression around him.

" Kaguya is not my mother! She is!" Seika pointed to the broken form of Mokou on the bed as Tsukuyomi cheered back up.

" Whew that's good, I thought my dear little Kaguya had been deflowered before she had been properly married." Tsukuyomi said as Yukari giggled.

" But she didn't have to burn me. That's mean against your grandma!" Roxanne said while feigning sadness.

" Hey! Enough of that! I'm still upset about what you told me, you know!" Reimu yelled as Roxanne chuckled.

" Don't worry about it, you're a part of our family now!" Roxanne said as Reimu sighed.

" I can't believe me and that idiot are cousins. It makes me sick now that I think about it." Reimu said as Sora opened the door.

" Hmm? Sora? Where are you going?" Byakuren asked.

" I'm just going for a walk. I'll be back." Sora said as Reimu and Marisa ran over to him.

" We'll come with you, ze!" Marisa happily said.

" Even though several of the Youkai are helping out against the Ultima Brigade, there are still some feral ones and rogue ones that won't hesitate to attack you. It would be dangerous to go alone! Take

Marisa and Reimu with you!" Yukari said while giggling at the reference she made.

" Sure, we're just going to do some scouting aboveground to make sure no Heartless or Nobodies are causing trouble in the Village." Sora explained as Yukari nodded.

" How admirable, Sora. You really are a selfless person. I wish Ziden was more like you, he wouldn't even go scouting for enemies like you would. Oh well." Yukari said while fanning herself.

" Uh thanks, I guess." Sora said.

" Do be careful though, who knows what else might have sneaked into Gensokyo while we were away." Alice warned as the trio walked out of the room as Yorihome stared at Sora's direction.

" That boy, Sora, there's something different about him." Yorihome said aloud.

" Yes, that boy is very different from any other Earthling that I have encountered before." Tsukuyomi said as Toyohime smiled.

" That boy may be impure, but his heart and mind are as pure as a child. Perhaps that boy has a very important role in the future regarding the worlds." Toyohime said as Yukari chuckled.

" *Sora, I can tell that this boy is no ordinary wielder of the keyblade. I wonder what his fate will be? Maybe I should ask Remilia.*" Yukari disappeared into a Gap as Roxanne tried to hold Seika again.

The trio walked through the hallways, slowly making their way to their destination as they spot the stairs that lead to the above ground.

Sora and friends made their way up the stairs, complaining the whole time about the long climb as they reached the door and

opened it seeing Kotohime, Ryuna and several Gensokyo Policemen standing guard in the break room.

" Hmm? What are you guys doing here at this time of night?" Kotohime asked.

" We're just doing some night exploring, ze!" Marisa said while playing with her hair braid.

" Just so you know, Marisa, the villagers took all of their prized possessions with them so don't expect to steal anything." Ryuna said as Marisa frowned.

" I don't steal! I only borrow until I die, ze!" Marisa said as Sora sweatdropped.

" Anyways, be careful, several of my men have been attacked by those cloaked men and mysterious creatures that look like Youkai in non-human forms." Kotohime warned.

" Those must be either Demons or Monsters then. This'll be our first time fighting either though." Reimu said aloud.

" If you guys see a monster that looks like a large purple beast with two horns, run. That Monster is too powerful for you guys to take on, even that jackass Ziden has a hard time dealing with them." Ryuna warned as the trio nodded.

The trio made their trek into the Human Village as the full moon was glowing above them as they see several bats flying above them.

" Hmm? If I were a bunch cloaked men or Heartless, where would I be?" Sora asked while holding the Hero's Crest.

" Maybe they're waiting to ambush us and take our hearts when we least expect it." Reimu suggested as Marisa shuddered.

" Jeez Reimu, now you've got me feeling all uncomfortable now, ze!" Marisa said while flying around on her broom, searching for the



enemies as a bat flew by her.

Reimu noticed that bats didn't seem to be acting normally as she heard several crows cawing behind them.

" Something's not right here. What's with these bats, they're not even screeching like they're supposed to, according to those books you showed me, Marisa." Reimu said while taking out her Gohei.

" Yeah, maybe we should shine some light on those bats and see what's up, ze." Marisa suggested while firing a bright green danmaku orb upwards, shining the light on the bats.

" I knew those weren't bats!" Reimu yelled as the bats? stopped and glared at Marisa.

The bats? were not bats at all, but instead winged red eyes with green eyelids. " Those are Evil Eyes, right? It's been a long time since I saw any of these guys running around." Reimu said as Marisa laughed.

" Yeah, that was back when we first met, ze!" Marisa remembered.

" Really? You met fighting these guys?" Sora asked as the Evil Eyes began to surround the group.

" More like we fought and we became friends after I beat her." Reimu explained as she held several needles in her hands.

" But enough of that, we should deal with these guys before we start remembering about the good ole days!" Marisa said as several Dusks and Samarai Nobodies appeared on the ground.

### **Night of Fate ( Kingdom Hearts)**

The Dusks stretched their arms and they shot at Sora, forcing him to block against their attacks as the Samarai jumped into the air and tried to impale Marisa off of her broom. " Whoa!" Marisa narrowly dodged the Nobodies' attack.

A Samurai was trying to slice Reimu apart as she blocked the attacks with her Gohei. With her other hand, she threw several Persuasion Needles into Samurai's body, stunning it while she slapped several prayer slips on its body.

The slips exploded with holy energy, sending the Nobody airborne as a Dusk snuck up behind her and reeled its fist back.

Sora threw his keyblade at the Dusk behind Reimu, knocking it away as the Evil Eyes began to fire red danmaku at Sora, forcing him to flee into an alleyway.

Reimu threw several amulets and needles at the Evil Eyes as they scattered to dodge, only for some of them to explode into Munny and Item Boxes. Marisa was flying around, blasting several Evil Eyes with her colorful stars while the Samurais still tried to skewer the teenage witch.

" Jeez! These Nobodies are more annoying to fight than the Heartless!" Marisa yelled while kicking a Dusk in the face.

" Wait a second, where'd Sora go!?" Reimu asked as she looked around for the missing keyblade wielder before a laser flew past her head as she saw the Evil Eyes scattering and an even bigger one appeared.

This Evil Eye was yellow and had a large fang filled mouth, a large eye and bat wings, as well as a Devil's tail. The being screeched causing the other Evil Eyes to flee in fear as the Nobodies remained around the creature.

" That's one weird looking Evil Eye, ze. I wonder where these things keep coming from?" Marisa asked while dodging a tackle attack from a Dusk.

" I don't think that's an Evil Eye, it seems more powerful than one I've ever seen." Reimu said as a laser fired from the creatures eye and slammed into a Samurai, exploding it as the creature roared.

This creature was known as an Arhiman, a creature that can kill with its deadly gaze.

Sora found himself to be lost with the alleyways as he felt a chill run up his spine. " What's with this weird feeling? I knew I shouldn't have ran off like that." Sora said as he walked the dark path as felt like he was being watched.

Sora jumped to avoid a Dusk slicing his back as he gripped his Keyblade with the both of his hands. " Hurricane Blast!" Sora performed a vertical spin attack that destroyed the Nobody.

" Whew. That was close." Sora said as he landed on the ground and turned around, bumping into a pink haired girl with several blue ethereal masks floating around her. " Oh, I'm sorry, I didn't see you there."

" Why did you break it?" The girl asked in an emotionless voice.

" Huh? What do you mean?" Sora asked as he felt dangerous intent coming the girl.

" Why did you break my Mask of Hope? Why would you take my hope away from me?" The girl asked while reaching for Sora's throat.

" Wait! Hold on a second! I didn't break any Mask of Hope!" Sora tried to reason with the girl as the girl continued to move towards him.

" I saw you do it. That mask was my only way to feel hope. Even though killing won't bring it back, you have to be punished for it." Sora jumped away from the girl as she took flight.

*Meanwhile at the Schoolyard...*

Dante, Eirin and Yuugi were standing outside the school with weapons drawn as Eirin looked enraged.

" Let Tewi go you bastard!" Eirin yelled as Tewi struggled to get free.

There was a man dressed in a red cloak holding by her collar as absolute fear spread through her face.

" I cannot do that. My niece wants this rabbit and she shall have her new toy, regardless of what you inferior beings think." The Demon said as Dante and Yuugi walked forward.

A gap appeared next to the man as gloved hands snatched Tewi from his grip, shocking him as Tewi got away.

" Looks like Alice isn't getting her Rabbit tonight, red boy." Dante pointed Rebellion at the man in red. " Time to do some Demon hunting."

" Humph, such foolishness, Son of Sparda. You are nothing to me and I will enjoy crushing you like a pebble beneath my feet." The man snapped his fingers as several hands ripped from underneath the earth and rose to the surface. " You will know the power of the Count in Red."

Elsewhere...

A brown haired girl is seen sitting in front of a computer screen with an evil smile on her face. The screen showed the yellow gem that Toyohime was holding and it was scanning the power held within the gem.

" Incredible! Such untapped power held within that jewel! If I had that, my Evil Eye army will be able to wipe out all of the Youkai in Gensokyo and make the humans the Master Race!" The girl boasted as a giant Evil Eye with a red glowing Sigma symbol floating behind her.

*Fun Facts:*

*1. Yukari made a reference to the Legend of Zelda, ' Its dangerous to go alone, take this with you!'*

*2. Sora is a very important character because of his unique outlook on life and the fact that he is a chosen wielder of the keyblade.*

*you played Castlevania, then you know what a bunch of crows mean~!*

*4. Seika means Sacred Fire or flame, I can't remember and she is Ziden's and Mokou's daughter. Yep, prior to the events of this story, Ziden and Mokou created a child the old fashioned way. PS, it doesn't involve the stork! ;)*

*Author's Note: This was a very fun chapter to write because it involved not much fighting but explanations and randomness from the Touhou cast and Sora. Remember, these chapters alternate so next Chapter is Dream World, so stay tuned.*

# Raging Sands and Goddess of Light

Just know that the Halloween Special is going to be a Oneshot  
Uploaded along with the Next Chapter.

---

Ziden glared at the man whom standing in front of them, smoking a cigar as he glared at the group. " Eh? Did you get some new crew members since I last saw you, Robin?" The man asked.

" These people are not a part of the Straw Hat Pirates. They are helping me right now." Robin explained.

" Of course they aren't, Straw Hat maybe dumb, but at least he's smart enough to not pick weaklings like them to join his crew." The man said as Ziden raised an eyebrow.

" By Straw Hat, you mean Luffy right?" Patchouli asked.

" Yes, how do you know Luffy?" Robin asked.

" We meet his bro-Mmph!" Ziden quickly covered Luigi's mouth.

" We met someone who knows him." Ziden lied as Robin raised an eyebrow.

" And we aren't weak, you cigar smoking freak!" Youmu retorted as the man chuckled.

" At least you've got some spunk kids. Too bad that won't do you anygood against me." The Man said as wind kicked up around them.

" Ms. Robin, who is this man?" Yuyuko asked.

" This man is Crocodile, a Former Warlord of the Sea and a powerful pirate from my world." Robin explained as Ziden examined Crocodile.

Crocodile is a tall man with a wide chest, broad shoulders, muscular arms and legs, and a thick neck. He has pale skin and nape-length, deep black-purple hair which is kept neatly slicked back, though strands tend to fall in front of his face during battles. Crocodile has various battle wounds, most notably a long stitched scar above his nose that stretches across his face, as well as a missing left hand, which has been replaced with a large hook made from a tough gold alloy. Crocodile was wearing a black shirt, a green scarf, dark grey slacks, and a black overcoat with tan fur trim.

" I'm not impressed. How'd a weakling like you become one of those Powerful Warlords of the Sea?" Ziden taunted as Crocodile bit his cigar in half.

" Tough talk coming from a weakling like you, It'll be interesting to see how your friends will react to me killing you." Crocodile threatened while walking forward.

Youmu's hands shot towards her swords as her face turned blue with several sweatdrops dropping down her skin.

Luigi noticed it as well and wondered why she was so nervous. " Hey Youmu, what's wrong?"

" My swords... I left them back at the Wardrobe Room." Youmu said as Yuyuko sighed. Youmu saw Ziden unfastening his twin katanas and threw them at her feet. " Huh?"

" USe those until you get your swords back. They may not be what you're used to using though." Ziden said as he cracked his knuckles and walked towards Crocodile.

" Is there anything important we should know about this Crocodile before we fight him?" Yuyuko asked.

" Yes, he ate the Sand-Sand Fruit, making him a Sand Human. He can drain the moisture from the objects he touches. He is going to be

very hard to defeat in this desert. Water is going to be very helpful in this fight, too bad we don't have any." Robin said.

" Water, huh? Patchouli." Yuyuko said as Patchouli opened her grimoire.

" I'm on it, Yuyuko." Patchouli answered while floating into the sky.

Ziden and Crocodile stood across from each other as Crocodile towered over Ziden.

" Come on, you reject mafia wannabe! Show me what you can do!" Ziden yelled while placing Crimson Edge on his shoulder.

### **Boss Battle ( One Piece Pirate Warriors 2)**

Ziden dashed around Crocodile while rapidly slashing at his body, causing sand to spray out as Crocodile sighed.

" Is this all you can do boy?" Crocodile asked as Ziden stopped and smirked.

" Don't worry, things are about to 'heat' up!" Ziden's leg darkened as it became wrapped in fire. " Burning Lancer!" Ziden performed a burning kick to Crocodile's chest, blasting him backwards before he landed on the ground.

" Tch! So you know Haki brat? And you must have eaten some Logia type Devil Fruit as well." Crocodile said while getting to his feet.

" Nope, I never ate one of those Devil Fruits, my powers come from something much stronger than a Devil Fruit." Ziden said while throwing his blade up and down.

" Humph, it doesn't matter where your power came from, you aren't strong to beat me." Crocodile morphed his hand into a blade of fast moving sand. " Desert Spada!" Crocodile slammed the blade into the sand, releasing a massive blade of sand that raced towards Ziden.



Ziden was sliced in half as Crocodile smirked. Robin was shocked by how Ziden was 'killed' and looked at his allies whom seemed unfazed by what happened. She wondered why they were acting this way as she watched Ziden's body beginning to move.

" What the-" Crocodile was mildly shocked by the fact that Ziden's body was moving towards as several tendrils began to reconnect the two parts of his body. Ziden body regenerated to its regular form as Ziden cracked his neck.

" That hurt a bit, dude." Ziden looked back and looked at the massive crater that the attack created. " Not bad, looks like you'll be a fun opponent if you were able to cause me to lose that much blood." Ziden pointed to the blood that was leaking into the large crevasse behind him.

" Lunatic Surge!" Patchouli summoned a large ball of water and fired it at the ground. It slammed into the ground, creating a large tidal wave that was racing towards Ziden and Crocodile. Ziden smirked and backflipped multiple times into the air as the wave slammed down onto Crocodile.

" Jeez, overkill much Patchouli?" Ziden asked.

" Not really, just wanted to try these new spells. Wasn't expecting it to have this much... power." Patchouli said as the water began to be absorbed into the sand, transforming it into mud as Crocodile was drenched in water.

Crocodile was extremely annoyed with this group of fighters as Youmu unsheathed Nosada and Murakamo, getting accustomed to the new katanas' weight. Kirby discarded his Cutter ability and swallowed some water, transforming into Water Kirby.

Crocodile charged at Ziden and swung his claw at him as he fell. His claw swung through air as he felt a fan strike him across the face. Yuyuko grabbed another fan from out of nowhere and surrounded it with pink energy.

" Dance of Butterfly Dream!" Yuyuko performed a powerful spin attack that struck Crocodile multiple times and sent him flying backwards.

" Damn. You brats are getting annoying. Desert Girasole!" Crocodile stabbed his hand into the ground, creating a muddy whirlpool that quickly turned into sand, catching Ziden off guard as he is sucked into the whirlpool and is slowly drawn into the center.

Robin quickly crossed her arms. " Ocho Fleur!" Several pinkish flower petals landed in the pit and transformed into arms that formed into line and carried Ziden out of the quicksand as he caught his breath.

" Whew. That was close." Ziden said as he got to his feet. " Thanks Robin, not sure how you did that, but you can tell us later."

Youmu and Luigi charged at Crocodile with swords and hammer drawn while swinging wildly at Crocodile, forcing him to block with his golden hook. Youmu stabbed Crocodile in the leg with Murakamo, freezing it as Luigi slammed his hammer into Croc's face, sending him flying.

Crocodile frowned as he transformed his lower body into sand as he flew after Patchouli. Patchouli hadn't expected him to go after her and was caught off guard when he slammed his claw into her torso, impaling her on his claw as he threw her into the ground.

" Patchouli!" Youmu flew into the air with fire and ice surrounding her. Ziden dove to where Patchouli would have landed as Ziden saw her purple dress becoming darker from her blood loss.

" Hold still, Patchouli." Ziden ripped off the bloody piece of cloth and placed his hand on her wound as she grabbed his arm. " White Flame." Patchouli's nails dug deep into Ziden's hand as she withhold the need to scream in pain as her wound healed.

Youmu blocked an attack from Crocodile with Nosada and counter-attacked with Murakamo, slashing Crocodile across the chest as Kirby fired a powerful stream of water onto his back, blasting him into the muddy ground.

" Desert Spada!" Crocodile fired a powerful blade of sand into the air as Youmu dove down to avoid it.

Kirby spun like a top and fired water from his mouth, creating a beautiful rings of aquatic fluids that slammed into the blade of sand. The water and the sand exploded against each other, raining down onto the group as Ziden looked up into the sky.

" Agh! My eyes! They burn!" Sand landed in Ziden's eyes, causing him to scream in pain and roll around on the floor as Patchouli got to her feet and sighed.

" Get up, you idiot." Patchouli kicked Ziden in the spine with her brown boots as he jumped to his feet.

" Ouch! My back and my eyes!" Ziden was rubbing his eyes as Crocodile appeared behind him.

Patchouli flew high into the air and began to cast another spell as Crocodile grabbed Ziden by the back of his neck. " Lets see you heal from this, Desert Encierro." Ziden's body began to rapidly shrivel to the point that Ziden looked like a fleshless bag of bones. Crocodile dropped him on the floor and walked over to Robin with his hook raised.

Kirby rode a large wave that slammed into Crocodile and washed him away from Robin as Youmu fired a cross beam of fire and ice into Crocodile's back, stunning him as Luigi jumped high into the sky. Luigi slammed his feet into Croc's back and jumped higher into the air before stomping Crocodile again, causing him to cough up blood onto the sand.

" Ground Secco." The ground began to rapidly dry up as the ground collapsed, taking everyone minus Patchouli and Yuyuko underground. Yuyuko and Patchouli flew into the hole and saw an underground cavern with various rivers, crystals lining the walls and ceiling, and several rocky cliffs. One of which all of the heroes minus Ziden landed on.

Crocodile dusted off his sleeves and he grabbed the golden hook and removed it, revealing another hook. The hook he had underneath was silver with several holes in it that had purple gas coming out of it.

" You kids are tougher than I thought. I think I should you fools die, slowly." Crocodile said as Ziden landed in a river nearby.

Ziden's regeneration kicked in and he began to regenerate his lost fluids and returned to normal within a matter of seconds.

" Heart Carving Cut!" Youmu slid forward and aimed at Crocodile's feet, slashing them as she flipped onto her hands and slammed her feet into Crocodile's chin, knocking him into the air.

" Water Sign: Jellyfish Princess!" Patchouli surrounded herself with a large water bubble as it fired a barrage of water bullets into the airborne Crocodile, blasting him into the crystal ceiling. Crocodile fell towards Youmu with his poisonous hook. Youmu reacted quickly and blocked his hook with Nosada as several arms wrapped around Crocodile.

" Slam!" The arms slammed Crocodile onto the rocky ground, stunning him as Luigi pulled his hammer.

" Fore!" Luigi slammed his hammer into Crocodile's side and sent him flying into an underground river. Crocodile got to his feet and blocked one of Ziden's kicks with his arm.

Ziden continues to throw kicks and punches at Crocodile, while Crocodile blocked the attacks with his hook. Crocodile swung his

hook at Ziden's neck, only for Ziden to block the hook with his arm, causing the blade to pierce through as Ziden slammed his burning fist into Crocodile's face, knocking him backwards as Youmu dived into the river.

Ziden could feel the poison seeping into his veins as he watched Youmu dodge several Desert Spada while firing back with her own air blades, catching Crocodile a large number of times as he placed his hand over the water.

" Sables." Crocodile created a large tornado that sucked in Youmu due to her close proximity to him and threw her into the ceiling, smashing her spine against one of the ceiling crystal. She fell like a ragdoll until Yuyuko flew over to catch her as the whirlwind made its way to Ziden.

Ziden crouched down and twisted his body a bit as flames danced on his crimson blade. " Blazing Sword Secret Technique: Blazing Tornado!" Ziden performed a powerful spin attack that created a tornado of fire that collided with the twister of sand, creating a vacuum between the two elemental twisters as water and rocks were sucked into it.

" Impressive. It looks like the Original's skills are much more honed and focused than the clone's attacks." Patchouli observed while flipping through her book to find a spell. " Here we go." A blue surrounded Patchouli as Robin watched her.

" So this is magic... how interesting. If Miss Navigator was here, she'd be having a heart attack." Robin said as Yuyuko and Youmu landed next to them.

Ziden and Crocodile's attacks continued to collide with each other as he quickly glanced at his still bleeding arm. " *What the hell? That wound should have healed by now... strange.*" Ziden increased the power to his attack as Crocodile did the same, unaware that Kirby was coming up behind him on a large tidal wave.

" Poyo!" Kirby's tidal wave slammed down onto Crocodile, slamming him down into the river as Sables quickly began to lose its fire quickly overpowered the sand and smothered it, creating a beautiful glass spiral staircase that reached the ceiling.

" Now that's what I call art!" Ziden said while whistling.

" I've had enough of you, brats." Crocodile placed his hand on the ground as a sandy whirlwind surrounded him. Ziden and Youmu could sense an dangerous attack coming as they tensed up and gripped their swords while gritting their teeth. Robin remembered this technique as she clicked her tongue.

" Everyone! Get off of the ground now!" Robin yelled as Crocodile grinned.

" Ground Death!" The area around Crocodile's hand began to rapidly dry up and spread towards Ziden whom caught off guard by how fast the attack was. Kirby quickly flew into the sky and watched as the river quickly became a dry, cracked river bed. The dry area had reached Ziden's feet as he felt himself being drained again as he once again became a dried husk and collapsed on the floor.

Luigi jumped high into the air to dodge the attack, Youmu grabbed Robin and flew into the air as the ground became cracked and dead. Crocodile stopped the attack and walked towards Ziden, with his hook raised up as he grabbed Ziden by his collar. Crocodile pierced through Ziden's stomach and left him dangling on his hook.

" Heh, looks like your powers weren't enough to beat me, boy. Now here you are, dying on my hook as your friends watch helplessly at my powers at work." Crocodile boasted as Ziden's body darkened rapidly. " Hmm?" Ziden's body exploded into dark blobs and disappeared from sight as Crocodile looked confused.

Crocodile's shadow grew in size as it towered over him with glowing red eyes. Ziden emerged from the shadow and delivered a fiery

punch into his face, sending him flying as Ziden cracked his knuckles.

" Jeez, are all of you Logia types this over confident in your abilities? How sad. I guess we should wrap this up soon, no one likes it when a fight drags on forever." Ziden said while pointing his sword.

" Don't worry, you'll all die here!" Crocodile transformed his arm into sand and launched his hook at Ziden as Youmu flew in and blocked the attack with Nosada as Patchouli finished casting a high leveled water spell.

" Tidal Wave!" A massive surge of magical water slammed into the ground, creating a massive wave of water as Crocodile created a sandy blade on his arm.

" Barchan." Crocodile swung his arm at Ziden's neck as he quickly ducked under the blade while throwing a powerful punch into Crocodile's stomach, sending him flying as Kirby grabbed him in his mouth.

Kirby spat Crocodile out, trapping him in a bubble of water as Youmu kicked the ball of water, increasing its speed and velocity before it exploded against the ground as several arms grabbed onto Crocodile.

" Clutch!" The arms snapped the back of Crocodile, causing him to scream in pain as Patchouli's spell roared and slammed down into Crocodile as the spell began its true assault.

The water began to spin around him like a vicious maelstrom of chaos, constantly harming Crocodile as several of Yuyuko's razor sharp butterflies flew into the whirlpool. Patchouli focused more of her magical powers into the water. She caused some of the water to form into dragons of water. They sprayed beams of pressurized water that smashed Crocodile under the water as Ziden noticed something.

Crocodile was not swimming for some reason and was constantly sinking to the bottom of the maelstrom as Ziden put two and two together.

" He can't swim, can he?" Yuyuko asked while standing next to Ziden.

" No, people whom eat Devil Fruits gain amazing powers but forever lose the ability to swim." Robin explained.

" That's one big weakness. I'll make sure to take a note of this for future battles against Devil Fruit users." Patchouli said as the spell ended as several golden rings were surrounding Youmu.

Crocodile transformed his lower body into sand and flew into the air with pure rage written on his face. " This is an outrage! I'm seriously being beaten by these weaklings!? Well lets see how you handle this!" Crocodile created several large blades of sand that transformed themselves to look like steel blades. Youmu summoned several cherry blossom that entered Murakamo and Nosada, giving them a pink glow as it enveloped her body. " Desert la Spada!" The blades dived towards everyone as Youmu moved so fast, that she looked like a pink laser zigzagging through the sky.

" Impressive, that girl could give our swordsman a run for his money." Robin said as Youmu approached the blades and sliced through them.

" What!?" Crocodile yelled as Youmu dashed through him multiple times, slicing with her borrowed katanas as bloody sand sprayed out from Crocodile's body.

" Cherry Blossom's Dance!" Youmu performed one final cross slash, dashing through Crocodile with her blades as Crocodile's body was sliced into 4 pieces and landed on the ground as Youmu sheathed her blades.



" Wow, didn't expect you to kill him Youmu. I thought I would have to do it." Ziden said while scratching his head.

" Well, I've accepted the fact that some of the opponents we face will have to be taken out." Youmu said as she handed Ziden his blades back.

Robin looked at Crocodile's dead body as it exploded into darkness, startling her as an unknown voice entered Ziden's head.

" *Yooahoo! Is this thing on? Hello!*" Ziden recognized the voice as the ghost he encountered when he was dead with Komachi.

" Hmm? What was that voice?" Robin asked as Yuyuko frowned.

" *Hello all! Its your favorite evil spirit Mima with some important info for you fools! These opponents you are forced into fighting are nothing more than Dream Versions of themselves, so killing them will NOT kill them in the Real World. Thought I'd be a good ole roommate and tell you that. Oh, and since some of you are actually in the Dream World physically, you will need rest and sleep.*" Mima explained as Ziden thought of what would happen if he fell asleep in the Dream World. He instantly thought of that movie Yukari and Ran dragged him to and was immediately lost in the storyline.

" Why are you helping us, Mima? Aren't you supposed to be evil?" Patchouli asked while crossing her arms across her chest.

" *Why? Because, if this idiot dies, I'll be taken out of this wonderful vessal and have to listen to him and that annoying ferrywoman talk about silly stuff like lost love and stuff.*" Mima said as Ziden sighed.

" Whatever, just know that I'm still kicking your ass after all this is over." Ziden said as Mima chuckled before disappearing.

The room began to flash brightly as they found themselves in a Nursery with a small crib in the corner of the room. A large Treasure chest appeared as a catchy jingle came from Luigi's pocket.

Ziden opened the chest as a large key appeared and landed in Ziden's hands.

Luigi pressed a button on his Gameboy Horror and E. Gadd appeared on the screen.

" Oh thank goodness, I lost your guys' signal after you entered the Nursery. I guess you must encountered one of those weird distortions in the Mansion." E. Gadd said as Ziden scratched his head and yawned.

" Just tell us about those distortions in the Mansion when we get back, we're all pretty tired and dirty from that last fight." Patchouli said as E. Gadd chuckled.

" Then I'll see you guys soon!" E. Gadd ended the video call as Ziden and the others left the room and exited the Mansion.

The group headed back to the Lab as Robin and the others seperated themselves from Ziden and Patchouli at Yuyuko's request as the duo sat next to each other, not saying anything. Patchouli was calmly reading her book while scooting closer to him. She placed her head on his shoulder and smiled as Ziden wrapped his arm around her waist.

" So now, you want to be touched huh?" Ziden asked.

" That's because we aren't around the others, its offensive to do that in front of the others." Patchouli said while yawning.

" Why did you fall for the clone flirting for you is my question?" Ziden asked.

" I found you interesting and it is rare for someone to be interested in me, after all, I'm just an bookworm." Patchouli said as Ziden chuckled.

" Please, don't you know that people love hot bookworms such as yourself." Ziden said as Patchouli blushed.

" How sweet. I'm not going to be happy that I have to share a husband but I'll mainly be in the Library most of the time, so it doesn't really matter." Patchouli said.

" Although, you could use a really good tan, you're so pale, even though I don't mind paleness." Ziden said as Patchouli giggled.

" Well, I could go in the sun if I wanted to, but sunlight damages the pages in my books." Patchouli explained.

" Of course, you are very unique, you know that right?" Ziden asked.

" Yes, after all, I have you trained without even trying." Patchouli bragged while pinching Ziden on the cheek.

" Hmm, I guess you do. Mokou's probably not happy about that, she wished that she had me this trained." Ziden said.

" Well, I can't wait to see how this relationship turn out. As long as you don't try my patience, you'll be fine." Patchouli said as the sound of glass breaking was heard.

*" A new bond has been established. You have achieved the First Rank of the Magician Arcana. Through this rank, you have learned the Magic Bracer ability. It will allow you to cast a spell without being interrupted by attacks."* An unknown voice said as Ziden smiled.

" Cool, new skill for my Keyblade. This is going to be fun." Ziden said as Patchouli sat up and poked him.

" Remember, make to sure to befriend your other allies too. Roxanne told me about how antisocial you can be sometimes." Patchouli said as Ziden sighed.

" Whatever." Ziden said as he left the room with Patchouli floating behind him. When Ziden entered the main room of E. Gadd's lab, he

saw the last person he expected to see here. " Sakuya, what are you doing here?"

" Mistress Remilia sent me here in order to keep an eye on you, Master Ziden." Sakuya said with her arms crossed.

" Really now? Why?" Ziden asked.

" She wants to make sure you don't cause any sort of grief towards Patchouli, so I'm here to make sure you don't try anything funny." Sakuya explained.

" Of course, Remi would do something like this." Patchouli said as Ziden sighed.

" Whatever, lets get back in this mansion and do some more treasure hunting!" Ziden recieved a sharp glare from Patchouli. " I mean, lets go save the Smashers from the Dream World! *But first those treasures!* " Ziden said under his breathe.

" I swear, you haven't changed at all in the past 13 years. Still greedy for anything valuable that you can sell later." Sakuya said as Robin and the others entered the room.

" Wow. You've had some crazy adventures, Miss Robin. An Adventure in the sky, you took down a god-like being, you took on the Marines in a City of Water and you fought against the undead." Youmu said as Robin chuckled.

" Indeed, it is never a dull moment with the Straw Hat Pirates, that's why I sure am glad I met them." Robin said while smiling.

" I wish we could meet the other members, they sound pretty strong! We could really use their help right now." Luigi said as Robin frowned.

" I highly doubt it, we were seperated a few months ago and we plan on meeting each other within 2 years time." Robin explained.

" Hold on a sec, you said that in that Water 7 place, your friends fought against a group of superhuman Marines known as the CP9 right?" Yuyuko asked as Robin nodded. " Was one of those people named Lucci?"

" Yes, how do you-"

" We met him on another world, he and Ziden fought after he took out Mario and Meiling. He asked the boss of the Glitz Pit to send them to someplace called Enies Lobby. He's also the reason why my Nephew, one of my best friends and Remilia are being hunted down by these Marines." Yuyuko explained, interrupting what Robin was about to ask.

" But why would Lucci ask to go to Enies Lobby when he fought Ziden? It doesn't make sense." Yuyuko asked as E. Gadd entered the room.

" We may have to ask him when we return to the real world." Youmu said as Ziden sneezed all of a sudden.

" There seems to be someone waiting in the Lobby of the Mansion, someone whom is trapped in the Dream World like those Smashers of yours." E. Gadd said as Ziden frowned.

" And I know this person's aura too. Great, those two had to be here. Now I'm going to be even more annoyed." Ziden said while sighing.

" Hmm? Wait, I only know one person that you find annoying and that's 'her' right?" Luigi asked as Ziden sighed.

" Yep, the Goddess of Light and her prized soldier are within that Mansion and no doubt they'll want to join to us on this quest." Ziden said as Sakuya raised an eyebrow.

" Why do you not like this Goddess of Light and soldier?" Sakuya asked.

Luigi interrupted by raising his hand. " That's because the Goddess of Light and Yukari liked to team up and harrass him on his 'free time'. The soldier is because of a very silly reason, he doesn't like that he makes unfunny puns as well and they often try to one-up each other." Luigi explained.

" THat makes sense. But how does Yukari know this Goddess of Light woman? She never leaves Gensokyo as far as I know." Patchouli asked.

" During the last Smash Bros Tournament, me and Yukari do work for them, you know?" Ziden answered as everyone had a blank stare.

" Yukari... has an actual job?" Yuyuko asked. Apperently, even her best friend didn't know about this.

" Yeah, we've been to all three Tournaments, she uses her boundaries to make the KO areas. I use my powers to throw in items and stage hazards. We also go to recruit the Smashers for each Tournament, which is quite fun by the way." Ziden explained as Youmu raised her hand.

" Do you think that any of us will get invited to one of these tournaments?" Youmu asked.

" Doubt it, but it could be very possible in the future." Ziden said as Luigi chuckled.

" I hope not, you girls are too strong, I wouldn't last a second against you guys and your crazy danmaku. I remember when Yukari was allowed to fight against us in the last Tournament." Luigi shuddered.

" Hah, she took you down first I remember correctly, only to be taken out by Pikachu and Ness a few minutes later." Ziden said while smirking.

" Ah, those were some good times." Luigi said as they reminsiced about the tournaments.

" Anyway, we really should get back into the Mansion and see if we can get into the deeper parts of it with the key we got from beating Crocodile." Patchouli said as Ziden tossed the key up and down.

The entire room began to shake as Ziden's keyblade materialized in his hand. Ziden looked at it and ran out of the room and reach outside as he gritted his teeth and stared at the creature in front of him.

It was the Shadow Stalker, the same Heartless that escaped from Dante and Patchouli in the Palace of the Earth Spirits as Ziden spots an angel running down the stairs of the mansion and stopping next to him.

The angel was wearing a white tunic decorated with red and gold hems on the bottom. It is fastened on the shoulder by a single gold pin with a ruby-like gem embedded on it. He wears the outfit with a brown belt that has silver lining the edges and a gold, triangular buckle on his waist. He also appears to wear navy blue tights beneath his chiton. The angel has a pair of bronze and gold cuffs on his wrists, a gold bracelet on his upper left arm, and another gold ring on his right thigh. His sandals are brown and decorated with crossing, beige bands. The top edges of his shoes have what appears to be white fur or wool. He had large blue eyes and many brown tufts of hair with a golden laural and his white wings were small and looked like they couldn't fly.

" Ziden! I'm glad you're here! Palutena and I were-"

" Sucked into the Dream World, you panicked and ran around like a chicken with its head chopped off, forcing Palutena to club you with her staff to calm you down, right Pit?" Ziden asked.

" Wait how did you?"

" Know that? I just guessed." Ziden said with a smile. The Shadow Stalker roared as the music began to play. Barriers blocked of the area so no outside help could come in and help them.

## Unforgettable ( Kingdom Hearts Birth by Sleep)

The Shadow Stalker jumped into the air and slammed into the ground, releasing a large shockwave, forcing the duo to jump to dodge the attack.

" Whoa! What's this overgrown arachnid's problem?" Pit asked while firing laser arrows into the creature's mouth.

" This thing's a Heartless, a creature born from the darkness inside someone's heart. I'll give you full story later, but first we gotta kill this thing!" Ziden said while sliding under its claws and rapidly slapping the creature with the keyblade and blasting it with a Fire spell as a green light surrounded its body.

" Ziden! You just healed it!" Pit yelled as he transformed his bow into a blade and slashed the heartless across the face as it fired several blue balls of fire homed in on Ziden.

Ziden rolled out of the way of the attack and jumped into the air. Ziden flipped upside down and propelled himself downwards and slammed his keyblade through its body, creating a pillar of light to blast the Heartless upwards.

" Gotcha!" Pit fired a powered up version of one of his arrows into the creature's underbelly, damaging it heavily as its claws opened up and fired a barrage of ghostly bullets that chased after the duo.

" Crap! Dodge those things or you'll really be sorry!" Ziden warned as a bullet slammed into his face and set it ablaze as he rolled around and tried to kill the flames on his face. The creature slammed its claw down on Ziden, crushing him underneath the claw as several yellow stars and birds flew around his head.

The Shadow Stalker began to spin his body around as they separated into many pieces as the claws flew towards Pit.



Pit slid under the claw and fired an arrow into the skull that was flying around, stunning it as Ziden appeared behind it, flipped and slammed the heel of his foot into it, knocking into the Heartless' head.

Ziden pointed his keyblade at the Heartless as lightning gathered at the tip of his keyblade. " Take this! Tesla Burst!" Several streams of lightning fired from the Keyblade and tore through the Heartless' body parts as it let out roar and disappeared in a burst of darkness.

" What the- It ran away!" Pit yelled as Ziden caught an object that landed in his hand when the Heartless was defeated... sorta.

" Hmm? Is this a-" Ziden was interrupted by a mass of pink clothes landing on his face.

" Huh? I landed on something soft, lucky me!" Tewi said as she got to her feet.

" Pit! Are you okay!?" Palutena emerged from the Mansion and ran down the steps as she spotted a group of people coming out of the shack behind them.

" Ziden! Are you okay!?" Yuyuko came barreling out of the shack, knocking Pit aside and into Palutena's stomach.

" I'm fine." Ziden simply answered as Yuyuko rolled up his sleeve, revealing that his poisoned wound still hadn't healed.

" I knew it. Your wounds won't heal as long as you are poisoned!" Yuyuko reached into her robes and forced some antidote into his mouth as Patchouli wrote something down.

" Huh? So I guess, poison would be considered a weakness because it hampers your regeneration. The fact that you don't know this considering you fighting so many opponents before." Robin said as Ziden scratched his head.

" Poyo!" Kirby ran up the stairs to the mansion.

" Guys this is the Goddess of Light, Palutena. Introduce yourselves while I do something over here." Ziden said while walking over the mansion and fiddling with the object with his hands.

" I'm Patchouli Knowledge. The Unmoving Library of the Scarlet Devil Mansion."

" I'm Yuyuko Saigyouji! The Ghost Princess of the Netherworld!"

" I'm Sakuya Izayoi. The Perfect and Elegant Maid of the Scarlet Devil Mansion."

" I'm Nico Robin. Archeologist for the Straw Hat Pirates."

" Youmu Konpaku. Gardener under Lady Yuyuko's employ."

" What? No fancy title for you, Youmu?" Ziden asked.

" Well now, I'm Palutena, Goddess of Light and Defender of the Humans on my world." Palutena introduced as everyone observed her clothing. Pure white robes with a golden decorations wrapped around her hip. Long flowing green hair and a wonderful smile.

" And I'm Pit! Servant of the Goddess of Light!" Pit declared while posing. " Wait a second." Pit walked over to Yuyuko. " Since you're a Princess of the Netherworld, does that make you an Overlord?"

Palutena dragged Pit away as Yuyuko remained confused as Tewi walked over the new duo and stuck out her hand.

" I'm Tewi Inaba. White Rabbit of Good Fortune!" Tewi shook the duo's hand before quickly running over to Ziden and jumping on his back, almost knocking him off of his feet.

" Well now, shall we get going?" Robin asked as everyone nodded and headed towards the mansion.

Elsewhere in the Dream World...

The large dark figure is seen with Ruler 5, with the former watching the latter talk to a large creature wearing a large black trenchcoat.

" S.T.A.R.S!" The creature roared as Ruler 5 shook his head.

" Not this time, Pursuer. I need you to go after Ziden Icrim and anyone whom is an ally to him." Ruler 5 showed him a Picture of Ziden as the creature observed it.

" Zi... den. Ziden! Icrim!" The Pursuer roared Ziden's name as it stomped off into the distance as Ruler 5 smiled.

" Let us see how handle dealing with that monster, Hero." Ruler 5 said as he walked after the Pursuer.

" Heehhehhheh! Soon my revenge will be complete!" Nightmare said while breaking into an evil laugh.

*Fun Facts:*

- 1. Yep, Pit and Palutena are now a part of this story. Lets all give them a warm welcome to the team.*
- 2. The Pursuer is someone you should remember from the Resident Evil Series and isn't the only person whom is in the Mansion now!*
- 3. Ziden was referring to the movie, Inception, which has to deal with dreams and is crazy with the plot. Seriously, go watch and tell if you didn't find it confusing on the first time.*

*Author's Notes: Man this Chapter took a while. I thought I'd never get done with it at this point. At this point in time, I've gotten four more reviews from a new friend I made, isn't that great! I'd love some more reviews from everyone whom enjoys watching crossovers.*

## **Masked Deception and Behemoth Warfare!**

Dante is seen spinning his Rebellion like a baton as the undead horde marched towards the trio.

" That guy's a Necromancer, and a powerful one too." Eirin observed as she drew her bow.

" It doesn't matter, he'll be beaten soon enough!" Yuugi said while cracking her knuckles.

" Humph, you worthless trash actually think you can beat me? Such foolishness." The Black Baron said as Dante chuckled.

" Oh, so we're trash now, yet you're hiding behind a bunch of Zombies and not fighting your own battles." Dante taunted as the Black Baron chuckled.

" Do you think that I care? I am Nebiros, hell's greatest Necromancer. You are nothing to me and my undead will feast on your flesh." Nebiros said as Dante smirked.

### **Boss Battle ( Shin Megami Tensei 4)**

Several of the Zombies charged at Dante as he sliced through the zombies easily, leaving their wounds steaming from being cut by a silver weapon.

Nebiros raised his hand as several Zealots rose from the ground wielding weapons.

" Time to rock!" Dante jumped into the air and jumped again, performing a double jump as his blade began to glow with a red light.  
" Drive!" Dante flicked his sword and fired a sword wave into the group of zombies, creating an explosion that blasted them around the village.

" Yuugi, when you attack these guys, aim for the brains!" Eirin yelled while firing an arrow into zombie's skull.

" Gotcha!" Yuugi punched a Zombie in the face as it crashed through a large number of zombies gathering behind Dante.

Dante whipped out Ebony and Ivory and fired his demonically infused bullets into the zombies skulls as Nebiros raised his hand into the sky.

" Agidyne!" A large fireball slammed into Dante's back, exploding into a massive burst of fire as Nebiros smirked under his red cloak. His smirk disappeared when he sees Dante walking out of the blaze, fanning himself with his hand and smiling.

" Man! It got warm all of a sudden. What happened?" Dante asked while smirking.

" Hmm. So fire doesn't seem to faze you, does it? Then try this, Ziodyne!" A massive bolt of lightning struck Dante, sending him flying into the air as the ground exploded from the raw power of the attack.

Yuugi jumped into action and flew towards Nebiros with her fist cocked back as several Zombies connected their hands and formed a net over Nebiros as her fist exploded against the net, destroying limb after limb as massive shockwave pushed Nebiros back.

" Hmm. These guys are stronger than I thought, perhaps I should revive stronger undead." Nebiros said as Eirin appeared behind him.

" Moonlit Arrow!" Eirin fired a golden arrow into Nebiros' back, it exploded into golden lights and slammed back in his spine knocking him down as Dante delivered a powerful uppercut with Beowulf.

Several Zombie Zealots slashed Eirin on her back, drawing blood as they pounced on her with the intent to eat her. A large flame blasted the undead away as Eirin turned and saw a brunette girl walking towards her.

" Heh heh! About time you got, Suika!" Yuugi yelled as she kicked a zombie away.

Suika has two long straight oni horns on her head, decorated with ribbons. She wears a tattered pale pink blouse, a long purple and pink skirt, and 3 chain accessories tied to her belt. Her eyes are brown. Most notable about her is the gourd she was drinking from and her height was that of a child's.

" Ah! So what's going on here? Some kind of crazy Zombie party I wasn't invited too?" Suika asked while looking around she spotted Dante slicing through Zombies. " Sparda! I thought you were dead buddy! And you finally got rid of that silly purple jacket, that's good!"

" Eh? How do you know my old man?" Dante asked while blocking a Zealot's sword.

" Met him a few uh... thousand years ago?" Suika said while scratching her head as Eirin shot a zombie that was about to bite her.

" 2000 thousand years ago, Suika and that's not Sparda, that's one of his kids." Yuugi explained as Suika got it.

" Can you save the talk for later? We have to deal with these Zombies right now!" Eirin yelled as she fired a barrage of arrows into the horde as Nebiros stood up and cracked his neck.

" Zandyne!" A massive gust of wind appeared in the center of the mass of Zombies and created a large green tornado that were sucking in the houses and Zombies as the group flew/ran away from the massive tornado.

The village was being destroyed by the attack as Suika charged at the man in red. Nebiros wanted to laugh when he saw a little girl charging at him as she slammed her fist into his stomach, knocking that thought out of his head and the air as well. Nebiros is sent

crashing into the ground as the zombies converged around and watched as the tornado continued to destroy the village.

Yuugi turned towards the massive twister and breathed hard as several veins appeared on her muscular arms. She slammed her hands together, releasing a powerful shockwave that blasted the tornado into nothingness, but blasted the houses it was carrying, flying into the forest and crashing against the ground as Dante flinched.

*"Talk about your powerful applause. I'm kinda glad I don't live here, even if it's hard for me to die, that lady would kill me if I fought her unprepared."* Dante thought as he roundhoused a zombie into the ground with Beowulf.

Dante sensed something coming up from under him as a furry hand tried to grab him as he flipped and landed on the ground a few feet away. Dante watched as an Undead Minotaur rose from the ground with a moss covered battle axe as it snorted. Several more appeared as Suika smiled.

"Ah man! I picked an awesome to get here! Now I get to throwdown with these bullman things! Time to cut loose!" Suika swung the chains on her shackles around as they wrapped around a Minotaur's neck, choking him as Suika grabbed the chains with both hands and yanked it hard. The Minotaur flew into the air as Suika yanked downwards and threw him into the earth behind her as she smirked and took a drink out of her gourd while her face turned even more red.

Eirin watched as the Minotaurs began to advance towards her, spinning their battleaxes as the regulars Zombies charged at her. Eirin quickly jumped back, firing arrows at them as she ducked under a battle axe, allowing it to whisk over her head as she slammed her foot into a Minotaur's stomach.

Dante watched as Eirin fired a silver arrow through the Minotaur's chest, leaving a perfectly round hole as it fell backwards as the axe

fell on its head and split itself down the middle.

" Tch. Those insects are much stronger than I thought. Perhaps I need to summon, much stronger creatures in order to end this fight and track down that rabbit." Nebiros said while summoning more Minotaurs.

Dante rolled under the battleaxe and slammed his foot into the Minotaur's crotch, and followed up with a rolling kick to the skull as he followed up with lightning fast strikes to his chest.

Suika watch as Dante began to combo the crap out of the Minotaur as it flew into the sky. Dante soared after him and slammed his foot into its skull, sending it flying into Nebiros, crushing him underneath the rocks.

" Well. That was easy, now all we have to do is take out these zombies." Eirin said as the ground violently shook.

" I have no more time to waste on you, Belial and Alice are waiting for me to return, so I will allow a perfect companion for you fools to fight." Nebiros said as he opened a portal to Makai and entered it.

The ground exploded as a massive purple arm came out of the ground and almost grabbed Eirin as she flew backwards and saw a massive purple creature arising from the Earth.

" Dear lord. That bastard summoned one of these things to fight us." Dante said as he switched to Rebellion.

" That thing is freaking big! And its ripped... sorta!" Suika said while swinging her arms up and down.

The creature in question was a massive purple beast with several pieces of its flesh missing, namely on its face, right pectoral, its forearms and left horn. Its red eyes were glowing in the darkness. It, for some reason, had long flowing brown, rotten hair.



Dante heard several footsteps behind them as he sees the GPD, Ryuna, Lucci and Kaku approaching them.

" Its a Behemoth... an S-Class Monster here?!" Ryuna yelled while she panicked.

" Is this monster strong?" Kaku asked while unsheathing his swords.

" Strong physical attacks and powerful magic attacks." Ryuna said as Eirin frowned.

" So monsters can use magic? Thats not good." Eirin said as the Zombie Behemoth roared.

" Everyone, focus on the other undead! Leave the Behemoth to the Oni and Eirin!" Ryuna ordered as her policemen roared a battle cry.

" Humph, looks like we'll have to get our hands dirty today, Kaku." Lucci asked as Kaku smirked.

" We should hit that thing with everything we got, this is a creature we've never even heard of before." Kaku answered back.

" Hmmm, I wonder what's worse, this guy or a Sea King?" Lucci asked.

" Does it matter? We'll take it down without having to use our Devil Fruit powers." Kaku said as Lucci jumped into action. Everyone charged at the monsters as the Behemoth roared.

*Meanwhile...*

Both Reimu and Marisa looked beaten up as they glared at Arhiman whom was flying around, firing eye lasers onto the buildings destroying them as they hear the loud roar.

" Damn, this guy is one tough cookie, ze! We've barely even hit this freaking thing!" Marisa said between pants.

" So this is a Monster." Reimu examined as the Arhiman kicked another Evil Eye out of its way.

" Wait a second..." Marisa remembered something as she reached into her hat and pulled out one of Ziden's Demon/Monster Bestiary and began to flip through it. " Uh... hey uh, Reimu. Can you read this?" Marisa asked while handing it Reimu.

" What the-? I can't understand any of this?" Reimu couldn't figure out what the weird letters in the book were. A blue light came out of the book and scanned Reimu.

" Scanning. This Lifeform is incapable of reading English, quickly retranslating the book to Japanese." A female voice spoke as the letters changed to Japanese Kanji.

" Ah, here we go, this is the Arhiman blah blah blah, it's powerful and is normally found in caves, namely Lunar Caves. The best to kill it is too blind it by shoving something through its eye. Beware of its Doom spell, it says." Reimu read aloud as Marisa smirked.

" That's good to know. How'd you get this anyway?" Reimu asked.

" Borrowed it from Eirin when she wasn't looking, ze!" Marisa answered.

" Of course you did." Reimu said as she summoned several Yin Yang orbs around her.

The Arhiman sensed this and focused its attention on the girls as it roared.

### **Boss Battle ( Final Fantasy 4)**

Marisa flew past the Arhiman as it fired several lasers at Marisa. She grazed each of the lasers, gaining more power as she fired several colorful stars into his eye, causing to roar in pain as Reimu appeared above it.

" Dimensional Rift!" Reimu dive kicked the Arhiman in its head, blasting it in the ground as Reimu grabbed her foot. " Damn! That hurt!"

" Maybe you shouldn't do that anymore?" Marisa asked.

" I'm not, almost broke my damn foot." Reimu said as she threw several amulets into the dust cloud, striking the Arhiman multiple times. She threw in several needles and watched as they pierced through its flesh, drawing blood as the creature flew upwards.

A red spark of light appeared in its eye as a shimmer appeared above Marisa's face. The shimmer transformed into a blast of air that slammed into Marisa's forehead, knocking her off of the broom and knocked her hat off.

Reimu quickly flew to catch her friend as Marisa landed on her arms. " That was close. Didn't expect that to happen." Reimu said as she kicked one of those Yin Yang orbs into the Arhiman, stunning it as Marisa pulled out her Mini-Hakkerō.

" I've got this! Love Sign: Master Spark!" Marisa fired her trademark beam into the Arhiman's eye, piercing through it as it blasted through its skull as the laser illuminated the sky.

The Arhiman's body exploded as what appeared to be Yen bills flying out of the clouds. " \*Gasps\* MINE! MINE! MINE! MINE!" Reimu immediately flew and grabbed the money as she rubbed it against her face.

" Those things drop money, that's pretty cool, nice way to earn money." Marisa said as she watched her friend scrambling to catch the money as the other Evil Eyes moved in on her.

*Meanwhile...*

Sora is seen dodging several weblike fibers as the girl wearing a Tsuchigumo mask was flying after him. Sora's arm is seen having a

gash in it as he held it, trying to stop the blood.

" Why do you not fight back, Sora? Have you accepted your punishment for breaking my mask of Hope?" The girl asked as Sora turned around summoned the Hero's Crest.

" I told you, I didn't break your Mask of Hope! Why won't you listen to me?!" Sora asked.

" Because I saw you break it while you were with those white creatures with you." The girl explained.

" I wouldn't work with the Nobodies! That wasn't me!" Sora pleaded as the girl put on a mask that symbolized anger.

" You would lie to my face when you broke my Mask in front of my very eyes? The time for talk is over, let it be known that Hata no Kokoro was the one that killed you this night." Kokoro said while pulling out some fans.

" Tch! Reimu told that some Youkai won't listen to reason. Then I'll just have to force you to believe me!" Sora took his battle stance as Kokoro flew into the air.

Sora observed her clothing before the fight began. Kokoro has waist-length lavender hair, and blank eyes of the same colour. She wears a blue plaid blouse, adorned with buttons of various shapes (from top: red star, yellow circle, green triangle, and purple X). Her salmon skirt is pumpkin-shaped, and lined with holes in the shape of alternating smiling and frowning faces (both are the same pattern, flipped vertically).

### **The Lost Emotion ( Touhou 13.5 Hopeless Masquerade)**

Sora used his keyblade to block a lunge attack from Kokoro as she bounced back from the recoil of the weapon. Kokoro donned a mask of rage as she continued to attack Sora, causing his knees to buckle.

*" This girl is stronger than she looks! I'd better keep my guard up!"*  
Sora thought as he pushed Kokoro back and aimed at her side.

Kokoro jumped to dodge the attack and kicked Sora in the face, stunning him as she quickly swapped her mask to the Tsuchigumo one. Long strands of webbing came out of the mask's mouth and wrapped around Sora's body. Kokoro began to spin around, taking Sora for a spin as she gained some serious momentum.

She severed the threads from her mouth, sending Sora flying through a wall as Kokoro calmly flew after him.

Sora got to his feet and pointed his Keyblade at Kokoro. " Blizzard!" A big chunk of ice flew towards Kokoro and slammed into her face, stunning her as Sora ran up to her and struck her across the chest with his keyblade and followed up two more powerful hits that sent her flying back through the wall as Sora casted Cure on himself, healing his arm.

Kokoro got up on her feet as her mask came off and spun around her with her other masks. Kokoro looked to be thinking as she placed a Fox Mask on her face. " Prepare yourself boy. Roaring Youkai Fox Mask!" Kokoro jumped high into the air and covered herself in a Fox aura as she leapt onto Sora and bit his shoulder with the aura, drawing blood as Sora screamed in pain. " Feel the pain I felt when you took my Hope away."

Sora smacked Kokoro in the face with the keyblade as she jumped away from him as the blood came off of her mask's mouth. Sora crossed her arm as a sphere of light shattered around him, shocking Kokoro as Sora changed into his Valor Form with Hero's Crest and Star Seeker as his keyblades.

Sora charged at Kokoro and began to strike her rapidly with his keyblades, forcing her back with each strike as his keyblades channeled a red light. Sora slammed the keyblades into the ground, creating large red pillars of energy that sent Kokoro into the air. Sora Hi Jumped after her and continued to combo her with his keyblades,

creating white streaks in the sky as he finished his assault with a powerful cross slash that sent her crashing into the earth, creating a massive dust cloud and kicked up several rocks.

Sora fell to the ground tired as walked away from the dust cloud, detransforming as Sora limped forward to find Reimu and Marisa when he felt something wrapped his ankle and slammed him across the wall as he felt a strong hand choking him.

" You put up a better fight than I thought you would, but it is over now." Kokoro said as she pulled out a card and threw Sora into the sky. " Last Word! Dance of Empty-Hearted Masks: Noh of Darkness!" Kokoro chased after Sora, summoning a multitude of weapons into her hands as she dashed past Sora, slashing him and drawing blood as she began to dash through him multiple times. She ended her vicious assault with the naginata as Sora's bloody and unconscious body fell to the ground as she sees a red blur coming towards them.

She descended to the ground as she heard someone clapping behind her. She turned to see Sora clapping and walking towards her while smiling.

" Bravo! Bravo! I was not expecting you to beat the Chosen wielder of the Keyblade, mask Youkai! And to think, all it took for you to attack him was for me to fake breaking this stupid mask! Man you Youkai are foolish creatures!" Sora? boasted as darkness wrapped around him and transformed himself into Phantom.

" No!" Kokoro ran over to Sora and checked his pulse putting a Mask of Sorrow. She became upset that she al killed an innocent boy as part of a cruel man's ploy. She got to her feet and pointed the Naginata at Phantom and charged at him. " You monster! I'll make you pay for what you did to me!" Kokoro was grabbed by a massive arm of darkness and was slammed rapidly into the ground as the arm threw her into the forest as several trees toppled over from the impact.

Phantom reached into his cloak and threw a mask he had hidden away into the forest as he evilly smirked. " I haven't had this much fun since the Great Magician War!" Phantom boasted as he spotted Reimu and Marisa landing behind him as disappeared.

" Hey! Wasn't that Phantom, that ghost guy from the Ultima Brigade, ze?" Marisa asked as Reimu's face was completely paled.

" S-S-S-SORRRRRRAAAAAAAAAA!" Reimu ran over to her injured friend and placed his head as her lap as she was on the verge of crying.

" Dear gods." Marisa ran over to Reimu and Sora as she saw how badly injured Sora was. He had cuts and open wounds all over his body as she sat down on her broom while tipping her hat over her eyes. " We've got to get him to Reisen now! Or he'll die!" Reimu did not respond to Marisa's words. Marisa got off her broom and slapped Reimu across the face to smack some sense into her. " Snap out of it! Sora needs you right now so get a grip, ze!" Marisa words snapped some sense into Reimu as she handed Sora to Marisa.

" Take him to the infirmary... I'll catch up to you soon." Reimu said as she took off her ribbon. Being her friend for so long, she knew that Reimu was about to viciously track down whomever did this to Sora as she flew off to the schoolhouse.

Phantom appeared before Reimu as she glared daggers at the specter that was in front of her.

" Well, Well, well. If it isn't the Hakurei Shrine Maiden, are you mad that I almost got your boyfriend killed?" Phantom asked as he moved his cloaked head to the side, dodging a punch from Yukari as she soared past him and landed by Reimu, now wearing her white and purple dress again.

" Phantom, I should have known you'd try something as twisted as this. Why the hell did you get Sora involved in this?" Yukari asked as Phantom smirked.

" Simple, to get her attention." Phantom pointed at Reimu with his clawed finger as Reimu growled as summoned several Yin Yangs orbs around her.

" Very well then. You have my FULL attention!" Reimu said as she charged at Phantom with Yukari flying after her.

*Meanwhile...*

### **Force Your Way ( Final Fantasy 8)**

The group was not having a good time against the Undead Behemoth as it was tearing through both its ranks and GPD's as well.

Eirin was firing arrows into the creature;s side as it turned and snorted at her. It clawed at the ground as it locked onto Eirin as she began to calculate something. *" This creature is really powerful I never knew the Earth had such powerful monsters, the only ones I've ever faced are the Arhiman, but those are easy to deal with. Keep Focused and keep attacking!"* Eirin told herself as the creature charged at her.

She pulled out a flask filled with a mysterious liquid and threw it at the Behemoth's feet. The Behemoth stepped on it and...

**BOOOOOOOOMMMMMM!**

The Behemoth is sent flying backwards from the large explosion as Lucci and Kaku appeared above the Behemoth with their legs pulled back.

" Twin Rankyaku!" The duo fired 2 large wind blades that fused together and formed a larger blade that exploded against the back of the Behemoth as it roared in pain. The Behemoth stood on its hindlegs and assumed a boxer's stance as it threw several punches at the airborne duo as they dodged around the massive fists, feeling the shockwaves from the fists brushing past their bodies as Yuugi



and Suika charged at its legs and kicked them, knocking him off balance as Lucci and Kaku landed on the ground.

Dante pounds Beowulf together and dashed towards the Behemoth as it quickly recovered and punched Dante into a pile of wood, crashing through it as the Behemoth jumped high into the air and performed an elbow drop on Suika and Yuugi, crushing them underneath it as it roared.

Kaku appeared under the creature's stomach and slashed its stomach with his blades, as it roared in pain. Dante appeared underneath Behemoth and proceeded to rapidly kick the creature into the air, higher and higher with each thunderous kick.

Eirin appeared in the sky with her bow drawn and lightning coursing through her bow and arrow. " Raiden's Arrow!" She fired a very large lightning bolt into the Behemoth's back, shocking it to the core as it roared in anger. Yuugi crawled out of the hole and dragged Suika out of the hole as she sees Yuuka walking towards them, still covered in bandages.

" Looks like you guys are having fun out here. Mind if I lend a hand?" Yuuka asked as she began to remove the bandage over her eye.

Yuuka watched as the Behemoth got its feet, still feeling the effects of the attack as Eirin realized something but wanted to test it. " Yuugi! I want you to punch that thing as hard as you can!" Eirin asked as Yuugi smirked.

" No problem!" Yuugi cracked her knuckles and ran towards the Behemoth as it turned to her and snorted. She slammed her fist straight it's face, releasing a shockwave that tore the ground apart the Behemoth stood its ground against the force.

Eirin then smirked as she realized this creatures weakness. She aimed a magically infused into the creature's back as she noticed that it recoiled in pain when hit with the magic attack. " Everyone! Hit this creature with Magic! It's affected more by Magic than Physical

Attacks!" Eirin shouted as Yuuka pointed her umbrella at the Behemoth.

" Master Spark!" Yuuka fired the massive laser at the creature as it appeared to smirk. It stood on its hindlegs and took the full blunt of the massive laser to the chest as it staggered backwards but remained standing. " Oh my... this isn't good." Yuuka said as the Behemoth grabbed Kaku and Lucci and slammed them into the ground, following up with a powerful punch that sent the duo deeper into the earth.

The Behemoth charged at Yuugi with the intent to headbutt her as she stood her ground and caught the creature's horns under her arms and smirked. Unfortunately... the Behemoth planned for this and lifted his head with enough force to send Yuugi airborne as she soared past the sky before plummeting hard back into the Earth. Yuugi was now unconscious like Suika, Kaku and Lucci as Dante and Eirin gritted their teeth.

" Looks like I've got no choice. Time to kick things up a notch!" Dante said as he sees an arrow flying through the air and lands in the side of the Behemoth as it exploded as Eirin spotted a man jumping down from the sky, wearing all black as he landed next to Dante whom was covered in red runes and lightning.

" Graaaaahhhhh!" Dante released all of that built up energy and transformed into a reptilian demon with Rebellion on his back. Eirin and Yuuka were surprised at Dante's transformation as the ninja next to Dante drew his sword.

" Let us defeat this creature, Dante. So that we may speak." The ninja said as Dante chuckled.

" All right then, Let's slay this Behemoth and party, Ryu!" Dante and Ryu charged at the creature as Eirin and Yuuka charged in with them.

Elsewhere...

The old man from earlier is seen standing in front of 8 robots as he speaks to each of them. " Now listen here, my precious Robot Masters! Each of you has been programmed with a key that can unlock the barrier to our secret base in this... Forest of Magic. I want each of you to go to each of these areas of Gensokyo and cause as much chaos and destruction as you want, but if you are in danger of being destroyed, run. If you are destroyed, then the barrier will get weaker and we will be discovered by those pesky heroes. You are all dismissed!" The man ordered as the Robot Master disappeared into bursts of light.

*Fun Facts:*

*1. Yes, that is a Behemoth from Final Fantasy, those destructive beasts are hell to deal and you see it here.*

*2. Nebiros is from Shin Megami Tensei and takes care of Alice alongside Belial.*

*3. That is the badass Ryu Hayabusa from Ninja Gaiden series.*

*Author's Note: Man, this took forever to finish. It didn't help that I got a PSP from my Co-worker and I bought Birth by Sleep and played the crap out of it. Dear Lord, these next few chapters are going to get crazy.*

# Unlucky Days in the Haunted Mansion

## Main Theme ( Luigi's Mansion)

" You ever get that feeling that something completely horrible is going to happen to yourself?" Ziden asked as everyone raised an eyebrow.

" What makes you say that, Mr. Hero?" Robin asked.

" Well, whenever Master Ziden gets that feeling, something bad really happens to him." Sakuya added, stopping Ziden from saying whatever he was about to say.

" Master? Are you one of Ziden's maids?" Pit asked.

" No, I work for someone else, he is merely my Teacher in the arts of Vampire Hunting and soon, Demon/Monster Hunting." Sakuya explained.

" Ah, that's a goal, at least." Pit replied.

" So, Mr. Angel? How exactly did you get dragged here?" Robin asked.

" Well, I had just fallen asleep after combating Hades' leftover forces after that war, I saw a huge cloaked figure standing over a dark void reaching out to me. He was about to grab me when a bright light appeared behind me and I saw a lady with white wings standing behind me." Pit explained.

" Just like with me." Robin said under her breath.

" She grabbed me and threw me through a portal and I found Lady Palutena right next to me." Pit finished.

" *I think I know who that woman was. It was more than likely Gengetsu, a demon that dwells in the Dream World.*" Mima said from Ziden's mind as he raised an eyebrow.

" And you know this, how exactly?" Yuyuko asked.

" Marisa and Reimu went there when they were younger. Told me when they got back." Mima answered as Ziden sighed.

" I'm never going to get used to this." Ziden said as Pit laughed.

" I guess you're going crazy because you're hearing voices in your head, huh?" Pit joked as Ziden smirked.

" Heh, I guess I am. Now all I have to do is put on a black and red spandex outfit and I'll be certifiably insane." Ziden remarked as everyone else didn't get the reference.

"... I guess. Wait a minute, why are we hearing a voice coming from your head?" Luigi asked.

" An evil ghost with a somewhat nice figure has entered my soul and is doing stuff in my body. I don't know how or when she did it, but I'm sure I'll remember when it happened." Ziden said as Yuyuko sighed.

" At least she didn't steal your body like the other ghosts normally do." Yuyuko added as Ziden chuckled.

" True, but I think we should get going. I don't want to get attacked while we are standing around, doing nothing." Ziden said as he walked near the vine covered door. The vines disappeared as Ziden placed the key in the lock as Tewi and Kirby ran through the door.

" Wait up guys!" Youmu ran after the duo as Patchouli floated past Ziden and went into the dark hallway.

" So Ziden, the Ultima Brigade is back right?" Pit asked as Ziden pinched the bridge of his nose.

" Yes, you and Palutena are coming with us." Ziden answered as Pit pumped his fist into the air.

" Alright! Its time to save the Universe again!" Pit happily said as he ran into the dark hallway as Ziden summoned his keyblade, which looked different.

The guard of the keyblade was jet-black and looked like scorpion claws, inverted on each side. The blade was a segmented black sword with blue flames between them. The teeth of the Keyblade looked like stingers. The Keychain was the skull bulb from the Heartless he got this Keyblade from.

" Not a bad looking Keyblade, Shadow Blaze, huh?" Ziden said as he desummoned the keyblade.

Yuyuko got a glimpse of the Keyblade as she jumped on his back, scaring him from the sudden weight on his back.

" Was that necessary, Yuyuko?" Ziden asked as Yuyuko rested her chin on Ziden's head.

" Yep, onwards!" Yuyuko kicked Ziden's sides, causing him to jump forward.

Robin watched the spectacle and chuckled as she walked into the dark hallway with her allies.

Tewi and Kirby walked down the hallway with the others chasing after them as Luigi's flashlight lit up the hallway. Youmu was holding onto her swords, not wanting to lose them again.

" Only the bathroom is open on this floor. I guess we'll find a key in here." Luigi said as he opened the door to the bathroom.

Everyone looked at the bathtub behind the curtain as Pit sighed.

" I was hoping there'd be a Hot Spring in here." Pit said.

" Who would have a Hot Spring in their Bathroom?" Patchouli asked.

" We do!" Palutena answered.

" How can we hear that Goddess of yours if she's all the way back in the Lab?" Youmu asked.

" Goddess Magic, I guess." Ziden said as Patchouli slapped the back of his head.

" No, you can't just say its magic without any proof. I'm a Magician so I take offense to that silly claim." Patchouli stated.

" Fine, then her Goddess powers." Ziden corrected as Patchouli nodded.

" That's a better answer." Patchouli said as Kirby pulled open the curtains to the bathtub as several Shadow Zealots jumped out as Kirby inhaled them and spat them out as Patchouli blasted them with a fire spell, knocking them out as the lights came on.

A key landed in the bath water as Sakuya walked over to the cold water. Ziden waited until she was kneeling over the tub, reaching into the cold water as she feels a foot on her bottom.

" *OH no. Master Ziden wouldn't dare!*" Sakuya is pushed into the bathtub, falling face first into the bathtub as Ziden chuckled. Ziden didn't even flinch when Sakuya's knives dug into his face... at first.

" Oh dear god! The pain!" Ziden immediately pulled the knives out of his face as he ran out of the room.

" Grr! Now I'm all wet! I freaking hate when he does stuff like this!" Sakuya said while storming off after Ziden as Pit blushed as well Luigi.

" Oh my. Maybe we should tell her that we can see under her clothes now." Patchouli wondered.

" Yeah, we probably should." Youmu added as they left the room and saw that the key goes to the Ballroom.

" Hmm? A Ballroom? I expect it to be filled with those Ghosts or Heartless creatures." Robin said as Youmu opened the door slowly and entered the room with the others behind her.

The room was a large room with two circular mats... or at least they looked like mats.

Youmu and Luigi walked into the room and kept their guards up. Several black orbs appeared in the room as Soldiers, Large Bodies, and a new kind of Heartless appeared.

The Heartless looked like ball with a jagged mouth, yellow eye and three antennae Pit drew out his bow.

" So these are Heartless? What are those Ball looking ones called?" Pit asked as everyone shrugged.

" Darkballs, Pit. They're called Darkballs." Palutena said as everyone looked confused.

" How do you know their names?" Luigi asked.

" With my Goddess Powers! That's how!" Palutena exclaimed.

" That's... sure." Patchouli said as she sighed.

Pit dashed across the room and fired several arrows into the Soldiers, blasting them into the air as Youmu appeared behind them and slashed them across the back. " Demon Fang!" Youmu fired a shockwave at the back of a Large Body, launching it into the air.

Kirby looked around the room, looking for a power to swallow as he turned his head and saw a fireball floating next to him. Kirby inhaled the fire and became Fire Kirby as he waved at Patchouli whom was sitting with Robin next to her.



Kirby wrapped himself in fire and charged forward like a bullet, slamming a soldier against the wall and setting the Soldier ablaze.

Pit turned his bow into blades and slashed several of the Soldiers into the air and fired arrows of light through their bodies, blasting them into Munny and Health orbs.

Luigi ran over to a Darkball and jumped on its head, only for it to look up and close its mouth down on the plumber's legs. "Mama mia!" The Darkball began to spin vertically extremely fast as Luigi became a green blur. It opened its mouth, sending Luigi flying towards Yuyuko as he phased right through her as Tewi giggled at the sight.

The Darkballs disappeared into orbs of darkness as one appeared behind Yuyuko. Yuyuko sensed the creature behind her and spun herself around and smacked the Heartless with her fans as several silver knives were stabbed into its body.

Sakuya kicked the creature into the wall as she continued to throw knife after knife into the creature as it exploded into a dark mist.

"Mega Laser!" Pit fired a large pink laser at the remaining Large Bodies, racking up hits on them as the two mats began to spin.

The Darkballs charged at Kirby and bit him on the back, latching onto him while nibbling on him. Kirby panicked and ran around like a headless chicken as Luigi ran back into the room.

"Tiger Blade!" Youmu performed a rising slash followed by a powerful downward slash, slicing the Darkball in half as the room lit up and the mats stopped spinning.

"Whew, that took a while to do! Now for the key!" Pit ran over to the treasure chest as Patchouli raised her eyebrow at the Angel boy.

"Is that boy really an Angel? I always imagined them to be graceful and adultlike. Not like him." Patchouli said aloud as Robin nodded in agreement.

" I do too. Maybe he's the odd one out?" Robin wondered as Ziden lugged himself into the room.

" You know Sakuya, one of these days, I going to get you back for stabbing me like that." Ziden said as he fell face first onto the ground. " Ow. My face hurts even more now."

" You guys are seriously weird!" Pit said as Luigi chuckled.

" You'll get used to it." Luigi said as Pit sighed.

" Yukari isn't with you guys, is she?" Pit asked.

" Nah, she's probably off doing old hag stuff." Ziden said from the floor while chuckling.

" That's good, that lady scares me." Pit said as Kirby opened the chest and took the key.

" Why does Yukari scare you?" Sakuya asked.

" She always pops up out of nowhere and scares me senseless. And sometimes she flirts with me, its really creepy." Pit said as Kirby unlocked the door and headed into the next room as Tewi noticed it as she jumped onto Ziden's back and crawled under his jacket.

" She's a Pedophile, I always knew it." Ziden said as Tewi's head came of the back his jacket.

" Ah, so warm~!" Tewi was extremely happy where she was right now.

" Ziden... I don't like it when you call her that." Yuyuko said as she walked over to Ziden.

" Its true... hitting on little boys like Pit, that's a Grade A Pedophile right there. All she needs is a white van and she'll fit the bill." Ziden muttered as he felt Yuyuko's cold hand touching his face. " Yuyuko... that's not going to work on me."

" \*Shush\* Sleep..." Yuyuko said as Ziden felt extremely light-headed as he passed out on the floor with drool pouring out of his mouth like a river.

" What the- Did you just-"

" Nope, my powers only makes him pass out for a while because of some amulet he's wearing." Yuyuko said as Patchouli sat back down.

" Wait! She can cause people to pass out? That's a pretty neat power she's got there!" Luigi said as Youmu shook her head.

" No, her power is the ability to invoke Death on someone." Youmu corrected as Luigi and Pit paled.

" That's kinda creepy! She won't do it to us right?" Pit asked.

" Oh heavens no! I don't use my powers irresponsibly!" Yuyuko said as Pit looked at Ziden.

" Really now?" Pit asked.

" Oh, I only do that to him when he upsets me. Its much easier than hitting him with my fans." Yuyuko said.

" Wait a second, where did Mr. Puffball go?" Robin asked.

" Hmm? The chest is empty, you don't think he went ahead, do you?" Patchouli wondered.

" Yeah, he did! He left into the next room as you guys were talking about how weird you people are." Tewi said as everyone frowned at her.

" So why didn't you stop him?" Sakuya asked.

" Because~! I'm so comfortable right now~!" Tewi said while using Ziden's hair like a pillow.

" Maybe this is the something horrible that Ziden was talking about?" Youmu asked.

" Nope, doubt it. Something's going to happen and he's going to get attacked by it, I just know it." Sakuya said as Tewi yawned.

" What makes you say that?" Yuyuko asked.

The room shook for a moment as several white ball shaped ghosts flew through the wall, shocking everyone as a large one with a ruby crown flew past them.

" Mama Mia! Those were Boos!" Luigi said while hiding under a chair, causing it shake.

" Boos? That's a weird name for a ghost." Yuyuko said as she noticed that Youmu wasn't panicking like Luigi.

" Those were ghosts? They look too cute to be ghosts." Robin said as Patchouli agreed.

" Huh? I didn't get scared of those ghosts, I wonder why?" Youmu wondered as Ziden gurgled on his drool.

" How long is he going to be like that?" Pit asked.

" A few more minutes!" Yuyuko added as Patchouli lifted Ziden to his feet and placed him on her back and floated towards the door.

Luigi heard a jingle coming from his pocket as he opened his Gameboy Horror and listened to the message he was getting from E. Gadd.

" Well, at least you can encounter those ghosts and not pass out, that's good." Patchouli said as Youmu nodded.

" Wait, how are you carrying Ziden like that? You don't look like the strong type, you look really sickly." Pit asked as Patchouli sighed.

" Ziden's very light, not much heavier than my books, so he's no problem to carry." Patchouli explained as she opened the door.

" Wait! E. Gadd says we have to come back to the lab for an upgrade for the Gameboy Horror!" Luigi said as Yuyuko sighed,

" Then you can go back and get the Upgrade as we open more rooms and get more keys." Yuyuko said as Luigi began to shake.

" B-B-B-By myself!?" Luigi asked as Yuyuko began to push him into the hallway.

" Please get going Mr. Plumber, we don't have all day." Robin urged as Luigi ran though the hallways, as fast as he could.

" Where do we go now?" Youmu asked.

" Hurgle flurgle. Gonna... eat some... waffle dragons... bananas." Ziden was mumbling something in his sleep as he tried to roll over but he couldn't move in Patchouli's shoulder as his hand landed on something soft as Patchouli blushed. " Ah... soft... pillows... big as... watermelons."

Patchouli's hand quickly smacked Ziden across the face, knocking him off of her shoulder as he rolled down the hallways and turned at the corner somehow.

" After him before some ghost grabs him, Pit!" Palutena ordered as Pit took off down the hallway with everyone chasing after him.

Ziden rolled into the door to another bathroom as they noticed that the door was locked but they could feel that someone was inside the room.

" Somebody's in there... doing whatever it is they're doing in there." Tewi said as her head popped out of Ziden's hood.

Patchouli knocks on the door gently. " OCCUPIED!" A loud booming voice stated.

" Let us in! We're looking for keys to open up the mansion's locked areas!" Pit yelled as the voice refused to open the door.

" Hmmm. We may need another solution in order to get in there." Palutena suggested as a thought entered Patchouli's head. Normally she would have done the plan herself but she could not humiliate herself like that so she whispered it to Yuyuko.

Yuyuko didn't feel like doing it so she whispered it to Youmu as she went to Tewi, only for Yuyuko to calmly grab her shoulder and shook her head as Youmu's face turned red as she approached the door.

Youmu swallowed hard and approached the door and knocked on it. " Please let me in sir, I really need to use the bathroom!" Youmu said with an extremely red face.

" Ummm, I'm currently using it right now." The voice said as Robin raised an eyebrow.

" Pretty please!? I really need to go, right now!" Youmu pleaded as she continued to turn more red.

"... Alright, you can come in here, but don't let any of those Boos in here!" The voice said as the door unlocked itself as Youmu entered the bathroom.

The door closed behind her as they heard her gasp. " You're not a ghost! You're one of the Mushroom People from Mario's world!" Youmu yelled as the other person shrank into the corner.

" DOn't hurt me! I have a Wife and 3 kids!" The Toad screeched as Ziden groaned.

" Well now, I guess it was just one of those Toads hiding in this bathroom." Yuyuko said as they heard several smacks coming from inside the room. Youmu walked out of the room holding a gold key in her hand.

" Why was there a Toad here anyway?" Pit asked.

Ziden began to get to his feet as he shook his head and cracked his back and neck while yawning.

" Oh man. That was a nice little nap. Eh?" Ziden looked around and saw that they were in the dark hallway. " Weren't we in the ballroom a few minutes ago?" Ziden asked as Patchouli explained what happened.

" So where does this key go?" Pit asked.

" No idea. Luigi went back to the lab so we have no idea." Patchouli said while sighing.

" Screw it, try it on every door we come across and we'll find the one that it fits in." Ziden suggested as they started to go to each door and try the key in each one until they find the one that it unlocked. It unlocked the door to the Fortune Teller's Room.

Everyone looked around the dark room, looking for an enemy to appear as nothing happened.

" There are no enemies in this room." Palutena alerted as everyone sighed.

" So how do we light up this room then? I thought we had to wreck some ghost or Heartless faces to light the rooms up." Ziden said as he sat down in the chair.

Kirby approached the door and jumped up, turning the door knob as it opened. " Poyo! Poyo!"

" Hey look, that door is open, maybe something in there lights up something in here." Patchouli suggested as she floated to the door.

" Lets go guys! Its time to banish the darkness with the power of Light!" Pit yelled as dashed into the room as everyone else followed them into the room.

It was a large room with a large mirror along the wall as everyone looked into the mirror.

" Its just a mirror room, I highly doubt that something will happen in this room." Robin said as several ghosts appeared in the mirror.

When everyone turned around to see the ghosts, there was nothing there. They were all confused until Youmu felt something bearhug her from behind. " Gah! Get this thing off of me!"

Robin looked into the mirror and saw the blue ghost hugging her from behind. She crossed her arms and focused on the mirror. " Dos Fluer: Clutch!" Two of her arms sprouted on the Blue Grabbing Ghosts and everyone heard a loud snapping noise as the ghost screamed in pain and exploded into blue dust.

" We have to fight these guys, using the mirror to see the ghosts? This is going to be a bit annoying." Patchouli said as she took flight and fired a swarm of fire balls at the ghosts.

Pit fired several charged shots at the ghosts blasting them into the wall as Sakuya threw several silver knives at the ghosts, taking them out as Ziden yawned.

Ziden watched his teammates finished the enemies in the room as the lights in the room lit as a red chest appeared.

" Alright! Tlme to get a key!" Pit ran over to the chest and opened it, obtaining a burning medallion as he looked at it.

Soon, the medallion began to burn his hand as he threw it at Ziden, whom handled it with no problems. " Huh? What's this thing?" Ziden wondered as they left into the Fortune Teller's Room.

" Maybe its something we can to unlock something?" Tewi asked as Luigi entered the room, sweaty and tired.



" Mama mia, catching Boos sure is a pain. I'm exhausted!" Luigi said as E. Gadd called him again and he listened to what he wanted to say.

" Hmm? Guys, all of those candles are unlit, maybe we need to light them." Pit asked as Ziden shot fire balls at each of the candles, light them as a key landed on Kirby's head as Luigi walked over to the group.

" Hey guys. E. Gadd told me that there are these elemental medals that can give my vacuum new powers." Luigi said as Ziden threw the medallion into his face. Luigi's face caught on fire as he ran around trying extinguish his burning face as Ziden chuckled.

" Oh man, I'm such a terrible person." Ziden said while wiping a fake tear from his eye.

" I'm glad you know that, Ziden." Palutena said as OPatchouli sighed.

" Why would you throw that in my face?! That really burned!" Luigi asked as Ziden shrugged.

" Just felt like doing it. You looked cold and wet." Ziden said as wiped his nose.

" I was hot and sweaty!" Luigi yelled as

" Meh, I don't care. It made you feel better that's all that counts." Ziden said as Patchouli slapped him in the back of his head.

" Well, this looks like one of the medallions that E. Gadd told me about, I swear, it feels like I've done this before." Luigi said as he placed the medal on one of the slots on the Polterguist 2000.

" So now where do we go?" Pit asked as Ziden sensed something big standing outside the door and drew his blade.

" Luigi, Get away from that door." Ziden warned as Luigi away from the door as it was blasted off its hinges. Through the doorway was a mysterious figure cloaked in a brown robe with glowing yellow eyes.

" Hmm? What is that creature, I can't even sense any magic coming from it." Patchouli wondered as she summoned a fire ball to her fingertip.

" Hehehehheheh! I found where you fools are! Now then, prepare to die in the name of Lord Zemus!" The cloaked man yelled as the fireball slammed into his body and sent him flying through several walls. " Grahhhhh! Scarmiglione will not be beaten so easily!" Scarmiglione yelled as the walls repaired themselves.

" Huh. That guy works for Zemus. He didn't look like the type to hire weaklings." Sakuya said as Ziden chuckled.

" Yeah, I wonder if he was sent just to get killed by us." Ziden added.

" I doubt it, he seemed different from the creatures we faced before. Like, he wanted us to kill him." Patchouli said as she walked to the door.

" Wait a sec, Zemus is the Final Boss to Final Fantasy 4! That means that we just killed Scarmiglione, the Archfiend of Earth!" Pit realized as Ziden facepalmed.

" How the hell did I not realize this!? I loved playing Final Fantasy 4 when I was younger!" Ziden felt stupid for this.

" Final Fantasy 4? What's that?" Robin asked.

" A videogame from our world." Ziden said as Youmu and Yuyuko sighed.

" Of course it is. That's all you do in your free time." Yuyuko pointed as Ziden shrugged.

" Well, what did this Scarmiglione do in this game, Ziden?" Youmu asked.

" Well, you fought him once and he died pretty easily in there too... but..." Ziden scratched his head as he tried to remember what happened.

" He came back in a stronger form and back attack the heroes." Pit finished as Ziden nodded in agreement.

" Good, then we just have to be on our guard until we encounter him again." Tewi said as she looked around behind Ziden's head.

" Correct, Ms. Rabbit. We just need to be on guard and we won't get sneak attacked." Robin said as Kirby ran out of the room with the key.

" Kirby just ran off again, why does he always do that?" Luigi asked.

" He acts on impulse like a certain spiky haired man here." Patchouli said as Ziden coughed.

" Well, lets head into the hallway until Kirby gets back with the key." Pit suggested as Ziden walked out of the room and sat against the wall.

Everyone went into the hallway and sat down waiting for Kirby to come as Patchouli rested her head on Ziden's shoulders.

" So Mr. Hero?" Ziden turned his towards Robin whom was asking him a question. " I was wondering, have you ever been evil?"

Ziden blinked at the question before he smirked. " Yeah, a few times in the past. It gets a bit boring being a Hero all the time. you know." Ziden said.

" What have you done as a villain?" Youmu asked.

" You know, simple stuff. Terrorize people, killed those whom attempted to oppose me, enslaved planets, destroyed planets." Ziden listed off as Luigi sighed.

" How are you classified as Legendary Hero if you do all that horrible stuff." Luigi asked before taking a sip of coffee.

" Because I save the Universe or the Galaxy on a weekly basis, unlike some slackers I know." Ziden said while snorting.

" I guess, but does that really cover up the fact that you've done such terrible things?" Youmu asked.

" Meh, I just assume it does, I mean, I get several people that try to kill for revenge for the death of someone dear to them that I caused, and I usually kill after I play with them for a while." Ziden said as Patchouli raised an eyebrow.

" Like how Remilia normally plays with the Vampire Hunters that try and kill her?" Patchouli asked.

" Yep, I gauge their strength like that." Ziden said.

" Hmm, so it seems that even heroes have some dark sides." Robin said.

" Meh, I have met some people have kicked my ass for it." Ziden said.

" You have a very dark past Ziden, and thats a sad thing." Yuyuko said as Ziden scratched his head.

" I'm not talking about my past to you people." Ziden said as Patchouli smirked.

" Your clone already told us what happened when you were little." Patchouli said as Ziden frowned.

" Why'd you hide that from us, Ziden? You know you could tell us anything." Yuyuko said as she placed her hand on Ziden's shoulder.

" Hmph, I don't have to tell you guys everything about me, I don't have to tell you anything." Ziden said as Patchouli looked him in the eyes.

" You wouldn't even tell me?" Patchouli asked.

"... If I did, you wouldn't be allowed to anything to anyone else though." Ziden said while breathing out a puff of fire.

" So you do trust me? That's sweet... even with the hidden threat." Patchouli said as Yuyuko frowned.

" So you would have never told me?" Yuyuko asked.

" No, then Yukari would have learned about it and then get on my case about it." Ziden said as Yuyuko walked away from him and sat down.

" So are you good or evil?" Pit asked.

" I'm Neutral. I'm a Hero when the worlds need me and Villain when its too peaceful. I don't want the other heroes to get too soft." Ziden explained as he got up.

" I guess..." Youmu said as she saw Kirby running towards them.

Kirby immediately ran down another hallway and took off as Ziden sighed.

" Damn clone. Telling these guys my past like that, I'm kicking his ass after we get out of here." Ziden said as he walked down the hallway after Kirby.

Patchouli floated after him as they slowly walked towards him.

" Lady Yuyuko, are you alright?" Youmu asked as Yuyuko smiled behind her fan.

" You would think that I would be upset with him saying that to me, but I'm glad he's still same person I know." Yuyuko said as they flew after Ziden.

" what a strange bunch of people." Robin said as she walked after the group as Pit and Luigi looked at each other.

" Do you trust Ziden after hearing all that Pit?" Luigi asked.

" Not as much as I would like but I still trust him a little. I mean he's trying to save the worlds with us." Pit said as Luigi nodded.

" That is true Pit, Ziden is very strange with his methods but he gets the job done." Palutena said as they ran after the group as they entered a dining room. They spotted Ziden digging around in a chest, pulling out gold bars and bills as he kissed a large emerald before putting it in his jacket. " Although I question his greediness sometimes though."

" Hey! Times are tough! I need all the money I can get." Ziden said as Luigi used his vacuum on a fire, as a fiery ghost came out and he absorbed it into the Poltergeist 3000.

The group moved into the kitchen which was lit up with a large blue chest unopened as they see Kirby go through that door and into a backyard of sorts. " Man, that puffball sure can clear a room fast." Ziden said as heard growling coming a certain person's stomach.

Said Certain person was rummaging through the fridge, devouring any food and all food that appeared in her path. Robin and Pit were surprised at how much the woman could hold down as Ziden and Youmu shook their head at the sight.

Luigi opened the chest and obtained a blue medallion that seemed to be leaking endless amounts of water.

" Sweet, I found a Medal!" Luigi said as he smiled and performed a thumbs up.

" So you can absorb water ghosts now right?" Robin asked.

" Yeah! Now I got fire and water!" Luigi declared as he sprayed fire from his Vacuum Cleaner.

" How in the world is a Vacuum Cleaner capable of spraying out fire anyway?" Pit asked.

"..." Ziden was about to say something when he felt a glare from Patchouli. " Nintendo Logic."

" Nintendo Logic? What's Nintendo?" Youmu asked.

" Don't worry about it. Outside World humor you'll never understand." Ziden said.

" Nintendo? You mean those people who make our games right?" Pit asked.

" Yep, right on the money kid." Ziden said as he opened the door and saw Kirby flying over the wall of the open yard.

" Hey! Wait up Kirby!" Luigi had finished sucking up the water ghost and ran outside with the others.

Ziden noticed the doghouse near the wall as Luigi noticed a green bulb growing in the dirt.

" Hmm, I don't know why, but I feel that by watering this plant, I'm going to get something useful out of this." Luigi said to himself as he watered the plant as a sprout grew.

Ziden looked at the large wall that loomed over them as he stepped back and focused his on his left foot. Ziden kicked the ground and ran on the air as he leapt over the wall, doing a flip as landed on the other side.

Sakuya breathed in deep as she dashed at the wall, running up it as she grabbed the ledge and climbed over the wall flawlessly and perfectly.

Patchouli simply flew over the wall with an emotionless expression.

Yuyuko simply walked through wall as Robin used her Devil Fruit powers to climb over the wall as Youmu approached the wall.

Youmu ran up the wall and flipped off of it as her half ghost appeared next to her feet . She used the blob as another wall and bounced off of it, flying over the wall and a loud thud was heard coming from behind the wall.

" Mukyu~."

Luigi was about to jump over the wall when he remember something vital about Pit. Luigi walked over to the wall, kneeled down next to it while clasping his hands together.

" Thanks Luigi!" Pit ran towards Luigi and slammed his right foot onto Luigi's hands and vaulted over the wall.

Luigi swung his hand around as he jumped over the wall and his face turned blue.

The area they were in now in a graveyard with several graves around as Tewi felt very uncomfortable.

" Calm down Tewi.. Nothing's going to happen since you're in my jacket." Ziden said as he walked to a peculiar grave as he bent down to read it. " Here lies... Bogmire? That name sounds familiar somehow."

Ziden turned his back on the grave and walked down the steps as he felt a presence behind him. Tewi ducked her head in the jacket as Ziden unsheathed his sword and spun around to see Scarmiglione standing in front of the grave.



" I told you I would return! Now it is time to ssssssmite you for Lord Zemusssssss!" Scarmiglione's body began to grow in size as the wall next to one of the graves exploded and everyone saw a horrifying sight.

A large creature wearing a trenchcoat came out of the hole holding a rocket launcher in one hand and a struggling Zealot whom he was holding by his skull. " ZIDEN ICRIM!" The creature roared as he squeezed the Zealot's skull.

**CRUUNNNNNNCHHHHH!**

Everyone watched as brain matter and blood sprayed out from the creature's hand as it through the body away and charged at Ziden. It shoulder charged him through the wall, taking him into a courtyard as the others turned their attention to Scarmiglione.

The Red Haired woman was standing atop the balcony as she glared at Ziden while gripping her swords. " So, all I have to do is kill that man and me and my friends will be freed from his trap? It won't be easy if his henchmen get involved, but I'll manage for Natsu and the others." The woman said to herself as the creature roared.

*Fun Facts:*

- 1. Scarmiglione is from FF4 and is one of the Four Elemental Archfiends that appear in the game.*
- 2. BOgmire is normally the boss of Area 2 in this part of Luigi's Mansion, but not this time.*
- 3. Resident Evil fans know who that trenchcoated monster is.*
- 4. It seems that our Mystery Red Head has been tricked by a mystery person.*

*Author's Note: Another Chapter done and this shows how long this arc is going to be, don't worry, alot of Story is revealed in this arc.*

*Well, even it is from one person, I'm very happy that I'm getting more reviews fro this story. Don't be afraid! I'd love to see your opinions on this story!*

# Mystery of the Chaos Emerald

**Darklight** : Don't you worry, Sora will get better and Reimu helps him to recover, growing together as friends as their relationship blossoms into true beauty.

---

## Decisive Battle ( Final Fantasy 6)

Yuuka and Eirin stared at Dante's new form. He was now fully armored in a reptilian like armor. He had several spikes adorning his legs as red electricity arced across his body.

" What happened to him?" Eirin asked.

" This is what happens when a Demon or Devil releases his powers and restraints. This is a Devil Trigger." Dante said as he grabbed Rebellion and swung it, creating a massive gash in the ground as the Behemoth.

" Heh! So this is a Devil Trigger huh? Impressive." Yuuka said as she watched Yuugi and Suika get to their feet.

Ryu unsheathed his katana as he eyed the creature. " I've heard of how powerful you creatures truly are. I wonder if you are worthy of facing my blade." Ryu wondered as he grabbed his blade with two hands as his black scarf fluttered in the wind.

" That man looks like a stereotypical ninja." Ryuna said as she kicked a zombies head.

" Hayabusa... I've heard of that clan from my father." Kotohime said as she bombarded several Minotaurs with bullets.

" Who are they?" Eirin asked while firing arrows at the behemoth.

" A clan of Ninjas said to be descendants of the Dragon God, the same one whom created this land." Kotohime explained as Ryu dashed through several Zombies as their heads flew into the air.

Ryu quickly performed a backflip, dodging a battleaxe from a minotaur as he pulled kunai out and threw them at the creature's chest, piercing through its undead flesh as Dante slashed the creature in half at inhuman speeds.

Dante jumped into the air and whipped out Ebony and Ivory while aiming at the Undead Behemoth. Dante fired the powerful bullets into the creature, creating small explosions on the creature's back as Suika wound up her chain like a ball & chain.

She swung the chain at the Behemoth and it smashed against the creature's jaw, knocking it upwards as Eirin fired an arrow into its chest as it exploded into blue bullets.

The Blue Bullets flew out of the creature's chest and slammed back into it, as he roared in pain. The Behemoth slammed its fists into the ground, releasing a shockwave that traveled along the ground as Dante appeared behind the Behemoth.

Dante slashed the creature on the back, smashing it into the ground as Ryu dashed past the creature. Each time he dived past the creature, he slashed one of the Behemoth's limbs, leaving white streaks and blood where he struck the creature.

The Behemoth jumped into the air and slammed into ground, blasting everyone back with the amount of force when he struck the ground as Yuugi charged at the creature with her fist pulled back.

Yuugi's fist slammed into the Behemoth's face, causing it to jerk to the left as spit flew out of its mouth as it got sent flying into a building as Dante landed next to her.

Yuuka pointed her umbrella at the Behemoth as it charged out of the building and charged towards Dante and Yuugi as magic gathered at

the tip.

Dante and Yuugi jumped out of the way as Yuuka unleashed her massive laser at the Behemoth, blasting it back as Ryu jumped into the air while holding a bow.

Ryu unleashed a storm of explosive arrows into the creature's back, stunning it as Dante jumped into the air as lightning surged through his fists.

" Oraaaahhhh!" Dante roared as he punched lightning bolts at the Behemoth, blasting the creature's body in the ground as Yuugi ran towards the creature.

Yuugi landed a series of punches and kicks to the Behemoth's chest, sending it airborne and Suika slammed one of her chains in the Behemoth's spine.

Dante spun Ebony and Ivory around his fingers and pointed them at the airborne Behemoth. His guns cackled with red electricity as he focused his sights on the falling Behemoth.

" Jackpot!" Dante fired two large red bullets at the Behemoth as they spiraled around each other and combined into a powerful laser that blasted the Undead Creature into a building as it roared in pain.

The Behemoth got to its feet and roared as it slammed its fist into the ground.

The Behemoth stood on its hind legs and grabbed its horns.

" Uh? What's that thing doing?" Suika asked as Behemoth roared and ripped out its horns as Dante detransformed.

THE Behemoth's horns transformed into large claymores as it spun them around and roared.

" Holy crap! I didn't know they could do that!" Yuugi yelled as the Behemoth leapt into the air and spun itself like a buzzsaw as it dove

towards Dante.

Dante blocked the attack with Rebellion and held his ground as the creature tried to push him back.

Ryu ran up the Behemoth's back and slashed the nape of its neck, striking its exposed spine directly as Eirin threw a flask into the open wound.

**Kaboooooooooom!**

The Behemoth is knocked to the ground from the force of the explosion as Dante rapidly stabbed it across the face with his Million Stabs technique.

Yuugi and Suika grabbed large boulders and slammed them into the Behemoth's back as it spun around and smacked Dante through a building.

Ryu threw several shuriken into its eyes as it rolled forward and vaulted into the air while raising its blades into the heavens.

It slammed its blades down, releasing a shockwave that blasted everyone back as Yuugi and Suika landed on the creature's back.

Suika and Yuugi began to rapidly punch the creature in the spine with ground shattering blows as the Behemoth tried to shake the duo off of its back as Dante jump kicked the creature in the jaw with Beowulf equipped.

The behemoth fell backwards as Yuugi and Suika leapt off of his back as several vines wrapped around its body as it struggled to break free.

" Gotcha!" Yuuka commanded her plants to constrict the massive beast as Eirin aimed her bow into the air.

" I've got him! Storm Volley!" Eirin fired an unholy barrage of arrows into the air as they rained down onto the Behemoth, blasting it with

explosive arrows while it fell on its back and roared.

The Behemoth tore free from its binds and threw its massive blade at Eirin. Eirin jumped to the side to dodge the massive blade as it slashed her side, knocking her to the ground as the beast charged towards her with its weaponless hand pulled back.

It tried to punch her into the ground, only for its fist to be knocked away by Yuugi's punch. Dante appeared underneath it with light gathered around his fist.

" Eat this! Volcano!" Dante slammed his fist into the ground, releasing an explosion of light that threw the Behemoth on its back as it rolled around in pain. The Behemoth's flesh was smoking as it waved its claymore around wildly, attempting to hit something while roaring.

" Whoa, I don't think it liked that attack!" Suika noted as the Behemoth struggled to get to its feet.

" This is expected, undead creatures are weak to light based attacks." Ryu explained.

" That means that if we keep hitting him with Light based attacks, he'll go down faster?" Yuugi asked.

" Yes, Dante keep blasting him with those attacks of yours and this battle will be much easier." Ryu said as Dante remembered something important.

" Wait a sec, aren't Healing Potions effective against these guys?" Dante asked as Ryu nodded.

" Yes, because they are made from Healing Magic which is Light Based, so using any form of healing items against this beast would be useful." Ryu said as Dante smiled.

" Then that means, we could shove Healing Potions down this thing's throat and kill it!" Suika said as Eirin nodded.

" I could whip up a powerful healing potion to take care of this creature, I'd need some time though!" Eirin stated as Ryu and Dante watched the Behemoth get to its feet.

" We'll deal as much damage as we can while you make the potion." Ryu charged forward with Dante following him.

The Behemoth slammed its blade into the Earth, creating a massive crater that caused several houses to be swallowed up as Suika and Yuugi slid down the side of it.

The Behemoth flicked its sword and fired a large green sword wave at the duo as they dodged the attack while being surprised that it could do that.

Ryu jumped into the air while red energy surrounded his blade. He performed a spin attack that released a large volley of red spinning blades that homed in on the creature and rapidly slashed its body as it struck Ryu with the flat of its blade and launched him into the ground.

Dante slide under the creature and pulled his fist back as light gathered in his fist. " Rising Dragon!" Dante performed a powerful leaping uppercut that struck the Behemoth, dead-center in its ribs as a loud audible crack was heard.

Dante followed up with a powerful spin kick and an explosive discharge of pure light that stunned the creature as Suika slammed her chain on the creature's head like a hammer, smashing it into the ground.

Ryu was standing a far distance away from the creature as he formed several hand signs as several runes appeared around him. " Art of the Inferno!" The runes lit on fire as they combined to form a



large fire dragon that roared and flew towards the Behemoth as it took off its left arm as it roared in pain from losing a limb.

The Behemoth fell to its knees as Ryuna watched from afar and knew what was about to happen next.

Large amounts of magical energy came from the weakened Behemoth as everyone felt an extremely dangerous object approaching them from above.

Their eyes widened when they saw a large Meteor coming down towards them as most of them panicked on the inside.

Suika calmly flew into the air and pointed her hand at the large Meteor for a few seconds as she began to swing her chains like fans before she slammed the chains into the meteor, causing it violently explode into pieces as Dante and Ryu's shocked expressions were quickly with the debris of the Meteor hitting their faces.

The Behemoth was also shocked as Eirin snuck up behind the creature with a vial of green liquid as she threw it into the monster's mouth, forcing it to swallow it as lurched upwards with smoke coming out of its mouth.

It began to move around erratically as green slime came out of its mouth as it began to fly out all over the place as everyone became covered in it as Yuuka smiled and pointed her umbrella at the creature.

Dante noticed something large and red in the sky as he smirked. "Looks like the jackass is about to killsteal us." Dante said as Ryu smiled underneath his mask.

"Indeed. We should back away, in case he misses... again." Ryu said as he ran out of the crater.

Yuuka noticed the red glow grow bigger in size as everything felt hotter.

" I'M BACK! FLARE BOMBER!" A familiar voice yelled as the red light collided with the Behemoth, causing a large fiery explosion that blasted Yuuka back as Suika whistled.

" Everyone's favorite clone is back." Dante said as someone walked out of the fire with a smirk on his face.

" No need to fear, everyone's favorite badass is here save the day!" Ziden exclaimed while striking a pose.

Yuuka made her way into the crater as Ziden spotted and whistled. " I thought I sent you into the Dream World?" Yuuka asked as she dusted off her skirt.

" I'm sorry what?" Ziden seemed confused on what this... strangely attractive woman was saying.

" That's his clone he uses to do stuff when he's occupied." Dante explained as Yuuka nodded.

" Good idea, why haven't I ever thought to do that? It would make playing with people so much more fun." Yuuka said with a sadistic tone.

" I'd let you play with me anytime lady." Ziden said as Dante facepalmed.

" I sure didn't miss you all that much, flirting with the woman that killed you, while one of your wives is right over there." Dante said while pointing at Yuugi whom was cracking her knuckles.

" Wait what?" Ziden was confused.

" It will have to wait, I am quite parched after that battle." Ryu said as Eirin noticed something about his arm as he walked past them and towards the schoolhouse.

" So, mom ended up meeting my Harem?" Ziden asked as Dante nodded. " Cool, I hope she's not still sore about what the original did

to her for interfering with my love life."

" She seemed a little mad about it, but not that much." Dante said as Ziden felt a thunderous blow to his head.

" OH GOD!" Ziden fell to his knees as he looks behind him and sees a blue skirt and instantly knew who it belonged to. " Hey... boss."

" Ah, I though you were the Original, where is he?" Eiki asked as he shrugged.

" He's in the Dream World right now, he might not be out until... a few hours from now." Dante said as Eiki sighed.

" Great, Komachi! Hurry up and get over here!" Eiki ordered as everyone saw a lagre grey creature carrying a sleeping Komachi before dropping her to the ground.

" What the hell is that thing?" Yuuka asked.

" Hey! Don't call my Dusky a thing!" Komachi said as she sprang awake and saw Dusky looking around with its single red eye.

" Why'd you bring Dusknor with you? Doesn't he help you on that river thing?" Ziden asked as she poked him in the forehead with the butt of her scythe.

" Because I can, he's my Poker Man, right?" Komachi said as Dusknor scratched his head.

" Pokemon." Ziden corrected as Eiki sighed.

" Well because of Dusknor, this Pokemon you call it, her work has been improving alot. SO I have a personal request for your Original when he reaches the world that this creature is from." Eiki leaned next to the clone and whispered something into his ear.

Ziden was listening carefully as Yuuka was calmly twirling her umbrella on her shoulder while watching Ziden's reaction. Ziden's

face went to a shocked one pretty fast as he shook his head quickly.

" Sorry boss, but what you're asking is pretty much impossible."  
Ziden said as Eiki raised an eyebrow.

Yuugi looked at the Dusknair as it floated off the ground as she got an idea in her head.

So did Yuuka and Eirin. " Why is that Ziden? Can't you just run around and find this Pokemon for me?" Eiki asked.

" Not that simple, the Pokemon you want me to catch for you isn't something I can find easy, in fact, I don't even know where to look for it." Ziden said as Yuuka came up behind him.

" Would there happen to be any flower related Pokemon? I'd love some for my garden." Yuuka asked.

" Yes, I'll get ya some, or rather I'll convince him to." Ziden said as Komachi sighed.

" You know he's going to kill you because you told everyone your past, right?" Komachi asked as Ziden turned pale.

" Oh crap, he found out about that!? He's going to freaking kill me!"  
Ziden began to panic as Yuuka raised her eyebrows.

" Why would he kill him?" Yuuka asked.

" Because Ziden doesn't like people to know about him being a kill happy child and a villain in his free time." Komachi explained as Yuugi stretched her back out.

" You're a Villain in your free time? I thought you were a hero?" Yuugi asked.

" I am, I just get bored and decided to cause some mischief and destruction." Ziden said as he covered his mouth. " Damn it! Now he's really gonna kill me!"

" I'd say so, ze!" Everyone looked up and saw Marisa flying down towards them with Sora unconscious on the back of it.

" What the hell happened to Sora!?" Ziden asked, completely forgetting about breaking the Original's Number One Rule.

" That Ghost Guy must have attacked him! You know, that guy we saw in the Underworld!" Marisa said as Ziden's eyes flashed red as he ran off into the distance.

" I'd better get Sora to the Infirmary before those wounds get... and I should probably get a bed ready for the clone." Eirin said as she picked up Sora from the broom flew towards the schoolhouse as Suika elbowed Yuugi in the hip playfully.

" So that's the kid that said that he'd beat you one day and make you his wife? He sure did get stronger the last time we saw him." Suika said as Yuugi yawned.

" He sure did. Of course, I'm going to see just how strong he really is." Yuugi slammed her fist into her hand.

" I can't wait to see that fight too!" Suika said as she made her way to the Schoolhouse.

*Elsewhere in the Human Village...*

Reimu and Yukari are seen flying around to dodge several pillars of darkness coming at them as Reimu threw several amulets at them. The darkness dispersed as Phantom slammed his hand into the ground as more darkness chased them.

" Looks like Phantom hasn't been changing his fighting style since we last fought him." Yukari said as she jumped into a gap to avoid getting hit by the darkness.

" Why would I need to? I seem to remember that you and that clone had trouble even getting close to me with this fighting style."

Phantom stated as he flew into the air with darkness surrounding him.

### **The 13th Struggle ( Kingdom Hearts 2)**

Reimu flew towards Phantom with several needles in her hands as she disappeared in thin air. Phantom raised an eyebrow before he smirked.

" Demon-Sealing Dimensional Rift!" Reimu appeared behind Phantom and threw several at him as they completely flew through his body, not even harming him in the slightest.

" Oh my, was that supposed to do something, little girl? Because that tickled." Phantom said as a wave of darkness appeared by Reimu and slammed into her back. It sent her flying into the ground as he bent back to avoid a wave of lasers from one of Yukari's gaps.

Phantom smirked as he clapped his hands together. " Shadow Embargo!" A purple mist fired from his hands and moved lightning fast towards Yukari. She quickly duck into a gap to avoid the attack.

" Like I would fall for the same trick twice!" Yukari opened a gap directly behind Phantom as she punched him hard in the face, sending him flying into the ground as Yukari calmly landed on the ground.

Reimu crawled out of the ground and got to her feet with rage still filling her heart as she feels the area heat up.

" Dark Nova!" Pitch black flames erupted from the ground as began to consume the buildings around them as they leapt towards Reimu.

" Cautionary Border!" A blue barrier formed in front of her as the flames slammed into it. Phantom's flames began to shatter her barrier as Yukari's lasers slammed in his back and slammed him into the ground. Reimu reached into her sleeve and pulled out a spell card. " Spirit Sign: Fantasy Seal!"

Reimu fired her trademark homing colorful bullets at Phantom as he took the full blunt of the attack as it blasted him through several walls. The bullets blasted him into a wall as they bombarded him with unholy barrage of light.

Reimu refused to stop the attack as it razed the area around him as Yukari grabbed Reimu by the shoulders and tried to stop her from going overboard, only for her to push Yukari away.

Reimu turned back to where Phantom was and saw a cloak floating in front of her. Phantom raised his hand and slapped Reimu across the face, causing her to spin and fall down as Phantom grabbed her by her leg with his clawed hand.

" Such foolishness, young Hakurei Maiden. Letting yourself be blinded by rage, all because I got your little boyfriend hurt, how pitiful." Phantom taunted as Reimu tried to kick him with her other leg as he slammed her face into a nearby wall. " Ah ah ah, temper temper, girl. I'd watch that if I were you." Phantom warned as a blade of ice passed by his neck as he let Reimu go.

" I wasn't expecting you, clone. No matter, I'm going to take care of all three of you at once." Phantom boasted as he shot upwards as Yukari flew past him and tackled Ziden as he landed on Reimu whom crushed underneath the duo.

" Get off me you old hag!" Ziden yelled as Yukari elbowed him in the gut.

" Shove it! Focus on Phantom right now! We'll take of this later!" Yukari said as she got off of Ziden's back.

Reimu was still extremely angry as she flew up to Phantom with several amulets in her hands as she threw them in several different directions, flanking Phantom between a barrage of amulets.

" Humph! Chaos Cyclone!" A pitch black wind surrounded him as it expanded and became a tornado of destruction that sucked in the

amulets and had spin around the twister as Ziden and Yukari looked at each with determination in their eyes.

Ziden jumped into the air, gathering ice in the air around Murakamo as Yukari whispered something into Reimu's ear.

Colorful orbs appeared around Reimu as she sent them towards Ziden as he slashed each of the orbs, freezing them solid as they soared towards Yukari as she raised her skirt and kicked each of the orbs towards the twister as flew through it.

" Combo Attack: Frozen Necro Fantasy Seal!" The trio yelled as a black aura enveloped the orbs as they slammed into the body of Phantom, stunning him as the barrage of frozen orbs smashed against his body as he roared.

The tornado roared while three windy tendrils came from the funnel and flew towards the trio. Ziden blocked the attack with Murakamo, only for the tendril to disperse around the blade and strike him directly in the chest, tearing through it as he fell to the Earth, with blood pouring out of his wound.

Reimu saw what happened to Ziden and made sure to carefully dodge the windy tendrils as she threw several Yin Yang orbs in the twister as it slammed into the gut of Phantom blasting him into the ground as a torrent of water appeared underneath him.

" Hmm? Grah!" Phantom is blasted upwards by a powerful stream of water that soaked him through his cloak.

" Got him!" Reimu looked down and saw Nitori and several Tengu and Kappa with her. " We saw that crazy twister and Reimu's Fantasy Seal and made our way from the Mountain as fast as we could to help you guys." Nitori explained as Phantom grinned.

" THat was a bad idea Nitori. You've just sent a bunch of Youkai to their death." Yukari scolded as a blue haired Tengu female flew into the air with an orange maple fan in her hand.



" I know you're with those invaders attacking our homelands! You'll pay for all the people that died in your attacks!" The Tengu declared as she fired a gust of wind at Phantom as it phased right through him.

" The Youkai Sage is right, you should have stayed in your nest bird." Phantom held out his hand as darkness shrouded his hand and formed into a pitch black scythe that glistened in the moonlight. Phantom spun the scythe around as he dashed past the tengu, swinging his scythe as it cut cleanly through the Tengu as her two halves fell to the ground.

Everyone gasped when they saw the young girl's body became two separate halves as a long puff came from her dead body. The puff flew into the air and went towards Phantom as it entered his body while a green glow surrounded him.

" Ah! Its been so long since I've eaten a Tengu's soul! So tangy and prideful!" Phantom said as wind surrounded him.

" Great, you guys just made this battle harder for us." Ziden said while spinning Murakamo around his finger.

" So many souls to devour and you can't hope to stop me!" Phantom disappeared in a flash and reappeared behind Ziden with his scythe raised high in the air. Ziden ducked down as the scythe whizzed by his head and he slammed his foot into Phantom's chest sending him flying as Reimu performed a flip kick to his jaw, sending him airborne as lightning cackled around him.

" Delta Spark!" The lightning clashed together to form electrical triangles that flew towards them. The Tengu fired waves of mini-twisters them as they clashed, creating sparks that rained down on the ground as Ziden and Reimu chased after Phantom as a bolt of lightning struck them both down.

The triangles completely surrounded Yukari as she fell backwards into her gap to avoid the attack as Phantom proceeded to slice down

several Tengu, absorbing their souls into his body while he grew stronger with each soul.

" Damn it! I have to kill him!" Reimu swore as Ziden grabbed her shoulders.

" Calm down, Reimu. If you rush in like they did, you'll only get killed." Ziden explained as Reimu spat on the ground a bloody glob of spit.

" That ghost has to pay for what he did to Sora!" Reimu yelled as she took flight.

Reimu flew up to Phantom and tried to kick him in the head, only for her to miss as Phantom smirked while aiming her chest with the scythe.

" Now your soul is mine, Shrine Maiden!" Phantom brought the scythe downwards, only to hit air as he looked around and saw Reimu in the arms of Aya while she took a photo of him.

" I remember that freak, we saw him in Skyloft. He's that man who trapped us in that dream." Aya said as she let Reimu down and looked at all of her fallen comrades whose souls Phantom devoured as a brown haired girl with pigtails landed near Ziden.

" Oh my gosh! Ziden! You've got to like, wake up!" The girl pleaded as she smacked Ziden across the face waking him up.

" Ugh! My aching head... oh hello, pure white undies! How are you doing?" Ziden asked as the girl pushed her skirt together to hide her underwear from Ziden's eyes.

" Like, Ziden, that's not nice looking up your Ex-GF's skirt!" The girl said as Ziden raised an eyebrow before laughing.

" Nice try, Hatate! We never dated once!" Ziden said as he got to his feet and glared at Phantom as he was looking up into the sky.

" I'm sorry to cut this battle short, but I must get going. Lord Ultima requests my presence and its nice to keep a woman waiting."  
Phantom said as Ziden, Yukari and Reimu had the same reaction.

" ULTIMA'S A WOMAN!" The trio yelled as Phantom disappeared into a burst of darkness as Reimu and Yukari felt a chill run down their spines.

Ziden walked over to Aya whom quickly grabbed him into a back breaking hug, as he broke free.

" That wasn't good, Phantom's definately stronger than the last time we dealt with him." Yukari said as she opened a gap into the Infirmary in the Resistance's base. Ziden looked past the creepy eyes and saw Toyohime calmly waiting in the chair as Yukari pushed him through the gap as he flew through the Gap and crashed in the Infirmary, startling Toyohime to her feet as Ziden slammed into the wall.

" Oh, my aching face!" Ziden swore as he got to his feet and rubbed his face.

" Ah, you must be the clone, good I need to show you something."  
Toyohime reached behind her and reached into a bag.

" Hmm? Make it quick, I've got naps to take and games to play."  
Ziden stated as he scratched his head.

When Toyohime showed him the yellow jewel she had, Ziden's expression turned blank as he took the jewel and turned it around in his hand, getting feel for its weight.

" It feels like one... but is it really?" Ziden reached into his coat and pulled out a scanner as he scanned the device as Reimu flew through the Gap with Nitori and the others following her as she ran to the bed that Sora was in as she sat next to him, worried for his safety. Toyohime watched as a blue screen appeared above them as

the worlds the Illusionary Heroes went to so far as several dots appeared on the map. " This is a Chaos Emerald."

" Chaos Emerald? What's that?" Eirin asked while grabbing notepad.

" A Chaos Emerald is an powerful object from another world, far from this one. These things can unlock special powers in people and machines. There are seven in all, but even having one can give your power somewhat of a boost." Ziden explained while throwing the Emerald up and down.

" What happens if one collects all seven?" Toyohime asked as Kaguya and Tsukuyomi wondered as well.

" Well... collect all seven and you basically become a God. It gives you a massive power boost and you can pretty much be invincible to most things. I'm not sure why a Chaos Emerald is here in Gensokyo but apparently they are currently scattered through the worlds, with only two remaining on their world." Ziden explained as everyone swallowed hard.

" Such powerful objects... and we never knew they existed. This is frightening news." Tsukuyomi said as Ziden sighed.

" Something must have happened on Sonic's world, I know it. Well the good news is that no one knows how powerful these bad boys are!" Ziden said as he handed the gem back to Toyohime as Yukari grabbed him by his arm and dragged him over to a gap. " Hey! The hell are you doing!?"

" Hmmm? I need your help with something, since this is all done, I need your help with something dire." Yukari said in a low tone.

" Sure, why not? How long will this take?" Ziden asked as Yukari started to count on her fingers.

" About a few hours." Yukari said as she forcibly dragged Ziden into the gap.

" Wait a minute... OH NO YOU DON'T!" Ziden tried to break free Yukari's grip but she threw into the gap as she walked through it, closing it as everyone was worried about the news they learned.

" Chaos Emeralds? IF they are Emeralds... then why aren't they green then?" Aya asked as everyone shrugged.

" Well anyway, we should get some rest, tomorrow is going to be a big day. We plan on dealing with the Zealots in the village above us." Eirin said as everyone nodded.

" You have the support of the Lunarians in this war, Master Eirin." Toyohime declared while saluting her.

Everyone proceeded to leave the room as Reimu decided to stay by Sora's side. Eirin remained in the room to keep an eye on Sora's condition.

A few hours later...

Ziden is seen unconscious on his bed in his room in the base as Yukari ran her fingers through his hair. " Done. Now all he'll think that happened was all but a terrible nightmare. He nor his original will ever know the truth until later." Yukari said as she tucked Ziden in and calmly left the room while dusting off her dress. She turned back to the sleeping Ziden and smiled. " i told that I'd make you mine, one way or another." She opened the door and left.

Meanwhile...

Deep in the Underground, the mechanical being we saw before was now awake. " Charging complete. Primary Directive, Destroy Ziden Icrim, Destroy other meatsacks, Destroy Gensokyo. Death Machine Z, activating!"

Fun Facts:

1. Dante's Devil Trigger changes based on which weapon he has equipped, I thought I'd let you know that.
2. Phantom grows stronger with each soul he devours, so he's a big threat.
3. I'm going to let you guess on what Yukari did to Ziden for those few hours.

Author's Note: Sorry about how late this chapter was, I got distracted by so many things, but I promise to be faster in the future. Leave more review guys! See you next chapter!

# Wrath of the Undead

## Dreadful Fight ( Final Fantasy 4)

Scarmiglione had removed the cloak on his body as a large spatial distortion appeared over the graveyard and sucked the group into a secluded area as Scarmiglione growled in anger.

" I have returned from the dead to kill you freaks! You will die in the name of Lord Zemus!" Scarmiglione yelled as he slammed his fist into the ground causing it to break from the force of the punch.

Pit immediately drew his bow and aimed at Scarmiglione as Patchouli and Sakuya took flight with their weapons ready and magic gathering around them.

Robin and Kirby each got ready to fight Scarmiglione as Luigi tried to run away, only to be grabbed by Yuyuko and thrown at Scarmiglione as he punched him in the chest and sent flying into a wall.

Scarmiglione was a large brown skinned human shaped monster with bony protusions coming out his shoulders. He had tufts of blonde hair on his rotten head as green gas come out of his mouth with each breath.

" This creature is undead... that means its weak to fire and holy based attacks." Sakuya said as Patchouli raised an eyebrow. " I used to read Ziden's Monster hunting manuals when I was little."

" Ah. That makes a bit of sense. Then its a good I swiped this off of Ziden when I had the chance to." Patchouli held Ziden's Ifrit Summon Card in her hands as she quickly placed it in her book for safekeeping.

" Wait, isn't that Ziden's"

" Yep. Grabbed it off him while we were cuddling." Patchouli said as Youmu sweatdropped.

" That sounds like something Miss Navigator would do. You are much sneakier than I anticipated, Miss Magician." Robin said as Scarmiglione breathed out more green gas.

" Never judge a book by its cover." Patchouli said as Sakuya stifled a giggle.

" Uh guys? Shouldn't we be focusing on the large zombie in front of us?" Pit asked as Luigi fell out of the wall and onto a tombstone, crouch-first as Luigi did a horrendous scream.

" Oh god! My ears!" Palutena stated as she covered her ears back in the lab.

" That looks like it hurts. I'm glad we're girls and never have to worry about that happening to us." Yuyuko stated while she kept a fan over her mouth.

" I agree Lady Yuyuko." Youmu agreed as she unsheathed her blades and focused her gaze on Scarmiglione.

" Enough talk! Time to die!" Scarmiglione charged forward and grabbed a tombstone and threw it at Kirby.

Kirby stood his ground and ran in place as he sucked in the Tombstone and leapt into the air.

Kirby's skin turned grey as light gathered around his head and formed rocks on his hat as he became Stone Kirby.

Kirby fell to the ground and stared down the undead Archfiend standing in front of him. Youmu jumped into the air and dive bombed towards Scarmiglione with her sword pulled back. She swung her blade at its neck as he blocked the attack with his forearm and



slammed his fist into Youmu, sending her flying as Patchouli began to cast a spell.

Yuyuko summoned a swarm of ghosts to strike Scarmiglione from underneath the ground as they struck his chest, sending him flying into the air as Sakuya threw a multitude of silver knives into his body, causing the wounds to fizzle out smoke as he roared in pain from the silver piercing into his body.

Pit charged forward and performed a powerful dash shot into the monster's back, dealing large amounts of damage to the creature's spine as Pit threw his bow like a boomerang and it slashed into its back, sending him spinning like a tire towards Kirby.

Kirby raised his fist and summoned several stones to it. It became a large rocky fist as Kirby punched Scarmiglione hard in the jaw, stunning him as Kirby followed up with a series of stony fists that continued to smash Scarmiglione in the face as several arms wrapped around him.

"Clutch!" The arms yanked his spine backwards, snapping it as he fell to the ground as six balls of fire surrounded him.

"Infernal Prison!" Patchouli finished her spell as the balls turned pillars of flame that blasted into Scarmiglione's back and began to burn him from the intense heat of the flames.

Scarmiglione was enraged as the green mist gathered in his mouth. "Breath in the Air of the Undead." Scarmiglione released the green mist from his mouth as it scattered all though out the battlefield as everyone felt sick and weakened.

Patchouli broke into a coughing fit as she reached into her robes and pulled her inhaler as Scarmiglione grabbed her by leg and slammed her hard into the ground. He dragged her violently across the ground as he slammed her body into several tombstones as everyone heard audible cracks as they struggled to move with poison in their bodies.

Scarmiglione held up Patchouli's broken body as he laughed. " I told you punks that you would die by my hands! Watch as the Magician dies before your very eyes!" Scarmiglione boasted as he sees Patchouli holding a card in her hand which was bleeding all over the card.

" Ifrit... come!" Patchouli focused all of her magic in the card as a large flaming ball appeared in the sky as he threw Patchouli away as everyone quickly drank their Antidotes as Youmu sprinted and caught her before she landed spine first onto a tombstone.

Ifrit was riding the Meteor as it locked onto Scarmiglione whom was panicking at this point as Youmu pulled out her summon card as focused Magic energy onto the card.

" Hell Fire!" Ifrit punched the Meteor, increasing the speed and power of the meteor as it slammed into him, crushing the undead freak under the explosion as Youmu's card exploded into darkness as Scarmiglione struggled to his feet and watched as a line blue flames appeared around him like a train track.

Scarmiglione's eyes opened wide when he saw a large train with human-like face coming towards while blaring its horn.

" Prepare to have your soul carried to the Great Beyond, Undead One!" The Train Yelled as it barreled forward and slammed into the Undead Freak's body, as the sound of flesh and bone being crunched was heard as the train crashed over Scarmiglione, sending him flying towards the Heaven's as a bright light came from his exploding body as everyone was blasted back to the regular graveyard as they heard several explosions coming from the next area.

" Oh gods, Patchouli!" Sakuya immediately ran over to Patchouli with a Hi-Potion in hand as she held her head up and forced her to drink the potion as Patchouli passed out afterwards.

" Don't worry, Sakuya, she won't die." Yuyuko said as Luigi finally got to his feet after his... accident.

" That's good... but where's Master Ziden?" Sakuya asked.

"RAWWR!"

**Kaboom!**

" Holy crap! My legs!" Ziden screamed from behind the wall as the others ran to the open wall as they slammed into a barrier blocking the way.

" Looks you guys can't help him at this time." Palutena's voice said as everyone felt tense. " Don't worry, I'll give him the support he needs at the moment!"

Ziden is seen rubbing from the tall monster as the creature barreled after him, crashing through several statues as Tewi was throwing banana peels on the ground, hoping that the creature would slip and fall on the ground.

That did not happen.

Ziden was holding Murakamo and Nosada in his hands as he heard Palutena's voice rang in his head. " Ziden! Are you alright!?" Palutena asked as Ziden chuckled.

" Yeah! I'm totally fine with this oversized monster chasing me!" Ziden yelled as the creature fired a missile at him, forcing him to jump to the side, avoiding the explosion as Palutena continued to speak.

" That creature is known as Nemesis, a powerful... Bow from your world." Palutena explained as Ziden fired a sword wave at Nemesis, blasting him back as Ziden frowned.

" I think you mean B.O.W, Lady Palutena." Ziden said as Palutena giggled.

" Nah, I'm fairly certain I meant Bow, Ziden." Palutena said as Ziden felt a weird feeling coming from one of the nearby plants in the Garden-like maze with a large Statue of a Boo squirting water from its mouth into the pond below it.

" Of course you do, Palutena, Of course you do. So this thing is named Nemesis, huh? That sounds familiar... and so does this weird feeling around those plants... its the same feeling I got from that extremely attractive yet sadistic flower woman." Ziden said as he stopped running and turned around to look at Nemesis.

Nemesis was a tall monster, cloaked in a large black trenchcoat with a large red tentacle coming out his right shoulder. His face was horribly mangled as his left eye was completely stitched shut and his gums were completely visible even when he didn't smile, his right eye was completely white as he carried a large black rocket launcher around.

" So I gotta fight this freaky thing while you give me advice on what to do?" Ziden asked as Palutena said yes. " So this is just like Uprising? This'll be fun, I bet we're going the boss theme playing during this fight." Ziden sarcastically said.

### **Boss Battle 1 ( Kid Icarus: Uprising)**

" I was being sarcastic!" Ziden yelled as Nemesis charged at him. Nemesis swung his fist at Ziden's skull, causing the hero to duck down to avoid the fist as Tewi ducked into his jacket as Ziden slashed Nemesis across the chest with his frozen katana, leaving a frosty scar across its chest as Nemesis barely budged from the impact.

Ziden followed it up with a flip-kick to Nemesis' jaw as Ziden breathed a stream of fire into Nemesis' body, setting him aflame as Ziden noticed a red haired woman out of the corner of his eye.

Nemesis dove through the fire and punched Ziden hard in the chest, forcing him to cough up blood as he was sent flying through a hedge

and slammed into a gate.

Ziden got to his feet and saw Nemesis pointing his rocket launcher at Ziden as he forced himself to move as the missile flew towards him as everything around them slowed down as Ziden quickly turned the missile, being careful not to touch the tip of the missile as Time returned to normal as the missile slammed into Nemesis, blasting him back as Ziden increased the distance between them.

Ziden jumped into the air as spun his blades like a fan, gathering elemental power in his blades. " Dragon Fury!" Ziden fired two elemental dragons at Nemesis as they coiled around him and bit down on him as an explosion of fire and ice exploded into the air.

" Ziden! Be careful with this foe! That monster is unlike anything I've ever seen. It has unholy durability meaning you're in for a long fight!" Palutena warned as Ziden sighed.

" Great, just what I wanted to deal with. I could go for a nice nap in a Hot Spring right now." Ziden said as Tewi chuckled.

" Do you still wear your clothes in the Hot Springs like you used to in the past?" Tewi asked.

" Of course I do, there's no point in taking my clothes off in an Hot Spring or bath since my clothes can't get dirty and they keep me clean. Plus I have to always be on guard in case I get attacked." Ziden explained as Nemesis roared from the fiery and icy cloud as Ziden got stabbed through the shoulder with a tentacle, a sharp tentacle that came from Nemesis as Ziden coughed up blood.

" Ziden! Are you alright!?" Palutena asked.

" Yeah, I'm just peachy. Just stabbed through the shoulder with a tentacle. I never thought the day would come when I have to fight a tentacle monster." Ziden said as he sliced the tentacle off and watched as Nemesis barreled towards him.

Ziden's arm turned black as he charged towards Nemesis and clotheslines the giant creature off of its feet as Ziden followed up by grabbing Nemesis' face with his right hand. As Nemesis fell backwards, Ziden applied more force to his grip as he increased the momentum of his fall by increasing the gravity around them, slamming his head into the ground as it shattered beneath them as Ziden leapt into the air.

Ziden looked down on the Bio-Weapon that was trying to kill him as he spotted the others on the other side of the wall, he noticed that Patchouli was on the ground unconscious as Ziden sighed and pointed his hand at her. " White Flame!" A white flame appeared on Patchouli's body, covering her in healing fire as her broken bones and organs were quickly healing as her breathing returned to normal.

Ziden was distracted by this as a rocket slammed into his chest, causing an explosion that rocked the earth, shaking everyone on the ground as Patchouli snapped awake from the shaking.

Ziden fell to the ground as Nemesis ran to Ziden and stomped hard on his back and then grabbed him by the throat. Ziden struggled to get out of its grip as Nemesis slowly brought its palm to Ziden's face. Ziden's hands shot upward and grabbed the tentacle before it tore through his skull.

" Nice reaction time, Ziden!" Palutena stated as Ziden kicked Nemesis in the jaw repeatedly to get free from its grip.

Ziden felt Nemesis' grip increase on his throat as his windpipe was crushed by the force of the grip. Ziden, in complete retaliation, wrapped his leg in fire while snapping the tentacle like a twig as his flaming foot impacted Nemesis' horrid face.

Nemesis let Ziden go as two fire balls appeared in his hands. " Burn in the afterlife, vile fiend. Hell Fire Cannon!" Ziden blasted Nemesis with a concentrated blast of Hell Fire that completely consumed the area in front of Ziden, the recoil blasted Ziden back into the wall,

crashing through it and landing into Patchouli whom was now awake and wellish, landing on her back first.

" Holy cow! What in the great Mushroom was that?!" Luigi asked as Ziden smirked.

" That was just me having fun with a lighter." Ziden boasted as he got up and dusted himself off. Ziden offered Patchouli his hand as she took it and got pulled to her feet. " Hold on a sec." Ziden places Nosada above his head as another sword slashed against it.

Ziden looked unimpressed as he flexed his sword arm and sent the unknown assailant flying into a wall. The red haired woman jumped out of the wall and swung her sword at Ziden's neck, only to miss as Ziden was standing on her back.

" What's your problem lady?" Ziden asked as the woman spun around and slashed Ziden on the leg.

" You know what my problem is, villain. Free me and my friends from this Dream World and I'll let you go." The woman demanded as Ziden raised an eyebrow.

" Really? Dear lord, you must off the chart stupid if you think I trapped you here." Ziden said while shrugging as the woman walked over to Ziden and pointed her blade at Ziden's throat.

" Don't try to trick me, it won't work." The woman was not buying the truth as Patchouli walked over to the girl.

" He is not the one whom trapped you in this place... he's far too stupid to do anything like that." Patchouli said as Ziden rubbed the back of his head.

" Ouch, getting called stupid by your purple girlfriend." Pit laughed as Ziden smirked.

" Trust us, Miss... uh."

"... Erza Scarlet." The Woman sheathed her blade as Luigi grabbed a key from behind the tombstone.

" We are all in the same boat as you right now, Erza. I would recommend that you come with us so we can help you find your friends." Youmu suggested as Erza glared at Ziden.

"... Fine, but know this, if I find out that you are the one that trapped us in this Dream World, I'll take you out myself." Erza threatened as Ziden smirked.

" Oh man, i can't wait for that to happen, I mean, you kicking my ass? I doubt that severely, come back after you trained in the depths of space for several billion years and then we'll talk girl." Ziden said as Erza placed her hand on her blade.

" Knock it off you two, we need to-" Patchouli dropped to her knees and started violently coughing as Ziden dropped what he was doing and ran to her side as Yuyuko quietly smiled.

" *No matter what he says, he does really care for everyone here. I'm glad that part of him never left him.*" Yuyuko happily thought as Ziden sighed.

" If I showed that I cared for people, it would be shown as a sign of weakness. Besides, I'm too badass to be extremely nice to everyone I meet." Ziden said as Patchouli finished coughing as she spotted blood on her hand. She quickly wiped it on her dress before Ziden noticed as she used shoulder as a crutch.

" Does that really matter? I mean, you are a hero, you're supposed to be nice." Youmu asked as ziden sighed.

" Being nice isn't my thing, being rude and cynical is my thing... and being funny, snarky, a jerk. Those are the things that I like being to people." Ziden said as he wrapped his arm around Patchouli as she gripped his shoulder.



" *Getting your ass kicked is also one of your talents.*" Mima interrupted as Ziden growled.

" I will kill that ghost one of these days!" Ziden swore as Mima chuckled.

" *Foolish boy, Ghosts can't die! Neither can an Evil Spirit like me!*" Mima declared as Ziden yawned.

" So are you going to come with us Ms. Erza?" Sakuya asked as Kirby looked around for something.

"... I will only work with you until we break free of this Dream World, after that, I want nothing to do with you people." Erza stated as Ziden shrugged.

" Hold on, I'll bring you guys back here." Palutena said as pillar of light surrounded the group. Kirby spotted a black orb with yellow petals around its body as its eye glared at Kirby as Youmu and Sakuya spotted the creature. Sakuya noticed the serious look on Kirby's face as the orb flew away into the sky.

The light became extremely bright as it blinded everyone when someone screamed... someone named Luigi. When the light ended, they found themselves back in E. Gadd's lab with Palutena and Gadd waiting for them.

Ziden snapped his fingers as the air in the room got wavy as he walked to a wall and sat down. Ziden quickly fell asleep before Patchouli could call him for something.

" Hmm? Why'd Ziden slow down the flow of time in this place?" Sakuya asked as Erza looked around the place.

" Maybe he wanted us to rest for something?" Robin suggested as several clouds formed above Ziden's head.

Gadd saw this and smiled. " Ah! It appears that Ziden is having a dream before our very eyes!" Gadd exclaimed as Ziden's dream bubble expanded.

" I think I know what dream he's about to have, I believe its one of his happier times." Yuyuko said as the bubble now showed a throne room of a castle with a beautiful woman upon the throne. She wore a regal golden gown with several silver runes all over it, her beautiful silver hair reached her hips.

" Who is that?" Youmu asked.

" Queen Alexandria, a tyrant queen from another world." Yuyuko said as Patchouli felt angry that Ziden was dreaming of another woman.

Alexandria looked up as someone entered the room as everyone looked confused on who the man was supposed to be. He had jet black long hair that reached his hips as well and he was wearing a long black coat that split into two tails near his feet. His coat was covered in fiery red runes that made the black coat look like it was red.

" Ah, you've finally revived, my loyal Knight of Hellfire." Alexandria said as the man bowed before her. " There is no need for that, Ziden Icrim. After all you've done for my goals in conquering these foolish people, stand up and look your queen in the face." Everyone's jaw dropped when it was revealed when the man stood up and they saw Ziden's sharp and cold blue eyes.

" That's Ziden?! What happened to his hair!?" Pit asked.

" Ziden magically styles his hair so it looks shorter and spikier." Yuyuko said as Patchouli sweatdropped.

" That's... a unique use for magic." Patchouli said as Ziden grabbed the queen's hand and kissed it.

" I promise you this, my queen, I will not allow those heroes to reach you. I swear upon my role as the Blazing Shield of the Queen of Judgment." Ziden swore as Alexandria smiled.

" I know you will Ziden, I believe you will try your hardest to protect me. Do not be crestfallen if you fail to protect me. I've enjoyed the time we've spent together. You are my most loyal knight... I am proud to have made a friend like you." Alexandria said as tears came from her eyes.

The screen soon turned to static as Ziden's sleeping face turned into one of anger.

Everyone watched as the screen cleared up and Ziden is seen watching one of the heroes stabbing their blade through the Queen's chest.

Ziden looked very different than he did before, his face showed clear signs of anger and insanity, but it seemed that this Ziden... wasn't Ziden at all.

" You... Bastards. You... killed her! I failed... to protect her, but she forgave in the end! I will... make you all pay!" Ziden grabbed his blade as the heroes ran over to surround him. Ziden flipped his blade around and pointed it at his heart as Erza watched the scene carefully. " I'm going to show... you... why you... don't mess... with the Emperor!" Ziden stabbed himself in the heart as his entire body exploded into blood and covered the throne room.

" Dear gods. What the hell just happened?" Patchouli asked as the blood began to crawl down the walls.

" Oh no!" Everyone turned to Luigi and saw that his face was completely white. " Not that monster again!"

Everyone turned back to the screen and saw that the blood was moving towards the queen and stopped in front of her as a massive bloody arm slammed into the ground as the heroes backed away

from it. Everyone heard an earsplitting scream coming from the blood as the screen began to fuzz up again and Ziden's face turned into one of pain.

The screen turned completely static as they hear screams of men and women as bones were broken and the sound of flesh being torn was heard. A loud demonic roar was heard as Luigi and Pit's blood froze in their veins.

Yuyuko looked afraid as well, she'd heard this roar before and she saw the creature that made it.

The scene soon changed to one of Ziden standing on a hill with the Queen leaning on his while looking at the villages and towns that they conquered together. The Queen's wound was fully healed as she looked saddened at the events that transpired earlier in the day.

" To think, they would have gone as far to kill me to earn their freedom... this world... why did I attempt to save these savages from their hatred, their foolishness, their bloodlust." Alexandria sighed as Ziden chuckled.

Ziden raised his finger into the sky as a large fireball formed and continued to grow in size.

"... Ziden, my loyal Knight, what is your world like?" Alexandria asked.

" Its filled with powerful warriors whom are much stronger this one's, the humans there aren't as foolish as the ones here. Its filled with love and hope, I live to protect that world from evil's grip as much as I can." Ziden said with a nostalgic look on his face.

" I see... would it be fine... if I lived there with you?" Alexandria asked while spinning around Ziden's body and landing in his arms as Patchouli's face turned red with Jealousy.

" Of course you can my Queen, of course, we won't be able to control it like we did this one, but we live together in peace until time ends again." Ziden said as he opened a portal to his world as Alexandria walked towards it.

" I am no longer a Queen, that ended alongside this world. But, In my eyes, you will always be most loyal knight, Ziden Icrim, Legendary Hero of the Eternal Flames." Alexandria said as Ziden smiled and she entered the portal.

Ziden turned back to the village and frowned. " What the hell happened after I died? I don't remember killing those heroes... maybe Yukari would know." Ziden said as he ordered the fireball to slam into the village. " Ah! That's my last villainous act for the quota this time! Time to take a shower and wash all of this hate off of me. Time to be a hero again!" Ziden ran lightning fast through the portal as the dream ended with the planet violently exploding.

"..." Everyone was quiet as Ziden awoke from his dream and glared at everyone.

" There. You got to see me when I'm evil. Be grateful that you got to see that." Ziden said as he got up and dusted himself off.

" Ziden, what was that creature?" Youmu asked.

"... I have no idea. All I know is, that thing is dangerous and I don't ever want to feel its effects again. If you ever see that thing during this journey, I want all of you to take that thing out and do me a favor." Ziden said as Erza was glaring at him.

" I may not know what that thing was, but it was definitely a demon. You are human, I know that much, but there is a chance that the demon we saw is sealed within you." Erza said as Ziden smirked.

" For a woman that doesn't like me, you are telling me alot about myself." Ziden said as Erza scoffed.

" I'm only telling you what I observed, I still don't trust any of you." Erza said as Patchouli walked over to her.

" Who exactly told you that Ziden trapped us here." Patchouli asked.

" A man who claimed to be trapped here as well. At first I did not believe him at first, until I heard about the spiky haired man whom is carrying a red blade on his back has trapped my friends here. The very same man trapped my friends in this dream world." Erza said as Ziden blinked.

" I highly doubt that Ziden could have on your world because he was busy helping us to fight the Zealots attacking our home." Youmu explained.

" Zealots?" Erza was wondering what is going on. They explained the situation with the Ultima Brigade and Rulers of Darkness. The duo looked upset to know that there was a threat involving the entire Universe's existence at stake.

" So this is why we've been being attacked by these creatures, it sounds like a serious situation." Robin said.

" As much as I don't like you Red, have these Heartless or Zealots been appearing on your world?" Ziden asked as Erza shook her head.

" No, they have not. I'm grateful of that though these creature do seem to be a threat." Erza realized as she walked over to a wall. " I'm going to take a bath, I'm tired after running around this haunted mansion." Erza walked off as Patchouli grabbed Ziden by his ear.

" Who was that woman, Ziden?" Patchouli asked as Ziden yawned.

" A woman I met on another world whom is currently living with me. Why'd you ask?" Ziden wondered as Patchouli let his ear go.

" Well if you gals want to take a shower and rest up before you go out again, go ahead, the baths are that way." E. Gadd pointed down the hallway as Patchouli pouted.

" Ziden, with me right now." Patchouli ordered Ziden to follow her to the bathroom as Robin sat down in a chair and rested a bit.

Kirby focused his gaze on the monitor that was overlooking the mansion with the same serious expression on his face he had.

Yuyuko walked over to him and noticed the expression on Kirby's face. " Kirby? What's wrong?"

"..." Kirby did not answer Yuyuko back as Youmu stared at the screen as well.

" Maybe it has something to do with that creature we saw when we were brought." Youmu said as Yuyuko tilted her head.

" Fufufufu~. And what creature was that, Youmu?" Everyone in the room turned to see Yukari sitting calmly on a gap.

" Oh! Yukari! You're here!" Yuyuko tackled her friend off of the gap she was sitting as Pit felt a shiver go down his spine when saw Yukari.

" Calm down! Sheesh, I'm only here for a visit. Since we've repeled the threat we were dealing with at the moment, so I decided how things were going on in here." Yukari said as she spotted Pit and Palutena.

" Ah Yukari, its been awhile! How have things been?" Palutena asked as Yukari shrugged.

" Its same old thing, harrassing Ziden whenever I can, sleeping in. Nothing much has changed." Yukari stated as Luigi yawned. " So anyway, what creature did you see in the Mansion?"

" Well, as we were leaving the mansion, we spotted a creature glaring at from a far. It had a black, cloud-like body." Yukari's eyes tensed up at this familiar description. " It had a single eye and it had what looked like orange flower petals surrounding its body." Sakuya finished her description as Yukari sighed.

" Looks like this became more troublesome, what you just described to me was a Dark Matter." Yukari said as Robin raised an eyebrow.

" Dark Matter? What is that?" Robin asked.

" Dark Matter is a creature of darkness that tends to possess people to use them for evil purposes." Yukari explained. " But if they are back and they are here... then that means that Zero isn't dead after his encounter with Kirby, Reimu and Sora." Yukari said as she noticed someone not in the room. " Where's Ziden, by the way?"

" With Patchouli." Pit said as Yukari frowned for a second.

" Yukari, does this mean you-"

" Indeed I did, Yuyuko. I told I would do it, didn't I?" Yukari asked as Yuyuko sighed.

" Ziden's not going to be happy about this." Yuyuko said as Yukari giggled.

" He'll get over it in about... 9-10 months, give-or-take." Yukari estimated as Yuyuko shook her head.

" What are you two talking about?" Sakuya asked as Yukari looked confused.

" We aren't talking about anything, we're just having a little girl chat. Speaking of girl chat, I brought someone with me whom would be very helpful here!" Yukari lied as a certain Chinese Redhead slid down the ladder.



" Hey guys!" Meiling ran into the room happily. Yukari quickly walked off down the hallway to the bathroom as Meiling introduced herself to Robin, Pit and Palutena.

Meanwhile...

Ziden is seen sitting with his back on a bathtub with Patchouli reading her book in the bubbly warm water.

" So you got thrown around like a ragdoll while you were summoning my summon that you stole from me? If you weren't so broken, I'd say that was a perfect moment of Karma getting you back." Ziden said as he yawned.

" Oh, be quiet. We won the fight, at the cost of me feeling like luggage." Patchouli said as Zideb smirked.

" I can give you a full body massage if you want." Ziden offered as PAtchouli chopped him in the back of the head.

" Stop that, you dirty perv. The answer's no!" Patchouli said as Ziden sighed.

" ..."

" ..."

" Yoohoo! Is anyone in there?" Ziden heard Yukari's voice from behind the door and frowned.

" Go away, Yukari, you aren't wanted here." Ziden rudely said as he heard Yukari giggled as he stood up and raised his arm into the air. A gap appeared right next to him as his arm blackened. Yukari's upper body came out of the gap as Ziden chopped her square on the head, slamming her into the gap as it closed behind her.

" Eh? What happened to your arm? Why'd it turn black like that?" Patchouli wondered as Ziden sat back down.

" Some weird technique my clone learned from some old man living on my mansion. He said it allows you to hit Logia types and deal decent damage to other types of Devil Fruit users." Ziden explained as Ziden sat back down.

" Have you thought about teaching that to us?" Patchouli asked as she lifted up her leg and washed it.

" Only to the physical fighters of the group. There's no point in teaching it to the magic users." Ziden said as Patchouli petted him on the head.

" Isn't that nice of you." Patchouli continued to pet Ziden on the head as he continued to yawn.

" Ya know, I'm confused about something." Ziden said out of nowhere.

: What?"

" You have an awesome figure, yet you wear an oversized pajama to hide why?" Ziden asked as Patchouli sighed.

" Because I don't want perverts like you, constantly ogling my body with your eyes." Patchouli answered as Ziden snickered.

" Oh please. You love being touched by me. Admit it." Ziden said as Patchouli's face turned red.

" Oh shut it, you perverted fool." Patchouli shifted her body in the tub as Ziden noticed she was getting out of the tub, covered in bubbles obscuring certain parts of her body.

Patchouli went to grab her towel and dry off but she slipped on the floor and flipped into the air as Ziden slid under her and saved her from the fall.

" Whoa... thank you, Ziden." Patchouli said as Ziden placed his hand on her stomach.

" No prob, you almost took a nasty fall, luckily this perv was nearby to catch you with his gentle hands." Ziden said as Patchouli giggled.

" Oh? Then you won't mind if I get comfortable do you?" Patchouli asked while flipping over and looking Ziden in the eyes as he smirked.

" I don't mind, but we probably should get going, with Yukari here, she'll bust in and probably Gap us in front of the others with you being naked on top of maybe isn't the brightest." Patchouli frowned after Ziden finished his speech.

" \*Sigh\* I guess you're right." Patchouli got up slowly to grab her towel as she wrapped it around herself as Ziden noticed something strange.

" Wait a sec... were you trying to-"

" Seduce you? Yes, I was. I was hoping to try and see if I can coerce some alone time with you, but that didn't work because of Yukari." Patchouli said while pouting.

Ziden jumped to his feet and calmly placed his hands on Patchouli's shoulder as she looked confused for a second. " Now isn't exactly the time for 'that', maybe after all this mess is done with but this should tie you over." Ziden said as his lips came in contact with Patchouli's for a moment. They soon separated as Patchouli sighed. She started to get dried off and quickly placed her clothes on as she gave Ziden a look of somewhat satisfaction.

" Well, at least that kiss had emotion, unlike the clone, whom fainted afterward. Although, I'm expecting more than a simple kiss later." Patchouli said while placing her robes back on. She walked over to him and hooked her arm under his arm and rested her head on his shoulder as they walked out of the bathroom, passing by the unconscious Yukari.

*A few hours later...*

Ziden and the others were standing outside of the mansion Meiling looked at her fist. Her fist quickly darkened as it returned to normal as she silently praised herself before clinging to Ziden's back.

They noticed a large amount of lightning bolts striking the house's roof as Robin swallowed hard.

" Is this the work of another Logia type, Miss Robin?" Youmu asked as Robin nodded.

" No doubt about it, this must be the work of Enel." Robin said as Ziden raised an eyebrow.

" Let me guess, the guy uses lightning attacks?" Ziden asked as Robin nodded. " I'll take him on then."

" Hmph, why do you get to take him on?" Erza asked.

" Have you ever been struck by lightning before? Have you fought several battles with a God of Thunder and survived them all and won them all?" Ziden asked as Erza quieted down. She could qualify for the first one but she never did the second one.

" Shall we get going into this mansion?" Luigi asked as they felt a chill run down their spines.

" What in the world was that?" Sakuya asked as Ziden looked around and saw nothing.

For the sake of time, I'm going skip them going through the rooms unless its a major battle, so... Several rooms later...

The group reached the end of the hallway as Ziden sensed someone waiting for them on the other side of the door.

" Have to ask, is this Enel guy tough?" Pit asked.

" Well, I know that he had a God Complex and the power to back it up." Robin stated as Ziden sighed.

" Great, this will be fun." Ziden said as Meiling patted him on the back.

" Don't you worry! I'll be supporting you this whole time with my new Hockey powers!" Meiling said as she did some practice kicks in the hallway.

" Let us get this fight over with." Erza said while opening the door and revealing that it led to large balcony with two unicorn statues in the middle of it.

Everyone walked to the center of the balcony as the lightning struck all around them as they heard someone laughing.

" I knew it, it really is Enel." Robin said as she crossed her arms the man she referred to appeared on top of one of the Unicorn statues.

" Hmm, why are these lowly worms staring at me so? They should know better than to stare at a God directly." Enel said as Ziden walked up to the man with Meiling and Kirby walking behind him.

" Yo, long ears! Are you Enel?" Ziden asked as Enel looked at him with disgust.

" Why is a lowly being like yourself referring to your God in such an unsightly manner?" Enel asked as Ziden sighed.

" This is the guy." Ziden unsheathed Crimson Edge and pointed it at Enel. " So sorry about this, but I'm about to give you a 'godly' face beating, so you would please be kind and come down here and take your beating like a man?" Ziden nicely asked as Enel laughed hard.

" You? Fight me? Hah! I can annihilate you all with a single wave of my hand! What can you hope to do against me?" Enel asked as Ziden's arms transformed into fire and his smile disappeared. " Are you a Logia type boy?"

" Nope, got my powers from a higher source than a simple fruit." Ziden said as Enel jumped down from the statue and stood tall over Ziden as they both cracked their necks.

They were about to fight until a giant red bandaged hand grabbed onto the balcony, almost knocking everyone off of their feet as they spot a giant red creature rising from below the balcony, soon towering over the group as Robin fell back on her rear.

" ODZ!" Robin screamed out as the creature looked down the group as Luigi crouched down and placed his cap over his eyes.

" Well now, this ain't good but it could be worse, I could be getting attacked by that freaky trenchcoat creature again." Ziden said for no apperant reason as the wall behind Luigi exploded as Nemesis walked out of it. " Goddammit! Why does that always happen!?"

" Maybe you should just stop talking and focus on your opponents while we focus on ours." Yuyuko said as she looked up at the massive red monster standing over them.

*Elsewhere in the Mansion...*

Two people are seen walking around an unknown part of the mansion.

One was wearing a black kimono with an oversized sword with no guard on his back. His orange colored hair was the eye catcher on his body.

The other boy was wearing a black suit with black hair with three white lines going around his head. He was also holding two pistols.

" Do you have any idea where you're going?" The black haired boy asked as the carrot haired boy opened up a door from the basement of the mansion.

" Yeah, totally, all we have to do is keep going up and we'll find our out up there." The boy said as they noticed that this hallway was lit.

" That sounds like something my older sister would say, she's not the brightest one around." The black haired boy said as they walked through the hallway and he noticed that one of paintings in the hallway was slanted abit and he panicked. He quickly ran over to it and fixed it by tilting it to the side.

Meanwhile...

" I can't believe you did that to Ziden, Yukari. That's kind of messed up." Palutena stated as she placed her cup of tea down.

" Funny, that's what everyone is saying to me all of a sudden. We aren't related by blood, so he's free game in my books, plus since I know he won't dump me like those rejects I dated before, he's gonna be all mine." Yukari said as Palutena sighed.

" Whatever you say Yukari. He's going to be mad when he finds out about this." Palutena stated as Yukari opened a gap that showed Ziden and the others fighting against their three opponents.

*Fun Facts:*

*1. Doomtrain is a poison type Summon that can deal every single status ailment in the book on the people it hits so Scarmiglione... he's probably dead right now... again. Redead? Deader than Dead? Meh, I can never figure out how to say an Undead thats Dead again.*

*2. Nemesis is from RE:3, he constantly chases you through that game, just he's doing right now. He's pretty damn durable if you ask me.*

*3. Enel and Odz are from One Piece if you couldn't tell.*

*4. Yes, Patchouli did attempt to seduce Ziden into sleeping with her in the bathroom, but Yukari completely killed that moment.*

*Author's Note: Hurray! Merry Christmas from me to you! Don't worry! The Dream World arc is going to end in about two more chapters so don't worry. The Gensokyo arc however... is going to be a while but it will be worth since you will learn more things about the story. Be patient and rejoice in the salvation that Ziden shall bring you for Christmas... warning! The Salvation may contain large amounts of fire!*



## The Start of a War!

Ziden awoke with a startle as he looked around his personalized room in the Underground Base in Gensokyo. Ziden wiped off his sweaty forehead as he felt something heavy laying on top of him. He looked down to see a mass of black hair wrapped around him and the sound of soft snoring was coming from underneath.

"... I swear, Kaguya needs a haircut badly." Ziden said to himself as he wondered how he got in here to begin with. " Talk about a bad nightmare, Why'd I dream of that happening between me and Yukari anyway?"

Ziden felt Kaguya moving around on top of him as she grabbed him into a strong hug before falling asleep. Ziden sat up in the bed and flipped Kaguya around his body so that she piggybacking off of him as he got up and walked to the door. Ziden felt that he needed to check up on the injured Sora and see how his recovery was coming along.

Ziden made his way to the door and opened it as he made his way through the long hallway, slowly making his way towards the infirmary as he waved hello to several of the villagers he passed by.

Ziden passed by the barroom as he saw Logan having a drinking contest with several other villagers and Youkai watching the event as well. Kaguya yawned lightly before she rested her head on Ziden's shoulder.

Ziden pasted by the entertainment area as he spotted Xiaomu and Reiji watching the large T.V the kappas built in order to keep an eye on areas in Gensokyo. Ziden waved hi to them before he finally made his way into the Infirmary and saw Keine and Mokou talking next to the door with the latter smoking a cigarette and holding it between her fingers.

" Howdy ladies." Ziden said as Mokou glared at him before looking back at the floor.

" Why is Kaguya on your back?" Mokou asked as Ziden shrugged.

" I woke up with her on top of me and I didn't feel like putting her in the bed by herself." Ziden said as Mokou frowned.

" Lazy ass."

" Flat chested smoker." Ziden retorted back as Mokou grabbed him by the collar of his shirt.

" Call me that again and Eirin won't have enough Medicinal Tape to put you back together." Mokou threatened as Keine sighed.

" I swear, you two always act like this when you're around each other, If I hadn't been at your wedding 4 years ago, I could have sworn you two hated each other." Keine said as she shook her head.

" Whatever, she started it." Ziden pointed out as Mokou growled at him.

Ziden walked past Mokou and Keine, peeking into the room spotting Reimu resting her head on Sora's pillow as the duo slept calmly.

Eirin was busy writing something down on her clipboard as she spotted him in the doorway and knew what he was doing.

" He's going to do fine, Ziden. If Marisa hadn't brought him in as quickly as she did, he would have more than likely bleed to death." Eirin explained.

" Its a good thing she got him here so fast then, it could have turned out a lot worse than it did." Ziden said as he Reimu scoff.

" Why do you care, you bloodthirsty idiot?" Reimu asked as Ziden shrugged.

" Don't pull that crap on me missy, nearly everyone in this room has their fair share of blood on their hands." Ziden said while digging in his ear.

" I've never killed anyone in my life, so I don't get what you meant by that." Reimu said as she stood up.

" Whoa, now. I didn't come in here to start a fight with ya kid. That's something my other self would do. I just came to check up on the kid and see how he was doing." Ziden said as he sat down in a chair while looking at the screen as he noticed Luigi placing his cap over his eyes as Keine walked over to him.

" Hmm? What's going on with this man's hat? Its glowing for some reason." Keine said as the L on Luigi's hat started to glow.

" Anyways, I'm going to scout out for some Zealots hiding up aboveground." Ziden said as Mokou piped up.

" I'm in!" Mokou jumped onto the bandwagon immediately as Ziden waited for one more person to join.

" I'll come too!" Kaguya raised her hand as Mokou's face turned sour.

" Princess! It is way too dangerous for you to go out there!" Eirin said as Kaguya shook her head.

" Don't worry, I've got Ziden protecting me, right Ziden?" Kaguya asked while pinching aforementioned person's cheeks.

" Sure thing Princess." Ziden agreed as Mokou stomped on his foot.

" Don't be an ass about this Mokou. Grow up."

" Grow up? Grow up!? After what that bitch did to my father!? HELL NO!" Mokou yelled as Ziden sighed.

" So vulgar, that's un-befitting of a noble woman, Mokou." Kaguya stated while hiding her smile behind her long sleeves.

" I'll show you un-befitting, you uptight little-" Mokou lit her hands on fire as Ziden quickly smacked her over the head with his hand. " Ow! What the hell was that for!?"

" Hohohohoh! That's what you get!" Kaguya boasted as Ziden smacked her on the head too.

" You two knock it off before you drive me insane." Ziden said as Reiji and Xiaomu entered the room.

" Heya spikes! How's the Harem going?" Xiaomu asked.

" I'm about to kill two of them right now because of how they're acting right now." Ziden pointed to the bickering duo.

" Well, what did you expect when you got romantically involved with one of Touhou's craziest rivals?" Xiaomu asked.

" How would I know? I don't play Touhou or Bullet Hell games." Ziden said as Reiji raised an eyebrow.

" Wait a sec... I'm fairly certain I've seen you play Gradius in your Living Room before." Xiaomu said as Ziden was confused.

" Wait, Gradius is a Bullet Hell game? Huh? Who knew?" Ziden asked.

" I'm pretty sure everyone did, even I did and I'm not big on games." Reiji said as Mokou made a grab for Kaguya as Keine sighed.

" Screw it, I'm leaving you two here, Reiji, Xiaomu, lets roll." Ziden dropped Kaguya to the floor and walked off with Xiaomu and Reiji walking after him.

" Hey! Hold on a sec!" Mokou said as she chased after Ziden and the others with Kaguya chasing after them.

The others were silent after that turn of events as Reimu thought about what Ziden said to her. " What did he mean about that? I have

blood on my hands? I've never killed anyone before in my life, even during this journey I always hold back from killing humans. What the hell does that cryptic jerk mean by that?"

"... Well, seeing as how he was raised by Yukari, he'll probably never tell you directly." Eirin said as Keine quickly shook her head.

" That's where you're wrong Eirin, that Ziden may not have the guts, but the one I know will tell you straight to your face and be as insulting as possible while doing it." Keine said as she gripped a portion of her dress.

"..." Reimu remained silent as she tried to figure what he meant by that. She silently swore to herself that she would ask the original Ziden when he got back.

The group of five made their aboveground into the Abandoned Human Village as they looked around and tried to find any Zealots sneaking around.

" Alright, do we split up and search for clue like good little boys and girls?" Xiaomu asked.

" That's dumb, why would we split up and get captured by some Zealots if they jump us?" Ziden asked.

" We might as well stick together. Besides, we know they want to take us out, it'd be easier if we stick together." Reiji said as Ziden agreed.

" Actually, there were some Zealots near the Dragon God's Statue I fought yesterday. They looked weird though." Mokou said as she walked to the direction of the Dragon God Statue.

Everyone followed her to the Dragon God Statue as he spotted several white cloaked figure moving the bodies of their comrades out of the way as Ziden frowned.

" Those aren't Zealots, those are Pawns of the Covenant of the Cross." Ziden said as Kaguya raised an eyebrow.

" Who are they?" Kaguya asked.

" A Christian Cult from the Outside World, those guys are bad news. We've had to deal with them multiple times in the past." Reiji said as Ziden spotted several snipers on the roof.

" Christian? I've heard of that Religion from Eirin. They worship only one God right?" Kaguya asked as Ziden nodded. " Yeah, she told me that Christianity is part of the reason why places like Gensokyo exist right?"

" Yeah, that's part of that reason. The Christians of ancient times, like other religions back then, led several crusades to spread their religions across different, no one is sure how it won, but it became the major religion of ancient times... so the Faith was being sent to God and the angels which forced the other gods to escape places like Gensokyo." Ziden explained as Mokou raised an eyebrow.

" How do you know all this?" Mokou asked.

" Lived through it, time traveled into the past, remember?" Ziden said as Mokou remembered that fact.

" Those guys are armed with pretty nice guns, AK-47s, Dragonouv Snipers, it looks like these guys aren't playing." Kaguya said as Ziden looked at her confused. " Oh, its something I remembered when I was under that spell."

" Of course you do. You guys stay here while I take out those snipers." Ziden said as Mokou objected.

" Let me help out with this one." Mokou asked.

" No way! You can't be stealthy for crap!" Ziden silently yelled at her as she smirked.

" Oh yeah? Watch me!" Mokou said as quickly ran into a nearby house and snuck out the backdoor. She silently flew up the side of the building and crouched down as she silently snuck up behind the Pawn and grabbed him into a headlock while covering his mouth with her hands. She dragged him off of the roof, knocking him unconscious as she began to go after the other snipers.

" Huh? How the hell is she-"

" I don't know Ziden, I've never seen her be so sneaky before. This is new to me too." Kaguya said as they watched her take out the Snipers as Ziden unsheathed Crimson Edge.

All of the snipers were quickly taken out as Ziden boldly walked over to the Dragon God Statue and whistled, grabbing all the Pawns attention.

" You! Its the Godless Heathen himself! The very man whom tried to kill God!" One of the Pawns yelled as Ziden sighed.

" My goodness, can't you guys realize that I was tricked into to doing that by a tricky fallen angel. Or are you so dumb that you can't figure that out?" Ziden taunted as one of the Pawns opened fire on him, filling him with lead as he just stood there unfazed.

" Smite that Heathen in the name of God!" The Pawns continued fire their bullets into Ziden's body as he was torn apart by the bullets.

The minute their ammo was spent, Ziden's body easily healed the small amount of damage he took from the bullets as he slammed his blade into the ground and charged at the Pawns.

" Do you think we should help him?" Xiaomu asked as Ziden grabbed a Pawn by the legs and Giant Swinged him into a building.

" Nah, we only agreed to help him deal with the Zealots, not these guys." Reiji said as he noticed several crows resting on the roof.

Mokou merely sat down and watched as Ziden knocked out all of the Pawns before throwing them into a vortex.

Ziden looked around for more enemies as he sighed. " That was boring, I wonder if any Zealots are around, I really could use another fight right now." Ziden said as Mokou jumped onto his back.

" Told ya I could be stealthy. You need to listen to your wife more, ya know?" Mokou said as Ziden sighed.

" I liked it better when you were trying to kill me." Ziden said as Mokou smiled.

" I only did that to help get your memories back... plus to vent out some frustrations I had on you." Mokou said as she pinched his cheeks.

" Nice way of going about that by the way, drilling a hole through my chest, that's nice." Ziden said as he walked over to the others.

" Well it looks like you had fun. So now what?" Reiji asked.

" Hmm? Lets look around some more and find out where these Zealots are coming from." Ziden said as he scratched his head.

The group wandered around looking for Zealots as they found none. In short, this was a waste of their time.

" Great, we didn't catch anyone. This was a waste of time." Xiaomu said as she sighed.

" Indeed it was a waste of time, we could have stayed asleep for this time." Kaguya said as Mokou scoffed.

Ziden watched as the duo began to have another argument as something turned in his head. " Wait a sec... since those two are in this Harem and they can't stand each other, but they like me. Wouldn't that mean they'd compete to grab my attention?" Ziden wondered as Xiaomu elbowed him in the side.



" You shouldn't have flirted with all those girls now. Now you've got super-powered women competing with each other to make you theirs. Sucks to be you right now." Xiaomu stated.

" That's probably part of the reason why my original is going to kill me." Ziden said as he sighed.

Reiji remained silent as he noticed someone walking towards Ziden from behind.

Ziden turned around and was startled by this woman's sudden appearance.

The woman has very light, almost platinum blonde hair, styled like horns or ears, as well as gray eyes. She wears purple headgear which has been described as both headphones and earmuffs. Her clothes are a purple dress under a white vest with elaborate trimming. Ziden noticed that she carried a sword on her hip and that she was carrying one of those weird staff things.

" Excuse me, but would you happen to be Ziden Icrim?" The woman asked as Xiaomu recognized the woman.

" Yeah, I am... who are you?" Ziden asked.

" Ah, I am Toyosatomimi no Miko, but you may call me Miko if my name is too hard for you to pronounce." Miko introduced as she bowed.

" Uh, nice to meet you Miko. Was there something you needed from me?" Ziden asked.

" Indeed I do, I was wondering if you would like to join my temple." Miko asked as Ziden quickly shook his head.

" Whoa now lady, I barely know you and you want me to join your temple? You sound like that Buddhist monk when she tried to get me join her temple." Ziden said as Miko frowned.

" I see, so Byakuren attempted to get you to join her temple as well? Interesting, I doubt a Demon Hunter such as yourself would want to hang a bunch of Youkai anyway." Miko said as Ziden shrugged.

" I don't mind Youkai lady, I was raised by one." Ziden said as Mokou and Kaguya noticed him talking to Miko.

"... Ah, but if you were join my temple, I can help to cure you of those dark desires in your heart." Miko said as she appeared behind Ziden and placed her hands on Ziden's shoulders.

" Meh, I don't view it as a bad thing that I like to kill things, it makes my job easier when I deal with villains." Ziden said as he shrugged.

" Perhaps you don't view it as a bad thing, but it is the sign of evil in your heart..." Miko continued trying to get Ziden to convert to Taoism as Reiji and Xiaomu watched this scene.

" So why's this lady trying to get Ziden to join her temple?" Reiji asked.

" Its probably because she wants him to be in her temple so that he can't be in Byakuren's, they don't like each other that much." Xiaomu explained.

" And you know this how?" Reiji asked.

" I played the games!" Xiaomu exclaimed as Reiji ran his hand through his hair.

" I shouldn't be surprised at this fact." Reiji said as he noticed Kaguya placing her arms around herself as if she was cold.

" Ah! There you are Ziden!" Ziden sighed when he heard Byakuren calling for him as Miko turned to look at the approaching Monk.

" Oh my, look who decided to show up." Miko said as Byakuren noticed her rival.

It didn't take her too long to put together what was happening.

" Hold on! You were trying to get Ziden to join your dispicable group of Taoists weren't you?!" Byakuren asked.

" My my, I only offered him a place amongst his fellow humans, not among filthy beasts like you." Miko stated as Byakuren got angry.

She was about to retort back when she saw Ziden unsheathe his blades and stared past the Schoolhouse.

" I know you're there old man, show yourself." Ziden said as a bright red flash of light blinded everyone.

When the light cleared, there was now three people standing in front of the School. Lucifer, Joshua and Dark Star.

Ziden stepped past Byakuren and Miko as his father also stepped towards him.

" Long time no see, son. I see you've been well." Joshua said as Ziden frowned. Joshua spotted Kaguya as his steel gaze brought fear into her heart. " I see you broke that spell I placed on that foolish Lunarian girl, impressive." Joshua turned his gaze to Mokou as he smirked. " I remember those eyes, they're the same eyes that man had all those years."

Mokou felt anger fill her heart when she heard those words. " What do you mean by that?" Mokou asked as she clenched her fists.

" What do you think I mean, Fujiwara no Mokou? I mean, your father had those very same eyes when I ran through him with my blade." Joshua said as Ziden's eyes went wide.

Mokou didn't even get a moment to digest what she just heard as she found her burning fist colliding with Joshua's jet black katana.

" Then the reason why you had the Five Items for my Impossible Requests-"

" Correct, that man was able somehow get his hands on the hands through sheer luck, I waited for him to reach where you lived and I killed him as soon as he reached your steps." Joshua said with an evil smirk as Mokou increased the force behind her punch.

Yoruhoshi waved his hand as a blast of darkness blasted Mokou back towards Ziden as he catches her and restrains her.

" Its been a while, hasn't it sister?" Yoruhoshi asked with an evil grin.  
" And father."

Everyone looked at the schoolhouse to see Tsukuyomi and Yorihome walking out of the building.

" So it is true, you really have fallen from grace Yoruhoshi. To think you would stoop as far as to serve under the Morning Star himself." Yorihome stated as she drew her sword.

" So that's Lucifer, the Fallen Angel hailed as the God of Evil." Miko said to herself as she placed a hand on her sword.

" It is a shame that my 'true' son isn't here, he would have been aching for a chance to get his hands on me. Too bad you don't have the guts to try clone." Joshua said as Lucifer laughed.

" So this is Gensokyo, the Land of Illusions? Most impressive, I wonder how this land would look infested by demons." Lucifer wondered as he raised his staff into the sky before he disappeared.

" Don't you worry, Kaguya and Tsukuyomi. I plan on settling our score later, right now, you should focus on getting the Emerald back!" Yoruhoshi cackled as hellfire swallowed him whole.

" Doesn't it feel terrible knowing that your father-in-law killed your father? Its so upsetting that you placed all of your hatred on the wrong person for all those years." Joshua asked as Mokou continued to try and break free from Ziden's grip.

" You'll pay for what you did, old man, I swear you will." Ziden said as Joshua smirked.

" I can't wait boy, have fun with the Light Beast that Mundus is sending." Joshua said as he spots Roxanne holding her blade at his throat with Ran nearby.

" Long time no see, Joshua." Roxanne pressed her blade deeper against his throat as a large Magic circle appeared in the sky.

" Its been a while hasn't it?" Joshua asked as he kicked her away from him as Ziden appeared behind him and the duo clashed blades as Mokou charged at him from his side.

Joshua quickly shifted his body and moved Ziden where he was as Mokou's rage powered fist slammed into Ziden's face, shocking Mokou and the others as Joshua brought his blade down onto Mokou's back. He stopped his blade and quickly slashed Ziden in the throat and quickly piercing his blade through his heart. He swiftly pulled the blade out as Ziden fell to the ground, bleeding from the both of his wounds.

Tsukuyomi felt angered at what he saw as Byakuren and Miko ran to Ziden and began to treat his wounds.

" How could you do that to your own child, you monster!?"  
Tsukuyomi was outraged with what he saw.

" Like you're one to talk, you banished your own daughter from her home on moon because she made herself Immortal. Now then I wonder, whom is truly the Impure ones? Us Earthlings whom accept our deaths gratefully? Or the cowardly Lunarians whom feared death so much they turned tail and escaped from the Earth?" Joshua asked as Yoruime almost charged at the man for insulting her people.

Joshua was surrounded by the Hellfire as he glared at Ziden and Mokou before he reentered Hell again.

Ziden blacked out from the blood loss as he found himself floating in a black void.

Ziden looked around the dark room as he wondered where he was.

" Obey me..." Ziden was startled by the voice as he looked around.

" You will bend to my will!" Ziden fell to his knees as he felt a powerful force ripping into his mind. Ziden strained his neck to look upwards as he spotted three giant red orbs.

He immediately knew who this person was as he forced himself to his feet as he glared at the massive orbs. " I bow down to no one! Not even you!" Ziden yelled as he forced back by an unholy presence as he got back to his feet and stood his ground.

" Such insolence to your master! SUBMIT!" Another mind shattering wave washed over Ziden, forcing him to violently shake but he still remained standing. " How is this possible?! You're nothing but a human! Your mind should have been far past broken by now!"

" I told you... I serve no being but myself, screw you! Prince of Darkness!" Ziden yelled as the orbs backed away.

" It doesn't matter now, no matter how strong your willpower is, you will break before me. You will become my puppet boy! Just like that other Son of Sparda!" The Voice yelled as it disappeared from his mind.

A bright light flashed as Ziden jerked upwards in a bed, drenched in sweat as he felt a sharp pain coming from his neck and chest.

" Ah, you're finally awake, that's good." Ziden turned to see Satori sitting next to him with her third eye focused on him. Ziden tried to speak only to find that no words came out. " According to the doctor's words, your throat was sliced into pretty deep, she says if it wasn't for your Regeneration, you'd be dead at this point. It seems that blade is severely slowing down your healing, but that's the least

of your problems." Satori pointed in front of him as he sees his Original sitting calmly on the bed as he noticed that he was in the Infirmary with Yuugi, Reimu, Marisa, Komachi, Eiki, Aya and Hatate sitting around them.

" Calm down kid, I ain't going to kill ya for what you told the others about my past. I don't care at this point anymore, after all, they pretty ganged up on me for being so secretive." Ziden said as he glared at Reimu while she glared back.

"..." The Clone merely stared back at his Original.

" He says thanks for not killing him." Satori said as the Original smirked.

" Oh, I just said I'm not going to kill you, I'm still going to beat the crap out of you after I'm done in the Dream World. I'm only here to make sure you don't get the Idea to add more women to this Harem, I have trouble with 8 of them right them, so if you add more, I'll choke with your own Liver!" Ziden said with a smiling face as Komachi counted on her fingers the people Ziden was refering to.

" Yes, Komachi, he's including you in the count." Satori said as Komachi relaxed herself.

" I've spent enough time here, you guys should get to the surface and search for the Ultima Brigade's base, we've some problems to deal with in the Dream World. Ciao." Ziden waved the group goodbye before disappearing into a burst of flame.

" Their base? Where the hell are we going to find that? It could be anywhere in Gensokyo." Yuugi said as she plopped down onto the bed next to Ziden, carefully making sure not to cause more harm to Ziden.

" Well, it might be likely that their base isn't that far from here, it would make sense because of how many Zealots are able to quickly

come and attack the Human Village." Eiki suggested as everyone thought of a nearby location.

" Hold on, ze! Yo Ziden! Can these Zealots use magic?" Marisa asked as Ziden nodded. " Then its obvious where their base is hidden! Its in the Forest of Magic!" Everyone quickly raised an eyebrow to that idea, it sounded crazy, but the Forest is a very big place.

" Even if it is in there, that place is pretty big, even I'd have a hard time navigating through it." Aya said as she flapped her wings.

" Ohmigosh! Marisa might be onto something! I saw these two guys looking for the Base in the Forest and I took a pic of them!" Hatate showed everyone the picture she took as the people who knew the two in the looked panicked.

" Damn, Ganondorf and Vergil are in Gensokyo? This just went from bad to worse.' What do you mean by that?... Oh my... those two do seem to be quite powerful." Satori stated after she looked into Ziden's mind.

" Heh! If that's the case, then I'll take those freaks down a peg!" Yuugi smashed her fist into her palm as an alarm blared in the room.

" Eh? What's going on!?" Reimu asked as a random Youkai ran into the doorway.

" Guys! We're under attack! Gahh!" The Youkai was sent flying by a large furry fist as everyone in the room minus Ziden and Satori got ready to fight the beast that entered the room as a single thought entered Ziden's head.

" Holy crap! That's Donkey Kong!" Satori said as Ziden looked scared as Donkey Kong roared into the room.

*Elsewhere...*



Crassssshhhhhh!

Bowser is seen being sent flying through a Building as Suika chased after him with her chains pulled back. " You're going down, you oversized turtle!" She yelled as Bowser roared at her.

" Bring it on,, you pipsqueak!" Bowser retorted back as he charged at Suika.

*Elsewhere again...*

Mokou and Keine are seen watching a bunch of human villagers, dancing crazily amongst the street while a violin was playing. " What's going on here!?" Keine asked.

" Help us, Miss Keine! We can't stop dancing!" One of the villagers answered as they heard someone laughing.

" I don't want you guys to stop dancing, this is your very last dance so you should enjoy it while you can." A surge of demonic energy appeared as Mokou and Keine got into battle positions as a skeleton wearing a bard's clothing appeared before them. " After all, no one escape the Dance of Death. I am David of Fiend Class of Demons. Prepare to die." David stated as the screen turned white.

*Somewhere else...*

Remilia and Flandre are seen staring down a massive demon as it roared at them. " Where is the Son of Sparda! I, Beowulf, shall feast on his bones!" Beowulf roared as Remilia smirked.

" Too bad for you, you're facing a stronger Devil than Sparda's son today!" Remilia boasted as Beowulf roared in her face.

" You jest girl! A weakling like you isn't worth my time! BEGONE!" Beowulf roared as Remilia got upset.

" You know, I was thinking of toying with you for a bit, now, I'm just going to kill you outright. Feel honored to die at the hands of the

Scarlet Devil!" Remilia declared as she dived towards Beowulf.

In another place...

Reisen is seen armed to the teeth with various guns and weaponry as she stared down a army of Zealots approaching the village from the south side of it as Kaguya grabbed one of the weapons off of the weapon cache. Reisen quickly stopped her.

" Reisen! I want to help you in this fight! Please!" Kaguya begged.

" Princess, this is too dangerous for you. Besides, you don't know how to use a gun, these Kappas and Tengu do!" Reisen explained as Kaguya refused to release the gun from her grip.

" I'm not leaving Reisen! I don't want you to get killed because I left you here!" Kaguya pleaded as Reisen sighed.

"... Fine, but please be careful Princess, this is a war, not a game like we're normally used to." Reisen warned as the kappas and tengus removed the safeties from their guns.

*Fun Facts:*

*1. It should be noted that I have an open view on all types of Religion, meaning I don't dislike any particular ones, but I show that even the nicest of Religions can have some dark worshippers.*

*2. What did Ziden mean by his statement to Reimu? I'd love to see what you guys can figure it out.*

*3. It should be very obvious who those three red orbs were!*

*Author's Note: The time has come, war has entered the Human Village as an all-out brawl ensues. Can our proud heroes stop the Ultima Brigade before calamity befalls Gensokyo? Or will they fail and be lost forever to the darkness? Stay tuned for the next Gensokyo Chronicles: The Ultima Brigade War.*

## Lightning Battle! Defeat the God Enel!

Ziden looked at the two new opponents they were facing the moment as Odz was swinging his arm like a windmill while backing away from the mansion as Luigi was glowing with a mysterious light.

Enel was a tall muscular man with white/blonde that was covered with a white bandana. His earlobes were unusually long and reached his chest were two golden earrings are on them. He is dressed in a very luxurious manner, to emphasize his "godliness": he wears loose, orange pants with a black pattern on them, and around his waist there is a blue, flowing sash, holding up a light-blue veil. Ziden noticed that he wore no shoes and he had four tomoe drums behind him, emphasizing the fact that he used lightning attacks.

" Just looking at this guy pisses me off. Lightning Ace has those same drums on his back too." Ziden said aloud as Meiling nodded and dropped into a fighting stance..

Oz is an extremely large, red, skull faced zombie who is more than four times the size of an average giant. He also has long yellow hair that flows from his head to his back and has two large horns. His upper jaw consists mostly of straight edged molars while his lower jaw consists of several sharp fangs and two large tusks. Only his left eye socket contains an eye. His left arm has "SZ-900" tattooed on it. Ziden noticed the stitches along his body and large curtain on his stomach, Ziden also sensed the aura from something coming from behind that curtain. It wore a simple black Loincloth.

" Everyone! Get Down!" Robin yelled as Oz charged at the mansion. There was a bright flash of light as the sound of metal hitting something's face as Oz is seen flying backwards. Everyone opened their eyes as they see something extremely surprising to them, shocking even Enel whose eyes were bulging and his jaw was dropped.

Standing in front of Oz, was a giant Luigi! Luigi placed his hammer to ground and wiped his brow as he noticed something. " Eh?" Luigi looked around and saw everyone on the balcony and approached them. " What happened!? Why are you guys so small?!" Luigi's voice echoed over everyone as Patchouli flew up to Luigi.

" We're not small, you grew giant somehow. We don't know how but now you can fight that Odz creature." Patchouli explained.

" Oh no! Why do I have to fight that monster!?" Luigi asked.

" Because you're the same size of him! Don't worry Luigi, I've got your back!" Pit ran towards Luigi leapt towards him grabbing onto his overalls as Luigi grabbed and placed Pit on top of his head. Luigi took a battle stance as Odz cracked his neck.

" Prepare to be destroyed by the power of a God!" Enel declared as he charged at Ziden.

### **Boss Battle ( One Piece Pirate Warriors 2)**

Enel swung his staff at Ziden's neck as he ducked down while Meiling tried to slam her fist through his face as she completely phased through his head as she soared past him.

" I told you couldn't harm me." Enel boasted as Ziden placed his hand on Enel's chest.

" You'd think that. Flare Cannon!" Ziden fired a powerful burst of fire into Enel's chest, sending skywards as his face was in shock from being harmed like that. " Just like I thought, this guy ain't going down easy." Ziden's face turned into a smirk as Meiling got up and flew up towards Enel with chi covering her fists and legs.

She began to rapidly assault Enel with punches and kicks, all of which he quickly dodged all of them as Kirby looked around for some thing to inhale as Nemesis charged at Yuyuko.

Yuyuko quickly moved out of its way as Patchouli threw several buzz saws at him, slicing him across the chest several times. Youmu jumped onto his back and performed several quick swipes to his neck, stunning him as Robin arms wrapped around him and body slammed him into the ground.

Patchouli summoned a ball of water to her side as she threw it Kirby as he inhaled it and became Water Kirby as lightning struck the ground next to Kirby. Meiling threw a powerful kick at Enel's neck as he decided to humor her and block with his forearm as Meiling's leg slammed into his arm with a lot more force than he expected. The force of the hit sent him flying downwards towards Ziden as his arm turned black as it became wrapped in flames.

" Take this! Dynamite Hammer!" Ziden swung his arm down like a hammer, smashing it into Enel's skull, smashing him through the floor as Meiling landed next to him.

" I was able to him that time, what's up with that?" Meiling asked as Ziden jabbed her in the side with his finger.

" Use that Haki I somewhat taught you to harm him, magic can harm them too, but I don't think you use Magic that much, do you?" Ziden asked as Meiling shook her head.

" Alright, but you didn't have to poke me! That hurt!" Meiling was rubbing her sore side as Enel emerged from the hole and pointed his hand at the group.

" Sango!" Enel released a massive blast of lightning that blasted everyone off the roof and into an empty courtyard with more Boo statues spraying water onto the ground, making it muddy.

Ziden spotted two black blurs flying out of the mansion and hiding nearby as Ziden recognized both figures and nodded to them as they understood the plan.

Ziden landed on the muddy ground as Nemesis faceplanted into the mud as Erza slammed her blades through his back, harming him as Erza leapt into the air and spun her blades.

Meiling shoved Ziden out of the way, causing them to avoid a lightning bolt as it exploded against the ground, causing mud to explode into the air, raining down on everyone as Enel charged at Ziden.

Ziden blocked the attack from his staff with his forearm as Enel channeled lightning through it, zapping Ziden as he grinned, causing Enel to be shocked. Ziden quickly punched Enel in the chest with several lightning fast blows as he ended with a powerful open handed palm strike, sending him flying into the wall as Lightning arced off of Ziden's body.

" Why weren't you hurt from my lightning!? Don't tell me that you're made of that Rubber too!" Enel asked as Ziden shook his head.

" Nah, I've got the exact same body as the average human, my body just heals off your damage before it does too much damage!" Ziden boasted as his arm transformed into fire. Ziden pointed his fist at the self proclaimed god. " Flame Rocket!" Ziden's fist detached itself from his wrist and slammed into Enel's body as Kirby created a massive tidal wave that crashed down on Enel, washing him away as Enel jumped onto the wall.

Ziden looked at Enel with an amused expression as he pulled out Fafnir and spun it around as Enel frowned.

Nemesis delivered a solid punch to Youmu's chest, sending her flying into a Boo Statue, crashing through it as Nemesis roared in triumph as he turned to face Erza and Yuyuko.

Luigi cracked his knuckles as he saw Odz glaring at him. Luigi charged at Odz as the red zombie giant ran toward him as well. The two giants locked hands as they glared at each other as Odz pulled

his head. Luigi was wondering what he was doing as suddenly Odz's neck stretched back a bit. " Gum Gum-!"

" That thing can talk!?" Pit asked as he pulled his bow.

" Bell!" Odz's head flew forward and slammed into Luigi's face, knocking him backwards and he almost crashed into the mansion had he not regained his balance.

Luigi grabbed his aching head before he crouched down and focused energy into his feet. " Green Missile!" The ground exploded from Luigi's attack while he shot forward like a missile. His head slammed into Odz's chest, sending the Zombie backwards as Luigi landed on his feet as Pit cheered.

" Hey! How'd you do that!? That was so cool!" Odz asked with sparkles in his eye.

" He really can talk. Its weird." Luigi said as Pit fired a storm of arrows into Odz's chest whom flinched with each impact.

" You didn't answer my question Green Man!" Odz yelled as he ran towards Luigi with his right arm stretching back very far. Luigi saw the attack coming and pulled out his hammer and got into a golfing position " Gum Gum Bullet!" Odz's fist shot forward like a bullet as it came into contact with Luigi's hammer, creating an explosion of force that barely fazed the giants but affected the smaller people of the group.

Robin looked shocked at the fact that Odz could stretch his limbs as she bit her lip and refocused her attention on Nemesis.

Sakuya jumped into the air and threw several knives into the air as they spun around and aimed themselves at Nemesis. They shot forward at Lightning fast speeds, slicing the monster body in multiple places as he roared in pain before falling to his knee and pointing his rocket launcher at Robin.

The Rocket fired out from the Launcher and struck the ground next to her, exploding and knocking her away next to Yuyuko as Nemesis ran towards them, only to be stopped by a blue energy wave fired from a nearby tree. The two black figures landed on the ground as Ziden smirked.

" I should have known you two would be here, Ichigo and Kid." Ziden said as Ichigo smirked.

Ichigo was wearing a black kimono with a thick strap across his chest. He has four black vertical lines on his forearms and black, tattoo-like bands crossing over his chest, wrists, and ankles. Similar bands, but with white ends, lie around his neck as collars. His sword is what caught everyone's eye, mainly Youmu's and Erza's eye. His sword had no guard and was a large blade with one side black and the other side silver. The blade had a silver hilt with gray wrappings, and a short length of chain at its base. The blade itself becomes slightly reshaped, curving inwards at the backside of the tip, similar to a trench knife.

" What a strange looking sword." Youmu noted as Ichigo stabbed it into the ground.

" Indeed it is, yet I sense power coming from it in droves." Erza said as she watched Nemesis walk towards Ichigo.

Ziden blocked an attack from Enel as Meiling struck the so-called God with a powerful Haki-imbued kick that sent him flying into a wall as he quickly teleported into the air.

" Let us see if you mortals can handle this. El Thor!" Enel summoned a massive bolt of lightning into the air as Ziden placed Fafnir above his head. The bolt came back down as a massive pillar of lightning that was quickly absorbed into Fafnir as Enel expressed shock once more.

Ziden spun the spear around as he pointed it at Odz. " Volt Return!" Ziden sent the El Thor flying at Odz as it struck the Zombie giant in



the side, stunning him as Luigi slammed his hammer into Odz's jaw, sending him upwards and onto his back.

Nemesis aimed his rocket launcher at Ichigo and fired several missiles at Ichigo as he disappeared from sight and reappeared behind Nemesis and slashed him across the back, forcing the towering behemoth to stumble forward as Erza delivered a spine breaking jump kick to Nemesis' back. That blow was strong enough to knock him down as Yuyuko pulled out a spell card.

" Deadly Butterfly: Eternal Sleep into Dreamland!" A swarm of butterflies appeared around Yuyuko as they flew towards Nemesis, rapidly striking him with a barrage of butterflies that slammed him into the ground, digging him deeper into the Muddy ground.

" Whoa! What in the world was that?!" Ichigo asked.

" That was magic, is that woman a witch?" Kid asked as Ziden shook his head.

" Nah, she's a ghost that can use magic, its quite common in Gensokyo dude." Ziden answered as Kid understood.

" I see, how has my sister been?" Kid asked.

" Who? Komachi? She's been good. She still slacks off on her work, but she still gets it done." Ziden said as Kid sighed.

" That's good... and it seems that you're still an asymmetrical mess." Kid pointed out as Ziden smirked.

" Still on about that Kid? Jeez, you're like a broken record sometimes." Ziden said as Kid pointed his guns at Nemesis while having them upside down.

" Its not my fault that your hairstyle isn't Symmetrical, nor are your weapons." Kid pointed out as everyone observed Kid's clothing.

He was wearing a standard black suit with white rectangles. The rectangles are placed in a manner that is completely symmetrical. There are at least six small rectangles along the seam where the sleeves attach to the jacket, and four small rectangles run along the front of his jacket. His undershirt is a formal white dress shirt, and a metallic skull rests under his collar, and could be used as a tie.

Patchouli noticed the three lines in his hair and wondered what they were.

Kid began to fire several bullets into Nemesis as they appeared to barely damage him. Nemesis crawled his way out of the hole as Enel struck Ziden in the neck with his staff, stunning him as he sent him flying with another powerful strike to the head.

Ziden quickly flips himself in the air and creates a fireball in his hand. "Haley's Blazing Star!" Ziden throws the fireball as it turned into a blue flaming ball as Enel held out his hand.

"Hmph. Kari!" The air heats up as a Thunder Clap exploded in front of him and completely blocked Ziden's attack as Enel noticed that Ziden was missing.

"Claw of the Iron Bear!" Ziden delivered a closed palm strike to Enel's back as it blasted him towards Meiling.

"Sky Dragon Kick!" Meiling performed a powerful jump kick to Enel's jaw, sending him flying in to the sky as Kirby spat several water bullets into Enel, blasting him higher into the sky.

"Tch!" Enel straightened himself in the air as he tapped on one of his drums. "30,000,000 Volt Hino!" A large hawk made of lightning flew from the drum as the area became lighted up from its presence as it struck the area, blasting everyone with Lightning as Nemesis was taken out by the attack. "Humph, know your place, mortals! This is what happens when you defy a God!" Enel boasted as an explosion of fire appeared in the lightning blasting it away as a Phoenix flew into the air.

" Flame Release!" Ziden's jacket landed on a Boo Statue as everyone got to their feet. " Its time for a God to get dethroned." Ziden disappeared from sight as Enel sensed an attack coming behind him.

Feeling cocky, he tilted his head to the left, expecting to see Ziden soar over his shoulder, which he didn't. Ziden's fist appeared in front of his face and slammed into it as Ziden unleashed a fiery barrage of burning punches into Enel's body.

" Blazing Specter!" Ziden's burning fists exploded into Enel's body as he began to plummet towards the ground with Ziden's attacks still hitting him.

" Aqua Laser!" Patchouli created a massive blast of water that sped towards Enel and exploded against his body as he landed in the mud, unmoving as Ziden landed on the ground next to Patchouli and Meiling.

" Is it over?" Meiling asked.

"..." Ziden remained silent as he watched Enel's body. Patchouli noticed that Ziden was observing Enel's chest for some reason. " Keep watching, Patchy. You'll see in a sec."

Enel's chest had several sparks of lightning coming out of it as his chest rose a bit.

" Dear lord, is he?"

" Yeah he is Ichigo, he's jumpstarting his heart, its something Lightning users can do with enough skill." Ziden said as he cracked his neck.

Luigi grabbed Odz by the legs and spun him around as Pit fired several arrows into his eye. Luigi released him as Odz went flying and slid across the ground, knocking down several tree as he got back to his feet.

Odz's arm stretched back as it twisted itself like a top. " Gum Gum Rifle!" Odz's fist shot forward like a drill and sent Luigi flying through the Mansion as Odz chased after him. Ziden saw this and formed a lance of fire in his hand.

" Magma Harpoon!" Ziden threw the molten lance at the giant as it struck the monster square in the stomach as it exploded into magma which began to stick to his stomach as several black bats are seen escaping from the curtain on Odz's stomach as he began to scratch that area.

" Wow, that didn't hurt him at all. This sucks." Ziden pointed it out.

" Attacks don't seem to hurt him that much, the way we took him out was by taking out his spine so he couldn't move." Robin said as Ziden smirked.

" Leave it to me! I'm good at breaking people!" Ziden cracked his knuckles as he began to walk towards the wall as he felt a hand grab his leg.

" Max 200 Million Vari!" An extremely powerful bolt of lightning traveled through Ziden's body, completely charring his outer body as Enel got to his feet, still wearing that confident smirk on his face. " You believed you could stop a God boy? How foolish, I believe its time for to finish you all off." Enel dropped his staff to the floor as Lightning began to strike all around him. " 200,000,000 Volt Amaru!" Enel transformed himself into a Giant, Raijin looking being as he towered over everyone.

" Looks like its time to get serious." Ichigo said as he jumped into the air.

" Foolish Mortal! Take this! Kiten!" Enel fired a large eletric tiger from his hand as it jumped for Ichigo, but missed when Ichigo disappeared from sight and appeared behind Enel.

" Getsuga! Tensho!" Ichigo fired a massive blue sword wave at Enel as it exploded against his back and force him to stumble to the ground. Meiling and Youmu appeared above Enel with Haki imbuing their respective weapons.

" Attack Sign: Roc Killing Fist!"

" Life Cutting Sword: Slash of Meditation!"

The both of their powerful power attacks slammed into Enel's body, striking him with the force to destroy Iron castles as he toppled forwards and towards Sakuya whom had a golden aura and was holding two knives in her hands.

The knives soon transformed into white blade as she began to rapidly slash Enel across chest as she dashed around him, slashing every inch of his body as she soon stopped her assault and landed on the ground with her back turned to Enel. She snapped her fingers as an unholy amount of knives appeared him. " Temporal Elegance!" The knives sped through his body as Sakuya calmly walked as Enel detransformed and fell to the ground, unconscious as his body exploded into darkness.

" Not bad, Sakuya." Ziden got to his feet as his body finished healing. " Although that name could use some work."

" I like the sound of it, Master Ziden. I am a Perfect and Elegant Maid, after all." Sakuya boasted as Ziden chuckled and looked up at Luigi using the Super Jump Punch on Odz, sending him flying into the air as he exploded into Darkness as well.

Luigi and Pit performed a victory pose as Luigi felt a change within as multiple transparant Luigi's came from his body and returned him back to his normal size as he landed on the ground.

" Well now, that was new!" Luigi exclaimed as he threw some practice punches. " I threw down with a Zombie and I didn't panic once!"

" Maybe that's because it wasn't a ghost." Ziden said as Patchouli elbowed him in the side.

" Stop making fun of his fear of ghosts, its not nice." Patchouli scolded as Ziden shrugged.

" Whatever..." Ziden said as his mind trailed off somewhere. " I can sense you hiding, show yourself!" Ziden yelled as a swarm of bats appeared and created a very large being that towered over the group as Robin recognized the man.

" Gekko Moriah!" Robin said as Moriah began to laugh.

" Kishkishkishkishkish! So you must be the one Lord Omega told me about!" Moriah said as Ziden's face filled with rage at the mere mention of that name.

" Then that means you're with that group of cultists, the Ultima Brigade, correct?" Kid asked as everyone observed the man's clothing.

Moriah is a gargantuan person with very distinct devil-like features. Standing at 22' 7" in height, he easily towered over everyone in the group. He has two horns protruding from the sides of his forehead and stitches running down vertically from the top of his face and down his neck, which is rather long and thick in comparison to his body. His ears and teeth are both pointed, while his lower body is relatively fat and stubby in comparison. He had purple hair and his skin is a pale blue of which his lips, armbands and the edges of his gloves share in color. His coat and gloves are black whilst his pants are bright orange with pale window shapes imprinted on them. He wears a fishnet shirt. He also wears a cravat, necklace and a blue crucifix-like ornament with claw-like appendages sprouting out from three of the cross' points.

" Jeez, are all the people from your this tall!?" Meiling asked.

" Well... we do have some tall people from my world." Robin said as she noticed that she was the tallest person in the group.

" The Ultima Brigade?" Ichigo asked.

" We'll explain later. I'm guessing from those bats, you're a Devil Fruit User of some kind, correct?" Patchouli asked as Moriah smiled.

" Correct, I ate the Shadow-Shadow Fruit, giving me the power to control shadows!" Moriah declared as he grabbed a shadow off the ground that belonged to Patchouli, she was knocked to the ground as Moriah brought a pair of scissors out from behind him.

" Someone! Stop him before he cuts her shadow!" Robin yelled as Ziden reached into his jacket and pulled out a metal cylinder, pulling a pin out of it as he threw it into Moriah's face. The cylinder exploded into a bright burst of light, blinding everyone as Moriah released Patchouli's Shadow as Ziden grabbed her and jumped back out of his reach.

" Humph! I could have made a nice little zombie with that shadow, no matter! We shall be meeting again! I'll be taking my leave of this place so I can get Odz up and ready for our war against you Illusionary Heroes!" Moriah said as he transformed into bats and flew away while laughing his infamous laugh.

" Thank you Ziden, but can you please put me down? I can walk on my own." Patchouli said as she pushed herself out of Ziden's arms... only to fall facefirst into the mud. " Mukyu~."

" KNew that was going to happen." Ziden said as he watched Patchouli get out of the mud.

" Oh no, don't help me up Ziden, its not like I needed it." Patchouli said as Ziden shrugged.

" You looked like you didn't need it." Ziden retorted.

" Are you two really a couple because you don't act like it." Erza asked.

Patchouli got to her feet and noticed her entire body was covered in mud. Everyone else was equally dirty as Kirby walked over to the group. Kirby sprayed a blast of water into the air as it rained down on the group, getting the group wet but cleaning them of the mud that was clinging to their clothes.

" Well, at least we don't have to worry about getting our clothes cleaned." Luigi said, hoping to calm everyone's nerves.

" Whatever, lets get back to the Lab so we can rest." Patchouli said as she glared at Ziden.

A bright pillar of light surrounded them as everyone was brought back to the lab as Ziden yawned.

" Jeez, I'm beat. I keep forgetting that lightning users always are a pain to deal with." Ziden said as Patchouli walked past him.

" You'll live, now if you don't mind, I'm going to take another nice warm bath." Patchouli said as she walked off.

" God, she has a nice rack." Ziden said as he received a smack from Yukari. " Ow! What? Its the truth!"

" Doesn't mean that you have to say it out loud." Yukari said as she noticed Ichigo and Kid staring at her.

" Oh right, we should explain this situation to them." Youmu pointed out.

*The Heroes are explaining...*

Ziden had taken Sakuya and Meiling to the training area for unknown reasons as Ichigo, Erza and Kid thought over what they learned.



" I wish I could go with these guys and help them out but my father requires my assistance in the Academy." Kid said.

" At the moment, me and friends at the Fairy Tail guild aren't doing anything at the moment, I'm going to help out with this war for their sake." Erza said as she clenched her fist shut.

" I think I should help out too. I'd have to tell my dad and friends that I'm going on this journey with you guys." Ichigo said as Yukari raised an eyebrow.

" Oh? And Why would you be willing to help us, Substitute Soul Reaper? Aren't you supposed to be helping the other Soul Reapers in capturing Ziden?" Yukari asked.

" No, I met the guy before, he may be strange, but he wouldn't attack someone for no reason. Plus I doubt he even attacked those Soul Reapers." Ichigo said as Yukari appeared behind him.

" Good, but do know this." Yukari wrapped her arms around his neck in a chokehold. " You try anything to interfere in our Journey or try to harm Ziden in any way, I won't hesitate to kill you, regardless of the fact you have two younger sisters." Yukari threatened as Ichigo swallowed hard.

" Jeez Yukari, you didn't need to scare the guy." Pit said as Palutena agreed.

" I only wanted to make sure that he doesn't get the thoughts of betraying us in his head, just had to seem convincing." Yukari said as she walked away from Ichigo.

" *Damn! That woman scares the crap out of me! Even more than that chick from the Soul Society!*" Ichigo thought to himself.

" Well now, its that we're all getting nice and friendly with each other. But this place really only has one more place to explore and that's the basement of this place." Palutena said.

" We just came from that place, one of the doors had a large keyhole on it and we couldn't figure out how to open it." Kid said as Yukari smiled.

" Lucky for you we have someone whom can open up such locks ."

Yukari said with a kind smile.

" Yes, an arrogant jackass that's an even bigger pervert." Patchouli said as she entered the room, wiping her hair with towel.

" That you're madly in love with, I might add." Robin added as Patchouli scoffed.

" Whatever, where is he anyway?" Patchouli asked as she sat next to Robin.

" He's off training Miss Maid for something, he took Miss Gatekeeper with him as well." Robin said as Patchouli sighed.

" Well, in any case, it would be wise of you to inform your friends about the existence of the Heartless and Nobodies, Miss Robin."

Palutena said as Robin nodded.

" I planned to once we meet up two years from now." Robin said as Erza was looking over her sword.

" Hey guys!" Everyone looked to see Meiling running over there as Sakuya was being carried by Ziden as they both had smiles on their faces. " Guess what!? Sakuya's a Demon/Monster Hunter now! Ziden said she's easily an S-Class Demon Hunter now!"

Patchouli looked shocked at that statement as Ziden ran his hand through Sakuya's hair.

" I expected no less from one of my top students. Sakuya is going to go far in the Demon Hunting world, she might even become a bigger legend than me or Dante." Ziden said as Sakuya blushed.

" Thank you for training me Master Ziden. I'll make you proud with my progress!" Sakuya exclaimed as she bowed. Ziden handed her a card as she quickly took it and placed it away on her person as Ziden heard the familiar sound of glass breaking.

*" A new bond has been established between you two. You have obtained the First Rank of the World Arcana. These bonds will increase the skills and the abilities you can have on your keyblade at once. Continue to make them and become stronger. "* The mysterious voice as Ziden ruffled Sakuya's hair.

Yukari appeared behind Ziden as she rested her head on his shoulder. " You all right after all that lightning hitting you?" She asked as Ziden frowned.

" I'm fine but I'm quite upset with what you did to my 'clone'." Ziden said as Yukari smirked.

" So you know? What are you going to do about it?" Yukari asked as Ziden sighed.

" Nothing yet, but you'll get yours from me personally." Ziden said as Yukari disappeared into a gap while laughing.

" So... What's the plan now?" Palutena asked.

" My guess is, we get Ziden to bust open that door, we take down Nightmare and 02 and free everyone you know and love from the Dream World." Pit described as Ziden and Meiling cracked their knuckles.

" sounds like a plan to me, you guys ready to roll out and get this party started." Ziden asked as Kid's guns transformed into women wearing cowgirl like clothes. " Oh right, I forgot about you two, Liz and Patty."

Both of the girls wear cowgirl outfits: tight, sleeveless red turtleneck belly shirts with white ties, cowboy hats and black high-heel boots.

They both wear cropped white jackets. They did have several notable difference about them.

Liz is a girl of Caucasian descent and has dark blonde hair that reaches her mid-back, dark blue eyes, and slightly sun-kissed skin. She wears long jeans and two silver bracelets on each wrist. Her hat had rims that slant forward. She seemed to be very uncomfortable with being here as shown by her extremely pale skin.

Patty has chin-length, bright yellow (blonde) hair with bangs, light blue eyes and she has bigger breasts than her sister even though her sister is older and taller, something Ziden found funny. She wore a puffy shorts.

" Eh? Did those two girls come out of his guns?" Meiling asked.

" We're what you call Living Weapons, we have human forms and we turn into weapons to help our Meisters!" Patty explained as Ziden scratched his ear.

" That's pretty cool, I didn't know that there were people like that on this world!" Pit exclaimed as Ziden sighed as he appeared next to Patchouli.

" There alot of cool things on our world dude." Ziden said.

" Indeed, Gensokyo is a wondrous you can visit in your free time, although... I don't know some people will react to seeing an angel since we Youkai... really don't like your kind." Patchouli said as Pit raised an eyebrow as did Robin.

" Huh? How you guys don't like Angels?" Pit asked.

" Well, we know you're not from our world so it doesn't apply to you, but a long time ago, Angels began to take in all the faith that we Youkai live off of and send it to their God, normally while its harder to do, we can live without Faith or Magic, but once the Angels started to

hunt us down, it became a problem." Yukari explained as Ziden continued.

" They hunted Youkai and the people who lived along side them because they viewed them as being Unholy to their God. Eventually, some of the Youkai banded together to create secret colonies, hidden far from their view. Places like the Isle of Hope, Gensokyo, Shandra-La. To this very day, the Angels still search for Youkai and Impure humans so they can exterminate them. They did find Gensokyo and started to kill alot of the people there and converted alot of the 'good' human into their mindless slaves. One day, they ended up killing a Youkai child that they had found in an abandoned house. Once the child died, they all felt an ominous chill run through both the Angels and Heaven itself." Ziden stopped there as he drew his blade and looked it.

Yukari was seen smirking as she licked her lips.

" What happened next?" Patchouli asked as Ziden chuckled.

" That Youkai child was in the care of a powerful human and once he learned that she was killed when he was out shopping, that man tracked down the Angels and he slaughtered all but one of them, telling him to back to Heaven and tell them that if they even dare to set foot on that Island again, he'd raze Heaven to the ground with several strong Youkai aiding him." Yukari said as everyone had the same question on their mind but they had the feeling they knew the answer.

" Don't tell me!" Erza stood up out of her seat.

" That's insane! Killing an Angel is a major sin dude!" Ichigo said as everyone else turned their attention to Ziden.

" Indeed, I killed those Angels without any sign of remorse. Of course they did not heed my warning and came back to Gensokyo with an Army." Ziden began to chuckle as did Yukari. " How many Angels was it Yukari? I can't seem to remember for the life of me."

" I'd say about... 1200 of them, I can't remember at the moment, maybe its because we killed them too fast?" Yukari wondered as Ziden shrugged.

" Me, Yukari and several powerful Youkai stormed Heaven and faced off against those Angels, they weren't expecting us to be able enter Heaven and were unprepared for our assault." Ziden said as he spun his blade and sheathed it.

" We killed ALOT of Angels that day and we warned their Seraph that if they ever attempt to attack Gensokyo again, we'd raze Heaven to the ground." Yukari said with a smile on her face.

Everyone was dead silent after that as Ziden yawned.

" That's just... wow." Liz was completely stunned by that.

" You are really gaining those evil points there, Ziden and Yukari." Luigi said as they both laughed.

" I'm Chaotic Neutral, I don't care." Yukari said as everyone looked at Ziden for his answer.

"... Meh, I do what I want when I want." Ziden said as everyone sweatdropped.

" Somehow, we all saw that coming from you two." Pit said.

" So you're deciding to be a Hero right because you want to?" Erza asked.

" No, the Ultima Brigade is too big a threat for me to ignore. So are the Rulers of Darkness... this entire thing reminds me of when I dealt with Oscura all those years ago. I never figured out what happened to his daughter though." Ziden said as Yukari raised an eyebrow before she realized whom the daughter was.

" Well, at least you're motivated to do this, I guess." Pit said as Kirby ran into the room with Yuyuko staring at the puffball as he went by.

Ziden felt something softly grab his hand as he looked down to see Patchouli calmly holding it.

" So then, should we get going and enter this mansion, one last time?" Yukari asked.

" Hold on a sec, gotta do something first." Ziden snapped his finger as a whirlwind of fire appeared next to him and became another Ziden. " You! Head back to the Real World and check up on the... 'clone' and the others."

The clone nodded as he went and did as he said as the others waited for him to come back as Patchouli relaxed herself in Ziden's arms as Yukari sat next to them.

The clone returned as Ziden noticed the expression on his face. Ziden could tell that something happened as he sighed. " You told Reimu off, didn't you?" Ziden asked as the clone nodded. " Great, now I have something else to deal with when we get back."

" Enough of that! Time to get to the mansion!" Yukari snapped her fingers as a large number of gaps appeared underneath everyone, and sent them through her eye filled gap, scaring the people minus Robin as they landed in the lobby of the mansion.

" Holy crap! That was scary!" Liz yelled as she hid behind Kid.

" I will never get used to that Yukari! It reminds me of when I had to enter the Chaos Vortex to save Lady Palutena's soul." Pit said, remembering that chaotic place.

" Hmph. Wimps." Ziden said as he noticed Patchouli still holding his hand.

" Aw! Look at those two lovebirds holding hands! Its so cute~!" Yuyuko teased as Patchouli blushed and squeezed Ziden's hand.

The group noticed lightning outside the mansion as it struck the top of the mansion, blasting the building as all the power went out.

" Whhhhhaaaaaaaaaa!" Luigi and Liz were startled by the power outage as Ziden lit a flame before them, lighting up the room.

" It seems that the power was knocked out by that Lightning strike earlier. We're completely in the dark now. Who knows what Ghost might jump at us now!" Yukari said as Luigi, Youmu and Liz shivered in fright.

" Jeez Yukari, do you always have to be so creepy?" Pit asked.

" Of course she does, old people are always creepy." Ziden said as he felt Yukari glaring at him in the dark.

" I remember seeing a Generator in the basement where we came from." Ichigo said as Tewi popped out of Ziden's hood and yawned.

" THat was a good nap, what'd I miss?" Tewi asked as she sees Patchouli's head on his shoulder.

" Nothing much, Luigi fought a giant zombie, we took out a Lightning Human and Patchouli's being extremely jealous for some reason and she's clinging to Ziden like a flea." Yuyuko said as Patchouli sighed.

" I swear, after this is over, I'm going to blast all of you with stongest magic I can find." Patchouli said as she forced Ziden to move forward.

" Lead the way, Kid and Ichigo, you're the ones whom explored the basement." Ziden said as Ichigo and Kid lead the way into the basement, they turned the power back on as they continued into the hallway that Ichigo and Kid had lit earlier. There was a door covered in the white vines as Luigi used the key and destroyed the vines.

They entered the door and found themselves being sucked into a spiraling void as they all panicked as Ziden and Yukari calmly floated



towards the other side of the void as a bright light blinded everyone as they found themselves inside a Mansion lobby with several doors around them.

" This is it, Nightmare and 02 are nearby, I can feel it. Behind these doors lie powerful opponents, everyone, be careful. I don't plan on losing any friends today." Ziden said as everyone nodded while hiding their shock at Ziden actually showing care to them.

Kirby noticed that his Warp Star was in the middle of the room as he grabbed it and ran towards the door with a cloaked figure on it. Patchouli and Yuyuko followed after him as Patchouli looked at Ziden and whispered something to him. Ziden nodded as he heard a piano being played from behind one of the doors as Sakuya walked over to it and opened it. Ziden, Robin and Erza followed her through the door.

Luigi, Meiling and Youmu spotted a door with a white blob on it as they walked over to the door and opened it.

Yukari, Ichigo, and Kid saw a door with a large humanoid with a claw-like arm and walked over to it as they got ready fight.

Ziden and the others found themselves in a large ballroom like area as they see a man in a black trenchcoat playing the piano. He stops playing as he spots the group and stands while dusting off his jacket.

" You're with the Rulers of Darkness, aren't you?" Ziden asked as the man chuckled.

" Indeed I am. I'm Albert Wesker and tonight, you shall fall to Darkness' embrace, Illusionary Heroes." Wesker said as his red eyes glowed from behind his sunglasses. Nemesis is seen walking out of the shadows and charged at the group.

Luigi and his friends find themselves in another dimension as they walked into a for bit as a bright light appeared above them.

" Welcome to my realm, Heroes." A white blob descended from the sky and appeared above the group.

" 02!? You are alive!" Luigi yelled as his legs knocked against each other.

Yukari and the others found themselves in a large rectangular room as a large tank was in the other side of the room. The creature inside the tank was a large humanoid with a large claw-like arm and its heart was on the outside of the body.

" That creature... is an Asymmetrical Abomination!" Kid yelled as he opened fire on the tank releasing the creature known as the Tyrant.

Kirby and the others found themselves on a barren wasteland as they looked around and saw the Earth floating beyond their reach as they hear evil laughter above them.

" It has been a long time Kirby. I told you that I would return to take my vengence against you." The group looked up to see Nightmare above the Moon, completely towering over them.

" So this is Nightmare? He's a lot bigger than I imagined him to be." Yuyuko said.

" Let us see if you can handle this opponent, Kirby." Nightmare snapped his fingers as a portal opened and a large multi-sided dice with red eyes on it appeared above them.

*Fun Facts:*

*1. Yep! That was a certified Giant Luigi fight and that's not the last time we see Odz either!*

*2. It should be obivous what happens in the next Dream Chapter. Time for that Boss Blitz!*

*3. Ruler 4 has been revealed as Albert Wesker, the main bad from Resident Evil, I did not miss the word guy, I refer them as Main Bads,*

*I don't know why but I do.*

*Author's Note: I like waffles! This is delicious! What? Oh right, Yeah, this is a good chapter, I enjoyed making. See you next time, R&R!*

## All Out War! Gensokyo Fights Back!

Ziden and Satori looked at the enraged Donkey Kong as the other noticed the weird object on his head. It was a crown like object with a red gem in the middle of it.

" A Slave Crown... I see, this creature is being controlled by that Crown. Break it and he'll be on our side correct?" Ziden nodded to Satori's words as Yuugi stood in front of Ziden while cracking her knuckles.

Donkey Kong beats his chest as act of taunting as he slammed his hands into the ground, creating a shockwave that knocked everyone off of his feet as he charged at Ziden. Donkey Kong pulled his fist back ready to slam it into Ziden's face as Yuugi slammed her fist into his gut, sending him crashing through the ceiling as Aya, Marisa, Reimu and Komachi flew after him as Yuugi stayed behind looking conflicted about something.

Satori whispered something into Ziden's ear as he understood what to do. Ziden tapped Yuugi on the shoulder, grabbing her attention. " Hey! Yuugi! How come you aren't going after Donkey Kong?" Satori asked.

" I can't, I go after that ape, I'm leaving Ziden unprotected, I can't allow that to happen." Yuugi said as she clenched her fists in anger in missing out in a good fight.

" Well, if you're not gonna go, then I'm going to go after them and get into this fight myself!" Satori said for Ziden as he tried to get out of the bed, only to fall down on the floor as Yuugi and Eirin ran to his side.

" What?! You're injured! If you go out there in your condition, you'll get killed!" Eirin warned as Yuugi realized what Ziden was doing.

" That's messed up kid. Making me choose like this. If you weren't injured, I'd deck you for this." Yuugi said as she scratched her head. "... Fine, I'll go but you better not get yourself hurt while I'm gone." Yuugi flew herself up the hole as Ziden sighed.

" Yes Ziden... all Oni are like that when it comes to their mates, count yourself unlucky that one fell for you. They are very overprotective of their mate." Satori said as Hatate helped Ziden back onto the bed as Ziden looked up at the hole in the ceiling.

*Aboveground...*

The Tengu and Kappa opened fire on the Zealots as they charged at the group as Reisen spotted several new Zealot types approaching them. One were cloaked in green cloaks with black machines on their backs that allowed them to fly through the air. These were Aerotrooper Zealots.

The other was a large Hulking Zealot cloaked in red with a large tank and a large gun-like object was in his hand. This was Pyro Zealot, a powerful being that carried a deadly Flamethrower that could shoot flames over 200 yards.

The Next ones were wearing simple blue cloaks but their hoods morphed into Mage's hats near the tops, marking them as Mage Zealots.

The last ones are wrapped in white and were holding wooden staves that could be used for healing, these were the Cleric Zealots and it should noted that these ones were clearly females.

" There's alot of these guys, it doesn't look like this will be a quick victory." Reisen said as she took aim at an Aerotrooper Zealot as he flew towards the walls as he pulled out a large rifle. The Rifle fired a large green pulse of energy towards the group as the Tengu dropped the useless guns and grabbed their fans. They all flew towards each other as the warriors clashed with each other as all out war broke out.

## Night of Fate ( Kingdom Hearts)

Reisen fired a powerful rifle bullet through an Mage Zealot's face, blasting off its head as the Aerotroopers began to open fire with their explosive ammunition as Reisen dodge rolled to the side.

Kaguya fired several Danmaku bullets at the Shadow Zealots climbing the wall, blasting them off of the wall. One of them snuck up on her as she ducked down for the blade to pass by her head as a nearby Kappa spun around and shot him in the chest, blasting him into the village as they noticed several Shadows appearing on the walls.

" HEartless are here too! This isn't good at all!" Kaguya yelled as a Shadow pounced towards her, only to slap it away with her hands. She used the pistol in her other hand and clumsily fired it, hitting a Shadow in the foot due to the recoil of the gun. " I can't use these things, I'll leave it to the Kappa and Reisen." Kaguya threw her gun to the floor, causing it to fire and hit Aerotrooper that was above her as he spiraled downwards into the village and exploded upon impact, shocking Kaguya.

" Those flying guys will perform Kamikaze attacks if you kill them, be careful!" One of the Kappas yelled as several Soldier Heartless on the wall as Reisen fired a powerful laser from her eyes, striking a Cleric, knocking her out as a Soldier Heartless attacked her from behind, knocking her off the wall and on the ground below as Kaguya panicked and jumped to the ground, landing next to the downed Reisen as the Aerotroopers and Shadow Zealots charged at them as Kaguya felt panicked.

" No! I won't let any of you hurt Reisen! I'd die before I let any of you touch her!" Kaguya yelled as she leapt in front of her with arms stretched out, ready to die for her loyal pet as she closed her eyes. She heard the sound of something being cut as she opened her eyes and saw the Zealots dissolving into dust and Munny and a large golden pole above her as she saw the man that trained her towering over her.

" You're... um... Whitebeard, right?" Kaguya asked as Whitebeard walked past her and lifted Reisen to her feet as she staggered a bit.

" You could at remember the name of the man who trained you in the ways of Haki, brat." Whitebeard as he spotted the large group of Zealots marching towards them. " It looks like I have to get involved in another war again. This time, I won't let these Youngsters show me up this time." Whitebeard flexed his muscles and pulled his arm back. " Lets see if what that Judge of the Dead said is true!" Whitebeard slammed his fist into the air, causing blue cracks to form in the air and travel towards the group of Mage Zealots, completely destroying the area beneath as they were crushed under the rocks as Reisen and Kaguya were shocked at how strong the old man really was. " Gurararara! So she was telling the truth, I still have my powers, even as a ghost! Hey, Rabbit brat, you can deal with that big red one over there, we'll deal with the rest."

Reisen focused on the large Pyro Zealot as he began to walk towards the group as Kaguya had several spell cards in her hands.

Elsewhere...

Mokou and Keine are seen dodging a pure black orbs that were coming from David's attacks as they scrambled behind a building as they tried to catch their breath.

### **Boss Theme ( Shin Megami Tensei 4)**

" This isn't good, Keine, that guy's keeping us away from him so we can strike him!" Mokou said as Keine blankly stared at Mokou.

" You realize that we can just take him out with our Danmaku, right? This isn't a Spell Card Duel, so we can use them for fatal results." Keine suggested as Mokou sweatdropped.

" Don't give me that look! I haven't had to use Legitimate Danmaku in a few weeks now!" Mokou argued as David appeared in front of them.

" Hello ladies. Blight." David once again fired a succession of black spheres at the duo as they separated from each other as Mokou swung her hand upwards, creating a fire pillar that blasted David into the air as several bright lasers slammed into his back and sent him crashing into the ground as Keine and Mokou chased after him, ready to continue the assault.

" Three Treasures- Sword!" Keine summoned a blade to her hand as David leapt out of the pit and delivered a powerful kick to Mokou's face, sending her flying through a building as Keine blocked his kick with her blade, still being forced back by the demon's unholy strength.

Mokou pulled herself out of the building as she flew towards David with fire covering her hands. She grabbed David by his bony face, burning it as she slammed him into the ground before unleashing a volley of fire on him as Keine noticed that the villagers were violently twitching.

She was startled by this as darkness surrounded the villagers, snatching them away from the area as Keine wondered where they went as they see a large ape being launched into the air with several girls chasing it into the air.

Mokou stopped her assault as the dust cloud that was formed around completely blocked her view on her opponent as she made sure not to drop her guard as she saw David standing in the pit with an unknown expression on his face.

" Mokou, it doesn't look like your fire works well on this guy." Keine said as Mokou growled.

"..." David was completely silent as if he was listening to someone talking to him. " This is unfortunate, mother is requesting our presence now? Hmm." David said aloud as he looked up at Mokou. " We will have to settle this battle another time, Cursed Ones. I may not be able to kill either of you, but I will make you wish that you could die." David left with a threat as Mokou descended to the



ground next to Keine as they noticed that the ape that was thrown into the sky earlier was now flying straight at them.

" Oh no." The duo said in unison as the ape crashed into them, sending them flying into a wall as Donkey Kong beat his chest in anger.

*Elsewhere...*

Remilia and Flandre were fighting against the powerful Beowulf as he roared and disappeared in a burst of light.

Remilia ducked down to avoid a surprise punch to the back from Beowulf as Flandre threw several explosive spears into his back, knocking him to his feet as Remilia jumped onto his back. She began to rapidly slash his back with her razor sharp claws as Remilia flew up to dodge a burst of light that burnt into her body, making it steam as her body healed from the pain.

" THis demon just had to be able to use Light attacks. Such a pain in the rear to deal with." Remilia said as Flandre flew next to her with her wings jingling in the wind as she spotted two people flying in the distance before crashing into the school.

Beowulf jumped into the air began to try and hit the girls with a barrage of light infused punches as they evade each one of the punches as Remilia used Heart Break and threw the spear into his good eye, stunning him as Flandre got behind him.

Unfortunately, Beowulf quickly turned around and backhanded her through a wall as Remilia flew over to her sister, only to get crushed by Beowulf's stomach as he belly flopped onto her.

" Humph, Pathetic! You weren't even worth my time girl!" Beowulf roared as he got on all fours as Remilia placed her feet on his stomach and sent him flying into the sky.

Remilia pulled out a Spell Card as she radiated a red aura. "Destiny: Miserable Fate!" Several blood red chains fired out from her hands and wrapped around parts of Beowulf's body as she yanked down with all of her strength, slamming the large demon into the ground as Flandre pulled out a crad.

"Taboo: Laevateinn!" A large fiery blade appeared in her hand as she swung her blade, releasing a sword wave of fire that slammed into Beowulf's chest, blasting him back. Beowulf growled as he grabbed a nearby building and raised it over his head. He slammed down onto Flandre only for her to block the attack with her blade and she slashed through the house and slashed Beowulf in his eye, enraging him as he released a bright burst of light that blasted Remilia and Flandre with light, burning their flesh as they dashed inside one of the buildings and hid in the shade.

"Come out you little brats! I know you're there! I can smell your fear!" Beowulf declared as Remilia growled under her breath as her wounds closed up. Her body was still healing from the light blasts as she peeks out from the window and spots Beowulf surrounding his hand in light as she quickly ducked back down and placed her hands over her head in a panicked motion. Flandre mimicked this motion as Laevateinn laid across her head. "Volcano!" Beowulf punched the ground, creating a massive pillar of light to pierce through the area as building around them were blasted apart, save for the one they were hiding.

"Come on! Lets get him now sis!" Flandre said as the bright light died down as Beowulf dropped to his knee.

"Yes! NOW!" Remilia used her Demon Lord Walk to crash through the wall and tore through Beowulf's left arm, tearing it off as she slammed her leg into his face as he was then impaled by Flandre's Laevateinn through the spine as Flandre was startled by a flash of white feathers exploding out of his back, turning into four white wings as one of them smacked her off of him.

" I can see how you brats were able to take down Phantom! You're stronger than I imagined, there is no more need for me to hold back!" An explosion of energy came from Beowulf's body as he charged at Remilia as she spun past his fist and landed a hard punch on his nose, breaking it as Flandre created an arc of fire that was firing unholy amounts of fiery bullets as Remilia pulled out a spell card.

" Scarlet Sign: Red the Nightless Castle!" Remilia was covered in a burning aura that exploded into a large powerful explosion that pierced into the air and blasted Beowulf into the sky as she pulled out another Spell Card. " Certain Kill: Heart Break!" Remilia summoned a spear to her hand as she threw it with all the force she could muster as it tore through Beowulf's eye, destroying it as the red laser pierced through the heavens, dispersing the clouds in the sky as Beowulf fell to the ground, lifeless as he exploded into light.

Remilia and Flandre both fell on the ground, exhausted as she looked at the sun above them and then at the mark on her hand. " I never thought there would be a day were I could walk out in the Sun again." Remilia said as Flandre smelt something in the air.

" Hey sis, there's alot of blood coming from over there! We Should go and join in on the fun!" Flandre said as her sister smiled.

" Yes, my dear little sister. Lets have some fun." Remilia said as they took flight and flew towards the Southern Gate, ready to join the fight.

*Elsewhere...*

Two powerful flames slammed into each other with both of them being equal strength. Bowser charged at Suika and slammed his fists into her body, sending her flying as he chased after her.

Suika quickly recovered and slammed her fist into the ground, pulling out a large boulder as she launched it at Bowser, whom pulled his fist back and smashed the boulder to pieces as he smirked.

" You think that was supposed to hurt! Hah! Nice try, little girl!" Bowser said as Suika glared at him while cracking her knuckles.

" If you thought I was getting serious, then you've never fought an Oni before pal!" Suika slammed her fist into the ground, causing a massive quake to destroy the ground.

### **Broken Moon ( Touhou 10.5 Scarlet Weather Rhapsody)**

Bowser knocked onto his back from the impact of the ground being destroyed as Suika slammed her feet onto his chest and punched his jaw with enough force to wreck a Dolphin's entire body, sending him skidding across the rocks as Suika grabbed a boulder and lifted it over her and slammed down on his body, forcing him deeper into the ground.

Suika took a swig from her gourd as Bowser clawed his out from the ground and grabbed a boulder himself. " Lets see how you like this, half-pint!" Bowser threw the boulder into the air and spat a fireball at it, exploding it into fiery pieces as it rained down on the area.

" Not bad for an overweight turtle, but that's not going to be enough to beat an Oni like me!" Suika swung her chains like a windmill as she shot them upwards, smashing each rock before it even touched the ground. Bowser growled at her as she smirked while drinking more sake from her gourd as her face became more red.

" Tch! This half-pint reminds me of Spikes and White-Hair and I don't like that! I'm going to win this time! I WILL SMASH YOU TWERP!" Bowser leapt forward with his claws out. " Koopa Claw!" Bowser slashed Suika across the chest, noting that while he didn't draw blood, he did however, cause damage to her as she staggered back. Bowser quickly grabbed her and flipped into the air. " Koopa Slam!" Bowser threw himself into the earth, crushing Suika underneath him as he retreated into his shell. Suika easily lift the large behemoth off of her and threw him into the air.

Suika pulled her fist back as she waited for Bowser fall back down. "Spectre - Dense-!" Suika slammed her fist into Bowser while at the same time releasing a fire bullet from her fist, not only punching Bowser hard in the chest, but setting him on fire as he is sent flying through a boulder, getting stuck in the wall as Suika merrily skipped over to him.

" Bowser, this may have not been a smart idea." Bowser said to himself as Suika reached him as the camera aimed itself into the sky. The sounds of flesh being hit and Bowser's screams filled the air.

*Elsewhere...*

Donkey Kong delivered a powerful headbutt to Marisa, forcing her into the ground as he backhanded Komachi with his powerful ape hands, smashing her into the ground.

" Tch! This ape is tougher than he looks! All we have to do is knock him out so we can get that crown off his head right?" Reimu asked.

" Yeah, that's what Ziden said, sucks that he's injured right now, we could use him as a meat shield right now." Komachi said as Marisa freed herself from the dirt.

" Oh, and who was going to be that meat shield again?" Komachi turned to see Yuugi standing behind her with a smirk on her face. Komachi paled as Yuugi cracked her knuckles.

" I was just joking! I'd never use my future husband as a meat shield!" Komachi said, trying to cover up that fact.

" Good, then I must have heard you wrong then! Alright Donkey Kong! Its time for you to fight one of the 4 Devas of the Youkai Mountain!" Yuugi charged forward as Donkey Kong jumped into the air.

**Bad Boss Boogie ( Donkey Kong Country)**

Donkey Kong clasped his hands together and slammed them down on Yuugi as she blocked the attack with her forearms, blocking the attack as the ground shattered beneath them as Yuugi smirked.

Komachi quickly appeared behind Donkey Kong, slammed the backside of the scythe into his back, stunning the great ape as he fell down as Yuugi delivered a powerful haymaker to his jaw.

The powerful blow sent DK into the air while spinning like a corkscrew as Marisa flew into the air, going to where DK was going to be. " Narrow Spark!" Marisa fired a pale blue beam into DK's back, careening him back towards the ground as he quickly recovered and delivered a strong punch to Yuugi's chest, knocking her back a few feet as DK grabbed Komachi by a her waist, and placed her on his back and launched her through a building, causing it to collapse.

Aya began to fly around DK at lightning fast speeds as he tried to hit her only to fail. " Hah! You'll never able to hit a Tengu like me with such sluggish moves!" Aya taunted as DK continued his attempts at trying to hit the speedy woman.

DK soon changed his strategy as he twisted his body and performed a powerful spinning punch that caught Aya right in her chest, stunning her as he grabbed her leg and slammed her underneath him.

DK brought his arms up in an attempt to crush her as Aya flipped over and brought out her camera. " Smile!" Aya's camera flashed directly in DK's eyes as she got to her feet as Reimu jumped onto his back and grabbed the crown and tried to pull it off of him as DK fought against Reimu and constantly move himself so that she would fall off.

" WOuld you guys keep this monkey still?!" Reimu asked as Aya grabbed and yanked DK's legs from under him as Yuugi jumped over to him and held his arms down as Reimu struggled to pull the crown off of him. DK began to fight against his bindings as he kicked Aya in

the face multiple times and punched Yuugi several times to break free from his binds as he got to his feet.

" That's not going to end well, ze." Marisa said as DK forced himself to fall backwards, crushing Reimu and leaving a Reimu sized hole in the ground. An audible pain filled moan came from the ground as DK focused on Yuugi as she smirked.

" Lets do this, ape boy!" Yuugi used all of her strength and lifted him into the air as he swung his body like wheel and slammed his feet into her face, splitting his toes as he avoided stabbing himself on her horn. She let go of him at the moment of impact as DK wound up his fist as he delivered his powerful Giant Punch, sending Yuugi flying as several coins slammed into DK's back, forcing him onto his knees as he turned to see a pair of bloomers coming for his face.

**POOOOOOOOWWWWWW!**

Marisa slammed her backside directly in his face, similar to how Peach does it, smashing DK's face in and sending him flying before he recovered.

" Marisa! Did you just hit that guy with your butt!?" Komachi asked, completely shocked by the attack.

" Of course I did, ze! My butt's a suppression weapon!" Marisa boasted as everyone else sweatdropped.

Aya grabbed her fan and swung it, creating a powerful gust launched DK into the air as Yuugi appeared above him with her arm pulled back as she slammed her powerful punch into Dk's stomach, blasting him into the earth which creating a large crater as Reimu was knocked out her hole and rolled into the crater, going straight towards DK with the intent of removing the Slave Crown.

DK's eyes were now swirls, indicating that he was soundly knocked out as Reimu calmly approached him and grabbed the crown. It soon

came off after a few minutes of difficult crown removing, Reimu held the crown in her hand as she smashed it.

" Great, my body's sore after that fight man." Aya said, massaging her sore muscles.

Komachi was about to say something as she looked up to see several Aerotrooper Zealots flying around them. " Well it looks like we've still got opponents to fight!" Komachi spun her scythe

as the group felt a warm wind on their backs. They looked behind them and saw DK standing up and looking very angry.

" Rahhhhhh!" DK roared his battle cry as he grabbed a large boulder and threw it at the Aerotrooper Zealots, they dodged the boulder only to see DK floating next to them.

Several screams of pain were heard as several Dusks and Samurai Nobodies were seen standing around the girls. " Reimu, get back to Sora and keep the others safe, we'll handle things here." Aya said as Reimu nodded and flew back to Sora's side as the others got ready to fight off the Invaders, whom are plotting Gensokyo's destruction at this very moment.

*Elsewhere...*

Reisen is seen dodging a large blast of fire as she fired several Bullet shaped danmaku at the Pyro Zealot stunning him as he growled.

" We will not allow you people to destroy our homes! This is Gensokyo! And we will not take this assault sitting down!" Keine was standing atop the wall, giving a speech to the Humans and Youkai that were below her on the other side of the gate. " It doesn't matter if we are human or Youkai, we will band together to stop the Ultima Brigade from laying waste to our Land of Fantasy! These Zealots will know us as The Ones Who Bore Their Names! EVERYONE!



CHARGE!" The gates flew open as the Humans and Youkai charged at the Massive Group of Zealots as heroic music started to play!

### **You Will Know Our Names ( Xenoblade Chronicles)**

Reisen dodge rolled to avoid the large burst of flames coming from the Flamethrower as she fired Danmaku at his knees, forcing him to stumble. She quickly ran over to him and made sure she was extremely close to the Pyro.

" Undersense Break!" Reisen released a powerful eye wave that blasted the Zealot back onto the large tank on his back. Reisen jumped onto his chest and performed several powerful elbow strikes to his face, almost breaking his mask before he grabbed her by the throat and rolled himself to his feet. He growled before he chokeslammed her into the ground and kicked her away from him as he pointed the Flamethrower at the rolling rabbit.

Reisen quickly got to her feet and glared at the Pyro as her eyes shone red. " Illusionary Blast!" A large laser shot out from Reisen's eyes and slammed into the Pyro's chest as he fired a powerful stream of fire. Reisen quickly ran around the flames and continued to blast the Pyro with the laser, singing his flesh as he felt his mind get fuzzy from the attack. He quickly pointed his flamethrower into the sky and fired several fire balls into the sky as they rained down, striking several Youkai and Zealots, lighting them aflame as a Cleric ran over to the Pyro and began chanting something.

" Reisen!" Reisen turned to see Kaguya yelling something at her. " Stop that Cleric, she's trying to heal him!" Reisen immediately kicked into action as she dashed for the Cleric.

" Light Heal!" The Cleric Zealot showered the Pyro in blue light as the damage he took from Reisen's attacks vanished.

" Damn! I was too slow! Time for a Spell Card!" Reisen reached into her suit pocket and pulled a Spell Card that she recently unsealed. " Illusion Bomb: Myopic Firework (Mind Starmine)!" Reisen scattered

several red orbs around the battlefield as several of them landed near the Cleric and Pyro. The orbs expanded with an explosive force, blasting several enemy Zealots into the air where the Tengu tore them apart with their powerful winds.

Reisen looked back and saw Kaguya using her 5 Impossible Requests to take out a large group of Zealots that were attacking her and Whitebeard. Her Brilliant Dragon Gem was the main Zealot killer that day.

Reisen quickly reached into her jacket and pulled a hidden pistol in her pocket and fired them into the Pyro's chest, stunning him as an Idea entered Reisen's head. Reisen took her pistol and aimed at the large tank that was on the Zealot's back.

Reisen divebombed to the side and bounced off the ground, flipping herself upside down as she fired at the tank on his back. The bullets whizzed through the air and ripped through the tank on his back. The Pyro began to panic as fiery air leaked out of the machine.

**Kabooooooooooooooooommmmmmm!**

The tank exploded into massive flames, consuming the Pyro and Cleric that were nearby as molten pieces of metal slammed into the remaining Zealots, smashing them as the Gensokyo Army wiped out the last of the Zealots as Reisen ran over to Kaguya and Whitebeard.

The Army of Humans and Youkai roared a victory cry as Reisen and Kaguya hugged each.

Mokou is seen standing next to Keine as they feel a change in the air as a large hologram appeared in the sky. It was of a black haired woman that was wearing a pitch black kimono, she has also had black eyeliner around her brown eyes. She also wore black lipstick, giving her a Gothic appearance.

" Good Afternoon, Denizens of Gensokyo, Earth and the Lunar Capital! It has been over a year since I last waged war against this evil world, now I have returned, thanks to Ziden Icrim not killing me during our last encounter." Several of the Youkai and Humans were chattering amongst themselves now. " The Ultima Brigade, an Organization of our God's creation, is going to reset this Universe once again, and remove all traces of Darkness and Evil from it. It will be such peaceful times for those who join us, those who oppose us, like you lowly Youkai and Humans, will be wiped off the Earth because of the actions of Ziden Icrim and Yukari Yakumo. I am Ultima, Ultima Nexus! Leader of the Ultima Brigade!" The woman declared as the remaining Zealots roared their leader's name.

" So that's Ultima?" Yuugi asked as landed on the wall where Mokou and Keine were.

" This isn't good, it looks like this Ultima woman is trying to turn Gensokyo against Ziden and Yukari." Keine realized as Mokou clicked her teeth.

" You did well to stop my forces from destroying your precious little village, but three days from now, my forces will come back in a much bigger numbers than this one. You have no hope of withstanding that assault so I shall give you two options. 1, Hand over Ziden Icrim and Yukari Yakumo to my forces and I shall leave your home alone." Mokou and Keine were outraged by those demands as they spotted a Human and Youkai nodding to each other and silently tried to sneak back into the gate. A fireball from Mokou sent them a clear message on what not to do. " 2, fight against my forces and be swallowed by the light. The choice is yours Gensokyo."

Keine flew into the sky as Ultima watched her approach the hologram. " We will never surrender, we will stand and fight against you, Ultima!" Keine declared as Ultima chuckled.

" Very well, know that my first offer still stands. Let us see if you survive that battle, cow girl." Ultima taunted as she disappeared from the sky. Keine sighed as everyone felt the ground beginning to

shake. A large pillar of fire is seen exploding into the air as several Yin Yang orbs are seen flying into it.

If one were to look close enough at it, they could see the Original Ziden and Reimu trading blows with each other.

" What's the matter, Reimu? Mad that what I said about you is true?" Ziden said as Reimu threw several Yin Yang orbs into his chest.

" Shut it! Its about time I delivered you that ass kicking you so rightfully deserve!" Reimu yelled as Ziden chuckled.

" Bring it on then Reimu, Shrine Maiden of Paradise! Lets see if you really are my cousin!" Ziden unsheathed Murakamo and Nosada and charged at Reimu.

" Why the hell are those two fighting!?" Mokou yelled as she spots Yukari sitting next to her with a black haired woman, a red haired woman and an orange haired man.

" Don't worry about it, its just a family dispute those two need to work out." Yukari said as Mokou sighed.

" So this is Gensokyo, what a wonderous place." Robin said as Erza nodded.

" But those two shouldn't be fighting right now, especially after we had such a large battle in the village not too long ago." Keine said as Yuugi chuckled.

" Don't worry, if he causes any damage, I'll kick his ass back into place!" Yuugi said, not reassuring Keine in the slightest.

Yukari placed a fan over her mouth as she frowned. " *So Ultima is planning to turn my own people against me and Ziden? That clever gal, we'd better stay on our toes unless we want to get caught by some idiot.*" Yukari thought to herself as the battle between Reimu and Ziden kicked off.

*Fun Facts:*

- 1. I made several references to Xenoblade Chronicles in this chapter, see if you can find them out.*
- 2. Fiend David will have a bigger role later on down the line as do the other Fiends.*
- 3. Yeah, the way to take down the Pyro Zealots are similar to how you take down Flamethrower enemies in Shooting Games.*
- 4. Yeah, Ziden and Reimu are cousins, I can't wait to see how people will react to that.*

*Author's Note: This chapter took awhile due to sickness keeping me down, sorry about that guys! Anyways, next chap concludes the Dream World Arc! Sorry if this chap is shorter than you're used too! Remember! Leave a Review to tell me about how you feel about this story. I welcome positive comments, no haters though! They will be burned on sight by Okuu!*

# The End of a Nightmare!

**Darklight:** Very well! I had thought of giving Sora a Persona in the future so... yes although his Personas will act very different from what we're used to! So you'll be a happy camper when War of Shadows is made in the future.

---

Ziden cracked his neck as he set his fists on fire while he walked around Wesker as he saw his glowing red eyes. " Sakuya, take out that walking freak over there, I'll handle this guy." Ziden ordered as Sakuya nodded and summoned knives to her hands.

Robin and Erza walked to Sakuya's side and prepared to fight the towering monster.

## Theme of Wesker ( Marvel vs Capcom 3)

Wesker disappeared in a blur and appeared above Ziden, grabbing his neck and twisting his neck all the way around. Wesker smirked before Ziden grabbed his neck and forced it back into place without much difficulty.

Ziden performs a burning slide kick that knocks Wesker off of his feet as Ziden quickly stood up and delivered a burning roundhouse that sent Wesker into the ground.

Ziden cracked his neck and knuckles before he jumped into the air and formed a lance of fire and flew towards Wesker, tackling him through the wall as Sakuya threw several knives into Nemesis as he charged towards the group.

Erza charged at Nemesis as he threw a punch towards her, she jumped onto his fist and ran along his fist, continuing to run up the arm and leapt onto his back, stabbing her blades through its neck.

Robin used her power and summoned several arms onto the Nemesis, and snapped his back as Sakuya slammed the both of his feet into his face, knocking him off of his feet as Erza fired powerful sword waves into his back, blasting him forward as the Nemesis fired two missiles at the girls, sending them flying.

The Nemesis turned to Robin as she crossed her arms. Several Flower Petals are seen combining behind her to form massive arms. " Spank!" The hands slammed into Nemesis, smashing him into the ground as Sakuya flipped herself and landed on the ceiling.

" Bounce No-Bounce!" Sakuya threw her knives against the ceiling as they bounced off of it and flew down towards Nemesis, stabbing through his body as the massive tyrant fell to his knees, as Erza dive bombed him and slashed through his torso.

Nemesis staggered a bit before he fell to the ground, bleeding out as Sakuya flew to the ground. " I'm going after that man in the trenchcoat." Sakuya said as she disappeared from sight.

" What are we supposed to do now?" Erza asked as several black balls fell from the ceiling and landed on the ground, They combined to form several green beings as they walked towards the duo.

" This, I guess." Robin said as they got ready to fight the large army.

Ziden is seen back-flipping away from Wesker as he ran along the walls to get to him. Wesker disappeared in a purple blur and slammed his fist into the ground, completely missing Ziden as he appeared above Wesker, and slammed the both of his feet into his back, blasting him through the floor as they landed into the main Foyer of the Mansion.

Ziden looked around and noticed that they were in a different mansion altogether. " Wait a minute, this is that Mansion in the Arkley Mountains where the Raccoon City Outbreak started?" Ziden asked as he heard Wesker chuckling.

" Indeed it is boy. This is the very same Mansion where the T-Virus started its rampage upon that poor city." Wesker said as he walked around Ziden.

" And let me guess, some of those Zombies are in here as well?" Ziden asked as he saw two zombified dogs coming towards him.

" Correct, I wonder, how powerful will you become when the virus takes hold of you?" Wesker asked as the dogs ran towards Ziden. The dogs jumped onto Ziden as they sunk their fangs into his body, tearing off flesh as Ziden knocked them away as Wesker raised an eyebrow.

" *Why didn't he dodge them? With his speed he should have been able to-!*" Wesker's thought were interrupted by the dogs yelping in pain as they fell to the ground, writhing in pain as Wesker noticed that their opened wounds and flesh were closing and their skin was becoming normal colored.

" Yeah, probably should have told you that my blood is that of a Phoenix's, meaning if a Zombie that was created from a virus tastes my blood, they revert back to normal." Ziden said as Wesker frowned.

" And let me guess, that also makes you immune to the T-Virus as well." Wesker guessed as Ziden whistled.

" Correct!" Ziden said as Sakuya appeared next to him out of nowhere. " Hey Sakuya, I guess you dealt with Nemesis and came to help me, right?"

" Indeed I did. So then is the man that is the one giving you trouble?" Sakuya asked as Wesker cracked his neck.

" Not really, he hasn't really been getting any hits in yet." Ziden said as Wesker smirked.



" That's good Master. Now we can take him out and have one less Ruler of Darkness to deal with." Sakuya said as Wesker calmly grabbed his sunglasses.

" Let us see if you really can fight against me boy." Wesker threw his glasses at Ziden as he instinctively caught them, only to see Wesker right in between them. Wesker slammed his palm into Ziden's chest, and sent him flying into a wall as Wesker sweep kicked Sakuya, knocking her off of the ground as he punched her hard in the chest, sending her crashing into a statue, stunning her as Wesker appeared above her with his hand pulled back.

His hand pierced through the ground as he wondered where Sakuya went. Wesker quickly turned around to see several knives surrounding him. He watched as they shot forward towards him, only for him to speed past him due to his enhanced speed and agility.

He spotted Sakuya standing next to the downed Ziden, with her guard down as he dashed at her with unholy speed. He slammed his fist into her spine as he heard it snap like a twig only to see her body disappear.

" What the?!" Wesker was surprised and caught off guard by the knives that surrounded him. He tried his best to dodge them, but several of them slammed into his legs.

Ziden and Sakuya smirked as they watched Wesker stumble to his knees as his red eyes shone behind the sunglasses. A mass of darkness formed in his hand as Ziden felt like he saw that darkness attack before when he remembered where he saw it. " No way! That's Oscura's-!"

" Shadow Void!" Wesker slammed the ball of darkness into the ground creating a large pillar of darkness was growing larger and sucking in objects from the room as Ziden grabbed Sakuya in the bridal carry as he charged through several rooms as the void grew larger and more destructive.

Ziden ended up crashing through the wall and landed on a cliff outside as he felt something wet dripping down Sakuya's leg. Ziden placed her down and saw blood on his hand. " Sakuya? Why are you bleeding?"

" Oh... when I was trying to find you, a strange man ended up biting me on the leg. Is something wrong?" Sakuya asked as Ziden facepalmed. Ziden reached under her skirt, causing her to blush as he pulled out one of her knives and sliced his palm.

" Here, drink my blood." Ziden brought his hand to Sakuya's mouth as she kindly refused.

" Its just a bite, Master Ziden, there's no need to-"

" Sakuya, this is an order, not a request." Ziden stated as Sakuya cringed and brought his hand near her mouth, she began to drink the blood as she felt her leg wound closing up.

" Did you have to reach up my skirt like that, Master?" Sakuya asked as she got to her feet.

" I had to see how much you've grown since I last saw you." Ziden flatly said as Sakuya's hand struck him across the face. " Anyways, I'm wondering Wesker." Ziden turned to the aforementioned person. " How do you know that technique?"

" How do I know that technique? Why it was granted to me by the being that revived me, the Overlord of Darkness, Zeron Oscura!" Wesker declared as he smirked wildly.

Ziden clicked his teeth as he had his suspicions conformed by Wesker. " So Oscura is still alive huh? Looks like I have another threat to deal with." Ziden said as he glared at Wesker.

" I believe its time for to take off the kid gloves." Wesker said as darkness surrounded him.

*Elsewhere...*

Ichigo is seen blocking the large Tyrant's claw with his blade as Kid fired more bullets into its back, doing no form of damage. " Damn! This creature is stronger than he looks!" Kid said as Ichigo forced the creature back with his strength.

" It doesn't help that a certain blonde woman isn't helping us at all!" Ichigo yelled as Yukari was looking around the lab for documents.

" Don't mind me boys! You're doing great over there!" Yukari yelled, not even paying attention to the fight at all.

The Tyrant roared as he slammed his claw into the ground, creating a shockwave that stunned everyone in the room as he kicked Ichigo in the chest, sending him crashing into a desk as it jumped into the air and divebombed towards Ichigo.

Ichigo brought Zangetsu to his chest and blocked the Tyrant's claw as Kid noticed the hearts on the Tyrant's chest. He took aim at them and opened fire on them, blasting them with his bullets as the Tyrant staggered back, clutching his injured heart as Ichigo got to his feet.

" Getsuga Tensho!" Ichigo fired the massive wave of energy that completely swallowed the Tyrant and blasted the room apart as the room is completely destroyed. Luckily, Yukari found what she wanted as she stuffed it into a Gap.

" Thank you for blasting the entire room to hell and back, Ichigo." Yukari said as she dusted off her dress.

" Whatever, at least I did something!" Ichigo countered as Yukari shrugged, not caring at all.

*Elsewhere...*

Luigi, Pit, Meiling and Youmu are seen staring down the massive 02 as he stared down the trio with a bleeding eye.

" You four may not be Kirby, but you are still his allies. By killing you, he will lose friends dear to his heart. Then he will feel sorrow dancing upon his soul." 02 stated as Luigi began to cowering in fear as Pit took notice of it.

" Hey Luigi! Snap out of it! We could really use your help with this fight!" Pit said as Luigi scootched away from Pit.

" Mister Luigi! Please! We could use your help in this fight!" Youmu pleaded as Luigi once again backed away out of fear.

" Luigi! I know you're brave! You have to help us in this fight!" Luigi didn't hear Meiling's words as he ran away, frightened of 02's appearance.

" Such a worthless coward, no wonder why he'll never come out of his brother's shadow!" 02 taunted as Luigi stopped running and curled up into a ball.

" I doubt that Luigi will be any help during this battle, Pit. We may have to fight this creature by ourselves." Palutena said as Pit sighed.

" He was like this the last time we fought 02. I guess its because of how creepy that thing looks." Pit said as he pulled out his bow.

" Enough talk, its time for all to drown in sorrow." 02 roared as several platforms raised into the air. The girls and Pit were standing on the platforms more blood came from Zero's eye.

### **02's Theme ( Kirby and the Crystal Stars)**

Pit immediately began to fire arrows into 02's eye, damaging it as he fired bloody blobs back at them. The blobs were easily dodged as the exploded on the platform, painting it red in blood as Youmu fired a sword wave into his... face as it blasted him. Meiling ran towards the edge of the platform and jumped, preparing herself to fly as she noticed she was unable to, she almost fell of the platform if it wasn't

for Youmu grabbing the bottom of her dress and yanking her back to the platform.

" It seems that 02 stopped your ability to fly somehow, please don't try to fly again, Meiling." Palutena said as Meiling sheepishly rubbed the back of her head.

Several red lasers came from 02's eye and sliced the platform each time it hit it, leaving a burn mark from each beam. Pit dashed past the lasers and fired several arrows into his eye as the girls fired danmaku into his eye. 02 raised his wing and slammed it into the platform, smashing it as the girls and Pit scrambled to get to another one.

" What's wrong? You guys haven't even harmed me yet? Are you guys really that weak?" 02 asked as Meiling stomped her leg on the ground and began to spin into the air with her leg extended.

" Brilliant!" Meiling's leg began to glow with a bright, colorful light somewhat blinded 02. " Rankyaku!" Meiling fired a large colorful blade of air at 02, striking him directly in his eye as he flailed around madly. He landed on a platform with his eye being in striking position for melee attacks.

" He is open to attacks! Get him now!" Palutena ordered as everyone leapt across the platforms and reached 02's eye.

Youmu unsheathed her blades and began to stab and slice the undead eye as blood sprayed out with each strike. Meiling leapt into the air and began to strike the halo above his head as it soon shattered. Pit leapt onto his body and began to slice his body with his fans as 02 roared in pain while releasing a shockwave that blast the girls away as he flipped over, revealing a thorny tail as Youmu leapt off the platform while clutching a Spell Card.

" Human Sign: Slash of Present World!" Youmu's sword became wrapped in a blue flames as she swiped the blade across his tail, slicing it completely off as 02 screeched in pain. Youmu used Myon

to jump off of and land back on the platform as 02 fired a large laser into the sky that struck Youmu in the back and slammed her through the platform along with the others as they crashed into the ground.

" Ugh... my everything hurts." Pit said as Meiling and Youmu groaned in pain.

" Damn you all!" 02 yelled as Palutena tried her hardest to convince Luigi to join the fight.

" Luigi! Are you truly giving up now!" Luigi looked up and saw Dark Ziden standing over him as he gasped in shock. " Where is that brave warrior spirit you had when you faced me a year ago? Don't you dare throw in the towel now! That would literally be spitting my face! Show us that you can stand on your two feet, show that you can fight to save your Brother from this nightmare!" Dark Ziden said as Luigi slowly got to his feet as DZ smirked. Luigi began walking towards 02 as he heard the large monster laughing at him.

" Oh? So the coward decides to come to die gracefully underneath me?" 02 asked as Luigi's eyes were covered by his hat.

" I am brave... no matter what anyone says! I am Luigi Mario, the younger brother of Mario Mario! I will fight anyone who tries to hurt my bro! And that includes you, Zero!" Luigi's body exploded with light as multiple Luigis are seen jumping into Luigi's body.

02's eye widened when he saw Luigi get big enough to be on similar size with him as Luigi pulled out his hammer and smashed 02 across the area, sending him rolling across the ground as Luigi bent down and picked his comrades and placed them on his hat.

Now... the true battle against 02 began!

### **Size Does Matter ( Mario and Luigi Dream Team)**

Luigi took a battle stance as 02 flew back into the sky as the others felt a healing light cover them.

" Come on, Luigi! You can do this! Defeat 02 and save your Brother from the Dream World." Palutena said as Luigi jumped high into the air, flipped and came back down like a Meteor, complete with the flames surrounding him as he slammed into 02, feetfirst into his eye, sending him flying back as the others cheered for Luigi.

" Hmmph, not bad, Plumber, but don't think this will be an easy fight for you." 02 said as a large ball of blood formed in front of him as Meiling slammed her hand onto Luigi's hat as he felt energy moving to his arms as they became colorful from Meiling's Chi.

Luigi pulled out his hammer which became multi colored as 02's blood bomb came flying towards them. Luigi pulled his hammer back and slammed it into the blood bomb as he struggled to overcome its power.

Pit and Youmu helped by rapidly striking the large bomb with their ranged attacks, forcing it to go forward as Luigi forced it to go flying as it slammed into Zero, blasting him with his own attack.

Luigi ran over to Zero and kicked him into the air while spinning his hammer behind him and swinging it downwards onto him, blasting him into the ground and bouncing him into the air again as Luigi swung the hammer horizontally, sending Zero flying across the area as more blood trickled from the monster's eye.

" Impossible! How am I being beaten by this coward!?" 02 asked in anger as Luigi ran towards 02 and delivered a powerful uppercut that sent him flying into the air as Luigi jumped and struck 02 directly on his bandage with a karate chop, sending Zero flying across the arena as 02 struggled to get up.

" Looks like he's gonna be down for the count! Lets finish him off!" Palutena said as Luigi pulled out a large star as the trio jumped onto the star as Luigi spun around and threw the star at 02 as it flew towards him.

" Killing me here... won't accomplish anything at all... my darkness will spread... upon Gensokyo... and crush it to dust." 02 said as the star tore through his body as a bright light came from him as he roared one final time as the darkness claimed him as the others landed on the ground.

They watched as Luigi became normal sized again as they noticed DZ walking towards them.

" Hey! Its Dark Lord Z!" Pit yelled as he pulled out his bow.

" It has been years since I went by that name, boy blunder. Learn to keep up with the times." Dark Ziden said as he appeared in front of the girls as Meiling took a battle stance.

" What do you want? Are you going to try to attack us to get to Ziden, you fiend!?" Meiling asked as DZ chuckled.

" How cute. I'm not here for any of you idiots. I am merely here to confirm something that has been disturbing my precious darkness." Dark Ziden said as he snapped his fingers, bringing the group to the cliff that Ziden and Sakuya were on. Ziden noticed his dark half and almost charged at him.

" *Don't do it. He's not here to harm you.*" Mima said as Ziden lowered his guard.

" Oscura is returning boy. These Rulers of Darkness are merely his Scions, his pawns for his revival. He wishes to drown the worlds into Darkness, which is something I can't have. The Balance must be kept, lest the Holy One sends Abaddon on us." Dark Ziden said as Ziden swallowed hard. " The Scions of Oscura are indeed powerful, it is a surprise that Oscura unsealed Mundus though, I'm fairly certain that they hate each other. But I digress, soon this world will be destroyed and the Dream World will return to normal." Dark Ziden snapped his finger as Terra's sleeping form appeared next to him and fell face first on the ground. " I shall bide all of you adieu, though someday, we will meet in combat again, Light Half and his pretty little



Chinese Fiancee." Dark Ziden disappeared in a massive cloud of darkness that flew into the sky as everyone saw Nightmare hovering over the moon, but they were too worried/confused about the news they just learned.

" Looks we just got involved in even more trouble, Pit." Palutena said as Pit rubbed his nose.

" Hah! Its no problem! We can handle anything this Oscuro guy throws at us!" Pit exclaimed as they see Erza and Robin coming towards them.

" Looks we're all here." Sakuya said, obviously exhausted from fighting Wesker.

" Wait, Lady Yukari isn't here." Youmu pointed out.

" Yeah she is." Ziden said as Meiling grabbed him into a hug. " Hmm? What's wrong, China?" Ziden noticed a tick mark appearing on Meiling's temple.

" My name is Hong Meiling, not China. Are you alright?" Meiling asked.

" I'm good, but I'm tired. I'm ready to go home and take a nap." Ziden said while yawning. Ziden got to his feet and dashed to the mansion, jumping onto the wall while gaining a purple aura as he leapt high into the air as he crashed through the mansion.

" What the-?! How'd he do that!?" Pit asked.

" Ziden discovered that trick during our fight against Wesker." Sakuya said as Ziden is seen jumping out of the mansion, avoiding a large train that was trying to hit him.

Yukari is seen yelling at Ziden for some reason as Ichigo and Kid landed next to the group out of Yukari's gap.

Youmu was about to say something when a Loud moan came from the sky as they looked up to see the Halberd flying through the sky, surrounded by ominous clouds as several black orbs dropped down around them.

" No way! If these things are here, then that means-!" Pit stopped his thoughts when Luigi finished his sentence for him.

" The Subspace Army is back!" Luigi yelled as several Primids surrounded the group.

*On the Moon...*

Kirby is seen inhaling the Warp Star as it transformed into the Star Rod, the weapon needed to defeat Nightmare as he nodded to Patchouli and Yuyuko as they prepared to take on Miracle Matter.

" Kirby, it has been sometime since we last faced in combat. You destroyed my company, Holy Nightmare, even killed me. But now, I stand before you again, much stronger than last time. I ask you, do you believe that you can beat me, even with that accursed rod?" Nightmare asked.

" Poyo!" Kirby proudly declared as Nightmare laughed.

" Good! Come then Kirby! Come meet your end at the hands of the Source of all Bad Dreams!" Nightmare roared as Kirby flew into the air to combat him.

### **Miracle Matter ( Kirby & the Crystal Shards)**

Kirby swung his Star Rod, releasing several stars that flew around Nightmare and slammed into his face, damaging him as he fired stars at Kirby blasting him through the air as Kirby is sent flying through space as Nightmare calmly flew through space.

Miracle Matter transformed into a large ball of fire as he flew around, blasting the duo with fire as Patchouli grazed them.

Patchouli summoned a water ball and threw at Miracle Matter, only to be surprised that it hit against a barrier, doing no form of damage as it continued to throw fire balls at the group.

Yuyuko fired several several lasers at Miracle Matter, but is also unable to harm the creature.

" What's going on here? Why aren't our attacks harming this creature?" Patchouli wondered.

Yuyuko had a strange idea in her head as she remembered something from Ziden's childhood. Yuyuko waited until a fireball came near her and she grabbed it with her hand and threw it at Miracle Matter, hitting it through the body as MM went on a rampage and fired a volcano of fireballs and rocks at the duo, forcing them into a moon crater.

" I see, we have to use its attacks against it." Patchouli turned to Yuyuko. " How did you know that would work?"

" Well, I remembered that when my Nephew was younger, he played a game that had this creature in it and that's how he beat it." Yuyuko said while shrugging.

" I see, that strangely makes sense." Patchouli said as she summoned several fire balls around her.

The duo waited until the MM stopped its Volcano assault as Patchouli flew into the air and bombarded the creature with her fire, blasting it with fire as it screeched before it exploded into a dark mist.

"... We beat it? That was easy!" Yuyuko exclaimed as the dark mist slammed into the ground and began to take a humanoid shape. MiracleMatter now took the form of a Masked Swordsman as a flaming sword appeared his hands. " Never mind, we still have this to fight."

Kirby is seen running along several Meteors as Nightmare is seen casually throwing several of the meteors at Kirby. Kirby quickly jumps between the meteors and strikes Nightmare directly across his massive face as Kirby followed up by firing an unholy amount of Stars at Nightmare, blasting him with its holy power.

Nightmare growled as he grabbed Kirby with his giant hand and pulled his hand back and threw Kirby through several Meteors, completely smashing through them as he crashed landed on the Moon as Nightmare appeared above him in a instant.

### **Strongest Sword ( Kirby Mass Attack)**

Yuyuko used her butterflies to block Dark Matter's blade from cutting her as Patchouli finished casting a spell. " Eruption!" A mini volcano appear beneath Dark Matter, as it blasted him with powerful flames that pierced through his barrier, stunning him as Yuyuko's butterflies as they flew by Dark Matter. But they were blocked by the barrier that protects him from attacks.

" Looks like that barrier is still in effect from before, that could be a problem." Patchouli stated as Dark Matter raised his sword above his head and swung it, leaving arc of fire that blasted the butterflies away as Patchouli thought of something.

Yuyuko quickly flew into the sky and summoned several ghosts to her side as they rushed at Dark Matter as he cleaved through the ghosts with his blade. " Hmm, looks like Fire attacks are the way to go right now."

" Perhaps, but I'm going to try something else. Autumn Edge!" Patchouli summoned several large blades that flew towards Dark Matter as they slashed through his body, causing him to bleed darkness as he jumped back and stabbed his blade into the ground, creating fire pillars that snaked their way to Yuyuko, blasting her with fire as she crashed into the ground dazed by the attack.

Dark Matter's eyes began to glow as Kirby fired another wave of stars at Nightmare, badly damaging him as Nightmare pointed his finger at him. A large laser fired from his finger and tore through the moon as Kirby narrowly dodged it.

The laser ended up blasting Dark Matter into the sky as he changed his blade from a fiery bladed to a twin blade of lightning that he spun around himself.

Patchouli began to cast another spell as Dark Matter appeared in front of her, ready to stab her with the lightning blade. A swarm of razor edge butterflies slashed him across the back, stunning him as Patchouli stepped back and finished her spell. " Thunder Blade!" A large blade of lightning pierced through its body and exploded into a shockwave that tore his body apart as he flew backwards, looking severely weakened.

Kirby began to spin the Star Rod like a fan, releasing a hurricane of stars that swarmed around Nightmare as he actually began to panic.

" No! I refuse to lose again!" Nightmare released a massive burst of darkness that blasted all the stars away as he opened his cloak, revealing a massive tornado under his cloak that sucked in Kirby and began to rapidly smash Kirby into a pulp as he is soon spat and crashes against the ground, unmoving as Yuyuko noticed it out of the corner of her eye.

" Kirby!" Yuyuko quickly flew to the side of her injured comrade, fearing the worst, only to be relieved that he was only knocked out by the attack.

Yuyuko saw the Star Rod in his hand as she took it from his hand as gripped her hands on it tight.

" Do you believe that you can beat me with that girl?" Nightmare asked as Yuyuko stood her ground.

" I can and will defeat you Nightmare. In order to save our allies that you trapped in this Dream, I will defeat you!" Yuyuko declared as she flew into the air and swung the Star Rod, firing a multitude of purple stars that slammed into Nightmare, dealing more damage than normal as it knocked him back.

" What?! The Star Rod became more powerful in this girl's hands!? What is this!?" Nightmare yelled as he grabbed Yuyuko and threw into the Meteors nearby as he noticed something black crashing into the moon.

Patchouli noticed that it was a human as it climbed out of the crater he made as Ichigo looked extremely angry.

" That freaking jackass! I could have died from that!" Ichigo yelled as he noticed Dark Matter getting up.

" Looks like that thing still wants to fight us. That's not good." Patchouli said as she noticed something strange about the Dark Matter. Darkness surrounded him as he disappeared from the area completely. " He ran away? Strange."

Yuyuko had gotten herself unstuck from the wall as she held a brand new Spell Card in her hand. " Dream Sign: Lights of Pop Star!" The Star Rod floated in front of her and released thousands after thousands of gold stars as they bombarded Nightmare, blasting entire holes through his body as he roared in pain as his body was being completely consumed by the holy power of the Star Rod.

Kirby slowly opened his eyes and saw Nightmare's defeat with his own eyes.

Two women nearby are seen watching over this scene as they had tears of joy in their eyes.

" Gengetsu, they have stopped Nightmare from taking over the Dream World." The blonde maid said as Gengetsu is seen smiling.

" Indeed they have, Mugetsu, it seems that this world is now safe for people to dream again." Gengetsu declared as her white wings extended themselves as she flew away with her sister in tow.

" Impossible... IMPOSSIBLE! I WAS BEATEN BY A MERE WOMAN!?" Nightmare roared in extreme anger as light shone from his body as he exploded, taking out the Meteor with the explosive force as Yuyuko phased herself through the explosion and landed calmly on the moon.

" And that the end of him." Yuyuko said as she saw Kirby running towards her with a smile on his face. Yuyuko handed him the Star Rod back to Kirby as he looked at it for a second before giving it back to her. " Eh? You want me to keep this, Kirby?"

" Poyo!" Kirby happily said as everyone heard a loud creaking noise as an explosion of bright colors washed over everyone, engulfing them as they found themselves back in front of the destroyed Mansion as they noticed that Yukari and the others looked tired from a long fight.

" Looks like the Dream World Incident has been officially wrapped up!" Meiling happily said as Ziden sighed before leaping through the portal.

" Well now, if you three really wish to help us, I shall bring you all to Gensokyo when you awaken." Yukari said as Pit, Erza and Ichigo all nodded. " Tell your father I said hello, Kid!"

" I shall... though I don't know why I should." Kid said as he jumped through the portal, ready to awaken in his perfectly symmetrical bed.

" We should get back as well, there's no telling what's going on out there." Patchouli said as everyone nodded.

The group entered the portal and saw Ziden and Reimu standing across from each other, Ziden had the Crimson Edge in his right hand and Reimu had her Gohei in her other hand.

Eirin was standing between them, trying to defuse the situation but failing.

" In our family, if we have a problem, do you know how we settle our differences?" Ziden asked as flames danced on his blade.

A smirk appeared on Reimu's face. " I think I do and I'm all for it!" Reimu said as she held several paper seals in her hands.

Yukari saw that Meiling, Youmu and Sakuya were about to jump in as Patchouli and Yuyuko stopped them.

" Don't interfere in this fight, you'll only get hurt in the process. This is something they have to work out together... or in this case, by beating the crap out of each other. Don't worry, I'll make sure those two won't get too far out of control." Yukari said, calming everyone.

Ziden and Reimu charged at each other as Eirin took the flat side of Crimson Edge to her face and Reimu's gohei to the spine, sending her flying as Reimu flip kicked Ziden in the jaw sending him through the hole in the ceiling as she chased after.

### *Fun Facts:*

*1. Oscura is the being responsible for the revived villains like Ganondorf and Vergil and he is also the Overlord that Ziden fought when he was 15.*

*2. Dark Ziden is less evil and more of an douche to be honest, although he has his good points when it comes to keeping the Balance of Light and Darkness. On a similar note, Ziden's mini Harem is confirmed to have 8 Touhou girls and that's it.*

*3. Miracle Matter was seen using several Combo Abilities during his fight, try to name the three of them. Dark Matter will appear again, as will 02.*



*4. Ziden's blood can cure the T- Virus but it will more than likely kill said person, turning them into a powerhouse of mindless destruction.*

*Author's Note: The Nightmare is over! The Heroes have completed their mission and saved their Sleeping Allies whom will awaken next chapter and will also have warm hearted moments as well! See you next chapters! And leave a Review telling me what you think of the Story so far and if you have a Boss that you want appear in a Future Gate battle! I am now taking requests for Bosses, so send them my way!*

# Raging Blast! Hero vs Shrine Maiden!

**Alright, I made some changes to Chapter 52, All Out War! Gensokyo Fights Back! because I found something to be ridiculous and I just changed it completely. So yeah, that's gone, enjoy the Family Brawl!**

---

The entire sky was filled with flames, amulets and Yin Yang orbs as Ziden was dashing around in the air, constantly jumping around to dodge Reimu's attacks as she easily dodged his attacks.

" Looks like those two are really going at it." Yukari pointed out as Mokou felt uncomfortable letting those two fight above the Village.

Yuugi was enjoying the fight as she watched Ziden disappear from sight and appeared above Reimu with his leg in the air as it darkened. Ziden slammed it down on her head, sending her crashing into the ground, only for her to stop her fall with her arms and vaulted herself backwards and onto her feet.

Both Aya and Momiji were taking pictures of the fight as Ziden allowed gravity to take control as he landed on the ground, a few feet away from Reimu.

" What's the matter Reimu? This all you got kid?" Ziden asked as he spun his sword.

" I was going to ask you the same thing, *kid*. " Reimu retorted as Ziden smirked.

" At least you will put up a fight before you lose." Ziden said as more flames danced on his blade.

**Mystic Oriental Love Consultation ( Touhou Scarlet Weather Rhapsody)**

Ziden quickly dropped a green orb into the ground as a green mist dispersed over the area before he leapt forward, spinning his blade in his hand.

Reimu held up her hands and formed a blue barrier that she expected Ziden's sword to bounce off of it and leave him open to attacks. Ziden's blade slammed into her barrier as it slowly began to tear through it, shattering it as he landed on his feet and slammed his foot into her chest, throwing her back some as Ziden was about to run after her, only to see Mokou standing in front of him.

" Mokou, this is not the best time to talk to me." Ziden said.

" What the hell is wrong with you two!? You two do realize that we just got finished fighting a war right?!" Mokou asked as Ziden looked over her shoulder.

" You did? We didn't know but I doubt this will be wrapped up soon. She probably is going to be one of those sturdy ones to take down." Ziden stated as he spun Crimson Edge.

" Didn't you hear me you jackass!? YOu two need to stop this now!" Mokou said as Ziden dug in his ear before he noticed something and disappeared. " Hey! Don't run you little-!" Mokou's words were stopped when turned around and saw Reimu's Fantasy Seal coming towards her. " That's why he ran that son of a bi-!" Mokou was slammed with a full powered Fantasy Seal as it layed waste to both Mokou and that part of the Human Village.

Ziden Geppoed his way into the air as he wondered where Reimu went. " I don't sense her anywhere nearby. Where'd she go?" Ziden wondered.

" Dimensional Rift!" Reimu appeared behind Ziden and slammed her feet into his back as they both careened into the forest.

At the Village Wall, Yukari had a Gap open, showing everyone on the wall the fight between Ziden and Reimu as it raged into the forest

near her shrine.

" How long do you think this fight will last?" Patchouli asked.

" A while, Ziden's no slouch when it comes to a fight. While Reimu's a fighter that acts on instinct and smarts, Ziden's the type to use both at the same time, turning the tide of a fight. He's deadly because of that fact." Yukari said.

" But Ziden's not good at Danmaku or Spell Card Duels, won't mean Ziden'll lose against Reimu?" Keine asked.

Dante flashed a smirk. " I don't know much about this place, but does that look like a Spell Card Duel to you?" Dante asked as Reimu is seen dodging large fire dragons as the woods are torn apart and set ablaze by his flames.

" No, it looks far more destructive." Keine observed.

Some of the Villagers were also watching the fight as the Tengu were watching them, most notable was a Tengu whom was standing on a cloud. She had dark green hair and was wearing what appeared to be a Tokin on her head. She wore a long sleeved light brown robes and her long skirt was dark purple with a lighter shade of purple going down the middle with an etching of a red mountain with a red handprint underneath it. She was glaring hard at Ziden with her red eyes.

Yukari noticed her and sighed. " And to think he made an enemy with a Great Tengu in both Gensokyo and the Isle of Hope, that boy just seems to attract trouble wherever he goes." Yukari said under her breath.

" Do you think the Shrine Maiden can win against him?" A Human villager asked.

" No way! Did you see that guy fight that monster that attacked the Village 4 years? He took that thing down without even trying!"

Another villager boasted.

" Well, the guy is married to that Mokou girl, whom fights Youkai in her free time, so I'm sure he can hold his own against her." A Female Villager said.

" That Shrine Maiden will win, we all know what she can do, some upstart human with mediocre magic won't beat her." A male Youkai simply said as some of the Human Villagers began to cheer for Ziden while the others cheered for Reimu.

Ziden dodged several amulets as they tore the trees apart as he ran over to them and kick them at Reimu.

" Goddammit! He just seems to dodge my attacks and use their destrucive properties to his advantage." Reimu noticed as she jumped on one of the trees and ran along it, holding several prayer slips in her hand as she jumped and got closer to Ziden.

Ziden instinctively swung his fist at her head as she ducked under it and threw a slip onto his chest and sweep kicked him off of his feet as he fell onto the ground. She quickly jumped his chest and a Spell Card high into the air.

" Dream Sign: Evil Sealing Circle!" A pillar of blue light appeared around Reimu as Ziden is forced deeper into the ground as he is burned by the holy energy. Reimu leaps out of the hole and holds onto her gohei tighter as she knows that this fight is far from over.

" Looks the fight is in the bag now! Reimu pulled out her spell cards! That guy is screwed!" One of the Villagers said.

" Its weird for the Villagers to get invested in this after such a battle. Its weird." Byakuren pointed out as she sat down with Miko being far away from him.

" This good for morale! Seeing two powerful people fight each other and knowing that they are on your side is going to improve our

morale." Yukari said.

" I guess, but I doubt that Ziden is going to stand a chance against Reimu." Miko simply said as the magicians of the group sensed something.

An explosion of fire came from the forest as everyone saw a massive Phoenix and Dragon appeared in the sky. Soon afterwards, everyone felt a massive surge of magic coming from that distance as Byakuren felt sick.

Even the Tengu and Youkai were forced to their knees by the sudden surge of magic. Erza was affected by it as well.

" Its stronger than before? What the hell!?" Marisa asked.

" Its because we aren't near him to be caught by his attacks." Patchouli suggested.

" Correct!" Tewi said as she startled everyone by her appearance.

Reimu was flying in the air as she saw a jacketless Ziden walking out of the hole with flames surrounding him as he smirked. " Now its time for a Music change!" Ziden yelled as the flames increased.

Darknut Battle Theme ( Legend of Zelda Twilight Princess)

" Talk about some ominous music." Miko said as the music picked up.

" That dirtbag overrided that nice music that was playing earlier I'm kicking your ass twice as hard now!" Reimu screamed as she charged at Ziden with her fist pulled back. She slammed her fist into his face as he staggered back before smirking.

Reimu's hand was now on fire as she fell to the ground with her hand burning.

" Uh? What happened?! Why is Reimu's hand on fire!?" Marisa asked.

" I forgot that Physical Attacks against him in Flame Release sets the body part on fire that strikes him." Dante said.

" So basically, stick to long range against him and you'll win... if you're lucky." Yukari said.

Ziden cracked his neck as he watched Reimu pulled out a Spell Card. " Divine Spirit: Fantasy Seal!"

At the mere utterance of her spell, the Youkai instantly thought that Ziden was going to lose this battle.

" That kid is a goner now!" One of the Youkai said as Mokou struggled to fly up to the wall and fell facefirst onto the ground.

The colorful orbs spread out around her as they began to fly around and flew towards Ziden's body as he looked unimpressed. Fiery arms shot upwards and began to grab the Fantasy Orbs before they slammed into him as he yawned, watching the orbs being grabbed by the fire arms.

Reimu looked completely shocked as her attack was completely blocked by the fiery arms.

" You looked shocked kiddo. This is just the tip of the iceburg, kid!" Ziden declared as the fiery arms threw the attacks back at her as she flew around, dodging her own attacks with ease.

" Do you honestly think I was going to be beaten back by my own attacks?" Reimu asked.

" No, but it did distract you from my other attack." Ziden said as Reimu looked around her and saw several red lights around her. " Pyroclasm Chain!" Ziden snapped his fingers, causing the lights to explode into large fire balls that forced Reimu into the ground as

Ziden appeared behind her. Ziden slammed his palm into her back, sending her flying into a tree as Ziden followed up with a powerful kick that smashed her through the tree as she coughed up spit and blood as she sent tumbling across the ground.

Reimu got her feet as she sees Ziden tossing up a fireball in his hand. " Those fire attacks too dangerous to play around with, I need some water to counteract them with... and it might be smart to get out of the forest. There's alot of water at my Shrine." Reimu thought aloud as she flew into the air and flew towards her shrine.

" She's heading towards her shrine... hmm... I think I'll beat her there." Ziden said as he dashed towards the Shrine, kicking up a dust cloud as he raced towards the shrine.

Reimu quickly landed at her Shrine which still had a large chunk missing from her right side as she heard as rapid pace of footsteps approaching her from behind.

" Hey there! Wasn't expecting you to head here of all places, knowing how destructive I am when I comes to a fight." Ziden said as Reimu's eye twitched.

" Ziden... don't you dare!" Reimu warned.

" Ima do it!" Ziden said as a fireball appeared in his hand.

" Don't you do it!" Reimu warned again.

" Too late!" Ziden threw the fireball as Reimu immediately dodged the fireball as it exploded behind her, causing a massive explosion that was visible from the Human Village as everyone's jaw dropped.

" Dear lord, he destroyed the Shrine!" One of the Humans said while shaking.

" What power! It angers me that he held back against me!" Yuuka said as she sat down, obviously angry.



" He was holding back? That explains things. So this is him at full power? Not as strong as he makes himself seem." Patchouli said.

" That because he doesn't have all of his powers, he's missing his Flight, Light, Darkness and Shadow Morph powers before he can truly be back at 100%." Yukari explained as everyone nodded as Yuuka continued to glare at Ziden. " *Great, out of all the Youkai you could have attracted to yourself, it had to be Yuuka, this could be a problem.*"

Reimu was completely dumbfounded by the fact that her Shrine was completely destroyed by her Older Cousin.

" My... My Shrine..." Reimu was on the verge of tears before rage ran through her veins. " You're dead, Ziden! You hear me!? DEAD!" Reimu yelled as she threw several needles into Ziden's chest.

### **G Free ~ Final Dream ( Touhou Concealed the Conclusion)**

Reimu dashed towards Ziden and jumped kicked him into the smouldering remains of her home as she ran and grabbed him by his collar and began to violently punch him in his face, ignoring her burning hands.

She continued to strike him in the face as his blood splashed onto her face as she snapped back into reality and let go of Ziden as she looked at the blood on her hands.

" Its just as the clone told ya kid, I'm not the only one with blood on his hands. All those little incidents you solve here in Gensokyo, all those fairies you kill to solve this incident. All of their blood is on your hands." Ziden said as he got to his feet.

" They are just Fairies, they'd come back if you kill them anyway!" Reimu retorted.

" Oh? So you admit to killing something do you? Well it is true that they come back to life you kill them but Yukari has told me how you

showed no mercy to Mokou when you fought her, even killing her during the Match." Ziden said as Reimu bit down on her lip.

" That's different! She's Immortal it doesn't matter if I killed her!" Reimu argued.

" Is it? You end their lives on a whim, shed their blood without a second thought. without remorse and you call me a bloodthirsty monster." Ziden said as Reimu began to doubt herself.

" *He's... He's... He's right.*" Reimu clenched her fists as she glared at Ziden. " You're right, I have killed alot of things in the past and I've slain many Youkai when i first started out. But I did it in order to protect the people of this land." Reimu stated as she held her gohei to her chest.

" I see, I kill to protect the people of my land as well. My blade is a weapon of Justice that will strike down all evil in my way. We are similar after all." Ziden said as he unsheathed Crimson Edge. " Reimu Hakurei, I will no longer hold anything back. I expect you to do the same." Ziden dashed forward while spinning his blade as Reimu was caught off guard by the attack as she threw up her hands.

Ziden's blade came down on her, a bright flash of light washed over the duo as Ziden opened his eyes and saw Reimu blocking his blade with a Keyblade. " What?!" Ziden asked, completely shocked by this situation.

" OH COME ON! HOW THE HELL DOES SHE GET ONE!?" Marisa was extremely angry at this revelation.

Reimu was shocked as well but she didn't care to ask why she had one while she pushed Ziden away from her and pulled out a Spell Card as she ran at Ziden. " Divine Arts: Omnidirectional Demon-Binding Circle!" Reimu was surrounded by a pillar of powerful light as Ziden blasted by the attack as Reimu struck Ziden across the

face with her Keyblade stunning him as she slapped several prayer slips onto his body.

She channeled holy energy into the slips, causing them to explode as Ziden sent flying back.

Ziden summoned fire to his hand as it began to vibrate violently. " Go down! Volcanic Impact!" Ziden slammed his fist into the ground as large pillars of magma that shot into the air and formed a large ball of magma that formed into a fist as it flew towards Reimu.

Reimu quickly flew away as the lava fist was sliced in half as the person who did landed in front of Ziden.

" Yorihome? The hell are you doing?" Ziden asked.

" You two need to stop this childish act of violence! Are you Earthlings so stupid that you fail to realize that you guys are fighting in the middle of a war!?" Yorihome asked as Ziden was casually scratching his ear.

" Please move, moon girl. I'm not in the mood to hear your dumbass moon stuff." Ziden rudely said as Yorihome shifted her feet.

" I don't have any plans to Earthling, I've beaten you both before! I can beat you both at the same time if I have to!" Yorihome said as Ziden chuckled.

" Oh really? Then this will be a huge surprise for you!" Ziden disappeared in a flash of red light as he appeared behind her. " Infernal Star Cannon!" Ziden clicked his sword into its sheath as an explosion of fire sent her flying towards the village while wrapped in fire.

" *He just took out that moon girl like it was nothing! This ain't good!*" Reimu thought as she dashed towards him as he leapt over her and pointed his hand down on her position as her eyes widened.

" Blaze Ryder!" Ziden trapped Reimu in a ball of fire as a chain of fire connected it to his hand. Ziden gripped the fiery chain and used his strength to spin the large ball around his body as he slammed into the ground multiple times and then spun it around multiple times before he released it as it headed towards the Outskirts of the Human Village.

The explosion was visible to the people at the Human Village and was even felt by them as they were forced to grab on to their Youkai comrades as Yukari and the Great Tengu were pushed back by the force.

Reimu is seen struggling to stand as she forced her weight onto her keyblade as she is seen holding a newly unsealed Spell Card. " I thought I wouldn't be forced into using this one... that guy's alot stronger than he looks!" Reimu said while smirking.

Ziden landed in front of her as he sees the Spell Card floating in front of her. He watched as it dissovled into Nothingness as she was surrounded by several Yin Yang orbs. " Fantasy Heaven!"

Ziden watched as an unholy amount of purple amulets began to fly at him as Reimu disappeared from view. The amulets slammed into Ziden as he staggered backwards as tried to sense where Reimu was. " What the hell is going on here?! I can't sense her anywhere!" Ziden yelled as more amulets slammed into his back, forcing him to his knees.

" This fight is as good as done, ze!" Marisa exclaimed.

" Against that monster of a Spell Card, I have to agree with you." Yuuka said.

" I'm not counting the kid out yet! I betcha he'll be able to outlast this attack!" Yuugi exclaimed as Mokou was watching Ziden was struggling with the attacks.

Ziden finally spotted Reimu as he charged towards her and threw a powerful skull shattering kick, only to see that his foot went completely through body, not harming her. " What?!" Ziden was shocked by this fact as Reimu smirked. More amulets slammed into his body as he sent flying backwards as Reimu disappeared again.

Ziden was simply puzzled by the fact that he couldn't sense her and the fact that he couldn't harm her either... wait. Ziden's brain began to recall an enemy that was able to do what Reimu is doing!

" So that's how she's dodging my attacks! Not anymore!" Ziden slammed his feet into the ground as a purple aura surrounded him. " Dimensional Chains!" An unholy amount of purple chains fired from Ziden's body and pierced into the air around him as one of them wrapped around an invisible object and yanked Reimu back into this Reality. " Gotcha! That's why I couldn't hit you before, you floated out of this Reality and into another one! Now you're all mine!" Flames began to spiral around Ziden as they began to reach into the air and formed into 7 large snakes of fire. " Infernal Emperor: Blazing Hydra Burst!" The Hydra heads began to fire powerful beams of fire onto Reimu as she was burned by the attack as her attack continued to pummel Ziden with her attacks.

Everyone watched as the landscape was destroyed by the powerful attacks as Yukari got off of her Gap and began to walk towards the fight as everyone watched her go towards them.

" I... will not... LOSE TO YOU!" Reimu yelled over the flames.

" NEITHER WILL I!" Ziden roared as their attacks hit each other with a massive force, causing a massive explosion that slammed against Yukari's barrier, forcing her back some as Yuyuko flew to her side and helped to mend the barrier.

The powerful explosion ended as Ziden and Reimu are seen standing in the crater, both of them severely damaged from the fight and their clothes were utterly trashed. One could see Reimu's

sarashi completely as she staggered forward and fell facefirst onto the ground, unconscious.

" Not bad... Cousin... you're much stronger... than I ever... imagined." Ziden said as he fell unconscious as well as the wind washed over them.

" No way... he was able to hit her during Fantasy Heaven." Marisa was so shocked by that, she didn't even finish her sentence with the word, Ze.

Yuuka was licking her lips after she watched that fight and Yuugi and Suika were extremely impressed with how Ziden was able fight Reimu to a standstill like that.

" Come on guys! Lets get Ziden and Reimu back into the village before those Zealots get them!" One of the Humans said as they rushed towards the battle site.

### **In an Unknown Place...**

Ziden found himself sitting in a blue room as he looked and noticed that they were sitting in an elevator as he heard calming music playing while he was here.

Poem for Everyone's Souls ( Persona 4)

Ziden was confused at this turn of events. Where was he? Why is he here? Ziden couldn't figure out any of those answers as he soon heard a familiar voice.

" Ziden!" Ziden turned to see Sora running towards him with a smile on his goofy face.

" Sora! You're alright!" Ziden was happy to see his teammate in such good shape.

" Yeah, I'm alright! I'm more upset with what Phantom did to me." Sora looked angry which shocked Ziden for a second. " Never mind

that! I have someone I want you to meet!" Sora turned and motioned for someone to come meet as Ziden was shocked to see who it was.

" Gah! What are you doing here, you little monster!?" Ziden asked as Alice stomped her foot.

" What are you doing here, you big meanie!?" Alice asked as Sora sighed.

" Why in the hell are you befriending this monster in little girl's flesh, Sora?" Ziden asked.

" Well... I mean, I was thinking... If I can show her that what her uncles taught her is wrong, I can turn her into a better person." Sora explained as Ziden sighed.

" You can try kid, but it won't be easy." Ziden said as he glared at Alice whom stuck her tongue out at him.

" Sora's my friend! I'd never hurt my friends!" Alice said as Sora petted her on her head.

" Yet you'd slaughter an entire Mansion filled with Humans and Rabbits huh?" Ziden asked as Alice looked down on the floor.

"... I'm sorry. My uncles told me that I couldn't be friends with humans or Youkai because of our differences, but Sora makes me believe otherwise." Alice said as Ziden blinked and looked at Sora. " So I saw those Rabbits and tried making friends with them-"

" Yeah, I'm just gonna stop you right there kid, I'm pretty sure that killing a bunch of rabbits does not count as making friends with them." Ziden said as he heard someone laughing behind him as he turned to see Mima standing next to a old man.

Ziden noted that he was a bizarre old man with a long nose, pointed ears, and bulging, bloodshot eyes. He wears a black suit with white gloves.

" It is about time you arrived, young hero." The old man said as Ziden walked over to him with Alice and Sora following behind him while Ziden kept his eye on her.

" Who are you and what is this place?" Ziden asked.

" I am known as Igor and this is the Velvet Room." Igor introduced as Ziden's eyes darted down to an open book that he saw that had Sora's name in it.

" I see, so why exactly am I here?" Ziden asked.

" Ah, quick to the point, I like that. Normally, this room is reserved for those whom will gain the power of Persona, but you two are a Special Case. Ziden, you are already quite strong enough so giving you the power of Personas is unnecessary." Ziden scratched his head at the Psuedo-compliment. " And young Sora, you don't need the power of Persona either, but we have made special arrangements for your ability to summon creatures. By signing that contract and the fact that Alice wishes to be your Summon, I shall allow you to summon Personas as those Summons you have used in the past." Alice looked happy before Ziden glared at her.

" Is that all?" Ziden asked.

" No it isn't boy, stop being so hasty!" Mima yelled.

" This room will have a different function for you, from here, you can manage your abilities that you gain from your Social Links here. As of now, you have started the Magician, Mind and Destruction Social Links with those close to you, but you could increase these bonds between you made with your comrades and loved ones." Igor explained.

" I see, so why would I need to come here though?" Ziden asked.

" Why, in order to create Special attacks for your Keyblades, after all, none of your sword techniques work on your Keyblade, now do



they?" Igor asked as Ziden remained silent. " If you sign that contract, I will allow you to create new attacks and magic for your Keyblades, I will even allow you to make your own Keyblades from the materials you gain from slaying the HEartless and Nobodies, even those cloned humans known as the Zealots."

Ziden sighed as he took the pen and quickly scribbled his name onto the paper as Igor smiled.

" And so the Contract has been signed, and soon you shall be awakening to the Conscious world." Igor said while smiling.

" And I'll be sticking around you to keep an eye on you boy." Mima said as she walked over to him.

" Whatever, Sora, I'm still having problems believing that you can change Alice, but since she hasn't attempted to gut us like fish or rabbits yet, there is a chance, but do note that when you wake up kid, you are going to have to explain yourself to Tewi and the others." Ziden said as Sora nodded.

" I'll try to show them that she changed when I wake up." Sora said as Ziden's vision began to fade away.

Back in the Real World...

Ziden awoke in his bed as he noticed that the room had no one in it besides him in it as he sighed. " Damn, my body is still sore after that fight with Reimu. Wasn't expecting her to put up that much of a fight." Ziden said as he heard the door opened and Mokou walked into the room.

" Oh. You're awake at last." Mokou said as she walked over to him and sat on the edge of the bed.

" Hey Mokou." Ziden said as he continued to lay down in the bed.

" You know what you two did was incredibly stupid, you know that right?" Mokou asked.

" I know, but it did help me and Reimu work out some problems. But hey, you know that I'm bound to make stupid decisions, you know that when we decided to get married." Ziden said as he pointed to the ring on Mokou's finger.

" You remember when we got married?" Mokou asked.

" No, the only thing I remember completely is the time when we first met." Ziden said.

" I see... I do hope all of your memories return soon. Its unnerving to not be remembered by the one you love." Mokou said as Ziden smiled.

" It will soon, don't worry about it." Ziden sat up grabbed Mokou into a hug, tucking her head under his chin as she closed her eyes and wrapped her arms around him.

" I'll be happy when you do. I'll feel alot better when you remember the love we shared." Mokou said as they both heard the sound of glass breaking.

*" A new bond has established between you two. You have created the first Rank of the Phoenix Social Link. Continue to increase to the strength of the bond to increase the Strength of your Fire Magic on your Keyblades."* The voice said as Mokou continued to listen to Ziden's heartbeat as they heard the door open.

" Oh? I thought you were alone." Kaguya said as Ziden facepalmed.

" I guess you wanted to come and spend some alone time with him huh? Too bad I got here first." Mokou taunted as Kaguya calmly walked over and sat down behind Ziden and hugged him from behind.

" Too bad I can hold MY HUSBAND like this as well." Kaguya said, lacing her words with venom.

" I was married to him first, you freaking shut in!" Mokou yelled as Kaguya laughed.

" So what? Its obvious that he loves me more,, charcoal brain." Kaguya taunted as Mokou growled. " Don't you love me more than her, Ziden?"

" I split my love equally kiddo, I don't play favorites." Ziden said as he sees Kaguya pouting.

" Hmmph, well I'll just have to try harder and become your favorite then!" Kaguya proclaimed as Ziden laughed.

" Good luck with that Moon Princess! You'll have to work yourself to death in order to become my favorite!" Ziden said while laughing.

" Of course I will! In fact, I'm going to make you a nice Breakfast right now!" Kaguya boasted as she began to ran to the door.

The sound of glass breaking was heard again. " *A new bond has been established between you two. You have reached the First Rank of the Moon Social Link. Through this Link, you have learned the Lunar Drive, a style Change for your Keyblade. Continue to strengthen the love between you two and enjoy a sublime eternity.*" The voice said as Kaguya giggled as she opened the door.

" Hey! I'm the only one that makes him breakfast, you damn NEET!" Mokou declared as she ran out of the room after Kaguya, leaving Ziden alone as he fell back onto the pillow and stared at the ceiling.

" We've got 3 days to get Gensokyo into shape to fight those Zealots and to find that base of theirs." Ziden said to himself as he sighed. Ziden remained staring at the ceiling before he felt something binding his wrists as he found himself bound to the bed. " What the hell!?"

" My my, you're finally alone, that's good." Ziden looked to his left and saw Yuuka crawling out from under the bed as she dusted herself off.

" Hey! Let me go you crazy plant chick! I thought you were over the Garden thing already!?" Ziden asked as Yuuka smirked.

" You completely destroyed my garden, and besides, I told you, I still had things planned for you, of course, I changed them after seeing all those fights you had." Yuuka walked over to Ziden and sat on the bed next to him.

" What the hell are you going to do to me?" Ziden asked.

" That's the fun part! You'll never know!" Yuuka exclaimed as she started to laugh. " And after this, you'll be back in my good graces and I won't have the need to hurt you anymore."

" Yeah right! Like hell I'm going to-" Ziden tried to get up as a flower sprang up and sprayed some pollen in his face as he felt sleepy. " Gah... what... in the... world."

" Oh? This should be fun, I've never done this to someone before, you'll be the first, too bad you won't experience the pain I'm going to be inflicting on your unconscious form." Yuuka said as she stood over him. Ziden noticed that she was taking off her plaid red jacket as he finally passed out.

A few minutes later...

Ziden finally awakens from his forced slumber his entire body feels worn out and hurt as he struggled to sit up as he noticed that he wasn't wearing a shirt. " What the hell did she do to me? I feel like crap... what in the?" Ziden rubbed his neck as he felt several bite marks and he noticed some weird writing on his right bicep. " That's Japanese Kanji, I think. Maybe Yukari or Ran can tell me what it says. Speaking of which, where the hell is Ran and Chen?" Ziden asked as he placed a shirt over his chest. The shirt had a simple

skull on it with the words 'Omae wa mo shindeiru' as he soon placed his jacket on before he was sucked in to a gap as he found himself in the Emergency Ward.

" Rise and shine, sleeping beauty!" Yukari said as Ziden sighed as he noticed large smile on her face.

Ziden going to say something before he noticed how wet the floor was as he looked up to see Luigi hugging his now awake older brother while crying streams of tears.

" Calm down Luigi! I'm all better now!" Mario said as he petting his brother on the back. Remilia, Flandre and Satori were seen smiling at this event.

" Since this is a time where we could use some serious boosts in Morale, so I came with an idea!" Yukari said as Ziden raised an eyebrow.

" And that is?" Ziden asked.

" Why, lets hold a Faux Smash Bros Tournament and let the girls compete?" Yukari asked as Ziden's face broke into a smile.

" I'm game for it! You got a room set up for the villagers to watch and cheer?" Ziden asked Yukari nodded. " You got the Smashers and Arena set up?" Yukari nodded again. " Lets roll out then!" Ziden said as Yukari opened a Gap to that area as Luigi stopped crying and noticed that a Gap under their feet. They were sucked into the Gap as Remilia and the others made their way to the Spectator's Room.

In the Arena...

Ike, Mario, Luigi, Kirby, Pit, Bowser, Youmu, Yuugi, Meiling and Suika were standing in a blank room as Ziden and Yukari were both wearing suits.

Ziden's suit was all black while Yukari's was completely purple and her hair was stuffed into her nightcap.

" All right newbies! We are going to be holding some Smash Bros style matches in a few minutes and I'm going to teach you what you need to know in order to properly fight in these kinds of Matches. Mario! Bowser! You two shall be our examples!" Mario and Bowser came forward as they were warped to a large Battlefield of sorts as they took their battle stances. " These fights will vastly different from fighting with the Spell Card Rules, because you can go all out in these matches!" Mario demonstrated this by running towards Bowser and slide kicked him, stunning him as Mario was now behind Bowser. Mario delivered two punches and a powerful kick that knocked Bowser forward. Mario slammed a Fireball into Bowser's chest, sending him flying forward and off the stage. Bowser jumped in midair and used his Whirling Fortress to reach the stage, only for Mario to jump towards him and Meteor Smashed him into the abyss before he recovered and grabbed the edge.

" So the point of the fight is to knock the opponent off the stage? Seems simple enough." Yuuka said as she twirled her umbrella.

" That's the gist of it. But there are some other things you must know, namely, the items." Yukari said as Bowser is seen laying on a glowing platform.

" Items?" Youmu asked.

A Red and White Ball appeared next to Mario as he grabbed as Bowser dropped down and stood in front of Mario.

" In the Smash Bros matches, various Items will appear and are available for use by the combantants, some will heal you, some will hurt you, some will hurt your opponents, others are just usable as distractions." Ziden explained.

" Wait, so we can just use items to win our fights, that's unfair! That goes against my Oni Pride!" Suika said as Yuugi agreed.

"Then don't use the items, there is nothing saying that you have to use them, but you'll be at a huge disadvantage during the Matches!" Ziden warned as Yuugi cracked her knuckles.

" Doesn't matter! I'll send all of my opponents flying with just one Punch!" Yuugi bragged.

" Yeah, that doesn't work Yuugi! In order to properly knock your opponent off the stage, you have to build up their damage percentage! Bowser! Please demonstrate!" Ziden said as Bowser smirked.

Bowser began to slice Mario with his claws and delivered a punch to his face and grabbed him and headbutted him, causing his percentage to hit 70%.

" Once your percentage hits this high, you can be easily launched off the stage. Also, how sturdy you are right now, means nothing in the Smash Bros Matches!" Yukari declared as Suika and Yuugi looked confused before they realized what that meant.

" Wait a sec, so that means, that we can get hurt in these matches!?" Suika asked.

" There is no chance of Death or injury during the Matches, so need to worry!" Ziden said as Bowser used her forward Smash Attack to blast Mario off the stage.

" Alright, so can you tell us about those items then?" Meiling asked.

" Well there is only three you need to worry about, The Smash Ball, Assist Trophies and Pokeballs!" Ziden said as a Pokeball appeared next to Bowser as he slammed it onto the ground as bright lights came from the ball. " Pokemon are creatures of mystery and wonder! They have mysterious powers that allow them battle each other for the sake of victory!" A white and orange fish with a horn came from the Pokeball as it bounced around, doing nothing. " Some don't do anything special during the matches and really only take up space.

While others..." Mario grabbed a Pokeball and slammed it on the ground as a massive red beast appeared from it, burning Bowser and sending him flying and burning on the massive Pokemon before he is finally KOed by it.

" Whoa! That's one big Youkai!" Suika said as Yukari shook her head.

" Pokemon are not Youkai, they are very different from us as they coexist amongst the humans of a different world and even work with them as pets and friends." Yukari explained.

" So humans use them for battling? Why not settle it with Danmaku?" Suika asked.

" Because those humans don't have Magic like the humans here do. BUT they do have a way of settling differences." Ziden said as he placed his hand on his hip.

" Oh! With those Pokemon, right?" Meiling asked as Yukari clapped.

" Correct, but enough of that right now, we'll give all of you a Pokemon Lesson later. Next is the Assist Trophies which allow the users to summon a helper that will either help the user win or just screw them over. Now is the most important, the Smash Ball!" Yukari said as the Smash Ball appeared in the sky. " The Smash Ball is them is what a Spell Card is to you guys! Your Ultimate Attacks will be unleashed when you shatter the Orb and absorb its powers!" Mario jumped into the air and smashed the orb as he is surrounded by a colorful aura. Mario took a stance and pulled his arms back and slammed his wrists together, releasing two large fire dragons that were spiralling around each other as Bowser was comboed by the attack as he is sent crashing into the side of the screen getting KOed.

" So that's everything! Any questions?" Yukari asked.



" Well seeing as how we can fly, its kinda of unfair that we can compete in this." Yuugi said.

" Actually, you can't fly during the matches since we take it away from you!" Ziden said with a smile as a silence was in the room.

" WAIT WHAT!?" The girls asked as Yukari covered her mouth with her fan.

" But, you are able to Glide after your second jump, now that thats over. Time to pick the first two combantants!" Yukari said as Ziden began to pull names out of a hat.

" The first match is going to be a simple one vs one match as a warm up, you will each have three lives. We plan on having quite a few number of matches for this and remember, the villagers and other Youkai will be watching you, so show them how strong you really are!" Ziden said as Yukari pulled two names out of a hat.

" Oh! The First Match shall be, Yuuka Kazami vs Luigi!" Yukari happily yelled as Luigi paled.

" Oh no!" Luigi yelled as he tried to run away, only for him to be grabbed by Yuuka and carried to the portal.

" Now now, I'm really interested in seeing how you can fight against me in this battle." Yuuka said as she twirled her umbrella.

" The stage shall be: Luigi's Mansion! Time to rock!" Ziden yelled as the duo was brought to that stage.

Ziden snapped his fingers as several chairs appeared in the room as everyone sat down as Ziden showed Yukari the mark on his chest.

" Oh! That says, 'Property of Yuuka Kazami'... that's not good!" Yukari said as Ziden sighed.

" I swear to all the Gods and Goddesses out there, I am severely starting to dislike my experience in Gensokyo." Ziden said as Yukari

slapped him on the back.

" Oh it'll get better for you, don't worry!" Yukari said as Ziden pinched the bridge of his nose.

Elsewhere...

The other Ziden is seen relaxing on the roof of the schoolhouse while listening to the wind passing by him. He was about to fall asleep when he heard a pair of feet landing on the roof. Ziden opened his eyes and saw a blue haired girl staring at him.

" Excuse me, would you happen to be Ziden Icrim?" The girl asked.

" Indeed I am, want my autograph dude?" Ziden asked. The girl pulled out an orange blade and tried to stab him. " Whoa! What the hell!?"

" Draw your sword and fight me! I want to fight the man who brought Heaven to its knees! I am Tenshi Hinanawi, eldest daughter of the Hinanawi Clan!" Tenshi declared as Ziden sweatdropped.

"... You're a girl?" Ziden asked as Tenshi froze completely.

"... WHAT THE HELL!? I'm OBVIOUSLY A GIRL! WHY ELSE AM I WEARING A SKIRT!?" Tenshi asked as her face was bright red with anger.

" I thought you were a crossdresser?" Ziden said as Tenshi was seen gritting her teeth.

" I'm going to beat to an inch of your life!" Tenshi yelled as she charged at Ziden.

Elsewhere...

A blonde haired girl is seen cowering in fear as she backed away from Ganondorf and Vergil as a pillar of darkness is seen forming behind them as it took the girl's form, but only in a older form.

" Ah... it feels good to be free again. Now then, I believe its time to kill this worthless shell then." The woman said as she formed a claymore made of darkness as the younger girl quickly ran away through the bushes as the older woman chased after her while laughing manically.

" So that is the daughter of Zeron Oscura?" Ganondorf asked.

" Indeed it is, that dark power she possesses is indeed the very same as the one that revived us. Rumia of the Dark... better known as Rumia Oscura, Maiden of the Darkness." Vergil said as they disappeared into the darkness.

*Fun Facts:*

- 1. Yes, Sora is going to be recieving some new summons instead of those, craptastic ones in KHII, he will be able to summon the Persona's as summons that fight alongside him for a small period of time.*
- 2. Yeah, Ziden's keyblade style is based off of Terra's and Ven's with a Mix of Dream Drop Distance when it comes to Flowmotion stuff.*
- 3. Oh yeah! You get to see your favorite Touhou girls play in some Smash matches! Its like a Wet Dream... except not that!*

*Author's Note: Hohhoohoh! I got this sucker finished just when I got 3D World, Bravery Default and Romance Dawn! Time to have some fun!*

# Brawling in Gensokyo! Day 1!

**Darklight:** He will not start his Social Links until the next big crossover. He gets more Personas by beating the Demons that they represent. Like if he fights and beats Jack Frost, he gets Jack Frost as a summon.

---

Reimu and the others were sitting in a large movie theater like room as they all listened to the explanations that Ziden and Yukari were giving.

" So these things make it sound like the Spell Card Rules, minus all that flashy stuff and those items." Reimu said as she rested her head on her hand.

" I guess so, ze! At least we get have some rest before we have to deal with those invaders though!" Marisa said as Reimu agreed.

" And it'll cool to see these fights that the smashers have during their Tournaments. Plus its awesome to see some Pokemon in these things! I hope Yukari lets me meet one!" Sanae said as she began to fangasm.

" Meh, I've never been one to care about videogames anyway. Far too busy saving the world and stuff." Logan said as he cracked open a beer.

" What the hell is a Pokemon anyway?" Mokou asked as Keine shrugged.

" I dunno, wait! Shh! They're explaining it!" Keine said as everyone in the room was listening to what the Pokemon were.

" Huh, so these creatures live in another world? It'd be great if we had some here!" One of the Villagers said.

" It would be nice if Yukari would allow us to have them." A red haired girl said.

" Eirin! Do you think you can convince Ziden to get us some of those Pokemon?" Kaguya asked.

" \*Sigh\* I can try, Princess." Eirin said, tired from Kaguya's pestering.

" So this is what Ziden and Yukari do when they disappear from Gensokyo, I may not be a big fan of violence but this intrigues me." Eiki said.

" \*Yawn\* It doesn't matter to me, although I do wonder what these Pokemon can do. I never really paid attention to the matches that Master Hand showed us." Komachi said as her Dusknoir sweatdropped.

" Hmm, oh! Sis, it looks a match is starting!" Flandre happily said as Remilia looked up from a GBA in her hands.

" Luigi vs Yuuka... this is going to end very fast!" Remilia declared as Patchouli agreed.

Luigi is seen entering the battlefield through the warp pipe as a swirl of sunflowers appeared on the opposite side of the mansion.

" 3! 2! 1! GO!" Ziden's voice yelled as Luigi ran from Yuuka.

### **Luigi's Mansion ( Super Smash Bros Brawl)**

" Mama mia!" Luigi is seen dashing away from Yuuka as she calmly walked after him while twirling her umbrella.

" My my. He's alot faster than he looks, I want to end this quickly so I can fight someone stronger than this." Yuuka said as she pointed her umbrella at Luigi as she lunged forward and smashed through the pillar holding up Luigi's mansion as she caught Luigi in his chest, stunning him as she smashed the umbrella across his face, knocking him back some as he kicked her in face.

" Looks like I'm going to have to fight, no matter how much I run!" Luigi said as he landed on the ground and took his battle stance.

" Oh? So you'll put up a fight? That's good, but don't worry about me cheating you or anything, a true lady fights with honor and grace." Yuuka said as Luigi clenched his fists.

Luigi ran forward and threw several sissy punches that slammed into Yuuka as he followed with a grab and two headbutts to her chest as he grabbed her legs and began to spin before he threw her across the stage as Yuuka quickly recovered.

Luigi noticed that a Bob-omb that was next to him as he grabbed it and took aim at Yuuka as she calmly walked towards him. Luigi threw the bob-omb at her as it exploded against her body and sent her flying off the stage completely, she performed a mid air jump but was unable to reach the ledge and fell into the abyss, getting KOed.

Yuuka reappeared on a revival platform as she looked upset. " Being unable to fly is quite the Handicap. But that doesn't matter, I'm going to win nonetheless." Yuuka announced as she jumped down from the platform and walked over to a pillar and began to smash it as more of the mansion fell apart.

Yuuka quickly made her way to Luigi as she grabbed him with a vine that came from her sleeve and dragged him over to her as she kned him several times in the chest before slamming her parasol into his face, sending him flying across the screen, KOing him as she twirled her parasol as Luigi respawned.

Yuuka noticed that there was a Pokeball right next to her as she grabbed it and waited for Luigi to appear in front of her as she threw it at Luigi, smashing him in the face as it opened.

" Chika!" A Chikarita popped out of the Pokeball and began to pelt Luigi with a barrage of Razor Leaves as Yuuka smiled at the small creature, as did the other females watching the small creature.

" So that's a Pokemon? Its kinda cute looking." Reimu said.

" Of course its cute! Its a Chikarita! I just want to hold one!" Sanae said as she began to daydream.

" Jeez, talk about a fangirl!" Dante said before he started to laugh.

" Go Yuuka! BEat that string bean into dust!" One of the Youkai yelled as they began to cheer for Yuuka instead of Luigi.

" Looks like the crowd is cheering for Yuuka! Will she win this bout!" Ziden asked as Luigi is seen flying off of the stage, getting KOed as Yuuka simply yawned.

" Looks like this victory is in the bag." Yuuka said to herself as Luigi fell down to the ground from his platform.

A large flash of light appeared above them as a Smash Orb began to float around the stage as Luigi got to his feet and chased after the Smash Orb, chopping it with his hand as Yuuka raised an eyebrow.

" Oh right, those are those things we have to break when it appears. I'm not going to allow him to get that Orb." Yuuka said as she dashed forward and jumped into the air, only to see Luigi smashing the Orb open as the shard slammed into his body, giving him a fiery aura as he smiled.

" Now its Luigi's time to shine!" Luigi announced as he stood in front of Yuuka as she tilted her head to the side. " Negative Zone!" Luigi began to do a mysterious dance as the entire stage was swallowed by a black and white void as everyone was confused on what was happening.

" Hmm? What's going on? What's with that weird void?" Remilia wondered as they all noticed that Yuuka was acting strangely inside the void.

" Looks like Yuuka was caught in Luigi's Negative Zone! She could be done for now!" Ziden announced.

Luigi quickly ran over to the stunned Yuuka and used his powerful headbutt to send Yuuka flying to the top of the screen as she disappeared and reappeared in the background, falling to the ground before she turned into a star. Luigi calmly kicked a rock on the ground as Yuuka appeared on the platform as she quickly dropped down from it, only to be caught in the effects of the Negative Zone again.

" Time to end this!" Luigi ran over to Yuuka and jumped into the air and pulled his hand back and slammed it onto Yuuka's head, only to see her block it as the Negative Zone ended. " Uh-oh."

" Uh-oh is right." Yuuka said as she grabbed Luigi and slammed him on the ground behind her as she tapped her parasol on her shoulder as a large green thorn came out of the ground and threw Luigi into the air as Yuuka jumped after him and slammed her leg into his back, launching him off of the stage as the colorful explosion is seen as time slowed down.

" GAME SET!" Ziden's voice rang out as Yuuka found herself in a white room with Luigi clapping for her victory.

" Holy cow! That was an awesome fight! Come on, start the next one already!" Xiaomu said as Reiji calmly looked at the screen.

Yuuka and Luigi were seen back in the back room as Yuuka held out her hand. " That was a good fight, Luigi. I wouldn't mind having a rematch against you one day." Yuuka said as Luigi swallowed hard.

" Yeah... I wouldn't mind that either..." Luigi said as he quickly ran over to his brother.

" All right, the next match will be a 4-way battle! Fighters get ready!" Yukari said as she reached into the hat and pulled out four names. " The fighters for this round: Youmu Konpaku!" Youmu walked forward.



" Ike Greil!" Ike also stepped forward when he was called. " Yuugi Hoshiguma!" Yuugi stepped forward while cracking her knuckles and smirking. " Kirby!" Kirby ran forward as Ziden approached Yuugi.

" Good luck out there Yuugi, you'll need it!" Ziden said as he playfully slugged her in the arm.

" Hah! I'm an Oni! I don't need luck, kid!" Yuugi said as she slugged Ziden in the chest, sending him flying into the wall as several people in the audience sweatdropped at the sight while others like Remilia and Mokou were laughing at his misfortune.

" Jeez, that was a bit much wasn't it?" Kaguya asked.

" Its an Oni, Kaguya, to them, there is no such thing as too much." Eirin simply said as she continued to watch the matches with Moon Siblings sitting around her. Yorihome looked extremely angry at the fact that she was blasted away by Ziden earlier and still had some burn marks on her clothes and skin.

" Gonna kill that damned Earthling when he least expects it!" Yorihome declared as Toyohime sighed.

" Why can't you two ever get along? I mean, its like you two just like to make up excuses to fight each other." Toyohime said as Yorihome scoffed.

" Fights that I always win." Yorihome pointed out.

" You realize that he's holding back when he fights with you, right?" Toyohime asked as Yorihome grit her teeth.

" I am fully aware of that sister, I can tell he holds back a bit when he fights me." Yorihome said.

" Yuugi! What the hell!?" Yukari asked as she pulled Ziden out of the wall.

" What? That was just a Love Tap!" Suika said as Yuugi smiled along with her.

" I didn't know that Love Taps came with some broken ribs and a punctured lung." Ziden said as he got to his feet.

" Mine does! You'll get used to them kid!" Yuugi declared as Ziden sweatdropped.

" Anyways, the stage you guys will be fighting on the Battle Ship Halberd! Have fun and beware of the combo cannon!" Yukari warned as the group of four were brought to the stage as they all took battle stances.

### **Meta Knight's Revenge ( Super Smash Bros Brawl)**

Youmu looked into the background and saw the massive halberd in the background before she noticed that Yuugi was running towards as she blocked her fist with the flats of her blade, being pushed back by her attack.

Ike crouched down and dashed forward at lightning fast speeds, striking Youmu causing her to flinch as Kirby jumped into the air and hit Yuugi in the back with a spinning body strike that racked up hits on her as the ground opened up as they were caught on a platform that flew into the sky as the Halberd took off underneath them.

" Whoa! That ship is flying!" One of the villagers said, completely surprised by the events.

" Its kinda like the Palanquin, minus the face on the ship." Byakuren said to herself.

Yuugi and Youmu were distracted by the scene change before they snapped back to reality and ran after their foes as Yuugi slammed her fist into Kirby, throwing him back some as he landed near a Cracker Launcher as he grabbed it.

Yuugi raised an eyebrow before Kirby began to fire large fire crackers at Yuugi and the others were blasted into the air by the crackers as Yuugi growled.

" Ooooo! Looks like Yuugi is starting to see how difficult it will be to fight in this matches without using Items!" Ziden announced as Yuugi landed on the ground face first before she got her feet and charged at Kirby and grabbed him. Yuugi placed Kirby on the ground before delivering a powerful punch that smashed him into the ground before he flew into the air as Yuugi looked down and saw a Pokeball, wondering what's inside, only for Youmu to dash past her and grab it.

" Oh? Do you think that a Pokemon is going to help you against me?" Yuugi asked as Youmu looked at the ball in her hand.

" If I'm lucky enough." Youmu said as she threw the Pokeball on the ground as bright lights came from the ball as everyone gasped when they saw the Pokemon.

" Holy KEi- I mean cow! That's one big ole Pokemon!" Marisa said as Keine glared at her. " What?"

" Gurarararara! That thing could make a Sea King look tame!" Whitebeard said while laughing. Everyone noticed that his legs were missing and only the ghostly wisp of a tail was there.

" Indeed it could. These Pokemon must be powerful indeed." Robin said as she watched the massive creature fly in the air.

" DEAR ARCEUS! ITS LUGIA, THE KING OF THE SEAS!" Sanae yelled at the top of her lungs as she flapped her arms frantically as Kanako tried to get her to calm down.

Lugia flew to the top of the screen before reappearing on the background as they landed on the top of the Halberd as they saw the Combo Cannon sitting in the background.

Yuugi felt un-intimidated by the creature's size or title as she glanced back at Ike and Kirby noticed that they were panicking. " Hmm, that's not a good sign." Yuugi said as Lugia roared in the background.

Lugia fired his trademark Aeroblast which was a large tornado of wind that came from its mouth and began to spray it across the stage as it struck Yuugi, Ike and Kirby, sending them skyrocketing into the top of the screen as Yuugi and Ike became stars in the background as Kirby hit the screen before falling down as people chuckled at that sight.

Youmu breathed a breath of relief as Yuugi and the others respawn and the others landed on the ship's floating platform as Ike dropped through the platform and charged at Youmu as their blades slammed into each other as Kirby looked up at Yuugi while she cracked her knuckles and performed a sliding punch that Kirby sidestepped and got behind her.

Kirby grabbed her skirt and lifted her and slammed her to the ground as he jumped on her back and began to rapidly step on her back with the tips of his toes. Kirby finished his down throw with a powerful stomp that knocked Yuugi into the air before she fell back down.

Ike slammed his blade into the ground, completely missing Youmu as she got behind him as she slashed him across the back with her two times before she began to rapid fire stabbing him with the both of her blades, causing Ike's Damage Percentage to go up. Ike couldn't get free from her assault, so he placed his blade over his head as a purple glow enveloped his body.

When Youmu struck him, her attack was reflected off of him as he struck back with a powerful slash with his blade, blasting her back as a large target reticle appeared over Yuugi and Kirby.

" Eh? What's this thing?" Yuugi asked.

" Oh, right! Totally forgot! Some of these stages have what we call Stage Hazards! Sometimes, something on the stage just wants to cause harm to you for no reason and poor Yuugi here is about to be the target for a powerful laser attack!" Ziden announced as Yuugi looked back and saw the cannon charging up a laser blast.

" Tch!" Yuugi stomped her foot on the ground as she propelled herself into the air, dodging the large laser that blasted through the platform and blasted Kirby off the stage as everyone watched Kirby flying to the right side of the screen.

Kirby was not KOed by the attack as he began to jump back towards the stage as he reached the stage and grabbed it as he rolled back onto the ground.

Ike is seen striking Youmu with his blade as he threw it into the sky, dragging Youmu with it into the air as Ike leapt into the sky and grabbed his blade. " Aether!" Ike slammed his blade down, dragging the duo down onto the ground. Youmu is sent flying by the impact of the blade, and sent her careening off the screen as large red explosion signified her KO.

Yuugi dropped down and delivered a powerful kick to Ike's chest, stunning him as she followed up with a powerful punch that knocked him back some as Kirby noticed a Golden Hammer next to him. Kirby picked it up as he began to violently swing the hammer while running towards Youmu and the others.

" Huh? Gahh!" Youmu is thrown into the air by the hammer strike as Yuugi noticed how powerful the hammer was.

" Tch! I could easily take a hit like that outside of these matches, but one strike from that will send me flying!" Yuugi exclaimed as she grabbed Ike and threw him towards Kirby only for him to be launched into the air by the hammer's power. Yuugi wound up her fist and slammed her fist into the ground, creating a shockwave that threw Kirby into the air before he could hit her as he was once again KOed by Yuugi, leaving his stock at 1 as she took a drink of sake.

Youmu dived down towards Yuugi and slashed her across the chest with her blades, pushing her off the ledge as Yuugi jumped up to reach the ledge, grabbing it with her hand. Youmu performed a powerful downward stab with her blade, blasting Yuugi downwards into the pit as Yuugi was KOed as a bright flash of Light appeared in the sky.

Youmu looked up to see the Smash Orb appearing in the sky as Ike smashed it with his blade, sending it off to the left as Yuugi respawned and landed on the ground.

Youmu left the ground and jumped into the air, slicing through the orb as Youmu gained the powers of the Great Final Smash!

Youmu landed on the ground and watched as Yuugi was fighting off Kirby and Ike as she unleashed her Final Smash while crouched down while holding her longer blade as she exhaled. The screen also got darker as a large white streak appeared over the trio that were fighting each other. " Hell Realm Sword: 200 Yojana in 1 Slash!" Youmu sheathed her blade as an explosion of Danmaku came from their bodies as they were all shot into the sky as all three of them hit the screen and fell down as the audience cheered for Youmu.

" GAME SET!" Ziden's voice yelled as the group was brought to the Victory Screen as Youmu took a pose with her blade.

" There is nothing my Roukanken can't cut!" Youmu declared as they were brought back to the waiting room.

" Wow, that little girl is much stronger than she looks." Chun-Li said.

" Actually, she's over 60, Chun-Li." Meiling corrected as Ryu and Lucci were both surprised.

" She's younger than she looks. I wonder what kind of training she goes through to keep that appearance up." Ryu wondered.

" Its more than likely natural for her, she's isn't fully human, so its to be expected." Lucci said.

" You're extremely observant for a human." Remilia said with a fanged smirk.

" In my line of work, it pays to be observant to the ways of my targets." Lucci said.

" Too bad we've been retired by the World Government. I miss getting my paycheck for fighting strong foes." Kaku said.

" Well now, since some big things are planned for today, this shall be the Final Match for today! Starting tomorrow we will be allowing anyone to join the matches for tomorrow and the next day. Ziden! Pick the last four fighters!" Yukari said as she pointed to her partner as he raised an eyebrow.

*" What the hell does she mean by that?... Hmm? Why do I sense those so called 'World's Mightiest Heroes' here in Gensokyo? Don't tell me that they are still planning on trying to catch me, damned fools."* Ziden thought to himself as he pulled out four names. " Alright, final four is is China!" Meiling had a visible tick mark on her temple when called by that name. " Mario!" Mario performed his trademark jump as he leapt forward. " Pit!" Pit quickly dashed over to the others as he high fived Mario and Meiling. " Eh... uh, how the hell do you pronounce this?" Ziden asked as Yukari looked at the paper and whispered in his ear. " Ah, Suika Ibuka!" Suika shot Ziden a confused look.

" How in the heck could you not know how to pronounce my name? You're Japanese aren't you?" Suika asked.

" No, I'm American, I don't know any Japanese." Ziden said as everyone and I mean everyone looked at him weird.

" Eh, the heck do you mean, ze? You're talking to us in Japanese right now!" Marisa yelled as Yukari giggled.

" That's because I'm manipulating the Boundaries of Languages and allowing you to hear your Primary Language from a non-native person." Yukari simply explained as everyone got it.

" Yeah, to me, all of you are speaking to me in English right now." Ziden said.

" Same here." Pit said as Mario nodded.

" To be honest, hearing your voice in Japanese is creepy Ziden. You sound very uh... sinister." Reimu said.

"... Yukari? Who do I sound like?" Ziden asked.

" Oh, I made your Japanese voice sound like that Norio Wakamoto fellow! Is that wrong of me?" Yukari asked with a false tone of surprise.

" W-W-What!? Why the hell did you give me his voice!? Now I sound like an evil overlord or something!" Ziden said as people flinched from his tone of voice.

" I knew his voice sounded familiar." Sanae simply said.

" Never mind! The stage you'll be fighting on is Spear Pillar. Watch out on this stage since you'll be dealing with some special threats!" Ziden said as the fighters were brought to the stage.

Suika looked around the stage and saw the pedestal in the background as a Massive Blue dragon appeared on the stage as everyone in the Movie Room turned to Sanae to learn what that creature is.

" OH MY GODS! THAT'S DIALGA! THE CREATOR OF TIME!" Sanae yelled at the top of her lungs as everyone looked shocked.

"... Come again? A Pokemon created Time, you're joking right?" Reimu asked, not believing this at all.



" Indeed she is, Reimu! What you see in that background is the Deity of Time, Dialga. He is the Source of Time in this Universe, and those who can manipulate Time can do so thanks to his existence!" Ziden explained.

Sakuya looked at the massive dragon as she felt its stare upon her. She silently held the Lunar Dial in her hand as Remilia noticed her doing that.

### **Dialga, Battle at Spear Pillar! ( Super Smash Bros Brawl)**

Mario and Pit charged at Meiling and Suika as they both jumped into the air and slammed their fists into their faces, smashing them into the ground as Mario sprang to his feet and performed his powerful headbutt, hitting Pit into the air and hitting Meiling's feet, causing her to flip in midair.

Mario jumped up and slammed his fist into her face, smashing her into the ground as Suika landed and grabbed a large boulder from the ground.

" Hey! Angel boy! Catch!" Suika threw the large boulder at Pit as he pulled out a large mirror as everyone in the audience were confused as Palutena smiled.

The boulder slammed into the mirror, only to bounce off of it and fly right back at Suika. Her natural response was to punch the boulder into pieces, but the minute she touched the boulder it exploded into pieces, sending Suika flying across the stage as she looked up and saw a large purple light forming over her.

" Eh? Am I drunk or is that a large laser over me?" Suika asked herself as the light turned into a laser and blasted into Suika's body, sending her flying over to Pit as she landed behind him and grabbed him by the legs and began to slam him into the ground before she jumped on his back, launching him into the air as she wound up her chain and threw it upwards, smashing Pit into the sky as he was KOed by Suika.

" Looks like Suika is doing much better than Yuugi was doing in the last round!" Ziden declared as everyone heard something crashing against a wall. " That was uncalled for, Yuugi! You just punched Luigi into the wall!"

" Because you used him as a human shield! Take your hits like a man!" Yuugi yelled over the intercom as everyone sweatdropped.

Meiling laughed to herself as she began to trade blows with Mario. Mario ducked under Meiling's roundhouse kick and sweep kicked her as he followed up with his Down Smash, which was a powerful sweep kick. She was sent tumbling across the ground before she recovered and charged at Mario. She slammed her Chi covered palm into his palm, stunning him as she slammed her fist into his face, smashing him across the stage as she spotted a Smart Bomb right next to her. Pit dropped down and performed a powerful down Smash, that sent Mario flying off the stage, KOing him as Meiling threw the Smart Bomb.

The Smart Bomb exploded on Suika and Pit, catching them in the sphere shaped explosion as they were set aflame as Suika was blasted off the stage by the explosives. She was quickly KOed by the attacks.

Meiling performed a battle cry as Mario respawned and performed his Mario Tornado on her, striking her with his rapid blows and launched her upwards with his final blow.

Suika landed on the stage and pulled out her gourd, drinking from it as she soon spat it out as fire, catching Mario with it as Pit was also caught in the flames, racking up their damage as Meiling landed on the floating platform above the stage as Dialga roared as Time slowed down.

" Whoa! That thing slowed down time!" Cirno yelled as Daiyousei covered her ears.

" That's like what Sakuya can do, right big sis?" Flandre asked.

" Indeed Flandre. So it might be safe to say that creature could have truly created Time... does that mean it created Space as well?" Remilia wondered.

Meiling found herself moving extremely slowly as she struggled to move around as Suika stopped her flames and slowly ran forward and she slammed her chain into Meiling, sending her flying across the stage and into the KO zone, forcing her to lose a life as bright flash of light appeared in the sky.

Mario and Pit jumped into the air began to attack the Smash Orb as Meiling landed next to an Assist Trophy. Meiling grabbed it and raised it high into the air as it opened as a large white mask appeared in the sky as flew into the background and began to spew a large amount of white blocky squares at everyone on the stage as Pit broke open the Smash Orb.

Pit unleashed his Final Smash as an image of Palutena appeared in the background. " All Troops! Move out!" Several Centurions appeared around the Stage and began to slam into the slowed down fighters, sending them flying slow motion as they were all blasted off the stage by Pit's Final Smash, forcing them down to one stock.

" Come on, Pit! You can win this!" Palutena cheered.

Meiling respawned above Pit as she smashed him to the ground with a chi covered arc kick, careening him directly into the ground as she dive bombed and landed right next to him, delivering a powerful roundhouse that sent him flying off the stage, getting himself koed as Palutena quickly calmed down.

Pit quickly respawned and landed on the ground next to Mario as he charged at Suika.

" Oh? So the human is going to try his luck against me? Good luck with that!" Suika threw a powerful punch at Mario as he rolled past her and landed several punches on her back before he grabbed her

and threw her forward some as Dialga summoned a laser above them.

Mario dashed forward and grabbed Suika again, switching his hold to her legs as he swung her around and threw her into the laser, blasting her as she was sent flying off the stage as she jumped in midair, trying to reach the stage again as Mario jumped towards her and used his Meteor Smash to KO her as Suika screamed in anger. Mario jumped back onto the stage to see Pit being launched into the air by Meiling as she turned her gaze onto Mario.

The duo stood across from each other as they hear the sound of Pit smashing into the screen and the sound of Suika exploding was also heard. Mario and Meiling charged at each other, Mario used a slide kick to cause her to flip into the air as he spun around to land a kick on her, only for her to block that attack with her fist, throwing Mario back some as he grabbed a Bob-omb next to him and he threw it at her.

Meiling placed her hands in front of her, creating a whirlpool of Chi that sucked in the bomb and spat it back at Mario. Mario quickly pulled out his golden cape and reflected the bomb back at her as eyes widened as the bomb exploded against her body, blasting her across the stage as Mario ran after her and slammed a Fireball into her chest, sending her soaring off the Stage and into the KO Zone as Time Slowed down again.

" GAME SET!" Ziden and Yukari yelled in unison as everyone was brought to the Results Screen.

" The Winner is... MARIO!" Mario created a chain fireballs as he took a battle stance as the Humans cheered for him. Mario was brought back to the Waiting Room.

" Thanks for watching today's matches! Come back tomorrow for more Smashing Action!" Yukari said as everyone once again cheered.

" Man! I can't believe we have such powerful fighters on our side!"  
One of the Humans said.

" Yeah, those Zealots are toast when we fight them in three days!"  
One of the Youkai said while cracking her knuckles.

Everyone began to funnel out of the Movie Room and the Waiting Room as Ziden and Yukari magically cchanged out of their suits, back into their normal clothes as they began to walk through the halls together.

" Ziden... do you have any plans on telling the others the truth about your 'clone'?" Yukari asked as he shrugged.

" I have no problem with telling them about it, its the fact that they might have trouble understanding it." Ziden said as Yukari nodded.

" True, perhaps Eirin would know how to simplify it for them." Yukari wondered as Ziden spotted Patchouli walking towards her.

" Ziden, I have something I wish to ask you." Patchouli said as she floated over to him.

" Hmm? What is it, purple girl?" Ziden asked.

" How long do you plan on lying to us about that clone of yours?"  
Patchouli asked as the duo looked at each other quickly.

" Not surprised about that, you are a smart and nice bodied lady, of course you figured out he isn't my clone." Ziden said.

" Just tell me what he is so I can explain this to the others." Patchouli hurried Ziden up as she pulled out a note pad.

" All right basically, here's the simplified version, the clone is actually me before I made the trip back into the past in order to train myself over the Eons." Ziden simply said as Patchouli nodded.

" I thought so. Thank you for the simple explanation, I only asked you this because your Past Self is aboveground in a broken heap with the others trying to figure out what happened to him." Patchouli said as Ziden raised an eyebrow. " And another problem arised as well, that gem that Toyohime had was stolen by creatures called Evil Eyes and was taken into the direction of the Youkai Mountain." Ziden's eyes quickly widdened as Yukari disappeared into a Gap. Ziden grabbed Patchouli into a hug as they disappeared into a flash of purple light as they appeared behind the group.

Yuugi, Suika, Reimu, Marisa, Youmu, Ike and Dante were looking at Past Ziden whom was in a crater, completely unconcious from some unknown impact.

" Hmm? Oh, its the other guy! Hows it hanging, ze!" Marisa asked as Ziden sweatdropped.

" I swear you have a weird way of speaking. What happened to me in there?" Ziden asked as he released his hug on Patchouli as he jumped into the crater.

" I dunno, looks like something fought him here and he lost." Reimu said as Ziden looked into the mind of his fallen past self.

" Hmm... looks like he was in a fight with some blue haired chick with a weird ass sword." Ziden said.

" That would be Tenshi, a Celestial from Heaven." Reimu added as Ziden raised an eyebrow.

" Great, those angel wannabes. Looks like I'm paying Heaven a visit to kick this guyish looking girl's ass. Can't have my reputation ruined by those damn angels." Ziden said as Suika stepped forward with a smirk on her face.

" If you want a Path to Heaven, I can lead you there, of course we have to trek through the Youkai Mountain!" Suika said.

" Alright. Reimu and Marisa, take Yuugi and Ike with you to track down that Chaos Emerald that those Evil Eyes stole." Ziden said as Reimu huffed.

" Who died and made you leader?" Reimu asked as Yukari appeared behind him and covered his eyes.

" Don't mind Ziden, Reimu~! He's just being a little grumpy right now!" Yukari said with a childish tone as Ziden elbowed her in the side.

Ziden was about to say something as everyone heard a loud roar in the sky. It wasn't a roar that came from an animal, rather it was one from an large engine as everyone looked up and saw a massive black ship in the sky as several people began to fly down from the ship and pointed their guns at Ziden and Yukari as an African American man wearing an eyepatch walked past the troops.

"... Hello Nick Fury, the hell do you want now?" Ziden asked.

" Ziden Icrim and Yukari Yakumo, you two are both under arrest for your constant chaotic activities in the Public and against the Avengers." Nick said as the troops took the safeties off of their guns.

Ziden had a murderous look in his eyes, only for Yukari to place her hand on his shoulder, stopping him.

" Very well, Nick Fury, we will surrender without force from anyone within Gensokyo." Yukari said as Ziden looked at her baffled. Ziden quickly rolled his eyes as he placed his hands on the back of his head as a soldier came up behind him and slapped him into handcuffs and did the same for Yukari as Yuugi was about to charge forward. " Yuugi! Calm yourself, we are just going to have a nice little chat with the Avengers and S.H.I.E.L.D for a few minutes, we'll be back soon." Yuugi silently growled to herself as she stepped back.

The duo was brought up onto the ship as Patchouli walked over to the group and began her explanation on Ziden's clone.

### *Fun Facts:*

- 1. Yeah, the cat is out of the bag, Ziden's clone is not a clone but instead him prior to his Time Travel training, meaning that Ziden lied about the Clone having the same Strength and Skills as him.*
- 2. Whitebeard is a Ghost that was given a second chance of existence by the Yama for unknown reasons. You may see some other dead chars reappearing like that into the Isle of Hope/ Gensokyo.*
- 3. Please note that all of the Matches play out by the Smash Bros. Rules, meaning that someone like uh... Jigglypuff has a chance to beat Yuugi in a fight, although we all know that Yuugi would turn Jigglypuff into a pancake.*

*Author's Note: WHAT!? Why is S.H.I.E.L.D here and why did they arrest Ziden and Yukari!? WHAT IS THIS MADNESS!? Don't worry, you'll learn why it happened next chapter! It will shock you what you will see in the Helicarrier! It should be noted that both the DC and Marvel Universe naturally exist in this version of Earth which the Marvel is based on its Ultimate Version which is why Nick Fury is black... yeah. Leave a Review, giving me your thoughts and tell me if you have a Boss that you want to appear in a Future Gate Battle! See ya later, kids!*



# SHIELD and the Daughter of Oscura

Darklight: Dude I know you like the idea Sora having the Personas for summons, but you don't have to keep placing the Persona thing everytime you review, I would love to hear what you like about the fic and if you have Persona questions, just send me a PM dude! Don't be shy!

---

Nick Fury was pacing back and forth in the conference room, listening to what Ziden and Yukari told him. There was another man in the room, wearing a robotic suit that was colored red and yellow with a triangular light coming from his chest.

" Nick, don't tell that you believe this obviously made up story about some cult called the Ultima Brigade." The man asked.

" I do believe them. We have records of the Ultima Brigade in the S.H.I.E.L.D database. And we also know that these two were the ones responsible for their defeat a year ago, Stark." Nick said as he threw some folders down on the table as Tony looked over them.

" Now that you know we are currently dealing with the Ultima Brigade right now, so lets just skip to the part where we let us go and deal with the Situation." Zide said as he placed his feet on the table.

" Absolutely not." Nick said as Ziden frowned.

" Did you forget about the time when you tried to kill me? You think we were just going to forget about that?" Tony asked.

" To be honest, yes!" Yukari bluntly said.

" We aren't, you don't need to worry about this Ultima Brigade either, we're going to handle those clones while you two remain in SHIELD Custody for your crimes." Tony said as several guards came in and lifted Ziden and Yukari to their feet.

" Do you honestly believe that you guys can take on the Brigade when you couldn't even handle me and Ziden when we were just playing around with you guys?" Yukari asked while smiling.

"... It doesn't matter, we will still handle this matter while you two are behind bars, hopefully your friends aren't stupid enough to try and attack this ship." Tony said.

" We have powerful anti-magic tech on this ship and we aren't afraid to use it against Gensokyo if they try to spring your escape." Fury threatened as Ziden chuckled before breaking into a mad laugh.

" You don't have to worry about someone from Gensokyo springing us out! Someone much worse shall be coming to get us, and no matter of preparation will stop him." Yukari said with a sadistic grin as Tony felt a chill run down his spine. The guards took Ziden and Yukari out of the room as Tony looked frazzled.

" He's joking, we have the other Avengers in the Helicarrier, ready to take him and her out if they try anything funny." Tony said to himself.

" We still have to be careful with that man, there's a reason why even demons and these 'Youkai' fear his name. We may very well be seeing that very reason today." Nick said as he sat down while looking down on Gensokyo.

Ziden and Yukari were led to a large circular hallway of jail-cells as they spotted several Super Villains inside of the barriers while Ziden was lead further up into a specialized circular cage that he was pushed into as the barrier closed behind him as he turned to the guard and tried to blow a puff of fire, only to see none come out.

" This jail cell was made just for you, Ziden, this bad boy cancels out all those powers of yours, making this bad boy inescapable for you!" One of the guards bragged as Ziden snorted.

Yukari was placed in a cell across from him with two other girls that knew Yukari and she knew them as well.

" Hmm? Panty? Stocking? What are you two doing here?" Yukari asked as Stocking sighed.

Panty is a female angel with spiky, blonde hair, blue eyes, and a beige skin-tone. Her eyelashes are long and her eyelids were colored a light pink shadow. Her outfit was a short sleeveless red dress with matching heels, red hoop earrings, a golden necklace, and two golden bracelets on each wrist.

Stocking is a gothic female angel, with long violet/pink hair and teal eyes. Her outfit was a black lolita-like dress, a blue bow, black/blue striped stockings and black pumps.

" We're here because this dumb broad over her ended up killing a ghost that happened to take a human form and some dude in purple caught us and brought us here." Stocking explained as Panty shot upward and ran towards Yukari.

" Hold on a sec, if you're here then." Panty looked around and spotted Ziden sitting in the cage, angry and annoyed. " Yohoo! Ziden over here!"

Ziden looked over and saw Panty and the others in the cage and sighed. " Oh goddammit, why are you here? I was wondering why it smelt like STDs in here." Ziden said while laying on his side.

" Oh, don't be like that handsome! I really missed all those intimate times we had!" Panty said as Ziden felt vomit rise in his throat.

" Yeah right, I never slept with you in my life." Ziden said as Yukari covered her face with a fan.

" Your past self did though, therefore, it counts as you sleeping with her." Yukari explained.

" Gonna kill that clone after I kill that Tenshi girl. Whenever I find a way to escape this cell., I'm going to show these punks why you don't cross me, especially when I'm in the middle of doing something

important." Ziden said as he glared at the guards holding water cannons as they kept them looked onto Ziden.

*Meanwhile on the ground...*

" Miss, please sit back down, you aren't allowed to leave until we have taken care of things here." One of the guards said as Reimu pointed her gohei at him.

" Why the hell should I?! This is my homeland and I'll be the one to protect it! And where the hell did you take The old hag and Ziden!?" Reimu demanded as the guard sighed.

" That is classified information, miss, we can't tell you anything about them." The guard replied.

" Tch!" Yuugi was obviously anxious to fight and so was Suika, but according to what Yukari told them earlier, they had to wait a bit before a fight could go on.

" Calm down, Yuugi! I'm sure the kid is all right, from what I saw, he can handle himself." Suika said, trying to calm Yuugi down.

" Don't you guys try anything funny! We have orders to shoot on sight if any of you try anything at all!" One of the guards stated while looking down the iron sights on his gun.

"...\*Sigh\* Great, now we have to wait in order to get to the Youkai Mountain." Marisa said while sighing as everyone heard a guard coughing violently coughing as he is seen grabbing his throat and trying to breathe.

" What the-! James! What's wrong with you?!" One of the guards asked as he too felt his throat closing up.

" What's going on here?!" Ike asked as they see a pillar of darkness in the middle of the guards as they all began to fall to the ground unconscious as they spotted a humanoid shape wearing a smoky

black cloak as it grew massive wings and flew into the Helicarrier, crashing through it.

" Looks like either Ziden or Yukari planned ahead for this and sent in their big gun to break them out." Dante said.

" Big gun?" Youmu asked as Dante smiled.

" That guy is a loyal servant of Ziden and is one mean Elemental!" Dante said as Patchouli raised an eyebrow.

" And what is this Elemental's name?" Patchouli asked.

" His name is-"

*Meanwhile on the Helicarrier...*

The entire ship rocked back and forth as several guards were knocked to the ground as Nick and Tony were startled by the attack on the ship.

Ziden and Yukari smirked when they heard the screams of several guards as he sees a surge of darkness dashing towards him as it slammed into the guards, knocking them out cold as the darkness slammed into the barrier, destroying it as Ziden calmly walked out into the mass of darkness as he held out his hand as the darkness shrank down to humanoid form.

" Master... I... found you..." Ziden was surprised to see his Summon Spirit here before he realized something.

" Yukari? You called Shadow over here?" Ziden asked as he walked to their cell as his keyblade appeared in his hand.

" Whoa, you got that weird weapon that silver haired little boy had. That's neat, we can use as a plaything during our late night excursions from now on!" Panty said as Ziden faceplamed.

" I'm married now, so none of that is ever happening." Ziden said as Panty looked upset.

" Wait what!? You're hitched now! Dammit!" Panty stomped her foot down as Yukari and Stocking walked out of the barrier, that was now down.

" Actually he's got several different wives now! He's going to have a lot of beautiful children with them and make me a Grandmother!" Yukari said as she realized what she just said.

" Huh? Looks like I owe you some Heaven for that Ziden." Stocking said as she walked out of the ceil and looked at the swarm of guards coming towards them.

" You do indeed, but I've been having a weird feeling ever since we got here, and I'm going to find out why." Ziden said as he opened a vortex that led to the lab of the Helicarrier.

" I'll come with you. You girls can handle things here rigght?" Yukari asked.

" Yeah, we won't kill them, just knock them out for a bit and break out of here." Stocking said as she removed her stockings and transformed them into twin katanas.

" I might mess around with some of these guys! If they weren't trying to catch us!" Panty said while removing her underwear and transforming it into a pistol.

Ziden and Yukari leapt through the portal and ending up in the lab as they heard Panty and Stocking battling the guards the portal closed behind them.

Ziden quickly fell to his knees clutching his heart as Yukari ran to his side and helped him up.

" I knew it, there's Phazon on this ship. Those idiots brought Phazon to Earth." Ziden said as he noticed a large jar full of it on the table as Yukari noticed a creature in the large tank that had bony extensions all over his body.

" That's not the only thing, they somehow have Doomsday here as well. That's not good at all." Yukari said as Ziden reached for the jar of Phazon only to be stopped by a lazer blast from Stark;s armor as he walked into the room.

" Hands off the jar, Ziden." Tony warned.

" Tony Stark, are you insane?" Ziden asked as Nick Fury entered the room.

" Why do you say that?" Tony asked.

" Why the hell... would you bring Phazon to the Earth!?" Ziden asked with flames burning around his body.

" Phazon, so that's what that material is called, Why do you know of it?" Nick asked as Yukari opened a gap and grabbed the Jar full of Phazon and held it in her hand.

" BEcause we encountered a woman whom was extremely familiar with dangerous substance and we've seen firsthand what it does to people, which is why, I'm destroying every single bit of it in this base." Yukari said as she threw the Phazon into a gap as Tony fired a repulsar blast at her as Ziden blocked the shot with her hand.

" We know how dangerous the item is, we were trying to find a way to properly weaponize it as a weapon to use against Superman in the case of him losing control." Nick explained.

: You tried to weaponize Phazon in order to stop Superman in case of him going insane like in that other world? Foolishness." Nick and Stark both tensed up at Yukari's words. " You humans always surprise me with how stupid you are. You tried to turn a dangerous

world destroying radioactive material into a weapon? You realize that by even Superman going on a rampage pales in comparison the damage Phazon can do to this planet. After hearing this..." Yukari closed her eyes as if she were thinking. " I think it would be unwise to let you live after today." Yukari's golden eyes shone in the lab as Nick and Tony felt their blood freeze.

" Looks like you two are screwed, Yukari's pissed off at you guys, you shouldn't have invaded her land like that either, now she's going to kill you, after we boot you of our home." Ziden said.

" You sure you want to do that? You kill us, all of Gensokyo will be branded as evil." Nick warned as he reached for a gun in his belt.

"... You are right, killing you two would be unwise, so... we'll just give you a Gensokyo welcome." Yukari waved her hand as two Gaps appeared above her as Yuugi and Suika fell through the gap. " Ziden, do us another favor and warp this ship out of Gensokyo." Ziden raised his arms and released a bright purple burst of light that swallowed the whole ship and warped them outside of Gensokyo.

" Tony, we've got one heck of a battle on our hands." Nick said as he pulled out his pistol and aimed at Yukari.

" Yeah we do, AVENGERS ASSEMBLE!" Tony yelled as Ziden disappeared from sight.

Ziden reappeared on the top of the Helicarrier as he noticed storm clouds above him as he sidestepped a lightning bolt as he sees Thor descending from the skies. Ziden looked over and saw New York in the distance and noticed something weird about it. " Hmm, it seems that the Olympians are having some troubles upstairs, never did Imagine that the Father of all Monsters would be free right now."

" Neither did I, Phoenix Child. Zeus and his family will have a hard time fighting off that Typhon creature, but that is not important right now, I thought you were a Hero worthy of Ascension into Asgard but I was wrong." Thor said as he landed in front of Ziden as he yawned.



" Why's that? Because I have to do acts of evil to keep you youngsters up on your feet so you don't go soft. Plus I do this to keep the Balance of Light and Dark in check so crap doesn't hit the fan too bad and we get screwed over." Ziden explained as Thor nodded.

" I know that, but I am an Avenger and you are attacking us, so I must defend my comrades." Thor said as he held Mjolnir tight in his hand.

" If only your father was this nice to me, oh well, it doesn't matter to me. Come on Thor! God of Thunder! Show me what you got!" Ziden said as he unsheathed Nosada and Murakamo and charged at Thor.

Yukari was staring down Tony Stark and Nick fury as two people she didn't expect to show up through her Gap as Reimu and Marisa were looking confused on what was going on until Yukari explained what going on.

" Reimu and Marisa, you two can deal with Tony Stark. Yuugi and Suika, you two will deal with the Hulk when he gets here, I have someone dealing with Hawkeye and Black Widow as we speak. I shall deal with Nick Fury myself." Yukari said as a Gap swallowed Reimu, Marisa and Ironman as they brought outside in the stormy weather. Yukari heard someone roaring below them as Suika punched a hole through the floor and leapt through it as Suika and Yuugi went to fight their foe.

" If you think you can win against me, then you're dead wrong." Nick stated as Yukari covered her face with a fan.

" Then by all means try, I'm being nice with the selection of people I picked even though Hawkeye and Black Widow are pretty much finished with their foes." Yukari said as she walked towards Nick.

" Enough talk you witch! Time for you to get taken down a few notches!" Nick declared as he charged forward.

## Those who Fight Further ( Final Fantasy 7)

Reimu started off by throwing several amulets at Ironman as he simply fired repulsar blasts at them to destroy them.

" Seriously? I feel kind of upset that Yukari sent a bunch of girls to fight the Avengers, its pretty sad actually." Stark said as Marisa tossed her mini-hakkero up and down.

" Oh please, ze! We've taken down some powerful foes with our Magic skills! You don't stand a chance, bucket head!" Marisa said as Stark laughed.

" Magic? You mean that stuff that doesn't exist? All magic is unexplained Science and you won't beat me with cheap parlor tricks." Stark said as Marisa smirked.

" Spikes told us about how there are ignorant people in the Outside World that don't believe in Magic, but it doesn't matter! Even if you don't believe it, we're still going to kick your metal ass, ze!" Marisa stated as she began to fire an unholy amount of stars at Ironman as he flew through the stars.

" Computer! Analyze these attacks and tell me what kind of tech are they using to fire this much stars at us!" Tony ordered as his computer began to scan the magic attacks.

" Heads up!" Tony looked up and saw Reimu's foot slamming into his mask, blasting him downwards as Reimu rubbed her aching foot. " Man that hurt! I don't think I'm going to try again, maybe I should that darkening thing that Ziden and Kaguya learned." Reimu said to herself as a repulsar blast skimmed her side.

" Looks like I'll have to get serious!" Tony flew into the air and continued to rain down repulsar blasts at the duo as Marisa pointed her hand at him.

" Time for some new magic! Cosmic Waterfall!" A large cloud appeared above Ironman as large torrent of water slammed down on Stark as large blue stars began to bombard his armor as blaring sounds were heard in his armor.

" Warning! Armor is taking too much damage!" Tony looked surprised at this statement.

" How!? I've taken bigger hits than this! What's going on here?!" Stark said as he saw several purple gaps appearing on his screens as he heard laughter coming from the armor. " What?! That woman hacked my armor!? How?! Enough of this! The longer this goes on, the more this virus will weaken my armor! Computer, divert all power to the Unibeam!" Tony's chest light began to glow more brighter as Marisa pointed her Mini-Hakker0 at hiim.

" I dunno what you're doing but I'm ending this now! Love Sign: Master Spark!" Marisa's massive laser fired out and collided with Stark's much smaller laser as it slammed into his armor and smashed him onto the deck of the Helicarrier, knocking him out as Marisa and Reimu high fived each other.

" Hah, we took out a Superhero, we are awesome ze!" Marisa said as she jittered around her broom.

Reimu was about to do something about it when she quickly ducked down to see an army of Destroyers coming towards them as a saw blade whizzed past her head.

" Oh no, its those things again. I think we should take cover in the ship and let these Avengers take care of them." Reimu said as she noticed Marisa flying into the ship without her. " Hey! Don't just leave while I'm talking!"

*Inside the ship...*

Yukari is seen standing over Nick Fury as he was exhausted from the fight and she looked rather unharmed, minus the bruise on her

cheek. " Told you this was a losing battle, but now, you can see just how powerful the Ultima Brigade really is." Yukari said as she opened a Gap, showing the large swarm of Destroyers coming towards them.

Hawkeye and Black Widow are both seen injured and bleeding as Eirin is seen grabbed Lucci's arm. " We aren't to kill them Lucci, that'll cause problems later." Eirin warned as she placed her bow on her back.

" Very well then, I expected more of a fight from the World's Mightiest Heroes." Lucci said as Hawkeye spat on the ground.

" Ah, shut it! If it wasn't for those freaky techniques of yours, I'd have blasted you out of this ship!" Hawkeye declared as Lucci kicked him across the face, knocking him out.

" You are an impressive fighter, Rob Lucci, I would have loved to have seen your fight against Ziden." Eirin said as they walked away from the duo.

" I'm planning on challenging him again in the future, I'd like to see how the other Ziden fights compared to his younger self." Lucci said as he crossed his arms behind him.

Yuugi is seen punching the Hulk through several walls as Suika took a drink of sake from her gourd as she fell on her back, tired and obviously hurt from their battle with the Hulk.

" Never thought we'd see a monster like that in the Outside World, although, I am questioning how we are surviving in the Outside World right now, it feels like we're in Gensokyo, except there's more magic in the air." Suika said as Yuugi fell down.

" We're done here Suika, lets grab Ziden and get out of here." Yuugi said as she wiped her face with her shirt.

" Dragon Wave!" Ziden fired a blue ethereal dragon at Thor as he simply spun his hammer to block the attack.

" Not bad, Phoenix child! Thou art a powerful warrior when it comes to the blade!" Thor applauded as Ziden blushed.

" Thanks man! I try my best but we've got some bogeys coming up!" Ziden said as a devastator roared and charged at the duo as Ziden was yanked into a Gap by Yukari as Thor charged at the large group of Devastators.

*Back in Gensokyo...*

Ziden landed facefirst onto something soft as the other crash landed around the area as Yukari laughed where Ziden landed... right onto Stocking.

" Get off me, you jackass!" Stocking punched Ziden in the face as he rubbed his face.

" That hurt you know? Jeez, at least I didn't land on your sister." Ziden said as he looked at Panty whom was arguing with Yukari about something before she calmed down. Ziden was quickly grabbed into a strong headlock from Yuugi as Ziden remembered something.

" Didn't we have to go and get that Chaos Emerald from those Evil Eyes?" Reimu remembered as Patchouli was calmly sitting down and reading a book as Stocking noticed her.

" Huh?" Stocking walked over to Patchouli as she got up and stared at each other.

" Hmm?" Patchouli was looking at the fallen angel as she looked at her appearance. " Cute outfit."

" Same with yours." Stocking complimented.

" They look alike, its freaking creepy." Ziden said as he felt something dark and evil approaching them.

" What is that?" Youmu asked as they see a blonde haired girl flying towards them as Ziden is tackled off his feet as he quickly sprang to his feet and quickly blocked a blade with his hand.

" Eh? Rumia? What are you doing here?" Reimu asked as Ziden struggled to hold off the unknown woman's blade.

" Who is that woman? She looks like an older Rumia, well minus the darkness wings. sword and claws and halo thing." Marisa said as Ziden forced the woman back.

" I finally found you! Now, not only can I get rid of that accursed shell, but I can also kill the man who killed my father whom was going to make this world a paradise of darkness." The woman said as Rumia hid behind Ziden.

" So you're Oscura's Daughter? Rumia Oscura. Never thought you'd be in Gensokyo of all places." Ziden said as he drew his blade as he spotted someone sneaking up on her. Yorihiime jumped high into the air and slammed her blade into Rumia's as she forced Yorihiime off her blade as she was blasted by a powerful energy ball that slammed her into the ground.

" Hmph, I expected you people to be here. That makes it less of a hassle less of a hassle to track you down." Ganondorf said as everyone tensed up.

" Vergil! Why are you working alongside those guys!? Is this your idea of gaining power to protect the ones you love!?" Dante asked as Vergil remained silent.

" Ziden Icrim and Reimu Hakurei." Reimu raised an eyebrow as her name was called out by the powerful Darkness demon known as Rumia. " You are the sole reason why this place exists, if I kill you,

drowning this place in darkness will be very easy." Rumia said as a burst of darkness came from her body.

Rumia has red eyes and short blond hair. She wears a black vest and skirt, and white blouse with a red tie bordered by two large red beads around her neck. Her large broadsword was a strange one as it was very thin, blade as the hilt was a black cross with a violet glow around it.

" Get out of one fight and into another one just great." Ziden said.

" That's life for ya kid but I'm not complaining!" Yuugi said as she cracked her knuckles.

Panty and Stocking already had their weapons drawn as they sighed. " Jeez, we get out of Jail, only to get involved with Yukari and Ziden again." Stocking said as she spun her blades.

" No matter, we'll still win this fight and get our sweet asses back home so that Preacher doesn't yell at us." Panty said as she took aim at Vergil.

### **Fierce Battle ( Final Fantasy 6)**

Ziden and Reimu quickly leapt backwards as Ganondorf charged at them, only for him to grab them by their legs and throw them to the ground, causing the ground to shatter beneath their weight as Rumia quickly slammed her feet into their chest, causing them to cough up blood as a fire ball slammed into Rumia as Patchouli quickly helped Ziden to his feet.

Yuugi appeared above Ganondorf and slammed her fist into his face, causing a massive crater as Yuugi expected Ganondorf to be injured by her power as she saw him unharmed by the attack.

" Is that all you got woman?" Ganondorf asked as Yuugi growled and slammed her fist into his chest with an unholy amount of force, only

for him to skid back a few inches. " You call that a punch? I'll show you a real punch!" Ganondorf said as a purple energy coated his fist.

" Hah! As if you can send an Oni like me flying! Try your best human!" Yuugi boasted as the ground shook with pure power.

" Warlock Punch!" Ganondorf shot his fist forward and slammed his fist into her stomach as she was hunched over as spit shot from her mouth and she was sent flying through the schoolhouse and woods as a massive dust cloud is seen from the aftermath of the strike.

Yuugi's body was covered in purple flames as she struggled to get to her feet as she found herself right next to the Youkai Mountain.

Youmu and Dante are seen jumping and dodging Vergil's rampant attacks as he was performing Judgement Cut after Judgement Cut as Youmu dashed forward and sliced Vergil's hand, knocking his blade out of his hand as he grabbed it with his other hand and swung it downwards, slashing Youmu across the chest as Dante thrust his sword at his brother's chest, throwing him back as Dante turned to Ziden.

" Hey Spikes! Hurry up and get over here! Break Vergil from Mundus' grip already!" Dante said as he blocked Vergil's attack with her blade.

Ziden quickly escaped from Rumia's assault and jumped towards Vergil as Ganondorf intercepted him.

" Going somewhere, boy!?" Ganondorf asked as Ziden winded his fist back as a bright light covered it.

" Damn right I am! Shining Upper!" Ziden delivered a powerful light based uppercut that sent Ganondorf up into the air before he reappeared above him as more light shined around his fist. " Now for the follow-up! Shining Meteor!" Ziden slammed his fist into Ganondorf's face, sending him into the ground, causing an explosion of light that blasted Rumia back as Ziden pulled out Crimson Edge



as dashed towards Vergil as his blade turned blue. Ziden sliced the air behind Vergil as his body stiffened up as he fell downwards as a roar was heard in the sky.

" Dear lord, was that?" Yukari looked up into the sky to see a massive storm forming in the sky as Dante looked at the three massive red orbs in the sky.

" You dare to break my hold over my obedient slave boy!? I'll crush you all like bugs!" Mundus roared as everyone was forced to the ground Ziden, Dante and Panty pointed their guns at the orbs.

" Ice that sonnuva bitch!" Panty yelled as Ziden and Dante began to fire an unholy amount of bullets at Mundus as he laughed.

" Foolish mortals! Do you honestly believe that you can stand up to me!?" Mundus asked as his voice boomed over the skies. A large shockwave blasted everyone into the ground as Patchouli is sent flying towards Ziden as he catches her. " I don't have time to deal with you flies. Oscura is waiting for us to return with his daughter." Mundus said as pillars of light appeared around the Unconscious Ganondorf and the severely uninjured Rumia as she glared at Ziden.

They all disappeared as Ziden fell onto his back, tired from the fights.

" This isn't good, Oscura got his daughter back, but what about that one over there?" Ziden said while pointing at the other Rumia.

" I'll take care of it, Ziden. You just go and do whatever it is you wanted to do and get that Chaos Emerald back." Yukari said as she waved her hand as a Gap appeared underneath Ziden, Ike, Marisa, Reimu, Yuugi and Suika were gaped halfway up the mountain as Ziden noticed that he was still holding Patchouli.

" Oops, looks like you're coming with us to Heaven, huh?" Ziden said as Patchouli growled at him before she coughed.

" So that secret lab should be somewhere around here, right?" Reimu asked as Ziden nodded. " Great, we just need to search around and find it." Reimu said to herself as Ziden pointed to the large cave nearby.

Reimu, Marisa, Yuugi and Ike went inside the cave as Suika led Ziden and Patchouli up the mountain towards heaven.

After a long and arduous walk, filled with complaining coming from Ziden and Patchouli, they reached Heaven as they looked around. It was a beautiful place in the clouds as they spotted a large mansion with a large peach tree next to it.

" So where's that blue haired brat so I can kick her ass for beating my past self's ass." Ziden said as he sensed something coming at him. Ziden quickly held out his hand to block a scarlet blade as he spots said blue haired girl smirking at him.

" Heh! So you came back to Heaven for a rematch after I curbstomped your sorry ass back in the Mortal Realm!?" Tenshi asked as Ziden forced her back.

" Yeah, you're about to learn a serious lesson in curbstomping kid. And I'm the teacher of hard knocks!" Ziden boasted as Patchouli and Suika flew over to the mansion, to get out of the way of the fight.

" Once again! I'm Tenshi Hinanawi and I'm going to beat your ass all over Heaven!" Tenshi declared as Ziden smirked.

" BRING IT THEN!" Ziden declared as he unsheathed Murakamo and Nosada.

*Back at the Schoolhouse Base...*

Yukari is seen talking to Rumia calmly while petting her head before she gets grabbed into a hug by her as Yukari sighed. " To think I would get wrapped up in something like this, this is insane." Yukari said while shaking her as she looked over to the unconscious Vergil.

" At least we may have gained a powerful ally from this." Yukari said as she leaned back in her chair.

*Fun Facts:*

*1. Ziden and Yukari have meddled in the affairs of the Avengers multiple times in the past, making them somewhat enemies with them. Yeah, they aren't so heroic in their off times.*

*2. Please note that Ganondorf can only be harmed by Light Based attacks in his revived state, meaning no matter how hard Yuugi hit him, she wasn't going to do any form of damage. Ziden only two shotted him because Pre Time Skip Ziden had no Light attacks and Ganondorf knew that expecting the Post Time Skip one to waste his efforts against him, only to be caught off guard by his light attacks.*

*3. Panty and Stocking are in this fic as guest chars and Panty's language is toned down a bit... somewhat.*

*4. Yeah, Rumia finally got introduced and is traumatized from almost being killed by an evil version of her which you guys know as Ex-Rumia, whom in this story is the Daughter of the Demon Overlord Oscura.*

*5. Shadow is the very same one from the Tales series and is my Favorite Summon Spirit in the series next to Celsius!*

*Author's Note: Hurray, new chapter that I enjoyed writing. The next one will be crazy! Expect some high paced action from Ziden and Tenshi's fight!*

## The Admiral of Light, Kizaru Appears!

Darklight: I know you do! Well, there are no Wild Cards since I don't normally give people brand new powers like that, this is only replacing Sora's crappy summons. Lets just say that Tenshi should really watch herself when she fights Ziden. Sora will summon the Persona's like how he summons in KH 1, with a fancy animation. What? I would never give Sora Mara! That's just silly. \* Erases Mara from the List of Possible Personas\*

---

Reimu and the others were inside the cave, staring down a large steel door that had a keypad next to it as Marisa was fiddling with it randomly.

" Marisa, just let Yuugi smash down the door so we can get the Chaos Emerald and beat up the chick behind this whole mess." Reimu said as Marisa waved her off.

" Don't worry! I have a foolproof plan to get this door open, ze!" Marisa said as she cracked her fingers. " Alright! Now lets do this! 1111!" A red light appeared on the keypad, signifying that she was wrong. " Damn! 1112!" Bzzt, wrong again. " Come on! 1113!" Wrong yet again.

" For the love of- Yuugi, smash that door down!" Ike said as Yuugi walked over to the door and slammed her fist into her palm.

" Got it!" Yuugi slammed her palms onto the door and began to grip down on the steel door as everyone heard the steel begin to moan and groan as she easily tore the door apart and threw it out of the cave.

" Man, I could have solved that easily if you just let me." Marisa said as she walked into the room.

Everyone filed into the room and saw that it was an elevator to the lowest level. Ike walked over to the panel and pressed the button as they were led down to the lowest level.

" Looks like we're in a lab of some sort." Ike pointed out as they left the elevator and saw that they were in a large room filled with tanks of various kinds.

" Wait a sec, I know that flower tank." Reimu said as she flew over to it and looked it over.

" Really? That thing looks kinda goofy to use as a weapon." Yuugi said.

" If its here, then that means that-"

" That I took the Chaos Emerald from those Lunarians with my Evil Eyes!" Everyone looked up to see a girl on the screen. She had brown eyes, long brown hair in two braids, wears a white shirt with a purple bow beneath its collar.

" I know you, you attacked me at my Shrine all those years ago, uh..." Reimu was drawing a blank on the girl's name.

" My name is Rika, you flat chested idiot!" Rika yelled as Reimu felt her face turn red with anger.

" Well now, Rika, why did you steal the Chaos Emerald from us?" Ike asked as Rika smirked.

" Because you stand in our way, that's why! Ultima may have given you guys a three day reprieve but I'm not going to wait to crush you disgusting Youkai!" Rika said as Yuugi scoffed.

" Jeez, even 1000 years later and there are still humans that hate us Youkai? Thats a surprise." Yuugi said as Ike placed his blade on his shoulder.

" If you are with the Ultima Brigade, then that makes you our enemy." Ike said as another voice began to laugh in the background as Rika is shoved out of the way as an old man with grey hair that was shaped like a bat appeared on the screen.

" Eh? Who in the world are you ze?" Marisa asked.

" I! Am Dr. Albert Wily! Residential Super Genius and soon to be ruler of the worlds!" Dr. Wily stated as he began to laugh again.

" Let me guess, you're also working with the Ultima Brigade, right?" Reimu asked.

" Correct, and you won't be leaving this place alive, Shrine Maiden!" Rika yelled as Ike felt something stalking them as he spun around and blocked an attack from a large brown robot with a large silver blade on his arm.

" Not bad human! I didn't expect you to block that at all! I'm Sword Man, your opponent for this morning!" Sword Man exclaimed as Ike was pushed back as Yuugi saw a large green statue walking towards her. It had a large green head and was wearing brown tunic with a brown cape, Yuugi noticed that ther was a greek letter on its forehead.

" Meet the Evil Eye Alpha, oni! I made these to kill you disgusting Youkai!" Rika declared as the screen shut off.

" Me and Marisa will go hunt down Rika, you two can handle things here." Reimu said while flying off into another hallway.

Meanwhile...

Ziden is seen using his foot to block Tenshi's blade and looked extremely bored. Patchouli and Suika were calmly watching the battle.

" Come on girl, is this all you got? Its been five minutes and all you've given me so far is a cut across the chest." Ziden said as the wound he stated began to fizzle with steam as he fell to the floor. " What the hell?"

" Hah! My blade can take the properties of my opponents weakness! It looks your weakness is water! A shame indeed!" Tenshi said as Ziden got to his feet and unsheathed Murakamo.

" Looks like I'm going to take you more seriously then. Come on, Celestial show what you got!" Ziden said as he jumped backwards while taunting her.

### **Catastrophe in Bhava-agra ~ Wonderful Heaven ( Touhou 10.5 Scarlet Weather Rhapsody)**

" Hmm, nice theme kid, but it'll be the perfect theme for your beatdown!" Ziden dashed forward and past Tenshi, cutting her side as she clutched it.

" Why you!?" Tenshi jumped forward and slashed at Ziden's neck, barely dodging it as it slashed his throat as he felt the sting of water blasting into his neck as Tenshi followed up with a stab through Ziden's chest. " Got ya!" Tenshi smirked as she saw Ziden gasp in pain. Ziden quickly grabbed her arm, and clutched with an unholy force as she struggled to break free from him. Ziden pulled his fist back as it was wrapped in fire and he slammed it into her face, causing it to cave in and sent her flying backwards as he grabbed the blade from his chest and yanked it out as Ziden tossed the blade up and down in his hand.

" Nice blade, having the ability to change to her opponent's weakness, although its useless against beings that have none though. Even with this and even if this bad boy could seal my powers, I'd still be kicking your sorry ass right now." Ziden said as he threw the blade towards her as she grabbed the blade, wondering how he was able to hold it.

" Heh, well I can take away that fire of yours if I want to!" Tenshi pointed her blade to the sky as clouds gathered above her. Ziden felt a raindrop fall on his forehead as it began to pour down on them. " Now What?! I took away those flames of yours! What are you going to do know, huh?!" Tenshi asked while thinking she had the advantage of the fight now as Ziden blinked.

Ziden merely sheathed Murakamo and kept his hand on the hilt while eyeing the clouds. " Yeah, this is going to suck for you kid, time for sun in Heaven." Ziden quickly unsheathed the blade, swinging it upwards as it sliced through the clouds, parting them in half as Suika whistled while Patchouli looked unimpressed.

" Show off..." Patchouli said as she rested her head on her hands while watching the fight.

Tenshi was utterly angry as she stabbed her blade into the ground as Ziden felt the ground beneath him shake violently as it began to rip the ground apart as Ziden leapt into the air, looking at the large amount of damage that Tenshi caused as she summoned several weird looking rocks around her.

" This is good! You're faring much better than you did last time we fought! Looks like you trained a bit, but now i'm going to get serious!" Tenshi said as held several Spell Cards in her hand. " Lets go Ziden ICrim! Show me the power you used to beat YHWH!"

### **Sword of Valiant - Dark Power - ( Touhou SWR Vocal Remix, SYNC ARTS)**

Ziden landed back on the ground as he jumped backwards to dodge large Earthy spires that were racing towards him as he dashed forward over the rocks and slammed his foot into her head, smashing her into the ground as he followed up with a frosty stab with Murakamo which she blocked with one of those Rocks she summoned earlier and it blasted him back.



Ziden landed on his feet and saw Tenshi right in front of him, crouched down with her blade pulled back.

" Sword of Non-Perception!" Tenshi performed a powerful slash to Ziden's shins, slicing them off as she smashed one of those weird stones into his face, careening him high into the air as he landed in a pond next to Suika's large house as Tenshi jumped in after him.

Ziden's legs quickly began to heal as Ziden looked at Tenshi swimming towards him as he disappeared in a blur. She looked confused on where he went when she felt a blade stabbing through her stomach as was launched out of the water and back onto dry land as Ziden was holding her over him while she was hanging from his blade as her body began feel colder.

" Don't tell me you're all outta breath already kid, this is just the warm up, the main act is going to start soon!" Ziden said as he tossed her from his blade as she landed on the ground hard as Suika drank some more Sake.

" Looks like Ziden may kill her, should we step in to stop him if he does?" Patchouli asked.

" I'll do it, I've got nothing better to do. Besides, her parents might get mad if she dies and might convince the angels to attack us." Suika said as she stood up.

Ziden swung his blade in an upward arc, sweeping the ground with a fiery cold wave of fire that blasted her into the air as she spun upwards and threw the large stone at Ziden's head, tearing it off of his shoulder as Tenshi flinched from the sound of Ziden's head being torn off.

" Got em! Now I told him that I would beat him, I told him!" Tenshi said as she saw Ziden's body blackening and exploding into a dark mist. " What the?!" Tenshi was confused and didn't sense Ziden behind her as his arm darkened from the use of Haki.

" This ends now! Dynamite Hammer!" Ziden slammed his fist into Tenshi's back as she felt her spine bend inwards as blood forced its way up her throat, causing her to choke her bloody vomit as she fell onto the ground, coughing up blood as she felt herself unable to move as Ziden landed in front of her.

" *What the hell is this!? He's gonna kill me! I can't die! I don't want to die!*" Tenshi thought herself as sees Ziden calmly walking towards her. She began to mentally panic as she looked up and saw him raising up his sword as she swore she saw the Grim Reaper in Ziden's place as she heard the sound of a blade sinking into the ground as she opened her eyes and saw Ziden walking away from her.

" Looks like you were a total joke kid, can't believe I wasted my time on a weakling like you. Come on Patchy, short girl, lets go!" Ziden said as Patchouli got up and heard grumbling coming from Suika.

" Don't... you... leave... we aren't done here!" Ziden turned around and saw Tenshi struggling to stand as she held a Spell Card in her hand.

" Kid, you've got a broken spine and yet you're still standing, impressive kid. but whatcha gonna do now?" Ziden asked as he saw her Spell Card activate.

" Take this! Keystone: World Creation Press!" Tenshi somehow leapt high into the air and grabbed a large keystone and slammed it down onto Ziden, crushing him underneath it as she smirked as she jumped off the Keystone as she almost fell down as she heard the stone being broken by something hitting it.

Ziden's fist crashed through the Keystone as he jumped through the crack and landed on the rock as he sighed. " Looks like that your last rush of adrenaline for that one, looks like we're done here and now-!" Ziden's words were cut short as he saw a laser tear through his shoulder as he stared at it confused. "... Please tell me that you fired that, flat chest." Ziden hoped as Tenshi's face turned red.

" My chest isn't flat you jerk! But no, I didn't fire that attack." Tenshi answered as Ziden landed next to her.

" White Flames." Ziden breathed pure white flames over Tenshi's body as she felt her spine reconnecting as the pain struck her tenfold. " Get up, you're helping me with this fight." Ziden said as he felt a presence behind him.

" Oooooohhhh, so this must be the Troublesome Pirate that gave Aokiji some trouble hmmm?" Ziden turned around to see whom was speaking in such a lazy manner. The man is a middle aged man with a moderate amount of wrinkles on his face, black hair, and a very thin beard. He was wearing a yellow striped suit with a Marine coat draped over his shoulders like a cape, his arms not in its sleeves. He also wears pure white shoes, gold-amber tinted sunglasses, and a dark green shirt with a mauve tie under his yellow suit.

" So you're one of those Marines right? The ones who keep getting in our way?" Ziden asked as the man put on a relaxed grin.

" Oooooohh, so you know who we are? That's good, I'm a Marine Admiral! Kizaru is my name!" Kizaru introduced himself as Tenshi got to her feet and grabbed her blade.

" Well whatever you overgrown asshat. We've got people to save so leave or I'll be forced to kick your sorry ass." Ziden warned as Kizaru looked confused.

" Hmm? Saving people? But you're pirates, are you trying to trick me or something?" Kizaru wondered.

" I'm no pirate kid, I'm a Hero of Legends, and a Defender of Justice everywhere." Ziden said as Kizaru laughed.

" With that kind of attitude, you'd fit in fine with the Marines, if you weren't a wanted Pirate, too bad I have to take you in though. I guess you and your comrades shouldn't have attacked Enies Lobby

like the Straw Hats did, of course killing those Marines didn't help either." Kizaru said as Patchouli sighed.

" That was only Remilia doing that to assert her dominance over the humans of your world, Ziden and Yukari had nothing to do with that." Patchouli said as Ziden nodded.

" Damn dumbass vampire." Ziden said.

" Oh? So she's an actual Vampire? But the reports said that it was daytime so how was a vampire able to survive in sunlight?" Kizaru wondered as he leaned to the side.

" Magic, that's all I'm going to say on that." Ziden said.

" Oooohh, that makes sense, but nonetheless, you, Remilia Scarlet and Yukari Yakumo are wanted by the World Government, so I have to take in you! Too bad you'll either be sent to Impel Down or executed on the spot though!" Kizaru said with a relaxed tone.

" Then i just have to kick your ass right? That's good. Get ready to fight a true being of Justice, Marine Admiral!" Ziden said while bouncing on his feet.

" Ohhhh? But I have a question for you, Ziden Icrim. Have you ever been kicked at the Speed of Light?" Kizaru asked as Ziden raised an eyebrow.

" No, not really why?" Ziden asked as he saw Kizaru's foot right next to his head. Kizaru's foot slammed into Ziden's face and sent him crashing through the large Mansion, soaring right past Patchouli and Suika.

" Heh! Looks like we've got a fight on our hands! Lets take this oversized freak down!" Suika said as she charged at Kizaru.

*At the Hidden Bunker...*

**Boss Fight ( Mega Man 7)**

Ike blocks Sword Man's blade with his own as Ike stabbed his blade into the ground, creating a pillar of fire that force Sword Man back. " So you can use Fire on your blade as well! Interesting human! But lets see whose fire burns brighter!" Sword Man declared as he charged forward and lit his blade aflame and slammed it into Ike's, forcing him onto his knees as Sword Man was continuing to force pressure onto the blade.

" Hhhrrnng!" Ike mustered strength from all over his body and forced Sword Man back. " Quick Slash!" Ike shot forward and delivered a powerful horizontal strike to his chest, slicing open his circuits as sparks flew out.

" Oh my! You inflicted a wound upon me! I say, I believe its time to get serious! Flame Column!" Sword Man pointed his blade to the ground as large fiery pillers appeared and began to flow towards Ike. Ike jumped high into the air as he spun in the air and forced himself downwards, clashing blades with Sword Man as he felt something wrong his body.

" Oh no! My body's breaking apart from his attack!? How!?" Sword Man asked as his upper body began to sink into his lower half as his blade ploped to the ground.

" Simple, I struck you deep enough to break whatever it was to cause your body to malfuntion like that, now this fight is over." Ike raised his blade onto his shoulder and slammed his blade vertically through Sword Man as he was cleaved in half by Ike.

" Not bad, ole chap! We'll meet again in the future!" Sword Man's body began to violently explode as he heard Yuugi screaming in pain as an explosion happened in the other room as he sees Yuugi covered in a several light brown beans as steam is seen coming off her body.

" Yuugi! Are you alright?" Ike asked as she is seen wiping the beans off of her body frantically and hastily.

" Gah! These fried beans got everywhere on me! Gotta get these off me!" Yuugi began to shake her body as she grabbed the bottom of her shirt and pulled it over her head as Ike quickly covered his eyes as Yuugi noticed it. " Oh calm down! I'm wearing a Sarashi, shesh!" Yuugi said.

" I don't know what that is, look! Just put your shirt back on!" Ike pleaded as Yuugi rolled her eyes.

They heard another explosion as they spotted Reimu and Marisa are seen flying towards them as they landed and ran towards the elevator.

" We've got a problem! This place is going to blow! And that Wily guy said he's sending something after us outside!" Reimu said as Yuugi cracked his knuckles.

The group of four began to ran to the elevator and activated it, allowing it to go upwards as they all felt an ominous vibe coming from the mountain side as they got ready to fight.

" Why do I get the feeling we're going to fight some sort of unholy creature that's going to beat the crap out of us?" Reimu said as Marisa smirked.

" Heh! We'll just this thing to Kingdom Come ze!" Marisa declared as the elevator reached the top of thee elevator as they ran outside and saw the sky was grey and stormy as they see a large blue UFO making an unholy noise as it descended to the ground before opening, revealing Wily and Rika sitting inside.

" So you got out just in time, huh? Well it doesn't matter, you guys will die here and you won't stop the Salvation Bombs that will go off in the Outside World!" Rika declared as Wily slapped her in the back of the head.

" You idiot! Don't tell them about the bombs you fool! What were you thinking?!" Wily asked.

" They're going to die here anyway, just release your Orange Demon and get rid of them!" Rika ordered as Wily rolled his eyes. He snapped his finger as several yellow balls began to rain down from the sky and began to form a large ball of yellow, goo like being as a single red eye opened up and glared down at the group as Lightning flashed behind it.

" Behold! One of my Ultimate Creations, the Yellow Devil!" Wily declared as the group got ready fight the massive being.

*Back in Heaven...*

**Kaboooooooooommmmm!**

Ziden is seen panicking as a laser blast from Kizaru's leg vastly destroyed the area behind him as Kizaru appeared above Ziden. He raised his arms to block his kick, only for the impact to blast him into the ground as Tenshi looked around at the destruction that Kizaru caused.

Several of the Angels were glaring at Tenshi as she felt their piercing glares on her as she ignored them and grabbed her blade of Hisou and charged at Kizaru.

**Boss Theme ( One Piece: Pirate Warriors 2)**

Tenshi raised her blade into the air and slashed Kizaru in the back as it completely passed through him as she fell through him. " Oh? My my, you can't harm me like that girl! I ate the Glint-Glint Fruit. I'm a Light Man." Kizaru said as he raised his leg and kicked Tenshi with a Light Speed Kick as she blocked the attack with her blade as Kizaru felt weak from touching it.

" Huh? What did my blade turn into?" Tenshi wondered as she smelt salty water coming from her blade.

" Oh? Why did it feel like I just touched Sea Prism just now?" Kizaru wondered as Ziden appeared behind him with his fist on fire.

" Holy Sun Knuckle!" Ziden tried to slammed his fist into Kizaru, only to miss him as Kizaru's foot slammed into Ziden's chest, sending him soaring through the air as Patchouli finished casting a Spell.

" Flame Lance!" A large fiery lance appeared in the sky and began to descend towards Kizaru as it pierced through his body and caused a large fiery explosion that blasted his body apart as his limbs fell all over the place.

" Huh, looks like we got him, that was easy!" Suika said as Ziden landed right on top of her, crushing her underneath him.

" Ugh, my aching back, did I fall on a midget?" Ziden asked as Suika lifted him over her head and slammed him onto the ground.

" I'm not a midget, you jerk! I'm an oni, pal and you better not forget that!" Suika warned as Ziden scratched his head.

" Okay, half pint, whatever you say." Ziden said as Suika snorted.

" I dare you to call me half pint again!" Suika said as she cracked her knuckles as Tenshi began to walk towards Ziden while spinning her blade.

" Now now, you two, knock it off." Patchouli said as Ziden smirked as Patchouli sighed.

" Okay, half pint!" Ziden said as Suika growled.

" That's it! I'm beating you into a pulp right now!" Suika declared as Ziden and Patchouli felt a searing pain in their shoulders as a laser tore through them.

" Ohhhhh, so that was the Magic that Mithos told us about. So scary~!" Kizaru said as Ziden raised an eyebrow.

" Mithos? Why are you guys working with the Rulers of Darkness if you guys uphold Justice?" Ziden asked.



" Hmm? That guy is with the Rulers of Darkness? That means he's evil right?" Kizaru asked as everyone nodded as Ziden and Patchouli clutched their bleeding wounds. " Hmm, that's baaaaaad! But while I'm here in this weird place, I should capture Ziden and go home then!" Kizaru crossed his arms across his chest as a bright light appeared in his palms. Patchouli could an attack was coming and grabbed Ziden, forcing him underneath her. " Yasakani no Magatama!" From his hands fired a barrage of light particles at the group as they struck the ground, causing massive explosions of light that spanned across Heaven as a large shadow appeared over Kizaru.

Kizaru stopped his assault as he saw Patchouli laying on top of Ziden as she and the others were knocked out. Kizaru calmly walked over to Patchouli and tried to lift her off of Ziden, only for her body to latch onto him.

" Ohh, looks like this girl doesn't want you to get captured, hmm? Oh well, too bad that I can just blast her away." Kizaru said as he lifted his foot as Ziden's eyes widened when a blast of holy energy threw everyone away as Ziden looked up to see a massive metallic angel was flying down towards him as Kizaru looked surprised at the being's sudden appearance.

" Human! What do you think you are doing, destroying Heaven like this?!" The massive angel asked as Kizaru looked confused.

" Wait... this is Heaven... oops... guess I shouldn't have caused so much damage then!" Kizaru said as the angel glared down at Ziden and Tenshi.

" Tenshi Hinanawi! You have gone too far with your hi-jinks this time! You have caused wide-spread destruction across Heaven with your fight with Ziden! This shall not go unpunished!" The angel said as Tenshi swallowed hard. " It is by the will of God and I, Metatron, that Tenshi Hinanawi shall be banished from Heaven for her crimes for a span of Five years and will be placed under Ziden Icrim's care for that timespan." Metatron declared as Ziden sighed.

" Great, just what I want to do, babysit. Hurray." Ziden said with Sarcasm lacing his voice.

" Hmm, I think I've done enough for today, so I'll be heading to the HQ to inform everyone of our battle. I will be back to capture you and your friends." Kizaru said as he disappeared in a flash of purple light as Ziden was still unable to move.

" Uh... this is kinda ironic, but could you help us out here Metatron, I kinda can't move." Ziden said as Metatron snorted. He waved his hand as Ziden and the others were warped away from Heaven.

Meanwhile...

A large explosion is seen happening on the side of the mountain as a yellow goo was raining down on the group as they all looked exhausted as they were covered in bruises and burns as Wily was extremely angry.

" I can't believe those fools beat the Yellow Devil Mk2 Prototype I made! I'll crush you fools you for this!" Wily yelled as he slammed his fists onto the UFO as Rika sighed.

" Great, and now they know about the bombs in the Outside World, good ob, old man, Jedah isn't going to be happy about this at all." Rika said as Wily angrily pointed at her.

" That was you that told them, you retard!" Wily yelled as the UFO closed as it flew away into the sky.

" Wait! Great... so I guess we should tell Yukari about those bomb things." Reimu said as she sighed.

" Well, that won't take long, because her gap is right above us." Yuugi said as they were sucked into said Gap as they all landed in the infirmary.

Reimu looked over and saw Ziden laying on a bed as Eirin and Kaguya were standing over him as Tenshi was pacing angrily around the room as Yukari and Yuyuko were messing around with Ziden's hair.

Reimu quickly told them what they learned from their enemies. Ziden was surprised to learn that Wily was involved with the Ultima Brigade. So was Sanae when she entered the room.

" I didn't know that Dr. Wily was real, this is so awesome, do you think we'll meet Mega-"

" No, I doubt we'll need to go to Megaman's world, so its very unlikely that we'll go there. We may meet a Megaman though." Ziden said as Sanae sighed.

" Well, about those Salvation Bombs though, should we do something about them?" Reimu asked.

" After we heal up, yeah, I've been searching for anything off in this world and found some weird energy signals coming from New York, London, Tokyo and strangely enough, Makai." Ziden listed out as Sanae raised her hand.

" Sanae wishes to go to New York, apparently." Satori said as Ziden shrugged.

" Sure, Reimu goes with you to New York, since you two can fit in well and won't draw attention to yourselves." Yukari said.

" But whom will go to those other places though?" Yuyuko wondered.

" Hmm, I'll think of it later. I'm worried about the Signal in Tokyo, I sensed that it was moving around in something very large and there's only one creature that is that big in Japan." Ziden said.

" Who Godzilla? Oh come on, he's not real is he?" Sanae asked as Ziden simply stared at her before her face turned to shock. " Oh

gods, I pity the poor souls that have to track him down."

" I vote Kaguya to Japan." Mokou said while smirking.

" I wouldn't mind going! Its my chance to see how far the Earthlings have come along with their with their technology! Eirin you should come with me!" Kaguya said as Eirin sweatdropped.

" Who will take care of the patients if I go with you Princess?" Eirin said.

" Let Reisen and the others Rabbits help out while we are gone! But we should take a Smasher with us though, in case we get into trouble over." Kaguya said as Bowser stepped forward.

" Seriously lard ass? The Outside World doesn't know that beings of Fantasy and Games exist, I personally don't want them to know." Ziden said.

" Bah! I'll just that I'm wearing a costume then! Problem Solved!" Bowser exclaimed as Ziden facepalmed.

" I guess that works as well. I'll be heading to London, I rarely visit that place and there's a person I really should settle my debts with." Ziden said.

" I would like to come with you to London if you don't mind." Alice said as Marisa walked up next to her.

" Let me come too, ze! I want to see the Outside World too!" Marisa exclaimed as Ziden sighed.

" All right, but I should warn you, London has a Vampire Problem, so don't wander away from me and you'll be good." Ziden warned. Ziden noticed Sakuya and Youmu talking to each other and got an idea in his head. " Sakuya and Youmu, you'll be going to Makai together, so be ready to deal with alot of Demons and such."

" We'll let you guys rest up before sending you into those Locations, so prepare yourselves." Yukari said as the others got ready to go these locations.

" I'm surprised that you survived an encounter with Kizaru, he was part of the reason why my friends were separated from each other." Robin said.

" That guy said he would be back, I seriously am not looking forward to that rematch, that guy is fast as hell." Ziden said as he sighed. " And since some of my powers are still missing, I'm still not at full strength yet, this sucks."

" Gurararara! So it looks like you guys need to learn how to deal with Devil Fruit Users via Haki, now that I'm a J-Spirit, I don't have to worry about my Devil Fruit weaknesses or my illness any more!" Whitebeard said as he formed legs and chuckled again. " I can teach you guys if you want!"

" Go for it kids, any one who likes to use Physical Attacks will love it, I love using it, this thing is awesome." Ziden said as his arm blackened before returning to normal.

*30 minutes later...*

After some intense training with Whitebeard, the girls got ready to find these bombs as four portals opened up around them. Reimu and Sanae found themselves in the streets of New York as they noticed that it was completely silent as they spotted a man in a red and Blue Spandex suit swinging around the buildings via some webs.

Ziden, Marisa and Alice were seen standing in the streets of London as Ziden sensed someone walking towards them as he spotted a man wearing orange sunglasses and a red trenchcoat as Marisa and Alice felt the man's thirst for blood rolling down their spines.

Kaguya, Eirin and Bowser appeared in an Alleyway with Bowser falling through a trashcan as Eirin was seen holding a device that

was constantly beeping as Bowser roared in anger.

Youmu and Sakuya landed in a crystal styled palace as they spotted a woman wearing red robes calmly sitting on a throne as she simply stared at the duo in front of them as they spotted a man wearing silver armor and noticed he had a brown beard as well.

*Fun Fact:*

*1. It should have been obvious that Ziden would beat the hell out of Tenshi, after all, even counteracting his powers with her blade, means he'd still have his speed and Strength to fall back on.*

*2. J-Spirits are the term that chars like Whitebeard and Ace have become while retaining their Devil Fruit powers after death, minus the weakness, since they are ghosts.*

*3. Yeah, Dr. wily and Rika are official members of the Ultima Brigade, so expect to see alot of Robot Masters in the future~!*

*4. Guess those chars that appeared in those cities, you might win a prize... no you won't, Ziden will punch you in the face if you guess right.*

*Author's Note: Yet another Chapter done, this is going to be a long first story so strap in for the ride! You'll love it and enjoy it! Leave some reviews!*

# Salvation Bombs and the King of Monsters

Reimu and Sanae are seen walking the streets of New York,, constantly peeking into the cars and seeing people sleeping as they sensed magic in the air.

" Weird, I though Ziden said something about people in the Outside World not having any form Magic powers but, I sense everything in this city is coated in Magic." Sanae said as Reimu shrugged.

" I dunno, I'm more confused on all these weird building annd metal things. And the fact that all of these people are sleeping confuses me." Reimu said as she scratched her head.

" First of all, these are modern buildings and unlike our homes in Gensokyo, they are made from Stone and are more sturdy than our houses and those things are cars, people use them to get around since they can't fly like we can." Sanae explained.

" Really? Cause that guy up seems to be getting around fine by flying." Reimu pointed out as Sanae looked up and saw a man dropping down on a car next to them.

The man was wearing a red and blue spandex costume that had a mask with weblike stitching on it. Most notable about the person was the large Spider on his chest.

" Hey! I know you! You're Spiderman! I didn't know you were real too!" Sanae said as Spiderman scratched his head.

" Uh, why wouldn't I be real? I'm standing right here, being the Friendly Neighbor Spider that I am!" Spiderman declared.

" But you're a comic book char, how can that be true? My mind can't handle all this info! Gah!" Sanae was hitting the side of her head as Reimu sighed.

" Never mind that, we're here in city looking for a bomb that was planted here, did you see anything off in this city?" Reimu asked.

" Well... aside from the fact that everyone in this city is sleeping and I've seen weirdos in fur running around, no, everything seems normal to me lady." Spider Man said as Reimu just looked at the man.

" That was a joke he was making but I doubt he saw anything so... would you like to help us find the bomb though?" Sanae asked.

" Eh, sure, why not. I've got nothing better to do. Sure, lets find this bomb." Spider Man said as he shot a web near a rooftop and shot into the air as Reimu and Sanae flew into the air after them, completely unaware of a Ninja and a Empousa watching them.

" Inform Chronos and Lord Shredder that the Gensokyo girls have appeared seeking the Salvation Bomb." The empousa ordered as the ninja nodded and disappeared from sight.

" So where do you think the Bomb is Spider Man? I don't know anything about this city, so i wouldn't know where to search." Reimu asked as Spider Man thought for a second.

" Hmm, well if I know anything from the movies I watch, the bad guys would place the bomb in a famous place in this city which would be the Empire State Building or the Statue of Liberty. The Empire State Building is closer so we should check that one first." Spider Man said as he pointed to the large building that they were getting closer to.

Reimu noticed that there were people standing all around the entrance to the building as they landed near the entrance as the people noticed them and approached them. One of them was a brown haired boy that was walking towards them.

" Who are you guys and how come you mortals are awake right now?" The boy asked.



" What's with that 'mortal' talk dude? Are you guys having some kind of LARPing session right now? Its kind of a bad time for that if you ask me." Spider Man said while chuckling.

" Because those guys aren't fully human, they're half human, half Gods." Sanae explained as the boy raised an eyebrow.

" How do you know that? How can you tell that we're Demi-Gods?" The boy asked.

" Because Kanako told me about you guys, beings birthed from the Gods of Greece, she told me not to get involved with your kind at all, so please step aside, we must enter the Empire State Building to check something." Sanae said bluntly as the boy refused to move.

" Why should I let you guys inside this building, how do I know you guys aren't spies working for Chronos?" The boy asked as Reimu sighed.

" Because I don't what the hell a Chronos is! Look! There is a Bomb somewhere in this city and if it goes off, every soul, Godly or not, will be ripped out of their body and will happen on a continental scale and if all three of them go off, it'll combine and spread across this Galaxy, now then will you let us search this building?" Reimu asked as all the people around them began talking amongst themselves.

"... Fine, but there's no way that there's a bomb in there, we've been occupying this place ever since the war started." The boy said. " I'm Percy Jackson, Son of Posiedon. Nice to meet you guys. You too Spider-Man, didn't think you were real."

" Why does everyone say that? Is it because I have Video Games and Comics based on my exploits? Meh, whatever, time to search this place." Spider Man said as he flipped into the air and entered the building as the girls followed as Sanae kept her eye on Percy as she walked by him.

They began to scour the hotel as they went into each of the rooms, searching all over for the bomb, turning up nothing as they noticed a man sprawled out on the desk as they noticed he had a shirt that had a white skull on it.

" Who's this guy?" Reimu asked.

" Oh him? This guy is Franky Wanky, a mean ole guy known as the Punisher! He likes to shoot things with his guns, they tend to die alot though afterwards. He's the kind of guy to shoot first and ask questions later." Spider Man said poking and prodding on the Punisher's face as he angrily snored.

" Sounds like Ziden and Marisa." Reimu pointed out.

" Yeah, those two do indeed act like that some times." Sanae agreed as well.

" Ziden? Like Ziden ICrim? You know that guy?" Spider Man asked.

" Yeah, he is, unfortunately, my cousin, which still disturbs me." Reimu said.

" Oh, that must sucks, I mean the guy is a good hero, but man, the guy turns evil in a heartbeat, causing us trouble at every turn, I still wonder why he does it though?" Spider Man wondered.

"... I wonder that too, heh heh." Sanae said with a nervous laugh.

" Well, there's nothing here so we should check out that Statue of Liberty, right?" Reimu said while keeping her eye on Sanae.

" Yeah... lets get going." Spider Man said as they began to walk out of the building.

*Meanwhile in London...*

Ziden, Alice and Marisa are seen sitting in an Office with that man in an red trench coat, a woman wearing a blue suit, and an old man

that looked like a butler. These people were Alucard, Integra Hellsing and Walter.

" And is that all you had to tell us, Ziden?" Integra asked.

" Yep... and I'm guessing you don't believe any of it, right?" Ziden asked.

" We believe your story about this Bomb, the Buckingham Palace was taken over by those men in blue cloaks and black creatures, also by creatures that seem to resemble large humanoid pigs." Integra listed out as Ziden raised an eyebrow.

" Pigs huh? Well at least after this we'll have enough pork for a B-B-Q." Ziden said as Alice sighed.

" Please stop talking, just... stop." Alice pleaded.

" Pig Cops, sounds like something Duke Nukem would've handled... before he got his brains blown out by the Punisher. Looks like the Bomb seems to be in the Buckingham Palace." Ziden said as he slammed his fist into his palm. " Oh yeah... since Alucard got me out of a bind in the past before, if you ever find yourself in a bind or getting ready for a war, you have my services to call on as well."

" I doubt we will ever get involved in a war but if it gets too badly, we will think off calling for your assistance." Integra said.

" Its weird, but how come you haven't flirted with Sir Integra yet, Ziden if you don't mind me asking?" Walter asked.

" Because he's hitched now, ze! He's even a father too!" Marisa said as the room went silent.

"... I'm sorry? Did she just say what I think she just said?" Integra asked.

" With my Vampiric Hearing, I heard her correctly, he's a married man now. I'd thought Hell would freeze over before you settled

down." Alucard said with a devilish smirk.

" Ah shut up. Hurry up and get your stuff ready Alucard, the night won't remain young forever, lets get going." Ziden said as he walked out of the room.

Marisa and Alice calmly bowed down to Integra and Walter as they walked out of the room.

" Its quite a surprise to be honest, to see such young girls fighting in a War to save their home." Walter said as Integra sighed.

" Indeed it is and it seems that not only is their home in danger, but so is this world and many others. Looks like those girls have alot on their plate to deal with." Integra said as she looked out her window.

Ziden and the others were now outside the mansion as they began their trek towards the Buckingham Palace.

Marisa and Alice were calmly walking behind Ziden and Alucard as they noticed that Ziden was looking around the streets alot as if sensing something.

" Looks like we've got company. Time for me to see what these Zealots can do!" Alucard exclaimed as he pulled out a large magnum like gun from his coat as his fangs were visible.

Several Aerotrooper Zealots appeared above them as they heard the sound of buzzing as they spotted four bee woman floating towards them.

" I'm surprised to see these creatures here, so he really is involved in this thing after all." Ziden said.

Those bee girls are known as Soul Bees, creatures that feast on the souls of humans.

" Don't let their stingers touch you Marisa, that's how they suck out a person's soul." Alice warned.

" Gotcha, ze! Lets get them!" Marisa exclaimed while leaping onto her broom.

*Meanwhile in Tokyo...*

" So... where is the Bomb Eirin?" Kaguya asked as Eirin sighed.

" I've already told you, its inside some creature known as Godzilla that is somewhere in Tokyo. Can you please stop asking me so much now?" Eirin asked as Kaguya sighed.

Bowser was calmly walking ehind them as he listened to the people speaking around them as he walked past them, they were mostly speaking of Kaguya's beauty and how realistic Bowser's costume was.

" Where the heck is this Godzilla creature!? I'm tired of walking around! I could use some meat right now!" Bowser yelled as Eirin sighed.

" Dear lord, I have such a headache right now. I so hope we find this Godzilla soon." Eirin said as everyone felt the ground beginning to shake as everyone around them began to disperse as Bowser ran forward.

Bowser walked forward into the large open space as he noticed that the area somehow turned dark around him.

Eirin and Kaguya were looking up and were completely shocked at the sheer size of the creature above them as its foot slammed down onto Bowser as the shockwave blasted the duo into the wall.

Godzilla seemed to be in some form in pain as it began to roar and claw at its stomach as it felt something moving around underneath him as Bowser began to grow to monstrous sizes as he threw Godzilla back as Eirin and Kaguya freed themselves from the wall and looked at the massive Godzilla.

" \*Sigh\* Looks like this one isn't going to be easy to deal with at all." Eirin said as she pulled out here bow.

*Meanwhile in Makai...*

" Te Answer is no, I like how the Bomb blends in with the room, so destroying it is out of the question." The woman in red said as the Armored man spoke up.

" Be wise about this Lady Shinki! If that Bomb goes off, it'll rip the soul out of every being in this part of the Demon World! Do you really want your children to die like that?!" The man asked as Shinki tapped her chin.

" Fine... destroy the Bomb but, don't expect to leave this place when you do, I have need of your skills at this time, Maid and Gardener, especially since I know you've been trained by the Icrim Boy." Shinki said as Youmu walked over to the large bomb and pulled out Roukanken and stabbed it into the bomb.

" So you aren't going to let us leave until this problem ends, do you?" Sakuya asked.

" Of course not, besides, even if Sir Arthur is here to help we can use some assistance... unless, you can get Ziden here, then I will let you leave." Shinki said as she twirled her hair around her finger.

" Well, when we get back, we can tell him of the predicament here." Sakuya said.

" Very well, you may leave Makai to obtain Ziden's assistance, but the Gardener shall stay behind to aid us until you return with aid." Shinki said as she opened a portal to the Hidden Resistance Base.

" Will you be alright until I return, Youmu?" Sakuya asked.

" Yes, I will be fine until you return with help." Youmu said as Sakuya nodded and walked through the portal.

*Meanwhile in London...*

Marisa and Alice were horrified at the blood bath that Alucard caused as Ziden was calmly hanging back while picking something out of his tooth.

" Dear lord, I might have nightmares about this later ze." Marisa said as she saw a Soul Bee's head rolling over to her.

" I didn't know that vampires were so blood thirsty and gory when it came to feeding." Alice said as Ziden placed his hands on her shoulder.

" That's only what Alucard is like, most vampires aren't this brutal most of the time... just the dumber ones that think they're invincible because they're Vampires." Ziden said as his hand left Alice's shoulder efore he found a lance at his throat.

" If that hand goes any lower, my dolls will turn you into a pincushion, do you understand that?" Alice asked as Ziden backed away.

" Jeez, it was just a joke Alice, besides, *there'd be nothing to touch anyway.* " Ziden said as Alice glared at him.

" I heard that." Alice said as she walked away from him as Shanghai kept her lance at his throat.

" You'll live, lets get going before Alucard gets back, he'd draw too much attention to us." Ziden said as he snapped his fingers as the girls found themselves standing outside the Buckingham Palace as they spotted several Cleric Zealots standing by large, hulking zealots wielding Massive blades.

" Those are Warrior Zealots, they can take alot of Damage and deal it as well." Ziden said as they spotted the Large Bomb glowing inside the lobby of the building as Marisa yelled and slapped Ziden.

" Why the hell did you slap me just now?!" Ziden asked while rubbing his face.

" You grabbed my butt you perv!" Marisa yelled as Ziden raised an eyebrow and so did Alice.

" No he didn't, he was nowhere near and I saw the both his hand near him." Alice said.

" Plus I don't touch little girls, so your lie just now failed epically." Ziden said as Marisa stomped her foot.

" I'm not little! I'm a grown 17 year old woman! I'm two years younger than you!" Marisa declared as Ziden shrugged.

" I still wouldn't touch ya kid, besides, Patchouli'll kill if you became a part of the harem and I don't want any of that." Ziden said as he hears a ringing from his pocket as he reached into it and pulled out a cell phone. " Hello? Oh, hey Silvia, I forgot you still had that cell phone I gave you when you were little."

" Marisa? Do you like Ziden?" Alice asked as Marisa shook her head.

" Nah, he's more a friend I'd like to have around for borrowing missions!" Marisa said while rubbing her nose as Ziden looked at her smiling.

The sound of glass breaking was heard as Ziden and Marisa heard the voice echoing in his head.

*" A new bond has been established between you, you have reached the First Rank of the Thief Social Link. Continue to forge your bond with her to increase your Star and Speed based attack with your Keyblades."* Marisa looked upset at the name of their Social Link.

" Gotcha, as much as I don't want to, that woman will come and drag me to Makai herself, I don't know why that woman creeps me out so



much. I'll see you back in Gensokyo, Sakuya...\*sigh\* yes, I love you too, kid." Ziden hanged up on Sakuya as Ziden looked at Marisa.

" What?" Marisa said as Ziden sighed.

" Never mind, lets go kick some ass and get back to Gensokyo, Reimu and the others already reached their bombs by now and I bet they're fighting off their foes right now." Ziden said as he walked towards the gates of the Buckingham Palace and kicked the gates off of the hinges as they flew towards a Cleric as they slammed through her body, slicing her in half right down the middle as Marisa and Alice cringed.

" That's gonna leave a mark ze!" Marisa said as the Warrior Zealots roars as they ran forward with their blue cloaks clambering behind them.

*Back in New York...*

The trio were fighting off a squad of Zealots extremely easily as Spider Man delivered a powerful jump kick into one of their faces, sending him flying out of the statue as Sanae blasted the Bomb apart with her powers as she sighed.

" Man, that was so easy, its disappointing really, oh well." Spider Man said as the portal opened up behind them.

" Oh! Spider-Man! Can you help out with our problems in Gensokyo? We promise you'll have fun." Sanae asked as Spider Man thought for a second.

" Why not? New York is being protected right now and I wouldn't mind seeing some Magical stuff right now. Dr. Strange did tell me I should broaden my horizons." Spider-Man said as he swung into the portal as Reimu and Sanae soon followed after them.

*Back in Tokyo...*

## **Clash of the Titans ( Mario and Luigi: Bowser's Inside Story)**

Bowser is seen crashing through a building as Godzilla was seen calmly walking towards Bowser as it noticed Eirin and Kaguya launching attacks at the massive creature as it looked down on them.

It seemed to be confused at seeing such human-like figures flying around him, but he remembered back when he was back in America when he fought those flying humans that tried to stop his rampage back in his olden days.

Godzilla opened his mouth and fired a pure blue beam at the duo as they barely dodged the beam as Kaguya felt a burning sensation on her side.

" It looks like our attacks are barely damaging the creatures, this creature hasn't felt anything we've hit him with. We may have to rely on Bowser to do any form of damage to it." Eirin said as Godzilla roared again as Bowser landed a punch on his face and sent the large beast flying back.

" Heh! So you're the King of Monsters huh?! Well there can only be one King in this Neighborhood!" Bowser declared as Godzilla calmly stomped over to his opponent.

Godzilla spun around and slammed his tail into Bowser's face, smashing him through a building as Eirin fired several arrows into Godzilla's eyes, angering him as he tried to use his Atomic Breath to hit Eirin out of the sky, only for her to fly past it as she felt the burning sensation that Kaguya felt..

" This creature! Its firing pure radiation at us! What the hell kind of creature is this!? Don't tell me Kanako had something to do with this creature!" Eirin wondered as Bowser grabbed Godzilla by his tail and threw him far over the buildings and launched him to an urban area as Eirin and Kaguya flew after them as Godzilla mentally smirked.

Godzilla got to his feet and stomped his feet as he noticed Eirin flying near Bowser's head and whispering something as he nodded and cracked his knuckles. Kaguya flew up to Godzilla, holding a Spell Card.

" You may have been able to withstand our normal Danmaku, but lets see you how handle a Spell Card!" Kaguya yelled as Godzilla's back spines began to light up.

" Kaguya! Get away from him!" Eirin flew over to Kaguya and grabbed her as she struggled to keep the Spell Card pointed at them.

Godzilla finished what he was planning and roared, releasing an inhumanely powerful shockwave that ripped from out of his body and blasted Kaguya and Eirin, ripping the flesh and muscle from their bodies, killing them instantly as their clothes were also destroyed by the attack as their bones fell to the ground below as Bowser and Godzilla stared at each other, gauging each other.

Both were large powerful reptiles that had impressive powers and durability on their parts. Both were feared in their worlds but Godzilla was a protector while Bowser was a tyrant and somewhat of a Destroyer... not a good one, but they both had one thought on their mind: Japan only had the need for one King.

Bowser quickly ran forward and slammed his fist into Godzilla's purple glowing stomach as Godzilla lurched forward as the purple glow began to move upwards until it reached his throat as Godzilla began to choke before he coughed it out of his body as the large purple bomb is seen flying into the distance.

" Huh? I should have caught that, shouldn't I have?" Bowser wondered.

" Yes, *Bowser, you should have.*" A female voice in his head said as he roared.

" Bah! Shut it Ran! What do you know?!" Bowser yelled, confusing Godzilla on why this creature was yelling to itself.

" *You're just mad that Lady Ran is smarter than you are!*" A younger voice said as Bowser growled.

" Quiet, cat girl! I'm the King of Awesomeness for a reason! Now watch as I smash this oversized knock off into a pulp!" Bowser said as he watched Godzilla leap into the air and fired his Atomic Ray onto Bowser, blasting him into the ground as he groaned. Godzilla grabbed Bowser by his tail and began to spun him around before launching him into the air and blasting him higher into the air with his Atomic Breath, knocking him out as Bowser fell to the ground, beaten and unconscious as Godzilla roared in victory.

*Back in London...*

" Hell Fire Cannon!"

" Love Sign: Master Spark!"

Alice is seen sweat dropping as Ziden and Marisa completely leveled the Buckingham Palace with their destructive attack as they saw the bomb being destroyed as they high fived.

Alucard is seen standing behind Alice with his fangs visible as he slowly descended to her neck, only for Ziden to throw a fire ball into his face, knocking him back.

" I told you to back off, they are with me!" Ziden said as Alucard smirked while pulling out his jackel.

" And why would that that matter to me? I'm hungry, so I'm going to eat, unless you think you can beat me boy." Alucard said while pointing the gun at Ziden.

" Heh! I'm game for kicking your sorry ass!" Ziden said as he stepped forward.

" Now now, you two need to calm down before things go baaaaaaaadly!" Alice was sucked into one of Yukari's Gaps as did Marisa as Ziden leapt over the one that was going to suck him into it as he threw a fiery blade at Alucard, piercing through his shoulder as he fired a shot that blasted Ziden's head clean off as a Gap appeared over him as Yukari's arms grabbed and yanked him into the Gap as Alucard jumped towards it, only for it to close before he could reach it.

" Tch! Looks like our fight has to be put on hold again, I can't wait to see that power of yours! Its not fun if you're weakened like you are now." Alucard said as he began to walk away, looking for someone to drink from and sate his endless hunger for blood.

Back in Gensokyo...

" Dammit Yukari! Why the hell did you do that?! I was about to throwdown with Alucard! Come on, man!" Ziden was complaining to Yukari while she completely blocking him out while piggybacking on his back.

" You would have lost that fight Ziden, you can fight him another time. For now we to bond some more as a couple!" Yukari said as Ziden groaned.

" Why won't you give up on this!? You know I have no form of romantic connection with you! What's the point?" Ziden asked as Yukari giggled.

" You know you have feelings for me, you just don't want to admit it. I know you better than anyone here." Yukari said as Ziden flinched. She is technically right about that.

" Why the hell did I come to Gensokyo back then? If I hadn't gone to it back then, you wouldn't have those feelings for me." Ziden said.

" No, even if you hadn't, I'd have fallen back on you as a spouse at some point, no doubt that Ran was against it, Yuyuko... she really

didn't seem to mind as long as she gets to baby you." Yukari explained as Ziden sighed.

" So... does this make you a creepy part of the Harem?" Ziden asked.

" No, as far as I'm concerned, I don't have any plans on sharing you with others, so you will be spending most of your days with me~!" Yukari said as Ziden sweatdropped.

" So... basically nothing changes except you try to sleep with me, right?" Yukari nodded. " Great, that's just wonderful, you even have a way to keep yourself higher up on the list than everyone else, good for you." Ziden said as Yukari rubbed her stomach.

" I almost forgot, you are aware of what Yuuka did to you when she knocked you out right?" Yukari asked.

" No... what the hell did she do to me?" Ziden asked.

"... Hmm, lets just say she had some unwanted fun with you while you were outcold and now she has a cake in the oven because of it." Yukari said as Ziden looked completely confused.

"... Wait! No! Why would she-!"

" We're Youkai Ziden. We don't exactly follow the morals that you humans follow, so what she did doesn't negatively affect her conscious one bit." Yukari explained.

" I swear, you Youkai are terrible when it comes to affection." Ziden said.

" Oh well, I did warn you that we Female Youkai are attracted to strong or sometimes weak men." Yukari said as Ziden sighed.

" Yeah, I remember, whatever... I guess we should get ready to go to Makai." Ziden said as Yukari nodded in agreement.

The sound of Glass Breaking was heard between the duo as a voice began to speak to them.

*" A new Bond has been established between you two. You have reached Rank 1 of the Boundary Social Link. You have learned the Teleport Rave technique for your Keyblade, make sure to visit the Velvet Room to purchase new attacks and Spells for your Keyblade, young hero."*

" Why does everyone keep calling me a Young Hero? I'm technically older than them!" Ziden pointed out as Yukari poked his cheeks.

" Physically though, you are only 19, just like how I'm only a very mature looking 17 year old!" Yukari joked as Ziden grimaced.

" Ready for Makai, grandma?" Ziden asked as Yukari faked a smile.

" Of course I am, I hope you can keep up with me." Yukari said as she fell off of his back and yanked Ziden into a Gap as they landed in the Infirmary with the duo landing on the bed as Reisen was scared by their sudden appearance.

" So who should we take with us? I can't believe that Shinki would drag me into this little war that her children and not children are having." Ziden said as Yukari thought for a second.

" Oh! I'll pick the right people for this job!" Yukari said as she opened several Gaps as several people fell out of them.

" Lets see here, you picked Reimu, Alice, Marisa, Yuuka, Yuugi, Suika, Komachi, Aya, Remilia, Patchouli, Flandre, Meiling, Mokou and Dante, this is alot of people you picked." Ziden said.

" So we get to visit Makai right? This will be fun." Reimu said as she stretched.

" Yeah, don't care to explain what's happening so into the Demon World we go." Ziden slammed his hands together as a bright purple

light blinded everyone as Reisen saw that everyone was gone.

" \*Sigh\* I swear, that was weird, at least I only have to take care of Sora right now! I can take a small nap right now!" Reisen happily said as she crawled into one of the beds and covered up.

*Fun Facts:*

*1. Yeah, I involved the Percy Jackson in this Universe because it makes it easier to give the Olympian gods easier designs without falling onto God of War.*

*2. The Salvation Bombs don't have a set design and there is a reason why they don't get explained on how they look, the final one will pull some Nostalgia bones in Megaman Fans!*

*3. It should be known that Yukari is terrible mother when it comes to Ziden, I mean, you raise him from a baby and then you plot to make him your husband in the future... damn that is sick and twisted, its like some weird kind of Anime that goes horribly wrong!*

*4. Did you honestly expect Bowser, Eirin and Kaguya to stand a chance against the Legendary King of Monsters himself, come now, don't be so surprised, it was to be expected. The fact that Kaguya and Eirin were killed by him was just a side effect of messing with him.*

*Author's Note: Yay, new chapter! Good for me getting this done. Yadda yadda, we're going in the Demon World Arc, which is only going to be like 2 chaps until we get into the Gensokyo Finale Arc which is BIG and will reveal and shock the crap out of everyone. Leave a Review for me you kind people! See ya around!*



## Jedah Dohma appears, War for Makai!

Darklight: Alright. Sora is only going to getting Personas from the SMT series, Sora will not get Miko Hakurei. Ziden won't be surprised by it but the others will be, Kaguya and the others aren't going to be happy about Alice. I hav no planes in adding Shinki to the plot nor do i plan on adding any other char until a certain Smasher's world. Gotta go fast guys!

---

Everyone looked tense as they watched as Ziden was standing in front of Shinki with several Shortswords pointed at his neck by a woman wearing as Maid uniform as Sakuya was holding a knife to her throat.

" Enough, Yumeko. I'll not have you pointing your blade at our valued guest." Shinki ordered as Yumeko glared at Ziden.

" I'm watching you, Demon Hunter. Try anything to harm the innocents of this land, and I'll take you down myself." Yumeko said as she lowered her swords.

" Whatever, lady, hows it hanging Shinki? Made any more Demons since I last came here?" Ziden asked as Shinki shook her head.

" Nope, I haven't created any demons in a while now, kinda grown bored of doing so since they just pop up out of nowhere nowadays. \* Sighs\* makes me wish I had a King to help me rule over Makai more effectively." Shinki said as Ziden sighed.

" Wait? You want Ziden as a king for this place? You want a 'Demon Hunter' and a Psychopath like Ziden to be your King?" Reimu asked as everyone looked to Shinki.

" How the hell do I qualify as a King and how in the hell am I Psychopathic!?" Ziden asked.

" Well there's the whole deal with you always fighting with Sparda in the old days. You were obsessed with beating him and you still are." Yukari explained.

" Oh? How is my little Sparda doing these days anyway?" Shinki asked.

" Eh? Well he's kinda dead unfortunately." Dante said as he stepped forward.

" What do you mean by that? Were you and Sparda having some kind of casual fling back then?" Ziden asked.

" No! Sparda is one of the very first demons I created when I was younger, along with my eldest child, Mundy." Shinki said as Ziden and Dante both looked to each other.

" Ziden... did I just hear her right?" Dante asked.

" Well, Shinki did make Makai so it wouldn't surprise me." Ziden said.

" So mother created this Sparda and Mundy char as well. That is news to me as well." Alice said as Yukari remembered something.

" Oh my! I knew I forgot someone!" Yukari calmly opened a Gap and yanked Byakuren and Vergil through it as Ziden and Reimu began to put two and two together.

" Wait a sec, if Shinki created Sparda and Sparda went off to create both Dante and Vergil... wouldn't that technically make Shinki their grandmother by logic's standpoint." Ziden said as Vergil looked confused.

Shinki looked at Dante and later Vergil as she quickly grabbed Dante into a back breaking hug as he struggled to break free.

" Oh myself! I can't believe Sparda gave me such handsome grandchildren! Oh happy days!" Shinki said as she spun Dante around as Ziden facepalmed.

" Excuse me, but shouldn't we be talking about this invasion going on in Makai right?" Patchouli interrupted as Shinki nodded.

Dante was released from her grip as he rolled back next to Vergil and began to speak to him.

" Well, right now we're currently being attacked by a large army of demons and what appear to be humans in cloaks and white creatures." Yumeko said as Ziden sighed.

" Can you tell us about these demons then?" Byakuren asked.

" Well, from our reports, there are three Demon Commanders, we don't know their names but we know that they are very powerful Demons, all ranking as S-Class Demons." Yumeko added as Ziden and Dante raised an eyebrow.

" Please tell us what these demons look like so we know what to look out for." Vergil asked as Yumeko nodded.

" One of the demons is a large Behemoth wearing a large red jacket, had large orange eyes and a blueish beard and had another face on his stomach." Arthur clenched his fist on that description. " Another was a large brown demon wearing various golden armor pieces and had a large golden scepter that rained lightning down onto our forces." Ziden and Sakuya paled at that description. " And the last one was a mysterious looking demon wearing all blue and he appeared to have had long nails and scythe like wings."

" That last one sounds like Jedah Dohma, this ain't going to be easy for us to deal with." Dante said.

" Why? Is this guy powerful?" Yuugi asked.

" More than that, he's dangerous beyond belief... if you encounter Jedah, don't fight him, run." Dante warned.

" Like hell I will! I'm an Oni, I don't run from fights." Yuugi said.

"Jedah is probably going to be one of the Strongest beings we face on this journey, don't attempt to fight him alone, or you will die." Ziden said as Yuugi walked up to him.

"Are you telling me that you think that he's too much for an Oni like me to handle by myself?" Yuugi asked as Yukari appeared next to her.

"He's right, I've seen what Jedah can do and he is far too powerful for most of us to handle, hell, with Ziden's level of strength right now, he's no match for Jedah at all." Yukari pointed out.

"So basically, you see Jedah, don't fight him alone without someone like Dante or Vergil with you, it'll end badly for you if you don't." Ziden warned as Yuugi huffed.

"Any thing else we should know about?" Reimu asked.

"Not really, they have a lot of demons attacking us at the moment, they're currently attacking the castle we recently built to house several of the younger and weaker demons from the war, but the enemies decided to attack us anyway." Shinki said.

"I'm electing to send at least five of you to clear out this town and keep those demons safe." Yukari said.

"I'm going." Yuugi said as Ziden stepped up as well.

"I would like to go as well." Youmu said.

"Hmph, I shall help as well." Vergil said.

"I may as well come to make sure Ziden doesn't do anything overly stupid." Sakuya said as Ziden growled.

"Jeez! What am I, a freaking child?" Ziden asked.

"You do act like one sometimes, I should know." Mokou said while smirking.

" Oh shove it Mokou! Whatever! Keep up if you can!" Ziden said as he dashed forward, kicking up a whirlwind that blasted everyone around the room as Youmu and Vergil dashed after him with Yuugi and Sakuya flying after them.

" Tch! I know one thing; The Scarlet Devil doesn't back out from a fight! Me and Flandre will handle this Jedah Dohma and crush him with ease!" Remilia declared as Flandre nodded with him.

*Back in Japan...*

" Grr... can't believe those two made me do this!" Bowser said as he walked down the dirt road until he found a bush as Kaguya's head peeked out of the bushes.

" Did you get us some clothes to wear?" Kaguya asked.

" Yes..."

" The underwear too right?" Kaguya asked again.

" Yes!" Bowser quickly threw the bag of clothes into the bush as he calmly walked away from the women as they quickly began to get dressed. " Can't believe they even made me buy underwear for them! Bah!"

Kaguya and Eirin soon came out of the bushes as they were wearing new clothing.

Eirin was now wearing a red and blue blouse top similar to her regular clothing, she also had on a long navy blue dress skirt that covered her legs as she struggled with her blue high heels. " I don't see how Earthling women can wear such uncomfortable shoes? Gah and this blouse top shows off too much of my chest, this is very uncomfortable." Eirin complained as Bowser growled.

Kaguya was also wearing a blouse top but this one was pink with golden tree branches scattered across the blouse top but her skirt

was much shorter than Eirin's, barely reach her knees as she felt embarrassed wearing them. She had simple slip on shoes that were very comfortable for her to wear. " Do women in the Outside world really dress this freely? If a strong wind comes by, my underwear will be visible for everyone to see! Why didn't you get me something like Eirin's skirt!?" Kaguya asked while stomping her foot.

" Bah! You told me to buy you clothes! I bought you clothes with the money you gave me! Don't complain, live with it Princess!" Bowser said as Kaguya's face started to turn red before she began to storm off.

" Please tell me you saw where that Bomb flew off to?" Eirin asked as Bowser pointed to the small town in the distance.

" It fell somewhere into the woods over there in that town. Looks like we get to walk through public again, hurray." Bowser said as they began to walk down the road with Eirin walking next to him with her bow wrapped around her.

Kaguya was still walking ahead of the group as she glanced down to the ring on her hand that she received from Ziden's mother as a gift for their marriage as she happily sighed to herself as she slowed down. " I hope Ziden isn't too worried about me not coming back to his side yet, I bet he's missing my wonderful company right now!" Kaguya said as both Eirin and Bowser sweatdropped.

*Back in Makai...*

A large fireball is seen crashing into the ground, blasting away several Zealots as Ziden is seen walking out of the crater as he was holding Fafnir in his hand. " Time to give this Devil Arm a workout. Lets play you freaks!" Ziden yelled as electricity course through his spear.

**Night of Fate ( Kingdom Hearts HD 1.5 Remix)**

Ziden noticed he was surrounded by a large swarm of normal zealots as he raised an eyebrow. " I guess I'm about to go Dynasty Warriors on these assholes! Come on! Time to take back this territory!" Ziden yelled as he thrust his spear forward, striking multiple people in the group as he began to follow up with faster strikes, catching more of enemies as blood began to rain down on the battlefield as he ended his assault by leaping into the air and firing down lightning bolts, blasting Zealots all over the place as he noticed that a Gap was hovering over his shoulder.

Ziden ducked a sword swing over his head as he stabbed the Zealot through the chest and raised him high into the air as the other Zealots backed away. " Extreme Defib Shock!" Lightning channeled through the spear, frying the Zealot's heart and body as Ziden launched the Zealot at the group of them as the body exploding into chunks and lightning bolts as they tore the Zealots apart around them as several of them dropped their blade and cowered on the ground.

" Ziden! Can you hear me?" Ziden heard Shinki's voice as he switched weapons to his dual katana as he began to run off in a random direction.

" What do you want?" Ziden asked as he quickly slashed through several Zealots.

" Some of our Soldiers, Yuki and Mai are being overrun by those Zealots in the Northwest Garrison! Out of everyone on the Battlefield, you're the closest to them, Youmu and Vergil are en route to their location as well! Please help my children before they get overrun!" Shinki pleaded as Ziden sighed.

" I'm on my way!" Ziden increased his speed and dashed his way towards the Northwest Garrison.

There were two girls standing in the Garrison surrounded by Zealots as they both fell on their rears, tired from the fighting. One of them was a blonde girl wearing a black hat that looked alot like Marisa and

the other girl was a blue haired girl with light blue eyes. They were Yuki and Mai.

" Lets finish these freaks off! For the sake of Lord Ultima-gack!" The Zealot soon looked down to see a silver blade piercing through his chest before it moved diagonally downwards, slicing him in half as Vergil swung his blade down, getting the blood off of his blade as the other Zealots backed away.

" Eh? Who are you?" Yuki asked as sh watched Vergil spin his blade.

" Your mother sent me to this location to help you out, I expected Ziden to be here by now but I guess I expected to much from that weakling." Vergil said as a burst of wind appeared behind him as Youmu was seen holding her two blades.

" Perhaps he encountered some kind of problem on his way here?" Youmu wondered.

" If by Ziden, you mean the Demon Hunter one, then he probably got lost, I hear he's bad with compass directions." Mai said as Youmu sweatdropped.

" Idiot." Vergil said as he swung his blade and created a large orb of wind blades that tore the Zealots apart as Youmu leapt into the fray, slicing through the Zealots with her blades as Yuki and Mai watched as the two newcomers tore the Zealots massive numbers with pure ease.

" Shall we join the fray, sister?" Yuki asked.

" Yes, we shall. Kill them all!" Mai said as she charged forward into the fray as well.

Ziden found himself outside the Northeastern Garrison as he dove inside, only to see Yuugi and Sakuya devastating the enemies inside the fort as Ziden entered it as she mentally facepalmed.



" Got lost didn't you?" Sakuya asked.

" No I didn't! I meant to come this!" Ziden said trying to cover up his fail.

" Guys! A large demon is heading your way! It must be the Leader for these Zealots here!" Arthur yelled through the portal as Ziden looked confused.

" I don't sense anything coming at us, do you sense anything dangerous nearby, Yuugi?" Ziden asked as he kicked a Zealot to the ground and summoning a flaming spike to impale the downed Zealot.

" No, other than these Zealots, I don't sense anything trying to kill us!" Yuugi answered back as Ziden shrugged.

" Hmm? Was that large statue always there?" Sakuya asked as she pointed to the statue blocking the exit to the garrison.

" No and its creeping me out. Seriously Shinki, why would you make such fugly looking statues, man?" Ziden asked.

" Those aren't mine, I don't remember ever making a statue like that and placing it in the garrisons." Shinki said as Ziden felt a chill run down his spine.

" Why do I feel like I'm about to die a 1000 times until I win?" Ziden wondered.

" Indeed! Something about that statue rubs me the wrong... wait! That's no statue! That's-" Arthur was interrupted by the sound of stone breaking as Ziden and the others looked at the massive demon that was standing over them.

The demon was wearing large silver armor all over its body, minus its feet and hands which were green and had sharp claws on them. Most notable was the fact the demon was headless and was holding

the head in its right hand. The head was green with a large eye, orange hair and fanged filled mouth.

"-One hell of a big demon, I tell ya what." Ziden said as he placed Nosada on his shoulder.

" Heh! It doesn't matter! The bigger they are, the harder they fall!" Yuugi yelled as she slammed her fist into her hand.

" Be careful! That demon is a Shielder! Those things are no joke! They gave us quite the trouble during that X Zone Incident!" Arthur warned as Ziden raised an eyebrow.

" Whatever! I've taken down bigger and badder! Bring it on ugly! I'll show you how a Demon Hunter throws down in a fight!" Ziden yelled while cracking his neck.

" Hmm? There's another one in the other Garrison fighting Youmu and the others! Looks like they planned on you guys coming to aid Yuki and Mai! Take care of those Shielders and get back here!" Yukari ordered as Ziden sighed.

### **Ghost's N' Goblins ( Project X Zone)**

Ziden jumped towards the massive Shielder and delivered a powerful slash across his chest, forcing the demon to stumble backwards as Yuugi followed up with a powerful punch to the chest that launched him backwards as Sakuya dashed past the duo and threw several knives into the throat of the massive demon as it stomped down onto the nearby Zealots as it pointed its head at the group.

" Gwoar!" Shielder sprayed a stream of fire at the group as Ziden casually pointed his hand at the flames as they began to enter his hand as Ziden grabbed Yuugi and threw her towards Shielder as she slammed her feet onto his chest, forcing him on his back as Yuugi began to rapidly slam her fist into his chest as the ground began to quake from her impacts as Sakuya landed next to him as Yuugi egen

to smash to smash the Demon harder as Ziden and Sakuya seemed concerned.

Soon the sounds of a fist hitting metal soon turned to the viscious sounds of flesh being being smashed and torn as the Shielder's life ceased as Ziden jumped onto the Shielder's corpse and grabbed her by her shoulder.

" Calm down Yuugi! Its already dead!" Ziden said as only for Yuugi to spin around as nearly hit him with her fist. " The hell is your problem, man!?"

" My problem is the fact that you think I'm too weak to fight this Jedah char! I'm an Oni, the very embodiment of strength and you say I'm too weak to fight some demon I've never heard of before! That's like spitting on my pride Ziden!" Yuugi yelled as she poked Ziden in the chest.

" Seriously? Its not that you're too weak, its just that... uh... Jedah's kind of a slimy sort, a tricky person to fight and won't hesitate to kill you... plus you are kinda easily tricked." Ziden said while running his hand through his hair as Sakuya began to mentally panic.

" Oh? And what do you mean by that Ziden?" Yuugi asked as Ziden felt a sense of danger coming from here.

" Well there's the fact that you bought that lie about Dante being my bodyguard so I wouldn't have to fight you." Ziden simply said as Yuugi sharply frowned.

Yuugi calmly walked over to Ziden and placed her hand on his shoulder as he felt a surge of murderous intent coming from Yuugi. " Ziden, even if you are my husband, you should know, we Oni detest lies and its not wise to lie to one." Yuugi said as her grip tightened onto Ziden's shoulder as she pulled her other fist back.

" Ziden! Ya better clench those teeth, ze!" Marisa warned as Ziden was confused.

" Wait what?" Ziden asked as Yuugi's fist slammed into Ziden's face, completely shattering his face and jaw as he seen flying into the ground, creating a shockwave that blasted everyone away that wasn't the heroes.

Vergil and Youmu were dashing around the massive demon as it struggled to keep up with the duo. Vergil quickly leapt into the air and swung his blade downwards slicing the demon in half as they heard the loud crash as the Zealots went into full panic and began to retreat in sheer terror as Vergil sheathed his blade.

" That was an easy first mission." Youmu said as she wiped the blood from her blades.

"... Whatever, I'm heading back to the castle." Vergil said as he began to walk back to the castle.

Ziden had finished crawling out of the massive crater that was made from Yuugi's hitting him in the face as Yuugi is seen standing over him before she dragged him out and draped him across her back. They both heard the sound of glass breaking as Ziden knew what to expect next.

*" A new bond has been established between you two. You have reached the first Rank of the Strength Social Rank. Continue to strengthen this bond to learn Earth based attacks and Spells for your keyblade. Increase the love between you two and learn to curb thine lies, young hero."* The voice said as Ziden sighed.

" Hate that voice, he angers because he treats me like a kid." Ziden said as Yuugi chuckled as she flew back to the castle.

" You are a child mentally. Doesn't take a genius to see that." Yuugi said as they entered the throne room as she dropped him onto the crystal floor as they saw Remilia and Flandre on the ground, bloodied and broken as they a demon cloaked in blue floating over them.

" Jedah Dohma, never thought I'd see your damn face again." Ziden said as Jedah quickly appeared and grabbed him by the neck.

" My my, it looks like your soul is as powerful as ever, it will be worth my while to take it from you while I'm here. Besides, my traitorous comrades have stopped their assault on this place so I have no need to stay here." Jedah explained as he placed his nails into Ziden's chest.

" Good luck with that, you'll find that getting my soul is harder than it seems." Ziden said as Jedah's nails plunged into his chest as Yuugi charged at him and slammed her fist into Jedah's face, only for him to not feel it at all. Something began to pump into Ziden's body as his chest began to grow bigger as he soon exploded into a mist of blood, ending his life as Jedah Dohma grabbed that one puff that is Ziden's soul as Patchouli quickly fired several saw blades at Jedah, only for him to block the attack with his hand.

" Hmm. That was far too easy, even for his weakened state. Where are you, slayer of Overlord Oscura?" Jedah calmly asked as Yuugi jumped back as Ziden slammed a fiery kick that whipped up an explosion that blasted everyone back as Ziden back flipped away from Jedah as he looked unfazed by that attack.

" Damn, looks like even that sneak attack didn't work. Man, being weakened is a pain." Ziden said as Jedah smiled.

" Do not worry, I have no plans on continuing this farce of a fight, I have some things to attend, I shall allow the Heartless to continue the takeover of this kingdom." Jedah said as he performed his trademark insane laugh as he disappeared from sight.

" So the demon generals left his side? That's good for us, but I bet with how things work out, we'll encounter them somewhere down the line." Dante said as Komachi walked over to Ziden and jabbed him in the head with her scythe.

" That was incredibly reckless, you know! I thought you died from that!" Komachi said as Ziden fell on his rear.

" Almost died though, it hurts like hell even now. So now its gone from ' Defeat the Demon Generals' to ' Find and Defeat the Heartless General'." Ziden said as he summoned his keyblade, the Phantom Blaze.

" What makes you so sure that these Heartless have a general?" Yukari asked.

" Seems like something a smart person do rather than releasing a bunch of Heartless everywhere." Ziden said as he scratched his back with the keyblade.

" Ziden, that's not cool, ze! You can't just use a Magical Artifact as a backscratcher!" Marisa yelled as Ziden shrugged.

" Whatever, so we just have to figure out where the Head Heartless is and take it out before head back to the base. I'm craving some me time." Ziden said as Komachi and Mokou sighed in unison.

" Which means you're just going to take a nap!" Mokou and Komachi yelled in unison as Ziden shrugged again.

" At least that demon invasion has been halted temporarily, now we have to worry about the Heartless now. I wonder if they plan on attacking us in force or attacking somewhere else." Byakuren wondered.

" Meh, where would they attack that would cause any form of damage to this place?" Suika asked.

" No idea, its been ages since I last was here, so where would the Heartless strike first?" Yuuka wondered as everyone thought for a second.

" Well, I can scour my realm as you all heal up from the horrid encounter we had with Jedah." Shinki said as Ziden looked at the injured form of Remilia and Flandre as Yumeko and Sakuya helped the fallen girls to their feet as their wounds began to heal.

Ziden decided to sit down on the ground and crossed his legs while resting his head on his hand while tapping his fingers on his knee as Byakuren sat next to him.

Mokou felt someone tapping on the shoulder as she spots Meiling, Patchouli and Aya standing behind her. " Yeah, you need something?" Mokou asked.

" Um, we were kind of wondering... um..." Meiling was having trouble asking whatever it was she needed to ask as Patchouli sighed.

" We want to ask you about the process of Child Birth and Child Care as well as the difficulties of pregnancy. We are in this together after all, so you could give us some tips." Patchouli asked as Mokou's face turned red.

" Why the hell are you asking me about this!? All I know is, it hurts, I couldn't do any of the things I like to do in my free time! According to Ziden, weird cravings and extremely irrational mood swings. That's really it, if you want to know anything else, ask Keine or the doc when she gets back." Mokou explained as Aya sighed.

" Goddamn it, now the other girls want kids now, I'm seriously hating this Harem now." Ziden said as Byakuren smiled.

" But knowing you, you honestly don't care and will continue to care for each of them, won't you?" Byakuren asked.

" I have to, I may be a jerk, but I'm not a dirtbag or scumbag to my wives or loved ones... well maybe not that latter one, I know I'm no dirtbag at least." Ziden said as he is unaware of Flandre lying her head on his shoulder.

" Big bro... I'm thirsty." Flandre whined as Ziden simply pointed to his neck.

" Go ahead and drink then, I'll allow you to drink from me." Ziden said as Flandre looked confused.

" Um... how do I drink from you?" Flandre asked as Ziden looked even more confused as Remilia stumbled over to him.

" Remilia... why doesn't your sister know how to feed properly or in a better sense, at all?" Ziden asked.

" That's... because... I never taught her how to." Remilia said as Ziden raised an eyebrow. " Well, I tried but she'd always use her powers on the humans she tried to feed on, leaving no blood behind. Of course there is some body parts left behind after it."

" Her power?" Ziden asked.

" Flandre's power is one of Destruction, meaning she can destroy anything as long as that object has an eye or core. Its a truly frightening power." Yukari explained as Ziden looked back to Flandre.

" I see... and have you tried to train her with her powers?" Ziden asked as Remilia shook her head.

" No... her power frightened me to the point of me placing her within the basement for some time." Remilia said as Ziden looked down.

" Her power frightened you... so you kept her locked away." Ziden said as he seemed to be thinking about something.

"..." Remilia remained silent.

" Meh, well now that's she out now, we might start training her on how to feed and how to control her powers right?" Ziden asked as Remilia hesitantly nodded. " Alright, Flandre, bite my on the neck, right here." Ziden pointed a vein on his neck as Flandre opened her mouth and bit Ziden hard on the vein with her fangs.



" Okay, now Flandre, start sucking up the blood and don't stop until you feel yourself becoming full." Remilia said as Flandre began to suck harder as more blood flowed into her mouth as Ziden scratched his nose.

" Doesn't that hurt Ziden?" Byakuren asked.

" It tickles at most, felt much worse than in my line of work." Ziden said as Flandre removed her fangs from Ziden's neck as his wound healed instantly.

" Wipe your mouth Flandre, it looks unsightly." Remilia said as Flandre took the back of her hand and brought it to her mouth. " Ah! No! Use a Napkin like a dignified woman!"

Flandre rolled her eyes as she saw Ziden holding a napkin as she took it from him and wiped her mouth as she smiled. " Thanks big bro!" Flandre said as Ziden waved his hand at her.

" Uh, Ziden, you do know what your blood does to vampires, right?" Yukari asked as Ziden nodded.

" Yeah, she's going to go through the same thing as her sister did, just across a longer span of time." Ziden said.

" Hey Ziden, I'm thirsty too, you know?" Remilia said as Ziden shrugged.

" Go ahead, kiddo. I don't care." Ziden said as the castle shook violently.

" The hell was that?" Yuuka asked as Ziden quickly sliced his arm with a fiery claw as he quickly poured blood into Remilia's mouth as she quickly lapped it up as he ran off to the source to the shaking with Komachi and Reimu not far behind him.

They ran into a large courtyard like area as they see a large pool of darkness forming as they spot a large dark humanoid standing in the

middle of it as they spot Aya taking Pictures of the beast.

" I know that thing! ITs that Darkside we fought outside the Temple with Reiji!" Reimu yelled as the Darkside roared in anger.

" Time to give this new Keyblade a Workout. Lets take this thing down a notch." Ziden said as he spun his keyblade and placed it on his shoulder.

" Its been awhile since we last fought together Ziden, hope you don't hold me back too much in your weakened state." Komachi said as Reimu rolled her eyes.

" Save the love talk for later, we got a fight on our hands!" Reimu yelled as Darkside raised its fist into the air as several Dark Balls spawned around them.

*Elsewhere in Makai...*

Ruler 9 is seen talking to a large electrical ball as it began to laugh. " I am free at last! Now I shall destroy all that oppose me! Mother shall rue the day she sealed me away!" The electric being said as Ruler 9 smirked to himself.

" I shall soon see what these Illusionary Heroes can do, it shall be entertaining to see Sora's new love interest becoming a Heartless." Ruler 9 said as darkness gathered behind him.

*Fun Facts:*

*1. The whole fight in the Town is a reference to the Dynasty Warrior style games and trust me, its not the last time you'll see it.*

*2. According to what Shinki said, she is technically Dante and Vergil's grandma but not really since they aren't related by blood, more like a step-grandma. Make of that as you will.*

*3. Yes, Jedah Dohma just curbstomped Remilia and Flandre, reason why? Far Faster, far stronger, far smarter and far skilled. Need any*

*more reasons? He killed a Planet Buster without even fighting him.*

*4 Those demons will appear later down the line in a Not-so-filler arc after Gensokyo's done with.*

*Author's note:... See you next chapter, leave a review, yadda yadda, I'm going to take me a lava bath ~ Ziden Icrim, 2014.*

## Pokemon in Gensokyo? Far out!

**Darklight:** Sora and Reimu haven't officially started dating yet, so her mother wouldn't have much to say. I will always do a Combo Attack with chars, just wait until the next chap, Youmu does one that makes the previous ones look weak by destructive comparison. Meh, I have a set schedule for uploading and working, so I'm not really offended. Touhou Fanfics really don't get that much reviews and since my story is my first one... I've got more than I expected to get so I'm good. Sora will only get the more child-like demons like Jack Frost, Pixie etc. Besides, Ziden would kill Sora if he summoned Lucifer. It grows stronger the more Sora uses it so it does level up and they do use combo attacks. I'm good on combo attacks but PM me it and I'll see what I can do with it. Dark Ziden already exists but is not Persona related and he is a major dirtbag.

---

"Are we there yet?" Kaguya asked as Bowser and Eirin both sighed.

"No."

"Are we there yet?"

"No."

"Are you there yet?"

"Goddamnit! Stop asking!" Bowser yelled as Kaguya sighed.

"But we've been walking to that town for a few hours now! Why can't we just fly there?!" Kaguya whined.

"Because we don't want to draw unwanted attention to ourselves, Princess which is why we're walking to this Gas Station on foot." Eirin said as Kaguya looked at the Gas Station.

" Finally! I can take a break! I'm tired of walking!" Kaguya said as she ran towards the Gas Station as she looked at the name of the place.  
" Moel Gas Station? This is where they fuel up those horseless carriages, right Eirin?"

" Yes Princess, but please call them cars so you don't attract attention to yourself." Eirin said as Kaguya sat down next to a Gas Pump as Eirin sat down next to her while Bowser simply remained standing before falling onto the ground face first.

" I hate this, I get beat up by some knock off of me, have to buy women's clothing for you two, and now I'm tired! I always get the short end of the stick!" Bowser yelled as he sighed.

Eirin and Kaguya began to block Bowser as they noticed that someone was walking towards them.

" Whom would have thought that I would see two Impure beings here in Inaba." Kaguya and Eirin both flinched when they were called that as they spotted the Gas Station Attendant walking towards them.

" Who are you calling Impure!? You're the Impure one here!" Kaguya argued.

" Am I now? I exist within the Cycle of Death as its Goddess, while you Impure beings exist outside of it." The woman said as Kaguya quickly swallowed hard.

" So that means... you're Izanami, the Goddess of Death." Eirin realized as Bowser continued to drone on, completely ignoring what was happening behind him.

" You Lunarians escaped my hold on you humans by escaping to the moon because you feared Death so greatly but now, you've come back to Earth, I could kill you both right now, but I sense that one of you made a bond with someone dangerous and a person that I will take vengeance upon one day." Izanami said as she glared at the duo.

"..."

"..." Kaguya and Eirin remained silent as Izanami simply smiled.

" No comments on how you Lunarians are superior to the humans on Earth, how you are more pure than the humans on Earth? How laughable, at least the humans on Earth accept Death into their lives and go through Life with their heads held high and don't try to cheat Death like you creatures do. Hurry up and leave this place before I decide to take your souls now." Izanami said as the duo quickly got up and quickly ran off as she looked down at Bowser whom was still talking. " Such a strange creature, death seems to have no hold on this one. Strange." Izanami said as Bowser noticed Kaguya and Eirin running off into the distance before he got up.

" Hey! Wait for me you jerks!" Bowser ran after the duo as Izanami watched the duo leave in the distance as she walked back into the Gas Station.

*Meanwhile in Makai...*

Ziden and Reimu are seen backflipping backwards to avoid darkness covered fist slamming into the ground as Darkside teleported away and reappeared behind Komachi and brought his fist down onto Komachi, only to see that his fist was nowhere near her as Ziden leapt into the air and slashed his hand with the Keyblade as several blue burning skulls came out from the impact as Reimu dropkicked the other hand of the Heartless as it teleported back to its original spot.

" Something's weird with this Heartless. It never moved around like this when we fought it outside the temple." Reimu said as Ziden landed next to her.

" Maybe it learned a new trick? Also, I know you have a keyblade, why aren't you using it?" Ziden asked as Reimu summoned her keyblade.

It had a circular guard that stylized after the Yin Yang Orb and the blade was a bright pinkish red color, matching her color scheme and the teeth of her keyblade were her amulets.

" Its called the Hakurei's Destiny apparently, I don't really like using a weapon, or magic all that much anyway." Reimu said as she desummoned the keyblade.

" You should still use it, it is a weapon that can defeat the Heartless and we are fighting a large Heartless, use it." Ziden said as Reimu rolled her eyes.

" Whatever, I'll use it for now, I wonder if it'll work like my Gohei." Reimu wondered as the Darkside roared and transform into a ball of darkness which began become wrapped in purple tendrils.

" That's not a good sign! I think its evolving or something!" Aya yelled as Yukari appeared from a nearby bush as Alice and Marisa leapt through a window with Byakuren flying after them.

" Looks we've got some back for this fight. This thing may just become some kind of hellish being." Ziden said as a large fist punched through the cocoon and they looked upon the transformed Heartless.

It was a large black humanoid, just like the the Dark Side before, except for the fact that it had actual muscular legs with talon like feet. It had the same heart shaped hole in his chest. Its head and neck was the most shocking change, its head was more bestial and had a jagged mouth and its hair was parted revealing two large horns on its head as a large red scarf was wrapped around its neck with four large snake like creatures flowing with it.

" Damn! Talk about a drastic change! The hell is this thing!?" Ziden asked as he felt something plop down on his head.

Everyone spotted Daiyousei on Ziden's head as she looked confused on where she was before she focused on the enemy in

front of her.

" That is the Abysmal Devil, a pureblood Heartless that was transformed from a Dark Side when it was exposed to powerful amounts of darkness from an unknown source, it has the ability to shift itself between dimensions and can cause a lot of damage its lightning fast punches and kicks." Daiyousei explained as Ziden gripped his keyblade.

" Now the true battle begins now right?" Ziden asked.

" No, young hero, it starts now!" Everyone looked up to see Ruler 9 floating down towards them as Ziden and Reimu raised an eyebrow.

" Who are you supposed to be, ze?" Marisa asked as the man landed on the ground.

" Did Sora not tell you stories on how he stopped me from destroying all the worlds and obtaining the powers of Kingdom Hearts?" Ruler 9 asked as everyone looked at each other.

" Wait a second... then that makes you that Ansem fellow right?" Yukari asked as Ansem smirked.

" Correct, but don't worry, I'm not here to fight you, I'm only here to observe the strength of Sora's new romantic interest." Ansem said as Reimu scowled at him.

" So you created this Heartless then?" Alice asked as her dolls hovered around her.

" Indeed I did and I also freed a Demon that was imprisoned here and allowed it to go Gensokyo to have some fun." Ansem said as Yukari glared at the man standing across from them.

" I'll make all of you Cultists pay for attacking our home!" Yukari swore as Ansem smiled.



" Sorry to say but I'm not a member of the Ultima Brigade, I am a Scion of Oscura, the Overlord of Creeping Darkness." Ansem corrected as Ziden clicked his teeth.

" Scion of Oscura, that's what you guys are calling yourselves now?" Ziden asked.

" Indeed, Lady Rumia coined the term when she came back with us and she plans to take her revenge on you guys very soon." Ansem said as a portal of darkness appeared behind him. " We shall meet again, Illusionary heroes."

The Abysmal Devil roared in anger as it slammed its fist into the ground, releasing a powerful shockwave that blasted everyone back before it began to run forward.

### **Unforgettable ( Kingdom Hearts Birth by Sleep)**

The AD disappeared from sight and appeared behind Aya whom was startled by the sudden appearance of him and quickly dodged the massive fist that flew towards her.

" Mr Ziden! His weak points are his hands and head! Aim for those everyone!" Daiyousei yelled as she disappeared into Ziden's skull.

Marisa and Alice opened fire onto the AD as it blocked the small Danmaku with his massive arms as it opened his mouth and began to charge up an attack from his mouth.

" Ziden! Time to go upwards!" Yukari yelled as she grabbed him and threw him towards the head of the massive Heartless.

" This could end badly. Whatever, Teleport Rave!" Ziden threw his keyblade at the AD's head, slashing right through it as Ziden teleported to keyblade and threw again and again, racking up damage as Komachi followed with a powerful scythe strike to his face, knocking it back as he fell backwards.

" Down he goes ze!" Marisa said as the AD fell through the air and disappeared from everyone's senses.

Byakuren suddenly screamed, shocking everyone when she was seen crashing through the wall as they see a fist going through the portal and disappeared again.

" *Idiots! HE's jumping between dimensions! Be on guard and dodge when he strikes!*" Mima yelled.

" That's going to be annoying to deal with." Ziden said as he sidestepped a fist coming out of the ground and struck it with his keyblade, as Ziden felt energy enter his body as he feels it leave his body and surround him.

Aya kept her senses on high alert as she noticed that the two hands of the Heartless were surrounding her. They tried to smash her into a pancake, only for her to dodge the attack and move onto Alice as her dolls stabbed into his arm as one of the dolls fired a stream of fire into it, lighting it aflame as Marisa noticed the design of the doll.

" Hey Alice? I didn't know you made a Mario doll, ze." Marisa asked as Alice smirked.

" I made it when we were resting in Gensokyo, I made one for each of our comrades." Alice said as the AD appeared before the group as Yukari opened a Gap as a large missile came out of it and blasted the Heartless through the castle, blasting it into the throne room as everyone chased after it.

" What the hell!? You had a fight and didn't tell us about it!? That sucks man!" Suika said as Dante and Vergil remained seated next to Shinki and Yumeko.

AD punched the ground as barriers blocked off the hole he made and the throne area, preventing any outside assistance as Sakuya leapt into the air and threw knives into his eyes as it roared in pain

and tried to grab her, only for her to stop time and surround him with knives.

A burst of darkness blasted every knife out of the air as he grabbed Ziden and Reimu off of the ground and increased the grip he had on them as they both screamed in pain before he slammed them into the ground and he focused darkness into his fist and punched the ground with an unholy amount of force, creating a pillar of darkness that enveloped the unconscious duo as they flew out of the hole as Yukari growled.

Yuuka decided to actually do something as massive vines wrapped around the AD as he struggled to break free from the vines, only for him to be consumed by the vines as Yuuka sighed.

" That was far too easy. I thought something that evil looking would be stronger." Yuuka said as dark flames began to consume the vines as the AD broke free from the vines while breathing his black flames as Mokou countered with her own flames.

Youmu landed on his shoulder as the snake-like creatures reared up and looked at Youmu as she leapt into the air and landed on the head of the Heartless, winding her blade up as she stabbed it into its skull, causing it to screech creating visible shockwaves that stunned everyone in the room as he disappeared from sight.

" Great, he's doing this again!" Marisa yelled as it appeared behind the group as a black flames gathered in his mouth.

He breathed a large spray of dark flames as it crawled along the ground and rolling every so often as it exploded against the group, sending them all flying as Ziden and Reimu both got back to their feet.

" This thing's tougher than we thought." Reimu said as Ziden placed his keyblade on his shoulder.

" This is going to be a pain to deal, it jumps between dimensions like Yukari and some demons I've fought before like to do." Ziden said as he cracked his neck.

"Well then, that means you'll have to get serious then Ziden, I hope you'll impress me out there." Yuuka said as they watched Suika and Yuugi slammed their fists into its chest, blasting it back.

" Fine then, I plan on paying you back for that fight too!" Ziden said as he and Reimu dashed forward and appeared behind the AD as they slammed their keyblades into the back of its head as the scarf shot upwards and fired green fire at the duo as Reimu used Cautionary Border to block the attack.

Marisa flew into the sky as Mokou slammed her fist into the ground as it cracked with flames pouring out of it as a massive pillar of flame wrapped around the AD and blasted it towards the ceiling, crashing into it.

Ziden quickly jumped down and waited until the AD fell down towards him as he grabbed his foot and strained his muscles as he began to slam the massive Heartless on the ground, kicking up dust as Suika quickly ran over to Ziden and assumed a bumping stance.

" Over here, kid!" Suika yelled as Ziden threw the Heartless towards Suika as she threw her balled fist upwards, throwing it into the air as Ziden raised his hands into the air and threw him into the air as Yuugi jumped into the air with her hand pulled back.

" And go down you freak!" Yuugi slammed her palm into its chest, sending it crashing into the floor as Marisa unleashed a Spell Card as Yukari opened several gaps around the Heartless.

" Love Sign: Master Spark!" Marisa fired a massive multicolored laser as Alice and Patchouli added lasers and fire streams to her attack as they entered the Gap and began to multiply as they slammed onto the Heartless as it roared in pain as it began to fall on

its last legs as Youmu and Komachi dashed past his head, leaving a large streak of light as darkness poured from his head as it roared.

Yuuka calmly pointed her umbrella at the weakened Heartless, preparing to finish it off as noticed large amount of magic being gathered behind her as she heard Yukari sighing.

Ziden is seen pointing his finger at the Heartless as a greenish sphere was seen in front of his finger as the magicians of the group felt large amounts of magic gathering at Ziden's finger.

" IF you don't want to get reduced to a subatomic scale, please get behind him!" Yukari warned as everyone did just that as Patchouli began to observe the attack he was about to unleash the attack.

" Time for you to taste the ultimate attack of Black Magic in existence! Ultima!" Black Lightning cracked out from the sphere. " Wave!" The sphere began to expand as a crater formed underneath it as a large roar from the Heartless as he fired a black beam of darkness as Ziden smirked. " Cannon!" In a mere split second, the sphere expanded into a long beam that quickly swallowed the other one and exploded against the Heartless, exploding into a massive dark greenish sphere that was blasting pure magic back at the group as Ziden was blasted away from the recoil of the insanely powerful attack as he crashed into Mokou, crushing her into a wall as the explosion continued to go on.

" Dear lord, that attack was fast! I couldn't even see it go ze! Hmm..." Marisa seemed to be thinking of something as they saw that the Heartless was falling onto its knees as darkness was leaking from its body as it began to disappear into darkness as Yuuka seemed upset as she grabbed Ziden from the wall and grabbed him from the wall.

" Now, why exactly did you take my kill?" Yuuka asked as Ziden slowly shrugged.

" Cause I could, got a problem with that?" Ziden asked as Yuuka smirked.

" Don't worry, I'm going to make sure to punish you for this later." Yuuka said with a sweet face as Ziden scratched his face with his bony finger as they hear Shinki walking towards.

" I must thank you young warriors in helping Makai out in its time of need, although I am sorry for the fact that one of my children is causing trouble in Gensokyo." Shinki looked saddened by the fact as Alice walked towards.

" Don't worry mother, we shall deal with Yuugenmugen whenever it appears in Gensokyo. We'll send it back to you in no time." Alice said as Shinki smiled.

" Thank you Alice. But be careful, Yuugenmugen is a powerful demon that shouldn't be taken lightly in a fight." Shinki warned as everyone nodded.

" If we have any more trouble in Makai, please note that we will come to you for assistance." Yumeko said as a golden portal appeared behind Ziden as Yuuka violently threw him through the portal as Mokou struggled to drag herself through the portal. Everyone began to funnel through the portal while only Alice stayed behind when she felt something staring at her when she looked up at the ceiling and saw a patch of darkness going into the ceiling as she thought she was imagining things.

"..." Shinki was looking up the sky when she saw three red orbs above her as she frowned. " Its been a long time, hasn't it Mundus?"

*Back in Gensokyo...*

Ziden found himself resting in a hot spring, fully clothed as he was staring his still bony hand as he watched his hand slowly grow back as he heard small footsteps behind him. Ziden looked back to see Patchouli walking into the hot spring, wearing a towel over herself as she sat down next to Ziden with a magic tome in her hand.

" I'm surprised you decided to come in here." Ziden said as Patchouli simply placed her head on his shoulder while reading her tome.

" I merely decided to join you since I have nothing else to do." Patchouli said as Ziden merely shrugged.

" Sure, it is a nice bonding experience for a wife to spend some alone time her husband." Ziden said as he closed his eyes and yawned. He soon felt something heavy sit onto his lap as he opened his left eye and saw Patchouli calmly sitting on his lap while placing her chin on his shoulder.

" Just like you promised we would have after everything calmed down, I'm going to enjoy this half hour." Patchouli said as she turned a page in her book.

" Yeah, I bet you will, as long as your asthma doesn't act up in here, which it shouldn't." Ziden said as Patchouli coughed.

" It won't, I made sure of that before I came in here." Patchouli said as she wrapped her right arm around Ziden while continuing to read the book as they hear the sound of Glass Breaking again.

" *A Bond has been strengthen by you two. You have reached the Second Rank of the Magician Rank. You have learned the Agni's Breath spell for your keyblade, use it to unleash fierce flames upon your foes.*" The Voice said as Ziden and Patchouli smiled.

Elsewhere...

Kotohime and Yukari were seen talking to Lucci and Kaku as they were seen thinking hard about what they were told. " I mean, you'd be doing essentially the same kind of work when working under Yukari and you'll be upholding the peace while working under me, what do you say?" Kotohime asked as Lucci and Kaku seemed to be thinking about it.

"... We shall talk about it with our comrades if you allow us to, we shall see if they wish to relocate here." Lucci said as Yukari scratched her head.

" Unfortunately, I have no idea where your world is, plus I don't know where your comrades are, so I can't exactly bring them here." Yukari said as Lucci began to rub his jaw.

" That proves to be a small problem." Lucci said as everyone heard a loud roar of a large beast as several portals opened up, dropping several people wearing similar outfits that Lucci and Kaku wore.

" Not now anyway, Kalifa, Jabra, Fukuro, Kumadori and Blueno! I'm glad you got brought here. Now we have something we need to talk about." Kaku said as they all huddled together as Yukari looked over the group.

Kalifa is a slim, pretty woman with blue eyes and glasses. Her strawberry blonde hair was about shoulder length according to Yukari's measurements. She wore a long-sleeved short black dress over a fishnet shirt and stockings along with black gloves and high-heels.

Jabra is a dark-skinned man, with a Fu Manchu moustache, a pointed goatee, and long hair braided in a thick queue, that somewhat resembles a scorpion's tail. His clothing seemed to stand out from the rest though. He had small pointed sunglasses on his forehead, small hoop earrings, and a black tie over his bare chest. He wore a black tangzhuang, that's white down the middle and was always open. Yukari noticed he that looked alot like a stereotypical chinese kung fu martial artist.

Blueno is a tall man with big lips, a black beard and black hair in which his hairstyle resemble the horns of a bull. He only wore a simple all black suit which made him look very plain compared to the others.



Kumadori is recognizable by his large frame, huge mane of pinkish hair, and a right eye that rarely seems to be open. He wears a black suit, black pants, black shoes and a black shirt, but Kumadori wore a green tie. He also wore hand guards covering the backs of his hands that were tied around his palm. Yukari thought he resembled a kabuki actor.

The last one was the weirdest one, Fukuro is a big, round, oddly-shaped man with a zipper across his mouth. He dresses in black formal wear and has green, well groomed hair, purple dimples on his cheeks and strands of hair on his chin.

Lucci walked over to Yukari and bowed. " We accept your offer. We shall stay in Gensokyo and help protect the Human Village alongside the GPD." Lucci stated as Yukari smiled.

" That's good to hear, but I do need something from you two." Yukari pointed to Kaku and Lucci as they raised an eyebrow.

*Elsewhere again...*

Ziden and Patchouli are seen walking out of the Hot Springs area with the latter wearing her normal clothes as they proceeded to head to Ziden's room in the base as Ziden noticed something strange when they reached the door.

" Where the hell are Kaguya and Eirin? And why do I feel like they met someone horrifying?" Ziden wondered as Patchouli shrugged.

*Meanwhile in the Outskirts of Inaba...*

" According to the device, it seems that the Bomb is somewhere within that forest, let's find it and go home." Eirin said as Kaguya remained silent. Eirin seemed disturbed by the silence coming from the Princess as Bowser seemed oblivious to the entire situation as he was ready to head back to Gensokyo.

They began their silent trek into the forest as they saw various wildlife frolic around in it as they made their way to a large purple glow as they noticed a woman standing next to the Bomb.

The woman was wearing a gray suit with a white shirt and a blue tie. Her blue hair was waist length and her eyes were gray with slightly tanned skin.

" Hmm? Civilians shouldn't be here in this area." The woman said as Eirin walked forward.

" We're here to deal with this Bomb. Its been brought here by some of our enemies and we're going to destroy it and return home." Eirin explained as the woman simply looked at her as if examining her.

" You don't seem to be lying about that. It seems unethical, but I'll allow you to destroy this bomb. My name is Naoto Shirogane by the way." Naoto said as Eirin looked at the design of the Bomb. It was a large skull like machine with notable spikes on the bottom of them.

" In the case of things going badly, I'd recommend that you leave this area, Miss Naoto." Eirin warned.

"... Very well. I hope we meet again one day." Naoto said as she ran off.

As soon as Eirin pulled out her bow and arrow, the machine began to steam and hiss as it floated into the air as Bowser roared.

" Time to wreck this damn Machine!" Bowser roared as they got ready to fight a recreation of the Wily Machine 6!

### **Last Boss ( Mega Man 6)**

Bowser charged forward and leapt into the air and slammed his fists into the machine, smashing it into the ground as it released an electric shockwave that shocked Kaguya to the bone as she fell over on her face while groaning.

Eirin flew into the air and aimed several arrows at the Wily Machine, piercing through its hull as it fired several electric balls at Eirin as she grazed the shots while continuing to fire exploding arrows at the machine as it lifted into the air.

Bowser fell to ground and watched as the Machine slammed down on him, crushing him underneath the Machine as Eirin pointed her bow at the Machine as Kaguya pointed the branch at the machine.

" Brilliant Dragon Barrage!"

" Moonlight Rain!"

Eirin fired a golden arrow into the sky as it exploded into the sky, transformed into a large moon that was began to rain down a flurry of golden arrows onto the machine while giant light blue balls began to blast the Machine back as it began to spark violently.

The Wily Machine 6 leapt into the air and smashed into the ground, causing a large wave of earth to roll along the ground, launching Kaguya into the air as she began to fire more giant Danmaku at the machine as Eirin's bow was wrapped in a golden glow.

" Time to end this! Calming Winds: Halcyon's Flight!" Eirin fired the arrow as it transformed into the legendary bird of victory as it tore through the steel and magical components of the Wily Machine, causing the hole to violently spark as lightning shot out from the hole as multiple small explosion racked the machine. Soon a large explosion swallowed the Wily Machine as the bomb was effectively destroyed as Kaguya fell on her rear as the portal opened up where the bomb was.

Bowser slowly got to his feet and smiled when he saw the portal. " Finally! I'm getting back in there and going straight to sleep! I should have brought more competent people with me than you two!" Bowser said as Eirin and Kaguya glared at Bowser as he limped through the portal as they followed him through it as Naoto was watching them from afar.

" Those people are stronger than I imagined them to be, perhaps they will return to this place again someday." Naoto said to herself as she walked off from the site of the fight.

Meanwhile...

" Please! Let me have some Pokemon! Please!" Sanae was harrassing Ziden and Yukari as they were rubbing their temples.

" Ziden, just do it. We'll have to tell everyone about the Pokemon anyway, Having Sanae onboard with us will make things easier for you." Yukari said as Ziden sighed as Sanae began to bounce up and down with joy.

" Alright fine, bring me your current Pokemon game-" Sanae immediately placed a Black Nintendo DS on the table as Ziden sighed. Ziden raised his finger and placed it on the DS as a portal appeared as 6 multicolored balls came out of it and floated over to Sanae as she started to hyperventilate.

" Is it true? Is this really happening?" Sanae asked as she grabbed one of the Pokeball and threw it as a bright flash of light came from it as Kaguya limped into the room. A white floating Pokemon came from the Pokeball as it floated towards Sanae as she was processing what she was seeing. She reached out to touch the Pokemon as it felt real and soft to her touch.

" Togekiss~!" The pokemon cried as Sanae freezed up completely as Ziden and Yukari were a tad disturbed by the sudden freeze.

" Hey! How come she gets to have some Pokemon! I want mine too!" Kaguya pulled out her DS as well as Ziden's eye twitched.

" I hate you for this Yukari. Alright, lets get this crap over with and get the girls familiar with the Pokemon world to save time." Ziden said as he began the same ritual that he had done with Sanae as Kaguya obtained her 6 Pokemon.

" Actually, I have another favor from you Ziden, I want you to do something with the younger girls of Gensokyo tonight." Yukari said as Sanae snapped back into reality.

" Oh right! Today is Halloween! I want to go Trick or Treating as well!" Sanae said as Ziden facepalmed.

" Whatever, I'll do it, just get everyone gathered up when we get back from the Trick or Treating and we'll do the Pokemon thing. It should be somewhat exciting." Ziden said as he sighed.

*Fast Forwarding past the Halloween Event...*

Ziden is seen walking down a hallway to the Meeting Room with Youmu silently walking behind him as they both remained silent of the events that took place earlier, the antics of Kaguya caused alot of damage nearly an hour ago.

They reached the meeting room as they saw their fellow teammates sitting down in the room as Youmu sat down in a chair next to Yuyuko as Ziden stood up in front of the white screen as he spotted Lucci and Kaku leaning against the wall. Ziden knew what Yukari had set up in the works and wasnt too pleased with it but planned to battle those two later after this meeting.

" Alright, boys and girls! Time to learn about some Pokemon!" Ziden yelled as the camera focused onto the white screen as it turned black.

*Fun Facts:*

*1. Don't try to look up the Abysmal Devil, its a original Heartless Boss I made, and its not the last!*

*2. Reimu has a Keyblade and will get new ones through out the story. Will Marisa ever get one... probably not. Even though she's standing right next to me with a Hakker0 pointed at my skull, she ain't getting no key-.*

3. Togekiss is Sanae's Primary Pokemon for obvious reasons... come on, do I need to explain it. Read your Pokedexes kids.

4. Yes, Patchouli can be considered the primary wife since she is the smartest of them. And what Ziden and Patchouli were doing in the hotspring, they were just hugging each other... honestly!

Author's notes: Next Chapter, Ziden explains Pokemon and fights against Lucci in an epic rematch of the ages! Stay tuned guys and Darklight! If you have anymore Persona based questions, just send me a PM man! I really don't like revealing stuff like this so please, leave reviews on how you feel about the chapter and ask a few questions but please, no more Persona questions or atleast, not alot of them.

# Pokemon 101! Pokemon for Everyone!

Guest: My reaction? OMG ITS GRENINJA! YES! FINALLY another badass pokemon! HOO-HAH!

Darklight: Any questions you need answered Sora's Persona System will be answered via PM, okay? Feel free to ask non Persona Questions via Reviews.

---

Eirin was extremely pleased to be out of those uncomfortable clothes and back into her normal clothing as she was calmly resting and looking over Sora.

" \*Sigh\* I'm glad to be out of those clothes. I can't believe so many people in the Outside World wear clothes like that." Eirin said to herself as she noticed Sora shifting around in the bed.

Sora's eyes soon opened as he sat up in the bed and yawned. " Huh? Why am I in the Infirmary?" Sora asked as Eirin walked up to him.

" You've been out for a few days since you were attacked by feral Youkai." Eirin said as Sora looked down and wondered why she was so keen on attacking him.

" So, where is everyone right now?" Sora asked as Eirin stood up and walked over to him with a neutral expression.

" Right now they are in the Meeting Room, learning about Pokemon from Ziden, Yukari, Sanae and the Princess right now. Although Tewi, Reisen and Kaguya are somewhat upset with you when Ziden told us how you befriended Alice and can now summon her." Eirin said as Sora scratched his head nervously.

" Well, I mean, she seemed to be sorry after I talked to her, but I know what she did was wrong and that she should apologize to them

for her actions." Sora said as Eirin simply looked at him with no emotions.

" Just note that we aren't mad at you Sora, just mad at that little girl and we may never forgive her for what she did to our home. In fact, Kaguya suggested that we move in with Ziden from now on, which he was not happy with unfortunately." Eirin said as Sora smiled.

" Thats good, so should I get going to this Pokemon thing then?" Sora asked as Eirin nodded.

" Yukari is going to be bringing us there herself." Eirin said as Sora blinked once before he found himself sitting in a white chair next to Reimu and Marisa as he was glomped into a hug by the both of them as Ziden tapped the white screen as a large Pokeball appeared on the screen.

Prof. Oak Theme ( Pokemon Red & Blue)

" Pokemon, as we've said before, are creatures from another world that are used for battling and for solving everyday problems that the humans of that world may encounter." Ziden explained as the Pokeball on the screen opened up as a yellow mouse like creature popped out from it.

" Pika pi!" Pikachu cried as it suddenly appeared on the table in front of Ziden and the others. The villagers and other members of the Gensokyo inhabitants liked how cute it looked as it jumped down off of the table ran towards Byakuren as it leapt onto her lap as Nazrin felt a kindred connection to the small creature.

" Don't be shy, Byakuren! Pet it!" Sanae goaded on as Kaguya snickered behind her sleeve.

Byakuren calmly placed her hand on Pikachu's head and gently began to pet the Pokemon as it began to nuzzle itself against it.



" That Pikachu right there is one of many Pokemon that exist as of now!" Ziden said as he spotted Cirno raising her hand.

" How many of these Pokemon creatures are there?!" Cirno asked with a loud tone as Ziden smiled.

" As of right now, there are 649 known Pokemon species in the world of Pokemon!" Ziden said as everyone seemed shocked from that revelation.

" That's alot of Pokemon, ze!" Marisa said as Patchouli remained silent as she raised her hand calmly.

" Yes, Miss Knowledge!" Ziden called out as Patchouli coughed before speaking.

" Are these Pokemon all animal like or are there different kinds of them as well?" Patchouli asked.

" Ah, now there's a good question. Allow me to explain this one." Yukari said as she walked to the screen and pointed at it. " Pokemon take the form of many creatures, objects or even mythical creatures like us Youkai. In fact, some Pokemon are based off of certain Species of Youkai, specifically the Tengu and Kappa!" Yukari said as a tree like Pokemon appeared on the screen and a Ludicolo appeared on the screen.

" Wow! What other forms do these Pokemon come in?" Keine asked.

" That depends on the type of Pokemon." Sanae said as Kaku raised his hand.

" What do you mean 'Type'?" Kaku asked as Ziden smiled.

The screen changed to three Pokeballs on the screen as they popped open as a Charmander, Squirtle and Bulbasaur came from the Pokeballs.

" Pokemon come in different forms depending on their types. There are 17 known Types in the Pokemon World. There are Normal types, Fire Types, Water Types, Ice Types, Psychic Types, Dark Types, Bug Types." Wriggle is seen happily smiling at that one. " Grass Types, Poison Types, Steel Types, Rock Types, Ground Types, Flying Types, Fighting Types, Dragon Types." Everyone seemed surprised at that one. " Electric Types and the creepiest of them all, the Ghost Types!" Ziden said as Youmu felt a chill go down her spine.

Tenshi seemed interested in the Ground and Rock types but refused to say anything to Ziden at all despite sitting next to him.

Miko raised her hand next. Ziden pointed to her, signaling her to start her question. " And these Pokemon fight each other on a daily basis under the orders of the humans that have them? Doesn't that seem cruel to you?" Miko asked as Byakuren seemed to agree with her.

" Actually, its safer for the Pokemon to fight under the orders of a Trainer than for it to have fought in the wild, after all, there are Healing Centers in the wild, plus Pokemon do fight ALOT in the wild." Ziden explained as Miko thought about for a while.

" Hey! You said that these Pokemon have types, right? So what type is that Pikachu over there?" Mokou asked.

" What do you think, you simpleton?" Kaguya said as Mokou shot a death glare in her direction.

" I wasn't asking you, you damn shutin! I was asking Ziden!" Mokou yelled as Ziden smiled.

" What do you think, you dumbass?" Ziden said as Mokou almost charged at Ziden as Keine held her back. " Man I love doing that. Pikachu is a Pure Electric type."

" Um..." Everyone looked to see Flandre raising her hand. " Why did you say that Ghost types are the creepiest?"

" Because of how their Pokedex entries are describing their activities. This is a good example, Duskull!" Ziden said as Komachi's Dusknoir looked at the screen as its past form. " Duskull, its said to Spirit away bad children that scolded by their parents alot and they love the sound of crying children." Ziden said as Youmu felt crept out.

" I see, that is a tad creepy." Keine said as her children were sitting calmly in her lap as Seika hugged Mokou tighter.

" Enough of that, now onto the subject of how to catch a Pokemon. It involves weakening the Pokemon with your Pokemon and then using a Pokeball on them to capture them." Sanae explained as Sakuya raised her hand.

" And how do you use a Pokeball?" Sakuya asked.

" You just throw it at the Pokemon and then it enters the Pokeball before it gets captured." Kaguya answered as Sakuya felt satisfied from their answers. Yuugi raised her hand next.

" Hey! Do any of these act like us Oni? You know, with the drinking and the partying?" Yuugi asked as they all shook their heads. " Eh? Why not!?"

" Well, Ludicolo do like to party but not fighting. The closest you'll get to an Oni is Machoke and Machop and their daily fights." Yukari said as Yuugi seemed disapointed.

" Hmm, well, you plan on filling us in on how these Pokemon Battles work as well right?" Reimu asked as Ziden smiled.

*One Long Pokemon Battle lesson later...*

Everyone seemed to grasp the concept of Pokemon as Remilia raised her hand.

" Alright, so when do we get our Pokemon then! I want mine to be big and powerful!" Remilia asked as Ziden shook his head.

" When we go to the Pokemon World, then I'll let you and the Villagers have some Pokemon to better protect themselves from Youkai attacks." Yukari said as Ziden raised an eyebrow. " But since you all were patient enough to learn about Pokemon, you know get to see a good fight involving Lucci and Kaku fighting Ziden and Youmu in a fight! This is another Morale raising event! And afterwards, you'll get to see a Pokemon Battle up close and see how fun it is!" Yukari opened a Gap underneath the four people as the screen showed the group of four standing in a large garden as Kaku was seen holding two swords in his hands as Youmu unsheathed her blades.

" So you use two blades as well?" Youmu asked as Kaku shook his head.

" Nah, I use four swords when I fight." Kaku corrected as Youmu looked confused on his words.

" He means his legs count as swords as well." Ziden said as youmu finally got it.

" So we get to have our rematch at last. Good, I wish to see how powerful you truly are." Lucci said as he cracked his neck.

" Yeah, I hear you forced my past self into using my Aura Release technique, you must be powerful in order to do that. Show me what you got." Ziden said as he dropped down into a Battle stance.

### **Boss Theme ( One Piece Pirate Warriors 2)**

" Soru!" Lucci disappeared from sight as Ziden was shocked by his speed as he was struck hard in the neck by Lucci's leg and was sent flying into a tree as Lucci appeared in front of him. " Shigan!" Ziden flipped himself upwards and watched as he pierced through the tree with only his finger.

" Tch! You're faster than I thought!" Ziden said as he kicked the tree, shattering it as he grabbed a large piece of trunk and slapped Lucci away with it as Ziden dashed towards him.

Ziden spun himself on the ground, gaining velocity on his legs as he lashed out with a powerful roundhouse that Lucci saw coming. " Tekkai!" Lucci braced himself for the impact as Ziden slammed his foot into his neck as the ground broke from the impact as was sent back a few feet from the attack.

Ziden formed two fire balls in hands as they spun around into an infinity symbol as Ziden pulled his arms behind. " Blaze Dragon Assault!" Ziden slammed his palms into the symbol as the fire shot forward while taking the shape of a dragon as it roared off towards Lucci as he used Soru to dodge the massive flames that exploded against the ground.

" Looks like Ziden isn't caring for collateral damage for this battle!" Yuugi said as she gulped down some sake.

" Those humans are stronger than they look. I wonder what kind of training they had to go through to get that strong." Yuyuko wondered.

Youmu ducked under one of Kaku's blades and swung back with Roukanken only for him to block with his other blade. " You're not bad for a female swordsman!" Kaku said as Youmu jumped back from Kaku.

" I haven't shown what I can do with a blade yet! Demon Fang!" Youmu swung her blade upwards, creating a large shockwave that was traveling towards Kaku as he crouched down a bit.

" Rankyaku!" Kaku kicked the air with enough force to create a large blade of air that tore through the Demon Fang and made its way towards Youmu. She quickly reacted to the attack and rolled under it as she quickly rolled into a slide.

" Heart Carving Cut!" Youmu performed a powerful slash on Kaku's leg, catching him off guard as he fell backwards only to see no visible cut on him.

" Huh, looks like that woman was telling the truth, we don't have to worry about causing too much damage to these guys. Lets see how you like this, Shigan!" Kaku slammed his finger into Youmu's shoulder, piercing right through it as she fell backwards, clutching her shoulder as she rolled backwards.

" Rankyaku!"

" Burning Slicer!" Ziden and Lucci fired their elemental blades at each other as they clashed in the center of the room, causing an explosion of smoke that obscured their vision as Ziden leapt through the smoke.

" Humph, Kami-e!" Lucci began to effortlessly dodge Ziden's attacks by constantly moving with the air as if he was a piece of paper in the breeze. " Shigan!" Lucci's finger pierced through Ziden's throat as blood spray out from the impact while Lucci pulled his finger out. " Shigan: Oren!" Lucci began to rapidly stab Ziden with his finger as Ziden began to mentally curse Yukari's name.

Lucci stopped his assault and delivered a powerful kick to Ziden's face, only for him to block the attack as Ziden wrapped his fist in fire and punched Lucci square in the chest, sending him flying before he used Geppo to recover and flew into the air as the villagers and various Youkai were surprised by the sight.

" That man! He's flying! But how!?" Keine asked as Mokou shrugged.

" I dunno, ask those guys over there, not me." Mokou said as Kalifa came over and sat down next to Keine.

Lucci continued to use Geppo as he looked over to Kaku and nodded as he smirked.

" So I guess its time for Round two then?" Ziden asked as Lucci landed in front of him while holding a neutral expression.

" Indeed it is, Ziden. Time for us to stop holding back against you guys." Lucci's body began to increase in size as he soon took a more leopard like appearance as Ziden was startled by the transformation.

Kaku also began to transform into his beast form which startled everyone as his neck grew insanely long as he became a half giraffe. His nose also became twice as big as well.

" What in the world!?! Those guys ain't human! They must be some kind of Youkai!" Miko yelled as Whitebeard began to laugh.

" Those two are Devil Fruit users from my world, eating those fruits grants the person unbelievable powers at the cost of their ability to swim." Robin explained as Ichigo simply stared at the screen with awe, as did Erza.

Ziden saw Lucci raising a clawed finger into the sky. " Shigan!" In the next moment, Ziden felt Lucci's finger pierce through his stomach and right through his spine as he was lifted into the air as the onlookers looked horrified by the sight. Lucci soon threw Ziden away as he rolled along the ground and landed face first on the ground as he bled out onto the grass.

" Ziden!" Youmu was about to run over to her fallen comrade as she sees Kaku pulling his neck back.

" You shouldn't turn your back on your opponent, girl! Bigan!" Kaku lurched his neck forward and slammed his nose into Youmu's back, nearly snapping her back like a twig and launched her towards Ziden as she crashed into him, somehow knocking them both onto their feet somehow as they somehow remained standing through sheer willpower.

" Heh! Looks like this battle just turned interesting! Think you can handle that Giraffe boy over there while I fight Mister Leopard?" Ziden asked as Kaku looked offended by that comment.

" I'm no Giraffe Boy! I'm a full fledged Giraffe Man!" Kaku corrected as Youmu spun her blades and walked over to him.

" I can take him." Youmu simply said as she stood before Kaku.

Ziden wasted no time and began to dash around Lucci at lightning fast speeds, leaving after-images of himself all around Lucci as he struggled to keep with him.

" Time to rock! After-Image Blitz!" Ziden started off his attack by jumping directly at Lucci's back and delivered a punch to his spine and returned to running around Lucci while occasionally leaping out to strike him as he ended his assault with a strong upwards kick that Lucci flying upwards, which wasn't a smart idea.

" Rankyaku Hyobi!" Lucci fired a spiraling blade of wind at Ziden as he jumped backwards, only for Lucci to appear behind him. Lucci tried to stab Ziden through the shoulder as he backflipped over Lucci and landed a powerful kick to Lucci's head.

Youmu dodged another Rankyaku from Kaku as she continued to fire sword waves at Kaku before she dashed forward and leapt into the air while spinning. She slammed the both of her blades into his as a large blast of air came from the impact as Youmu spun herself around and landed a kick on Kaku's face, sending him flying backwards as he pulled his legs in as Youmu looked confused on what he was doing.

" Rankyaku Sen!" Kaku stomped the air, firing a condensed bullet of air that tore through Youmu's shoulder as she fell to the ground as she spotted Ziden and Lucci trading blows before Lucci punched Ziden hard in the chest, launching him to the air as Lucci jumped up after him and placed his fists over his chest as everyone whom saw the attack before cringed.



" That attack is going to end this match right now I bet." Blueno said in a monotone voice.

" Eh? What's gonna happen to daddy, mom?" Seika asked as Mokou cringed,

" He's about to be hurt by the large cat man, which he deserves." Mokou said.

" Rokushiki Ogi: Rokuogan!" An extremely powerful shockwave tore through Ziden's insides, tearing his organs to shreds within a second as blood rose up in his throat and quickly flew out of his mouth as he fell to the ground in seconds. Lucci landed on the ground, panting after the attack was done as he watched Ziden writhe around in pain.

" That looked like it hurts." Suika said as she drank more sake from her gourd.

" Pika!" Pikachu seemed to agree with the statement as Satori knew what he really said.

" You think that Ziden will get right back up after that attack, young one? Hmm? I'm not too sure about that. Even an Oni would feel an internal attack like that one and possibly go down after that." Satori said as Yuugi scoffed.

" I could take that attack and still remain standing!" Yuugi declared.

Ziden stopped writhing in pain as he rolled onto his stomach and slowly began to get to his feet as he struggled to stand. " Damn. That hurt like hell, Mr. Leopard. Looks like I'm going to have to step up my attacks right?" Ziden asked as he turned around and looked at Lucci with determination in his eyes. " Aura Release!" Blue flames exploded from Ziden's body, lighting up the whole area with blue ethereal flames as Ziden was now surrounded by the blue fire. " Lets go!"

The Challengers ( One Piece Pirate Warriors)

Ziden and Lucci disappeared in a blur as random shockwaves rang out in the air as everyone tried to follow the combat but couldn't keep up with them as they saw Lucci trying to stab Ziden with his finger, only for him to dodge and axe kicked him into the ground as Lucci landed on his feet and jumped to the side, dodging Ziden's fist that exploded against the ground.

Youmu performed a powerful Tiger Blade, slashing Kaku across the chest as he leapt into the air and stabbed his blade into the ceiling. " Rankyaku Ran!" Lucci began to kick his legs rapidly, firing a barrage of tiny wind blades that Youmu weaved between as she leapt into the air and spun like a buzzsaw, slicing into Kaku's chest, forced him from off the wall as he landed on the ground.

" You're much stronger than you look! But lets see how you handle this!" Kaku retracted his neck into his body as Youmu was shocked by the action. " Kyoku Bigan Kirimanjuro!" Kaku's neck shot forward like a cannon at extreme speeds as it slammed into Youmu's chest, striking with enough force to cause her to cough up blood as she crashed through a tree.

" Aura Blast!" Ziden fired a large ball of Aura at Lucci as he used Soru to dodge all of the attacks Ziden was launching as Ziden created a large hand of Aura and grabbed Lucci out of the air and slammed him down into the Earth and followed up by firing powerful beams of blue flames that forced Lucci deeper into the ground as he spotted Youmu dashing out of the bushes holding a spell card before she jumped into the air.

" Tobu Shigan Bachi!" Ziden felt an air bullet slam into his chest, piercing right through it as Lucci continued to fire the projectiles at him as Ziden released a burst of aura as he charge at Lucci with his arm pulled back with the Aura spinning around it. Lucci puffed up his chest. " Tekkai Utsugi!"

" Aura Drill Impact!" Ziden's fist slammed into Lucci's chest as he himself being forced back by the attack and later sent flying as Ziden's arm was completely broken by his Tekkai.

" That Tekkai reflected the Physical Attack I just used on you just now, didn't it?" Ziden asked as Lucci smirked.

" Indeed it did, I wonder how much your fighting capability just decreased by breaking your arm?" Lucci wondered as he saw Ziden gripping his broken arm.

" Not by much when I can just do this." Ziden without hesitating, completely tore off his arm from the shoulder up as everyone flinched from the sight. Ziden's arm soon grew back as he grabbed his torn off arm and threw it at Lucci as he looked confused by the tactic. " Ka-boom!" The arm soon turned red as Lucci instinctively leapt back to avoid the large explosion that occurred from the limb as Ziden came out from under the ground. " Aura Lancer!" Ziden slammed his leg into Lucci's chest, causing his foot to sink into his chest and send him flying into the ceiling.

" Sword Skill: Cherry Blossom Flashing!" Youmu dashed past Kaku with inhuman speeds as her blade slashed him diagonally across the chest while pink cherry blossom exploded out from the cut as Kaku fell down on one knee as Youmu smiled to herself. That quickly turned into an advantage for Kaku.

" Rankyaku Hakurai!" Kaku kicked the air with the both of his legs, creating a larger windblade as Youmu bent backwards to dodge the attack as it sliced through the walls of the garden as she saw Ziden getting caught by Lucci's tail.

" Its over! Sai Dai Rin: Rokuogan!" Ziden felt the even stronger attack pulverize his insides into mush as a visible shockwave blasted out from his back and smashed the trees and plants behind him as the wall was damaged by the attack. Lucci's tail released Ziden as he fell onto his feet and staggered forward past Lucci as he looked like he was about to pass out from the pain.

" Don't you dare fall Ziden!" Roxanne yelled as Ziden heard her yell at him. " I don't care if you are weakened right now! You've taken attacks like that before and remained standing to finish the fight! If

you faint, I'll personally come in there and fight you myself!" Komachi simply glared at her as Roxanne turned to her and glared as well.

Lucci turned around to look at the standing Ziden as he didn't respond to her at all. " It looks like he passed out while standing, how sad. Looks like I win my match." Lucci said as he returned to his human form as he began to walk away from him as he felt something strange happening behind him.

The Aura was begining to gather around Ziden as it exploded from his body, creating a crater as he leapt out of the crater and charged at Lucci whom quickly changed back into the smaller version of his leopard form as he tried to Rokuogan Ziden again. It hit Ziden dead center in the middle of his chest as Ziden fist still went towards Lucci's face and connected with a solid right hook that would have stunned even an elephant as Ziden continued to punch Lucci rapidly as the ground cracked from the attacks.

Youmu pulled out the spell card she thought would end this fight as Kaku slammed his hand hoof onto the ground. " Get ready kid! Cause I'm about to show you the strongest version of the Rankyaku!" Kaku began to spin around like a top, gaining some serious speed as Youmu crouched down and breathed deeply.

" Roaaaaaaaaaaaa!" Ziden's attack became insanely fast as Lucci was soon thrown into the air as Ziden spun around as he focused all of his Aura into his right arm. " One Hit, One Kill!" Ziden slammed his palm into Lucci's back with an unholy amount of force as Lucci was launched like a missile into the sky before crashing into the wall. " True Supremacy Strong Palm Wave!" Japanese Kanji appeared in the air as Ziden said the name of his attack as Lucci completely crashed through the wall, destroying it as Lucci completely lost consciousness as Ziden fell onto his back, exhausted from the fight.

" Where'd those Kanji come from? Am I the only one that saw that!?" Jabra asked as Meiling nodded.

" I saw it too! I don't know what they said but I'm sure they were interesting!" Meiling said as Jabra nodded in agreement.

" Rankyaku Amane Dachi!" Kaku created a massive circular air blade that radiated outwards as Youmu unsheathed her blade.

" Hell Realm Sword: 200 Yojina in 1 Slash!" Youmu quickly dashed past both the Rankyaku and Kaku in the short span of a second as she calmly sheathed her blade as several red streaks appeared all over Kaku's body and the Rankyaku was torn apart instantly by the nearly light speed attack as Youmu fell on her knees, tired from the fight.

" So... fast, couldn't even... guh." Kaku passed out on the spot as the song ended with Ziden and Youmu laughing in victory before stopping because of the pain on their chests from the fight.

The group of four was gapped back into the Meeting Room as Ziden right on top of Komachi as she smiled while glaring at Roxanne.

" Hey Komachi... my body hurts." Ziden said as Lucci and Kaku were placed in tables that were in the room.

" I know it does! You can just rest right there for now!" Komachi said while petting Ziden's head while she continued to glare at Roxanne as Satori decided to look into Komachi's mind as she was horrified by what she saw.

" Ziden's mother killed her own unborn grandchild? How could she-" Satori said to herself as certain sharp eared people heard her as Eiki simply gritted her teeth.

" Now that the fight is over, what do you think of Lucci and Kaku's strength?" Yukari asked as everyone cheered.

" Heh! Those two can fight! I wouldn't mind getting into a fight with those two!" Suika declared as Yuugi agreed.

" So then, are you ready to see how Pokemon battles work?" Yukari asked as Sanae and Kaguya stood up only to get sucked into a Gap as Sora and Reimu looked at the screen as those two landed on a large field with white outlines and Ran standing on the sidelines with Chen chasing a butterfly in the background.

*" I can't believe Lady Yukari is making me do this. This will be a 3v3 Pokemon Battle. Victory will be acheive when one team has all of their Pokemon fainted. There is no substitutions for this battle. Please begin."* Ran said as Yukari booed her.

" Show more emotion Ran! That was so bland, I thought it was a Twilight movie!" Yukari yelled as Ziden chuckled.

" Whatever! Begin!" Ran yelled as Sanae and Kaguya held a Pokeball in their hands. A bright light came from Kaguya's waist as a small fox like creature popped out from it.

" Eevee! Why'd you come out on your own!? Please get back in your Pokeball!" Kaguya asked as Eevee looked extremely saddened by her, going as far as tearing up.

" Dear lord... that is somewhat adorable." Kalifa said while she fixed her glasses.

Patchouli really seemed interested in this match as she felt something rubbing her leg as she looked down to see two cat like creatures sitting on the ground next to her. " Hmm? Where did you two come from?" Patchouli asked.

" That's Espeon and Umbreon, those two Pokemon you wanted." Ziden said as he flipped his body around so he could see the match as Pikachu enjoying being petted by Byakuren as Miko tried to pet him.

She ended up pinching his cheeks by mistake as it upsetted the Pikachu, causing to retaliate with Thunderbolt, shocking Miko to the

point that her hair and body were charred a bit. Byakuren silently laughed to herself from the sight.

" Wait a second... where the hell did Espeon and Umbreon come from anyway? I didn't bring them here." Ziden said as he noticed Yuyuko smiling at him. " Don't tell me that she released the Pokemon from the their pokeballs."

Kaguya allowed Eevee to remain outside of the Pokeball as she gripped the Pokeball and prepared to throw it. " Go! Ampharos!" The pokeball opened as a large yellow creature appeared from it.

" What that thing?" Sora asked.

" Ahem!" Everyone looked to Ziden. " Ampharos! The Light Pokemon! The tips of their tails give off a bright light that was used to help lost people find their way!"

" An Eletric type huh? Come on out, Golem!" Sanae threw out her Pokemon as a large Rock monster is seen standing in place before roaring.

" Golem, the Megaton Pokemon. It is capable of blowing itself up. It uses that explosive force to leap from Mountain to Mountain." Ziden said as everyone looked bewildered at that.

" Wow, that's some way of mountain climbing." Mario said as Luigi agreed.

" I didn't know that Pokemon was this crazy." Ichigo said as he sighed.

" An Electric type vs a Rock and Ground type? This should be quick." Ziden said.

Rival Battle ( Pokemon Heart Gold)

" Heh! Lets end this now! Golem, use Earthquake!" Sanae ordered as Golem raised its foot and stomped it on the ground, creating a

shockwave that traveled towards Ampharos.

" Ampharos! Jump and up and use Focus Blast!" Ampharos did as she was told and used its tail as a spring and leapt high into the air and placed its hands together, creating an orange sphere in its hands as the shockwave just passed by it as Sanae growled.

" Golem, quick! Roll out of the way of the attack and use Stone Edge!" Sanae ordered as Golem rolled out of the way of the Focus Blast as it exploded against the ground, creating as dust clouds blew up from the attack.

Golem rolled out of the cloud as a ring of razor sharp rocks orbited around it. Golem raised his arms and pointed at the airborne ampharos as the Stone Edge flew towards it.

" Ampharos, knock those Stone Edges away with Electro Ball!" Ampharos performed an aerial front flip as electricity gathered at its tail, forming into a ball as it launched it at the Stone Edge as they clashed, creating a grand explosion that blasted Ampharos downwards as Sanae smirked.

" Grab him, Golem and slam her to the ground with a Body Slam!" Sanae ordered as Golem grabbed Ampharos out of the air and jumped into the air with the poor Electric type underneath him, causing the ground to break as Kaguya was shocked.

" Oh man! Looks like Ampharos just got wrecked! That's what you get for using an Electric type against a Ground Type!" Pit yelled as Ziden nodded.

" Hmm? Why not?" Keine asked.

" Oh crap! We forgot about type matchups! Oh man, that's the complicated part!" Ziden remembered Yukari shook her head.

" Terrible Ziden, terrible." Yukari said.



" Shut it! Alright, its like Rock, Paper, Scissors... except alot more complicated and with Magic Animals and objects that are somehow animate." Ziden said as Alice raised an eyebrow.

" Could there be an animate doll in the Pokemon world?" Alice wondered to herself.

" Whoa, those things are tougher than I thought! I can't wait to see what happens next." Mokou said as she smiled. We all knew why she was smiling and it should be obvious.

Everyone seemed to be enjoying the Pokemon battle, even Byakuren whom some reservations about it.

When the dust cleared up, Ampharos was shown with swirls in its as Golem rolled back to his trainer.

" Return Ampharos!" A red beam came Kaguya's Pokeball and wrapped around Ampharos as its body entered the ball. " Don't feel bad, you did a wonderful job at fighting that Golem!" Kaguya said as she holstered her fainted Pokemon as she pulled out a Pokeball that had a glass object over it with a Bubble sticker on it.

" Hmm, she has a Ball case? This must be a special Pokemon then." Ziden said as he felt someone poking him in the face. " Eh?" Ziden looked to his right and saw a green haired girl with a blue third eye poking him with an odd expression on her face. " Stop doing that Koishi, that's annoying." Ziden said as Koishi looked surprised as everyone gave Ziden weird looks.

" There's no one there, Ziden. What are you talking about." Erza asked as Koishi poked him again.

" She's right there, poking me in my face, its annoying and she needs to stop." Ziden said as Koishi came close to poking him in the eye.

" Maybe she made herself invisible to others?" Satori wondered.

" No, because I can see the girl poking him in the face." Ryu Hayabusa said as Ziden felt relieved.

" Thank god I;m not going crazy. But she ain't stopping and... eh? My weapon senses are tingling." Ziden said,

" Hey! You don't have Weapon Senses! That doesn't even make sense!" Spider Man argued.

" Neither does Spider Sense." Wolverine countered as Dante laughed.

" Come on out, Milotic!" Kaguya threw her Pokeball as it opened with a spray of bubbles, arranging itself in a snake like pattern as it transformed into a beautiful snake like creature.

" Ahem. Milotic, the Tender Pokemon. Its said that glimpse of a Milotic and its beauty will calm any hostile emotions that you are feeling." Ziden explained as everyone seem enticed by its beauty.

" I'm not surprised that my daughter would pick such a lovely creature. It matches her perfectly." Tsukuyomi said while smiling.

" Uh oh. This might go badly for us Golem, I don't have a Grass or Electric type!" Sanae said as Ziden and Kaguy face palmed.

" So Water types are weak to Electric and Grass types? Interesting." Patchouli said while petting her newly acquired Pokemon as Espion rested on her lap.

" *One of my weapons are nearby, but it feels mobile. Is someone carrying it?*" Ziden wondered.

" Lets go, Milotic, lets end this with Water Pulse!" Milotic did as she was ordered to and created a ball of water in her mouth as she fired it.

" Gah! Golem, dodge it quick!" Sanae panicked as Golem tried to move, only for it to find out that I couldn't as Sanae noticed the

yellow sparks on Golem's body. " gah! I forgot that Ampharos has Static as an ability!"

The Water Pulse slammed right into Golem, causing an explosion as he rolled backwards until he almost ran over Sanae as she saw that he was knocked as Ran finally said something.

" Golem is unable to continue, the winner of this round is Milotic!" Ran said before she sat back down.

" Return Golem." Sanae placed her Pokemon back in her Pokeball as she pulled out her next Pokemon. " Come on out Politoed!" Sanae threw out her Pokeball as a large toad like creature came out of it as began to hop up and down.

" Politoed, the Frog Pokemon. If a Poliwhg or Poliwhirl hear their cry, they respond by gathering from far and wide." Ziden said as Cirno felt a need to freeze said frog.

" Hmm, this should be a very quick victory for use Milotic! Use Dragon Pulse!" Milotic created a blue ball of pure energy as it fired forward as Sanae panicked.

" Quick, jump Politoed!" Politoed quickly jumped to avoid that large beam of energy as Sanae got ready to counterattack. " Alright Politoed! Use Hyper Beam and take out that Milotic in one shot!" Politoed opened its mouth and fired a powerful orange beam that Kaguya looked bored at.

" Milotic, be a dear and dodge it." Milotic did as she was ordered and dodged around the Hyper Beam as Sanae mentally gulped. " End this with Dragon Pulse!" Milotic once again fired her powerful blue wave of energy at Politoed as it was unable to dodge the powerful shot as it explouded against Politoed, blasting it into the ground as it was knocked unconscious by the attack.

" Good lord, that is one powerful Milotic." Ziden said.

" So Ziden, what are Dragon Types weak to?" Reimu asked.

" Ice and Dragon types." Ichigo and Spider-Man answered at the same time as Ziden gave them a look.

" I played Pokemon when i was little dude." Spider Man said.

" Same here, just haven't gotten to th newer ones yet." Ichigo said.

" Politoed is unable to battle, Milotic wins this round." Ran said with very little interest.

" Return Politoed!" Sanae returned Politoed to her Pokeball as she pulled out a Pokeball. " Go Togekiss!" Sanae threw out her Pokeball as Togekiss came out of the Pokeball.

" Lets do this! Togekiss! Use Aura Sphere!" Togekiss created a light blue ball in front of its mouth as Kaguya started a counterattack.

" Use Surf to Counterattack that Aura Sphere!" Milotic created a ball of water that slammed into the ground, exploding into a massive tidal wave that dwarfed over the tiny Aura Sphere and swallowed it whole as it crashed down on the Togekiss as Sanae and everyone knew how this would end.

" NO! I lost my first real life Pokemon Battle!" Sanae fell on her knees, severely upset at the outcome as everyone cheered for Kaguya's victory.

" Well, its not as flashy as Danmaku fights but it looks fun enough!" Marisa said.

" Heh! I wonder what my Pokemon will be?" Tenshi wondered.

" Well you guys can go search for them in the Human Village upstairs! Yukari put up a barrier so you guys can go find your Pokemon Partners right now!" Yuyuko declared as there was a dead silence in the room.

" Free Pokemon!" Most of everyone in the room darted out of the room except for Ziden, Komachi, Eiki, Koishi and Satori.

" Ziden... is it true what your mother did?" Satori asked as Ziden sighed.

" Yes, she truly did kill the child that Komachi and I were going to have about 7 years ago. All because she thinks I can do better than Komachi." Ziden said as Komachi felt severe hatred boil up inside her.

" That's severely messed up. Although, you attacking her like that wasn't right of you either." Eiki said as Ziden got to his feet.

" Whatever, she essentially took away a child I could have had. Even then, I wouldn't kill my own mother." Ziden said as he walked off.

" Where are you going?" Komachi asked as she walked after him.

" Going to search for a missing weapon/power that I sense somewhere in the village." Ziden said.

" Cool, I'm coming with. Dusky! Lets go!" Komachi said as she ran after Ziden as Dusknor flew after them.

Ziden and Komachi found themselves standing in front of a Boss Battle Gate with Sora standing next to it.

" Feel like joining us in this one, Sora?" Ziden asked.

" Yeah, I wanna try out this Persona thing with my keyblade." Sora said while summoning his keyblade.

" Did Kaguya and the others already talk to you about the Alice Situation?" Ziden asked.

" Yeah, Alice came out herself and apologized, only for Tewi and Kaguya to slap and tell her that they will never forgive her for her

actions." Sora said as he spotted Tewi and Kaguya sitting in the chairs, obviously angry.

" They'll get over it, although i'm not happy that those guys are moving in with me, but I guess after I do this, I'll bring their stuff to my place after I get this weapon and power back from this place." Ziden said as he leapt into the gate. Sora and Komachi jumped in after him as Dusknair flew in after him.

Ziden and the others landed in a grassy plain with storm clouds gathering above them as they felt the ground shake behind them as they spotted a massive pink being standing behind them.

" I am Pandemona. If you wish to obtain my powers for your own, then defeat me and my winds in order to earn my strength!" Pandemona declared as everyone drew their weapons.

#### *Fun Facts:*

*1. If you want to know what Aura Release works like, Imagine Luffy's Gear Second where it buffs all of his moves but they grow more powerful the nearer to death that Ziden is.*

*2. Yes, only because Kaguya and Sanae have the actual Pokemon games do they get a full team of 6. Everyone else, minus Patchouli, will only get like 1 or 2 at most.*

*3. Yeah, let it be known, alot of messed up stuff happens to Ziden and his family, because Fate (or me) likes to screw them over. If Komachi did have that child, it would have been a boy by the way.*

*Author's Note: Plan on pushing these out faster from now on, so don't worry about slowness. Smash Direct was awesome and my body is ready for Smash 4.*

# Pandemona and Nue's Revenge!

Oh yeah! This story now has over 6000 views! I love you guys and girls for reading my story so much! It means that I'm doing something right! Thank you everyone!

---

## Force Your Way ( Final Fantasy 8)

Ziden and Komachi jumped backwards to avoid a vortex that was created to damage the duo as they flipped backwards as Ziden dashed forward and slashed Pandemona across its shoulder, creating a blast of bloody pus to flow from the wound as Komachi slashed him across the legs, forcing him to bend down and fall to his knees as Sora ran up and began to rapidly smack him across the face with the Keyblade.

" This guy is already down by several by several bars this is a piece of cake!" Ziden said as Sora leapt back as blue flames surrounded him.

" Looks like Sora's about to summon that girl, are you going to be alright?" Komachi asked.

" Meh. as long as she doesn't kill me, I don't care." Ziden said as a light blue card appeared in front of Sora.

" Alice!" Sora struck the card as the sound of glass breaking was heard as Alice appeared out of a pile of cards as they formed a castle as she calmly walked down the stairs and stood next to Sora as she stared at the large creature.

" Can you die for me?" Alice asked as the cards flew forward and sliced the giant across various places as it was harmed but not killed by the attack as he slammed his fist into the ground, causing a

fissure as the bag like object on his back began to suck in large amounts of air as Ziden and Komachi began to lose their ground.

Alice held her ground as she grabbed Sora by his hood, stopping him from being sucked into the large bag as Ziden and Komachi were being thrown around in the windy bag, losing health with each second as they felt the wind stop.

" Oh god, we're going to get sent flying aren't we?" Ziden asked.

" Yep! This is going to hurt." Komachi said as the wind whipped up and blasted them out of the bag, as it transformed into a massive tornado as Komachi and Ziden were sent flying into the air as Sora was launched towards the massive wind beast as he smashed the creature's face in with his keyblade, forcing him back as Ziden and Komachi landed hard on their faces, causing them to reach red health as they got to their feet.

" Damn, that attack was actually damaging. I guess we should just start blitzing him now?" Ziden said as he threw Komachi a High Potion as she chugged it down restoring her health as Ziden dashed forward with his blades out.

" Then lets tear this thing to pieces then and lets spend some time together!" Komachi said as she spun her scythe around and jumped into the air.

" Divine Dragon Impact!" Ziden performed a powerful windmill kick his face that shattered the air around them as Komachi slammed her blade through Pandemona's arm, tearing it off completely as Alice ran over and grabbed the torn off arm and began to wield it like a club.

Pandemona struggled to his feet as Ziden began to rapidly slash the demon across the chest with his blades, causing fire and ice to spray out with each strike as Ziden finished the assault with a powerful cross slash that sent the creature flying as Alice appeared behind the creature and slammed the arm into his spine, sending him flying



towards Ziden as he performed a flip kick to the creature's chest, sending him flying into the air as Sora and Alice back to back.

" Lets go!" Sora and Alice began to float in the air as they began to rapidly fire golden cards into the air as they began to tear Pandemona apart while his health was dropping like a rock as all of the cards combined into the air and created a massive card soldier that grabbed Pandemona into a backwards grapple as it began to pile drive Pandemona into the ground creating a massive crater that knocked Pandemona out cold as Ziden was covered in a golden light.

" Not bad, young ones. You have bested me in combat. I shall now bestow my power upon the one of you that embodies my powers." Pandemona declared as everyone was washed in light as they found themselves back in the classroom as Alice looked over to Kaguya and Tewi as they continued to scowl at them.

" Ziden! There you are!" Ziden flinched at the sound of a voice he wasn't expecting to hear in Gensokyo as he turned around to see a red haired woman wearing a biker's outfit.

" Aoi, how and why are you here?" Ziden asked as Aoi stomped her foot.

" You know, I had a modeling gig today and you didn't even show up! Its bad enough that you don't show up to my races but then you don't come to my gig! What kind of Sponser are you!?" Aoi asked as Ziden sighed.

" A busy one, you know I have to go around saving people and am now fighting to save this land from foreign invaders. Ziden explained as Aoi started to calm down.

" Whatever, so what is this place anyways?" Aoi asked as Ziden sat her down and explained what was going on.

" So how did you get to Gensokyo?" Ziden asked as Komachi was eyeing the girl down.

" Well I was escorted here by a silver haired girl wearing a pure white dress." Aoi explained as said woman walked through the door.

" Alexandria! What are you doing here?" Ziden asked as Alexandria sat down in a chair as she looked out of breathe.

" I came to see my Loyal Knight's little Harem." Alexandria said as Ziden looked confused.

" No, that's not why you're here, if that's the case, why did you bring Aoi with you?" Ziden said as Alexadria sighed.

" Yoohoo! What's going on in here?" Yukari appeared out of a Gap as she placed her chest on Ziden's head.

" Well, it seems that you have a visitor in your home and he seems to want to see you." Alexandria said as Ziden raised an eyebrow.

" Hmm? What going on in here?" Everyone turned to see Reimu walking into the room with a large cat following her but she didn't seem to care for it following her.

" Yeah, whats going on in here?" Patchouli asked as she floated into the room and noticed Alexandria sitting down and glared at her.

" So those women are the ones you are currently eloped too? I'm impressed, they all seem to have powerful wills as well." Alexandria said as Ziden felt a chill go down his spine.

" Time for a housecall! Come on guys, lets go!" Ziden clapped his hands together as a purple light blinded everyone as they found themselves standing on a grassy plain as they looked behind them and saw a large beach behind them.

" Hmm? Where are we?" Reimu asked.

Ziden ignored their question as he walked up the hill with Aoi, Yukari and Alexandria following after them.

They all continued to walk up the hill as they all surprised at what they saw up ahead. There was a large blue and white mansion ahead of them as they noticed a large abundance of golden statues on the lawn.

" Hmm? What are these weird statues?" Reimu asked.

" These are all of the people whom have beaten me in combat before. I had statues of them made in this yard to show their strength." Ziden said as they continued to walk toward his mansion as they looked at the statues.

They saw several familiar people amongst the statues that were even traveling alongside them, they saw Ryu Hayabusa, Mario, Kirby, a different looking Link, Dante, even that Leon fellow. They were many other and they were surprised to see Yuuka getting a statue as well.

" Hmm, that is a nice mansion, but it looks smaller than the Scarlet Devil Mansion though." Patchouli said as Ziden smiled.

" There is an underground part of the Mansion which is three stories down." Ziden said as he walked to the door as Ziden opened it. " Welcome to the Icrim Manor." Ziden said as everyone walked into the house and looked at the beautiful foyer of the building which also functioned as a living room as well they spotted a large tv on the left side of the room surrounded by red couches. In the middle of the room was a silver statue of a phoenix spraying out water from its talons into a fountain as everyone noticed the large stairs and large amounts of doors in the place.

" Jeez, this must cost alot to maintain." Tewi said as Ziden shrugged.

" Not really, I usually do all the cleaning and upkeep for the place when I'm here." Ziden said as everyone stared at him.

" Don't you have maids and servants to do that for you?" Kaguya asked.

" Meh, they only are mandatory to clean and protect the house whenever I'm not home, otherwise, I'm doing everything in this place." Ziden said as Kaguya happily clapped her hands together.

" That's great! Now you get the rabbits from the village and bring them since we'll be living here with you!" Kaguya said as Aoi looked confused before remembering that Ziden was is in a Harem.

" So who exactly is here visiting us?" Ziden asked as he heard someone walking down the stairs as both Ziden and Yukari felt chills go down their spines as they saw a purple haired man walking down the stairs, wearing a lab coat.

" Hmm? Who in the heck are you and why are you trespassing in someone's home?!" Reimu asked as the man stopped at the bottom of the stairs.

" Why exactly are you in my home, Shu Shirakara?" Ziden asked as Shu calmly walked towards them.

" I only came to this place to repair my machine after a battle I partaked in a while ago. I've been here for a few months now, I'm surprised you didn't notice me before." Shu said as Ziden snorted.

" Your Granzon got damaged? Must have been some tough customers in order for them to do that. Although... I doubt you mean the Ancient version of the Granzon are you?" Ziden asked as Shu smirked.

" Ancient version? What do you mean by that?" Komachi asked.

" I guess we should give you guys a history leason on the Universal Powerhouses someday, but we'll wait until we get you all together." Yukari said.

" Meh, screw it. The Universal Powerhouses are creatures of severely unnatural powers that dwarf even a God's powers. There are Dragons, beings of abstract existence, Machines built from

Ancient times. All of them could wipe us out in a fight, even if me and Yukari weren't to hold back against them." Ziden said as everyone felt startled by this info.

" Indeed, you met two of them during the last war, Shinryu and Galactus." Shu said as Ziden and Yukari flinched from their names.

" I tend not to remember Galactus, I made the mistake of challenging him when I was younger and before I went back in time to train... it didn't end well for me, If I hadn't destroyed his Elemental Converter, well... I'd be dead." Ziden said while shrugging.

" Then why didn't you stop yourself from fighting him them?" Aoi asked.

" Number 1 Rule of Time Travel: Don't change the Past. Plus I didn't feel like it." Ziden said.

" Anyways! So you and that infernal Machine are going to be here for a while?" Yukari asked as Shu nodded.

" Indeed, the repairs are coming along nicely, I had to borrow some money from your vault, which wasn't that hard to unlock by the way." Shu said as Ziden's eye twitched.

" How much did you borrow from my vault?" Ziden asked.

" I only used the Yen you had stored up, didn't bother with the US money." Shu said as Ziden breathed a breath of relief.

" Well, now that we know whom is in your house, we should get back to Gensokyo then." Reimu said as Sora agreed with her.

" I'll send you guys back in a sec, I'm going to head to Eientei and bring over their stuff to here...\*sigh\*." Ziden didn't seem to be happy about that.

" I'll be staying here as well. I'm interested in exploring this mansion as well." Patchouli said.

" Same here, me and Ziden have some catching up to do!" Komachi said as she grabbed Ziden into a headlock.

" I'll be staying as well, but you guys can walk back to Gensokyo! Just head outside and you'll see a familiar object!" Yukari said as Reimu shrugged. " Oh and good choice on getting a Persian as a companion! Those things attract money you know."

Reimu looked down at the Persian next to her as she could feel the money rolling into her Donation Box.

" Alright, we'll be heading back to Gensokyo then." Sora said as he walked out of the mansion with Reimu following after him.

They noticed that to the right of them was a familiar sight to Reimu. " Hmm, why is my Torii here?" Reimu asked as she walked towards it with Persian.

" Yukari said that we can walk to Gensokyo from here, I wonder if she meant through this gate." Sora wondered as he walked through the Gate. He felt the air shimmer around him as he felt dizzy and fell to his knee as the area distorted around him. It soon stopped as Sora found himself at Reimu's shrine as he felt a hand on his shoulder as Reimu looked dazed as well.

" So this is how Gensokyo and the Isle of Hope is connected? That's pretty clever. Come on, lets get back to the village." Reimu said as she walked around the gate and walked down the stairs with Sora following after her.

At Eientei...

Ziden was seen standing in front of a portal as several men wearing black suits and holding various boxes as well. " Alright, I need all of you to gather up everything in place that's not destroyed and bring them back into the portal. Be careful, there may be demons in this place that won't hesitate to attack you." Ziden warned as his

servants ran around the manor, gathering stuff up as he pulled out a long silver pole and an orb with a black circle within it.

Ziden absorbed the orb in his hand as darkness radiated from his body before disappearing. Ziden put the silver pole away, happy that he got one of his favorite weapons back.

Ziden felt a presence behind him as he spun around only to see nothing behind him. " Strange, I could have sworn I felt a-" Ziden turned back around to see a large ball of gas floating in front of him as it licked his face, paralyzing him.

" Gastly!" The Gastly laughed as Ziden quickly recovered from the shock and growled to himself as he heard a familiar laughter.

" Yuyuko! Why are you here?!" Ziden asked as said woman walked from out of a wall and glomped him into a hug.

" Oh I'm just having some fun with these Ghosts I found in the village!" Yuyuko said as he spots a Haunter and Gengar flying around as well.

" Of course you are, and you came here to harass me right?" Ziden asked as Yuyuko nodded.

" Yep! I'm bored!" Yuyuko said as Ziden sighed as his servants quickly ran into the portal as the duo began to walk outside Eientei, ignoring the vibrant stench of blood and rotting bodies. They found themselves surrounded by the bamboo stalks as they both sat down outside.

"..."

" Ah, so it seems that you still aren't really ready to open up to me right? Yuyuko asked as Ziden shrugged.

" Its odd to think of you as my Aunt, after that happened in the past because of Yukari's forcefulness." Ziden said as Yuyuko rested her

head on his head.

" Yeah, why do you think I haven't tried to mess with you like Yukari does? Because I've already had my time in the spotlight with you and I enjoyed it." Yuyuko said as Ziden raised an eyebrow.

" You remember the time back when you were alive?" Ziden asked as Yuyuko nodded.

" Yeah, I do, I don't remember what caused my death though, but I'm sure you did something to stop the creature that killed me though." Yuyuko said as Ziden smiled.

" You bet I did. I kicked its ass for ya, Aunt. Made sure it payed for killing you." Ziden said as she held him into a hug as the sound of Glass was heard breaking.

*" A new bond has been established between you two. You have reached the first rank of the Death Arcana. This bond will give you new Attack Styles for your keyblade. You have learn the Ghost Drive Style. Continue to nurture this bond to make it stronger."* The voice explained as Ziden and Yuyuko got up and cracked their necks.

Ziden yawned as Yuyuko suddenly tackled him to the ground as a green laser blast struck the wall behind him.

" What the hell? Who the hell is attacking me now?" Ziden asked as he got to his feet.

" I'm for that reward!" A female voice asked as Ziden sighed.

" And so am I!" A female figure leapt from the bamboo and landed in front of the duo as another before them as a massive beast.

" Hmm? A Tanuki and a Nue? Didn't know there were anymore Nue left in Japan." Ziden said as the beast roared.

" Because you filthy Youkai Hunters killed them all! And now I get to crush one of those infernal hunters myself." The nue declared as



Yuyuko rubbed her head.

" I think I've heard about these two, Nue Houjuu and Mamizou Futatsuiwa and she's actually a Bake-denuki." Yuyuko corrected as Ziden rolled his eyes.

" Whatever man. I dunno why she's attacking me though. These guys don't really bother humans all that much." Ziden said as Mamizou scratched her head.

" I'm really only here to help my friend in capturing you for that bounty." Mamizou said as Ziden reached for his blade.

" Whatever, I don't care for your reasons, if you're in my way, I'll cut you down. And I don't know why you're coming at me with that Youkai Hunter nonsense, I only hunt Demons and Monsters, I wasn't even near Japan during the Great Youkai Hunt." Ziden said as Nue's body turned to a human form.

Ziden observed both of the girls' clothing as they got ready to battle.

Mamizou has brown eyes and light-brown, shoulder length hair. She is featured with raccoon ears and a tail. On her head there lays a green leaf and she has glasses. She has a ecru shirt and her skirt is red-grey with some patterns on it. Ziden wasn't surprised to see her carrying a bottle of sake and a booklet with her.

Nue has short black hair and dark red eyes, three red metallic-looking wings on the right side of her back, and three blue arrow-shaped tails coming out from her left side. She carries a trident, has a snake on her right arm, and also wears a black wristband on her left wrist. Her dress is all black with blue and white trim in the middle, a red bow on the front, and a small, yin-yang-like tomoe design at the bottom corner of the skirt of her dress. She wears black thigh-high stockings and red shoes with bows on them.

" It doesn't matter! All of you Hunters are the same to me! Mamizou! Make sure that ghost girl doesn't interfere in this fight! He's mine!"

Nue declared as Ziden unsheathed his twin swords and unsealed their power as he cracked his neck.

" Jeez, I'm trying to help out this place and its residents keep trying to kill me. Its very annoying." Ziden said as Yuyuko laughed.

" Maybe its Fate trying to test your strength against us?" Yuyuko wondered.

" Whatever, lets get this over with." Ziden said as Nue charged at him.

Meanwhile in the Human Village...

Mokou was seen stifling a laugh as Keine looked completely hassled by the situation.

" This isn't funny Mokou! I'm History Teacher that deals with Children on a daily! Why did I attract this barbarish creature!?" Keine asked as the Rampardos standing behind her tilted its head in confusion.

" Well... you do headbutt the kids alot and this Rampardos does headbutt things too." Mokou said as the Blaziken behind her nodded in agreement.

" But I was expected a Pokemon that could help with my History Classes, not some monstrous creature!" Keine said as Rampardos looked sad.

" Ramp~!" Rampardos seemed upset at what Keine said as it stormed off, crying in anguish.

" Wow Keine, that was just mean." Mokou said as Keine ran after the creature.

" I didn't mean that! Come back~!" Keine ran after her companion as Mokou looked up at hers and smiled.

" Wanna grab something to eat?" Mokou asked.

" Blaziken!" Blaziken seemed to be hungry as he followed after Mokou.

Boooooooooom!

Yuugi is seen rolling along the ground after a punch from her opponent as the large Rhino like creature charged after her.

" Heh! You're a tough one! That's what I like to see in a person!" Yuugi cocked her fist back and slammed it into the creatures chest, causing it to stumble back as it raised its arms into the air.

" Rhyperior!" A large boulder began to form between its hands as it slammed it down on Yuugi, crushing her underneath it and destroying the ground and area around them.

Yuugi is seen getting up and laughing after that powerful attack. " Not bad, kiddo! That was a pretty strong attack! Me and you are going to get along well!" Yuugi said as Rhyperior agreed.

Tenshi is seen walking around with a cloudy bird flying around her as she sighed. " Well, at least its nice to look at."

Marisa is seen flying with a Mismagius flying after her. Alice was seen with a large Claydol following behind him. Remilia looks severely unhappy holding her Magikarp which Sanae was laughing at. Flandre is seen holding a Deino in her hands as Cirno is seen with a Glaceon walking next to her. Yuuka is seen with a Sunflora following after her. Utsuho is seen with a Magmortar following after her.

It seemed that everyone seemed to have found their Pokemon companion as Aya flew down from the sky in a panic.

" Guys! Guys! We got trouble! The Youkai Mountain got taken over while the Tengu were here in the Village!" Aya yelled as everyone looked confused.

" So who exactly took over the Youkai Mountain?" Sanae asked.

" Well, one of them looked like a Tengu except it had a metal body and one of them looked a large blue machine with blades in its chest and it could blast winds from its chest." Aya answered as Sanae rubbed her temple.

" That sounds awfully familiar. Did that blue one say anything at all?" Sanae asked as Reimu and Sora walked over to them

" Well, the Tengu looking one said that 7 other places in Gensokyo has been taken over by their comrades." Aya said as Sanae really felt like this was familiar. " And that machine stated that ' Air Man cannot be defeated!'."

Sanae now understood what was going on. " It looks like Wily's Robot Masters are taking over key locations in Gensokyo. Tengu Man and Air Man took over the Tengu's Village." Sanae said as began to think. " Lets get Ziden and Utsuho and figure out what place to secure first."

" Well, where is Ziden?" Aya asked.

" He should be back at his Mansion." Reimu answered as Mokou appeared out of nowhere.

" He's in the Bamboo Forest right now." Mokou said as everyone looked at her.

" And how do you know that?" Aya asked while smirking.

" Because I should know where MY husband is at all times." Mokou said as Aya chuckled.

" How cute! I'll go and grab him then. Maybe I'll take some detours and hang out with MY husband." Aya said as Mokou growled at Aya as she flew off at Hypersonic speeds.

*Meanwhile outside Eientei...*

## Heian Alien ( Touhou UFO)

Ziden is seen casually dodging thrusts from Nue's trident as she was quickly getting annoyed by his calm demeanor towards her attacks.

" Damnit! Stop moving so damn much human!" Nue yelled as Ziden chuckled.

" And what? Allow myself to get hit by your trident? That's just silly kiddo!" Ziden said as Nue swung her trident horizontally as Ziden quickly blocked the attack with Nosada as he stabbed her in the shoulder with Murakamo, piercing through her shoulder and causing it to freeze over as well. Nue jumped away from him as she pulled out a Spell Card.

" Then lets see how you handle a Spell card then! Ominous Clouds: Heian Dark Clouds!" Black clouds began to form around her as Ziden raised an eyebrow.

"!" A laser shot past Ziden's cheek drawing blood before the wound closed as Yuyuko took note of that. A myriad of lasers began to fire out and covered the area in lasers as Ziden was forced into dodging them all with hi speed movement which seemed much faster than it was before.

" Tch! Hold still so i can kill you faster!" Nue said as Ziden appeared underneath her as she gasped.

" How about no?" Ziden spun himself and slammed his leg into the back of Nue's neck, smashing her body inwards as she was smashed into the ground, creating a crater that she was sucked into as he backflipped away from the hole as Nue crawled out of the hole.

" Damnit! That hurt you bastard!" Nue yelled as Ziden shrugged, signifying that he didn't care at all.

" Don't really care, you are trying to kill me after all." Ziden began to spin Murakamo around like a fan as it began to glow. " Glacier Range!" Ziden swung his blade and created a large wave of ice as frozen spikes erupted from the ground and began to speed towards the downed Nue as she rolled out of the way of them as she pulled out another Spell Card as Ziden frowned.

" Lets see you take this one on! Unidentified-"

" Ayayayayayay! Out of the way~!" Nue was soon tackled into the ground and was sent rolling towards Ziden as he quickly slammed his knee into her chest and placed his blade at her throat.

" Do it! Go ahead and kill me! Like how you humans did to my kind!" Nue pressed her throat against the blade as Ziden blankly stared at her.

"... Alright, fine by me." Ziden raised his blade into the air and quickly brought it down, only for Aya to grab his hand before the blade touched her head.

" Whoa now Ziden! This girl is a member of the Myouren Temple! You kill her and you'd be making enemies with the Youkai there." Aya warned as Ziden looked back at Yuyuko whom seemed to swaying back and forth before she regained her composure and shook her head at Ziden's behavior.

"... Fine, but know this Nue Houjuu, come after me again, and I won't hesitate to kill you." Ziden threatened as he walked away from her as she growled to herself in anger.

" Ziden, we've got some problems, it appears that the Ultima Brigade took over some places in Gensokyo when we weren't expecting them to." Aya explained as Ziden helped Yuyuko to her feet as he noticed that she was unusually dizzy.

" Tch, looks like someone pulled the wool over our eyes on this one, I knew Ultima would kkeep her word and not attack for a few days, but

me and Yukari knew that someone would go behind her back and attack us anyway. Looks like the fight for Gensokyo is coming to end soon... and I sense that someone close to you guys is going to meet an untimely demise." Ziden said as he carried Yuyuko bridal back to the village as Aya flew after him.

### *Back in the Village...*

Marisa is seen standing at a table as she felt a deathly chill go down her spine as she looked around herself. " That was a creepy feeling, ze."

" So we've got 8 Robot Masters to deal with in order to enter the Ultima Brigade's base? That's going to be annoying. And it seems that the Gate Rules are protecting them as well." Ziden said as Sanae scratched her head.

" Perhaps we can send three of you after each Robot Master and take them out by one as if you were X, Zero and Axl?" Sanae wondered.

" Wrong Megaman Series but I don't care as long as I get to be Zero." Ziden said as he looked at the 8 Robot Masters on the table in front of him. Solar Man, Tengu Man, Shade Man, Plant Man, Magma Man, Frost Man, Gravity Man, Splash Woman.

" So I get to be this X guy then?" Utsuho asked as Ziden nodded.

" Marisa can be Axl since she steals techniques!" Sanae declared as Marisa glared at her. " So who are you going to go after first?" Sanae asked.

" Splash Woman, she's the easiest to take down without a weakness." Ziden said as he pressed the picture as a beam of light surrounded the group as they teleported to where Splash Woman is, the Misty Lake.

### *Fun Facts:*

*1. The pokemon and Touhou Pairings are mainly taken from pics I've seen and how their personalities work together, although it should be obvious why Reimu got a Persian.*

*2. Yes, if Aya hadn't stopped Ziden when she did, he would have killed Nue without feeling bad about. Ziden is a highly trained killer, ya know?*

*3. Aoi is one of the main pilots from Dancouga Nova and yes, she is same Red Head that appeared in that anime that Sanae watched that implied her as being a love interest with Ziden ( which she is, Ziden just won't openly admit it).*

*Author's Note: I'm going to put this out here now, only three more chapters until the End of the Gensokyo Arc! The next chapter is going to be a big one and since I'm going to be working at a job, it may take a while to update. That chapter will focus entirely on the Robot Master Fights and the infiltration of the Enemies base. But what was that chill that Marisa felt? I wonder indeed.*



## **Gensokyo's End: Part 1, The Wily Wars**

Ziden, Utsuho and Marisa found themselves standing in front of Misty Lake as Daiyousei latched onto the back of Ziden's head.

" So... is this Splash Woman under this water? Uh, I can't swim." Utsuho pointed out.

" I can swim and hold my breath for a long time so it shouldn't be problem for me, ze." Marisa said as she placed in finger in the water.

" I wouldn't worry about it, this whole Lake has become a giant Gate that revolves around Platforming, you don't have to worry about breathing in the water. Lets go." Ziden didn't even hesitate and leapt into the water, sinking into its icy depths as his head disappeared beneath the surface.

Marisa and Utsuho looked to each other as they both shrugged and leapt into the water, being swallowed by a bright light as they found themselves standing on a straight path as they were locked on a 2D Plane.

### **Splash Woman's Stage ( Mega Man 9)**

There was a shining light around Ziden and Marisa as they both transform into Floating Balls of Light as they floated around Utsuho.

" Eh? Oh, Ziden! The hell happened to us ze!" Marisa asked as Utsuho decided to run forward on the 2D path as she spotted several Zealots in front of her with a green fish robot with a drill swimming above them.

" We are in this form only in a secondary form since only one person can explore at a time, so we switch at times. Okuu, you can fire shot like you normally do and can charge them up with more power behind to take out enemies quicker, Marisa, you will specially in rapid fire shots and can aim in every direction, you can also steal the

moves your foes by firing a special shot. When you want to switch, just say the person's name and then say Tag Out." Ziden explained as Utsuho did not understand the explanation at all.

" I don't get it, oww!" Utsuho wasn't paying attention and was shot by one of the Zealots holding an energy gun.

" Watch out Okuu! Don't take too much damage man! You have a limited number of times to get hit like that before we get sent back to a checkpoint!" Ziden warned as Utsuho nodded and jumped into the air, higher than normal as she fired several nuke blasts at the Zealots, blasting them into dust.

Utsuho ran forward and leapt upwards, firing at the Tropish as it exploded into a large orange sphere as Utsuho grabbed and was healed by it as she continued to run forward until she found several pits filled with spikes with several platforms in front of them.

" Be careful of spikes, one touch and you'll die." Ziden warned as Utsuho panicked.

" Ziden! Tag out!" Utsuho tagged out as Ziden appeared in her spot as Ziden groaned.

" Of course you make me do all the jumping. This is going to be tedious, fast forwarding people!" Ziden said while making a circular picture with his finger.

### **At the Boss Door...**

Ziden is seen standing before a massive red door with a large skull on top of it as it slowly opened up as Ziden ran ahead, entered the door as it closed behind him while the skull's eyes glowed ominously.

Ziden found himself standing in a large circular room filled with water as he noticed a mermaid-like robot in front of him.

" Oh it seems that I have a guest to take care of. Why exactly are you here?" The mermaid asked.

" What do you think you idiot? I'm here to send your ass to the scrap heap because you're with the Ultima Brigade." Ziden bluntly said while holding Efreet and Celsius. The robot shot a glaring look at him as she turned to him while holding her trident.

" You must be that Ziden fellow. I've warned of your flirtatious ways, I won't be swooned over to your cause." The robot woman stated as Ziden blankly stared at her.

" Dude, I may flirt alot Splash Woman, but I'm not going to flirt with an robot. Of course I planned on bringing you back with us for info, but that's happening whether you want to or not." Ziden said as Efreet transformed into an energy blade made of fire as he cracked his neck.

" Oh, so I'm not good enough to be flirted with then? I believe I should kill you now since you're planning to kidnap me." Splash Woman said as she spun her trident around.

### **Boss ( Megaman 9)**

Splash Woman's life bar filled up to the brim as Ziden dashed towards her and swung his blade at her face as she quickly swum away from him as she swam upwards and pointed her trident downwards.

Splash Woman began to fire laser versions up her trident down on Ziden as he sprinted around the arena while a blue aura surrounded him.

" Charge Shot!" Ziden jumped into the air and shot a very large ice shot at Splash Woman, striking her hard as Ziden dashed forward and slashed her across the chest, damaging her as she swung at Ziden with her trident.

Ziden took the attack across the chest as she began to float up into the air while singing. Several fish began to swim around her before they charged at Ziden.

Ziden began to jump backwards while firing weak version of the ice shots, taking out the robotic fishes as Splash Woman charged at Ziden and impaled him into the wall with her blade as his blood began to pollute the water around them as Ziden felt his health go down.

*" Holy cow! I didn't know that Splash Woman was this violent!"*

Sanae said as Ziden grabbed her by the face and launched her through the water and into the other wall as he yanked the trident out and threw it at her.

Ziden charged up another Celsius shot and dashed towards Splash Woman and pointed the gun directly at her face as she looked panicked.

" Goodnight!" Ziden fired the charge shot directly into her face, blasting her face full of frost as she fell over, knocked out from the impact as Ziden picked her up as the Mega Man victory jingle played as he teleported back to the base.

Utshuho gained the Splash Trident ( Water version of the Laser Trident)! Ziden gained the Hydro Slash! Marisa gained the Aqua Ray!

Ziden noticed that Komachi was standing in the room glaring at him. " Oops, I guess I kinda overlooked the fact that me and you were going to hang today..." Ziden said as Komachi slammed the butt of her scythe into his face.

" Oh well, you'll spend some time with me eventually, I'll just watch you take down these Robot Masters, like a good wife." Komachi said as Ziden raised an eyebrow.

"... You're going to kill me in my sleep aren't you?" Ziden asked as Yukari walked into the room with Nitori following after her. Nitori noticed the unmoving Splash Woman as her eyes sparkled with joy.

" Nitori! No! Taking her apart! You can have her after we interrogate her." Sanae said as Nitori seemed disappointed.

" So who are we going after next?" Utsuho asked as Ziden smiled.

" Now that we got a new weapon, we can use it as a weakness for the others and make it so easy and quick for the next fight." Ziden said as he looked at Magma Man.

" These guys are all from different games, so what if the weaknesses dont work?" Sanae asked as Pit and Palutena entered the room.

" Meh, then we just have to guess their weakness then. Magma Man would be weak to the new Splash Trident." Ziden said as Pit agreed.

" Well since I am a qualified Goddess, I believe I shall give you all my assistance." Palutena said as Yukari sat down.

" Hey, where's Patchouli, Aoi and Alexandria?" Ziden asked.

" Back at the Mansion, Patchouli is in your Library and I doubt she'll leave it anytime soon." Yukari answered.

" Wait, but Magma Man is weak to a wind based weapon though, shouldn't you pick someone weak to the water weapon then?" Pit asked as Ziden shrugged.

" Meh, I don't understand what's going on ze! Lets go and spray this Magma guy with Water!" Marisa said as she pressed the picture of Magma Man as the three of them were teleported to his location.

They found themselves standing on the bridge that Ziden and the others fought Yoruhoishi before.

" So we're here now? This is all you, Okuu." Ziden said as he and Marisa transformed into their helper forms.

### **Fast Forwarding to the Boss Room...**

Utsuho is seen standing before the massive boss door as it opened as she ran through it.

She landed on a rocky platform surrounded by lava as she spotted a red machine standing in front of her as it turned around to her.

" Are you the intruders I heard about?" The Volcano robot asked as Utsuho shook her head.

" No I live here so I can't be invading. Maybe I past by them on the way here?" Utsuho wondered as everyone facepalmed.

" I see, so this used to be your home before we took it over. I am indeed sorry for that, but my master wishes us to defeat you people. Please forgive us for this." The robot said as Utsuho nodded.

" I know, I can tell we do similar jobs so it does feel bad for me to destroy you but maybe someday we can be friends." Utsuho said as Magma Man felt the same way.

" Indeed, let us battle now!" Magma Man declared as his flames bellowed out from his body.

### **Magma Man ( Mega Man 9)**

Magma Man's flames bellowed from his shoulders and head as he pointed his arm cannon at Utsuho, firing powerful flame shots at her as she fired back with her own fiery shots, causing fiery explosions.

" Okuu! Use the Splash Trident and see if it works!" Palutena advised as Utsuho's Third Leg turned a light blue color.

" Okay, lets give it a shot!" Utsuho fired a large watery trident at Magma Man as it smashed into him, sending him flying backwards

as his flames were taken out.

" Gah! Water! My powerful flames went out!" Magma Man cried as Utsuho continued to fire the watery tridents into Magma Man, blasting him back as he slammed his arm cannon into the ground as several plumes of lava shot up into the air as multiple ones began to open up around Utsuho, blasting her into the air as her wings set on fire as she panicked and put them out.

" What happened?! Why did my wings catch on fire? I can usually swim in lava fine." Utsuho said as Ziden coughed.

" Totally forgot, while in a Gate, Lava will always harm you, no matter what." Ziden said as Utsuho swallowed hard.

" Okay, no getting hit by the lava and fly around him." Utsuho planned as more lava fired into the air after her as she flew faster hoping to avoid as she fired a Splash Trident into the lava, transforming it into a large slab of rock as she slammed her Third Arm into it and lifted it above her head and pointed her arm cannon at Magma Man as she fired the boulder at lightning fast speeds.

" Looks like this is the end for me." Magma Man said as the boulder smashed into him, crushing him underneath the large boulder as an explosion occurred underneath it as Utsuho landed on the platform as she created a small star in her hand before she teleported back to the HQ.

Utsuho got the Magma Bazooka! Ziden got the Volcanic Impact!  
Marisa got the Lava Spark!

Ziden is seen standing over the table as Sanae was sporting a very big grin. " What are you smiling about?" Ziden asked.

" You have the fire weapon! Now you have to fight Frost Man!"  
Sanae said as Ziden sighed.

" God. Damn. It." Ziden said as he pinched the bridge of his nose.

" Gah! Get this mad woman away from me!" Splash Woman was using her trident to fend away Nitori as she tried to come at her with a screwdriver.

" Let me take you apart! Please! I must know how you work!" Nitori pleaded as Ziden face palmed.

" Lets just get to Frost Walrus and get this over with." Ziden said as Yukari slapped him in the head.

" You mean Frost Man, now get going and find out where that base is and destroy it." Yukari ordered as Ziden pressed the picture of Frost Man as they teleported to a nearby Snowy Mountain as Ziden is seen holding a snowboard with Utsuho and Marisa floating in their helper forms.

" I'm going to take care of this stage, Marisa, you get to fight Frost Man, use your fire attack to kill him." Ziden said as Marisa smirked.

" Got it, ze! That freak won't know what'll hit him!" Marisa declared as Ziden stepped onto the snowboard and began to descend down the mountain.

### **Frost Man ( Mega Man 8)**

Ziden began to slide down the mountain, weaving along the ground like a snake, dodging past trees as he enjoyed the music that was playing as he rode up a ramp and flew into the air while turning upside down and spinning in midair while looking at the snow below him while smiling as he flipped and landed on the snow when he heard something some crashing down behind him.

" Uh oh, thats not a good sound." Ziden said as he turned his neck and saw a massive avalanche crashing down towards him. " Time to jet!" Ziden began to speed up his descent down the mountain as he weaved down the snowy trail as several Zealots jumped out of the snow and aimed Rocket Launchers at him.



" Look out! Enemies ahead!" Daiyousei warned as Ziden pulled out Efreet and aimed at the Zealots while forming his blade as a barrier of fire formed in front of him, increasing his speed as he boosted towards the Zealots as they fired the missiles at him, slicing them in half with the burning laser as he followed up with a powerful horizontal slice, tearing through the enemies while leaping off the large mountain side as the avalanche crashed down the cliff behind him as he sensed something within.

" I'm gonna turn you punks into Popsicles!" There was a large Igloo like Robot riding along in the avalanche as Ziden spotted a visible distortion in the air.

" Looks like we're about to warp somewhere. Marisa, get ready to rock." Ziden said as they dashed through the distortion as the large robot leapt after him.

Marisa is seen standing in front of the Boss Door as she ran through it, closing behind her as the skull's eyes were glowing ominously.

Marisa found herself standing on an large block as she sees the very large Frost Man standing in front of her.

" Eh?! Who in the world are you!? Where's that snowboarding guy!?" Frost Man asked as Marisa placed her broom on her shoulder and pointed at herself.

" He's not here, ze! I'm going to be your opponent, you overgrown icicle!" Marisa declared as Frost Man laughed.

" Hah! This tiny little girl thinks she can beat the mighty Frost Man! Hahahahahahh! I could crush you underneath my boot!" Frost Man declared as Marisa sighed.

" This guy's a blowhard, ze. Reminds me of Cirno due to how much he boasts about how strong he is." Marisa said as she pulled out her Mini-Hakkero and threw it up and down.

" Who are you calling an blowhard!? I'm going to turn you into a Popsicle and eat you!" Frost Man declared.

" Yeah, this guy is dumb like Cirno indeed, ze. Time for you to get turned into a puddle!" Marisa said as she pointed her weapon at him.

Frost Man jumped into the air and slammed his fist into the platform, causing it to violently tilt as Marisa nearly lost her balance and fell into the icy water as she flew into the air as her weapon turned red hot.

" Lava Spark!" Marisa fired a narrow beam of pure fire as it slammed into Frost Man, setting him ablaze as he screamed in pain as she landed on the platform, only for Frost Man to fire a wave of ice at Marisa as it grazed her leg and froze her solid as Frost Man dashed into her, blasting her out of the ice as Marisa flew off into the icy water as she quickly flew out of it, now soaked to her bloomers and partially frozen.

Marisa began to rapid fire the Lava Spark, blasting the poor Igloo Robot to the melting Point as Frost Man charged at her with a large Ice Block over his head as he grabbed it and tried to slam it onto Marisa, only for her to roll under his legs and pointed the Hakkeru at where his crouch was.

" Oh dear lord, she's not gonna-" Pit was too horrified to look at the scene that about to take place.

" Please don't!" Frost Man begged as Marisa smirked.

" Lava Spark!" The fiery laser shot into the crouch of the robot, blasting him high into the air as he was crying in pain while the flames consumed him as a very large explosion occurred, destroying the Robot Master as Marisa performed a thumbs up.

Utsuho got the Ice Wave! Ziden got the Frost Dragon! Marisa got the Snow Flask!

Ziden was seen standing over the table as they began to speak about which Robot Masters to go after next. They continued this discussion for a while as Koishi was wandering around aimlessly as Sakuya was seen sitting next to Mokou while sitting Seika on her lap.

### **Four Robot Master fights later...**

Ziden and the others were seen with torn clothes as they looked tired.

A large screen appeared in the middle of the table as Dr. Wily was seen smirking wildly. " So you bested my 8 Robot Masters, didn't you? That's great! Now I can personally destroy all of you at once! Come to our base if you dare!" Wily goaded as Ziden slammed his fist into his palm.

" The Gate Rules aren't going to hinder us in their base. We'll head there and take of Wily and get back to deal with the Ultima Brigade." Ziden said as Sakuya got up and walked over to Ziden.

" Allow me to come with you Master. I can be of assistance in this fight." Sakuya said as Ziden shook his head.

" No, stay here and help out with the upcoming battle with the zealots." Ziden said as Sakuya frowned.

" I'm coming with you Master, no matter what?" Sakuya declared as Ziden still shook his head.

" And I said no, if you follow us Sakuya, I will revoke your demon hunting licence and I won't train you anymore." Ziden said as Sakuya bit her lip in anger.

" Jeez, isn't that going a bit far Ziden?" Pit asked as Ziden shook his head.

" Silvia was always a headstrong girl. Unless I do something like this, she'd get herself killed." Ziden said as Sakuya stormed off with Seika

following after her.

" Guys, get ready for the Zealots when they get there. Lets go!" Ziden, Utsuho and Marisa all teleported to the Wily Castle as they were standing outside it.

They were about to run inside it as a large glob of yellow goop in front of them as Ziden grimaced.

" You two get going! I handle this thing! Find Wily and Capture him Alive!" Ziden ordered as Marisa and Utsuho flew past the blob and entered the castle as Ziden drew his blade.

Marisa and Utsuho flew through the base, looking at all the tanks and such as they saw loads of Zealots pouring into a large tunnel as Marisa was struck in the shoulder with a laser shot as she landed on the ground.

" Hmm? Who the heck shot me down, ze!?" Marisa asked as she saw 4 machines running towards her with the largest one being the leader. " I got these 4! Go get Wily!"

Utsuho listened to Marisa and flew off to find Wily as she landed in a pitch black room. Her third was glowing dimly in the darkness as she looked around the room when she heard some one laughing hard.

" So you finally got here, I've been waiting for you punks!" Wily declared as the lights turned on as he was in a massive dinosaur like machine.

" Okay, just come with me quietly and I won't have to hurt you!" Utsuho warned as Wily laughed.

" Oh! I'm going to enjoy smashing you!" Dr Wily declared as his Wily Machine 9 charged towards Utsuho as she pointed her Third Leg at it.

Back outside...

Ziden is seen running through the village outskirts as several orange blobs are seen chasing after him.

" Time to take this Yellow Devil down!" Ziden declared as the Yellow Devil came together and towered over him.

### **Dr Wily Castle ( Mega Man Power Battle)**

The Yellow Devil began to walk towards Ziden as he dashed around the slow creature, slashing all over its body, doing no form of damage as it looked down at him.

The Yellow Devil quickly reacted to his attacks and slammed its hand down onto him, sucking him into his body, as Ziden struggled to break from his prison before he shot into the trees and crashed right through them as the Devil ran towards him and slammed into the ground.

Ziden was crushed under the weight of the massive devil as he struggled to lift it as his hands were sucked into its gooey body as he was sucked into its body.

Ziden struggled to break free as he set his body aflame, trying to melt his body, only for the Yellow Devil to shoot him into the air and fired his fist at the airborne Ziden, striking him across the back as it grabbed him in his fist and yanked him down towards the ground, forcing him into the ground as he shot a ball of fire into the Devil's eye, stunning him as he punched Ziden in retaliation, not stopping his physical attacks as Ziden's bones began to crunch and break as several silver knives and large stones are blasted into its body.

Ziden looks over to his left and saw Sakuya and Tenshi running towards him.

" Get your ass up! Don't tell me that you're getting soft, Ziden!" Tenshi yelled as she yanked him to his feet as Sakuya noticed that his body was healing much faster than normal.

" Master, you've regained another power?" Sakuya asked as he nodded.

" Yeah, but enough talk. Sakuya, Dumbass! Lets go!" Ziden ordered as he charged at the demon as Lightning struck the ground in front of him.

Ziden looked up and saw a woman floating down towards him as he noticed the woman's clothing. She had red eyes and short violet blue hair. She wears a white and red shirt, a long black skirt, and a hat with a red bow and two long ribbons extending out. She has as a white and red shawl entwined along her arms and blouse. Both the shawl and the shirt glows in scarlet color.

" Pardon me for stopping you, Mr Icrim, But I believe we should come up with a strategy before we attack this creature again." The woman said as Tenshi walked up to that woman.

" Iku? You know this dirtbag?" Tenshi asked as Iku slapped her in the back of the head. " Ow! What was that for!?"

" Eldest Daughter, that was foolish of you to get banished from Heaven like that! Why would you destroy Heaven like that!?" Iku asked as Tenshi pointed at Ziden.

" Blame him! Its his fault!" Tenshi yelled as Ziden shrugged.

" You were the one whom caused the damage anyways." Ziden said as he turned to the Yellow Devil.

" And now you are in his care from now on. You have to listen to everything he tells you to do and I will reinforce that policy myself." Iku said as Tenshi growled.

" Focus your attacks onto its eye! That's it weak spot! Don't let it grab you either!" Ziden yelled as the Yellow Devil fired his fist at the group, forcing them to seperate as they ran towards the massive

Devil as slapped Tenshi out of the air, only to get slashed across the eye by Ziden, stunning it as Sakuya threw several knives into its eye.

The Yellow Devil quickly closed its eye and began to separate its body as it began to fly out in random directions at fast speeds.

" Damn! This is insane!" Ziden said while backflipping away from them as Tenshi was slicing the blobs in half with her sword.

Iku raised her finger into the sky as lightning traveled down her finger and shot out from it as she shocked all of the blobs, forcing them back together as Ziden and Tenshi leapt onto the Yellow Devil and began to rapidly stab into its eye with their blades as it began to spark wildly as Ziden and Tenshi jumped off of it as Sakuya fired a barrage knives into its eyes as Iku fired a volley of lightning, blasting the Devil with its weakness as it began to violently surge and then exploded.

The Devil Core is seen rolling towards Ziden as he quickly picked it while smirking an evil smirk.

" Master! No!" Sakuya said as she tried to snatch the core from Ziden.

" Back off, vile woman! This is mine now! To the Victor goes the Spoils!" Ziden stuffed the Devil Core into his jacket as he spotted a large red machine running towards them with Marisa running after it. " Is that Dark Man. Aw man, this blows!" Ziden said as they got ready to fight the large hoard of Zealots and Dark Man as well.

### **Back at the Wily Fortress...**

Wily is seen flying around in the Wily Capsule as he was smirking.

" Time for you to die!" Wily declared as Utsuho pointed her Third Leg at him.

### **Last Battle ( Mega Man 6 Complete Works)**

Utsuho began to fire large balls of fire at the Capsule, only for him to teleport away and fire ball of lightning at her, striking her wing with electircity as it stunned her for a second.

Wily fired several ice balls at her as she grazed the both of them and melted the other with her flames as they slammed into his capsule as Siren rang out in his machine.

" What!? Raidiation! So that's what this girl could do!? Time to finish her before I get too sick from her presence!" Wily declared as he fired balls of fire at her as Utsuho used her wings to block it.

Utsuho pointed her arm cannon at Wily and smirked. " Hell Wave Cannon!" Utsuho fired a powerful burst of nuclear energy into the Capsule, blasting it back in the wall, causing it crack as he teleported away and above her as lightning gathered at the bottom of it.

" Die!" Lightning fired down from the machine and struck Utsuho through the chest, shock ing her violently as she began to cough up blood and fired at nuke shot above her, blasting the capsule into the ceiling.

" Oh no!" Wily's Machine began to overload and exploded as Wily is sent flying across the room as he ran into the other room.

" Hey! Get back here!" Utsuho flew after the Fleeing Wily as she entered a large room with a large containment tank.

" So you beat my Capsule huh? That was unexpected for you to beat it so easily. You have forced my hand in this one. I planned on using this prototype to kill Megaman, but you will be his first target!" Wily began to type in something into a nearby computer as the tank began to empty its green fluids into a drain as Utsuho watched as the red machine walked out of th tank with long flowing blonde hair as Utsuho felt a great sense off danger coming from this machine. \* Go Zero! You are my ultimate creation, now go! Kill my enemies in your path! My beloved God of Destruction!"



Zero's eye lit as he walked towards Utsuho slowly as she pointed her third leg at him.

### **Unknown Boss Battle ( Megaman Unlimited)**

Utsuho fired several large fire balls at Zero, only for him to slap them away with his hands as he walked towards her with a neutral expression on his face. Utsuho began to rapid fire her attacks as Zero calmly slapped them away with ease as he grabbed her by the throat and threw her through several walls as she landed on her back and skidded across the ground.

Zero dashes through the hole in the wall and kicks Utsuho in the chest with enough force to shatter her rib as she was sent crashing into the wall with Zero charging at her with his fist pulled back as he slammed it into her face, shattering it as he began to smirk wildly and began to punch her head into the wall.

Utsuho quickly fired a blast of Nuclear Energy into Zero's face, stunning him and forcing him back from her as she formed a blade of light as he picked up a lead pipe and charged at her.

He came down at her with a powerful head strike that was quickly overpowering her as he tore through the light blade and slammed the pipe right down onto the large eye on her chest, smashing it as she shrieked in pain as Zero struck her across the face with the lead pipe, sending her rolling across the ground as Zero struck her the base of her spine, nearly crippling her as he stomped on her right arm, causing a nasty muscle and bone snapping noise as she cried out in pain and cried for help as well.

Zero grabs her by the face and smashes her head into the ground, over and over again as he laughed Manically as he threw her into a tank as he grabbed her Third Leg and began to violently pull on her arm. Utsuho began to cry harder as she felt her shoulder being torn from its socket and soon it began to rip from her flesh as her arm was torn off by Zero's brutal rampage as she fell the ground, trying to clutch her her missing arm Zero got ready to finish her off.

Zero's body soon began to give off sparks as he fell backwards, immobile and unmoving as Wily appeared in his Ufo and picked up Zero as Utsuho tried to get to her feet as she heard a blaring alarm.

" WARNING! This building is about to self Destruct in ten seconds! Please escape now." A voice said as Wily escaped in his UFO as Utsuho could barely move from her spot as she heard the countdown reached down. Tears rolled her eyes as she soon closed her eyes and began to mutter something as a bright flash of light enveloped the room.

Outside the Fortress is seen exploding in a mass of flames as a shockwave began to blast away most of the Forest of Magic as flames began devouring the lands.

Satori is seen sitting in her room, reading a book with her sister Koishi as she went to grab her cup, only for it to crack when she reached for it. That gave her a bad feeling as she felt the explosion coming from Wily's lab.

*In the Netherworld...*

Phantom is seen standing in front of the Saigyō Ayakashi as the last of the seals were being broken as the Evil Spirit is seen smirking. " Soon, the Ultimate evil of the Land of Illusions will be mine."

*In the Village outskirts...*

Yuyuko is seen running towards as her legs rapidly disappearing as she dove into his chest as he screamed in pain as Yuyuko fused her very existence with his on a mere fear filled impulse as he collapsed onto the ground, unmoving.

*Fun Facts:*

*1. Yeah because I had some Robot Master's have different weaknesses they were all from different games.*

*2. Zero?! What was he doing here!? Well, I took some homage from Megaman Unlimited ( Great Game btw, play it) and added him in.*

*Author's notes: Sorry for such the Late Delay, my new job is draining on me and since I got into Rping on Facebook, well, don't worry! I will speed up these Chaps in the future!*

## Gensokyo's End: Part 2: The Tree Awakens

Ziden is seen slowly getting to his feet as he sees a white blob floating around him as he looked confused from what was going on.

" What the hell happened to me?" Ziden asked as Yuyuko was seen coming out of the blob.

" I'm so sorry! I didn't mean to latch onto you soul like that! But I was going to disappear!" Yuyuko said as she grabbed onto him as he felt pain come through his body.

" Geh, blegh!" Ziden began to violently vomit up blood as Yuyuko got out of the way. " The hell!? Ugh, my heart!" Ziden is seen clutching his chest as Yuyuko seemed saddened by this.

" My powers are hurting you again." Yuyuko seemed deeply saddened by this as Ziden remembered back to when he first heard those words.

" No, I can withstand the pain Yuyuko. We have to help the others fight those Zealots." Ziden said as he got his feet.

*" The battle has already begun Ziden. That demon from Makai is laying waste to the village so go stop it."* Mima said in his head as he sees Yuyuko pulling out the star rod

" Eh? Damn! I should go fight that demon then! Lets go Yuyuko!" Ziden jumps into the air and leapt towards the large balls of lightning as he spotted them wrecking the village.

Ziden is seen stopping underneath the creature as he spots a golden woman standing between the orbs as he glared at her. " And who the hell are you lady?" Ziden asked while spinning his blades.

" I am Yuugen Muugen, a demon sealed away because of her power. Now I am free to reign hell over this world and no human shall stop

me, not even the Slayer of Overlord Oscura." YM said as she shot lightning at Ziden's feet.

" Heh! I guess its time for a Lightning Battle!" Ziden yelled as Yuugen Muugen charged at him.

Lightning battle ( Kid Icarus Uprising)

Ziden is seen throwing kicks at the woman made of Lightning as she blocked each strike with her forearm.

Yuyuko is seen firing a barrage of stars at her, blasting the demon to pieces with the stars as a lightning bolt struck her as Ziden felt it as well.

" What the-"

" You're like a Half Ghost right now! Anything that hurts me, hurts you!" Yuyuko warned as the Lightning woman is seen punching the ground near Yuyuko as she dodged the attack by jumping back.

zZiden is seen slamming the heel of his foot into the woman's face as he followed up with a powerful kick to her jaw, launching her into the air as ziden followed up with a powerful punch that smashed her into the ground as the orbs of Lightning is seen slamming into ziden, launching him into the ground as he growled in anger.

Ziden is seen dodging the pillars of lightning as he rolled around trying to get back on the offensive as Yuugen Muugen continues to fire pillars of lightning at the duo as a large blast of wind is seen blastin g the eyes away as Aya is seen standing next to Ziden.

" Heh, looks like I had to save you again, Ziden~! This is getting embarrassing for you~!" Aya teased as Ziden kicked her in the leg.

" Shut it, Aya, we'll talk after we take out this oversized Light Bulb." Ziden said as he dashed past the lightning woman and slashed her across the chest as Yuyuko slapped her across the face with her fan.

Aya used her speed to tackle the woman through a Building as Ziden sliced a lightning orb in half as she screamed in pain from the attack.

Aya uses her fan to blast YM into the air as she began to dash around her rapidly striking her with powerful kick, breaking her bones as Aya became a black blur in the sky as she kicked the life out of YM as Ziden grabbed her from behind and slammed her into the earth, shattering the ground as YM body is seen fading away.

" This is not over... we will meet again, young hero." YM said as she disappeared in a flash of lightning as Yukari and Youmu appeared next to them.

" Ziden! We've got a problem at the Netherworld!" Yukari said as Ziden and Yuyuyko frowned.

"... Lets go. everyone can handle the Zealots until we return from the Netherworld." Ziden said as he was sucked into a gap to the Netherworld.

Outside the Village...

Marisa is seen dodging laser shots from Dark Man as he was surrounded by mirror like objects that were blasting back their attacks.

" Tch! This robot is pissing me off, ze!" Marisa said as she tried to slam her broom into the machine, only for him to leap over her and blast her in the back with laser shot, burning her back as she fell forward with a large wound on her back as Iku shot lightning at Dark Man as a Warrior Zealot took that bolt through the chest and died on the spot.

Reimu is seen helping Marisa to her feet as Mario and Luigi is seen fighting off swarms of Zealots as Ike, Dante and Ryu Hayabusa are seen slicing through several Zealots as Marisa points her weapon at Dark Man as he charged at her.

## **Proto Man's Castle ( Mega Man 5 Complete Works)**

Dark Man is seen charging at Marisa and Reimu as he leapt into the air and fired down with powerful laser blasts as they both leapt backwards to dodge the blasts as Alice sent her dolls after him as he blasted them away.

Iku used her scarf like a whip and grabbed Dark Man and slammed him into the ground as Ike charged at him, only to be blocked by a Warrior Zealot and knocked him away.

Dark Man pointed his buster at Tenshi and blasted her in the face with molten lasers as she was blasted back as Meiling with a rapid kick as she struck the mirror and was bounced back.

Mario and Luigi used a team attack and threw a flaming ball of lightning as it slammed into Dark Man and blasted him back into a tree as Kirby dropkicked him through it.

Reimu is seen seen blasting Zealots with her talismans as she dropkicked another as Luigi performed a spin kick and struck Dark Man, sending him spinning as a Bomb Arrow is seen exploding into his back as everyone saw Link running towards Dark Man with the Master Sword out as they noticed this Link looked tougher than the Link they met.

Sakuya throws a barrage of knives at the Zealots as they were torn to shreds by the attacks as Dark Man fell onto his knee as it glared at them as Marisa pointed her Hakkerro at him.

" Screw you, you scarlet colored bag of bolts!" Marisa fired her Master Spark at the machine, blasting it away as the Zealots focused their assault on the group.

*Meanwhile in the Netherworld...*

Ziden, Yukari, Yuyuko, Youmu are seen standing before a massive tree as it was blooming as Phantom was standing on a root.

" Ah, you have finally come, Young Hero, Youkai of Boundaries, Ghost Princess and Gardener. I have been waiting for you guys to come to me. This ancient Eldritch Youkai is awaking and soon it will kill all beings in this place and Planet. Phantom said as Jedah Dohma appeared next to him.

" Jedah! SO you're here too huh." Ziden said.

" Of course I'm here, the souls here are quite necessary for my goals to save all souls in this Universe." Jedah declared as Yuyuko looked confused.

" Saving all souls? What do you mean by that?" Yuyuko asked.

" That freak over there wishes to take everyone's soul and fuse them into one being!" Ziden explained as Jedah simply placed his arms behind him.

The Saigyō Ayakashi is seen swaying back and forth as Ziden glared at the tree as Phantom rushed at him and threw him through the building behind him as Phantom chased after him as Youmu ran after Phantom as Yukari and Yuyuko looked at Jedah as he flew down to them

## **The 13th Struggle ( Kingdom Hearts 2)**

Ziden is seen rolling backwards and swung his blade upwards creating a powerful flame that blasted the floor apart as Phantom phased through it and swung his scythe at Ziden's head. Ziden ducked under it and slammed his fist into Phantom's chest as Youmu slashed him across the back.

Ziden slides in between Phantom's legs and slammed his leg into his shin, knocking him off balance as Ziden followed up by kicking him through a wall.

" Fierce Demon Fang!" Youmu created a powerful blast of energy that blasts Phantom into the air as Ziden smashed him into the



ground as the Saigyō Ayakashi roared.

Ziden and Youmu paled as the massive tree began to rise and float into the air as Phantom floated towards and created a portal to hell behind Yuyuko as she was pushed into it as Ziden dove into the portal after her as Yukari watched Phantom open up a portal. " Soon your Gensokyo shall be turned to ash from this ancient Treant." The Ayakashi is seen floating through the portal and entering it completely as she saw Yuyuko's corpse in the vines.

" No, please don't do this to her." Yukari said as she opened a Gap back to Gensokyo as Youmu jumped into it.

### **Back in Gensokyo...**

The Massive tree is seen crashing into the ground as its roots began to impale several Zealots and Tengu and almost got impaled was Reimu as she looked at horror whom did get impaled.

" Ma... ma... ma... MARISA!" Reimu screamed in horror as several roots were tearing through her body.

Authors note: I AM SO SORRY! This chap is so short because I want to get it out, I'll go back and revise it later, I promise! Next chap is longer.

## Gensokyo's End: Part 3: Destruction

Reimu is seen looking at her friend whom impaled through the chest with roots as the blood was pooling onto the ground as everyone was stunned by the sight.

The Roots pulled out of her chest as she collapsed onto the ground for Reimu to catch her.

" Marisa! Dont die! Please don't leave me!" Reimu is seen shaking Marisa as she stared into her eyes.

"Rei... mu... looks... like... I'm... not... going to see... this adventure to the end... ze..." Marisa's eyes are becoming dull in color as her blood began to stain the ground as she was soon seen unmoving as tears were pouring down Reimu's eyes.

" Marisa? You're just sleeping arent you? I-I know you were always working your self to death, you-you just to rest." Reimu said as Alice stormed over to her with tears in her eyes. Alice slapped Reimu hard across the face.

" Reimu! Snap out of it! Marisa is dead!" Alice yelled through her tears as Reimu shook her head.

" No, Marisa's not dead. She's just sleeping right now, tired from all her hard work." Reimu was obviously in severe denial as he held Reimu close to her while Alice tried to help her, only for Ike and Dante to stop her.

" Don't, shes not going to listen to you, her mind is crushed by the loss of her friend, we have to deal with this tree now." Dante looks up at the massive tree as they hear a deep voice laughing.

" I am finally free to feast upon this world again. I am the Ancient Treant known as Saigyou Ayakashi! This world will be brought to its

knees by my power!" SA declared as it released a wave of despair as the Great Tengu created a whirlwind and struck the tree.

### **Inadequacy ( Runescape)**

Dante and Vergil are seen running towards the SA with their swords drawn as they sliced through the root, sending them flying as Sora blasted the tree with fire a.

Mokou and Ryu were running long the roots like ninja as they slammed their feet into its bark, pushing it back as Ryu slashed the tree with his blade causing it to roar in anger.

" Is that your best, Dragon Ninja? I'm not one of those pathetic fiends that you faced in the past." SA Declared as two black holes appeared on its face, signifying that it can see now.

"Ngh..." Hayabusa is surprised by SA's words as it grabbed his body and slammed it into the ground. " Grah!"

" Ryu!" Mokou blasted the tree with her flames as it stared at her as pink flames are seen in its eyes.

" Foolish Immortal Child, must I kill you like you like that Moon Girl does?" SA asked as Mkou flinched from it knowing that it knew about her. A crack is seen forming on its face as it formed a mouth with a pink flame burning in its mouth. " Die." SA breathes its pink flames onto Mokou, dousing her in flames as she screamed in pain.

Keine is seen watching her friend burn into ashes as she fired several light beams at the tree as it didn't even notice her attack.

Lucci and Kaku are striking the creature with powerful Ranyaku attacks as it laughed at them.

" How pathetic are you assassins? Getting beaten mere Pirates?" SA said as he slammed them both into the ground as Ryu fired several Hadouken's into its eye.

" Go down vile creature! I won't allow your evil to stain this world."  
Ryu declared.

" I can sense the Murderous Intent within you boy, let it consume your soul."" SA declared as Ryu looked shocked at the tree's words. The SA breathed fire onto Ryu, sending him flying into the woods as several Kappas are seen spraying him with water.

Youmu is seen slicing through the roots with Vergil next to her. " You're not bad with the sword, Mr. Vergil."

Vergil used a Judgement Cut to slice through a large number of roots. " I was going to say the same with you Youmu."

SA is seen using his roots to block an assault from Tenma and Aya whom were blasting him with powerful wind blades.

" Lowly Tengu, be gone from my sight or I will end your entire species." SA warned as Tenma glared at him through his red mask.

" We've stopped you in the past, Saigyoku! We shall stop you again!" Tenma declared.

" How foolish, I do not see that worthless hero here with you worthless creatures and he was the one whom was the thorn in my side with him not dying from my assault. But he is trapped in Hell right now, along with this woman's soul." SA lifts up Yuyuko's non-decomposed body as everyone froze as her eyes opened and stared at everyone.

" Its revived her to be its puppet, such a terrible fate." Yukari said as Yuyuko pointed her hand towards the Youkai Mountain as a ball of light formed in the tree's mouth.

" Let me show you the terror of the being you face now." The SA fired the ball as a thin laser that tore through the Youkai Mountain, engulfing all of it into a massive explosion as everyone was startled by the treant's power.

The Tengu and Kappa were horrified by the attack on their home as the Tengu's anger rose while the Kappa's Morale dropped.

Mario and Luigi leapt into the air with Cape Feathers and began to fly around the tree at unholy speed as they smacked them with their hammers.

" Grr, accursed mustached humans! Be gone!" The SA is seen trying to swat Mario and Luigi from the air while growling as Yuyuko released a pink mist from her mouth as it swallowed a nearby Tengu male as his body began to violently shake as his soul was ripped from his body.

Link is seen throwing bombs into the creature's mouth and causing bark to blast out of it as Eirin followed up with precise arrow shots.

" Foolish Hero of Twilight, I shall crush you like Zant should have!" SA shot its roots towards Link, hoping to impale him as he blocked the entire assault with his shield as Ichigo fired a blue wave of energy, destroying the roots as it glared at him. " Substitute Soul Reaper, don't get cocky since you took down Aizen, I will crush you like the worm that you are!" The SA's Flowery branches are seen shaking as Cherry blossoms are seen crashing towards Ichigo.

" ! What the-" Ichigo uses his blade to protect himself as he blocked the attack as it sliced his blade as Erza sliced the tree across the face.

" Accursed Fairy Woman! Must I visit your world and show your world what True Death is?" SA asked as Erza froze and was smacked into the ground by his root as he breathed out more pink flames as Reimu remained on the ground.

Yorihime and Toyohime are seen standing on the roots of the tree as Toyo had her fan out.

" The Cowards whom feared death are now standing before the Embodiment of Death, I'm quite shocked." SA declared as Toyo

swung her fan at him only for him to breath fire and cancel it out with equal powers.

" What!? It stopped the fan with its power!? Impossible!" Toyohime was frightened of the creatures power.

" All of you shall fall into the depths of Despair." The SA released a massive surge of Despair as everyone there was crippled to the point of being unable to move.

" What is this... I can't move." Alice said.

" This unholy feeling... we're all going to die." Sakuya said while biting down on her lip.

" No way... it can't end like this!" Pit said as Palutena struggled to move

" Watch Yukari Yakumo, watch as your homes are razed to the ground in an instant." The SA fired more lasers into the air, causing them to rain down over all of Gensokyo, destroying everything in a matter of seconds as everyone was horrified by how powerful the creature was as Yukari felt her blood burning with anger.

" PHANTOM! YOU WILL PAY FOR THIS YOU F\*\*\*\*\* BASTARD! YOU HEAR ME!? I WILL TEAR YOU LIMB FROM LIMB!" Yukari was beyond angry from the destruction of her homeland as Phantom is seen laughing.

" How will you do that when you al shall die here?" Phantom asked as the SA roared as a his roots tried to slam down onto the heroes as fire blocked all of the roots as Ziden is seen holding a guitar as Yuyuko was standing next to him, holding her hands together as if praying.

" Everyone, don't you dare give up now! No matter how vast the darkness is devouring you guys, remember that in every darkness that there's a bright light waiting to bak free!" Ziden said as a bright

light washed over the group as he began to play the guitar, playing a tune that washed over the area.

### **GONG ( Super Robot Wars Alpha 3 \* Final Boss Version\*)**

" Gah!? What's going on!?" SA could feel the souls inside of him rebelling against him as everyone heard a voice talking to them.

" Reiji, Xiaomu... do not give in to this creature's power." Reiji and Xiaomu are seen shocked at the voice.

" Father!?" Reiji said as tears poured from Xiaomu's eyes.

" You've been trained well by Xiaomu and me. Show this creature the true might of the ARisu arts!" Reiji's Father declared as Reiji and Xiaomu got to their feet.

" Kaguya... Stand on your feet, my precious little girl." Kaguya is seen tearing up at the voice as Tsukuyomi is also seen crying as well.

" Mother! Kaguya cried out as Tsukuyomi is seen wiping his eyes.

" Don't allow this creature to destroy this world, Kaguya, stand strong and fight against this despair." Kaguya and the others are seen getting to their feet.

" Mokou... my precious little girl." Mokou is seen getting to her feet as she hears her father's voice.

" Father?!"

" You have been trained in the arts of the Fujiwara Clan, show this creature what it means to take on a Fujiwara!" Mokou's father exclaimed as she got to her feet.

" Ryu Hayabusa... get to your feet my son." Ryu is seen hearing his father's voice. " Do not allow this creature to defeat you, you are the one and only Super Ninja of this world."

" Yes father." Ryu is seen getting to his feet as the spirits of the dead continued to speak to their loed as every one slowly got back to their feet, only Reimu was seen down on the ground.

" Reimu!" Reimu is seen crying more as everyone heard a familiar voice.

" Marisa!?" Reimu asked as she looked around.

" Reimu! The hell are you doing ze!? This ain't like you wallowing in your tears! Get your ass up and fight this damn tree! Don't let it suck you into its power!" Marisa yelled as Reimu is seen crying.

" But... I can't do this without you by my side Marisa! I can't do this with out my best friend..." Reimu said as Marisa sighed.

" Reimu, I'm always going to be by your side! I'm not going to Heaven nor Hell! Hell, I'm going to be your half ghost and never leave you alone! Even when you have that private time with a pink toy you bought at the Koirindou!" Marisa said as Reimu's face turned red.

" Marisa!" Reimu yelled.

" Pink toy? Can I see it?" Sora asked as Reimu blushed harder.

" No!" Reimu yelled as she got to her feet and glared at the massive tree.

Everyone's spirits were raised to the max as they got to their feet.

" Mother, I shall not fail you." Vergil declared as he Devil Triggered as did Dante.

"Meddlesome fools! I shall crush you all!" The SA declared, only to be forced back by Dante nd Vergil's assualy as it staggered the massive tree as the Tengu ummeloed the tree with wind, tearing it bark.



" Getsuga! Tensho!" Ichigo fired a massive sword wave that swallowed the tree whole as it was sent rolling along the ground as Mokou pulled out a spell card.

" Fujiwara Volcano!" Mokou summons a surge of fire into the air as it slammed into the tree, blasting the bark from its flesh as it roared in pure anger.

" DIE!" It raised its roots into the air and slammed them into the ground, shooting them through several Youkai's hearts as Sora slammed his keyblades into its face, stunning it with his powerful strikes.

Dante is seen using Ifrit to blast the tree with fire as bark was blasted off revealing a skeleton underneath it as white flames were flowing through them. The Lunarians were blasting the tree with everything they had as it roared and fired more lasers as Yukari, Reimu and Ziden created a barrier to block the attack as Yuyuko attack the tree with several Razor sharp butterflies as they flew through the trees.

" I refuse to lose to you humans!" The SA is seen focusing power to his body as a tornado of pink cherry blossoms surrounded him.

Reimu and Marisa's ghost appeared next to each other as they combined their spell cards. " LETS do this! FantasySpark!" Reimu and Marisa fired their trademark attacks as they tore the barrier of cherry blossom as every fired their attack and blasted the tree high into the air while yelling at the heroes.

" Damn you all! I will not die alone!" SA began to glow with an eerie light as souls were being sucked out of several unknown Youkai.

" Hmm, that will not do." Everyone was shocked to hear an unknown voice as they see a Large Human sized blue machine walking next to Shu.

Dark Prison ( 2nd Super Robot Wars OG)

Ziden is seen looking at the Omega Granzon as its chest opened up as he told everyone to move away from the SA as several objects were being sucked into its chest as Shu began to chant something.

" A convergent black hole possesses a Special Exposition." The Granzon began is seen creating a sphere sized black hole in its hands. It thrusts it hands at the sphere causing purple tendrils to fly out and tear the ground apart. " The Naked singularity is consuming Space and Time." The ball begins to expand as the Granzon's Yellow sphere's began to glow in the darkness as the Lunarian's were marveling at the machine's power. Purple lightning entered the sphere, making it stronger. " You cannot escape the Gravitational collapse! Vanish beyond the Event Horizon! Black Hole Crusher, fire!" Shu ordered the machine to fire the massive black hole as shot forward, shattering the ground behind the Granzon completely as the sphere smashed into the SA. The sphere carried the tree of legends far into the atmosphere as the sphere expanded into a tree black hole as it exploded causing a massive explosion as Phantom and Jedah both looked horrified at the power of the Machine.

" Unbelievable! That machine... it utterly destroyed the Sa when we could never do that." Tsukuyomi was frightened at the power of the machine.

" Hmm, so it seems that i solved your tree problem, you're welcome by the way." Shu said as Ziden glared at him as a piece of the tree landed in a portal as Phantom and Jedah left the world completely.

" Gensokyo... Marisa... its all gone now..." Reimu said as she held back her tears as Ziden went to her body and placed his glowing green arm over her. " Ziden?" Ziden placed his hand over Marisa's chest as life began to flow into her. Marisa is seen springing upwards as she looked around.

" Eh?... I'm... alive?" Marisa asked as Ziden called down his ship as everyone backed away from it. Reimu tackled her as she cried.

" Everyone from Gensokyo! Aboard the ship! You'll be living there until my friends repair this land to what it used to be." Ziden said as he walked away into the ship as everyone from Gensokyo funneled itnot he ship as he stopped Eirin.

" Yes ziden?" Eirin asked.

" We need to keep an eye on Marisa, she may not look like it, but coming bakc to life like that is going to have some reprecusions." Ziden explained as Eirin nodded as the ship flew back into Space.

Ziden, Reiu Sora and Mario as seen looking at the worlds they have et to explore as theyy notice something strange.

" What the hell?! Why is Hollow Bastion covered in Darkness!?" Ziden yelled as he looked at the screen.

" Hollow Bastian is going to have to wait a while, we're exhausted fro the battle against the SAigyou Ayakashi." Reimu said as Sora and Mario agreed.

Several hours later...

Yukari was back from reprogramming a large hologram room into recreating Gensokyo as she dusted her hands off.

Ziden is seen in the teleportation room with his team mates as he explained the situation.

" So we're heading back to Hollow Bastian? What's happening?" Ike asked.

" No idea, that's why we're going there now to find out. Ziden said as Byakuren and Yuugi stood at the ready.

They teleported to the world as the sharper noses of the group could smell blood of the battlefield.

Fun Facts:

1: Yes, that was a reference to the Special Dialogues in Super Robot Wars and trust me, The SA is not going to be the only ones doing that!

Author's Notes: Stress... it held this chapter back but now this arc is done!

## Hollow bastion 2nd Visit

Reviving Hollow Bastion ( Kingdom Hearts 2)

" Hmm, something is off here." Ziden said as he looked around Hollow Bastian.

" Hollow Bastion? Such a dark name for a town like this. Byakuren said as Tenshi didn't seem to care.

" Seems like a place where booze isn't going to be easy to find." Yuugi said.

" So this is another world? I can sense the evil in this place." Vergil said as he walked down the steps.

Sora spots several Heartless running off as they disappeared from sight. " Lots of Heartless running around" Sora pointed out as Reiji spotted several Nobodies as well.

Link simply remained silent as he looked around the Shop area as Kirby looked around this new world... to him anyways.

" Hmm this place seems familiar to me somehow but I can't remember where." Pit said while scratching his chin.

" i never thought I'd be out in some new world right now." Ichigo said as Erza agreed with him.

" I may get lucky enough to see the Magic of this world and many others." Erza hoped as Patchouli bought more Ethers and Potions for the battles to come.

Ziden is seen walking around the area as he wondered why this world was covered in darkness as he smelled the blood of many soldier nearby as he smelled a familiar one as well. " Hmm?That emo is here too?" Ziden asked as Reimu raised an eyebrow.

" Emo? What's that?" Reimu asked.

" Oh?Those are just people whom seem down about everything,like to mope around alot and complain." Ichigo answered.

"An Emo huh? I wonder who that could be?" Sora wondered as Marisa shrugged.

" Lets go find him then ze!" Marisa said as she ran up the stairs with Donald and Goofy unning after them. They spotted a yellow haired man that was leaning against the wall, wearing all black as he had his eyes closed as he opened them to look at them for a second, only for him to reclose his eyes.

" Well heya Cloud! That is you right?" Goofy asked as Cloud nodded.

" I'm looking for someone." Cloud simply threw out there as Sora Donald and Goofy looked at each other.

" Really? i thought you looked little different, Cloud." Donald said as Cloud looked at them.

" HE did this to me." Cloud answered.

" He who?" Xiaomu asked.

" Sephiroth. He's Darkness formed from my heart." Cloud explained as Ziden smirked.

" So the momma's Boy is here on this world? Interesting." Zidewn said as Reimu raised an eyebrow at Ziden's words.

" Well uh, what does this-a fella look-a like?" ario asked.

" Silver hair, carries a long sword. I fyout find him, let me know." Cloud said as he walked off.

" Hmm, looks like we've got a little side quest from that!" Xiaomu declared.

" Side Quest? What's wrong with you fox woman?" Vergil asked as Xiaomu shrugged.

" It makes sense in our case, we're basically in a Video Game right now! If we die! Ziden can just pop us back to life." Xiaom stated as Ziden shook his head.

" It doesn't work that way, if you get killed I can only revive you if the person that killed you is dead or I revive you by using my life Force." Ziden explained as Yuyuko floated around him as Youmu looked confused.

" Oh,so you could revive me since that tree was destroyed right?" Marisa asked while kicking a pebble near her.

" Yeah... that machine was a powerful one... what the hell was that thing Ziden?" Mokou asked as they walked through the streets.

" I'll tell you once we get to the castle." Ziden said as he yawned.

" hmm, that is quite the Castle, Sora? What was in that castle?" Remilia asked.

" Well, when I was there, that's where Maleficent ruled over this place when the Heartless overtook this place." Sora said as Kirby is seen running ahead into the Merlin's house.

Ziden enters the house as Cid was typing away on the computer. " Hey Cid, What's going on?" Sora asked.

" Heh, look like Leon found Ansem's computer in the castle." Cid answered.

" What!? HE did!?" Sora said as he looked at everyone.

" Sounds like we found something good, we should head to this castle and see what's up." Reimu said as everyone agreed.

" Just be careful out there, the Hearless are going crazy ere, you should be get ready to be fighting alot out there." Cid warned as everyone nodded.

Everyone began to walk to the massive castle as they reached a large circular platform as Ziden noticed something off about a nearby wall as he ooked at it.

" Something wrong Ziden? Mokou asked as Ziden shrugged.

" I'm good Mokou, just thought i sensed something beyond this wall." Ziden said as they walked into the castle as they encountered Heartless along the way as Vergil and Erza tore through them as they walked through the castle as they reached a messy castle room.

" Hmm? What's this place?" Reimu sked as Spotted a picture of a silver haired man with a neutral expression on his face.

" Who si that guy in the picture." Reimu asked.

" That's Ansem, Seeker of Darkness." Sora said.

" Sop that's Ansem? He's alot more evil looking than I would have imagined." Mokou said as she pulled out a cig and started to smoke.

" Could yuou plese not smoke in here Miss mokou? Its really nauseating." Byakuren said as Mokou didn't care.

" Don't care, I need a Smoke after today." Mokou said as Ziden snatched it frm her mouth. ' Hey! Give that back you asshat!"

" Make me ya dumbass!" Ziden said as Mokou set her hands on fire.

" Hey. Knock it off you two." Leon said as he walked itno the room.

" Hmm? Oh, hey Squall. Hows it going?" Ziden asked.



" Its Leon and its going fine. We found Ansem's computer in the next room." Leon said as everyone looked at each other.

" Wiat, th that means I could find out where Riku is!" Sora stated out of nowhere.

"... What?" Reiji asked as he looked confused.

" yeah I second that, what?" Tenshi said as everyone looked at him.

" Um, well if the Computer belonged to ansem, then he must have had info on Riku's whereabouts." Sora explained as everyone seem skeptical.

" Meh, I'm too tired to care, lets go already." Mokou is seen lumbering to the computer room as everyone followed her there as they saw the comp with a mysterious machince hovering over them.

What's that thing?" Ziden asked as Reimu and Mario stood in front of it.

" No clue, but this is Ansem's computer." Leon pointed to it as Sora is seen typing on it.

" Where is Riku?" Sora wondered as the Computer bleeped and came up with an error. " Huh!? Come on! Tell me where Riku is!" Sora smacked the computer.

" WARNING! USERS WILL STOP ABUSING THIS SYSTEM OR THEY SHALL BE PUNISHED FOR THEIR ACTIONS." A Mechanical voice blurred out as Ziden raised an eyebrow as a small blue creature landed on the keyboard.

" Hmm? What's a Carbuncle doing here?" Ziden asked as it ran on the keyboard.

" Hey! get from down there!" Donald jumped up to the keyboard, scaring off the Carbuncle as the computer hadd an alarm going off on it.

" THIS IS YOUR LAST WARNING USER. DESIST YOUR ACTIONS AT ONCE." The voice warned again as Donald flied and accidentally stepped on the keyboard as an alarm blared.

" Donald!" Everyone yelled.

" THAT WAS YOUR FINAL WARNING, PREPARED TO BE PUNISHED!" Everyone is seen on guard as Donald, Goofy, Luigi, Link and Pit were seen standing next to Reimu and Sora as a laser hit all of them as they were being digitized by the machine as everyopne watched in horror.

" Oh... so that's what that machine is for." Xiaomu said.

" PIT!" Palutena could be heard worried for the angel as the group was fully digitized by the machine.

" Why did I get Tron vibes from that?" IChigo asked.

" You watched Tron?" Ziden asked.

" With my sisters when I was younger." Ichigo answered.

" Would you two be quiet... our friends just got sucked into a computer." Patchouli said as Ziden shrugged.

" They'll be fine in there. I doubt anything bad will hapeen." Aya said as she took pictures of the room.

" Gosh fellas, did something happen?" Everyone turned to see a certain mouse as Ziden raised an eyebrow.

" Hmm? Do I know you?" Ziden wondered as the mouse and him were walking and talking.

In the datascape...

Sora and the others are seen in a digital city as their clothes were changed to match their digital environments as their clothes and

weapons gained blue, mechanical lights as Donald and Goofy were being held by a man with red lights on his skintight suit.

" So we have caught you users at last. It is time for you to receive your punishment." a man in Red Digital Armor said as Pit drew his weapons.

" You and what army!?" Pit asked, ready for a fight as he shocked Donald and Goofy.

" Wait! Don't! We'll go with you!" Sora said as everyone surrendered.

They were all being brought to a cell as they spotted a man in blue digital armor.

" So you programs were brought here too huh?" The man asked.

" Eh? We're not Programs, we're from the real world." Reimu answered as the man looked surprised.

" wait, if you're from the real world, then that mean that you guys could help me out with the MCP!" The man said as he explained what was going on.

" So Ansem created this digital world to help him run Hollow Bastion huh? That's kinda cool for a totally evil villain." Pit pointed out.

" But the real issue is... how do we-a get-a outta here?" Mario asked as Link noticed a keyhole on the door.

" There." Link pointed to the door as he attacked the door with his keyblade as it soon began to break

The group is seen walking out of the place as the man is seen stretching his legs.

" So Tron? What was that computer in that room for?" Sora asked.

" I can use that computer to get you guys out of here and you guys can do me a favor and find the password for the DTD." Tron said as everyone nodded.

" I hope this password will be easy to find." Reimu said as Luigi looked around and spotted a large machine with several blocks as Sora is seen rapidly striking one of them as he pushed them back into place as the machine started up as Tron is seen smiling.

" Great, now I can get you back to your world!" Tron said as Sora is seen smiling.

" So where can we go to get out of here?" Donald asked.

" There's a computer room near here where I can properly send you back." Tron led them to a large room filled with computers as they heard a voice speaking to them.

" So you're deciding to help these Users Tron?" An unknown voice asked as Tron looked up to the sky.

" These Users are innocent, I'm going to help them get free of this place!" Tron declared as several Heartless known as Strafers appeared from the screens.

" We gotta stop those screens from popping out those Heartless!" Luigi yelled as he ran over to one of the heartless and slapped him.

Link is seen drawing his blade and slashing through the Heartless while Reimu was blasting the lot of them with holy based attacks as Pit was running around, firing his powerful arrows into them as the Heartless were being quickly wiped out.

Sora is seen freezing the screen as he smirked and hoisted his keyblade onto his shoulder as Tron entered something into the computer as he nodded.

" Alright, now I can use that terminal to send you guys back home!" Tron said as he walked back to the Terminal Room.

Tron is seen typing something onto the comp as everyone waited to be sent back home.

" Once you guys get back home, you have to find the password to the DTD. Tron stated as everyone nodded.

" We will do our best!" Pit is seen smiling as they were teleported back and went back to Ansem's office.

" Hmm? You guys got out of there huh?" Ziden asked.

" Oh boy! Its good to see you again guys!" The mouse-like man said as Sora, Donald and Goofy looked shocked.

" KING MICKEY!" The three yelled in unison as Mickey shushed them.

" Be quiet! You never know who might be listening in." Mickey said as Sora nodded. " ITs Been a while since we last met, Ziden, Xiaomu, Reiji, Mario, Luigi, Pit, Kirby."

" Indeed it has, Mickey!" Mario exclaimed while smiling.

" So how come you guys are here?" Mickey asked.

" This is Ansem's Workspace." Reimu answered.

" Really now! Its been a long time since I was last here!" Mickey said while smiling.

" Anyways, Mickey? Would you happen to know about a password to a DTD on Ansem's Computer?" Mario asked as Ziden is seen moving the picture of Ansem off of the wall.

" Hmm? What's this thing?" Ziden asked as he looked at a Heart that was wrapped in a circle as Goofy looked at soem of the writing.

" D.T.D. Door. To. Darkness." Goofy said as everyone raised an eyebrow.

" Wait, could the password to the DTD have something to do with this Door to Darkness?" Vergil wondered as Mickey is seen cupping his chin.

" If that's the case, then the password should be obvious Sora." Mickey said as Sora scratched his head.

" I do?" Sora asked.

" You know, what 7 things are able to open the door to Darkness?" Mickey asked as ora finally remembered.

" I know the Password now! Come on guys! Lets get back to Tron!" Sora said as Mickey stopped him, handing him an orb with a crown in it.

Ziden and Vergil could feel a demonic presence on the outside fo this place as they ran out of the room with everyone following them as time shot forward suddenly.

Sora and thee others are seen standing over a broken Heartless as the ran into into the next room as Tron is seen typing on the computer, changing the password of the DTD as he quickly teleported them back to Hollow Bastian.

The Group is seen standing in front of the computer as Sora was looking at a picture of a blonde haired man.

" Hmm? Who is this guy Mickey?" Mario asked.

" That's Ansem the Wise." Mickey answered.

" Huh? That's not Ansem." Sora corrected as he brought the King to the picture of the true ansem.

" Ah... It seems that I have some explaining to do about this." Mickey said as he began to explain what was happening.

" What!? So you mean that guy we faced wasn't even the real Ansem?" Sora looked down.

" Cheer up Sora! That just means that the real Ansem must be out there somewhere." Mickey said as a loud explosion is heard coming from outside.

" Eh?! What was that!?" Reimu asked as they all ran out of the room as a red haired woman phased through the wall.

" Targets found. Mission? Kill Reimu Hakurei, Mario Mario, Sora and Ziden Icrim!" The Woman declared as she walked after them.

Fun fact:

1. Yeah, this is a short chapter but the next one will be longer~

## The Heartless Strike back!

Sora and his friends are seen running outside to the underground parts of the castle as they spotted several Armored Knight fighting off Several Dusks.

Pete and Maleficent are seen ordering the Heartless to fight Nobodies. " Maleficent! I think we aren't going to be winning this one!" Pete said as she scoffed him off.

" We will not retreat from these white creatures." Maleficent stated as the Dusk defeated her Heartless. Maleficent scoffed again as she spots the Heroes running to them. " Humph." She disappeared in a flash of green fire with Pete. " HEartless! Ignore the Whites ones and attack Sora and his friends."

The Heartless and Nobodies are seen looking to the heroes as they walked to them.

" Jeez, can't we ever catch a break." Sora summoned his keyblade and got ready to fight.

Mario and Luigi are seen smashing the Armored Knights upwards with their hammers as Link and Pit fired powerful arrows into the airborne heartless as one of the Dusk kicked Donald across the face, sending him flying across the ground as Goofy slammed his shield into the face of the Dusk.

Reimu is seen throwing several amulets at the Heartless and Nobodies, blasting them into the air as she followed up with a powerful drop kick, smashing them into the wall.

Link placed a bomb on his arrow and fired it on the wall, causing it to explode and taking out the Heartless and Nobodies as Crimson Rhapsodies are seen appearing.

" What are those things?" Pit asked.



" Those are Crimson Rhapsodies! They are powerful amgic Using Heartless that are skilled at using Mines to cripple their foes." Palutena explained they floated over to Reimu while creating large sphere of energy next to her as it exploded and sent her soaring into the ceiling.

Reimu smashed into the ceiling as Sora jumped and struck the magic using Heartless with his keyblade, causing them to spin out with each strike. Pit fired an arrow into its face, sending it flying with the strike as Link grabbed one of them with a Clawshot and yanked it to him, striking it with the Master Sword, slicing through the creature in one fell swoop.

Donald is seen bombarding the HEartless with Thundara spells as they rained down on them, ripping through them as the HEartless were seen disappearing as they ran off to the outside of the castle.

A bright flash of light happened above the group as it slammed into the ground blinding them.

" Gah! What's with that light!?" Reimu yelled as a silver haired man with a single black wing was standing there looking at them.

" Wait a second, Silver hair, black wing, long sword. That must be Sephiroth." Mario pointed out.

" Isn't that the guy that Cloud said that's the Dark part of his heart?" Goofy said as Sephiroth chuckled.

" I see, so Cloud said that? So he's finally learned the truth about me huh? Perhaps now is the time I show myself to him." Sephiroth floats into the air and disappeared as Pit seemed jealous.

" That's not fair! He only has one wing yet he could fly!" Pit yelled as he angrily stomped.

" Why its okay Pit, you'll fly some day!" Luigi said as he pouted.

The group of Keyblade heroes are seen running through the Bailey as they spotted Leon fighting off some Heartless.

" Look out!" Leon yelled as several Dancer Nobodies surrounded the group.

Scherzo de Notte ( Kingdom Hearts 2)

Pit is seen firing his arrows at the dancers as they quickly dodged the attacks and slid across the ground gracefully as the group struggled to fight the fast Nobodies.

One of the Dancers got behind Sora and grabbed his shoulders, moving around with him as she stabbed him in the back with her sharp legs. One of the Dancers got behind Ike and kicked him high into the air as she comboed him hard.

" These things are tough!" Pit yelled as he swung his blades at a Dancer, it hits home as it was sent flying into the wall as Link pulled out a ball and chain and slammed it onto a nearby Dancer, smashing it into the ground as Mario and Luigi slammed fireballs and lightning into their foes, sending them flying.

Ike throws his sword into the air, catches it and slammed it down on a Dancer while one of them jumped onto his back. " What!?" The dancer wrapped its legs around you and flips you around and launched him into the air.

Sora and the others soon finished off the Nobodies as they ran off to a cliff. They could see everyone fighting off enemies of all kinds.

Leon and Cloud are seen surrounded by heartless.

" Looks like we're surrounded." Leon said as Cloud gripped his sword tighter.

" Might be troublesome if one more shows up." Cloud said as Leon smirked.

" Then that will be the one I take on." Leon boasted.

" What? You're fighting too?" Cloud asked as Leon and Cloud dashed forward, taking out several Heartless with their blades as the heartless were torn apart as Cloud dashed forward and was surrounded by several Armored Knights as he got ready to fight them, only for a large number of them to be taken out by a long sword.

" Sephiroth!" Cloud yelled as he stood across from him.

" Its been a long time Cloud. i see that you've finally accepted the truth of my existence, but are you ready to face me yet." Sephiroth disappeared into thin air as Cloud tried to track him down.

" Cloud! Wait!" Tifa is seen trying to catch up to him as several Heartless surrounded her as she slammed her fist into their faces and began to fight them off.

Sora and the others looked at the fighting happening as they see the massive Halberd flying over the battlefield as Shadow Bugs came down.

" Even the Subspace Army is attacking in full force. This is one crazy war." Mario said as he tried to run forward, only to be stopped by Mickey.

"Stop right there! You guys gotta get outta here and find your missing friends Sora." Mickey said as he looked around.

" What!? But I can't just abandon everyone here!" Sora said as he looked down." Leon, you guys take care then."

" That's right Sora, you're coming back to the ship with us whether you want to or not!" Goofy declared as the Smashers and Reimu looked at him.

" Now Sora, be a good boy and come with us!" Donald winked at Sora as he got the plan and smiled.

" King Mickey, make sure everyone stays safe out here." Sora asked as he nodded.

" Now get going fellas." Mickey said as everyone looked around before running past him and jumping off the cliff. " Hey!"

" Sorry King Mickey! But we gotta go help our friends!" Sora explained as they leapt down to another cliff.

*Else where...*

Ziden, Vergil and Patchouli are seen looking up at a massive beast made of steel as it glared down at them. " Galleom! Time for you to get wrecked again!: Ziden declared as he drew his blade.

" Make sure you guys keep me guarded! I can't cast spells if I get smashed!" Patchouli yelled as Vergil crouched down as he smirked.

" you better not hold me back, Slayer of Oscura." Vergil stated as Ziden smirked.

" Funny,, I was going to say the same to you, Son of Sparda." Ziden said as Galleom roared while steam billowed from his body.

### **Boss Theme 1 ( Super Smash Bros Brawl)**

Galleom slammed his fist down, creating a shockwave that destroyed the ground underneath him as Ziden and Vergil jumped into the air while patchouli flew into the air while raining down saw blades at the machine.

Galleom quickly punched the blades away as one sliced off Ziden's head as he quickly grew back his head.

Vergil ran along the creature's arm and slashed him across the face, drawing first blood as Ziden kicked Galleom across the face.

Galleom flinched from the powerful hit as Gallaom grabbed Ziden and throw him through the mountains nearby as he crashed everal feet of rubble.

" Tch! Worthless fool!" Vergil slashed Galleom across the chest and began to combo him with his blade as Galleom staggered from the blows.

Galleom performed a spin attack that hits Vergil across the body, racking up a large number of hits that sent him flying him into the air. Galleom grabbed him from Midaair and slammed him hard into the ground as he began to punch the Half Demon as Ziden came from the hole, and throwing fireballs at Galleom.

Galleom tanked the fireballs as he he grabbed Ziden and smashed him into the ground as Patchouli created a dragon made of steam as it slammed into Galleom, blasting the machine back as Vergil swung huis blade upwards, slashing him across the chest as Marisa flew over them, being chased by several Wyvern Heartless.

Marisa fired more Danmaku at the Wyverns as they scattered to dodge the attack and slammed their feet into her chest as Yuugi came down from above and smashed the Wyvern into the ground.

Byakuren came out fo nowhere and drop kicked Galleom, actually sending him flying with the attack as Ziden delivered a haymaker to the creature, sending him high into the air.

Ziden and Vergil leapt into the air after the monsterand began to slice it rpaidly with their blades, tearing off steel with each strike.

Glleom quickly puchned them back down to the earth making a crater in the ground as Mokou blastedthe beast wwith more fire as it grabbed her out of the sky while falling down

Galleom began to choke the life out of Mokou as her bones began to audibly as she screamed in pain as Reiji fired shotgun blasts at the beast while Xiaomu swung her bads, creating a wae of energy she

rode on and slammed into its chest, ng him back as Galleom flipped and landed on his feet.

Galleom pulled hosi fist back and hits Reiji and Xiaomu with a powerful Hay maker that sent them flying through a stone wall as Yuugi punched more Wyvern's out fo the sky.

Ziden is seen kicking Galleom hard in the chest and threw massive fiery fists t Galleom as they sa his chest as Galleom grabbed Ziden.

" What the hell!? Let me go!" Ziden began to rapidly punching the fist s Galleom flew deep into the air and into space as Mokou flew after him.

" GEt back her with my jackass!" Mokou yelled as Galleom broke through the atomsphere as she found it far harder to breath.

Galleom opened up a bomb in its chest as a bright flash of light came from its body as Mokou was blasted back into the atmosphere as she crashed, watching the Subspace Bomb consume the air above her asr Ziden was nowhere to be seen.

Sora and the others landed on a mysterious green and blue platform as Demyx appeared before them.

" Oh... hey there guys!" Demyx said as Sora just stared at him.\

" Gee its this guy again. Didn't you get enough of a beating in the underworld?" Reimu asked.

" Why would the Organization send this guy to fight us?" Sora asked.

" These guys have no hearts right?" Luigi asked.

" Hey we so do have hearts." Demyx answered.

" I bet you that you can't even fight." Sora said.

" You shouldn't judge anyone by appearances." Demyx stated in a dark tone.

" But we sure can." Reimu and the others drew their weapons.

" Ah!" Demyx quickly turned around. " I told them I was the wrong person for this job."

" What's up with this guy?" Pit asked.

" Hmm... I don't think this man is truly evil like the others." Palutena pointed out.

" Then let's just beat the crap out of him." Reimu said as Sora agreed with her words.

" Now get out of our way!" Donald yelled.

" Silence traitor." Demyx turned around and pointed at the group. He raised his hand into the air as water rushed up to his hand and formed his scimitar while smirking.

### **The 13th Dilemma ( Kingdom Hearts 2)**

Demyx summoned more water clones to overwhelm the group as Link threw several bombs in rapid unison to blast the water away while Pit helped by switching to the Ogre Club and smashed several of the water clones into a watery puddle.

Reimu started to blast all of the clones with amulets as they were blasted away as Mario and Luigi ran to Demyx.

" Dance water Dance!" Demyx shot forward like a cannon as he created pillars of water behind him that blasted Mario and Luigi in the air.

" oh crap! That guy's got attacks!" Pit yelled as he was blasted away by the attacks.

Sora switched into Valor form and charged at Demyx, only for him to summon a water pillar right under him.

" Wah!" Sora was hit into the air with the powerful water as he played a tune, raining down balls of water onto the group.

" Dear lord! All these attacks! What the hell is going on!?" Ike yelled as he was smashed in the face with a ball of water. Ike fell onto the ground clutching his face as Link charged at him.

He leapt into the air with his blade pointing down as Demyx panicked and rolled out of the way, causing Link's blade to slam into the ground. Link struggled to get his blade free. as Demyx smacked Link across the face, shattering his nose as he fell backwards.

Pit quickly ran at him with the club and smashed it into Demyx's body, sending him flying into the wall as Reimu hits his body with several powerful fist strikes. demyx cried out in pain from each strike as he sstabbed Reimu in the shoulder with his sitar, knocking her back clutching the bleeding wound as Goofy slammed his sheild into his face.

donald pointed his wand upwards as he used lightning to blast Demyx and shocked the hell out of him as he fell to his knees as water swirled around him and smacked Donal across the face, sending her flying along the ground as Sora ran ontop of the water at unholy speeds.

Sora strike him across the chest with several powerful attacks, forcing Demyx into the vi as Sora ended his assaul with a powerful spin attack sending him flying across the ground as he struggled to get to his feet.

" No way... I'm not gonna disappear here." Demyx said as he fell to his knees, too tired to keep fighting.

" Then don't." Palutaena appeared before him as everyone stood still. " Join us Demyx, I can tell you don't belong with the



organization. Join us and you'll be with people that won't send you to your death." Palutena held out her hand while looking at Demyx.

"... You'd really let me join you guys? I'm not good at fighting but if I can play music I'll come with." Demyx said as Sora seemed to be uncertain of this.

" Don't worry Sora! If he tries anything funny, I'll beat him senseless!" Pit declared as Palutena teleported Demyx to the ship as Mickey ran up behind them.

" Uh oh. Hey King Mickey." Mario said while looking sheepish.

" \*Sigh I should have known better than to have toldd you guys to leave, but these guyss are your friends too, it was wrong of me to ask you toleave your friends behind." Mickey said while smiling as Goofy looked up and saw a large boulder coming at Mickey.

" King! Look out!" Goofy pushed the King out of the way as the rock chopped him hard on the skull and sent him flying back into the wall as he wasn't moving.

" GOOFY!" Sora, Donald and Mickey ran to their friend as he wasn't moving at all which scared them all.

" No! Goofy!" Donald was crying at the loss of his friend.

" No, this isn't happening, this can't be happening." Sora never thought he'd see his friend dying on this day.

Mickey looked off into the distance with anger in his eyes. " They'll pay for this." Mickey threw off his cloak, showing his clothes under the cloak as he summoned his keyblade and ran off.

Donald quacked with fury as he ran off as the others minus Reimu and Pit ran off to avenge their comrade as Sora ran forward, only stopping to look at Goofy's dead body. The trio ran off as Ziden is seen crashing into the ground head first as he looked unharmed

from taking a Subspace bomb to the knee... I mean face... body? I dunno anymore. End of Chapter.

*Meanwhile on the Zeta Dreadnaught...*

Eirin was watching over Terra's condition as she looked to Utsuho whom was healing after her encounter with Zero, not knowing that she was developing a fear for the Reploid as she shifted in her sleep.

*Fun Facts:*

*1. Yep, Demyx lives, shocker, i never really saw him as evil so he lives!*

*Author's notes: Back and Backerer! After a powerful sickness crippled me, I'm back with a fury! Now I'm going to bust out chapters!*

## Showdown at Hollow bastion

Ziden gets to his feet while cracking his neck while looking around as Yuyuko floated around him in ghost form as he walked over to Goofy.

Ziden nudged his body with his foot while looking at him. " Wake up. Wake up." Ziden keeps nudging him as Yuyuko appeared next to him.

" He's not dead is he?" Yuyuko asked.

" No, he's out like a rock... do i kick him?" Ziden wondered as Yuyuko shook her head.

" No! Don't kick people! That's not nice!" Yuyuko said as he sighed as Marisa, Byakuren, Remilia and mokou landed behind them.

" What's wrong?" Byakuren asked while looking at Goofy.

" He's out like a rock, that sucks but we'll get him u- GEt down!" Ziden yelled as everyone ducked as a massive sword wave sliced through the rock above them.

" Hmm, so you dodged that attack huh? That's good." A red haired woman with light blue, wearing a black chinese styled dress was standing behind the girls and she looked disturbinly like Meiling.

" Scarlet Nexus... the strongest member of the Ultima Brigade." Ziden said while looking at the woman, holding a blood red katana.

" Strongest member? Wouldn't that normally be the leader?" Yuyuko asked.

" Normally, but seeing as how this woman is Ultima's daughter, it makes sense." Ziden said as Scarlet spun her blade on her finger while smiling.

" Indeed I am, and now, I shall crush you in the name of my mother." Scarlet disappeared in a blur and slashed Ziden in the chest, far faster than he could have reacted.

Vim and Vigor ( Kingdom Hearts 2)

" Holy cow! She's fast!" Marisa yelled as she took flight as Mokou charged at Scarlet.

Scarlet vanished again and landed behind Mokou while stabbing her through her chest and tearing the blade out of her torso, slicing through her pectoral as she collapsed on the ground from the attack as Byakuren dashed at the woman.

" This woman is powerful! Do not take her lightly!" Byakuren warned as she caught Scarlet's katana in her hands struggling to hold it. "*This woman's strength is unholy!*"

Scarlet kicked Byakuren hard in the chest sending her flying through a wall as Ziden tried a powerful volley of fiery kicks which she casually blocked the attack with her forearm.

" Is this the strength of the Original hero?" Scarlet asked while looking at him as he smirked.

" Nope! I'm just getting started!" Ziden swung his leg at her much faster than before as she barely reacted to it.

" That was fast, a kick moving at Sub-Relative Speeds? Far Faster than the clone would have produced. I can guess that's your max speed as of Right now?" Scarlet asked as Ziden smirked.

" Smart girl, but that ain;'t helping you here against me." Scarlet vanished in a flash of light as she stabbed Yuyuko through the should as a wound appeared on Ziden's shoulder.

" Gah!" Yuyuko was shocked by the attack as she summoned a swarm of butterflies that slammed into Scarlet and sent her flying

into the air.

Scarlet flipped several times into the air and swung her blade downwards, creating a red blade of light that shot downwards as Ziden and yuyuko leapt to the side to dodge it as Ziden noticed that Goofy was gone.

Ziden was about to say something as a yellow laser tore through his shoulder as Kizaru was standing on the cliff.

" Oh my... looks like you guys got quite the crazy party going on here. So crazy~" Kizaru said as he leapt down as a keystone slammed into Scarlet and smashed her into the ground as Tenshi looked up at Kizaru.

" You're that light man! I'm going to kick your ass!" Tenshi declared while drawing her sword.

" wow... so subtle..." Mokou forced her self to her feet as a very long sword appeared in her chest. " Oh... come on..."

" Oh great, Mama's boy is here." Ziden said as a bright flash of light appeared behind him as Yorihome walked out of it.

Youmu ran along one of the cliffs and clashed blades with Scarlet as an all out war broke out.

Meanwhile...

King Mickey was seen running off after the man known as Xehanort after Sora beat down the 1000 Heartless that attacked him as he ran to where Mickey was.

" I knew it had to be you, Xehanort!" Mickey yelled while looking at the man.

" How long has it been since I last forsook that name. Mickey." Xehanort turned around to look at Mickey as Sora, Reimu and Mario reached the area.

" Who is that?" Reimu asked.

Xehanort is seen looking at the heroes. " Ah, so you must be the heroes that have been getting in our way. Sora, Reimu, Mario. Keep doing what you're doing." He created a corridor of darkness as he walked into it.

" Wait! Stop!" Mickey ran after Xehanort into the darkness as Sora tried to stop.

" Looks like you kids got to meet the boss man himself." The turned around to see Axel waiting at the wall.

" Hmm, didn't we see you somewhere before?" Reimu asked.

" Don't worry about that. That man you just saw was Xemnas, leader of the Organization." Axel explained as Reimu glared at him as a blue haired man appeared from a corridor of darkness. " Uh oh! Gotta go." Axel escaped into a corridor of Darkness while the blue hair man spoke.

" Ignore that man Sora, for we have great plans for you." The man said as Heartless surrounded the trio as Sora and Reimu summoned their keyblades as Mario felt a light lurching from inside him, as it soon took the form of a keyblade in his hand.

" You too Mario!? Why did the three of us get keyblade on this journey." Reimu wondered as the heartless swarmed on them.

Back to the others...

Ziden and Yorihome were sent flying from Sephiroth's attacks as they rolled along the ground. " Goddammit! He's kicking our asses!" Ziden gets to his feet as blood was pouring down his head.

" I've never met a human this tough before." Yorihome was struggling to stand as she looked at Sephiroth.

" Is this all you two have?" Sephiroth asked as his blade swung upwards, forcing Ziden to dodge to left as Sephiroth appeared before him.

Ziden spins on his hand and slammed his foot into his chest, causing minor damage to Sephiroth as he stumbled back as Yorihome swung her blade at his chest, only causing a minor cut on his chest.

Sephiroth his blade upwards and hit Ziden square across his body, tearing through him cleanly as Ziden's body healed as he shot fire at him.

" Impressive, but you won't beat me with your level of power." Sephiroth stabbed his blade through Ziden's chest as he was slowly lifted into the air by his blade.

" Damned fool! Letting himself get stabbed like that." Yorihome summoned a God of Healing to her side as she healed her wounds.

Sephiroth throws Ziden's body into the battlefield below as he was unmoving. " Shall we continue this farce, moon girl?" Sephiroth asked while pointing his blade at her.

" Tch! I'll beat you by myself!" Yorihome charged at Sephiroth with her blade.

Kizaru delivered a powerful kick to Mokou's neck, breaking it like a twig as she was sent flying through several walls. " Speed equals Weight, you know?" Kizaru simply stated as Byakuren kicked him across the back, phasing right through him.

" Whaa!" Byakuren landed on the ground as Kizaru looked down at her.

" My my! You don't know how to fight Logia types huh~? That's very unlucky~" Kizaru pointed his finger at her as a bright light formed.

A large explosion of light occurred as Byakuren was on her knees, bleeding as Ziden landed on the ground near Kizaru.

Youmu and Scarlet were trading blows along the walls, running in pace with each other while they smirked at each other.

" You've got skills with the blade but it won't help you against me." Scarlet swings her blade at Youmu's neck as she ducked under the blade, allowing it to nick off some of her hair while Youmu spun herself and slashed Scarlet at her waist, drawing blood on the woman as she was shocked.

" I will not lose to an evil woman as yourself." Youmu claimed as she slammed her blades in Scarlet's as she felt something from her blade, sadness from Scarlet's very soul.

" What? Is this feeling coming from your blades... wait... you're Meili-" Scarlet quickly slashed Youmu across the throat with her blade, forcing Youmu grasp her throat and fall to the ground as everyone was on their last legs.

" Now now, now that you've all been beaten, its time for Ziden to get executed at Marineford~" Kizaru said while going to pick him up as a massive burst of light swallowed the area as the Heroes were now gone.

" Tch... looks like they got away." Scarlet said as she opened a portal and vanished.

Meanwhile on the Dreadnaught...

" Tch... so that was their plan all along? Have us hunt down the Heartless and help them form this Kingdom Hearts?" Yukari asked while looking at the completely injured Ziden and Yorihome.

" According to Sora. Yeah, now we're going to be looking on the worlds for a way into their world." Ziden said while rubbing his aching shoulders.



" Lets head to that Pokemon world then, we can have Palkia search for their world for us." Yukari pointed out.

" That... makes sense actually, Pokemon it is... after we all heal up." Ziden covers his eyes as Yukari sat next to him and smiled at him.

Utsuho was shaking wildly in her sleep as her dreams were being haunted by the Reploid known as Zero.

Ziden closed his eyes and fell asleep.

Elsewhere...

" Come back Sanji!" A bunch obvious men were chasing after a man wearing a black suit.

" Get the hell away from me you freaks!" Sanji yelled as the area violently shook around them as a portal opened into the sky as Palkia appeared before Sanji. " What in the hell is that!?"

Palkia looked down at the mortal before him as it spoke into his mind. " YOU're needed in the large scale battle against Darkness, you and your Captain shall help these heroes fight the forces of darkness." Palkia looked at Sanji as he looked confused and shocked by the large creature before he smirked.

" Count me in!" Palkia created a portal to the Zeta Dreadnaught as Sanji walked through it, appearing in front of Ziden and Yukari as a man in a straw hat was already there. " Nice to meet you guys, I'm Sanji!"

Fun Facts:

1. Scarlet is an OC if you couldn't tell but what did Youmu see from her blades?

Author's Notes: After today... the chapters will get much longer! I swear!

## Arrival in Unova

Ziden looked at the two newcomers as they were staring at his healing wounds as Luffy had sparkles in his eyes.

" whoa! How are you doing that?!" Luffy asked while looking at him.

" Its just my regeneration kid. Its nothing special." Ziden said while getting up while Sanji was swooning over Eirin.

" Please go away human, i am trying to work." Eirin simply stated while Sanji was spinning around her.

" But why my lovely Eirin swan? A woman with you beauty should be praised always!" Sanji declared as he sighed as he sees the green haired man sitting in the chair.

" So you three are the Straw Hats I've been hearing about then?" Ziden asked as the trio nodded.

" Shishishishi! I'm Monkey D. Luffy and I'm gonna be King of the Pirates!" Luffy declared as Ziden merely at the man as Remilia stared at her bounty which was 230,000,000 Beli.

" Roranoa Zoro, but you can call me Zoro." Zoro introduced while yawning.

" My name is Sanji, I'm the crew's cook. So you mind filling us in on what's happening?" Sanji asked as Yukari explained what was happening.

" That's the gist of it, you'll be helping us saving our Universe from destruction." Ziden said while drinking some soda.

" Whoa! So we're gonna be heroes!? Awesome!" Luffy seemed excited by this.

" Never thought I'd hear a pirate proclaiming to wanting to be a hero." Yukari pointed out as Ziden agreed.

" Well we aren't gonna be going to the next world for a while since you guys are injured." Eirin said while looking at them

" Hey! Shut up! Can't you people tell I got a headache!" Mokou yelled as Ziden throw a paper ball at her head.

" Shh! People are trying to rest you jerkass!" Ziden yelled as Mokou tried to lurch at him as she landed ont he ground.

" HEy! You treat a woman with respect you asshole!" Sanji yelled as Mokou threw a fireball at Sanji.

" Only I yell at him!" Mokou yelled as she tried to get to her feet as Eirin forced her back into the bed.

" Anyways, get some rest, since we will be heading to the next world soon." Ziden said as the hours past and they were standing in the Teleporter Room.

" So what';s what's our next world?" Sora asked while stretching.

" We're heading to a new world kid. There's a reason why everyone has their pokemon with them." Ziden explained as Remilia looked depressed while holding a Magikarp.

" Why did I get this thing!?" Remilia yelled as Kaguya snickered.

" You got one of the worst Pokemon around!" Kaguya laughed as Ziden snickered,

The people whom were picked were as follows: Remilia, Sanae, Kaguya, Eirin, Alice, Meiling, Aya, Nitori, Flandre.

" Yahoo! I get to see a brand new world!" Luffy was excited as Zoro held a hand on his swords.

" I wonder if I will meet any powerful swordsmen there?" Zoro wondered.

" I can't wait to see all the beautiful women there~" Sanji had hearts in his eyes as Ziden started the teleporter.

They all landed in a field as Reimu looked around the place with persian at her side.

" This... is Unova right?" Sanae asked while looking around.

" Where are we in UnovA?" Ziden asked while opening a Magic Map.  
" Outside of a town called Nacrene." Ziden said as Mismagius floated around Marisa.

Flandre was holding her Deino close to her while smiling. " I hope I can play with my new friend soon!" Flandre said with the Deino making a small yelp.

" Such a strange place with strange creatures." Vergil pointed out as he walked down the path to the town.

An unknown trainer with shorts leapt out at Vergil. " Hah! We locked eyes! Now you must challenge me to a Pokemon battle!" Vergil swings his sword at the boy as it stopped at his throat. " Gah!"

" You shouldn't jumped out at someone armed with weapons boy, its a good way to end your life." Vergil said while sheathing his blade as the boy pissed himself.

" Wahhahah! Mommy!" The boy ran off, scared for his life as everyone looked at Vergil.

" Jesus man, not cool." Reiji said while looking at him.

" Yeah! What do you think you're doing! Attacking kids!?" Luffy yelled.

" Talk about bad table manners." Sanji said while smoking a cigarette.

"..." Vergil remained stoic and walked down the path.

" Jeez, that guy." Erza seemed upset by that.

" Lets get moving!" Ziden ran down the path with Kaguya ridding on his back.

" Hey! Get off his back you spoiled brat!" Mokou ran after her with Blaziken running after her.

" What a weird bunch of people." Ichigo said as Luffy happily walked past him.

" Talk about a grouch, I don't want that guy at our parties." Yuugi said as Rhyperior agreed.

" Lets get going to this city." Sora said while walking down the path to the city as Ziden kept walking down the path as a ball of blue light slammed into his face.

" ! Who just attacked me?" Ziden asked as a man with an orange gi appeared in front of him.

" Wait a sec! That's Goku!" Xiaomu yelled.

" Who now?" Remilia asked while looking at the man,

" There you are! I thought you would never show up!" Goku said while Cracking his neck.

" Jeez, who the hell are you?" Ziden asked while yawning.

" Me? I'm the man that's gonna stop your evil ways!" Goku declared as Ziden gave him a look.

"... Really? You really fell for such a lie? You know what? I'm not gonna try and convince you otherwise, I'm just going to beat your monkey ass." Ziden slammed his fists into his hand as Kaguya gets off his back as Eirin grabbed him by the shoulder.

" Ziden, calm down! There's no need for this!" Eirin yelled as Goku shook his head.

" Heh! I know you aren't really evil, but I've heard of your actions in the past, so i want to see what you really are." Goku appeared front of Ziden while touching his fingers to his forehead.

" Humph, if that's the case, then lets fight somewhere else so none of my teammates get caught in the crossfire." Ziden said as Goku used Instant Transmission to teleport them away.

Everyone else just shrugged and walked down the pathway as Vergil kept his distance from everyone.

They reached Nacrane City as Byakuren reached a wall that had a poster on it. " Hmm? There's a tournament here. Something called the Iron Fist Tournament Unova Edition, starring some man named Hercule." Byakuren read aloud while smiling.

" Hmm, a tournament? Sounds like fun!" Yuugi smashed her fist into her hand.

" I can try my luck against many fighters I hope." Meiling said while stretching her legs.

" Shishishi! I want in." Luffy declared.

" Same here, I'm interested in seeing the magic of this world." Erza said.

" Absolutely not." Everyone turned to Vergil as they glared at him. " We are not on this world for some foolish tournament, we are here

to find the gateway, not play around in some childish fight." Vergil said while looking at the group.

" Hey! Why don't you take that stick out of your ass before I do and beat you with it!?" Xiaomu yelled as Byakuren shook her head with a sweet smile.

" Mr. Vergil, this tournament may lead us to this gateway, so I think we should enter." Byakuren said.

" This is foolishness, we should be focusing on this mission, not fooling around in some tournament." Vergil seemed against this idea.

" Well tough luck! You aren't the leader of this group! In fact we don't need a leader!" Remilia declared as she sized Vergil up.

" Humph, no doubt that fool of a man just let you people do whatever you guys wanted but not anymore, we have a mission to take care and I forbid you to-" Vergil was cut off by Yuugi grabbing by the throat.

" Forbid us to what. little man? As Remilia over there said, this group has no leaders and we do what we please, if you have a problem with that, then tough luck pal! Go crawl back into your mother's womb and stay out of our way." Yuugi coldly said while slamming him into the wall as he remained.

"Ouch, Oni really don't pull their punches ze." Marisa said as she walked down the road of the city.

" Hmm, a lot of young people are running around with pokemon, how old do you need to be to get one again?" Reimu asked.

" 10." Ichigo answered while yawning.

" That's awfully young for a child to be going on an adventure like this." Byakuren pointed out as several men in black outfits are seen trying to steal a pokemon from a little boy.

" Hand over the Pokemon kid and you won;t get hurt!" One of the men said as the child held his Emonga close to him.

One of the Men felt a tapping on their shoulder as Byakuren was standing behind them. " Excuse me sirs, but its not nice to steal from people." Byakuren said as the man glared at her.

" You should learn to keep your nose out of people's business!" The man threw a fist at the monk, only for her to side step it.

" Please stop with the sudden violence, I am but a woman of peace." Byakuren said as she sidestep another punch.

Meiling leapt forward a strong roundhouse kick, sending a man spinning in the air. " I, however, am not a woman of peace! You ruffians shall pay for attacking a poor defenseless child!" Meiling took a martial arts stance as Mienfoo did the same.

The men sent out Swoobats out as the trainers chased after Meiling and Byakuren.

Team Plasma battle ( Pokemon Black)

Meiling saw one of the men coming at her with a simple right hookas she stepped back, grabbed his arm and twisted it with the with intent of breaking it as she followed up with a elbow to the face.

One of the men caught her off guard and punched her in the face, only to hold his broken hand as Meiling kicked him hard across the face.

Mianfoo was kicking several Swoobats in the face as Luffy ran up to one of them. " Gum Gum Pistol!" Luffy shot his fist outwards as it stretch and socked a Swoobat in the face, shocking everyone with his powers.

" He's a Devil Fruit user?" Eirin asked as Blissey stood next to her.

" Shishishi~ I'm a Rubber Man!" Luffy said while stretching his face.



Zoro ran to the Pokemon with his blades out. "Tatsumaki!" Zoro performed a powerful spin attack with his blades, sending all of the Swoobat's into the air as everyone was surprised by the fact that the creatures weren't sliced up by the whirlwind as Sanji ran to the men.

"So you guys have enough bad manners to attack a woman!?" Sanji leapt onto one of the men's head and gripped it via a handstand. "Party Table Kick Course!" Sanji performed a spin kick on top of the man's head, hitting his other allies as Byukuren's Lucario was watching the fight alongside her.

"Dammit! These guys ain't human! We gotta get outta here!" The Team Plasma men started to run away as the girls and people looked at them running as Byakuren went to the little boy as he thanked them and ran off.

"Who were those guys?" Eirin wondered.

"Team Plasma." Kaguya and Sanae said in unison.

"Team what now?" Tenshi asked as Altaria flew around her.

"Team Plasma is a group of people that were for the liberation of Pokemon from their trainers since they believe that pokemon should be free from people and live on their own." Kaguya explained.

"Hmm, doesn't sound that evil to me." Tenshi pointed out.

"The leader really just wanted to conquer the world though using the creatures that created this Continent." Sanae added.

"Wow... that's just bland." Reimu pointed out.

"Poyo?" Kirby seemed to agree.

"Well then, if these guys are back then it means that this guy is back as well right?" Sora asked.

"No doubt about it." Mario said as they walked out of the city.

" So wait, some Pokemon created this entire place?" Yuugi asked while whistling.

" Yes, Legendary Pokemon are very powerful. Some are embodiments of Nature, and some even created the concepts of Emotion. One of the them even created the Gods that Created Time and Space." Everyone turned to see Goku and Ziden leaning on each other as Goku only had his clothes missing on his chest and a few bruises while Ziden looked like he was ran through a blender.

" Damn, what happened to you?" Zoro asked.

" This monkey here is ALOT stronger than I expected. He beat me fair and square, I'll tell you about the fight once we reach Castelia City." Ziden said while barely breathing.

" Heh! This guy can put up quite the fight but he's not evil... but neither is this guy good either." Goku simply said while confused be it.

" I'm Neutral, that's why." Ziden said as a question mark appeared over Luffy and Goku's heads.

" Is that something you eat?" They both asked as everyone face faulted.

" Today is gonna be a long day." Eirin said as Nitori walked past everyone on her Blastoise.

" I'm on a turtle~" Nitori pointed out while riding on it backwards to look at everyone.

*Fun Fact:*

*1. The chars Pokemon are usually picked by pics I saw.*

*2. The Monster Trio of the Straw hats are now in the group! Fuck yeah!*

*Author's Note: New games for me all over, Disgaea and Dissidia were soaking up my time and now so is MGR Revengeance!*

## Saiyin Hero vs Legendary Hero

Ziden was now resting in the Castelia City Pokemon Center, speaking with the group about what happened during the fight.

" Alright, me and Gogurt here teleported to an abandoned and lifeless solar system where we could fight with no form of holding back." Ziden said as Goku facepalmed since Ziden never got his name right.

" So you guys fought on an abandoned planet?" Pit asked while tilting his head.

" Yeah but instead of telling you, why don't i just show you." Ziden said.

Back to the fight...

Ziden and Goku are seen standing across from each other. " You sure you wanna do this?" Ziden asked while looking at him.

" Heh! Trust me, I'm alot stronger than I look!" Goku said while taking his battle stance.

" Fine by me, just don't die on me human." Ziden said while cracking his neck.

" I'm not a human, I'm a Saiyin that was raised on Earth!" Goku declared as Ziden looked at the man.

" I see, you are one of those warriors that was supposedly wiped out by the space tyrant Frieza. I suppose I must finish the job." Ziden said as his attitude shifted.

" What's that supposed to mean?" Goku asked while looking at him.

" You Saiyins are beings of evil, bringing death wherever you go but fear not, young demon, I shall bring you to salvation and liberate you from this wondrous existence known as life." Ziden was now floating upwards while looking down at Goku.

" *What's with this guy? Is he honestly gonna try and kill me?*" Goku wondered as fire gathered around Ziden.

Gatebreaker ( Dragon Ball Z Budokai Tenkaichi 2)

Ziden unleashed a powerful volley of fire at Goku as Goku disappeared from sight rapidly weaving through the flames. Goku appeared behind Ziden and kicked him hard in the neck, sending Ziden crashing through the ground, kicking up dust from the impact.

Ziden gets to his feet as Goku followed up with a punch that Ziden caught and delivered a solid punch to Goku's chest, creating a shockwave that hit Goku's internal organs.

Goku was sent crashing through several trees as he crashed through a lake. " What the, he hit my insides with that attack!" Goku exclaimed as he sees several large balls of fire running at him.

Goku created balls of Ki in his hand and fired them at the balls, blasting one square in the face as it fell onto its side, skidding along the ground as Ziden emerged from one of them with his fist wrapped in fire as Goku grabbed his fist, used to being burned by his fights with Pikkon.

Ziden continued a powerful barrage of fiery punches at Goku as he was sidestepping each of them attacks as Goku kicked Ziden hard into his chest, blasting him under the water. " Man, this guy has some trick up his sleeves." Goku said. " But at least fire won't work under water." Goku's words were proven wrong as large fiery sharks are seen leaping from the water and at Goku.

" HOLD ON A SECOND!" Erza yelled as the fight was completely stopped.

" What's wrong lady?" Luigi asked as he was drinking some tea with Remilia and marisa.

" HOW THE HELL DO YOU USE FIRE UNDERWATER! THAT IS UNBELIEVABLE!" Erza yelled at the top of her lungs.

" Yeah... how did you make fire underwater." Goku wondered as Luffy did the same.

" Simple, make the flames so hot that an airbubble forms around the fire allowing it to flow through water." Ziden explained.

" That makes no sense!" Erza complained.

" SHE's right, that makes no sense whatsoever." Eirin crossed her legs while looking at him, silently calling him a dumbass.

" F\*\*\* It, Nintendo Logic, I'm leaving it at that!" Ziden goes back to his story.

Goku is seen getting eaten by the explosion of fire as Ziden smirked expecting Goku to be dead from that. " Good night Saiyin." Ziden goes to walk away as he could hear something yelling as he saw a golden glow coming from the fire.

Goku had blasted the fire away with a golden aura as his hair was now golden while he seemed to be stronger than before. Goku disappeared and slammed his fist into Ziden's face as an X-ray shot showed Ziden's face being broken by the hit as he crashed through the bedrock as he flew into a lake cavern as Goku followed after him.

" You got stronger Saiyin!" Ziden exclaimed as he flipped and landed on a large rocky pillar.

" This is my Super Saiyin form. My speed and Power increase in this form." Goku explained as the golden glow appeared around him.

" It matters not, even if my full power ain't back yet, I'll still crush you!" Ziden disappeared from sight and slammed his feet into Goku's

back, causing the duo to spiral to the ground, crashing through bedrock.

Ziden followed up with a powerful kick that hooked around Goku's neck on the ground and he kicked his leg upwards, sending Goku flying to the ceiling, crashing into it as fire was flying up at him.

Goku dodged the flames and continued his Ki assault as Ziden was dodging through the attacks as explosions rang out from the assault.

" *You know kid, if you really want to kill this guy, you can just open a portal in his brain and boom! Good night~*" Mima suggested as Ziden ignored it.

Ziden held out his hand as Goku appeared under him and placed a hand to his chest. " Haaa!" Goku fired a powerful blast of Ki into his chest and sent him flying through the ceiling and high into the air.

Ziden was careening through the air as he landed on a island with Goku appearing before him. " Tch!" Ziden punched the ground hard, causing a massive shockwave that destroyed the entire island as Goku took flight while Ziden appeared above him.

Ziden's arm was black from the Haki he placed on him as fire wrapped his arm. " Dynamite Hammer!" Ziden slammed his arm into Goku's face, creating a massive shockwave that smashed Goku under the water, creating a massive separation of water as Ziden was standing above the water.

" Hmm." Ziden was waiting above the water as he sensed some movement below the water.

Ziden looked to see a light blue glow coming from under the water as a large beam was coming to Ziden. Ziden saw the beam coming as he held out his hand and waited for the beam to hit, causing a massive explosion in the sky that wiped out the surrounding islands.

Goku had his wrists cupped together as he was absorbing some what from the energy released from his Kamehameha he fired at Ziden. " I think that wraps that up." Goku said as the smoke was clearing up from the explosion.

" Jeez, that actually kinda hurt man." The smoke cleared up as Ziden was severely damaged from the explosion as his arm and legs were missing from the explosion.

" Huh!? Aren't you hurt badly from that!?" Goku asked as Ziden shrugged.

" This? Is just a simple flesh wound." Ziden's injured body part began to reform from the stubs on his body as he was back in fighting condition.

" looks like this form just won't cut it for this fight." Goku said while looking up at Ziden.

" Hmm? That form? You got more in you?" Ziden asked as he threw off his jacket.

" Yeah, this form you see right now is my first Form Super Saiyin 1." Goku is seen crouching down as his energy started to spark.

" Ziden, I think this man is getting stronger." Palutena pointed out.

" Gee, you think?" Ziden answered as Palutena held back the need to hit him.

" Raaaaaaahhhhh!" Goku's ki was skyrocketing as lightning was striking all around the area around the Saiyin as an explosion of light and energy surrounded him. Ziden uncovered his eyes and looked at Goku as lightning arced around the man. " This... is Super Saiyin 2, beyond the normal levels of Super Saiyin 1. But this... is to go even further beyond!" Goku was now yelling as storm clouds were being blown past them as Ziden could feel the intense power as his jacket was dropped into the water.



Goku's yells were loud and powerful while the sky began to rapidly change color from the amount of power that Goku was releasing. Ziden looked at his longer hair as his eyebrow seemed different. "Jeez, how many hairstyles are you gonna go through?" Ziden asked.

"Heh, this is Super Saiyan 3. Let's see how you handle this." Goku said as he bowed down.

Ziden activated Flame Release as Goku grabbed Ziden by his leg and began to spin him around against the water, smashing Ziden on the water multiple times before launching him onto a large Africa-like continent. Goku looked at his hands as they were burning badly.

"Holy cow that burns!" Goku dipped his hands in the water as they were charred black from the fire. "Whoa... why did my hand burn like that?" Goku asked as Ziden stood on the plains of the land he was on as Goku appeared before with his leg pulled back.

Ziden ducked under the kick faster than Goku would have imagined him being able to move. Ziden slammed a kick onto Goku's chest, causing an explosive impact as Goku was sent crashing into the ground as Ziden created a massive ball of fire in the sky. "Hell Fire Sphere." Ziden throws it at Goku whom teleported to get away as Goku looked the sphere blasting the entire entire Continent to pieces from the massive explosion as Ziden slammed a kick on Goku's neck, sending him flying to the clouds.

Ziden dashed after him while throwing a barrage of thunderous punches that dispersed the clouds around them. "Fall into dust!" Ziden began a rapid barrage of flaming punches that caused explosions in the sky that looked like large balls of fire to form as Goku was sent spiraling through the air as his shirt was burned off and he coughed up blood from the impacts.

"Damn! This guy doesn't pull any punches! Time to finish this now!" Goku clasped his hands together while looking up at Ziden. "Ka! Me!" A large blue ball formed in his hands.

" Hmm?" Ziden looked at the ki he was gathering.

" Ha! Me!" Light began to shine from the ball as Ziden looked at the saiyan while creating a powerful barrier of fire. " HAA!" A massive beam of light slammed into Ziden's barrier as he withstood the powerful blast as fiery dragons appeared around Goku and slammed into him, creating an unholy blast of fire in the sky as Ziden watched Goku crash into the sea, depowered.

" Looks like I win." Ziden looked at the water as a large red glow came from the water. " What?!"

Goku was floating up from the water with a red sparkling aura around him. " Didn't think you'd push me this far." Goku said as Ziden couldn't even sense his ki at this point.

" What is this form now? Super Saiyan 4?" Ziden asked with his arms crossed as Goku punched him hard in the stomach as Ziden coughed up blood from the impact as he was sent crashing through the air as Goku violently struck him all over his body sending him flying into the atmosphere with the final blow.

Ziden stopped himself in the vacuum of space as he looked at Goku in the atmosphere. The sun was directly behind Ziden as he smirked. " I see now, I have no more time to waste on you." Ziden created a star in his hand as it was glowing eerily red. Goku had no clue what it was as it began to spark. " Bear witness to the Death of a Star and the power it shall hold. Super nova Wave!" Ziden fired a beam of pure concentrated Supernova as Goku countered back with a red Kamehameha.

The beams collided with each other causing several star like objects to be seen from the clash as Ziden's attacks were overpowering Goku's attack.

" You will not win Saiyan! Fall before my might!" Ziden yelled as the beam was getting closer to Goku as he looked angry.

" i will not lose to you!" Goku added even more power to the beam as it was pushing Ziden's one back as Ziden couldn't add power to this type of attack.

" Heh... looks like... i lost this one." Ziden was blasted by Goku's Kamehameha as a massive explosion wiped out a large part of the solar System from that blast as Ziden was abrelly conscious from the assault as Goku powered down.

" Man... talk about a tough guy... wait" Goku looked around and saw that he was in the vacuum of space yet he was somehow breathing in space. Goku flew over to Ziden and took him back tot heir Universe.

" And here we are now." Ziden said as Luffy and the others were surprised by how crazy the fight got.

" You two wiped out a Solar System? Dear god." Eirin seemed shocked as Kirby was just looking around the place.

" Yeah, things got crazy I know but atleast Goku's not gonna interfere with us." Ziden said as Goku nodded.

" Yeah but I gotta get back to my Earth, need to train for my rematch with Bills." oku said as Ziden and the others raised their eyebrows.

" Ah~ We all know that feeling buddy." Xiaomu said while laughing.

" I don't think he meant those kinds of bills." Sanae pointed out.

" Well, whoever this Bills is, I hope you win Mr. Goku!" Pit yelled as Goku teleported abck home.

### **Several hours later...**

Ziden and the others were walking through the desert as they spotted several Team Pllasma members running to the area known as the Desert Resort.

" Looks like those guys are up to something, ze." Marisa pointed out as mario and Luigi had their hammers ready.

" I'm ready for a fight!" Ichigo said while smirking and looking at the men.

" Good... because I sense we're gonna need it." Ziden said while smiling.

Fun Fact:

1. Yeah Ziden fought Goku to the point, I had fun with that fight.

Author's Note: Chapters will get longer I swear.

# Legendary Golems in the Desert

Gritzy Desert ( Mario and Luigi Partners in Time)

" Hmm, weird that the music always fits the location of the places we go to." Ichigo pointed out.

" I find it weird that music is playing at all." Sanji added as Luffy was panting.

" Ahhhh~ Water... water..." Luffy seemed to be very thirsty as Ziden and Mokou sighed.

" This is why I told you to drink up on water. Now we're gonna be fighting against those Plasma dudes in a hot desert." Ziden said while yawning.

" Uwah... its too hot out here!" Nitori was complaining as well.

" Wait a sec... doesn't that thing over there shoot out water?" Zoro asked while pointing at Blastoise.

" Yeah it can!" Luffy ran to it. " Open fire with the water in my mouth!" Luffy asked while opening his mouth wide.

The Blastoise pointed its cannon at his mouth as Kaguya quickly tackled Luffy down as the water shot from the cannon and tore through rock with pure ease.

" Whoa! That would have messed him!" Xiaomu yelled as Link kicked the rock as Kirby ran around the smashed boulder.

" You wanna see what'll happen if you kept your face there?" Kaguya pushed Mokou to the Blastoise. " Hey! She's thirsty!" Blastoise aimed its cannon at her face as it blasted right past it as red mist was seen in the water as it stopped, showing that Mokou no longer had a head as Kaguya was laughing.

" GAAAAAHHHH!" Luffy, Zoro and Sanji were both horrified by what they saw as Ziden simply sighed at the sight.

" Jeez, can't you two ever get along?" Pit asked.

" Indeed I found your behavior childish." Vergil added while walking through the desert.

" I wonder what will attack us this time?" Byakuren wondered as Yuugi kept drinking her sake.

" I dunno, as long it puts up a good fight, I don't care." Yuugi looked anxious to fight.

Erza and Ichigo merely remained quiet while walking to the area where the Plasma grunts were going.

" I wonder what those fellas are doing here?" Meiling said as Aya just looked at the Honchcrow flying around her.

" Its too damn hot!" Remilia complained as she and Flandre were sweating buckets.

Mokou's head has grown back at this point as surprisingly she wasn't sweating, neither was Yuugi, Ziden, Klrby and Link weren't sweating in these conditions.

" Hmm, I know! Blastoise! Use Rainy Day!" Nitori ordered as the large tortoise fired a misty ball into the air as Rain clouds gathered and started to rain down on the group cooling them down.

" WHOA! SO COOL!" Luffy had his mouth open as he was drinking the water.

" Yay! Its raining!" Flandre started to play in the rain rain as the sandy ground started to get wet.

" Jeez, how can you guys stay cool in this kind of heat?" Sanji asked.

" I'm used to heat, fire user." Ziden answered.

" I live Underground, its gets alot hotter under there." Yuugi said.

" poyo." No idea what he said but I'm sure it was something food.

" Same, Fire user." Mokou said.

"..." Link remained silent while walking through the desert.

" Not much of a talker?" Reimu asked while walking next to him.

" Only when it is neccessary." Link said as they stopped and looked at the massive group of Plasma members, standing before a large temple of sorts that was made of Ice.

" Ice? In a desert? That's impossible." Reison pointed out.

" Not unless something is making it unnaturally." Ziden said while looking around the place.

One of the men saw the gorup on the hillw hile yelling out order. " We were spotted!" Flandre yelled while bouncing up and down.

One of the men is seen summoning a horde of Heartless and Zealots. " Oh! Looks like a fight's coming our way!" Remilia said while cracking her knuckles.

Ziden was about to get to his feet as a beam of ice slammed into his body, freezing him solid.

" What the heck!?" Reimu looked at the frozen youth as what appeared to be a sentiant iceberg floating over the frozen ground.

" Regice!" The creature claimed to be a Regice.

" Is that a walking ice box?" Ichigo asked while sliding down the hill.

" Don't know but I'm kicking its ass!" Luffy slides down with him as a rocky being burst out of the sand next to them. " Whoa!"

" Regirock." The being was made entirely of rocks as it looked at the group coming at them.

' Another one? Where's the next one!?" Sanji asked while two metallic fists hit him and Yuugi square in the jaw and sent them tumbling into the ground.

The large steel like being landed right next to the duo while looking at the humans ready to fight the Legendary beings.

" The three legendary Golems? Sounds like fun." Sanae said while pulling out her tiny Gohei.

" How bad are these guys anyways?" Eirin asked while taking out her bow.

" I know that these guys are freaking sturdy as hell." Ziden said while getting out of the ice.

" What should we do, they're attacking us." Flandre asked.

" Its simple! We beat them up!" Mario slammed his fist into his hand.

Luffy agrees with this idea as he cracked his knuckles. Everyone got ready to fight this powerful foe.

Battle! Regirock Regice, Registeel ( Pokemon Emerald)

Yuugi is seen running down the hill with Vergil running right past her with his blade out, going straight for Registeel.

Registeel sees Vergil coming to him with his blade drawn back as Steel used its arm to block the slice from him, continuing to block the attacks while its arm started to glow. Steel brought its hand down onto Vergil's neck, smashing him hard on the ground.



Zoro clashed blades with the legendary Golem, surprised that he didn't cut right through the beings body. " what the!?" Steel followed up with a powerful punch to his chest, sending him crashing to the chest as Erza and Ichigo slashed at the creature, forcing it back.

" This thing is powerful." Erza said while getting ready to change her armor to gain more attack power.

" yeah, never thought a Golem would be this annoying to fight!" Ichigo said as a golden ball appeared in Steel's hands.

" Watch out! That's Zap Cannon!" Sanae yelled as Steel appeared before Ichigo and blasted him at point blank range, blasting him back into the sand, unable to move from the lightning.

Regice froze the ground over as Luffy, meiling, Sanji and Yuugi were going after the icy golem.

" Gum Gum Pistol!" Luffy threw his fist at the icy golem, whom quickly dodged it by moving on the ice, faster than what Luffy's fist can hit it. " That thing is fast!"

Meiling ran along the ice with her strong legs and spins on the ice with her legs and delivered a kick tot he creature, hurting her leg from the impact. " Damn this guy is solid."

Sanji ran along the ice and leapt into the air with his legs out. " Tch! Extra Hachee!" Sanji unleashed a violent barrage of kicks to the Ice Golem as it staggered back a bit. " Jeez! This thing can take some hits!" Sanji keeps up his assault with his legs as Regice looked at you while blasting him back with an ice beam as Yuugi came up behind the ice golem.

" Go down freak!" Yuugi closed her fist with an insane amount of force, sending the creature skidding across the ice as Luffy came up next with his follow up attack.

" Gum Gum Bazooka!" Luffy slammed the both of his palms into the ice golem's chest, sending him crashing into the ground. " Gah! Cold!" Luffy's hands were cold from the impact of him.

Tenshi was trading blows with Regirock as it was blocking her attacks with its arms. " Dammit! Hold still you freak!"

Alice's dolls were firing magic bullets at the Regirock, forcing it to stumble from the attacks as Tenshi pointed her blade down. " Sword of Kun!" Tenshi stabbed the blade into the ground, creating spears of earth to hit Regirock and send him stumbling backwards from the attacks. Regirock walked backwards as several weird rocks started to surround him.

Regirock used Ancientpower to blast th group with rocks as Tenshi tanked the attack but many of Alice's dolls were blasted apart. A mysterious white glow surrounded Regirock after this happened.

Remilia and Flandre charged at the rock beast with their weapons drawn and thy went for a double attack, only for Regirock to block hsi arms, knocking them back. " What!?"

" Crap! Ancientpower has a cchance at boosting all of the foes stats! Watch out! That thing is faster and stronger now!" Ziden warned while he was getting himself free.

Byakuren was dashing around the Registeel, getting a scope for its attack style as Lucario landed a powerful kick to its face, causing the being to stumble as Byakuren tackled the creature with a powerful shoulder charge.

Reiji and Xiaomu were helping out against Regice as it was sliding all over the ice. " Tch! Damn thing won't hold still!" Reiji was trying to hit the being with the fiery Karin, but the Ice Golemw as moving too quickly for the warrior to catch him. " Xiaomu!"

" On it! Xiaomu Wave!" Xiaomu trapped the Ice Golem in a magic ball in the air as Reiji sliced up the golem with his fiery blade, dealing

fire damage as Regice smashed into the ground and got to its feet.

Regirock began to charge up a Zap cannon while aiming it at Meiling. It fired off the ball as it veered off its course and hit Luffy directly as it dealt no damage to him.

" Whoa, being made of rubber must have its perks then." Ziden said as he was still in the ice.

All three Regis were standing together as they charged up Ancient Power together. " That's not a good sign!" Reimu yelled as Sora ran to the duo with Mario and Luigi following up.

The rocks shot forward like rockets and blasted the guys with a barrage of rocks, sending them tumbling along the ground as the Regis' grew even stronger and faster.

" Gum Gum Whip!"

" Getsuga Tensho!"

Both of the duo's attacks blasted forward as the creatures scattered to dodge, allowing the men behind them to be scattered by the attacks as a new breed of heartless was running forward.

They were black knights, holding pure black swords with darkness pouring from them. Their armors as black as night and was a steely black. Their trade mark yellow eyes could be seen from the helm of the armor. The arms of the armor were claw-like at the hands while holding their shields which had a shadow's head on them. The Heartless Emblem was on their chest.

" Dai! Name! Now!" Ziden yelled from the ice.

" Shadow Armors!" Dai yelled.

" Tch, looks like we have some people in our way." Zoro leapt forward with his swords towards the knights. " Onigiri!" Zoro dashed

forward with a powerful triple slash, which was faster than the eyes could perceive as they were sent flying in all directions.

Link fired arrows at the bings into the air as Reiji was firing bullets at the knights.

Regirock moved faster along the ground and went to Tenshi with its fist pulled back and slammed it into her face, shattering it like glass as she tumbled along the ground.

Yuugi ran toward Regirock with her fist pulled back, only for Regice to slide across the ice and tackle her down the ground. Yuugi crashed hard onto the ice, skittering across it as Byakuren followed up with a powerful slice with her vajra, striking the creature across the chest.

"Damn! These creatures are giving us hell!" Erza yelled while trying to hit the Agile Registeel as it was stretching to dodge the attacks. It powered up another Hammer Arm as it slammed down on Erza, smashing her into the ground, knocking her out cold as the fighters were dropping like flies.

"Gum Gum Axe!" Luffy slammed his foot down onto the Registeel, smashing it to the ground from the impact as Ziden looked up to see a massive green dragon coming to the battlefield.

"Oh shit no." Ziden watched the dragon breathe down a powerful Hyper Beam, blasting the entire battlefield, wiping out all the fighters as Ziden, Mokou, Kaguya, Eirin, Sora, Reimu, Sanae, Mario and Kirby were left standing.

"Damn! That dragon just wiped out everyone!" Reimu yelled while looking up at the massive sky dragon while panting.

"Hmm? So it seems we've got some unwanted guests in this place." Ziden looked up to the temple and sees the man known as Ghetsis walking down the stairs with a staff in his hand.

" Tch... who are you?" Sora asked while looking up at the man walking tot hem with a purple Pokemon floating to them.

" Mewtwo!? Why are-a you with-a him!?" Mario asked as Mewtwo shot a glare at him.

" I have no love for you humans, or you Smashers." Mewtwo walked past Mario, heading straight for Ziden as the young hero panicked.

Mokou quickly jumped into action and throws a kick at Mewtwo, only to hit a powerful barrier that completely blocked her kick. Mewtwo's eyes turned completely blue as Mokou was lifted into the air.

" What the hell!? let me go!" Mokou struggled to move in the air while looking .

" Die." Mewtwo moved fingers away from each other as Mokou felt her body going in two different directions as the skin on her forehead started to split with small driplets of blood came from her as she started to scream as he watched Mokou get torn in half by the mad Pokemon.

" Oh god... he just killed Mokou without touching her." Kaguya was in shock as Mewtwo merely walked past her and walked to Ziden.

" Bastard... still mad about thee Brawl fiasco!?" Ziden yelled as Mewtwo stood before him.

" You replaced me with that useless fighter, I am not pleased." Mewtwo lifted Ziden up with his mind while he struggled.

" I will go through with my plan to wipe out all the humans on this world, like I originally planned and you shall be the first one to die." Mewtwo added on while a powerful force was entering Ziden's body as all of his bones were being crusheed from the force that was being placed on him. Ziden's body, sans his head, was exploded into mist as his head rolled onto the floor while heading to Kaguya as

Rayquaza fired another Hyperbeam onto the group, wiping out everyone else out.

Several hours later...

Ziden is seen getting up from a bed as he was looking up to see Bowser looking down at him.

" Tch, Mewtwo really is still mad about that nonsense." Ziden said while getting up.

" That nonsense got, Roy and Pikachu killed!" Bowser yelled as Ziden sighed.

" I know, this is bad, better tell the others about this." Ziden said as a man with an afro walked into the room.

" Hmm? Oh! You're awake! That's great! I was freaked out when I saw you were just a head!" The man walked into the room with another man whom Ziden knew from the last war.

" Heihachi Mishima." Ziden said as the man laughed hard.

" Got my name right this time boy! That's great! This is my friend Hercule! He was gonna help me run the tournament but something big came up." Heihachi opened the blinds as the rest of the heroes were waking and saw outside.

" Uh... did Cirno get supercharged when weren't looking, ze?" Marisa said while looking outside.

The entire city was frozen solid as Ziden sighed. " Looks like we're gonna be fighting some Legends today." Ziden said while sighing.

*Fun Facts:*

*1. I couldn't find the Desert Theme for pokemon Black so I just Used Gritzy Desert.*

*2. Oh, time for a Gore trip next chapter.*

*Author's notes: yes I know my chaps have gotten much shorter but I have other stuff going on and i want this pumping out every so often so yeah.*

# Mewtwo's Vengeance

**Note: This chapter has been heavily edited from its original version. After talking with my friend Game2002, i changed it, I know you will end up seeing this, thank you for setting me straight.**

Ziden was merely sitting down on the couch while sighing, not sure how to tell the others of the event that sent Mewtwo on this rampage against the Smashers.

" \*sighs\* How the hell am I supposed to tell this?" Zideen wondered as the other heroes were in various places of the room.

" Mna, just hurry up and tell us about that weird cat thing." Tenshi said while lounging on a table.

" Its not a easy story to speak about." Luigi took off his hat while lding it to his chest and sighing. That day was a tragic one for the Smashers.

" So what's this whole thing that's going on here? What's this Smash Bros Tournament thing you guys are talking about?" Hercule asked while drinking some whisky.

" Its a tournament where Heroes from various worlds come together and fight each other in fun, unique types of battles occur under the watch of Master Hand, me and Yukari." Ziden said while sighing.

" A bunch of strong swordsmen there?" Zoro asked while holding his blades.

" Yes... I am one of them." LInk said while sighing.

" So why did that thing attack you like that?" Reimu asked while drinking tea that Sanji made.



" Mewtwo... attacked me because of something that happened in the past with the Smash Bros Tournament, and he attacked Master Hand for this too." Ziden said while looking up.

" Why? The hell did you do to this guy?" Sanji asked while looking at him.

" Well... that's a story for right now, I'm gonna warn you all... this story is gonna get messy in the literal sense, those with weak stomachs... grab a trash can." Ziden said as Meiling was asleep on the floor under him.

" Eh? How bad can this story be?" Kaguya asked.

" We Smashers don't like to talk or think about that day." Mario said as Pit looked confused as this took place prior to him being invited.

" Huh? Just what happened?" Pit asked as Ziden sighed.

" Well... it all started on this day." Ziden began to tell this story.

Several Years ago...

" Boss? Are you really sure about this?" Ziden asked while sighing.

Master Hand was a giant floating white glove that was somehow capable of speaking. " Yes, I am certain, I am certain that Mewtwo will understand."

" Ziden, its best to just let this happen, if anything bad happens, we will stop it." Yukari reassured.

"... I'm not sure about this, we've seen how he gets when he loses a match, how will he react to being laid off for a new fighter?" Ziden said as Lucario looked at the duo .

" I promise I will do my best!" Lucario exclaimed as Ziden smiled.

" I hope you will fella." Ziden pets the Pokemon on the back while walking through the Mansion of the Smashers.

Yukari walked next to him while she held her umbrella over them. " How will we tell him?" Yukari asked.

" I say tell him up front. We already brought Sonic and Shadow here, its good to have gotten them here." Ziden said while sighing.

" hmm, alright then." Yukari walked to the Pokemon's room while knocking on it,

"... What is it, Youkai woman?" Mewtwo asked while opening the door.

" Yeah... we kinda need to break some news to you." Ziden said while walking to her.

"... So is that it? You humans and Youkai are firing me?" Mewtwo seemed to be growing agitated from this.

" Come on now, Mewtwo, lets not do anything rash now." Ziden was going for his blades.

" No... I will not do anything rash... I shall merely show you why you don't cross Mewtwo." Mewtwo's eyes started to glow blue as Ziden and Yukari was being lifted into the air.

" Oh crud." The duo was slammed hard into the ceiling and knocked out from the powerful impact as Mewtwo made his way to the lunchroom, charging up a shadow Ball in his hands.

The ball was fired into the room and everything was blasted around the room as Dr. Mario rolled over to the creature. " mama mia!"

" You... shall be my first victim." Psychic wrapped around the Doctor as the man was lifted into the air while Mewtwo showed no mercy.

" L-let me go!" Dr. Mario tried to get away as Pichu watched the scene confused on what was happening.

Mewtwo focused his psychic powers onto the Doctor's legs, originally planning on blasting the man's legs out but then decided to something more painful. He focused the power onto his legs while focusing on the muscles, begining to tear them like paper as the man screamed in pain before he grows annoyed with how tedious the process is and just decided to stop after the doctor could no longer feel anything in his legs, making the man restricted to the wheelchair. He threw the man like a ragdoll out of the room as he cried out n pain.

Falcon and Ganondorf happened to see the fallen doctor from the hallway. " What the hell happened here!?" Falcon was confused as a shadow ball slammed into his chest and sent him crashing into a wall as Ganondorf covered his fist in Darkness.

" I don't know why you did this, but I'm not gonna let this happen Mewtwo!" Ganondorf leapt forward as the battle between Mewtwo began.

Battle against Mewtwo ( Pokemon Stadium)

" Humph, have you grown soft Ganondorf? Why do you care for these heroes?" Mewtwo was dodging his strikes as Ganondorf grunted.

" I don't care for them! You will not ruin this for me! This place is where I can be free to fight and conquer and I will not aloow some upstart to ruin that for me!" Ganondorf pulled his fist back and slammed it into the barrier, smashing through it and sending poor Mewtwo flyign through the Mansion and outside as Ganonorf chased after him.

Mewtwo quickly flipped onto his feet and created a barrage of Shadow Balls at the King of Evil as he barreled through them and charged into the Pokemon as Roy was hit hard by MEwtwo.

" What in the world?" Samus was watching the whole fight break out on the basketball court.

Mewtwo gets to his feet while looking at Roy as he used him as a shield to block Ganondorf's punch as the impact nearly tore the young lord in Half. Roy coughed up blood from the Impact as Falcon appeared and delivered his trademark Falcon Kick to his spine.

" What's going on!?" Samus yelled while getting up.

" Mewtwo severely injured Dr. Mario!" Falcon yelled as Mewtwo created an explosion of dark energy that blasted everyone back as Samus donned her Power Suit, enraged.

" You bastard!" Samus opened fire on the creature as he teleported to the top of basketball hoop and looked at the Smashers coming to him as Mario was leading them.

" You will not be forgiven for this Mewtwo!" Mario leapt high up to the pokemon and throws a burning fist at him. Mewtwo's barrier blocked the punch with ease as Donkey Kong appeared behind the being and smashed through the earth as he got to his feet and began to rain down Shadow Balls onto the group, blasting alot of the skyhigh as Young Link dashed forward with his fire arrows out.

" My next victim." Mewtwo focused his attacks on the Youngng boy while everyone else was down. MEwtwo cupped his hands together while charging up a Shadow Ball and fired it at Link whom blocked it with his hshield, causing it to burn as Mewtwo dashed forward and slammed his hand into his chest, sending the boy flying.

" Gah!" Young Link was sent spiraling across the ground as Mewtwo appeared above the boy as his blade stabbed through his leg, drawing the creature's blood.

" Grah! You will die boy!" MEwtwo formed a ball of shadowy fire in his hand and started to smash the boy's head in with several strikes

as Zelda and Link watched in horror as the boy's hand was bouncing up with each strike.

Link watched in horror as Young Link was being beaten to death while trying his hardest to fight back as a blue whip yanked the man away from Mewtwo as Samus charged up an powerful blast which the Pokemon avoided.

" You bastard! You almost killed him! Your rampage ends here!" Link dashed forward with his sword as Mewtwo appeared behind Link and slammed him hard into the ground. Zelda sent Din's Fire into his back as Mewtwo started to get serious.

" No more playing around, you will all see why I am the Ultimate Life Form." Mewtwo stands up after kicking Link away and blasting him with Darkness, sending him crashing into the wall while covered in Dark flames as Shadow and Sonic leapt down from the roof.

" I don't think i heard you right pal... but did i hear you call yourself the Ultimate Life Form?" Shadow was walking tot eh man as Mario and Luigi joined the duo, having fought along side them in the past.

" I am indeed." Mewtwo floated in the air as Link tried to stab Mewtwo as slammed its tail into his Link's sternum, blasting it boneshattering force as the Hero of Time crumpled the force, uable to move from the pure pain he was in.

" GRRR! I'm the only Ultimate Life Form this place needs! No one else!" Shadow crossed his arms while looking at the man.

### **Doomsday Zone OC Remix ( Super Mario Bros Z)**

Ganondorf charged forward with his fist burning with darkness as Mewtwo sent the Master Sword plunging through stomach and stopping him cold as Shadow roundhouse kicked Mewtwo into a wall and sent him crashing through it.

Zelda became distraught as her friend and fellow Triforce Wielders were severely injured at the hands of Mewtwo as Sonic dashed forward and landed a powerful SpinBall attack into its chest and sent him flying while Mario flew into the air and slammed the both of his fists into the Pokemon's head, sending him crashing through the earth.

The other Smashers watched as the group of four was battling the powerful Mewtwo. Mario spins on his foot and slammed a powerful kick into the barrier, watching it tank the attack as Luigi leapt forward with his hammer, smashing through the barrier as Samus shot a Super Missile forward and hit the man's chest, sending him flying back.

Mewtwo flipped backwards, seeing Marth's blade slashing down on his chest and drawing more blood as he countered back with his tail, hitting him hard in the chest, smashing him to the ground, causing a rocky crater as blue wind surrounded him. " Hmm?"

" Sonic Wind!" Sonic created a massive gust of wind that sent Mewtwo into the air, hitting the Pokemon higher and higher into the sky as Falcon leapt high into the air and slammed his fist into the body of the pokemon, sending him crashing hard into the Earth as Roy blasted him with his flare blade, sending him rolling along the ground.

" ENOUGH!" Mewtwo sent a powerful blast of Psychic energy along the ground and blasted everyone into the air, save Roy whom he grabbed with his tail and set the young lord aflame with purple flames, stunning the man while rolling on the ground to put out the fire as Mario slammed his hammer into the Pokemon's spine.

Mewtwo fell to the ground and onto his knee while grunting. " Damn."

Mario formed a fire ball in his hand and pointed it at his chest. " Firebrand!" Mario caused the ball to explode and sent Mewtwo flying into the mansion as Shadow appeared in front of him with a red aura around him.

" Chaos! Blast!" Shadow released the powerful blast of red energy, nuking the area around them as Mewtwo screamed from the impact as a white glove grabbed Mewtwo and took him outside.

" YOU UNGRATEFUL BASTARD! I ALLOW YOU TO JOIN THIS TOURNAMENT AND THIS HOW YOU REPAY ME!?" Master Hand was beyond angry as he grabbed him tighter and threw him hard through space. " NEVER RETURN TO THIS PLACE!"

The Smashers that were still alive got to their feet and were watching Zelda walking to Link with a last look in her eyes as Peach trying to walk to her, only to be stopped by Komachi.

Zelda goes through his items and goes for his hook shot as the children had their eyes covered as Bowser gets up, not noticing that Pikachu was in the crater, leg and tail twitching from being crushed by the turtle fatass.

" With those two in such a state... what use... do i have anymore?" Zelda placed the object into her mouth as a single tear came from her eyes as she was stopped by Marth wrapping his arms around her and comforting her.

" Dear lord... so many of us... injured from one creature." Samus felt her heart wavering from this as Falcon walked up to her.

" Tch, those two were right on this one." Master Hand sighed while having some of the Mansion's servants carry the injured Smashers away. With the severity of their injuries, they wouldn't be competing and they would need to be laid off on paid leave. " Now I need to get more fighters."

Flashback ends...

Everyone was in silence from what they saw some of them lost their lunches from the sight, namely Hercule and the weaker stomached chars.

" J-jesus. I have never seen... that much bloodshed before."  
Byakuren was cleaning her mouth with a towel.

" all of that Destruction? For getting kicked out of a tournament?" Zoro didn't seem to like that at all as Luffy was unusually silent.

" Tch, hurting a fellow man of medicine like that, the next time I see that creature." Eirin was gripping her bow tightly as Reisen looked angry as well.

" That pink thing? What is his name?" Luffy asked while his hat covered his eyes.

" The name of the Pokemon is Mewtwo." Sanae said while wiping her mouth. " Oh god!" She threw up again.

" I'm gonna kick his ass for what he did!" Luffy got to his feet and slammed his fist into his hand.

" Looks like we've got our foes for this world." Xiaomu gets up as Reimu was rubbing Sora's back.

" Tch, you all got weak stomachs" Remilia looked at the group as Yukari emerged from the gap with patchy and Sakuya next to her.

" Where are these guys?" Sora asked as the sounds of engines came from above them.

" They're here in this city, it looks like an all out brawl is gonna happen here!" Ziden and Luffy ran out of the window and landed on the ground as they spotted Mewtwo waiting for them.

" There you are!" Luffy slammed his fist into his hand.

" Its time I avenged the injuries of the Smashers that fell to your hands all those years ago!" Ziden drew his blade as Mewtwo chuckled.



" Then show me your power hero and pirate." Mewtwo began to float.

Vergil and Yuugi were outside, looking up at a massive golem looking down at them as Reiji, Byakuren, Kaguya and Eirin were with them. " Regigigas." Kaguya uttered.

Zoro and Sanji with Mokou and Aya was looking up at the Regis that were coming down to them.

Remilia, Meiling, Sakuya and Patchouli were looking up to Deoxys as Remilia saw the ship in the sky and flew up to it with Reimu and Sora following her.

Marisa, Mario, Xiaomu, Flandre and the others were looking at the powerful Baron Von Kaiser. " Its been such a long time, little heroes." Kaiser walked forward, causing the ground to shake.

*Author's Note: Man, my chaps ar eso short now, oh well.*

# Legendary Battle Part 1

9000 views! This makes me so happy! I wish I could get some more reviews but I guess that will wait until I up my chapter amount! and don't be afraid to PM with something you need to ask.

---

Ziden and Luffy were looking at the Pokemon in front of them as Meiling left from her fight to come help with the battle against the Pokemon as Yukari and Kirby appeared in the fray as well.

" So you humans and... other creatures wish to fight me?" Mewtwo merely looked down at the group.

" For all those people that you injured!" Ziden stepped forward.

" For the rage you showed to those poor people." Meiling stepped forward.

" For the smashers you injured in jealousy." Yukari stepped forward with her umbrella out.

" Poyo! Poyo!" Kirby leapt up onto Ziden's head.

" We're gonna kick your ass, big cat thing!" Luffy dashed forward with his fist stretching back and twists like a drill. " Gum Gum Rifle!" Luffy blasts the attack forward, slamming it into the barrier as Mewtwo watched his barrier get torn to pieces by the impact as the fist sent him smashing into the building.

## **Battle against Mewtwo ( Pokemon Stadium)**

Mewtwo gets to his feet, surprised that the human could hit him like that. " That man... he seems stronger than before, even if he could barely handle the Regis." Mewtwo looked to see a strong leg coming for his face as he leaned back to dodge Meiling's kick.

" We were serious about beating you!" Meiling swings her leg down, slamming it into a Barrier while it blocked her kick as Yukari smashed her fist through it and grabbed the being through a gap, choking the creature with a strong grip.

" You've caused alot of problems, making us go out and find new fighters to replace the injured. Too much damn work for this Youkai to deal with." Yukari slammed his head into the Earth as he disappeared using teleport and appeared on a roof with Kirby slamming into his back like a rocket, covered in flames as he was sent crashing to the ground as Ziden's arm was blackened by the use of haki.

" !" Mewtwo was smashed hard in the face by the attack as the crashed through several buildings as Shadow Balls appeared in the sky and blasted down on the ground, spreading ice into the air.

Meiling leapt after the Pokemon as it appeared behind her and grabbed her hair. " Hey! Don't grab that!" Mewtwo slammed the girl into the ground and created an explosion of darkness and sent her flying.

Mewtwo began to walk towards the group of fighters while teleporting behind Yukari with a blade of Energy on his hand. " Psycho Cutter!" Yukari quickly swings her umbrella at the blade, causing a powerful clash of energy that blasted the frozen ground apart.

" Rankyaku!" Ziden kicked the air and created a blade of air that flew to the Mewtwo and hits his chest, sending him crashing into a wall.

Luffy saw the familiar attack while standing next to him. " Huh!? How do you know that attack!? I only thought only those guys at Enies lobby knew that stuff!"

" Hmm? Oh, I fought some leopard guy that used these attacks." Ziden answered as Mewtwo blasted Yukari into the air and was burning as she landed by Ziden and Luffy.

" I'm out for a while, way too lazy to keep fighting. Have fun guys." Yukari lays down on a roof as Luffy ran forward while pulling his arm back.

" Gum Gum Bullet!" L:Luffy's fist shot forward like a rocket and slammed into Mewtwo's chest blasting him back as Luffy followed up with another attack. " Gum Gum Whip!" Luffy throw an elongdated kick at the Pokemon, akin to a whip as it smacked into his side, hitting the air out of his lungs as Meiling appeared next to the Pokemon.

" Swallow Kick of Brilliant Colors!" Imbuing her attacks with her Ki, she unleashed a viscious assault of kicks that buffeted the creature and brought him into the air, buffeting him with a viscious barrage of kicks that took him into the air and brings her leg down onto his face, sending into the ground before it landed on the ground while laughing.

" Give it up Mewtwo! You're losing badly!" Ziden said as Mewtwo laughed again.

" If you believe that i have not been making myself stronger, then you are sorely mistaken. Behold, my new power!" Mewtwo was now covered in a bright light as every covered their eyes as Mewtwo changed into a large bulkier version of himself, Mega Mewtwo X!

" What in the world!?" Ziden was surprised at this transformation.

" Behold true power." Mewtwo charged forward.

Elsewhere...

Link and Eirin are seen looking up at the massive Regigigas as Kaguya and Sanae were raining down danmaku on the massive beast. " COME ON SANAE! HURRY UP!"

Sanae was bombarding it with every attack she had but the creature was not bugin as Vergil was slicing it with powerful Judgement

Cuts. " This creature is withstanding all of our attacks! What is this creature!?" Vergil yelled as the giant pokemon smacked the man into the ground.

" Its Regigigas! The Pokemon that dragged Continents across the ocean." Sanae yelled as Yuugi cracked her knuckles.

" That is some strength it has then." Yuugi looked up at the massive golem.

Regi Battle ( Pokemon Diamond)

Eirin began to bombard the creature with explosive arrows as the creature's slow movements were visibly seen. The creature tried to throw its thunderous punch at Yuugi as she threw a punch at it, matching its striking for as sparks came from the impact.

Link dashed around the creature while dropping bombs on his legs, blasting the creature over. Regigigas stumble from the blast while looking at the Hylian with its eyes as he pointed its fist at him and slammed into his body.

Link was sent flying by the attack as he landed next to Eirin, rolling into her legs as she focused magic into the arrow. " Thunder Arrow!" Eirin fired upwards into the air as the arrow split into three and shot to the ground around the creature, creating three massive orbs of lightning that forced the creature to take the lightning attacks.

" Whoa! Nice job Eirin!" Kaguya said as Mokou huffed and began to blast the creature with fire as well, cooking the creature as its eyes started to glow ominously. Its ability Slow Start was over and now it was ready to rock.

Regigigas looked up and grabbed the immortal duo out of the air, faster than they could react. " WHAT!?" Mokou looked confused as they were slammed hard into the ground, bouncing off it like a ragdoll, causing the ground to shatter from the impact.

Yuugi merely looked back to see Kaiser slamming into her throat with a strong lariat, knocking her on her back hard. " Never turn you back on your foe girl."

" HEy you asshat! How dare you lay your hands on your woman!?" Sanji dashed forward and slammed his feet into the man's chest, causing the man to stumble back from the impact.

" YOu hit hard for a mere human." Kaiser pulled his fist back as Erza appeared in her Heaven Wheel armor and rained down blades onto the hulking man while Ichigo aared and relased a powerful shockwave of blue light as it blasted the man back

" I dunno who you think you are pal, but you are going down!" IChigo held his blade out as Kaiser dashed forward, appearing next to the teen. " What!?"

" You let your guard down kid, in a war tht ill cost you your life." Kaiser grabs his face and slammed his face hard through the floor, breaking the ground under them as Ichigo was nearly knocked out by the impact

" Jesus! This guy is some kind of powerhouse!" Yuugi gets to her feet while smirking.

" An Oni? I hear you beings are powerful beings, capable of reducing mountains to dust with you fists." Kaiser looked at the woman as Pit was raining down magic arrows on the Man as Mario and Luigi slammed their hammers on him, forcing the man to his knees.

" We have to be careful! This man is no joke!" Pit yelled as the man leapt up to grab the angel and slam him into the ground. " Gack!"

Kaiser is seen slamming his foot into Pit's chest, smashing him into the ground. " Time to send you back to heaven the hard way." Kaiser lifts up his leg and goes to slam down on him, only to hit a barrier. " Hmm?"

" I won't be having any of that sir." Palutena is seen floating down to the ground as she looked at the man.

" Eh? Palutena can fight?" Sanae looked at the goddess as Regigigas smacked Sanae into the Earth.

Meanwhile...

Ziden, Kirby, Meiling and Luffy were all hurting from the beating that Mega Mewtwo gave them.

" Can you see it now humans? The clear difference us is vast and something you will never overcome." MEwtwo declared with a simple tone.

" I don't care how strong you are! I'm gonna kick your ass!" Luffy stood up and bends back while tensing his fists. " Gum Gum Gatling!" Luffy threw a barrage of stretchy fists at Mewtwo whom was sidestepping the attacks with ease, grabbing his arms and slammed him into the ground behind him.

" Shit! Luffy!" Ziden called out for his friend as Luffy got to his feet with his hat covering his eyes.

" Why do you keep fighting? You know that I am far stronger than you." Mewtwo said as Luffy merely looked at the pokemon.

" I know, in all my journies in the seas of my world, I've been fighting powerful foes in order to protect my friends, at one point, I met someone that was too powerful for me to fight on my own, so I had to devise a way to get stronger." Luffy bends down while pressing his fist to the frozen ground while having flashbacks to his fight with Blueno and Lucci.

" Oh? What was this way of getting stronger?" Mewtwo asked while looking at the boy as balls formed on his legs and shot into his body, turning his legs red and shiny as steam billowed out of the man. " What the?"

Ziden and Meiling blinked at the sight as Luffy stood up. " Gear 2nd." Steam bellowed all around him. " My moves... are all going to the next level!"

" Hah, fo you believe imitating a Steam Train will frighten me?" Mewtwo said as Luffy pointed his palm forward, using it like a Targeting reticle. " Have you forgotten? Your moves are too slow to ever catch me."

" Gum Gum Jet Pistol!" Luffy shot his fist forward with a loud fwip noise, blasting Mewtwo in the face as he was rocketed back.

" Holy cow that was fast!" Ziden yelled as the steam coming off from Luffy's body was coating the area around him.

" *What in the world? How did this human get so fast?*" Mewtwo looked at him while Luffy stretched his arm back while appearing before him as his eyes widdened.

" Gum Gum Jet Bullet!" Luffy's fist shot forward into the poemon's chest while sending him crashing through several building as Ziden threw Meiling a potion.

" Heh! Can't let Luffy have all the fun!" Meiling got to her feet.

Gear Second Theme ( One Piece Pirate Warriors)

Ziden is seen dashing at Mewtwo and slamming his leg intohis arm, watching the pokemon leaping up with a kick that Meiling blocked with her leg.

" You aren't getting the drop on us!" Meiling spins forward and lands a kick on the creature's neck, hitting it hard as Kirby appeared behind Mewtwo and throws a crescent of energy to its back, launcing him to Luffy whom appeared above him.

" Gum Gum Jet Axe!" Luffy shoot his leg downward like a rocket and blasted him down onto the ground, causing it to crack from the



impact as Ziden kicked Mewtwo with a powerful slide and sent him upwards.

" Kick of Showering Brilliance!" Meiling performed a powerful axe kick to the pokemon, sending him crashing into the ice as she was panting as Kirby and the others were standing across from him.

" I refuse to lose Humans." Mewtwo formed darkness in his hand and slammed it down, creating an explosion of dark magic as it flowed to group and washed over them.

" Now the real fight begins." Ziden said while cracking his knuckles.

On Team Plasma's Ship...

Remilia was walking over all the beaten members of the team she held back against, not in the mood for getting in trouble for killing more people.

She made her trek to a large metal room as she sees a large amount of ice before her with Ghetsis sitting on a throne. " Hmm? You are the Vampire correct?"

" Humph and you must be that punk that jumped us in that desert. You should be grate that I didn't tear you to pieces." Remilia looked at him while frowning.

" Such big words from a girl that was destroyed by Mewtwo. But now you are in my ship girl and you will die at the hands on this Pokemon." Ghetsis slammed his staff down as Kyurem is seen walking forward.

On the outside of the ship...

BOOOOOMMM!

Sora and Reimu are seen leaping back as several bats are seen flying around and a Reploid in white armor is seen standing on a mast.

" So the little eroes made it this far?" The vampire looked at the duo as the clouds were blocking out sunlight.

" It matters not, they shall be crushed." THe Reploid was looking down at them.

" You guys belong to the Scion of Oscura right?" Reimu asked.

" Yes we do. I am Dracula, lord of the vampires." Dracula looked the girl with a fangy smile.

" I am Sigma, your end!" Sigma leaps forward while laughing evilly.

Author's Notes: Dear lord that sickness was a pain in my ass. I promise that in the future, these chaps will get longer and such.

## Legendary Battle Part 2

Ziden, Luffy, Kirby and Meiling were now looking at giant Mega Mewtwo X as large platforms were floating around the Pokemon as they looked at him.

" Luffy, lets hit this freak with everything in our Arsenal." Ziden activated his flame release and looked at Mewtwo as his jacket flew off of the platform.

Victory Road ( Super Smash Bros Brawl)

Luffy watched as Mewtwo was creating massive balls of darkness that was flying to the group as they dashed away from the attack as Meiling was blasting him with Chi Bullets, buffeting his large body as he barely took damage.

Luffy disappeared in a blur and appeared near Mewtwo's face with his fist pulled back. " Gum Gum Jet Pistol!" Luffy slammed his fist into the Pokemon's face, causing its face to cave in from the impact and send him stumbling backwards while leaping back to the platform.

Ziden leapt into the air and goes to deliver a violent barrage of kicks to the Pokemon's upperbody as Mewtwo blocked the attacks with his forearms.

" BE GONE!" Mewtwo released a shockwave from his body and blasted the man back onto an empty platform.

" Aw crud." Ziden watched as the massive pokemon pointed to the platform he was on and exploded it with pure explosive darkness as Ziden was plummeting into the depths.

Meiling leaps into the air and landed on the pokemon's head. " Spiral Light Steps!" Meiling began her violent assault of punches and kicks to his head, causing mewtwo to stagger as ball of energy appeared

around meiling as she stopped and waited. She waited until they sped to her as he leapt into the air.

The balls of energy slammed into Mewtwo's face and blinded him as Kirby jumped under his jaw. " Rising Break!" Kirby performed his powerful uppercut and sent the pokemon skyward.

" Gum Gum Twin Jet Pistol!" Luffy slammed the both of his fists into the chest of the pokemon and sent him crashing off into space as it teleported back.

" You filthy beings! For this! You shall pay! Psychic Overdrive!" MEwtwo fired a shockwave of blue light that sent the group skyward and smashed them all onto the platforms.

Elsewhere...

"So the Goddess leaves her nest in order to come fight me?" Kaiser merely looked at the Goddess as she flicked her hair.

" Quiet you. I normally wouldn't get involved but I will fight to protect my friends." Palutena declared while looking at him as Sanji and Zoro got to their feet as Nitori was pointing something at luigi.

" Luigi! Time to get big!" Nitori fired a massive colorful laser at Luigi as several stars are seen coming from his body.

Luig is seen growing bigger in size as he soon towered over the battlefield and looked at Regigigas at an even height.

" How in the world?" Zoro, Vergil and Sanji all looked up at the massive human.

" Let this boss battle begin!" Xiaomu yelled as music started to play.

Never Let Up ( Mario & Luigi: Dream Team)

Luigi is seen running forward with Mario on his head as he pulled his fist back and slammed it into the Regigigas, forcing it to stagger

backwards before recovering and walking forward to lock arms with Luigi, trying to throw the man off balance.

Kaiser is seen punching Zoro's and Vergil's blades with his barehands as he was grinning wildly. "Is that all your toothpicks can do?" Kaiser taunted while sparks were coming off of his body.

"Tch! What the hell is this freak made out of!?" Vergil asked while leaping back.

Sanji leapt forward and landed a barrage of kicks at his chest, letting out loud strikes as the impacts were causing the earth to shatter. "You're gonna pay for harming a woman you bastard!"

"Will I now?" Kaiser flexed his chest and forced Sanji back as Nitori took aim with her Water Rifle and fired, tearing a hole right through his shoulder. "What!? Magic!?" Kaiser held his bleeding shoulder as it closed up.

"So magic is your bane?" Palutena asked while firing beams of magic all over and bombarding the ground as he was moving swiftly for a man his size.

Link and Bowser are seen dashing forward to Kaiser as Link slashed his side, drawing blood as Bowser slammed his fist into his face, sending him staggering back as Pit dashed forward with a large club and smashed him in the spine.

"Grah!" Kaiser grabbed the Koopa King by the face and threw him hard into the building behind them as Yuugi came down from above with Byakuren buffing her already immense strength. Yuugi's fist slammed into his face and smashed him into the ground, causing the ground to shatter from the impacts as Patchouli rained down fireballs onto the man as Kaiser was bombarded with the attacks.

"Curse you beings!" Kaiser gets to his feet as Sanji appeared underneath him.

" I'm gonna teach you not to mess with women like that! Bad Manners Kick Course!" Sanji slammed his foot hard into the man's chest with an unholy amount of force as his ribcage cracked upon impact sending him flying towards Zoro.

" Three Swords Style: Three Thousand Swords!" Zoro was spinning his blades like a fan in front of him as he dashed forward, cutting all around the large behemoth of a man and sending him flying through a building as Palutena created a Black hole on him.

" Eat this Mega Laser!" Palutena fired a massive laser from her staff, blasting the man through the black hole entirely and through many buildings as he was screaming in pain and crashed far into the Ocean.

" Whoa... never doubt a Goddess' power." Yukari said while watching from afar while looking at the sphere of darkness that Ziden and the others were fighting in.

Meanwhile...

Remilia was panting hard from looking at Kyurem as it looked unfazed from her attacks. " is that all you got human?" Kyurem breathed out some more mist from its mouth freezing the floor.

" Tch... this dragon... is a lot stronger than the last one we faced." Remilia was holding her broken arm as something tackled Kyurem over as it landed next to Remilia.

" Big Sis! Flandre is here to save the day!" Flandre lands on the ground as Kyurem merely looked at the newcomer.

" It matters not, you both will be crushed here." Kyurem declared while running forward.

Kyurem Battle Theme ( POkemon Black )

Remilia is seen creating a spear of red energy to throw at Kyurem as an icy wall appeared in front of him, blocking the attack again as she dashed forward with her claws, attempting to slice through the wall of ice.

Remilia's claws hit the wall at full force, causing a shockwave as the hit caused her to careen back from the impact as she held her broken hands. "That ice is powerful... hmm." Remilia watched as Flandre summoned her fiery weapon as she swung it in circles around her head, gathering massive flames and launching the flames into the wall of ice and blasted ice and fire into the air as the massive beast lurched forward.

Kyurem opened his maw as a large beam of ice shot forward and caught Remilia on one of her wings as she dashed forward on the ground. "Demon Lord's Walk!" Remilia leapt forward with blinding speeds and slammed into the Pokemon, blasting him back while grunting and leaping away, holding her arm from the impact.

Kyurem fired out beams of ice at the flying vampires as they dodged the beams to the best of their abilities and watched as the walls and floors were coated in ice. "Tch! What a Troublesome thing!" Remilia is seen struggling to stand on the ice before she tripped and landed hard on her face, yelping upon the impact of the ice while sliding along it. "I swear to something, I hate ice!"

"Big sis! Look out!" Flandre is seen racing along the ice and picking her up to dodge a powerful stomp from the frozen legend.

"Glacialate!" Kyurem makes a cyclone of ice around himself as massive ice spears formed in the sky and rained down on the duo as Flandre was just skating on the ice, one hand on her sister and the other on her blade as she looked focused in the icy Pokemon and raced to him.

Flandre leaps up and slammed her fiery blade into Kyurem, dealing damage to the creature as it skidded back against the floor as it growled.

" Foolish child, now you will see true power!" Ghetsis is seen slamming his staff down as fire wrapped around Kyurem as it transformed into a new form, White Kyurem as a massive surge of fire tore through the ship, nearly slicing it in half.

Sora and Reimu are seen being blasted off the ship and falling to the ground unconscious. " Bah, is this all those punks got?" Dracula asked while watching them fall.

" What did you expect from an organic? Before me they were nothing more than trash." Sigma added as they sidestepped the blade of fire tearing through the ship.

" Was that-"

" No, it was Kyurem, not the Icrim boy, let us leave this place. Ghetsis will fall to these humans and Youkai." Sigma is seen vanishing into darkness with Dracula as Flandre and Remilia landed on the deck of the ship as Kyurem blasted out of the side of the ship as Ghetsis merely watched from a monitor and camera.

" Tch, darn dragon!" Remilia summoned her spear while grunting and leaping forward to the dragon as it coated its body in fire and dashed forward, blasting past the vampire with its pure speed as she spun around and threw the spear, blasting its back with a red explosion as Flandre blasted him from above with a storm of Danmaku.

The pokemon roared from the impacts and breathed fire onto Flandre, hitting her chest and blasting her back into the sky, her chest flaming from the impact as she crashed into the deck, clutching her burning chest.

" Kyah!" Flandre pats her chest out as Remilia drop kicked Kyurem's face and smashed it into the ship and crashed through the ship and into the hold, causing the explosion of wood and steel to rain down as Kyurem fired more flamethrowers at Remilia, getting her wing burnt from the impact of the fall as Remilia fought through it and



slammed her spear through the pokemon's chest, causing a point blank explosion that cause the pokemon to stumble.

" You really are troublesome!" Kyurem fired an ice beam along the ground and created icy spikes the were going to stab Remilia as Flandre swings her sword and created a wave of fire that clashed with the ice as Remilia and Flandre dashed at the pokemon annd tackled the pokemon off of th ship, blasting it with their Strongest attacks.

" Spear the Gungnir!" Remilia threw her spear at the Pokemon's chest as it became a crimson laser, smasshing into the Pokemon's chest as it shot into the earth and smashed through several frozen buildings, causing a dust cloud to form upon impact as the Pokemon was knocked out by the attack as Remilia fell to her knees. " Dammit... wasted too much energy from fighting that thing..."

Meanwhile...

Ziden and Luffy are seen standing in front of the Injured Mewtwo as they were charging up their attacks.

" Gum Gum JEt Spear!" Luffy leapt into the air and shot his legs into Mewtwo's throat as Massively hypersonic speeds, causing him to choke as Ziden leapt into the air.

" Burning Impact: Hell's Dive!" Ziden performed a divekick into the Pokemon's chest, causing a massive explosion as Mewtwo coughed up blood from the impact as Ziden landed next to Luffy, fire coating his arms. " LEts wreck this bastard now!"

" Yeah, lets do it!" Luffy is seen leaning back while grunting. " Gum gum!"

" Burning!"

" Jet Gatling!"

" Spector!" Ziden and Luffy threw their barrages of multiple fists into the pokemon's chest, throwing punches at superhuman speeds, blasting past the pOkemon's barriers as the sounds of flesh being hit multiple times as Mewtwo coughed up more blood from the impacts as the duo roared at the top of their lungs as Kirby and Meiling watched.

Their fists were hitting their marks as the barrier of darkness shattered from all the hits as Mewtwo resumed his shrunken state and was being blasted backwards by the hits and Luffy and Ziden threw one final punch, colliding with the face of the pokemon, giving a close up of his pure white eyes, which showed he was completely knocked out from the punches as he crashed through several ice pillars, blasting through and sending mist over the battlefield as the Duo fell to the ground on their backs.

" Heh... we beat that bastard... we beat him good." Ziden merely closed his eyes while smiling as the ship is seen crashing into the ground outside the city as a rod slammed into the ground next to Sora as he was getting to his feet.

The Rod is seen glowing with that red light. " This is the item to the Gateway?" Sora asked as he did that whole song and dance and opened the gateways to the new worlds.

Everyone, even tuckered out from the battle gathered up and were back together.

" Next world?" Reimu asked while holding her broken arm.

" Yeah, we're getting out of here." Ziden touched some buttons on his jacket as everyone was teleported into the ship as the ship itself was being dragged to a world.

" Eh? What's going on!? Why is the ship moving its own!? It ruined my pizza." Dante asked while walking to the control room.

" Ziden... it looks like we're being brought to Smash City." Yukari added.

" Looks like Master Hand has something to tell us then." Ziden said while sighing. " Time for you guys to see where the Smash Bros tournaments take place."

Fun Facts:

1. Smash City is where the Smashers live during tournament times. Its a rather nice place.

Author's Notes: YEah, there was a reason why I wasn't updating in a while, I was in the hospital, recovering from a surgery I had, it was not fun and lets just say, I will no longer laugh at getting kicked in the nuts.

# Journey to Smash City

While the ship was on course to its location to the world known as Smash City. Ziden was busy resting on a couch, watching as the people on the ship wander about. " Wonder what the boss man could want with us at a time like this?" Ziden thought aloud while looking at the stars fly by them.

" Hey, dumbass. What's this Master Hand like?" Reimu asked while walking into the room with Sora and mario following.

" What's Master Hand like? You can wait until you meet him brat." Ziden said while looking at her.

' Tch! Why you little!?" Reimu sprang forward and went to choke the man, only to be stopped by Mario.

" Jeez! You two need to a stop-a fighting so much!" Mario said as Ziden and Reimu grunted in response.

" she started it, the dumb beaver." Ziden snorted while looking away.

" Anyways, what's this Master Hand like?" Sora asked.

" Very good question Sora, Master Hand is a hand of mystery! Wondrous, wondrous pancakes." Ziden was drooling now for some unknown reason.

" BUt is he reall-

" A giant floating hand, yeah, he is. Really nice fella too, when you don't make him mad and whatnot, you'll see when you meet him." Mario answered as Sora nodded.

" Gee and when will that be?" Reimu asked.

: Whenever the ship gets there, kid." Ziden goes back to resting on the couch while yawning, not seeming to care about the situation and wanting a nap for the long trip.

" How long will that take?" Sora asked.

" About... like 3-6 days or so I think, I was gonna go check out the people of Gensokyo with Sora and Dante but I think i will take a nap first, get my bones rested." Ziden cracked his neck as Luffy was running around the ship with sparkles in his eyes.

" Man this ship is so cool! How is it able to fly through space like this!? Man franky would love to see this!" Luffy was running around like a maniac while smiling.

" Looks like someone is hav- oof!" Ziden words were blasted right out of his mouth as Meiling jumped right onto his stomach and nuzzled him. " Good lord... my ribs might be broken from that."

" You'll live!" Meiling merely looked up at him with a bright smile as Ziden couldn't help but to smile from it.

" I know I will, but jeez China, atleast warn me first!" Ziden runs his hands through her red hair while smiling before getting clocked on the head by Meiling.

" My name is MEILING! Not China!" Meiling rubbed her fist while glaring at him.

" Aw, but its a cute nickname!" Ziden goaded, earning another punch from Meiling.

" How about I call you Zizi then?" Meiling asked with a bright smirk.

" Never in your lifetime!" Ziden didn't like that nickname at all.

" Too bad! Everytime you call me China, I'm hitting you and calling you Zizi!" Meiling declared with a strong smirk on her face, combined with an arm cross.

"... Fine, Ch- I mean Meiling, I won't call you that again." Ziden sighed out as he looked up at her with a simple smile as the sound of glass breaking was heard.

*" A new bond has been established between you two, you have reached the first rank of the Lovers Social Link. Through this, your Offensive skills will increase through the bonds you make with her. Burn with the ferocity of a Dragon and the radiance of the Phoenix."* The voice is heard vanishing as Ziden sighed.

" More bonds more... problems? I dunno at this point." Ziden shrugs as Meiling steals a kiss as Reimu faked puking.

" As long as I have my sparing partner, I'm happy!" Meiling had a bright grin on her face while getting up and running off somewhere in the ship.

" Welp, time for adventure I guess." Ziden gets up from the couch while yawning as Reimu headed back to where everyone was.

Ziden merely walked to where he wanted to go, knowing that the ship wouldn't reach its destination for a while now, he decided to wander around the ship and meet up with the Smashers and see how they were getting along with Gensokyo girls and instantly came across Link in the training room, training himself up for future fights.

" Yo Link!" Ziden called out to the Hero as Link merely focused on firing arrows at the targets, hitting bullseyes everytime with his precise aiming skills.

"..." Link merely added more arrows to his bow and kept firing more and more arrows at the targets, shooting them down to the center of the previous arrows while he let out a breath of relief.

"..." Ziden just looks at him with a sidelong glance, wondering why he was being ignored. " Oh right, Link isn't much of a talker."

" I'm not, what do you want?" Link asked while turning around and looking at Ziden with a simple glance.

" What? Can't I come visit an old friend?" Ziden asked with a simple smirk and looking at him.

" Well, I have no problem with visits from a friend, I was just wondering what brought you to this place, to me right noww." Link is seen setting up another arrow and going to let it fly to the targets again, this time with a bomb attached to it as it caused an explosive impact upon smashing into said target, sending splinters everywhere.

" Uh... just killing time really, got bored on our trip back to Smash City." Ziden scratched his head while sighing.

" Master Hand is bringing us back?" Link turned to Ziden while thinking.

" Probably some insight on this war no doubt." Ziden said as Eirin walked into the room while smiling.

" Oh there you are. It appears that there is an incident going on in Gensokyo... well virtual Gensokyo but what's the difference, so you might not see Reimu and the others for a while." Eirin said while looking at Link.

" Great, what else is happening?" Ziden asked.

" Well, aside from this Black Hedgehog picking fights with Vergil and Dante with a blue hedgehog trying to defuse the fight." Eirin said.

" Eh? Oh... Shadow is here... wait, why is Shadow and Sonic here!?" Ziden ran out of the room and entered the hallway, hearing the sounds of explosions coming from nearby. " Godammit."

" damned creature! Stay down!" Vergil could be heard yelling in the distance as Shado's voice could also be heard in the distance as

well.

" Who are you calling a creature you white haired freak!? I am Shadow the Hedgehog, The Ultimate Life Form!" Several explosions followed that statement as Ziden sees Vergil flying across the room.

" Would you dumbasses knock it off!?" Ziden yelled while looking at everyone as he sees a spear of yellow energy blast right through his head. Ziden soon regenerated from the blast as he sighed. " Nice shadow, just nice." Ziden merely looked at the fight happening.

" Hmm? Oh its you..." Shadow merely looked at Ziden.

" Yeah its me you jerk, nice to see you too, Mr Grump." Ziden runs his hand through his hair while thinking. " Master Hand summoned you here too?"

" Yeah he did, summoned all the other Smashers too." Shadow simply said while looking at Ziden as Remilia was merely watching from above.

" Aww phooey and that fight was getting good too." Remilia simply pouted while drinking her tea.

" Jeez, must be big if all the Smashers are being called... minus Ganondorf of course." Ziden sighed.

" Indeed, we can only wait until we reach there, I might have me a spar with someone, not sure who though." Sonic is seen stretching.

" Why not the plumber? You two always were good friends since that Mecha Sonic incident." Shadow added.

" Mario, sure thing! It will be nice to see him again!" Sonic smiled while dashing off in seconds, surprising Remilia with his speed.

" Whoa, that guy might just outspeed even Aya." Remilia blinked hard while drinking her tea.



" NOw I want a good spar... hmmm... where is that angry metal; midget?" Ziden was looking aroun for Wolverine and ended up heading to the Virtual Gensokyo, seeing a bunch of masked humans walking around. " Eh?" Ziden just keeps walking until he ended up stopping. " I can sense you there kiddo, come out."

Kokoro is seen coming out from behind a building while looking emotionless like always and wearing a mask of shock. " How did you-

" Sense your presence? Kinda hard not to notice someone that has the scent of my friend's Sora's blood on them." Ziden said while looking at her as she switched to a sadder mask.

" I didn't mean to hurt him... I was ricked into attacking him since I lost my Mask of Hope." Kokoro stated while Ziden looked at her.

" Hmm, no worries, the kid forgave ya... but his girlfriend... well, just don't tell her out of the blue." Ziden simply said while scratching his head. " Anyways, you know where the nearest bar is?" Ziden asked as she pointed to a nearby bar.

" Over there... thanks MR...

" Ziden, Ziden Icrim." Ziden smiled at her and walked off. He entered the bar shortly afterwards, spotting Suika and Yuugi enjoying drinks at night. " Damn, still no Wolverine. Wait a sec... what is this feeling of hopelessness in this place?" Ziden asked around the room as Yuugi shrugged.

" I dunno, just know that the Buddhist, the Taoists and Reimu are fighting to win the faith of the people right now. YOu should be careful kiddo, they might try to rag you into the fight for ffaith." Yuugi explained.

" Great, isn't that wonderful?" Ziden just scratched his head as he spots Suika smirking at him.

" Hey, you're the tough guy! YOu'll do fine out there!" Suika declared while drinking down her sake as Ziden sighed.

" Yeah yeah, time to get moving." Ziden waves the duo goodbye and heads outside, seeing the morning rays of the sun peek out from the sky. " Ah, morning... yay." Ziden cracked his neck while looking around the place. "Where to now?" Ziden wondered as he felt someone tugging on his sleeve and turned to see Terra next to him.

" Hey Ziden." Terra said with a short yawn following it. Terra soon yelped from a strong hug given to her by Ziden.

" TERRA! YOU'RE ALRIGHT!" Ziden was spinning around in circles, holding Terra close.

" ZIDEN1 PUT ME DOWN BEFORE YOU WAAAAAH!" Ziden accidentally released Terra and she was sent flying straight into a cabbage stand as the man running it screamed.

" MY CABBAGES!"

" Whoops, my bad Terra." Ziden runs his hand through his hair while chuckling.

" Jeez,injure me more thanks..." Terra gets to her feet slowly while looking as dauntly as always.

" You back to fighting condition?" Ziden asked while looking at her.

" Somewhat, still hurt but Eirin wants me to stay out of battles until I a fully recovered." Terra explained while Ziden nodded.

" Makes sense, i doubt we're gonna get in any big fights until we reach Smash City." Ziden said, not noticing the fact that Reimu and Byakuren were flying to him.

" Hey! Ziden!" Zidn looked up to Reimu nd raised a simple brow, wondering what she was calling him for. " JOin my side and help me win faith for Shinto belief."

" Oh goddammit." Ziden looked annoyed.

" Absolutely not, he obviously plans to aid the Buddhists." Byakuren seemed certain of that.

" Uh no... I refuse both invitations." Ziden said while crossing his arms.

" Oh? Then that means you plan on helping the Taoists then." Byakuren is seen holding her scroll with a sweet smile on her face, hiding a dangerous force behind it.

" Hey now..." Ziden could feel something was off before he jumped back and dodged a Yin Yang Orb.

" If you won't join by choice, then I'll make you join my side!" Reimu is seen holding several amulets in her hands.

" Oh man, i just remembered... I have to go punch my catus with water... see ya!" Ziden dashed off with extreme speed as Reimu and Byakuren flew after him, keeping up with him.

" Homing amulets!" Reimu threw the large amulets at Ziden as they slammed hard into his back, sending him spinning along the ground and sent him flying through several buildings as he cried out in pain.

" WHY ME!?" Ziden yelled out as he gets to his feet and keeps running away.

Meanwhile...

Two massive black arms are seen smashing Dante and Vergil through several walls on the ship as Yukari was watching from afar as Rankyogan was walking forward and roaring. " Where... is... father!?" Rankyogan was searching hard for Ziden as Meiling and Komachi were about to step in as Yukari stopped them.

" No, don't help them, why don't we allow you to see the Smashers in action. Namely those four." Yukari pointed to Mario, Luigi, Sonic and

Shadow standing in front of the cloned monsterousity as they looked ready for a fight.

" Heh, I hope you haven't been getting rusty Mario!" Sonic is seen tapping the ground with his foot while stretching.

" Same to you Sonic." Mario is seen cracking his knuckles.

" Been a while since we all fought together." Luigi added while cracking his neck.

" Humph, Sonic and you plumbers better not hold me back in this fight." Shadow is seen taking his trademark stance, arms crossed and looking at Rankyogan from the side.

" Smash... ers... must... kill!" Rankyogan is seen roaring while leaping at the group of fighters as Yukari was drinking her tea.

Fun Facts:

1. The Mecha Sonic incident refers to the SMBZ fanseries that Alvin made and abandoned, leaving many a person upset that he left it and went to go draw Furry art... meh, I MIGHT, make a fanfic on a completed SMBZ story but I might not. Not sure yet.

Author's Note: Hurray, pumping this out quickly! Also next chapter will feature a preview to next story I have planned! So stay tuned!

## Team SMBZ Reunites! Defeat Rankyogan!

Ziden is seen running for his life from the religious duo. " Dammit! I don't want to be involved in this damn nonsense!" Ziden was flipping over tables and dodging Danmaku from the duo.

" Hey! Stop running and join my side already!" Reimu yelled as Ziden had to flip to the side to avoid being shoulder charged by Byakuren.

" You're a fast one, Mr. Ziden but running won't do you much good here!" Byakuren lashed out with a sharp kick to Ziden's head,, connecting with a loud audible crack that sounded like i caused a lo of pain to Ziden, judging by how he stumbled back upon impact.

" Damn that hurt and almost broke my freaking my neck with that kick!" Ziden pointed ot he way his neck was leaning to the side while he grimaced.

" I will cease hostilities if you side with the Buddhists." Byakuren said with a simple smile.

" Hmm, how about this option?" Ziden began glowing with a purple light and vanished. He oon reappeared in the Forest of Magic. UNfortunately he appeared before Miko.

" Hmm? Oh Ziden fancy meeting you here." Miko turned to face him, wearing a fancy new cape while smiling.

" Uh... hi?" Ziden said while looking at her.

" I had heard rumors of you siding with Reimu, is his true?" Miko asked.

" Uh... no?" Ziden had his hand on his blade.

" If tha is truly the case, then why not side with the Taoists?" Miko asked with a smile. " Why not side with your fellow humans?"

" Oh man, I just remembered I gotta go do stuff with my cow... see ya." Ziden is seen running off, only to be stopped by a pillar of light slamming down in front of him.

" If you won't side with us by choice, then I shall use force." Miko said while looking at him and sheathing her blade.

" Great! What else can go wrong today!?" Ziden asked as a large red energy ball slammed into Miko and blasted her through several trees. " Eh!?"

" Having religion troubles Icrim?" Ganondorf is seen walking through the brush as Ziden immediately brought up his guard.

" What are you doing here?" Ziden asked as Ganondorf merely looked at him.

" I'm not here to fight, rather, I'm here to rejoin the Smashers after my falling out with the Scions of Oscura." Ganondorf said as Ziden doubted his every word.

" I severely doubt that. But... you're not the one to usually appear before someone with this level of trickery." Ziden said while lowering his guard abit.

" Humph, if you don't believe me, then why haven't I just attacked you when you didn't even know I was following you?" Ganondorf stated as Ziden just scratched his head.

" Alright... but I still don't trust you, but I sense you want something else for yourfull cooperation." Ziden had that naging feeling in his gut.

" But of course, I wish to have my new castle built on your... Earth was it. Hyrule has become... repetitive, I prefer a place new." Ganondorf said.

" Hell. No. No way I trust you on Earth!" Ziden was against this.

" Do you really have a choice?" Ganondorf asked as Ziden looked back to see Miko getting up.

" Tch fine, but if you do anything remotely World Domination related, I'm coming to kick your ass got it?" Ziden said while looking at him.

" Humph, fine by me." Ganondorf looked at Ziden while walking away. " I'm heading to my room in the ship, make sure to tell your allies that i'm on your side." Ganondorf is seen vanishing into darkness while Ziden sighed.

" Great, now what?" Ziden asked as he left the forest, not wanting to get in Miko's way.

" Then perhaps you would like to join me for some tea then?" Ziden looked up to see a woman with red hair and a bandaged arm is seen sitting atop a tree branch with a smile.

" Hmm, alright, tea would be nice." Ziden said while looking up at her.

*Meanwhile...*

Mario and co are seen flipping backwards to avoid Rankyogan's tendril like arms from slamming into them as the brawl took place in the hanger of the ship.

### **The Fierce Battle ( Metal Slug 5)**

Mario and Luigi are seen landing on their feet and pulling out two feathers and taking them, becoming cape Mario and Luigi as Sonic dashed around Rankyogan, leaving a blue blur around the bodysuited clone.

" Stand still hedgehog and I will make your death swift!" RKG is seen slamming his arm into the ground causing an earthquake to try and knock the hedgehog off his feet, only for Sonic to leap into the air and curl into a ball and homing attack right into the man's face, blasting him back as he skids along the floor and growled.

Shadow appeared right behind RKG and spins hard in the air, slamming his boot hard into the back of the creature's neck, causing the neck to snap as RKG spun out onto the floor, coughing up black blood onto the floor.

" Curse you both!" RKG is seen sending his tendrils into the ground, causing the ground to shake as the razor sharp tendrils are seen shooting up into the air and going to impale Mario and Luigi.

Mario and Luigi are seen removing their capes and swinging them to send them flying right back at RKG, piercing through his body as the clone screeched. Mario is seen flying right to him and spinning hard with the razor sharp cape cutting into RKG with each rotation, becoming a spinning blur and ending with a sharp upper cut to the jaw that sent him flying into the air, with a resounding sound coming from the Smash attack.

RKG landed on the ground with a thud and gets to his feet, looking around until he spots a red Arwing to grab with his hands, wrapping around it. " Hey, Green Plumber catch!" RKG threw the ship at Luigi as he screamed and panicked as the ship smacked him hard into the wall, leaving a Luigi shaped hole in the wall.

" Ouch, that's gotta hurt!" Komachi said while snickering.

RKG is seen winding up his arm while shooting it forward like a rocket at Mario. Mario quickly reacted to said attack by slamming his hammer into the monster's fist, causing a shockwave in the room as Shadow leapt into the air with golden lights surrounding him.

" Chaos Spear!" Shadow rained down a barrage of golden spears that pierced his body all over and caused a massive smoke cloud to form around the monster.

" Whoa, these guys are alot stronger than I thought they were, such teamwork." Meiling was amazed with their teamwork as Luigi fell out of the hole.



" Mama mia." Luigi had swirls in his eyes and was obviously dizzy as Sonic was doing a spin dash charge upon the ground with several blue balls of energy entering his body as a charge up sound was heard.

" I WILL CRUSH YOU ALL!" RKG is seen running out of the smoke and charging out of the smokescreen with his arm transformed into a chainsaw as he was ready to tear into Sonic's body.

" READY? GO!" Sonic shot forward at Light Speed, slamming into RKG's body and shot him straight through the roof of the ship as the air in the ship was being sucked into the vacuum of space as Shadow and Mario flew after Sonic with Luigi regaining his composure and flying through the hole before a steel hatch closed after them.

" Hmm, so the fight is going into Space? Interesting, this will be Rankyogan's final battle." Yukari stated while smiling.

\

RKG is seen landing on top of the ship,. injured from the previous attacks as he roared loudly, sending visible shockwaves through the air as the people who were aware of the fight were watching from the control room of the ship.

" You... you... YOU WILL BE DESTROYED!" RKG began to shoot black lightning from his body as it began to grow to its massive form again only the slits that were on his arms and legs opened up to show the faces of crying men and women, begging to be saved.

" D-dear lord!? What is that!?" Meiling yelled.

" Those are the people that Rankyogan devoured over the course of his lifetime, those people have no hope of being saved now, only the sweet release of death to save them." Yukari explained.

" To think that Earthlings could create such a monster, its frightening." Toyohime said while looking at the creature with disgust.

" It was Lightning Ace, a Lunarian that mde that clone of Ziden." Komachi said while sighing.

" What? Why would a Lunarian work to create such a disgusting abomination?" Yorihome wondered why someone would make such a thing.

" isn't it obvious? I may not know much about your world, but its obvious if it had a powerful warrior, that evil beings would want his power to use for their own goals, hence cloning." Robin said while looking up from her book.

Mario, Luigi, Sonic and Shadow is seen staring up at the evil monster above them as the doll like face of the creature was drooling the black sludge from his maw, letting it drip onto the hull of the ship as random planets were floating around them.

" Heh, still looking as ugly as ever i see." Sonic taunted as he tapped his foot on the hull of the ship.

" How is it that you laugh in the face of your immeniant demise?" RKG asked while stomping forward as its hand reformed into a massive dragon head as purple flames are seen forming in the mouth. " No matter, die!" The flames are seen shooting outwards like a laser and towards the heroes as they scattered like flies and dodged the attack. The laser pushed past the barrier around the ship and ends up slamming into a planet nearby, coating it purple flames.

" Wowza! Talk about power!" Sonic lands on the ground and watched the planet explode into rocks and other materials are seen coming out of the smoke.

" Whoa ze! I want my Master spark to do that one day! I'm putting that on mah bucket list!" Marisa is seen writing something on a piece of paper as Ziden looked over her shoulder and read the list.

' Discover ways of gaining immortality without losing myself, get myself some kids somehow, Become the best Human magician in Gensokyo, Make Master Spark blow up a planet, make a potion for Mana Draining.' Ziden raised a brow.

" Doesn't the immortal thing kinda kill the whole point of the bucket list?" Ziden asked while drinking a smoothie.

" Uh... maybe?" Marisa just shrugged.

Sonic is seen dashing toward RKG as the massive being merely stood there as Sonic slammed his body into RKG, smashing into the mask and knocking him back a few feet as Mario threw a hammer at him. The hammer flew and smashed into one of the faces, causing it to explode into blood and spray out at Mario, forming into spears of blood that were going to impale him.

" Mama mia~!" Mario is seen backflipping away and floating in the air as the spears caused a red explosion of smoke as the plumber panted. " That was close, avoid hitting the faces, got it!"

Shadow looked at what happened when one of the faces were hit and began to think as soon the area was sucked into a green portal, showing they were entering the wormhole to Master Hand's World.

### **The Dread of Night ( Kingdom Hearts: Dream Drop Distance)**

RKG is seen raising its massive tree like forearm and swinging it like a massive whip as Mario jumped onto it and ran along it.

Mario pulled his arm back with a fire ball gathering softly in his hand with a fierce glow around it.

" Off plumber!" Large tendrils are seen forming on the arm and forming into cannons that were charging up with a mysterious purple glow.

" Hmm?" Mario sees the cannons up ahead as they fired large balls of energy at the Plumber in red. " He-yah!" Mario swings his cape in front of him as the projectiles hit the cape, reflecting them back at the cannons, causing a bright explosive light to cover the creature's arm as Mario leapt through the Fire and Flames and smashed the fireball into RKG's face, setting it ablaze as he screeched.

Luigi is seen holding a Bob-omb in his hand with a scared look. " Lets a do this!" Luigi is seen lobbing the bomb straight into the air with a downwards arc while Shadow goes for a powerful kick to RKG's stomach, forcing his mouth to open up as the Bob-omb entered his massive maw and he swallowed it.

The bomb could be heard exploding as RKG's body violently expanded from the explosion as Shadow is seen appearing before the massive beast. " Take this you freak!" Shadow unleashed a barrage of powerful kicks and punches to the monster's doll like mask, shattering pieces with each thunderous strike as he pulled his fist back as his purple energy formed around the fist as RKG threw a punch at his fist as they clashed, causing a shockwave that blasted the airborne Mario completely off the ship.

" Oh crud! Mario!" Meiling looked worried as Mario slammed into a barrier around the ship as he stood on the barrier, dusting off his overalls as he leapt off of it and back onto the ship.

" Sonic Wind!" Sonic spins around RKG and created a bright blue whirlwind that lifted the massive creature into the air as large tendrils came from his body and began to reform into massive snakes.

" Yamata no Orochi!" The massive snakes are seen roaring as the snakes' venom were melting the hull of the ship as Remilia remembered how painful the poison is. " My snakes will feast on your bones and strip the flesh from them as well."

" Heh! Just bring it!" Sonic's attack turned into high gear as RKG was blasted headfirst into the force field and heavily shocked him while

one of the snakes were firing bursts of darkness at Luigi whom was scrambling to dodge the attacks.

Shadow was looking at the massive serpents while forming a spear in his hand and threw it right through one of the heads of the snakes, causing it to explode into black goop as RKG screamed in pure pain. " So those things are directly connected to you huh? Enough play time, time to end this nonsense." Shadow is seen reaching for his wrists and removing the rings on his arms.

" Looks like Shadow is about to get serious!" Sonic is seen spinning through one of the snakes, slicing a head clean off as RKG was on his last legs. The Snake heads were seen charging up hellish fire in their mouths as Mario slammed a fire flower down onto his chest, becoming fire Mario and threw one to Sonic.

" LETS end this!" Sonic is seen taking the Fire Flower and exploding into flames as his smirk was back on and ready for action as he was now a bright red color with golden eyes while standing next to Mario.

" YOU WILL ALL DIE BY MY HANDS!"

Mario and Sonic are seen summoning unholy amounts of fire to their hands and firing a big beam of fire at RKG and clashed with the flames of the Orochi.

" OH YEAH!" Mario yelled out as his flames grew bigger and stronger with Sonic helping out as well.

" NOW ITS OVER!" Mario and Sonic's flames overpowered the fire of their foe and consumed RKG entirely as they roared in pain as his dying thrashes while the faces on his body were all crying.

" No... I was so close..." RKG is seen returning to normal as Ziden appeared on the hull of the ship. " Father... all I wanted was to kill... why did you not let me... achieve my dream?"

" Become your dream would have endangered far too many human lives and I certainly wouldn't allow that to happen." Ziden answered as RKG made a noise similar to laughing.

" You fight... to protect... the people... that will end up betraying you... in the end... father... its... sad... why fight for them... when you know... they will never understand you?" RKG asked a new question as his body was melting..

"..."

" Such is the way... of a worthless... hero." RKG is seen exploding into darkness as his laughter rang out over the ship.

" Whooooohoooo! ITs been a while since we had a fight like that! One of the Ultima Brigade is down for the count!" Sonic is seen giving Mario a fiery hi ffive as the Planet they were brought to were in front of them.

"... Time to head to Master Hand's place." Zideen looked at the planet, now having doubts for the reasons he was fighting for.

" Master Hand awaits Ziden, lets get moving." Yukari said while looking at him.

*FUn Facts:*

*1. Fire Sonic looks just as he does in SMBZ, minus the theme going with it.*

*2. As shown in the Games, Mario, Sonic, Luigi and Shadow can breathe in Space with no real problems, so there's no risk of death there.*

*Author's Note: Pumping out Chapters at Sonic Speed! Hah, get it, cuz Sonic is here? Bah, that was funny.*

**Preview**

*It was a day unlike any other, Japan was calm and peaceful after the incident of the Ultima Brigade, but the aftermath of the war was far and wide, even the King of Monsters was soon to be affected by this.*

*On another world, far away from Earth, two heroes are seen conversing.*

*" What do you mean, you feel like there's another Sin coming to this place, that's impossible!" The male seemed to be certain of this.*

*" I dunno, it feels like... a great Mistake is in this world, a mistake created by the hand of man." The woman is seen looking out to the sea.*

*" If there is, we'll stop it, just like with Sin and Chaos." The boy is seen holding a blade with water bubbles coming from it while smiling.*

*Later on that world...*

*" In shocking news... it seems... that Spira... was utterly wiped out by an unknown monster... it was completely wiped off the face of this world..." A reporter is seen on screen as many people looked horrified.*

*The screen showed a massive mountain of a monster walking through the ruins of the city, its dorsal fins were shining as if charging up something as it fired right at the camera as a familiar roar could be heard in the darkness.*

*Coming soon: Godzilla: All Out Monster War*

## Smash City and Master Hand!

Mario and co. landed on the outskirts of the massive city as the Gensokyo dwellers were surprised by what they saw.

" Whoa! Its like a futuristic place!" Luffy was looking around at the massive skyscrapers and cars driving by.

" Yeah, Gensokyo is nothing like this at all." BYakuren was very shocked by the hustling city as the cars drove past her and she accidentally walked into the street without looking as a large black truck was driving right at her.

" Huh? Byakuren! Look out!" Reimu was about to run after her as a boy in a ballcap tackled her out of the way of the truck as the boy rolled to his feet.

" Are you ok Miss?" The boy asked as Byakuren stood back up.

" Thank you very much for the help." Byakuren thanked the boy as Mario smiled.

" Ness! Long time no see!" Mario welcomed his fellow Smasher to the group as Ziden and Yukari smiled at the boy.

" How is it hanging, O Great savoir of the Universe?" Ziden asked, still hiding his doubts.

" I'm doing great! I got to this world as fast as I could when Master Hand called us here! I even got Lucas on the way here." Ness explained.

" So the kid is here too? That's great!" Yukari smiled brightly as Lucas shyly walked up to them.

" H-hello there." Lucas shyly waved his hand at the group as Flandre waved back to him.



" HEllO there! What's your name?" Flandre was walking around him on the sidewalk as Lucas looked at her.

" My name is lucas... Nice to meet you." Lucas nods to the Young vampire girl as Flandre smiled brightly at him.

" Well now, shouldn't we be heading to that Hand guy, kinda wasteful if we just stand around doing nothing, you know?" Mokou brought up a good point there.

" Walk and talk then, it works for me." Eirin suggested as they began to walk forward along the sidewalk.

" Alright, you see those things with wheels and moving fast across the street? Yeah, don't walk into the street without looking at the traffic lights. Even if you guys are Youkai, getting hit by a car will mess you guys up, especially the Magicians." Ziden explained while walking next to Patchouli.

" So basically, stay on the sidewalk ze?" Marisa asked while holding her broom over her back.

" Basically yeah." Yukari said. " Normally we would fly there, by why do that when we can take the scenic route?"

" MEh, plus half of us here can't fly so yeah, there's that too." Reiji added as Xiaomu was looking at the gaming arcades.

" MUst. Play. Games." Xiaomu tried to sneak off to play one of them, only to get caught by Ran. " Come on! Master Hand can wait! I want to play some games for a while!"

" No, we are here on business, nothing else." Ran explained as xiaomu pouted.

Of course Kaguya was already inside the Arcade, far out of sight with Reisen in tow.

" See Reisen? Xiaomu was the perfect distraction for us to sneak in here!" Kaguya seemed proud of herself that she was able to sneak away from the group.

" Won't we be lost if don't go with them?" Reisen suggested.

" Pfft! that's a problem for the future! Come on! Lets play!" Reisen was forcibly dragged into a two player racing game with Kaguya.

" I feel like we're missing somebody... meh, must be my imagination." Eirin said aloud while looking at the group.

" Probably, once we reach the mansion, we'll do a headcount then." Ziden said.

" Well, everyone stay together, who knows what kind of weird men and women live in this place." Yukari added.

" What? Besides you and Ziden?" Reimu pointed out as some of the people snickered.

" oh shut it you, lets get moving already." Ziden said while walking forward.

" Where are we headed anyways?" Patchouli asked.

" To the Northern Exit of Smashville and yes, that is this town's name." Yukari said as Komachi yawned.

" Man, can't we just take a bus to there like last time? My dogs are aching." Komachi asked.

" A bus?" Alice asked.

" Its a vehicle people use to get around places." Sanae answered with a smart look on her face.

" Why not fly?" Daiyousei asked.

" Flying is kinda... rare in the Outside World, you'd be lucky to have the potential to become a superhuman." Ziden answered.

" So basically, people can't fly in the Outside world so they use these buses and cars to get around right?" Mokou asked.

" Bingo." Eirin answered.

" What if they need to get somewhere that a car or a bus can't reach?" Daiyousei asked.

" Then they use either a plane or a boat to get said places, like the boat we took to Rogueport." Yukari answered.

" Ah Rogueport... those were good times." Remilia remembered.

" Yep, its when Ziden got into a Harem, we got to fight a dragonl, got to fight in a tournament, solved a mystery on a train and so many other stuff too!" Marisa pointed out.

" Yukari, remind me to kill my past self the next time I see him." Ziden stated.

" Can do."

" Is a Harem really all that bad? One would think a man would love all those females around him." BYakuren asked.

" Yeah but then you realize, ' Hey, what if they want kids? What if one day, they start killing each other or me? How much money will I have to spend to keep them happy?' Stuff like that." Ziden explained.

" Hmm true, plus you would have to tally out the time to spend with each on which days. Stuff like that too kinda kills a Harem, that's why you kept it small?" Ran asked.

" Yep, Patchouli, Meiling, Komachi, Aya, Mokou and Kaguya, anything bigger than 6 would be pure insanity." Ziden said.

" Smart boy, I raised you well." Yukari fanned her face.

" What the... You didn't even do much, it was Ran that was doing 80% of the work while you were lazing on the couch." Ziden said while looking at her.

" Great family you got there bucko." Dante said while placing his hands in his jacket pocket.

" I know right? Its so nice to wake up to a Hag snuggling you in the morning isn't it?" Ziden asked with a fake smile on his face and sarcasm lacing his voice.

Of course this got him a conk on the head from said hag via a fan chop.

" I am not a hag. That is very rude." Yukari said while looking at him

" Totally are." Ziden retorted back as the group began to cross the street.

" Hey! Don't disrespect a lady like that! Sanji yelled.

" I'm not disrespecting her at all, we all treat her like this because she's a Bitch on wheels most of the time... or just a dirtbag." Ziden said with a shrug.

" I am not a Bitch on wheels, now that is mean. My methods are just uestionable most of the time and mostly not harmful to most people." Yukari said that with a smile on her face.

" Well, she's still a lady and she must be treated with respect." Sanji replied.

" Not her, she'll rip out your entrails in your sleep, she is evil incarnate, like Fox News." Ziden said as lightning struck a nearby fruit stand.

" The hell?" Dante looked at the flaming stand as the man panicked.

" Shouldn't you be doing something? Or is that Legendary Hero title just for show?" Vergil goaded, earning a growl from Ziden.

Ziden simply kept walking as he held out his hand and the fire flowed to it, entering his hand.

" Thanks for saving my Mango stand!" The man waved in thanks.

" Yeah yeah." Ziden merely kept walking ahead.

" Hmm, something is wrong with Ziden." Mario pointed out.

" YEah, he seems kinda... troubled about something." Eirin noticed how distant Ziden seemed to be... both mentally and physically, he was walking further away from the group.

" Didn't that Rankyogan say something to him on the top of the ship when we first came here?" Alice asked.

" He said something about why Ziden protects the humans." Byakuren answered.

" Why would that trouble him?" Mokou asked.

" Some people need a reason to fight, it seems like something that Ziden hasn't thought of fully." Vergil said.

" Hmm, give him some time to himself. He'll find his answer hopefully." Patchouli said.

" What about the other Smashers?" Yuugi asked while cracking her neck.

" No doubt already at the mansion waiting for us no doubt." Ike answered.

" Man! How much longer do we have to walk for!?" Tenshi was already complaining from the long walk.

" I dunno, might be another 15 minutes or so?" Pit answered.

The walk continued until they hit the North Exit of the town as they saw a large mansion in the distance.

" And there is our destination! The Great Smash Manor of Smashyness!" Ziden exclaimed.

" That is so not its name! It better not be! Is it?" Remilia asked as they walked down the road.

" Nope... atleast I don't think so." Yukari said while thinking.

" Knowing Master Hand... probably not." Ziden scratched his head.

" Dammit, lets just go already." Reimu was very impatient to get to where they needed to go. They ended up entering the mansion and looking around the place.

" Hmm." Remilia and Sakuya were walking around the main foyer, checking around the place for any imperfections. The crystal styled ornaments looked nice where they were, not a speck of dust on the furniture. That Giant white hand floating to them. Portraits of past events... wait what?

" Why hello everyone! Its great that you finally made it here!" The hand, although not having a mouth, was somehow able to talk to them perfectly.

" Alright pal, cut to the chase already." Zoro rushed as Master Hand merely looked down at the pirate.

" Hmm, now now, we have to get you guys all together to save time on the explanations. For you see, I have discerned the leader of Scions of Oscura. Not only that, but it seems that the Ultima Brigade is also kicking off their plan soon." Master Hand said as Ziden snapped out of his funk.

" What? Damn! And we haven't even found their base yet either!"  
Reimu gritted her teeth.

" No need to worry, before you go to their base, good old Sora there will have to find it, while I have you girls train up for the coming battle against Org XIII and the Ultima Brigade." Master Hand explained.

" Wait, training... oh man! I'm supposed to be training with Rayleigh right now!" Luffy exclaimed.

" No worries, you strawhats shall be sent home for your training, once it is completed, I shall send you to where the Ultima Brigade is lickity split!" Master Hand even did a snap, how nice!

" So, I have to go out and explore the worlds with Donald and Goofy and find out where the Organization Homeworld is?" Sora asked.

" Correct." Master Hand said. " Even got ya a Gummi Ship for the trek. No worries, this is YOUR training."

" are you gonna be alright out there kid?" Dante asked.

" Of course I am, this isn't my first rodeo!" Sora beat his hand to his chest proudly as Nitori looks around the place.

" Stay safe out there Sora! Wouldn't want Reimu getting worried about you!" Aya teased as Sora ran off to the Gummi ship, waving everyone goodbye.

Reimu and the others turned to Master Hand. " So what kind of training are we gonna be doing?"

" Heh! The fun and arduous kind of course!" Master Hand is seen floating higher into the air as the girls flew after him.

" Hmm,we should train to." Dante added.

" You're actually gonna train? What is this world coming too?" Ziden taunted.

" Might as well." Reiji added.

" Heh, time to devise up some new wrestling moves!" Xiaomu is seen stretching her sides and cracking her back to loosen up her joints.

" Nothing beats a good training session." Ichigo added.

" Indeed, better to get stronger to fight those stronger foes." Erza is seen heading to a training room with Ichigo.

Ziden is seen looking upwards. " Where the hell are my last two powers?" Ziden wondered as Master Hand threw down two orbs. " Eh?"

" Found them in the trash roo, don't know how they got there, not even gonna question it." Master Hand said as he began to float back up to where he was.

" Ew... dammit, better wash these before I use them." Ziden said while walking to the kitchen.

Fun facts:

1. None actually come to mind right now...

Author's Notes: We're chugging to the end of the story now! Heh! Should be finished if I keep up this fine pace! Oh yeah! And another preview!

*Preview*

*Legend has it, that in the Mushroom Kingdom, lies a powerful Pirate King that was sealed away. Legend has it, that if he awakens, his wrath will drown this world into darkness. It is ssaid that someone was able to defeat him recently when he appeared but now, the seal is breaking.*



*Mario and Sonic are seen talking to Starlow. " Eh? A Pirate King? Like Cortez from Keelhaul Key?" Mario asked.*

*" Nuh uh! This guy is much much worse than Cortez! Its like really bad if he gets free!"*

*Lightning is seen striking a massive ship in the distance as laughing could be heard coming from the center of the ship as a massive viking like man was shrouded in shadow.*

*The scene changes to Fire Mario charging up a fireball in his hand with a serious expression on his face as the fire ball grew bigger and shot out, covering the screen.*

*The Other Self by Granrodeo starts to play.*

*Sonic is seen leaping into the air and turning Super, charging up energy in his hands.*

*On a rocky cliff, Shadow is seen slamming his fist into the Massive Pirate's fist, disappearing into blurs as shockwaves rang out in the air. The pirate is then seen backhanding Yoshi into the side of a mountain and smashing Luigi into the ground with a stomp.*

*Mario and Sonic are seen summoning the Chaos Emeralds and Star Spirits in order to take on said foe.*

*" Go forth Heroes of two intertwined worlds! Fight and Defeat the Shake King!"*

*Coming Soon: Super Mario Bros Z The Movie 1: Wrath of the Shake King!*

## Return to Twilight Town

" Huh, who would have ever thought that this would be the place we would go to in order to reach Organization XIII's Home World?" Alice asked as everyone shrugged. The entire group was standing before the massive Mansion of Twilight Town with Hayner and friends walking ahead of them.

" Hey guys, hurry up! We're not gonna wait on you guys!" Hayner is seen running into the mansion with Ollete and the others with Sora, Donald and Goofy not too far behind.

" Hmm, its funny, this is we started our adventure and where its gonna end. I'm gonna miss you gals." Ziden said.

" Hey now, you make it sound like you're not going to be staying with us in Gensokyo." Sanae said while tapping her jaw.

" Yeah man, you sound lie we're never gonna see these girls again, we live on the sae planet together." Dante added.

" Goddammit, can I not just say something and you people nitpick at it!?" Ziden asked, annoyed as hell.

" Oh? What do you mean by, you people Ziden?" Eirin asked while looking back at him as they entered the mansion.

" Do I even want to know how you know that reference?" Ziden asked back while looking at her with a simple gaze.

" What reference? I was merely asking what you were asking." Eirin cleared up while Yukari looked around the dusty mansion.

" This place is in some bad shape, that's for sure, but we can connect to the Organization Homeworld from here." Yukari said while nodding.

" Good, we can end this fight and I can go home and nap until something happens." Ziden said.

" When we finish this fight you mean." Ichigo added. " Never thought I would be involved in something this blood. A war among many worlds."

" Not the strangest war that have happened, or are going to happen." Ziden added.

" What does that mean?" Nitori asked.

" Oh nothing, just me babbling about stuff." Ziden waved his hand, trying to wave off the situation

" Hmm, you're hiding something aren't you?" Patchouli asked, gazing at him with her violet eyes.

" Me? Hide something? Naw, you guys are overthinking things." Ziden walked up the stairs to the library while smiling.

" He's hiding something, I just know it." Remilia noticed.

" But what could he be hiding? Another War is looming in the horizon perhaps?" Alice guessed.

" Dunno, we will know whenever it happens or he slips up and tells us." Mokou suggested.

" Hey! Hurry up!" Ziden yelled as Mario and the others ran up the stairs.

" Jeez, hold your horses dude." Dante stated while running up the stairs.

" Why would you hold a horse? That sounds weird as hell." Reimu asked.

" That's just an expression, jeez." Dante said.

Reimu and co had reached the library where the stairs led to the basement. " You know, I have no idea what to expect of their homeworld you know?" Ziden said aloud.

" None of us do, its gonna be a surprise for sure. And a brawl." Yuugi cracked her knuckles, anxious for that fight.

" The Ultima Brigade and ORganization XIII, looks like we'll take care of two problems at once." Eirin said.

" Yeah, of course all that training you guys with the Smashers ought to have helped out alot." Yukari said.

" Heh, I feel like I can take on an army at this point!" Aya said with a bright smirk.

Ziden and the others stopped in front of the computer as Mickey started to mess with the computer.

" IT seems that this computer right here allows us to enter the other Twilight Town it seems... but it seems like we need a password." Mickey scratched his brow in thought.

" Is there a password hint?" Mario asked.

Mickey furrows his brow and looks at the password hint. " Favorite Ice Cream?"

" Pfft! Easy! Its obviously Vanilla!" Ziden typed in vanilla, only for it to be the wrong password. " Blasphemy!"

" Chocolate?" Reisen typed in. Wrong again.

" Strawberry!" Remilia typed in next. Wrong yet again.

" Hmm, Rocky Road?" Luigi typed in, still wrong.

" Hmm, this could go on forever!" Sora was running his hands through his hair, clearly frustrated.

" Hmm, this is Ice Cream is pretty good!" Cirno was biting into a piece of sea salt ice cream.

" Where did you get that Ice Cream?" Patchouli asked.

" From that big box over there, its full of them." Cirno pointed to the large freezer full of them.

"... Sea Salt Ice Cream? What a weird password... and Ice Cream choice..." Tenshi added.

" There are bound to be weirder than that, no doubt about it." Ike crossed his arms while looking at a green portal forming nearby.

" Well what do you know, looks like our portal to the next place is here." Reiji looked at the portal.

" We're gonna stay here while you guys go off and do whatever it is you need to do." Hayner said with a big smile on his face as the heroes walked through the portal.

When they exited the portal, they found themselves in a familiar room, rather, Ziden and Reimu did.

" Hmm?" Ziden looked at the busted computer that Roxas busted up earlier in their journey.

" We're back here... the hell man!?" Yuugi seemed annoyed by this.

" Something is off here, it feels lie the same place... but different somehow." Sakuya pointed out.

" Lets look around for a way forward, no doubt we can make our way through this place, through that door of mystery!" Xiaomu pointed at the door.

The group made their trek into the room where Roxas fought Axel as there was a portal in the corner of the room.

" Another one ze?" Marisa walked up to it.

\

" It leads to somewhere else no doubt, but where?" Remilia wondered.

" To our destination, lets get moving." Vergil said as he leapt thropugh the portal with everyone but Yuari, Mario, Zidena nd Reimu going through it.

" Ziden, worried about what we learned?" Mario asked.

" What? The fact that Tabuu is backa nd alive? The fact that he's gonna reattempt to take over the Universe again? Nah, I'm totally fine about that." Ziden lied.

" " It doesn't really matter now does it, we'll deal with Tabuu when the time comes, for now, pust it to the bac of your mind and focus on our battles ahead." Yukari said while looking at the portal.

" Yeah, besides, even if this Tabuu freak comes back, we'll kick his ass to the curb." Reimu added while tapping her gohei on her shoulder.

" Well yeah, that is true... yeah, lets get mov-" an explosion of fire came from the portal as the group of four leapt in and saw everyone gathered around the fallen Axel.

" Llsten Sora... tell Kairi... I'm sorry." Axel asked.

" Don't be like that, you can tell her yourself." Sora said.

" Nah, I couldn't." Axel's body is seen turning into smoke and fire. " My heart just wouldn't be in it you know?" Axel is seen vanishing into a plume of fire, leaving a keychain behind.

" Axel..."

" Eh, the hell happened here?" Ziden asked.

" Bunch of nobodies were in our way and I kicked all of their asses!" Tenshi declared.

" Actually that was Axel that did that, wiped them all out with that explosion." Yuugi corrected. " She was just running around trying to catch one of those dusks."

" Man, it was annoying trying to fight all of them." Erza said, in her Heaven Wheel armor.

" But its all over now, time to see what this homeworld is like." Remilia is seen walking to the other side of the portal with her crew in tow.

" The final battle is approaching... lets go!" Ziden dashed forward with the smashers in tow.

" Time to save the Universe!" Sora yelled while running through the portal as they were now in a dark alleyway with many towering skyscrapers above them.

" Whoa, where are we now?" Mario asked while walking around.

" This must the organization homeworld." Mickey said while looking around.

" The amount of darkness I feel in this place is unholy." Ziden added.

"Doesn't matter, if anything tries to stop us, we'll kick their ass and move on ze." Marisa sai.

" Hmm, whoa, guys! Look at the moon!" Kaguya pointed up to the heart shaped moon in the sky.

" What in the world is that?" Mario asked as Link looked up at it.

A violen could be heard up ahead as Melody was seen sitting on a large platform.

" That's Kingdom Hearts, so-called heroes." Melody answered as Nitori and Erza stepped forward.

" NO doubt you are in our path to hinder us correct? Erza asked while looking at the woman.

" Of course I am, Lord Ultima wants me to make sure you die before you even reach the Castle That Never Was." Melody said while pulling out her violin and smirked.

" You guys go on ahead! I'll handle her!" Nitori walked forward with her backpack armed and ready for a fight.

" Count me in too." Erza walked up to the girl.

" Can't be in a fight without miracles on your side!" Sanae run up to Nitori and stood by her.

" Alright, just don't get killed!" Reimu yelled as the group ran by.

" Tch, doesn't matter, they won't make it to the castle." Melody looked at the ggirls as a massive shadow appeared over them.

Ziden and the others were now in front of a massive skyscraper.

" Whoa, talk about one hell of a building. Kinda reminds me of that tower we climbed up during that Crossing Worlds fiasco!" Xiaomu said.

" Meh, me and towers don't get along well." Dante added.

" Indeed, they don't." Vergil looked up, only to hear swords clanging around them.

They were all surrounded by Samurai nobodies as Sora was standing in front of a organizatin member.



" Who are you!?" Sora took a defensive stance as the man in the coat summoned a keyblade to his hand. " A keyblade!?" There was a bright flash of light and Sora found himself standing on a large decorated platform, where the man in black was waiting for him with two keyblades in his hands. " Looks like you're not much of a talker."

The man spoke no words, he only charged at Sora.

Fun Facts:

1. The Crossing Worlds Fiasco is referring to Project X Zone guys.

Author's Note: Internet shall be back soon but beforehand... there is something that I've been bottling up for a long time and I'm letting it free now.

Lunatic Overlord 9000. Never before have I met such a person that has utterly pissed me off so much. And not only that, you are the biggest hypocrite I have ever met. You claim Ziden to be a Mary Sue when your so called Semi OC is an even bigger one with so much BS asspulls that I have never seen before. He supposedly tanked a punch from Galactus, Thanos and Darkseid all at the same time and you say that Ziden is Mary Sue? Not to mention you claim that I make the Touhou girls 'weak'? Really now? I actually do my **CANON** research on these chars, even have my friends help me and they've cleared up so many things for me.

1. Flandre's powers have never been clarified, but from what we've seen, it isn't complete destruction as shown with the meteor. Also, that stuff about her being able to kill Beelzebub with her powers? Yeah no, Flandre's powers would count as Expel magic, which Beelzebub is completely immune to. And let's not forget that Beelzebub is FAR faster and stronger Flandre is and she has no form of protection against his Instakill attack, Death Flies.

2. Suika is above Planet Level **WITH HER POWERS ONLY** . And no, with the research I've done, Suika CANNOT reach the size of Wyzen.

3. Tenshi **CANNOT** seal powers. I even cross referenced several people that study and RP Tenshi. You got that stupid idea from a FAN COMIC WHICH IS NOT CANON T THE GAMES! Also, she doesn't know how to properly use the Sword of Hisei, meaning she's doesn't know how to use a person's weakness against them.

4. This pissed me off the most, you debunk every fucking thing I bring up, especially when I show proof and your story, which I will never read, will only piss me off. You claim that Mario only wins through plot armor and couldn't beat Bowser with the latter leaving traps for himself, dud... do you forget that Mario can lift and throw Bowser around like a ragdoll and that so called, having DK save Mario when he's in a bare room with nothing to help him fight Bowser? BS, Mario can and Could beat Bowser in a pure Hand-to-hand contest. I'm also maddened that you call Mario a Plot Armor heavy char when Sonic is just as bad as Mario is. And yes, Mario and Luigi is canon to the Platformer Games, Paper Mario is not, so Mario CAN fight without powerups.

5. The Chaos Emeralds... you call yourself a Sonic Fan and yet you don't even know how they work. No, there is NO! Possible way for the Youkai of your Touhouverse to be able to use Chaos Emeralds. Why? Because they have no form of Connection to the Chaos Force like Sonic and Shadow do. You cannot just make them go Super because it looks cool. Its border line stupid and goes against Sonic Canon, after all, if everyone can go Super, why didn't Eggman go Super to fight Sonic? Touhou, even with Yukari's influence,, has no possible way for the chars to be connected to the Chaos Force so they can never go Super.

6. The Kirby vs Yuuka fight, yeah, I actually asked my friends and they agreed that Kirby would and did beat Yuuka fairly, not only that, one of them, actually several of them agreed that Kirby can also beat Tenshi and Yukari. In fact, its believed that Kirby can solo the whole verse.

7. This final thing right here is the one the sealed the lock on the casket, you claimed that Sonic in your verse absorbed the power of

demons in order to beat thee SMT protags in that dark future, yeah no. After all the research I've done, Sonic even enhanced with demon powers, stands NO chance against the protags, not counting the fact that most of them have taken down MULTiversal Gods and won, I don't see how Sonic would have survived against the Demi Fiend, whom can make himself immune to Sonic's attacks, Raidou whom can slice him to pieces before he even moves or Seraph, whom is in fact, omnipotent meaning Sonic can NEVER beat him. What pisses me off most of all is that you COMPLETELY asspulled every SMT related thing in your story. Reimu surviving YWVH's yell? Utter and complete bullcrap, there is no blocking it or surviving it, it is an Almighty attack which means there is no resisting it, she is dead, end of story.

8. Utsuho and Tenshi could beat Superman... not at all dude, because in case you don't know, Red suns only weaken him, in one point, under the effects of a Red Sun, he was still able to punch a person hard enough to shatter the planet under him. And once again, Tenshi couldn't use his weakness against him so yeah.

9. Mima killing a Full powered Galactus with her Twilight Spark, this was the dumbest thing you have ever said. For one, even weakened, the Twilight Spark would not even scratch his body, the dude eats Planets and tanked attacks that wipe out entire Galaxies, there is no way in hell that Mima or any Touhou char can kill Galactus.

10. Finally, your bull crap excuses. Oh! Zun never showed a limit to their powers so I can obviously amp them up, no, just no. Its already bad enough that you think that Yuugi and Suika are on Superman's level when they are clearly not. YOu honestly believe that they can fight beings like Perfectio and Enerjax when those two can destroy Universes on a whim with the former being immune to all of their hax. Also smart guy, Enerjax is NOT an evil Spirit that Kasen can "crush" Not only is Enerjax far stronger and faster ( threw down with Super Sonic for many days without tiring), but he's a God too that can warp Kasen to the bottom of the Ocean before she could react. In short, I'm not taking anymore flak from you anymore.

Don't worry, I'm sending all of this to your inbox and I'm sorry everyone that you had to see my rage come out. Dealing with people like him, angers me severely. And I suggest, that if you enjoy my story, leave a review and favorite! It makes me happier than I do now.

# The World that Never Was

Sora stood in front of the youth, holding two keyblade he once wielded before, the Oathkeeper and the Oblivion as the cloaked boy walked around Sora, twirling the weapons and sizing up the boy.

" Who are you!?" Sora asked while summoning the Guardian Soul Keyblade to his hand.

"..." The man spun on his heel and dashed at Sora, ready for a fight.

The Other Promise ( Kingdom Hearts 2 Final Mix)

Sora is seen using Thundaga to get easy damage off on the man, only for him to dodge the attack and get close to the young keyblade wielder, performing a spin attack of grand power, blasting the boy into the wall barrier, damaging Sora.

" Crud! This guy is fast!" Sora stands on the ground and dashed to the amn with the Guardian Soul, swinging right at his chest.

But thee man was far faster in reacting to the attack, blocking the attack with Oblivion, bouncing the boy back upon impact as Sora fired a point blank Blizzaga into his face, freezing him and blasting him back some.

" Tch!" The man let out a click from his mouth and dashed at Sora, breaking the ice and dashing forward.

Sora flipped high into the air and shifted forms, entering Limit Form, losing his magic but regaining his old Limits from his youth.

" Hmm?" The man was confused on this form as Sora landed on the ground as lifted his right foot.

" Sonic Blade!" Sora dashed forward with a powerful thrust, moving too fast for the cloaked man and blaste past him as Sora comboed

him with several more thrusts, ending with a powerful thrust that sent the man flying.

The man lands on his feet and spins his blades and unleashed a spin attack with various streaks flying around the area as Sora quickly blocked with his keyblade, skidding along the floor as the man appeared in front of Sora as the duo began to clash in the air, slowly moving to each other as Sora dashed through the man, stealing the keyblades for himself as they floated around him.

Sora lurched forward with his keyblade and strikes the man with his blade, each strike the Keyblades blasting through the man and sending him flying. On Sora's final strike, the keyblade smashed through the man multiple times and sent him flying back.

" Just who are you!?" Sora asked as the man's keyblade came back to him.

The man clashed with Sora while remaining stoic. " Someone from the Dark."

Sora looked shocked while pushing the man away while shaking his head. " No way, are you Riku!?"

The man is seen thinking. " Riku? I defeated a Riku once." The man said while Sora looked angry as all hell.

" You what?!"

" Tell me... why he picked you!" The man runs forward with his keyblades dragging along the ground, causing sparks to flair up along the ground as he swings at Sora whom backstepped to avoid the strike.

Sora leapt back and blocked and dodged many of his strikes while Sora leapt up and clashed with him in midair, quickly being knocked back to the floor as the man looked at the pictures on the platform.

" Now I see..." The man landed back on the ground, going with a vicious barrage of attacks to force Sora on the defensive, smashing his keyblades into Sora's blade. Sora's knee began to give way as he stumbled to the floor. The man seeing this as a chance, smacks the keyblade away and watched as Sora tried to grab his keyblade, only for the man to stab through the guard of the keyblade as the man pointed the other keyblade at him.

Sora gritted his teeth and tried to reach out for his keyblade as it reappeared in his hand in a flash of light.

The man looked down and looked shocked. "What!?"

Sora is seen swinging diagonally on the man, hitting him across the chest while the man became completely still.

Soon he began to walk to the edge of the platform. The man falls next to Sora and his hood came off, revealing it was Roxas. Roxas looked to Sora. " You make a good other." Light is seen flashing and Sora was back with the group.

" Sora! Where the hell did you go!" Reimu asked while the group looked confused as hell.

" Huh? I was fighting an organization member... he even had a Keyblade." Sora said. " eh even said he beat Riku."

" I wouldn't believe those guys, if your friend is as strong as you say he is." Ziden said.

" Yeah, we need to get moving-" Eirin began to start shaking, heck the whole area was shaking as a massive creature was crawling down the skyscraper and roared as a massive birdlike machine was soaring through the air.

" What is that!?" Aya yelled as the bird soared right past them.

" I remember that bag of bolts from the last War!" Sonic looked at it as the landed above them as it was a large pterodactyl like creature made of steel. Odd was that its head was Skull shaped.

" That's one of the Four Metal Generals, Sky Slasher." Ziden said as the massive beast landed behind them.

" And that's Ultima Weapon behind us." Terra said.

" You guys get moving, we'll catch up." Yuugi cracked her knuckles as Sonic and Aya stayed behind. Mokou is seen joining them.

" Alright, don't any of you die... except Mokou, she can die as much as she wants!" Ziden and kaguya said in unison. " Jinx! You owe me a soda!"

" Whatever, we'll get back to you once we beat this creature and bird." Mokou took a puff on her cigarette.

Ziden and the others are seen running up to an abyss where the castle was floating. " There it is." Byakuren said as a light came from the castle and Sora summoned his keyblade. The beam of light from the keyblade shot to the castle and created the bridge.

" Whoa, and we didn't even need Sages this time!" Ziden joked while walking on the road into the castle.

They soon entered the castle as they heard clapping coming from a platform about them as Lightning Ace floated down to them. " Its been so long humans and Youkai."

*Near the top of the Castle...*

" Do you believe that we will succeed this time?" Ultima asked.

" We will my child, we will recreate this universe into one of Pure Light and where evil no longer exists." Omega is seen standing next to her while smiling, his bright white suit shining as below them was a massive cherry blossom tree...



Author's Note: Finally got this short chapter out.

## The Start of the End

" Well well, so the little heroes finally make it to this world it seems." Lightning ace said while looking at the group before him, his lightning cackling around him.

" Everyone, go on ahead, he shall be dealt with by me." Eirin is seen stepping forward with her boy out as Vergil appeared next to her.

" I shall fight with you for this fight, get going." Vergil looked at Lightning Ace as everyone ran up the pathway.

" Don't you guys die on us!" Mario yelled while entering an elevator that took them up to a higher floor, leading them to a rising walkway to a higher floor as they spot the moogles.

Yuyuko is seen looking up into the air as cherry blossoms are seen raining down, littering the path before them. " Its here..."

" How? Didn't Shu destroy that tree back in Gensokyo?" Ziden said while looking upwards while they

" YEAh but its back somehow, what a problem." Yukari said with a sigh, the heart shaped moon looming overhead.

" lot of battles are happening in this place, guess its our turn to get our hands dirty." Dante said while walking through the door.

" Heh, time to wrap up loose ends and finish the final battle ze!" Marisa is seen lying forward and running into the place, the area above them had Ansem and Kairi fighting off Heartless.

" What in the world is going on up there?" Reimu asked while a barrage of red bullets are seen racing down to the Platform.

" Well well well, if it ain't the little Heroes from Fairytale land. Finally made it to our castle it seems." Xigbar is seen tapping the gun on his

shoulder while looking down to the group. His gaze turned to Sora as he had his Guardian soul Keyblade out. "It's funny, you aren't half the fighter those three were!"

"Huh?" Sora looked confused on that statement as Reisen stepped forward.

"You guys get going! I'll handle him!" Reisen said as the others are seen running forward with no regard as Reisen looked up at the sniper.

"So the little bunny wants to play huh? This is a nice session for hunting rabbits you know." Xigbar is seen grinning wildly with his amber eye was locked onto her while Reisen formed a gun with her hand.

"I'm not the one that's gonna get hunted today." Reisen declared.

Meanwhile, after a reunion between Sora, Riku and Kairi.

"Jeez, you look just like that Ansem guy, it's scary." Reimu said while Byakuren was looking up at the man.

"That's the price I paid for using darkness, I dunno if I will ever return to my normal form again." Riku said while walking forward.

They were now in a room with a lot of Tombstones all over the place, each of them with portals to the Organization members and the Ultima brigade. Ziden is seen going to the one with the Omega symbol and vanishing.

Remilia and Flandre are seen going for the scythe. Yuugi and Byakuren go for the axe sword. Patchouli is seen entering the portal with a book, Cirno goes for the shield while Tenshi and Okuu go for the knives. Sakuya entered the portal with a card. Ike, Reimu, Marisa, Mario and Yukari head into the portal with a skull. Kaguya, Sora, Donald and Goofy entered the one with a claymore.

Meiling is seen walking into the portal with a katana and staring down Scarlet. Yuyuko, Youmu and Dante are seen entering a portal and looking up at the Saigyō Ayakashi with Phantom sitting upon a throne before it. Ichigo and Erza are seen standing guard outside as many Zealots are seen climbing up into the room.

Ziden looked at Omega as they were in a pure white room. "Welcome... to the Origin Chamber. Original one."

Reimu and the others are seen staring down Ultima. "Welcome to my graveyard kids." The others are seen coming into the portal with their weapons drawn, Pit ready for a fight, Kirby ready to throwdown with everyone. Luigi was cowering of course.

*These battles are now going underway, will the heroes win their fights? Or will they fall to darkness?*

*Author's note; sorry for this being so late, Death in the family really killed my drive for this and i could barely finish this chap but it shall be longer in the next chapter, I promise.*

## End of a Symphony

Remilia and Flandre are seen staring at Marluxia while he was standing on a platform below them, without his scythe this time.

"It's about time we found you, time for me to show you why you don't mess with the Scarlet Devil!" Remilia is seen letting her wings hit full mass.

"Then come then, show me what a vampire can do." Marluxia is seen moving his hand in the air, a cherry blossom is seen floating into his hand as it formed his trademark scythe, the Graceful Dahlia.

Meiling is seen taking a battle stance while looking down at Scarlet, noting how similar they looked.

"Hello there Gatekeeper." Scarlet is seen unsheathing her blade, the Crimson item shining in the moonlight as they were in a bamboo thicket.

"I remember how you almost killed my friends at Hollow Bastion, I may not be as strong as the others... but I will overcome all odds and defeat you!" Meiling proudly declared.

Yuyuko, Youmu and Dante are seen looking at Phantom as the massive treant was looking down at them.

"I have recovered from my injuries and now I will destroy you three now." The tree is seen speaking as Dante is seen stepping forward.

"You girls handle Phantom, this tree is mine." Dante declared.

"You sure you can take it Dante?" Yuyuko asked.

"Yeah, I won't go down as easily than I did the first time we fought. I'm not gonna pull my punches this time." Dante said while drawing Rebellion.

Yuugi and Byakuren are seen staring down the man with the axe sword named Lexaeus. " So this is our opponent?" Yuugi asked while looking at the man.

"..." Lexaeus is seen just staring at them while not saying anything.

" He is not much of a talker is he?"Byakuren said while remaining on guard

Sakuya is seen looking at Luxord while he was shuffling his cards. " So you too can mess with the flow of time it seems?" Sakuya asked while spinning a knife in her fingers.

" Indeed I can, although that just means this will be a battle of not force but time. Let us see whose hand will yield the bigger reward." Luxord said as two massive clocks appeared in the sky, one silver and the other was pure white with the Organization symbol.

Sora and the others are seen looking at Saix as he was looking upon the moon. " Roxas? Why have you come here? Why do you fight against your former comrades." Saix asked.

a

" Eh? Why do you people keep calling me Roxas?" Sora asked while summoning the Decisive Pumpkin to his hand.

" So you truly don't know. It matters not, Kingdom Hearts is nearly complete now and you will not stop it." Saix is seen drawing his claymore.

Patchouli is seen looking at her opponent reading through his book. " So i get a mage for an opponent, this should be entertaining." Zexion is seen closing his book.

" Indeed it should be." Patchouli is seen channeling up magic.

Cirno is seen standing atop the gates of the mansion outside Twilight town. " Yeah you with the face! Listen up and listen good! I am Cirno,

the strongest fairy in Gensokyo here to put you down and be the hero of this tale!"

Vexen was just blankly staring at her. " Why did I have to get the idiot?"

Larxene is seen smirking while playing with her knives. " So I get the dumb broads to play with eh? Oh this is a fun day."

" HEy! Who the hell are you calling a dumb broad!?" Tenshi asked while her sword was flaring.

" Uhm... what's a dumb broad?" Utsuho asked while blinking.

" Its an insult, she basically called us dumb bitches." Tenshi bluntly said.

" She called us female dogs?"

" Ugh, just... never mind." Tenshi said while sighing.

A bunch of Undead is seen taking on the group while Ike and the smashers were ready to fight against the zombie horde while Yukari and Reimu were ready to fight Ultima.

" It is a shame that my partners all hopped ship to go back to their devices but atleast Wily and the others are helping in attacking the Earth while you heroes are here." Ultima said while smiling.

" So you have your lackeys fighting the Earth while we are here it seems, you never change." Yukari said while closing her fan.

" If we beat you, this war will be over and I can finally go back to my shrine!" Reimu said while gripping her Gohei.

" Then come and face me, i will make your deaths painless." Ultima said while holding a pitch black spear in her hands.

Reisen is seen leaping back to avoid several sniper shots while firing at her opponent from his vantage point. " Heh, looks like my opponent has some fight in her it seems."

Sanae and Nitori were looking at their opponent. " Come, let me play the song of your end!" Melody said while she played her violin, the battles going underway.

The 13th reflection ( Kingdom Hearts 2 Final Mix)

Sanae and Nitori watched as she started to play a Fire Based tune. " Bolero of Raging Inferno!" Melody is seen creating raging pillars of fire that danced towards the duo.

Nitori leaps back and pulled out a powerful water hose, slicing through the earth beneath them while they destroyed the fire as Sanae created a rainstorm to help out as Melody is seen sending wind bullets out at them.

" Get down!" Sanae is seen hitting the deck as the wind bullets smashed into the buildings behind them and devastating it.

" How are you enjoying my symphony children?" Melody asked while playing more notes and blasting a barrage of fire at them while they took flight as Nitori opened her backpack and opened fire on her with the Cucumber Barrage.

Melody created a shield of wind to block each of the explosions while they blasted her back from the Splash Damage as she created shadowy hands to blast her opponents away while Sanae is seen creating snakes to rain down as they tried to chomp down on Melody.

the hands however objected to that idea and started to rain down onto the snakes and punched them away as a bottle appeared before Melody's face as it was glowing and violently exploded and blasted her back as she played a water based song.



" Tch,cheeky gi-" Melody was shocked by the bullet of water whizzing through her arm.

" heh! I got the power of the Rifle downpact! Time to blast you to water particles!" Nitori declared while firing more rounds at her while she was dancing around the shots.

" Time for you to witness my true power! Symphony of Harmonious Destruction!" MELODY is seen creating and filling the sky with millions of notes as they began to rain down soundwaves to wipe out the duo as they hit the ground in seconds, crying out in pain.

The very earth began to rise and shatter from the impacts as the duo was being smashed into the ground. " Ddammit! Nitori! What do we do!?" Sanae yelled while she was being torn apart by the explosive sound waves.

" H-hang on! I got a real crazy idea!" Nitori is seen touching the exsphere on her leg while an explosion of golden rings sprayed from her body as Sanae looked at hers.

" Ah! Overlimit! We'll blast her away with Mystic Arts!" Sanae said while getting up slowly, only to get smacked back down by the intense levels of sound blasting her back.

Nitori is seen inhaling deep while focusing up mana while looking to her with glowing eyes as Sanae activated her Overlimit and stood up, still taking damage but no longer flinching from the impacts.

Sanae is seen floating upwards into the air while a golden light rained down around them. " Tate the powers of the Moriya Shrine Maiden! Heavenly Miracles!" The golden light is seen raining down on the girls while Nitori felt great power flowing through.

" I will not allow you girls to overcome my power!" She is seen creating a massive a massive giant of Notes as it roared angrily, its massive fists going to Nitori.

" ITs over Melody! Kappa's Maelstrom!" Nitori is seen slamming her foot on the ground as an explosion of water rose up high into the air, making a massive Tsunami as it raced towards the giant.

" N-no! Dammit!" Melody is seen rodering the giant punched the massive wave as it smashed over him and washed it and melody into a massive whirlwind of wind and water while the water was smashing and blasting them with Critcal hits.

" Bye bye!" Nitori slammed her foot again as the water blasted her into the air as melody and her giant was sent soaring towards the castle and violently smashed against the wall, causing the wall to collapse as Melody's unconscious form landed on the platform behind Reisen.

" Dear lord... we won... that was way too easy though." Sanae said while her clothes were torn in places.

" Lets get to the castle if w-" Nitori was cut off when Neoshadows appeared around them. " never mind, lets go Sanae!"

Author's Notes; Gonna finish this up fast!

# The Sky Slasher and Black Leg

Pre-Notes: Kinda Noticed how Yuugi is back fighting Ultima Weapon but came back to fight against Lexeaus... kinda overlooked that to be honest but hey, she will fight Ultima and I will edit that scene when I get back to it.

Sonic and Aya are seen upon the rooftops, looking up at the massive Sky Slasher flying around above them while they observed the creature with their steel gaze. The massive Sky SSlasher was a giant silver bird made of Titanium, its massive wings, looking like they can slice through buildings. And its head was the classic Wily Skull while it roared.

" Heh! Lets show this guy what speed really is!" Sonic said while smiling, tapping his foot on the groundd.

" Nobody can match my speed in the air! Lets break that thing!" Aya takes flight as the massive machine is seen roaring over the area.

The Encounter ( Kingdom Hearts 2)

Sky Slasher is seen flying upwards as the wind around it began to spin faster and faster around it as Aya released a burst of wind at the barrier, only to watch the blast come to them. Aya is seen flying right into the air to dodge the attack. " What!?"

" Aya! We gotta be careful! He can turn our attacks against us! Get up close and physical with this guy!" Sonic yelled out as the massive bird is seen soaring downwards as a cone of air formed around it, showing it was going down for a swooping attack.

Aya is seen forced to create a wall of wind to try and counter the attack as the winds stopped the creature for only a moment, watching it tear through and to crash into the tengu, ripping the air from her body and send her flying through a building nearby.

Sonic sees his ally being launched like that as he runs along the side of a building, leaving dust trails from his speed and leaping from it to land multiple kickss onto the body as sonic was dashing around. " Come on! This can't be all you can do!"

The Sky Slasher is seen flapping its wings hard as razor winds are seen flowing from the creature. Aya is seen coming from the building and sees Sonicc being pushed back by the winds as she could feel the sharpness of the blades.

" Oh god, Sonic! Get outta there!" Aya is seen going to fly up to him as the machine's maw opened up.

" Die hedgehog! Divine Windstorm!" Sky Slasher is seen flapping its wings, creating two tornados that end up smashing into Sonic and utterly ddestroying the nearby building as Sonic was seen coughing up fluids from the destructive force as Aya appeared behind the bird ad smashed her shoulder into the machine as it roared.

" So this thing can talk!?" Aya said while the machine crashed into the ground where Mokou and Yuugi were fighting off Ultima Weapon.

" That is a shocker to me too!" Sonic is seen landing on the ground while panting, his body damaged from the attack. " Reminds me of an attack that Sanae girl told me about from her manga or something."

" An attack? Never mind, its Sanae so it has to be overly complicated." Aya simply said while she took flight into the air. she is seen pulling her arm back to wind it up. She swins her arm forward as a massive blade of wind shot forward, smashing into the wind barrier as the machine let out a loud groan.

" Lets go! Sonic Wind!" Sonic began to spin around the man, gaining speed as the bright blue winds are seen slamming into it, pushing it hard into the ground as Aya ran up the building while the debrs was falling down to her.

" I will defeat you beings for my Lord!" The Sky Slasher is seen glowing bright red as a red crystal is seen on its chest.

" Eh?" Sonic is seen running along side Aya as the machine released a powerful burst of light from its body as an ominous feeling poured out from the machine.

" This doesn't bode well for us." Aya is seen snapping a picture before seeing the Machine vanish into thin air.

" Die!" The machine had appeared behind them as it flapped its steel talons, firing a barrage of blue razor winds, smashing into the building and blasting the duo down as they rolled out of the way of the rocks as they were badly injured from the attack.

" What the hell happened to that thing?" Sonic asked while getting to his feet. Sonic staggered a bit as his green eyes looked up at the red machine, red lights are seen flowing into the machine.

" Who knows, but its gonna get scrapped right now!" Aya is seen flying at blinding speed to the machine, only for the machine to vanish in thin air and use its massive talons and smash Aya into the ground, creating a massive fissure from the impact as she coughed up blood.

" Dammit... what now?" Sonic asked as he heard two sets of footsteps running to them as one of them headed for their direction.

" Hands off the girl you bucket of bolts!" A man is seen leaping up and kicking the machine in its blind spot, bashing the machine away from Aya as he landed down, the blonde hair showing who he was.

" Hey, its Sanji!" Sonic is seen happy to see his comrade from before as he staggered over to the chef while panting and drinking a potion.

" No time for talk, lets break this thing and get moving." Sanji said while inhaling from his cig.

Author's notes: Short one again, so sorry guys but I waanna finish this up fast! So I will speed it up!

## Ultima Weapon

Sonic, Aya and Sanji are seen looking up into the sky, watching the massive bird machine fly around them, eying them for combat while it was screeching loudly.

" Tch, loud ole poultry isn't he?" Sanji asked while lighting up a cigarette, inhaling deep of its smoke before taking a puff of it.

" Just be careful Sanji, this guy can make shields of wind around him to block projectiles!" Aya warned while Sanji stepped forward.

" Then lets kick its ass then." Sanji said while stepping on a cigarette.

Struggle Away The Fight For my Friends ( Kingdom Hearts 358/2 Days)

Aya is seen taking flight after healing herself up, flapping her wings to gain extreme altitude above the mecha bird. swinging her fan to create a massive whirlwind to push the creature into the wall with an insane amount of force, causing the building behind it to be destroyed on impact as Sanji and Sonic used the debris to rise up higher into the air.

" You look like you got stronger Sanji, how long have you been training?" Sonic asked.

" About two years to be exact, and I'm ready to end this war among worlds. Heard that the Marineford Island was attacked by those Zealots." Sanji said while kicking a massive rock at the bird, watching the rock smash across the wind barrier.

" Marineford huh? Sounds bad." Sonic said while rolling up into the ball and smashing into the bird and smashing him into with a powerful enough force to smash the bird into the ground.

" YEAh, the place got rebuilt and then just completely attacked by those freaks in robes." Sanji said while his leap onto the side of the building and began to run down it, gaining speed as he was ready to unleash a strong kick he had.

" Concasse!" Sanji begins to spin high into the air while gaining momentum, his foot smashing into the back of the massive bird, causing massive cracks to form from the impact as Aya held up a Spell card, ready to finish this battle.

" Lets end this now! Dominion Dash!" Aya activates the spell card as she smashed into the massive beast at Faster than light speeds, almost completely destroying the ground they were fighting on as the bird roared in pure rage.

" HOW COULD I BE BEATEN BACK BY BEINGS OF FLESH LIKE THIS!?" The Sky Slasher lets out a loud roar before exploding into nothingness.

" Wowza Sanji! You sure got powerful over those two years!" Sonic said while landing on the ground as sanji took another puff on his cigarette while walking forward.

" Come on! Lets get to the castle and help the others!" Aya said while a swarm of Heartless appeared around them.

" Looks like we have some rowdy guests that need a good home cooked meal." Sanji said while letting out a puff of smoke while they charged at the heartless.

Meanwhile...

Yuugi and Mokou are seen sliding backwards from the powerful assault of Ultima Weapon as it is seen punching the Earth to send earth flying to the duo, only for Zoro to slice them apart. " What kind of Freaky monster is this thing?" Zoro asked while Ultima weapon roared.



"My name is Ultima... I am power both ancient and unrivaled... I do not bleed, for I am but strength given form... Feeble creatures GO!" Ultima is seen smashing its fist into the ground to create a massive shockwave that raced to them.

### **Fierce Battle ( Final Fantasy 6)**

Zoro and the others are seen leaping into the air to dodge the attack as the Fast Weapon dashed to them and throws a massive punch at Yuugi which she countered with her own powerful fist, ringing out an explosion of force that knocked her back into a building, from their clothing, it was obvious before Zoro showing up.

" this thing is a whole new level of monster." Mokou said while popping her shoulder back in place and walking next to Zoro.

" Yeah, this thing has been shrugging off our attacks for a good while now." Yuugi stated while leaping down, cracking her arms.

" Then lets see him take us now!" Zoro puts on his famous bandana and pulled out his three swords and leapt into the fray with the beast.

" Watch out! It has powerful magicks!" Mokou warned as Ultima Weapon opened its massive maw and a large fireball at them. The Fira spell created a large tornado of fire which Zoro ended up dodging to avoid.

" Great, more magic stuff. This across the world fiasco is a big ass pain!" Zoro is seen getting into position. " Oni Giri!" Zoro dashed right past Ultima Weapon, slicing its body all over but true to the creature's words, no blood came out, only green energy.

" Bio!" Ultima weapon fired a green ball at Zoro as Mokou intercepted, remembering what that spell did as she started to cough up blood.

" Poison Spell... don't get hit by that." Mokou said while punching the earth, creating massive pillars of flame to blast the creature

backwards, causing him to stumble as Yuugi followed up with a powerful haymaker, knocking it backwards.

Zoro is seen dashing forward and delivered a powerful slash to his chest, the wind streak from the impact as he fell backwards. "Man this thing has some tough skin!" Zoro leapt onto a wall and leaps from it, raining down stab attacks which Ultima was blocking.

Ultima balled up two of his fists and smashed them into Zoro's chest, sending him smashing through a building as it crumbled down around him, the sounds of steel slicing through stone was loud as a large chunk of building went flying to Ultima.

The Weapon is seen heavily punching through the building as Zoro was hidden amongst the debris, holding his pure white katana in his hand and sliced past Ultima, hitting him hard and skidding across the ground.

"Foolish beings, time to taste true terror!" Ultima is seen casting Protect, Shell and Haste upon himself as massive rocks of fire are seen raining down from the heavens, bombing the entire battlefield and destroying most of the buildings around the place.

*Meanwhile...*

Most of the other heroes had beaten their opponents and they had joined the battle against Ultima's Zombies, Eirin was out cold on the floor while Lightning Ace was looking at Phantom. "The tides have shifted in their favor, Spector, let us leave this world and plan for future events." Lightning Ace said as Phantom nodded.

"The Demon hunter beat back the Saigyou into Hiding and that odd straw hatted pirate is racing up to help out his friends." Phantom said.

"Let him, his world shall soon fall to darkness." Lightning Ace stated while he felt Eirin grab his jacket. "Hmm?"

" I... won't... let you leave this... place." Eirin struggled to pull herself up, only for Lightning Ace's boot to smash right into her face.

" Let me leave? I am so sorry teacher... but you lost that option with your horrible attempt to hold me off. This will not be the last time you see me." Lightning Ace said as bright flash of light shined down and blasted the area apart as Eirin was thrown into the battlefield where Ultima Weapon was.

*Elsewhere...*

Ziden and Omega are seen bleeding heavily from the battle as their wounds were healing. " So this is the Original one's power? I am quite impressed." Omega said as the pure white chamber with the odd silver glyphs were charging up in the back. " Soon my plans will begin again, the Omega Glyphs are ready to destroy this universe again and recreate it."

" Sorry pal but that ain't happening on my watch." Ziden is seen going to charge at Omega as he sees a fist slamming into Omega's face, smashing him into ground.

" So you're the bastard trying to destroy all the worlds!" Luffy, now after two years of training, has appeared to help out Ziden in his battle, unfortunately the impact ended up destroying the floor and revealing that they were above the battleground where Ultima was.

" Wow, And Luffy out of Nowhere. What's next?" Ziden asked as he felt a hand on his head.

" What about a Wild Goku?" Goku asked while taking a battle stance as Luffy and Ziden smirked.

" You will all die here." Omega declared while dusting off his suit, still bright white without a single drop of blood or cuts on it.

*Back to the Main Fight...*

Zoro is seen firing a massive spiral of wind blades at Ultima's chest, blasting it with an unholy amount of force to blast it through several walls before it started to climb the sides of the building as Mokou was seen giving Eirin potions.

"you alright doc?" MOKou asked while the explosions of Flares blasting away at Yuugi and Zoro.

"I'll be fine now. BUT we should focus on taking care of that thing." Eirin said while getting up to her feet while groaning.

The Massive Beast could be seen charging up with another spell as the wind began to spiral in the air above them as Zoro is seen taking a stance, ready to counter the attack that was coming.

"Tornado!" The massive gust of rain was coming down towards Zoro while he sneered and began to spin.

"Tatsumaki!" Zoro spun with his blades at rapid speeds, creating razor winds that shot up into the heavens, clashing with the forming tornado, releasing large bolts of lightning from the powerful clash as Yuugi ran forward and slammed her fist right into the ribcage, shattering it with the powerful strike as Ultima staggered to the right and fell over.

Zoro ends up halting his attacks and started to dash towards the massive weapon as it is seen about to fire a strong flare into his face. "One Sword Style: Lion's Death Song!" Zoro used his Iai style to dash right past Ultima, leaving a massive slash over its body, letting out massive roars of pain as Ultima ended up falling down on its side, the crash causing a massive shockwave that blasted debris away.

"I... am Ultima... there are other Weapons like me that will come for you humans... and you shall be wiped out for this." Ultima Weapon's last words rang out in the area as he began to fade away violently as Zoro sheathed his blades.

" Other Weapons like him? Sounds like more fights are coming for us in the future." Yuugi said while looking up to the moon, seeing that it had a massive hole in it, taking away 15% of its full power.

" We should get going to help Sora and the others, time is no longer on our side." Eirin said while attempting to fly to the top.

" Hey! Not all of us can fly you know!" Zoro yelled out as Mokou grabbed him by the back of his clothing and started to fly. " HEy! Watch it!" Zoro was flailing his arms and legs when he was being carried.

Reimu and Mario were staring down ultima as she was summoning dead foes from the ground, Zombie Zealots, Behemoths and a few tonberries. " I see that you two have chosen to fight me by yourselves it seems. soon I shall add your souls to my hordes." Ultima said while darkness poured form her body and into the soil below.

*Author's Notes: So Sorry about this guys but it has to be said now. The Xemnas Fights? Will not be shown during this since the fights will be focused on defeating Ultima and Omega in order to save the universe and yes, this story will be finished before the end of this month. Hopefully, thanks for all the love and support through this story, I love you all.*

## **Stop the Universe from Ending!**

Ziden, Goku and Luffy were seen staring at Omega as he was floating high into the sky. " Alright you two, be on your guard, this guy has some serious fire power under his belt." Ziden warned.

" So these are my opponents, A God, a Superhuman and a Pirate? How utterly sad. I was hoping for a challenge." Omega said with a simple tone as Goku, Luffy and Ziden all look to each other.

" EH!? You're a god Ziden!?" Luffy asked.

" What!? No! I am not... but then that means... Wait Goku you're a god?" Ziden asked while Goku nodded.

" Apparently after fighting Beerus, Yeah." Goku said while crouching down into a battle stance.

### **A Fight to the Death (Kingdom Hearts 2)**

Omega is seen disappearing into thin air and appearing on one of the many horizontal pillars in the room and raising his hands into the air.

" Watch out, he focuses on Energy and Plasma based attacks." Ziden warned while dashing up the side of one of the pillars to get on even ground with Omega as Luffy threw his arm up there and stretched his arm up there to be behind him.

" Humph, a Pincer Attack? Is that some way of intimidating me?" Omega asked while his hand was gathering a bunch of bright energy to his hand.

' Oh yeah? Well take this! Gum Gum Pistol!" Luffy threw his arm forward as it stretched towards Omega, faster than the last time Ziden saw this attack in action as it shattered against Omega's face, causing a loud cracking noise as the clone was sent flying through

several pillars, sending out rock and debris from the impact as Ziden gathered flames to his hand as Goku landed next to him.

" Blast his ass now!" Ziden yelled out while he threw a barrage of fireballs at the pillar, bombarding it with unholy amounts of fire and Ki blasts from Goku as Luffy stood behind them.

A bright white glow began to come from the pillar as a bright explosive force of energy burst free from the rubble as Ziden and Goku felt powerful fists slamming into his body. omega pulled his fists away as the two were sent airborne.

Luffy appeared right behind Omega and swings his leg right at Omega's neck, smashing into it and sending him tumbling to the ground with the force from rubbery kick. Omega lands on his feet while cracking his neck as he sees Luffy with his arm pulled back and coated black. " gum gum Bullet!" Luffy yanked his fist forward and watched it slam into the barrier of Omega, the clash loud and complete with sparks while omega barely budged.

" Is this all you have Pirate? Or can i just end you now?" Omega asked as lightning began to gather to his hand, now glowing green as Luffy didn't bother to move. " Very Well, Plasma Storm!" Omega fired the massive cone of green lightning as Luffy felt his body burned and blasted back from the intense impact, the very ground beneath them shattering as earth began to rain down onto the graveyard under them.

Reimu and Mario looked up to see Luffy Crashing through the ground and slamming down onto a tombstone, shattering it under his body. " What? How did that lightning hurt me?" Luffy asked while looking at the smoke coming from his body.

" Those guys were fighting above us this whole time? The more you know." Reimu said while tapping her gohei on her shoulder, looking up at the hole.

Omega was seen looking down at the massive destruction he caused as many screens appeared in the sky of the Creation Room. " Saiyin God, pirate, Ziden. I will allow your worlds to watch me destroy your entire beings on this day." Marineford appeared on the screen, as well as Roshi's island where Goku's friends were fighting off Zealots and Heartless. Ziden's world was also shown as New York were fighting off the Heartless, the Avengers Leading the charge as Tony Stark looked up to see Ziden.

" Great, what mess did that punk get this planet in now?" Tony asked himself before firing a repulsar blast into the Chest of a Large Body Heartless.

Akainu and Kizaru were looking up at the screen to see Ziden fighting off against Omega. " I won't allow you to destroy these worlds Omega! All of these people deserve to live out their lives to the fullest, grow old and have a family! I won't sit by and let you destroy that! On my name as a Hero of Legend! I will protect these worlds from your reality!" Ziden drew his blade the crimson Edge.

" A hero huh? Never thought I would hear a criminal spout off nonsense like that." Akainu said while smacking a Zealot away.

" Oh man, looks like we have to put our hopes on that boy. And Dragon's Son... and that weird Karate Man." Kizaru said.

" Humph, seems so. He'd better win." Akainu said while Luffy is seen getting up and spotting the very man that Killed his brother, about to yell at him before remembering Omega is the main threat here.

Ziden's blade was clashing with omega's plasma formed one, the lightning hitting the floor as Goku appeared behind Omega and throws a powerful kick at his neck, catching the Clone off guard and sending him flying. " Ziden! Follow up!" oku yelled as Ziden disappeared in a blur and slammed his foot into the face of Omega, an X-Ray shot of his foot smashing into his skull and shattering it with ample force as Omega stumbled back from the impact as Ziden coats his arm in Armament Haki and smashes it into his solar plexus,



smashing the ribcage apart as the clone was sent flying into one of the pure white pillars, causing it to shatter upon impact.

" That was a powerful impact, I think i heard a few bones break." Goku said while landing next to Ziden, cracking his knuckles.

" They did, made sure to hit hard enough so they do break." Ziden was grinning before he sees a barrage of Green energy balls flying to him. " Oh crap."

Right before the impact, Ziden heard the sound of steam being released from somewhere as he heard loud fwips coming from the area behind him.

" Gum Gum Jet Gatling!" Luffy was throwing a rapid fire barrage of punches so fast, even Ziden and Goku couldn't follow them, hitting the center of each of the energy balls and forcing each one to explode as Omega walked through the ruins of the pillar while his arm was coated in Plasma energy.

" Hmm, so the pirate actually survived the plasma hitting him dead on? What a troublesome pirate." Omega said while he raised his hand, only to see a mass of blonde hair and a powerhouse of a fist smashing him face first into the ground, the trio of men blinking as they see Yuugi dusting herself off as Zoro and Mokou were not too far behind her.

" What? Didn't expect me to miss the big battle right kid?" Yuugi asked while Mokou and Zoro looked down to see their allies being swarmed by the undead horde.

" Hey, I'm going down there, been a while since I last cut up some zombies." Zoro said while sliding on his headband.

" Fine by me, atleast down there I can watch Kaguya being creamed." Mokou said while leaping down into the hole with Zoro.

Yuugi instinctively leaps back from the sudden surge of green lightning came from the sky as Yuugi took her place between Goku and Ziden. " Nope, kinda figured you'd come to join the big fight, alongside that Witch on the broom."

Yuugi looked up to see Marisa weaving through all the lightning, grazing each one and gaining a minor power boost as she began to rain down stars onto the Man as the music began to change to something more high paced as a loud explosion came from above.

Ziden is seen looking up above as a transformation in Omega was happening, his body began to increase in size heavily. His body began to severely bulk up, his muscles tearing through his shirt, pure white as snow and covered in veins as his blood pumped through them, his fists increased in size as well but his nails turned into claws, black as the ethereal darkness surrounding the castle. His face also began to change from the human like face into a more demonic one, including fangs that had plasma flowing through them, his pants, somehow, remained whole, guess he skipped leg day since his legs were not as big as his arms were.

" Come Humans! Youkai! God! I will crush you all!"

" What about a lunarian?" Ziden turned back to see Yorihome's hilt smashing into his nose.

" Dammit my nose!" Ziden holds his bleeding nose as Luffy looked confused.

' That was for peeping on me and my sister when we were in the hot springs." Yorihome said while holding her katana as Omega towered over them at 50ft tall.

" Now then, Round 2 shall begin as the Universe meets its end by the very force that Created it!"

" The Force that created it?" Goku asked as Luffy raised a brow as well.

" The Big Bang, so that's what he's using this time huh?" Ziden asked while cracking his neck

Down below...

The Illusionary Heroes were being forced back by the sheer amount of Zombies that Ultima was summoning.

" Come on... these guys won't stop coming." Suika said while mashing one away with her chains.

" We can seriously use some back up here right now!" Luigi yelled while the zombies were swarming on him rapidly hitting them with their undead hands.

" Then I guess you guys will be glad to see us then!" A proud voice spoke before a myriad of portals are seen opening and a bunch of fighters are seen coming from the portal, these were the Smashers, sans Doctor Mario whom was severely injured. Captain Falcon stepped forth while looking to the heroes.

" Hell yeah! Looks like we got the back up we needed!" Dante yelled out while smirking, only for something to come crashing up from the ground and climbing through the hole, it was the Saigyō ayakashi coated in darkness as it towered over Ziden and friends.

" Oh man, why can't my jobs be easy?" Ziden asked as the battles were getting ready to get crazy!

*Author's Notes: Story is wrapping up soon!*

## **The Universe Saved! A hero's Sacrifice!**

"Where's your sister Yorihome?" Ziden asked while looking back to her as Omega was monologuing to the heroes.

"She is busy helping the others fight off those zombies. Seems to be having an Easier now that we brought those smashers with us." Yorihome said.

"Smashers? You went to each of their worlds, convinced them to come with you, without being like, racist to them?" Ziden asked while raising an eyebrow.

"Humph, I am willing to overlook an inferior species during a time of Universal Crisis." Yorihome said while unsheathing her blade.

"Inferior, yet you're the descendant of Earth Humans." Ziden said while cracking his neck.

"We evolved into the better species Ziden. Or are you still sore of your defeat at my hands 2 year ago?" Yorihome asked as Ziden clicked his teeth.

"You only won by a fluke, our next fight will be vastly different." Ziden said as he sees Luffy and Goku staring at them.

"Man those two are fighting alot, they must be married or something." Goku said as he cracked his neck.

"I guess, or they might just be hungry!" Luffy stated as Green lightning began to rain down as the area around them changed to a rocky wasteland, filled with massive rocks, similar to where Goku fought Vegeta.

"Hmm? Did he warp reality? Or is the effect of the room?" Yorihome asked as Yuugi cracked her neck.

" Who cares, we just beat his ass before that explosion thing happens and we deal with Xeemnas, simple enough." Yuugi said while she was anxious for the fight.

" All of you beings are gathered here... and even the God of Destruction decided to stop by for a visit." Omega said as he looked up to see a humanoid purple cat with a blue skinned man watching things below.

" My my, so this was that massive build up of energy i felt, it very much interrupted my nap and I don't exactly like that." Beerus is seen floating down to the ground next to Goku as Ziden raised his brow. Beerus looked over to Ziden. " Hmm. You're a strong one aren't you? Aren't you thee one that convinced God to fuse all these realities together?"

" Uh yeah, with help of everyone during the Crossing Worlds Incident." Ziden said.

" Interesting, well because of you, I am no longer the strongest being in this Universe but now is not the time for punishing you, show me and my friend Whis how you heroes fight." Beerus said while floating back up.

" Wait, Punishment?" Ziden said before leaping back from a plasma shot from one of Omega's fingers.

" Time for talk is over, death awaits all those here." Omega was gathering energy into his hands while Ziden and Yorihome charged forward with luffy, Goku and Yuugi getting ready for round two.

Unforgettable (Kingdom Hearts Birth By Sleep)

Ziden could be seen leaping up into the air and spinning hard, gathering up energy into his leg as he lashed it at Omega whom used his massive forearms to block the impact as Yorihome dashed behind Omega and sliced across his back, the lightning comingg out

from the wound as it tried to hit her all over, only for her to bend and turn her body to avoid the shocks.

Yorihime flips backwards and slides along the ground while looking up at the clouds above her, channelling green lightning in it. " Tch, nothing I can't handle." yorihime said as the ground began to rumble as a large fist slammed into her midsection, taking the air out of her lungs as she was sent soaring into the clouds as she was trapped into a Lightning barrier, damaging her with Plasma.

Ziden is seen dashing along the tops of the mountains as he sees Omega leaping up from the ground with his fist pulled back as Ziden channeled Haki to his right arm. " Die Icrim!" Ziden watched the massive 50 Foot tall clone throwing his 3 foot long fist, watching the wind shifting around his fist like a barrier as Ziden threw his fist at the massive attacker, watching his fist slam into Omega's as green and blue lightning came from the result clash.

Goku and Luffy watched as the lightning were clashing with each other as the braced for the shockwaves inbound as they were actually blasted back by the explosion of inhuman force, being caught in a large plant that Yuuka made.

" Man! Where are all you guys coming from?!" Luffy asked while looking at her as Yuuka scooped.

" I was always here, I want to see what this Omega can do." Yuuka said while holding onto her parasol and floating down to the ground as the lightning struck next to her feet, merely clicking her teeth as the clashed ended with the mountain Ziden was standing on completely shattered under him.

" Lets move!" Goku is seen flexing for a moment as a golden aura surrounded him and his hair became golden, reaching his super saiyin form, looking at the giant before them.

" You are next, Saiyin." Omega is seen vanishing in a blur and reappearing right above Goku with a large ball of plasma raging

above his head. " Plasma Impact!" Goku and Luffy are seen disappearing from the area before the impact happened, the massive dome of green energy clearing away a large amount of mountains from the area as Yuugi came up from behind, clutching a massive boulder and smashed him with an insane amount of force, creating a crater under them.

" Tch, aren't you a sturdy one?" Yuugi said while she looks at the barely damaged Omega as he looked back to her with his green glowing eyes.

" Far beyond the power of you weaklings. Surrender now and you shall be spared from death." Omega said as he didn't see the flower youkai summoning Plant life to grow massively around the beast as Omega looked down at the vines constricting him while Yuuka was floating up to him. " Another bug has come to be squashed?"

" To refer to me as a bug shows your cockiness, a flaw i shall destroy along with your body." Yuuka said as the tip of her umbrella began to spark at the tip, pulling it into a batters stance. " Allow me to end your suffering!" She swings the parasol as the massive beam arced and flew forward like a massive crescent as Omega tried to block the attack with his forearms but the sheer impact of the attack sent him skidding backwards as the massive stone pillars were destroyed by the insane power as Ziden leaps into the air and began to rapidly kick the boulders down onto Omega, causing large explosions.

From within in the cloud, Yorihome is seen slicing through the cloud with her blade and leaping past the giant with her blade, slashing across the back and drawing out a bright green blood like liquid sprayed out and lands on the side of a naturally formed stone monument.

Omega is seen raising one of his hands to the sky as storm clouds began to form as Luffy leapt high into the air and biting down on his thumb and forcing air through the hole he formed, expanding the arm to that of a giant and pulling it back. " Armament Haki: Gum Gum Elephant Gun!" Luffy coated his arm black and shot it down like a

cannon shot, the massive fist destroying the massive pillars around them and changing to area to a ruin like landscape as rocks were made as cover as Goku took on his God Form.

" Grr, filthy ants! How dare you oppose me!?" Omega is seen summoning unholy amounts of plasma to his arm as a blue light came from Goku's hands as energy was heavily picking up from the back of the room.

" Kamehameha!" Goku fired a massive blue beam that clashed with the plasma beam that Omega shot as Ziden sees the Creation Chamber almost primed to fire.

" Oh no." Ziden leaps into the air and towards the ball of energy and punched his fist into it.

" What the? What are you doing, Original One!?" Omega yelled as the ground began to shatter underneath them from the beam struggle as it began to push back against Goku's Kamehameha.

" Ngh! I can't give up! Not like this!" Goku yelled out as Luffy winds his fist back and begins to spin it.

" Don't give in Goku! I have your back." Luffy yelled as he coated his arm in Armament Haki. " Gum Gum Hawk Rifle!" Luffy smashed his fist right into the massive face of Omega as the blast ended up knocking him back as the his beam severely weakened.

' No! I Will not lose to you lesser beings!" Omega yelled as Goku's signature beam began to punch right through the beam as it swallowed Omega whole. " I... refuse... to... lose!" OMega's body began to process of being heavily destroyed by the beam as a fragment of him flew off and out into the distance as his body was heavily destroyed by the beam, as was the environment.

Ziden was taking the energy of the Big bang and forcing it to destabilize so he could create a control explosion of force so the universe would not be destroyed, feeling the power rushing through



and destroying his inside, he spat out a glob of blood and focused on his goal as the core began to shake.

Yuugi and Yuuka are seen looking up at the core. "What the hell is that kid planning to do?" Yuugi asked.

"Not sure, but if he's so focused on it, guess it's gonna stop that Big Bang thing." Yuuka said as the core began to violently shake and leak unholy amounts of energy as Ziden began to slowly contain the energy within his body.

"It's at times like this... I hate being a hero!" Ziden yelled as his body erupted into a white light that exploded across the entire room, shaking the very reality of the area as it reverted to the pure white room as everyone looked to the now destroyed core of the Universal Reseter.

"Whoa, that big Egg was destroyed, so now our worlds won't be destroyed right?" Luffy asked while looking around.

"Yeah I guess so. But where's Ziden?" Goku looked around for the boy as the Marines had already seen what happened to him.

"Oh my... so the kid went through that big a sacrifice for us? That's something." Kizaru said while looking up at the closing portal as Akainu scoffed.

"Erase his bounty but keep an eye on his allies Yukari Yakumo and Remilia Scarlet, they both have the blood of marines on them." Akainu declared as Yuuka was carrying Ziden's body to the others, seemingly unfazed by how he looked now.

"Well I found him. Dunno why he's like this though." Yuuka said as she dropped his body on the ground.

"Well great, how am I to punish him now?" Bills asked while sighing.

"... What happened to ya kid?" Yuugi asked as Ziden's body was shown to everyone. His body lost all of his muscle and his skin became sunken and pale. His eyes were small and nigh lifeless as his once black hair was now white and not as vibrant as it once was.

" Atleast, we're not dead." Goku pointed out as they look down the hole where the other battle for the Universe took place.

Author's Notes: About three more chapters until this story is finally finished, woo!

## **The Smasers have come! Finish the Fight!**

The Smashers are all seen walking through the portal, all looking serious as they were all arranged in a line, their weapons/fists out and ready to face the undead horde.

" So these are the Smashers we have yet to meet?' Meiling asked while looking down at the fallen Scarlet, holding a locket in her hand as she for some reason, spared her life after a gruesome battle as several undead appeared around her.

" So you guys are these heroes that's been going around, taking care of these Zealot punks? Hah! I could have done that by myself at a far faster rate." Falco boasted as the girls, Reiji, Xiaomu merely blink at Falco.

" Wow, way to make us like you oh so much, Bird boy." Marisa simply sighed while remaining high in the air.

" Whatever, anyways, how did you guys even get here?" Reimu asked as a large White hand flew over the group of Smashers.

" I was told to gather them and bring them here for this final battle so i gathered up everyone from the Brawl tournament." Master Hand explained as Crazy Hand flew up next to him.

" Oh yeah! Its been so long since i've dragged into a full scale battle, my body is shaking with excitement! Oh wait... I don't have a body... GUH HAH! WHO CARES! LETS BLOW UP SOME ZOMBIES!" Crazy Hand didn't even wait for the signal to attack as he flew right into the fray as the Smashers all charge in to help their comrades.

The Encounter ( Kingdom Hearts 2)

Mario and Reimu are seen staring down Ultima as she held a dark black katana in her grasp, the sublime darkness in the blade was shimmering as she dashed forward towards the duo. Reimu quickly

ducked down, losing a few strands of hair from the slash, the trail of darkness from the blade was left behind. Mario saw an opening as he gather fire to his hand and swings it to her chest, the explosive impact blasting her back as her kimono caught the cinders from the attack. " Not bad at all, Plumber." Ultima pats out the cinders with her bare hands and made her way to the duo.

Marisa and Luigi were standing back to back as 10 zombies, armed with spears were seen coming for them. " Looks like we Second Bananas better step things up huh?" Marisa asked as Luigi reached into his overalls and pulled out a Starman.

" Yes indeedy, lets-a-go!" Luigi stamped the star to his chest as a golden light shined forth from his chest, shimmering in the darkness as he exploded with a bright rainbow of colors, gripping his cap and holding it over his eyes as Marisa whistled, impressed with the King of Second Bananas.

Luigi ends up touching Marisa's hand as the star power transfered to her. " Oh boy! I feel invincible!"

" You are invincible Marisa! One hit should send these guys flying!" Luigi explained as one of the zombies charged right at Marisa. She quickly reacted by sidestepping and swinging her broom right into their faces, watching as they were sent flying all across the room like a rocket.

" Wowza, talk about your launching power upgrade ze!" Marisa stated as she leapt forward with her broom and taking baseball swings at everyone, one zombie she hit flew clean off into the abyss, performing the wilhelm Scream

Alice could be seen throwing her explosive dolls into the fray of zombies running towards her as three of them leapt towards as time seemed to slow down. From behind her leapt Captain Falcon and Mokou, both of their legs wrapped in fire.

" Twin Falcon Kick!" The duo's fire wrapped around and fused them together for a few moments as the kick sliced through the zombies, the duo landing apart from each other as they both struck poses together.

" Well... that was rather flashy." Alice pointed out as Mokou was rubbing under her nose.

" Seriously, you gotta teach me how to do that Falcon kick." Mokou said while she sees a massive Zombie Behemoth raising up from the ground. " Uh oh."

" Leave this to me Mokou." Captain Falcon is seen walking towards the Behemoth as his yellow scarf flowed in the wind as he bends down and slowly winds up his fist. " Falcon!" Falcon began to gather up energy to his fist as the fire materialized as tiny orbs of fiery energy gathered around him. The behemoth made its way to Falcon while raising his fist high. The orbs soon slammed into his fist as they became radiant flames. " PUNCH!" His fist shot forward with a very visible wind and fire cone and smashed into the fist of the behemoth, a massive burst of heat and energy released from the impact as the ground shook. Falcon's fist was now destroying the behemoth's arm, watching it dematerialize from the punch as the force travelled up the arm to its chest as it burst up with not only rotten flesh but burning flesh as well, the body falling backwards onto the ground as he smirked. " YES!"

" Holy cow, he one shot that thing." mokou said as she spotted the body began to spark and decompose from the powerful impact as the zombies backed away from the fighter pilots.

Youmu could be seen fighting along side Link, Marth, Ike and Meta Knight as they looked up to a massive Earth Golem as it roared at them, sending chunks of mud and bones at them, actually conking Youmu hard in the face.

" Well that was disgusting." Youmu said as she wiped her face off.

" YOu get used to things like this... well I did during our last Journey." Ike said as he gripped his blade, holding Ragnell in his right hand and the Alondite in his left hand, going to dual wield.

" I've never seen you Dual Wield before ike, are you certain you can do this?" Marth asked while wielding his Falchion.

" If he is so adamant on using the Dual Wield style, then he must be certain of being able to do the style." Meta Knight stated as he Wields the mighty Galaxia.

" I believe so but wielding a two handed blade with one hand, what monstrous strength." Youmu said as the massive golem is seen slamming its fist down into the ground as the group of four scattered around as Marth is seen running up the arm of the Golem.

He is seen leaping up to the face of the giant, arcing his blade through its Eye, causng the creature of Earth to swings its hand at the hero before him, sending him crashing through a crypt.

Ike dashed along the ground before leaping high into the air and slicing through the creature's arms with dark blue flames tht tore through the arms and made them crash down to the ground as Meta Knight and youmu could be seen pointing their blades in front of them.

" Are you ready young swordsman?" Meta Knight asked while looking at the younger fuighter.

" I am ready Meta Knight!" YOumu could be seen gripping her blade and beginning to leap forward with aa spinning drill motion. " Dual Drill Rush!" Youmu and Meta Knight combined their attacks to create a massive golden drill which tore through the chest of the creature, hitting its magic core as it began to rumble and fall apart.

" Too easy." Ike said as he placed the swords on his back.

The fights were all going well before Alice spotted three Zombie Behemoths coming into the fray and began to summon her Goliath, only to see an arrow lodge into the flesh of the behemoth and explode, launching it back as Hawkeye could be seen standing atop a tree.

" Well now, can't expect a big battle and not expect the Avengers to show up right?" Hawkeye asked as a certain green beast is seen slamming into a Zombie Behemoth and punching its lights clean out as he roared.

' Hulk smash Puny Zombies!' Hulk was in his battle grove, going to rapidly punch the beast as Iron Man descended from the sky.

" We saw that broadcast from Ziden's fight with Omega. We may not like the guy, but we can't sit back and let him fight this battle without backup now can we?" Iron Man asked while firing several repulsar blasts at a nearby zombie as Yukari looked to the man.

" That's fine by me, but don't try anything funny Stark. I've got my eyes on you." Yukari said as Hawkeye and Black Widow focused their fire on hitting the waves of zombies.

Mario blocked a sword strike from Ultima as black sparks came from the clash as she forced him to his knees. " For my daughter to be beaten by you Youkai, it saddens me greatly. We only wished to restore this Universe to one of Light, of Hope, of Justice! Why do you oppose us!?" Ultima asked as Reimu's feet collided with her face, sending her skidding backwards from the impact.

" Who says we want your damn peace?! We like the Universe just the way it is, if we wanted it to be changed, we'd change it ourselves!" Reimu said before balling up her fist and flying right at Ultima, hitting her square in the stomach, causing her to cough up large amounts of spittle as she hit her knees on the soft ground, hearing the crunch from Reimu's knee colliding with her face, such an impact brought a tear to Captain Falcon's eye, watching her fly backwards from the impact.

Mario sees this as an opportunity to leap high into the air and spin hard like a wheel with his hammer slamming hard into Ultima's airborne body, sending it slamming down into the Earth, creating a large crater as she was no longer moving as lightning rained down around the Zombies and created massive explosions.

Ganondorf was holding a zombie in his hands before looking at the degenerating creature while sighing. " Looks like this battle was over before it even began." Ganondorf said as Link and Zelda were seen sighing in relief.

Yuugi and the others could be seen floating down the hole with the weakened Ziden in her arms as everyone looked at him.

" Wowza! Ziden went all Heihachi on us! All old and Wrinkly!" Xiaomu blurted out while poking his face all over before Reiji smacked her hand. " Ow! Reiji! Not cool."

" ITs not supposed to be cool, what the hell happened to him?" Reiji asked while running his hand through his dual toned hair

" This is what happens when he tries to absorb too much energy in a weakened state and this completely overloads his body, making him like this." Yukari explained as Reimu was tying up Ultima and carrying her to the top of the tower.

" I dunno what's going on but my sensors indicate that a large source of energy just dispersed over the top of the castle." Iron Man said before taking flight towards the source.

Everyone nodded and headed to the top of the tower, each of them speaking to each other as Nitori and Fox were speaking to Iron Man.

" That's a pretty advanced suit you got there Iron Man. Its pretty impressive for your Solar System's time." Fox complimented as Stark's visor rose up.



" Well yeah thanks. I have plenty of other suits I control at will. But those arwings you're talking about sound pretty interesting, ships with the ability to take out an entire ship. Odd that you fought a weird rabbit though." Stark said as he shrugged.

" Huh? HOW'd you know of that fight? Yeah, that ship was poorly constructed and he took out Slippy, poor toad's in sick bay resting up but that rabbit put up a good fight." Fox said.

" Never thought i'd be meeting a humanoid talking fox in my lifetime." Nitori pointed out while holing onto her backpack.

" Oh trust me, I've met a talking raccoon before, this isn't wweird to me." Stark referred to Rocket Raccoon in his sentance.

" Oh? You mean Rocket Raccoon right? We worked along side the Guardians of the Galaxy on one of our Jobs, Falco and Rocket got into a big fight with Falco winning apparently." Fox said as Reiji was walking along side Lucario.

" What brings you to me Reiji?" Lucario asked, looking up to the taller man.

" Just curious really, have you ever seen Ziden in a state like that?" Reiji asked.

" No, not once, this is a first to me, in a weakened state, he must be protected, lest something comes and takes him." Lucario said.

" Well we can keep him under Avenger Protection." Falcon suggested, flying down next to them while blinking.

" I am against that, i don't trust you Avengers around my Nephew farer than I can throw you." Yukari pointed out as Stark looked back.

" We aren't going to lock up the guy who helped to stop thee Universe reseting, just keep him safe in our tower. Its safest there anyways." Stark pointed out.

" Yes, the place Super Villians attack on a nigh daily basis." Yukari retorted as they all reached the top of the tower as they see Sora and friends

" Whoa, a portal! Time to head home!" Sanae declared before running into the portal with a large number of the group as Kairi entered the portal last, leaving Yukari, Reimu, Marisa, Remlia, Kaguya, Mokou, Eirin and Yuugi behind for the Touhou crew. Mario, Sonic, Shadow, Kirby, Luigi and Yoshi from the Smashers. Reiji, Xiaomu also stayed behind as well as only Hawkeye and Hulk stucked behind.

" Something about this seems off bBig Green?" Hawkeye asked as uHulk grunted.

" Yeah, somethings not right." Hulk said as the entire tower began to shake as Sora and Riku saw a massive metal dragon flying around the tower before the other goup heard a massive roar from behind them. What they saw was a shock, a massive combination of buildings and pipes were seen combining to form a massive monster construct, looking similar to massive giant made of stone as two skyscrapers were pointing out from its back.

" Lord Omega!" Ultima is seen looking to him with a bbright expression. " Save me so we can create our universe of Light!"

A loud rumbling laugh was seen coming the massive giant. " Get it in your head girl. I lied about creating a Universe of Light, I wish to create one of Darkness where i am the Sole God of Evil." Omega declared as Ultima looked befuddled.

" W-what? But you told us..."

" I lied child of Man." As soon as Omega said this, a creepy and ominous organ piece began to play. " I am the one who will be a God of the New Universe. Evil shall reign in the New reality while i crush out all light and leave only darkness." Omega said as a massive heartless symbol appeared on his chest.

His massive fist strikes the tower and destroys it as several flying platforms appeared around the giant while he roared, Mario, Sonic, Shadow, Luigi and Yukari landed on the front platform. "Are you guys ready?" Yukari asked as Mario and co stood before Yukari, Mario and Luigi had their hats over their eyes.

The others were scattered on the other platforms as they looked to Sonic and friends.

"Eh? What's Sonic the Hedgehog doing here?! HE's a Game character!" Hawkeye pointed out.

"NOT the best time to ask." Hulk answered as he stood up.

Yukari opened a Gap as several large gems are seen circling the area around the trio as Omega growled at the sight.

"I won't let you use the Chaos Emeralds!" Omega tried to smash his hand on the platform, only for a massive burst of light to blast his hand off as four shining lights were in front of Yukari.

Mario and Luigi's outfit changed to a golden shirt with silver overalls as their hats were golden as well, their capes were shimmering in the wind with sparkles coming from them, their eyes now light blue. Super Mario and Luigi has arrived!

Sonic and Shadow turned to a pure gold color as their eyes became red. Super Sonic and Shadow have also arrived.

"Whoa... they turned gold?" Marisa asked while sitting on their broom.

"Something is different... they seem more powerful." Reimu said as Sora and Riku went off to fight against Xemnas.

"Wowza, never thought I'd get to see Super Sonic in Real Life. Come on Big Green, let's cause some damage on this big Giant." Hawkeye said as Hulk roared.

" Come on Mario, Shadow, Luigi. Lets take this freak down a free notches!" Sonic declared as they took flight! the Final Battle is here!

Author's Notes: The Final Battle is coming next and soon! Get ready for an epic battle.

## At the End of the Journey

Everyone took their places on the floating platforms, all had their weapons drawn and were beyond ready for combat. Omega stood in the middle of the floating platforms before a lot more were being formed with long golden roads connecting them to the ones in front of them.

" Looks like this is gonna be a long behind battle ahead of us." Iron Man simply said before landing on one of the platforms, using Jarvis to scan the massive being before them.

" Stark, it seems that the being is comprised of the massive skyscrapers has a strange flux of energy forming in the center of it. It might be the being's core." Jarvis explained as Ironman took flight.

Reimu herself, walked forward to the edge of One of the Platforms. " Everyone... i'm not that good at giving these speech things but as much as i hate the stupid name. We're the Illusionary Heroes and we will not let this Omega creature destroy the Universe we live in. We are going to stop him here, if it's the last thing we do!" Reimu yelled as she summoned her gohei.

" She was right, she sucks at speeches." Shadow said as he cracked his knuckles, floating before the massive combination of buildings, the massive glow of his green flamed eyes staring at the heroes below him.

" Come forth, Heroes across many worlds." Omega once again began to open portals across many timelines and Spatial Axis points to show them new worlds and worlds they knew. Even functioning as a two way portal.

One world showed a massive academy with a girl in red, slicing through Large Body Heartless with her massive scythe as she looked up into the sky. " Uh oh... giant evil building thing." The girl

looked up, only for a blonde woman with gauntlets to punch a large Heartless wearing samurai armor away.

" Ruby! Pay attention! We gotta drive these things back from Beacon!" The blonde quickly dodge the sharp, dark as night katana whizzing over her head. " Jeez! These things are violent!"

" Don't worry Yang! Sorry Mr Giant! But we will have to watch you uh do things later!" Ruby quickly spins her scythe around her arm before firing a bullet off, using the momentum to slice through the Shadow Ronin attacking Yang.

Another new world showed a bunch of mages fighting off many magic casting heartless.

So many worlds appeared through the portals, all making them watch the battle for reality, the heroes must stand tall and conquer this evil, or all worlds will sink into the darkness.

" So Heroes, now that you see these worlds in danger from my Heartless hordes, will you not surrender your arms and-" Omega was going to continue before a massive boulder smashed right into his arm as a large gap opened as Yuugi, Yukari, Captain Falcon, Dante and Vergil came forth.

" Hmm, looks like alot more people are here to fight this thing." Zoro pointed out before taking out his three blades and gets ready for a big ass fight for the fate of the Universe.

### **Hopes and Dreams Save the World! ( Undertale)**

" hmm? Is there music playing for this battle? you can't be serious with this right?" hawkeye asked as the music was flowing out to the other worlds and filling them with fighting spirit.

" Just listening to it fills my heart with Valor! This music must be the Gods of Asgard cheering us on!" Thor preached as he looked up at the massive giant.

" Heh! keep thinking that. We got an oversized giant to break up so lets get started right now!" Marisa was seen flying high into the air as Omega let out a loud roar as the main part of the song happened.

Ironman took flight as well and made his way to the stony face of the beast, the Avenger began to charge up his Repulsar blasts. " We're late to this party but we're sure as hell not letting you destroy the Universe for your own goals, Omega!" Ironman unleashed a powerful barrage of blasts onto him as pieces of stone were seen blasted off the creature.

" Grah! Tony Stark! Do not believe that your victory Over Thanos, makes you powerful enough face me!" Omega began channel green lightning along his body and moved them to his Cannon like hands. " Plasma Overdrive!" Omega roared as green lightning turned into a massive beam of light, scattering a massive assault that began to buffet Iron Man's body. Several explosions rocked his suit.

" Sir, you are sustaining massive damage from this attack, the suit cannot take much more of this assault." Jarvis warned as the alarms blaring in his suit basically gave him a clue.

" I get that Jarvis, but where the heck can i-"

" Gum Gum!"

" Triple Sword Style!"

Omega raised one of his brows as he sees the two Straw Hat pirates around him, each aimed for his Arms.

" ELEPHANT GUN!"

" 108 POUND CANNON!"

Luffy's massive fist was coated in Armament Haki as it flew right at Omega's right arm, hitting with enough force to punch right through it, causing the arm to burst off.

Zoro's blades created a large funnel of wind that slammed into the creature's left arm, creating a crater that sliced the arm clean off.

" GRAH! Cursed Pirates of the Blue Sea! Your existences are null and forfeit!" Omega was turning towards Zoro with a massive kick, destroying several of the platforms and sending the rocks floating into the air. Zoro was unlucky enough to be smashed into one, creating a massive dust cloud.

" ZORO!" Luffy screamed as he noticed the battlefield now had massive buildings floating around the arenas.

Mokou took this opportunity to leap and grab Stark out of the air and proceeded to run along the platforms, trying to keep up with the monster they had to fight.

" this Universe will end in destruction, i will become the only God it needs, all others will fall!" Omega declared before a barrage of yellow balls were seen smacking the creature's chest.

Goku and Marisa were rapidfiring the creature back with their basic blasts.

" Son Goku! Do not think that by becoming a God that you stand a chance here!" Several buildings are seen shooting right to Omega's arms, the crunch of cement was heard as they reformed his massive arms as they formed massive balls of Energy.

" I don't need the Power of a God to beat you! KA! ME! Ha! Me!" A bright blue light began to form between Goku's hand, the air being charged with lightning as Marisa reached under her hat.

" Marisa Kirisame! I will make you suffer a death twice as great as what the Saigyō gave you!" Omega declared as a shiver went down Marisa's spine, she had minor circles under her eyes but that wasn't gonna hold her back from this fight.



" yeah yeah, you can talk a big game, clone guy! But i am gonna blast your ass to hell!" Marisa yelled before energy began to gather to her Mini Hakker0, rainbow colored lights were shining from it.

" Divine Will: Plasma Destruction!" The massive balls of energy shot forth like cannon balls as it was destroying the platforms in their wake.

" HAAAAA!" Goku released his trademark blast of energy as it slammed against one of them, forcing it to slow down as it was still moving strong.

" MAGICANNON: FINAL SPARK!" Marisa's massive laser of rainbow goodness exploded from her item and smalled against the other, now a massive beam struggle forming between the balls.

The balls were violently overpowering them as the fliers were being pushed back.

" Dammit, how strong is this guy?! It feels like i am fighting Beerus again!" Goku said while struggling against the beam as Marisa was having no better lucky.

" Beats me, ze! I know he's Ziden's clone so that might explain the power! And the stupidity!" Marisa yelled before two yellow blurs shot past them and slammed into the balls.

Mario's golden hammer smashed into the plasma ball, causing it to violently shake and break from the pressure, before it shot forward like a cannon and smashed against Omega and blasted entire parts from his body.

Luigi did the same to the other back, sending the ball smashing right into Omega as the two beams smashed into the beast.

" Sir, i have done a scan on that being, it seems that there is a powerful energy source within it, fueling this thing, if a big enough blow is dealt to it-"

" Then the whole thing goes Kaboom!" Tony stark said as Mokou blinked.

" What goes Kaboom?" Mokou asked before running ahead to the next few platforms.

" That thing has a core we need to destroy, we need to get inside and destroy it."

" Then that means we should split into a smaller team to combat its insides then. Avengers, stay out here, we shall go inside." Vergil said, appearing next to him.

" Count me in on this battle." Dante said while dodging one of Omega's fists and using his blade to deflect the blow.

Captian Falcon, Reimu, Marisa, Dante, Mario, Reiji and Xiaomu stepped forth for the final fight.

" Get ready, because once i gap you inside, God knows what sort of horrors await you." Yukari said as the gap formed.

" Do not think you will survive against my core, it will destroy you and tear you to shreds." Omega said as the group leapt into the gap and appeared in a pure black and purple battle arena.

Mokou herself leapt into the fray and began to dust herself off. " heh, not missing out on beating another of my Husband's look-alikes, this is gonna be fun." mokou was cracking her knuckles as a white light was shining down the path, Omega was that white light as he was looking at them

His white skin seemed to be far paler than before as his eyes began to morph together into one large one, dripping blood down onto the floor. The sounds of his back being torn open was audible as the group flinched, darkness exploding from its back as it gained a new form, a massive 8 armed beast of darkness, dark of flesh and fuchsia of aura, the white glowing eye shined in the darkness.

" In here, there is no hope, no salvation, no light. Only the darkness i wield to destroy the Universe. Your heroes will fail and i will reign supreme, as the God of Destruction! Replacing Oblivian!" Omega lets out a roar as his red horns shot out of his head and his body was covered in purple spikes.

### **Megalovania ( Undertale)**

" DIE!" The massive beast raised its hands high into the air and began to slam his fists into the earth, sending massive pillars of plasma travelling along the ground, causing the team to scatter.

Mokou was the one who moved in for the first attack, her fists were covered in fire as it slammed into Omega's side, causing a large explosion of fire as he skidded along the floor.

" Cursed Immortal One! i will Enjoy feasting on your soul!" Omega said before his arms elongated and shot to her.

Mokou began to backflip and dodge all of the arms, the others all dodging the powerful attacks while getting ready to counter attack. " Hah! This all you got! You're way too slow to be a credible threat!"

Omega's single eye began to glow as the room gained massive black pillars with blue lights coming from them, altering reality before disappearing in a blur and smashing three of its fists into mokou's chest, the awful sounds of crunched bones were heard as she was sent crashing into one of the pillars, coughing up blood.

" Oh cruD! This guy is pretty damn fast!" Marisa yelled out before pulling out her Mini hakkero and beginning to rain down a storm of bullets onto his back, the bullets erupting into colorful flames as he roared.

" Filthy mage! Begone!" Omega turned around as his eye glew red, firing a massive red bolt of lightning, which Marisa grazed with ease, allowing the Falcon to come in.

" Show!" One fist slammed hard into Omega's side. " Your!" 3 more lightning fast strikes came, complete with lightning striking the impact marks. " MOVES!" Falcon began to unleash a violent barrage of fists into his chest, causing the very ground to shake from the impacts.

Omega was forced into coughing up a black blood as Mario flew in with Reiji and Xiaomu in his arms. " LETS A GO!" Mario began to spin hard vertically, becoming a ball of white and gold before throwing the duo at the beast at Light speeds.

" Karin!"

" Suiren!"

With the insane speeds, they struck hard with their blades, slicing off two arms each, on both sides blood shot out from the beast as omega roared in pain. Reiji and Xiaomu skidded across the earth, causing it to shatter. " Damn! Didn't think Mario had that kind of arm to him."

" Well he is sorta powered up right now, so he's alot strong than he normally is!" Xiaomu exclaimed before getting to her feet, watching Dante and Vergil getting ready to attack.

" no more games!" The beast was seen leaping high into the air and gathering a ton of darkness to his body before unleashing it as destructive meteors. " Nocturne Storm!" The balls of destruction began to rain down on the battlefield, blasting everyone all over the place, causing several of them to smash through the stone pillars and knocking Marisa to the earth. " You!" Omega spotted Marisa and roared, causing the blonde mage to look up.

" Ah crud buckets, ze." Marisa tried to get to her feet, only to be grabbed and smashed hard into a random wall, causing stone and debris to shoot out. " You who dodged death once, will not find such luck again!" One of its lower fists slammed hard into her body, the sounds of a fist hitting human flesh was heard before the sound

multiplied from a barrage of powerful hits began to punch her through the wall.

Poor Marisa was being smashed and pummeled by the powerful hits, her body taking massive damage from each strike, she felt her legs snapped and arms break from the strikes before the assault suddenly stopped. " Now, death is coming to you again!" Those words caused fear in her heart subconsciously, would she truly go through that hell of dying again? But she didn't, when the fist came again, something stopped it cold and it was Dante with his Beowulf, blocking the fist with his leg.

" Sorry about not making it over fast enough, fighting a giant tree can take alot out of your speed." Dante said before spinning and kicking the arm down into the earth as Vergil leapt and nabbed Marisa from the wall.

"... you handled yourself well for a human, your wounds are bad so remain on the sidelines and don't get in my way." Vergil said before drawing Yamato and walking away.

"... Geez... thanks sunshine... ze." Marisa said before looking at her tattered clothes, her bones were sticking out at awkward places, blood was caking her clothing as she simply falls limp onto the ground, breathing hard as Reimu ran over, her own clothes were burned and seered from the attack.

" MARISA!" Reimu quickly reached into her robes and lifted up marisa's head.

" Hey... Red... ya hanging in there?" Marisa asked before coughing up more blood before an Elixir was forced into her mouth.

" I refuse to let you die again, i **REFUSE** to let you die again." Reimu said before the elixir slowly began to heal Marisa, forcing her bones back into her body, causing the mage severe pain, causing her to spaz out only for reiji and xiaomu to hold her down.

" We've got the Kid, we've got to end this fight so we can end this, now." Reiji said as reimu breathed in deep and stood before mMarisa, holding Fantasy Heaven.

" I will, i just need time to use this."

Dante could be seen careening across the ground from the impact of his plasma burst while Vergil was using his blade to violently slice up the core.

" you meddling halflings! ALL OF YOU ARE IN MY WAY!" Omega yelled before Mokou and falcon slammed their flaming legs into the sides of his face, causing red cracks to form in his eye before he smashed them down into the earth. Grabbing Mokou, he began to violently pound and smash her into earth, each strike causing the ground to shatter. He rapidly dragged her along the ground and throwing her right into a large spike, watching her be impaled.

Mokou was in terrible shape from that, her white hair was caked with blood, her left leg was missing and she had a giant blade through her chest, what a night huh?

But mario didn't wish to see anymore of his allies fall so he slammed his fists into his back, smashing him hard down into the earth, grabbing him and throwing him hard against the floor.

" I have had enough! It is time for this to end! WAHHHHH!" Mario's fists were seen turning pure gold as he walked to the beast.

" plumber! Your game ends here!" Mario looked up at Omega charging at him before letting out a battle cry and a bright golden shine came from mario.

Mario's fist slammed Omega's chest with a powerful strike, sending a shockwave of light through the room and dispersing the dark reality he created. Following up with another powerful fist and then another, soon beginning a multi punch combo which made his arms look like they were extending. " AAAAAAAAAAAAA!" Mario let out a loud

battlecry during all the punches as the light was blasting through Omega's body, the silver cape was flowing hard behind him as the ground itself shook from the attacks.

reimu herself was finished with her preparations as she floated high into the air with her spell card. " Omega! I will not forgive you for trying to Destroy the universe, our world<sup>1</sup> and my home of Gensokyo! FANTASY HEAVEN!" From the iteration of the spell card, she began to utterly bombard the Godlike being with a barrage of holy based attacks, causing the beast grand amounts of pain as he was shot back against the wall.

Mario's fist ended up smashing Omega through the wall entirely and sending right through the massive being's body, making it roar when the core was removed.

" NO! MY CONQUEST! MY REALITY!" The light was seen swallowing Omega whole in a massive orb as Reimu appeared far outside of it, watching the core be absorbed and crushed by the light. " YOU! WILL! DIE!" With one last push of energy, he forced the massive giant to move.

" Everyone! lets take that thing down in one big bang!" Ironman yelled out as everyone converged who was outside.

" Lets end this together!" Reimu yelled as everyone gathered their strongest attacks.

" UNIVERSE'S SALVATION!" A concord of voices shot forth as a massive swarm of attacks came from the heroes and fused to make a massive golden king, his arms were cross as his golden cape flowed behind him. His fist was clenched as it shot forward like a rocket and smashed right into Omega's chest, causing a massive explosion of light to rock the area.

" AAAHAHAHAHAHAHAHHAH! I WILL NEVER DIE! NEVER!" Omega tried to fight back against the punch, only to see his arms falling apart, then his legs. " No." Soon cracks formed in his thigh,

purple in color. " no!" Omega's body began to violently explode from the punch as he screeched in pain. " **NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO** !"The massive godlike tower began to erupt into darkness as everyone saw it coming.

" WHOA! EVERYONE! RUN!" Luffy yelled, pulling his fist back from a Red Hawk he used before the darkness began to swallow everyone, including the world.

Nothing was heard heard, only the sounds of water in the distance as reimu and mario were the only ones awake.

" Where... where are we?" Reimu asked as she began to walk along the beach.

" I don't know... this is nowhere i've been before." Mario answered before he spotted Sora and Riku sitting down, looking at the 'sun'.

And it did not take long for Reimu to literally tackle hug Sora down.  
"... Whoa. Sora? When did you get popular with the ladies?"

" Gah! Reimu! cut it out!" Sora slowly pushed her face away from his before finally sitting up.

" Jeez, you idiot, making me worry about you and all. I guess this means you won your fight against Xemnas?" reimu asked before simply resting herself between his legs and her bak against his chest.

" Yeah, Omega is done for?"

" Yeah he is, the Universe is saved, guess this means we got one hell of a party waiting for us back home." Reimu said before a bright light was shining before them.

" Time... for us to get home." Sora said as the light swallowed them whole, taking the group away from the world of darkness and right into some water, causing Luffy to panic.



" GAH! HELP! I CAN'T SWIM!" Luffy could be seen struggling in the water before going limp as Zoro grabbed him.

Sonic was literally panicking as well, splashing about and screaming before shadow slapped the back of his head and heads ashore as Yukari was seen holding Ziden on her back while staring at the Ironman without his armor.

" Absolutely not. I will not entrust you people with keeping him safe." Yukari said while looking at all of them.

" Listen Yukari, we know that we have gotten on the wrong angling before, but after seeing and hearing what he did, we think it might be best to have him with us for safety." Captain America suggested as yukari seemed to be shooting down the idea entirely.

" Yukari. Just do it." Yukari turned around to see Roxanne on the beach in a sundress napping. " If they do anything to harm em, just kick their asses or send someone with em to make sure nothing happens." Roxanne said as patchouli and yuugi stepped forth.

" We'll go. I severely doubt these humans will do anything that stupid with me around." Patchouli said while looking at them.

" Well. atleast she has good fashion sense." Hawkeye said, noting her purple clothing choice.

" Sides, i want another round with that Green guy so hanging out with these guys are a good thing in disguise."

" Humph, i'm always ready for round 2 Blondie." Hulk smashed his fists together as Yuugi grinned brightly.

Mokou could be seen standing before Falcon, fire gathered around her fist before she slammed it into his, making a phoenix and falcon clash in friendship. " Glad you are okay after all that."

" Hey, perks of being immortal, things hurt alot less than expected or rather kill alot less." Mokou said before looking at the smashers all waiting before a portal.

Reimu and Sora were seen standing before Mario and sonic with smiles on their faces. Ichigo and Erza were saying goodbye to each other as she went to join the smashers.

" so this is the end huh? Never thought i'd have so much fun outside of gensokyo. Guess this is goodbye?" Reimu said while putting on a tough front.

" Not goodbye kid, see ya later. because when you make a team of Galactic Heroes, we always come back together when the Multiverse needs saving!" Sonic said as Reimu and Mario looked at him odd.

" Multi... verse?" They said in unison as Sonic's mouth was shut quickly by Mario's hand.

" No-a Worries! Its a nothing!" Mario said before Eirin was seen holding the unconscious Marisa in her arms. " Let us meet again in the future!" Mario said before shaking Sora's hand.

" You two play safe now!" Sonic said before speeding off into the portal.

Link was seen nodding softly to Eirin before Eirin heads over to him and thanks him for all the hard work he has done in his world.

Soon the Smashers and people from other worlds went back home as Ace, Auron and Vergil stood by Yuyuko. " you would let us stay in your garden?" Ace asked while looking at her.

" indeed i would, you three are Justice Spirits, given a second chance as Sectors so you can do the world good. I would love it if you stayed with us." yuyuko asked while ace looked out to Luffy who hadn't spotted him yet.

"... Yeah, i'd like that." Ace said before turning around as Luffy looked over and saw Yuyuko and Ace, his eyes widening as he ran over to them, too late as the group of four vanished into butterflies.

" was,... that Ace?" Luffy asked while looking confused.

" Luffy! We need to get back to our world, our crew is waiting for us." Zoro yelled as he entered the portal to head back to Sabaody with Sanji being dragged behind him. Luffy only looked back before running off on his own through the portal, only leaving the Gensokyo crew and the Avengers.

Meiling was seen trying to convince Remilia of something with Scarlet standing next to her. " Please Mistress! Let her work with me as a gate keeper! I promise i will keep her in line!"

" Meiling! This woman has tried to kill us! Why in the hell would i allow her to work under me!?" Remilia asked as Sakuya was staring at Meiling.

" Mistress... i don't think she would do something like this for no reason, if she is so adamant about her wanting to work under us." sakuya suggested as she held the bottom of her skirt, shaking it of sand and water.

"... Fine. If she doesn't show any signs of reforming, i'll have your head Meiling!"

" Y-Yes Mistress!" Meiling began to sweat hard before looking over to Scarlet with a reassuring smile.

Ultima was seen by herself as Eirin went over to her. "... Is this what you want, Ultima?" Eirin asked while sitting down next to her.

" yes it is Eirin. I should help this world but not in the way i have, i have to do this by my hand. To help people by making a world of peace, not war." ultima said.

" heh, a Lunarian looking to create peace, you're really something Ultima."

" i know, is it fine i stay with you, old friend?" Ultima asked as eirin nodded.

" Just don't make too much of a mess, alright?" Eirin teased before looking at the sunset with the others.

" The Universe is saved and Gensokyo needs to be rebuilt. We got alot of work to handle." Reimu said as Sora held her hand, much to the jealousy of Kairi.

" No worries, i'll help out."

" As will we." Thor added as they all looked to the sunset, the fight over and the battles won... for now.

### **Meanwhile in the depths of space...**

A strange woman was standing on a meteorite, gazing upon a pocketwatch, looking at one of the crystals in it, bursting and breaking into blue fire. " only four more seals remain, soon, The Chaos Wars will begin again." The Nun slowly began to laugh, the camera showed her face as three red eyes were glowing in the darkness.

*Author's Notes: Thank you all so much for following the story, i have gotten sick and lost interest in writing but i never caved in and canned this story, i promise i will never- be late with these things again, thank you all for the positivity and negativity, it has helped me improve greatly.*